# DICTIONARY OF

# AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY

PUBLISHED UNDER THE AUSPICES OF

AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

AMERICAN PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

AMERICAN ACADEMY OF ARTS AND SCIENCES, Cambridge, Massachusetts

AMERICAN ANTIQUARIAN SOCIETY, Worcester, Massachusetts

AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY, New Haven, Connecticut

AMERICAN NUMISMATIC SOCIETY, New York, New York

AMERICAN PHILOLOGICAL ASSOCIATION, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania

ARCHAEOLOGICAL INSTITUTE OF AMERICA, New York, New York

SOCIETY OF BIBLICAL LITERATURE AND EXEGESIS, Haverford, Pennsylvania

MODERN LANGUAGE ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, New York, New York

AMERICAN HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION, Washington, District of Columbia

AMERICAN ECONOMIC ASSOCIATION, Evanston, Illinois

AMERICAN PHILOSOPHICAL ASSOCIATION, Middletown, Connecticut

AMERICAN ANTHROPOLOGICAL ASSOCIATION, Chicago, Illinois

AMERICAN POLITICAL SCIENCE ASSOCIATION, Evanston, Illinois

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL SOCIETY OF AMERICA, Albany, New York

ASSOCIATION OF AMERICAN GEOGRAPHERS, Minneapolis, Minnesota

AMERICAN SOCIOLOGICAL SOCIETY, Washington, District of Columbia

AMERICAN SOCIETY OF INTERNATIONAL LAW, Washington, District of Columbia

COLLEGE ART ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, New York, New York

HISTORY OF SCIENCE SOCIETY, South Hadley, Massachusetts

LINGUISTIC SOCIETY OF AMERICA, Washington, District of Columbia

MEDIAEVAL ACADEMY OF AMERICA, Cambridge, Massachusetts

POPULATION ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, Washington, District of Columbia

25.1.5

# DICTIONARY OF
# American Biography

*Edited by Allen Johnson & Dumas Malone*

6

Echols - Fraser

Charles Scribner's Sons
*NEW YORK*

Prompted solely by a desire for public service the New York Times Company and its President, Mr. Adolph S. Ochs, have made possible the preparation of the manuscript of the Dictionary of American Biography through a subvention of more than $500,000 and with the understanding that the entire responsibility for the contents of the volumes rests with the American Council of Learned Societies.

COPYRIGHT, 1931, BY
AMERICAN COUNCIL OF LEARNED SOCIETIES

Printed in the United States of America

REFERENCE BOOKS
JAMMU & KASHMIR UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY
No 14,057
Date 25.1.56.
SRINAGAR
St82
NShah
R
920.07
J63D.6
ALLAMA IQBAL LIBRARY
14057

The Dictionary of American Biography is published under the auspices of the American Council of Learned Societies and under the direction of a Committee of Management which consists of J. Franklin Jameson, *Chairman*, John H. Finley, Alien Johnson, Frederic L. Paxson, Iphigene Ochs Sulzberger, Carl Van Doren, Charles Warren.

The editorial staff consists of Allen Johnson, Dumas Malone, Harris E. Starr, George H. Genzmer, Eleanor R. Dobson.

The American Council of Learned Societies consists of the following societies:

American Philosophical Society
American Academy of Arts and Sciences
American Antiquarian Society
American Oriental Society
American Philological Association
Archaeological Institute of America
Society of Biblical Literature and Exegesis
Modern Language Association of America
American Historical Association
American Economic Association
American Philosophical Association
American Anthropological Association
American Political Science Association
Bibliographical Society of America
American Sociological Society
History of Science Society
Linguistic Society of America
Mediaeval Academy of America

# CONTRIBUTORS TO VOLUME VI

THOMAS P. ABERNETHY . . . T. P. A.
ADELINE ADAMS . . . . . A. A.
JAMES TRUSLOW ADAMS . . . J. T. A.
ROBERT GREENHALGH ALBION R. G. A.
EDMUND KIMBALL ALDEN . . E. K. A.
EDWARD E. ALLEN . . . . . E. E. A.
WILLIAM H. ALLISON . . . . W. H. A.
KATHARINE H. AMEND . . . . K. H. A.
JOHN CLARK ARCHER . . . . J. C. A.
EDWARD C. ARMSTRONG . . . E. C. A.
BENJAMIN WISNER BACON . . B. W. B.
RAY PALMER BAKER . . . . . R. P. B—r.
THOMAS S. BARCLAY . . . . . T. S. B.
CLARIBEL R. BARNETT . . . . C. R. B.
HAROLD K. BARROWS . . . . H. K. B.
J. HENRY BARTLETT . . . . . J. H. B.
ERNEST SUTHERLAND BATES . E. S. B—s.
WILLIAM JAMES BATTLE . . . W. J. B.
CARL L. BECKER . . . . . C. L. B.
ELBERT J. BENTON . . . . . E. J. B.
PERCY W. BIDWELL . . . . . P. W. B.
THEODORE C. BLEGEN . . . . T. C. B.
ARTHUR R. BLESSING . . . . A. R. B.
GEORGE BLUMER . . . . . G. B.
ERNEST F. BODDINGTON . . . E. F. B.
SARAH G. BOWERMAN . . . . S. G. B.
WILLIAM K. BOYD . . . . . W. K. B.
BENJAMIN BRAWLEY . . . . . B. B.
ROBERT PRESTON BROOKS . . R. P. B—s.
EVERETT S. BROWN . . . . . E. S. B—n.
L. PARMLY BROWN . . . . . L. P. B.
FRANK J. BRUNO . . . . . F. J. B.
SOLON J. BUCK . . . . . S. J. B.
GUY H. BURNHAM . . . . . G. H. B.
WILLIAM B. CAIRNS . . . . . W. B. C.
ISABEL M. CALDER . . . . . I. M. C.
ROBERT G. CALDWELL . . . . R. G. C.
JAMES M. CALLAHAN . . . . J. M. C.
ROBERT C. CANBY . . . . . R. C. C.
CHARLES F. CAREY . . . . . C. F. C.
RICHARD S. CARTWRIGHT . . . R. S. C—t.
HENRY S. CHAPMAN . . . . . H. S. C.
ARNEY R. CHILDS . . . . . A. R. C.
FRANCIS A. CHRISTIE . . . . F. A. C.
DORA MAE CLARK . . . . . D. M. C.
HUBERT LYMAN CLARK . . . H. L. C.
ORAL SUMNER COAD . . . . . O. S. C.
FREDERICK W. COBURN . . . F. W. C.
FANNIE L. GWINNER COLE . . F. L. G. C.
EDWARD S. CORWIN . . . . . E. S. C.
ROBERT SPENCER COTTERILL . R. S. C—l.
E. MERTON COULTER . . . . E. M. C.
DOROTHY P. CUTLER . . . . . D. P. C.
CHALMERS G. DAVIDSON . . . C. G. D.
CLIVE DAY . . . . . C. D.
ROY DAY . . . . . R. D.
ROY FLOYD DIBBLE . . . . . R. F. D.
GILBERT H. DOANE . . . . . G. H. D.
ELEANOR ROBINETTE DOBSON . E. R. D.
DOROTHY ANNE DONDORE . . D. A. D.
ELIZABETH DONNAN . . . . . E. D.
EDWARD A. DUDDY . . . . . E. A. D.
RAYMOND S. DUGAN . . . . . R. S. D.
WILLIAM B. DUNNING . . . . W. B. D.
WILLIAM FREDERICK DURAND . W. F. D.
LIONEL C. DUREL . . . . . L. C. D.
HARRISON GRISWOLD DWIGHT . H. G. D.
EDWARD DWIGHT EATON . . . E. D. E.
WALTER PRICHARD EATON . . W. P. E.
EDWIN FRANCIS EDGETT . . . E. F. E.
MILTON ELLIS . . . . . M. E.
ARTHUR ELSON . . . . . A. E.
EPHRAIM EMERTON . . . . . E. E.
CHARLES R. ERDMAN, JR. . . . C. R. E., Jr.
PAUL D. EVANS . . . . . P. D. E.
WILLIAM PURVIANCE FENN . . W. P. F.
ALEXANDER CLARENCE FLICK . A. C. F.
PERCY SCOTT FLIPPIN . . . . P. S. F.
GEORGE T. FLOM . . . . . G. T. F.
BLANTON FORTSON . . . . . B. F.
LOUIS H. FOX . . . . . L. H. F.
KUNO FRANCKE . . . . . K. F.
JOHN H. FREDERICK . . . . . J. H. F.
CLAUDE M. FUESS . . . . . C. M. F.
JOSEPH V. FULLER . . . . . J. V. F.
JOHN F. FULTON . . . . . J. F. F.
HERBERT P. GAMBRELL . . . H. P. G.
GEORGE HARVEY GENZMER . . G. H. G.
VIRGINIA GERSON . . . . . V. G.
W. J. GHENT . . . . . W. J. G.
LAWRENCE H. GIPSON . . . . L. H. G.
HAROLD C. GODDARD . . . . H. C. G.
ARMISTEAD CHURCHILL GORDON, JR. . . . . A. C. G., Jr.
HENRY SOLON GRAVES . . . . H. S. G.
CHARLES W. HACKETT . . . . C. W. H.
PERCIVAL HALL . . . . . P. H.
PHILIP M. HAMER . . . . . P. M. H.
J. G. DER. HAMILTON . . . . J. G. deR. H.
TALBOT FAULKNER HAMLIN . . T. F. H.
ALVIN F. HARLOW . . . . . A. F. H.
RALPH V. HARLOW . . . . . R. V. H.

# Contributors to Volume VI

| | |
|---|---|
| Fairfax Harrison | F. H. |
| Mary Bronson Hartt | M. B. H. |
| George E. Hastings | G. E. H. |
| Paul L. Haworth | P. L. H. |
| Fred E. Haynes | F. E. H. |
| Marshall DeLancey Haywood | M. DeL. H. |
| Atcheson L. Hench | A. L. H. |
| Emily Hickman | E. H—n. |
| Frederick C. Hicks | F. C. H. |
| John Donald Hicks | J. D. H. |
| Charles E. Hill | C. E. H. |
| Homer Carey Hockett | H. C. H. |
| Frank H. Hodder | F. H. H. |
| Jean MacKinnon Holt | J. M. H. |
| Walter Hough | W. H. |
| Leland Ossian Howard | L. O. H. |
| Clifford Chesley Hubbard | C. C. H. |
| Theodora Kimball Hubbard | T. K. H. |
| William Jackson Humphreys | W. J. H. |
| Albert Hyma | A. H. |
| Asher Isaacs | A. I. |
| Joseph Jackson | J. J. |
| Edward H. Jenkins | E. H. J. |
| Allen Johnson | A. J. |
| James R. Joy | J. R. J. |
| Louise Phelps Kellogg | L. P. K. |
| Rayner W. Kelsey | R. W. K. |
| Allen Marshall Kline | A. M. K. |
| H. W. Howard Knott | H. W. H. K. |
| Harry Lyman Koopman | H. L. K. |
| Edwin W. Kopf | E. W. K. |
| Leonard W. Labaree | L. W. L. |
| William Coolidge Lane | W. C. L. |
| John W. Lang | J. W. L. |
| George M. Lewis | G. M. L. |
| Lawrence T. Lowrey | L. T. L. |
| Robert Luce | R. L. |
| Clarence H. McClure | C. H. M. |
| Thomas Denton McCormick | T. D. M. |
| Philip B. McDonald | P. B. M. |
| Reginald C. McGrane | R. C. M. |
| Eva Anne Madden | E. A. M. |
| William Francis Magie | W. F. M. |
| H. A. Marmer | H. A. M. |
| Howard R. Marraro | H. R. M. |
| Frederick H. Martens | F. H. M. |
| Asa Earl Martin | A. E. M. |
| Albert P. Mathews | A. P. M. |
| David M. Matteson | D. M. M |
| Lawrence S. Mayo | L. S. M. |
| Edmond S. Meany | E. S. M. |
| Leila Mechlin | L. M. |
| Newton D. Mereness | N. D. M. |
| George P. Merrill | G. P. M. |
| Herman H. B. Meyer | H. H. B. M. |
| Douglass W. Miller | D. W. M. |
| Edwin Mims, Jr. | E. M., Jr. |
| Broadus Mitchell | B. M. |
| Carl W. Mitman | C. W. M. |
| Frank Monaghan | F. M—n. |
| Thomas L. Montgomery | T. L. M. |
| Fulmer Mood | F. M—d. |
| Albert B. Moore | A. B. M. |
| George T. Moore | G. T. M. |
| Harrison S. Morris | H. S. M. |
| Richard B. Morris | R. B. M. |
| Jarvis M. Morse | J. M. M. |
| George S. Myers | G. S. M. |
| Allan Nevins | A. N. |
| Charles L. Nichols | C. L. N. |
| Robert Hastings Nichols | R. H. N. |
| Roy F. Nichols | R. F. N. |
| Harold J. Noble | H. J. N. |
| John S. Nollen | J. S. N. |
| Walter B. Norris | W. B. N. |
| David Edward Owen | D. E. O. |
| Catherine W. Palmer | C. W. P. |
| Victor H. Paltsits | V. H. P. |
| Scott H. Paradise | S. H. P. |
| John I. Parcel | J. I. P. |
| Stanley M. Pargellis | S. M. P. |
| Julius H. Parmelee | J. H. P. |
| Merrill R. Patterson | M. R. P. |
| Charles O. Paullin | C. O. P. |
| Frederic Logan Paxson | F. L. P—n. |
| Henry G. Pearson | H. G. P. |
| Theodore C. Pease | T. C. P. |
| Donald Culross Peattie | D. C. P. |
| Edgar Legare Pennington | E. L. P. |
| Ralph Barton Perry | R. B. P. |
| Frederick T. Persons | F. T. P. |
| A. Everett Peterson | A. E. P. |
| James M. Phalen | J. M. P. |
| Paul Chrisler Phillips | P. C. P. |
| Deets Pickett | D. P. |
| David deSola Pool | D. deS. P. |
| Julius W. Pratt | J. W. P. |
| Edward Preble | E. P. |
| Frederick Clarke Prescott | F. C. P. |
| Herbert I. Priestley | H. I. P. |
| Richard J. Purcell | R. J. P. |
| Lawson Purdy | L. P. |
| Belle Rankin | B. R. |
| Charles Dudley Rhodes | C. D. R. |
| Irving B. Richman | I. B. R. |
| Doane Robinson | D. R. |
| William A. Robinson | W. A. R. |
| Miriam Theresa Rooney | M. T. R. |
| Frank Edward Ross | F. E. R. |
| Ralph L. Rusk | R. L. R. |
| Carlton Savage | C. S. |
| Joseph Schafer | J. S. |
| Carl F. Schreiber | C. F. S. |
| Montgomery Schuyler | M. Sc—r. |
| Kenneth Scott | K. S. |

# Contributors to Volume VI

| | |
|---|---|
| Muriel Shaver | M. Sh—r. |
| William Bristol Shaw | W. B. S—w. |
| Cornelius Lott Shear | C. L. Sh—r. |
| George N. Shuster | G. N. S. |
| Constance Lindsay Skinner | C. L. Sk—r. |
| Alice R. Huger Smith | A. R. H. S. |
| David Eugene Smith | D. E. S. |
| William Smith | W. S—h. |
| Thomas M. Spaulding | T. M. S. |
| Samuel Peter Spreng | S. P. S. |
| Harris Elwood Starr | H. E. S. |
| George M. Stephenson | G. M. S. |
| Walter B. Stevens | W. B. S—s. |
| Wayne E. Stevens | W. E. S. |
| Witmer Stone | W. S—e. |
| Charles S. Sydnor | C. S. S. |
| Edwin P. Tanner | E. P. T. |
| David Y. Thomas | D. Y. T. |
| Holland Thompson | H. T. |
| Irving L. Thomson | I. L. T. |
| Leah Townsend | L. T. |
| William T. Utter | W. T. U. |
| Mark Van Doren | M. V–D. |
| Henry R. Viets | H. R. V. |
| Eugene M. Violette | E. M. V. |
| John D. Wade | J. D. W. |
| Theodore B. Wagner | T. B. W. |
| William Cushing Wait | W. C. W. |
| James Elliott Walmsley | J. E. W. |
| James J. Walsh | J. J. W. |
| Langdon Warner | L. W. |
| W. Randall Waterman | W. R. W. |
| Elizabeth Howard West | E. H. W. |
| Allan Westcott | A. W. |
| Arthur P. Whitaker | A. P. W. |
| Charles Adams White | C. A. W. |
| Horatio S. White | H. S. W. |
| Melvin J. White | M. J. W. |
| Walter Lincoln Whittlesey | W. L. W—y. |
| James F. Willard | J. F. W. |
| George Edward Woodbine | G. E. W. |
| Herbert F. Wright | H. F. W. |
| Walter L. Wright, Jr. | W. L. W—t., Jr. |
| James Ingersoll Wyer | J. I. W. |
| Edna Yost | E. Y. |
| John Zeleny | J. Z. |

# DICTIONARY OF
# AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY

## Echols — Fraser

**ECHOLS, JOHN** (Mar. 20, 1823–May 24, 1896), lawyer, Confederate soldier, railroad president, was born in Lynchburg, Va., the son of Joseph and Elizabeth F. (Lambeth) Echols. He graduated with honor from Washington College (now Washington and Lee University), did postgraduate work at the Virginia Military Institute, and studied law at Harvard. Returning to Virginia in 1842, he taught in Harrisonburg, and was admitted to the bar of Rockbridge County in November 1843. After practising at Staunton for a short time, he made his home in Monroe County (now W. Va.) till 1861.

He was elected commonwealth's attorney and later a member of the General Assembly, and was one of the two delegates from Monroe County to the convention of 1861. While the convention was in session, but after the adoption of the ordinance of secession, he resigned as a member and on the following day was nominated a colonel of volunteers. Before this nomination was confirmed on Dec. 6, 1861, he had returned to his county and organized a company which was assigned to the 27th Regiment. He commanded this regiment at the first battle of Manassas and afterward until he was severely wounded at Kernstown, Mar. 23, 1862. Returning to the army after his recovery, he was commissioned a brigadier-general and served in the Kanawha Valley for a time under Gen. Loring, whom he afterward succeeded as commander of the Department of Southwestern Virginia. In the summer of 1863 he served, with Howell Cobb and Robert Ransome, on the court of inquiry held at Richmond to determine the cause of the fall of Vicksburg. In 1864 he took his brigade to the Valley under Gen. John C. Breckinridge and played a conspicuous part in the battle of New Market. After fighting with the Army of Northern Virginia from Hanover Junction to Cold Harbor, he went with Gen. Early on his campaign into Maryland, and in the fall of 1864 resumed command of the Department of Southwestern Virginia. After the surrender at Appomattox he led the remnant of his command into North Carolina, escorted President Davis from Greensboro to Charlotte, returned to Greensboro, and was paroled with Johnston's army. He had been commissioned major-general in the last days of the war but the commission failed to reach him.

Identified in sympathies with the older part of the state, he removed soon after the war from Monroe County to Staunton, became the senior member of the law firm of Echols, Bell, and Catlett, and represented Augusta County in the General Assembly. His business abilities were so well recognized that when the National Valley Bank of Staunton was organized he was elected president, continuing in that office after the bank was consolidated with the First National Bank of Staunton. About the same time, with Col. John B. Baldwin and others, he undertook the reorganization of the Virginia Central Railroad, later known as the Chesapeake & Ohio & Southwestern. He served as receiver and general manager, and, after its reorganization as the Chesapeake & Ohio Railway, he secured its extension through Kentucky, and for twenty years was a director and played a large part in determining its policy. His duties as an officer of the Chesapeake & Ohio and its associated roads compelled his residence in Louisville, Ky., for the last ten years of his life, but he remained a citizen of Virginia, returning to cast his vote in elections and keeping in close touch with the state's prob-

lems. He was an active member of the board of visitors of the Virginia Military Institute and of Washington and Lee University. In a memorial minute of the board after his death it was said that "he rarely made an enemy and never lost a friend."

Echols was a man of commanding presence, six feet four inches high, weighing two hundred and sixty pounds, with a massive rugged face, a sonorous voice, and the confident manner of an executive. He was twice married: first, to Mary Jane Caperton, sister of his colleague in the convention of 1861; second, to Mrs. Mary Cochran Reid of New York City. He died in his seventy-fourth year at the home of his son in Staunton.

[There is a short sketch of Echols, inaccurate in some details, in *Confed. Mil. Hist.*, III (1899), 591–93, and a longer and better sketch by A. C. Gordon, in *Men of Mark in Va.*, V (1909), 124–29. See also *Report of Brig.-Gen. Echols of the Battle of Droop Mt.* (1864); *Official Records* (*Army*); *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, vol. IV (1884). Brief biographies and editorials published in newspapers at the time of his death are in the possession of his son's widow in Staunton, Va.]

J. E. W.

**ECKART, WILLIAM ROBERTS** (June 17, 1841–Dec. 8, 1914), engineer, was born in Chillicothe, Ohio, the son of William Roberts and Eleanor (Carlisle) Eckart. In 1842 his parents moved to Cleveland where his father had shipping interests on the Great Lakes. The boy's education, begun in private schools, was continued in the public schools of Cleveland and at St. Clair Academy in that city, where he followed special studies with a view to becoming a civil engineer. In the early fifties his father took his family to Zanesville, Ohio, where he had a managing interest in the Putnam Flouring Mills, the power for which was derived from water-wheels. William's work as an assistant to the millwright in the installation of improved wheels led to an apprenticeship in the shop of Griffith, Ebert & Wedge, and later to an association with the partner Wedge, an engineer trained in the precision methods of the famous Whitworth shops of London. To the high ideals insisted on in all of the work of Griffith, Ebert & Wedge, Eckart attributed much of his success in later years. Contact with the marine work of the shop strengthened his taste for naval service, already formed by travel on the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, and in 1861, after the outbreak of the Civil War, he passed with high honor the examination for naval engineer, was appointed, and ordered to join the fleet on the Pacific Coast. Here he met B. F. Isherwood [*q.v.*], chief engineer of the navy, and was brought into intimate contact with the problems of marine engineering practise. In 1864, because of ill health, he resigned from the navy and took up his residence in San Francisco. In California and in adjacent states he spent the remainder of his life. As a chief draftsman in 1865, he prepared the designs for the first steam locomotive built in California. As superintendent of steam machinery at the United States Navy Yard, Mare Island, he designed and prepared the equipment for a notable research on marine propellers, and served as Isherwood's associate in carrying out this work, the results of which have now become classic in the literature of marine engineering. Later, as partner in an engineering firm at Marysville, Cal., he constructed a small steamer to be used on Lake Tahoe; it had a guaranteed speed of twenty-one miles per hour and was perhaps the fastest boat of its size known at that date. In connection with the great mining boom at Virginia City, Nev., and elsewhere, 1870–80, he encountered, as consulting engineer, the difficult problem of handling enormous quantities of scalding-hot water under pressures represented by thousands of feet of head, a combination of conditions perhaps unprecedented up to that time. Under his direction and guidance, however, mining was successfully carried on to the exhaustion of the ore bodies. With the decline of deep mining in 1880 he again took up his residence in San Francisco. Here as consulting engineer he became responsible for the design of the machinery for the Anaconda Copper Company, with the new and difficult problems which this work presented, and later, as consultant for the Union Iron Works in all matters relating to naval construction, was associated with the pioneer work of building the new steel navy. Finally, to round out the scope and variety of his professional experience, in 1899 he became, as consulting engineer for the Standard Electric Company, responsible for the design and construction of the hydraulic work connected with their first hydroelectric power plant, taking water at a 9,000-foot level and under 1,400 feet head generating 15,000 horse-power—perhaps the pioneer among high head long distance transmission power plants. This work was brought to a successful completion in 1903.

Eckart was always on the firing line of progress and delighted in nothing more than in dealing with new and difficult problems. He was eminently a student in his manner of handling them, and spared no pains in insuring a sound foundation for his proposed solution or mode of treatment. He was notable as a collector of books and professional literature and of fine precision apparatus used in engineering measurements; was a member of many engineering societies and technical organizations, and occasionally

contributed papers of value to their transactions. In 1872 he married Harriet Louise Gorham; to them were born three sons and one daughter. After a long period of failing health, during which he retained his keen interest in engineering, he died in Palo Alto, Cal., at the home of his eldest son.

[*Trans. Am. Soc. Mech. Engineers*, XXXVI (1915), 1090; *Builders of San Francisco* (1912); *San Francisco Chronicle, San Francisco Examiner*, Dec. 9, 1914; statement by living sons; personal acquaintance.]

W. F. D.

**ECKELS, JAMES HERRON** (Nov. 22, 1858–Apr. 14, 1907), lawyer, comptroller of the currency, financier, traced his paternal ancestry to an emigrant from Belfast, Ireland. Both his parents were natives of Cumberland County, Pa. His father, James Starr Eckels, after graduating at the Albany Law School in 1857, took his wife, Margaret Herron Eckels, whom he had married in 1854, to the little town of Princeton, Ill., where his son was born. James Eckels achieved success as an attorney. His son, choosing to follow in his father's footsteps, also attended the Albany Law School, from which he graduated in 1883. While at Albany he made the acquaintance of Gov. Grover Cleveland, a momentous event in young Eckels's career. Establishing himself at Ottawa, Ill., he gained ground rapidly both as a lawyer and as a Democratic politician. He campaigned for his friend Cleveland in 1884 and was consulted in regard to the distribution of patronage in his congressional district. In the campaign of 1892 he made speeches against the tariff and for Cleveland. He rejoiced in the Democratic victory and had hopes of receiving the appointment as United States attorney for Illinois. The country was surprised, as was Eckels, when Cleveland proposed that the thirty-five-year-old attorney should become comptroller of the currency. He took over the duties of that office Apr. 26, 1893.

Within a month after Eckels entered upon his new work the panic of 1893 broke. Bankers who had had misgivings at his appointment now prophesied disaster. That Eckels stood the test of this crisis and came to have the respect of the financiers is the best evidence of his ability. His most important work in this period was the handling of the tangled affairs of national banks which were forced to suspend payment. During the period from 1865 to 1898, 369 national banks were forced into receiverships. Of this number, 181 met disaster in the four years and eight months during which Eckels was comptroller. The energy and efficiency which he demonstrated in meeting the problems of his office showed that Cleveland's confidence in him had not been misplaced. His annual reports contained a number of constructive suggestions for the improvement of the national currency system. He advised, in order to give the currency greater elasticity, that an asset security be devised to take the place of bonds as the basis of the issue of national bank-notes. He made a suggestion, later adopted, that a non-partisan commission be appointed to study exhaustively the needs of the nation's monetary system.



In 1896 he was a leader among the Gold Democrats. He was continued in his office by McKinley, but he resigned it on Dec. 31, 1897, to become president of the Commercial National Bank of Chicago. He was one of the leading financiers of that city when heart trouble caused his sudden death on Apr. 14, 1907. He was small in stature. One of his admirers said that "there was not much to Eckels, but what little there was was three-quarters brains." He married Fannie Lisette Reed of Ottawa, Ill., Dec. 15, 1887. A daughter was born to them.

[Thos. P. Kane, *The Romance and Tragedy of Banking*, I (1922), 187–214, is an excellent study of Eckels's service as comptroller by his secretary in that period. See also John G. Heinberg, *The Office of the Comptroller of the Currency* (1926); Francis M. Huston, *Financing an Empire: Hist. of Banking in Ill.*, IV (1926), 156 ff.; *The Ann. Report of the Comptroller of the Currency*, 1893–98; *Chicago Daily Tribune, Chicago Daily News*, Apr. 15, 1907.]

W. T. U.

**ECKERT, THOMAS THOMPSON** (Apr. 23, 1825–Oct. 20, 1910), telegrapher, was born at St. Clairsville, Ohio, and spent his boyhood on his father's farm, at the same time receiving a common-school education. Catching the enthusiasm for the telegraph at an early age, he went to Wheeling, W. Va., hoping to enter a newly opened telegraph office there. Failing in this he went to New York, after many difficulties, and learned telegraphy in the office of the Morse Telegraph Company. He was next employed by the Wade Telegraph Company on their line between Pittsburgh and Chicago. In 1849 he was appointed postmaster at Wooster, Ohio, but still retained his position with the telegraph company. In 1852 he was made superintendent of the Pittsburgh and Chicago branch line of the Union Telegraph Company, which position he held, with extended jurisdiction, when the line became part of the Western Union Telegraph Company in 1856. In 1859 he resigned to become superintendent of a gold-mining company in Montgomery County, N. C., where he stayed until the outbreak of the Civil War. He went to Cincinnati, Ohio, as head of the United States military telegraph at that place, but in 1862 was called to Washington, D. C., as superintendent of military telegraph, Department of

the Potomac, and, with the rank of captain and assistant quartermaster, accompanied Maj.-Gen. McClellan to the Peninsula. In September of the same year he was appointed general superintendent of military telegraph, with the rank of major, and established headquarters in the War Department. In 1864 he was breveted lieutenant-colonel, then colonel, and lastly (Mar. 13, 1865), brigadier-general of volunteers, "for meritorious and distinguished services." On July 27, 1866, Eckert was made assistant secretary of war, resigning Feb. 28, 1867. He had a distinguished war record, always commanded the full confidence of President Lincoln and Secretary Stanton, and was intrusted with military and state secrets. On several occasions he was charged with special commissions of the utmost importance.

Upon resigning from the government service he accepted the position as general superintendent of the eastern division of the Western Union Telegraph Company, which he held until 1875. His strong personality and diplomacy were shown by the manner in which he handled, in 1870, the threatened universal strike of the telegraphers' Protective League, which would have tied up the railways and paralyzed business in general. In 1875 Jay Gould and his associates gained control of the Atlantic & Pacific Telegraph Company and began to compete with the Western Union. Eckert was appointed president of the Atlantic & Pacific and remained as such until 1881, when the company was sold to the Western Union. Gould, however, soon organized another competing company, the American Union Telegraph, and retained Eckert's services as president. This position he held until Gould ended the rivalry by purchasing control of the Western Union. Eckert was vice-president and general manager of the Western Union until 1893, when he was elected president, retained this position until 1900 when he was made chairman of the board of directors, and served in the latter capacity almost until his death. He was also a director in several other corporations. He died at his summer home in Long Branch, N. J., after a long illness. He was survived by two sons; his wife, Emma D. Whitney of Wooster, Ohio, had died in 1868.

Eckert was a pioneer on the administrative side of the telegraph to almost as great an extent as was Morse on the inventive side. A man of great aggressiveness and vigor and a born leader, he organized the government telegraph during the Civil War so that it was of real use, and built up a staff of associates, many of whom stayed with him in later activities. Jay Gould



recognized him as a force he needed and shifted him from company to company according to the exigencies of the situation. This made him a leading figure in the struggle between ambitious companies for the telegraphic control of the country. As a man, he had qualities which endeared him to his friends and subordinates.

[*Official Records* (*Army*), 1, 2, 3, ser.; D. H. Bates, *Lincoln in the Telegraph Office: Recollections of the U. S. Mil. Telegraph Corps during the Civil War* (1907); *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Electrical Rev. and Western Electrician*, Oct. 29, 1910; *Jour. of the Telegraph*, Nov. 20, 1910.] J.H.F.

**ECKFORD, HENRY** (Mar. 12, 1775–Nov. 12, 1832), marine architect, and shipbuilder, was born at Irvine, Scotland, the son of John and Janet (Black) Eckford. At the age of sixteen he went to Quebec, Canada, and began studying the principles of ship designing in the yards of his uncle, John Black. After five years of such schooling he settled in New York City, where he soon began shipbuilding on his own account. At the opening of the nineteenth century his yards were on the Long Island side of the East River, near the Brooklyn Navy Yard. Because of the abundance and accessibility of timber, American ships could be built for $35 a ton, as against $50 in England, and $60 in France. Even without the aid of the discriminating laws enacted by Congress, American shipbuilders had a clear advantage. Eckford's ships came to be known for their qualities of strength and speed. The most noticeable change that he brought about in designing was the reduction in the size of the stern frames, but there were also many alterations in the details of the rigging. It was his custom to question the captains of his ships on their return from voyages, learning thus what the behavior of the vessels had been in various circumstances and taking advantage of the knowledge so obtained in planning his next ship. His business was prospering when the War of 1812 came on. After the United States navy decided to build war vessels on Lake Ontario, Eckford supervised the work. The sloop-of-war *Madison*, 24 guns, was constructed by him within forty days from the cutting of the timber in the forests. After the war he returned to New York. During the Monroe administration he was appointed naval constructor at the Brooklyn Navy Yard, and held this office for three years, 1817–20, the *Ohio* and five other line-of-battle ships being constructed on his models. There is no doubt that J. Fenimore Cooper in paying tribute to Eckford's genius and resourcefulness as a naval constructor (see *History of the Navy of the United States of America*, 1839, II, 449) voiced a prevalent opinion. He resigned because

of differences among some of the Navy Department officials. Resuming work in his own yards, he built the *Robert Fulton,* which made the first successful voyage by steam from New York to New Orleans and Havana (1822) and after conversion into a sailing vessel made the swiftest sloop-of-war in the Brazilian navy; and frigates for Brazil, Colombia, Peru, and Chile. During the Jackson administration he submitted, at the request of the president, a plan for the reorganization of the navy.

In the twenties Eckford became keenly interested in New York Democratic politics. He invested money in the *National Advocate* and in the campaign of Crawford for the presidency (1824) he controlled that journal, in association with Matthew L. Davis and Jacob Barker (see *Statement of Facts Relative to the Conduct of Henry Eckford, Esq., as Connected with the National Advocate,* by Mordecai M. Noah, New York, 1824). On Apr. 13, 1799, Eckford was married to Marion, daughter of Joseph and Miriam (Dorlon) Bedell. He bought a country estate on Manhattan Island (between Sixth and Eighth Avenues, 21st and 24th Sts., New York City), and there entertained among others, James E. De Kay, Fitz-Greene Halleck, Joseph Rodman Drake [*qq.v*], and kindred spirits. One of his daughters was married to Drake and another to De Kay.

In Eckford's later years the failure of an insurance company in which he was interested took away a large part of his fortune. The last ship that he built was a corvette for the Sultan of Turkey. Aboard this ship, commanded by Commodore George Colman De Kay [*q.v.*], Eckford sailed to Turkey, where he was placed in charge of naval construction, and there, while organizing a navy yard, he died.

[G. W. Sheldon, "Old Shipbuilders of N. Y.," in *Harper's Mag.,* July 1882; and S. G. W. Benjamin, "The Evolution of the American Yacht," in the *Century Mag.,* July 1882; Jas. G. Wilson, *The Life and Letters of Fitz-Greene Halleck* (1869); J. H. Morrison, *Hist. of N. Y. Ship Yards* (1909); Frederick Hudson, *Journalism in the U. S., 1680–1872* (1873); T. H. S. Hamersley, *Gen. Reg. U. S. Navy 1782–1882* (1882); J. E. De Kay, "The Book of the Children of De Kay" (1838), MS. in Lib. of Cong. For additional information see I. C. Pray, *Memoirs of Jas. Gordon Bennett and his Times* (1855). A portrait of Eckford is owned by the Long Island Hist. Soc.] W. B. S—w.

**ECKSTEIN, JOHN** (*c.* 1750–*c.* 1817), painter, sculptor, and engraver, was born in Germany, probably in Mecklenburg, about the middle of the eighteenth century, and was active in Potsdam after about 1772. In 1786 he made a death-mask and a plaster bust of Frederick the Great, and in the exhibitions of the Berlin Academy of that year, of 1788, and of 1791, was represented



by an equestrian statue of Frederick, in imperial Roman costume. About the year 1794 he settled in Philadelphia, where he resided until 1817. He described himself variously in the city directories as "limner," "engraver," and "merchant," and the directory for 1797 lists John Eckstein & Son as "statuaries." Eckstein was one of the original members of the Columbian Society of Artists, at whose exhibitions he showed examples of modeling, and was also an associate of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts. While in Philadelphia, he engraved in stipple several portraits and a design for a "Monument of General Washington" which he proposed for erection—one of the first public suggestions for such a memorial of the first president of the United States. In his "Proposals" for publishing this design (*Poulson's American Daily Advertiser,* Philadelphia, Feb. 19, 21, and 24, 1806), the artist referred to himself as "formerly historical painter and statuary to the King of Prussia." For the third edition of Freneau's *Poems* (Philadelphia, 1809), he engraved frontispieces for the two volumes. They are decidedly of the mixed style, but are full of artistic feeling. In 1812 he exhibited at the Academy Exhibition, in Philadelphia, a model for an equestrian statue of Washington, and in 1813, a "model in burnt clay," entitled "Genius of America." Thomas Sully wrote of Eckstein that he "was a thoroughgoing drudge in the arts. He could do you a picture in still life—history—landscape—portrait—he could model—cut a head in marble—or anything you please. . . . I found him when I removed to Philadelphia [1800] an old man, and he has been dead many years" (Dunlap, *post,* edition of 1918, p. 292). Eckstein's name was apparently dropped from the city directories after 1817 and the exhibition catalogues of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts state that he died in that year, although according to Stauffer (*post*) he "was painting and engraving as late as 1822."

[Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (1834; rev. ed., 1918); D. M. Stauffer, *American Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1907); Michael Bryan, *Dict. of Painters and Engravers, Biographical and Critical* (1902); Ulrich Thieme and Felix Becker, *Allgemeines Lexikon der Bildenden Künstler,* X (1914), 331–32.] J. J.

**EDDIS, WILLIAM** (fl. 1769–1777), Maryland Loyalist, emerged from years of obscurity during which he had a passion for the drama and experienced certain disappointments, to find in Robert Eden [*q.v.*], governor of Maryland, a patron and benefactor. After a stormy voyage from an English port, he arrived at Annapolis on Sept. 3, 1769, and immediately assumed the duties of

secretary to the governor. The following June he was joined by his wife and young son, Eden Eddis. As secretary he acquired an intimate knowledge of the province and as a deeply interested spectator he watched closely the progress of events leading to the Revolution and through its early stages. He traveled on the Eastern Shore and to the back woods of the Western Shore. With the governor he visited many of the leading families. He had an artistic temperament and a fluent pen. From what he saw and heard he wrote letters to friends in England, which were published in London in 1792 under the title *Letters from America, Historical and Descriptive; Comprising Occurrences from 1769, to 1777 Inclusive*. They cover a wide range of subjects, including the personality of the governor, his daily custom, the political disposition of the people, sumptuous fare, rude construction of houses in the back country, the elegance and culture of many of the women, marriage ceremonies, social events, the theatre, horse-racing, servants and the conditions under which they lived, industrial resources and progress, waste of timber, prices, and conditions retarding the growth of towns. In 1772 Eddis was appointed a commissioner of the loan office. He also held the office of surveyor of the customs at Annapolis.

Prospering under the governor's favor, he was anxious for the entire repeal of the Townshend revenue acts in order that cordial relations between the colonists and the mother country might be restored. He did not deny that the grievances of the colonists were genuine but contended that the measures adopted to obtain redress were not justified on "principles of reason or sound policy." He made an appeal for "common sense and common equity" in a communication to the *Maryland Gazette* (Annapolis) which was published Feb. 16, 1775, over the signature, "A Friend to Amity," and reprinted in other colonies. On the departure of his wife and son for England, in September 1775, Eddis became one of the family of Gov. Eden, who advised him to remain as long as the proprietary government was in any degree acknowledged and continued. When summoned before the committee of observation, in June 1776, to give security for his behavior or leave the province, he declared that such security was incompatible with his oath of office. The committee proposed to give him only a few weeks to remain, but the adjustment of accounts and closing out of his business with the loan office occupied him until the last day of May 1777. License for his departure was granted by the Council of the State of Maryland, June 3, 1777. With his arrival in London, Dec. 27, the record of his career is lost, although his grandson, Eden Upton Eddis, was a distinguished portrait-painter.

[Nearly all that is known of Eddis is contained in his *Letters from America*, etc. (1792).] N.D.M.



**EDDY, DANIEL CLARKE** (May 21, 1823–July 26, 1896), Baptist clergyman, author, was born in Salem, Mass., the younger of the two sons of Daniel and Martha (Honeycomb) Eddy. In 1842, on his reception into the Baptist church, he decided to become a minister. After attending the New Hampshire Theological Institution for several years, he was installed, Jan. 2, 1846, as pastor of the First Baptist Church of Lowell, Mass., which flourished under his vigorous, youthful leadership. On Apr. 9, 1846, he married Elizabeth Stone of Salem, who with two of their four children survived him. In 1850, to recover from an illness, he visited Europe. Years later he made two other excursions to Europe, North Africa, and Palestine. In 1849–50 he published a hortatory volume entitled *The Young Man's Friend*. It sold well, establishing Eddy's reputation in evangelical circles as a sage adviser of the young, and thereafter he gave much of his time to authorship, producing a number of devotional, missionary, ethical, and travel books. In substance his books are thin and commonplace, but he wrote pleasantly, and for many years he was one of the most popular authors in his denomination. Eddy was the sort of man to whom the Know-Nothing party made an irresistible appeal. He preached its principles in church and out, was deep in its conciaves, and when the Know-Nothings carried the Massachusetts election of 1854 he was one of the horde of cracker-box politicians who were swept into the General Court. In the confusion he was elected speaker of the House. In his speech of acceptance he acknowledged that he was ignorant of parliamentary law and usage, and throughout the session the fact was painfully evident. The next election retired him to private life. In 1856 he left Lowell to become pastor of the Harvard Street Baptist Church in Boston. Later he ministered to Baptist congregations in Philadelphia (Tabernacle Church), Boston, Fall River, Boston again, and Hyde Park. In 1876 he was candidate for lieutenant-governor on the Prohibition ticket. In 1881 he was called to the First Baptist Church of Brooklyn, N. Y., where he remained for the rest of his life. He was moderator for four successive terms of the Long Island Baptist Association and served as a president of the Church Extension Society. As pastor and preacher he was much esteemed. Intellectually, however, he did not rise much above his class. He was a friend of the negro and of temperance, but he denounced

the novels of Charles Dickens as "tending to badness" and was vociferously intolerant of Catholics, Unitarians, and "higher critics." He died at Cottage City on Martha's Vineyard after an illness of a year.

[*The Eddy Family* (2nd ed., 1884); *Vital Records of Salem, Mass., to 1850*, vols. I and III (1916–24); *Boston Transcript* and *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*, July 27, 1896; *Salem Daily Gazette*, July 29, 1896; *The Examiner*, July 30, 1896; G. H. Haynes, "A Know-Nothing Legislature," *Ann. Report Am. Hist. Asso., 1896* (1897), I, 175–87.] G.H.G.

**EDDY, HENRY TURNER** (June 9, 1844–Dec. 11, 1921), mathematician, physicist, was born at Stoughton, Mass., the eldest son of Henry Eddy, a Congregational minister, physician, farmer, and inventor, and of Sarah (Torrey) Eddy, a graduate of Mount Holyoke Seminary (now College) where she taught mathematics for three years. In his boyhood Henry Turner Eddy excelled in mental arithmetic, constructed a mechanical model illustrating a cubic algebraic equation, and was interested in birds. He was earnestly religious and prayerful, and lived a sheltered life on the farm where industry was insisted upon and where sports met with no encouragement. While a student at Yale College, from which he was graduated in 1867, he was interested in music and was a member of a church choir, the chapel choir, and the Yale Glee Club. As an undergraduate he received three first prizes and a gold medal in mathematics, a first prize in astronomy, and was elected to Phi Beta Kappa.

After graduation he studied civil engineering in the Sheffield Scientific School and then, since he was not attracted by other professions and his associations were all educational, turned naturally to teaching. After serving one year at the University of Tennessee, he became in 1869 assistant professor of mathematics and civil engineering in Cornell University, acted for a time as head of the department, and received there the degrees of C. E. and Ph.D. In 1873 he went to Princeton as adjunct professor of mathematics and the following year joined the faculty of the University of Cincinnati where he remained for sixteen years as professor of mathematics, astronomy, and civil engineering, being dean of the academic faculty from 1874 to 1877 and also from 1884 to 1889. The year 1879–80 was spent abroad in study. In 1890 he was the acting president and president-elect of the University. From 1891 to 1894 he was president of the Rose Polytechnic Institute. He then went to the University of Minnesota as professor of engineering and mechanics, became dean of the graduate school in 1906 and also, in 1907, head of the department of mathematics and mechanics in the college of

Eddy

engineering. After retirement in 1912 he spent several years on a study of the properties and stresses in reinforced concrete floor slabs. He contributed most by his discerning application of the methods of mathematical physics to the solution of engineering problems. His published writings include: *A Treatise on the Principles and Applications of Analytic Geometry* (1874), *New Constructions in Graphical Statics* (1877), *Thermodynamics* (1879), *Neue Konstructionen aus der graphischen Statik* (1880), *Maximum Stresses under Concentrated Loads* (1890), *The Theory of the Flexure and Strength of Rectangular Flat Plates applied to Reinforced Concrete Floor Slabs* (1913), and numerous papers in scientific journals.

Eddy was married on Jan. 4, 1870, to Sebella Elizabeth Taylor of New Haven, Conn., who died Sept. 3, 1921. They had one son and four daughters. He was a man of quiet scholarly tastes and regularly worked late into the night over abstruse problems in mathematical physics. He had a splendid physique, was courtly in bearing, genial in his intercourse, firm in his convictions, and always an inspiration to his associates who constantly sought his counsel because of his wide, accurate knowledge and sound judgment. He helped many young men in special courses outside the class room and for years was an indefatigable leader of a group of faculty members engaged in regular advanced study. He was a member of the leading scientific and education societies of the country and from time to time held chief offices in several of them. He was a deacon of the First Congregational Church in Minneapolis, a director of St. Anthony Falls Bank, the Pillsbury House Settlement, and the Barnard-Cope Manufacturing Company.

[*Yale Univ. Obit. Record*, 1921–22; *Minneapolis Journal*, Dec. 12, 1921; *Report of the Trigintennial Meeting . . . Class of 1867, Yale* (1897); *Supplementary Record of the Class of 1867 in Yale Coll.* (1912); a copy of a biographical article by Eddy's colleague Prof. A. E. Haynes in the *Minn. Engineer*, Mar. 1912 with margin notes made by Eddy himself; letters from his brother Willard Eddy and his daughter Ruth Eddy Keyes; personal acquaintance.] J.Z.

**EDDY, MARY MORSE BAKER** (July 16, 1821–Dec. 3, 1910), founder of the Christian Science Church, was a product of New England. She was born on a hillside farm in New Hampshire; she traced her descent from English settlers in Massachusetts in the seventeenth century; and she found her inspiration and her first followers among people who sprang from the same racial stock as herself. She was the youngest of six children born to Mark Baker and his wife Abigail Barnard Ambrose, daughter of Na-

thaniel Ambrose of Pembroke, all belonging to plain yeoman stock. According to tradition, Mark Baker was a shrewd, hard-working farmer, somewhat self-assertive, but honest and pious. The farm which he cultivated and on which Mary was born, lay in the village of Bow; but he gave up the attempt to make his hillside acres productive when Mary was fifteen, and moved to Sanbornton Bridge (now Tilton). She is described as a delicate child, dainty and rather fragile in appearance, and subject to hysterical seizures (Georgine Milmine in *McClure's Magazine*, January 1907). Just what pathological conditions may have caused this hysteria can now only be conjectured. That the child suffered from some nervous ailment seems clear; but that she made the most of it when her will was crossed seems equally clear. At her best she was bright and winsome; and as the youngest member of the family she was treated with indulgence. Inevitably she became an object of interest to herself and to village folk. She gave herself little airs as one to whom consideration was due; and she rather enjoyed the distinction which delicate health gave. She was described by elderly folk who remembered her as fair of face, with wavy brown hair (*Ibid.*). Her expressive eyes, shaded by long lashes, reflected her moods and remained indeed throughout her life her greatest charm.

Mary's education was desultory. She said in later years that her father kept her out of school a great deal, believing her brain too large for her body. She read much, however, and even, according to her own statement, studied Hebrew, Greek and Latin under the tutelage of her brother Albert (*Retrospection and Introspection*, p. 10, edition of 1898). There is nothing in her writings to suggest that she progressed far in the study of languages, ancient or modern; and despite her statement that she was familiar with Murray's *Grammar* at the age of ten, she exhibited little regard for syntax to the end of her days. Her early letters reveal a characteristic that persisted throughout life—a disposition to see things through the prism of her emotions and to embroider the humdrum facts of everyday life. In a God-fearing household like that of Mark Baker, religious training was as much a part of the daily regimen as eating and drinking. Mary's experience differed in no wise from that of the average New England girl of the time. She was received into membership in the Tilton Congregational Church at the age of seventeen, after some doubts had been expressed of her soundness on doctrinal points. In New England at this time there were currents of thought that must have impinged upon her mind directly or indirectly. The transcendental movement was in full swing as she grew to womanhood. Within a few miles of her home were colonies of Shakers whose strange ideas and practises were matter of common talk. Believers in Spiritualism were numerous in these frontier areas of New England. Mesmerism too was much discussed. The family physician of the Bakers dabbled in mesmerism and even tried the effect of mental suggestion upon Mary Baker for the relief of her hysteria (*McClure's Magazine*, January 1907). A sensitive girl might well have fancied that she heard mysterious voices (*Retrospection and Introspection*, pp. 7–9) and felt herself surrounded by occult forces which she could not define or understand.

In December 1843 Mary Baker married George Washington Glover, a friend of her elder brother, who had removed to Charleston, S. C., and there become a contractor and builder. After a few brief months of married life he fell a victim to "bilious fever" and died in Wilmington, N. C. (*Wilmington Chronicle*, July 3, 1844), leaving her dependent upon the charity of the local lodge of Masons. With their aid she returned to her old home, where she gave birth, in September 1844, to her only son George. Unhappy years followed. Ill-health, slender means, and a sense of humiliating dependence upon relatives, left her in no enviable position. For a time she taught school, with indifferent success. She had indeed no training for self-support, and more and more she gave way to hopeless inertia, living sometimes with her married sister Abigail and sometimes in her father's house. She soon became a chronic invalid, suffering—so her official biographer states—from "a spinal weakness which caused spasmodic seizures, followed by prostration which amounted to a complete nervous collapse" (Sibyl Wilbur, *The Life of Mary Baker Eddy*, edition of 1929, p. 54). At such times her father would take her in his arms and rock her to sleep like a tired child. The practical Abigail had a huge cradle made, which the man-of-all-work or some village boy would keep in gentle motion. In 1849 Mary lost her mother and a year later saw the vacant place occupied by a step-mother. Then her four-year old son was sent away to live with her former nurse who had married and moved to North Groton, N. H., and the young widow was left to her own devices.

Release from this unhappy period of widowhood came in 1853 when she married a relative of the second Mrs. Baker, Dr. Daniel Patterson, an itinerant dentist and homeopathist. They first took up their abode in Franklin, but soon moved to North Groton and finally to Rumney—little New Hampshire villages, where for nine years

they almost disappear from view. That they lived in indigent circumstances is clear. Patterson was frequently absent, leaving his wife to a lonely and cheerless existence. In these long years she was often ill; and when in 1862 Patterson injudiciously visited the battlefield of Bull Run, fell into the hands of the Confederates, and was sent to Libby Prison, she returned to her sister's home in Sanbornton Bridge, a helpless invalid. Two or three months in a sanitorium did little for her, and she determined to carry out an earlier purpose and consult Dr. Phineas Parkhurst Quimby [*q.v.*] of Portland, Me., who had acquired a more than local fame by his cures. In October 1862 she presented herself at his office, a rather pitiful figure. Three weeks later, in a letter published in the *Portland Courier,* Nov. 7, 1862, she declared that by virtue of the great principle discovered by Dr. Quimby, who "speaks as never man spoke and heals as never man healed since Christ," she was on the highway to complete health. She returned to her sister's an ardent disciple of Quimby (letters to Quimby, printed in Horatio W. Dresser's *The Quimby Manuscripts,* edition of 1921, pp. 146–59). Several times during the following year, she wrote to him and received absent treatment for various small ills. The death of Quimby in 1866 caused her deep distress and evoked an affectionate tribute in verse, which was printed in a Lynn newspaper (*Ibid.,* pp. 163–64).

Meantime her husband had reappeared and she joined him in Lynn, Mass., where he opened a dentist's office; but they separated in the summer of 1866, and seven years later Mrs. Patterson secured a divorce on the ground of desertion, with permission to resume her former name, Mary M. Glover. She was now (in 1866) forty-five years of age. She was in destitute circumstances; she had lost her father; she was estranged from her sister; she had not seen her son for many years; she was not in good health; she had no certain means of earning a livelihood; and she had no friends to whom she could turn for help. Referring to these years in after life, she wrote: "I then withdrew from society about three years,—to ponder my mission, to search the Scriptures, to find the Science of Mind" (*Retrospection and Introspection,* p. 29). Glimpses here and there behind the curtain which she let fall over these years reveal that she resided in at least five different towns in eastern Massachusetts and found domicile in seven families in turn (affidavits and depositions printed in *McClure's Magazine,* April 1907). From time to time she sought a livelihood by teaching and practising what she called a new system of healing. Her pupils and patients seem to have been chiefly among Spiritualists. Four of the seven households in which she lived professed Spiritualism and one of her first advertisements appeared in a Spiritualist publication (the *Banner of Light,* July 4, 1868). She was still loyal to Quimby and professed no higher purpose than to disseminate his teachings, making use of copies of one of his manuscripts which she called "The Science of Man" (for the origin of these copies see statement of George Quimby in H. W. Dresser's *The Quimby Manuscripts,* pp. 437–38). She was wont to impress people by intimating that she was writing a book; and as early as 1866 she endeavored to find a publisher for a manuscript which may have been a first draft of *Science and Health* (*McClure's Magazine,* April 1907).

On her return to Lynn in 1870, she took into partnership an engaging young man by the name of Richard Kennedy. They rented an apartment of five rooms which served for offices and lodgings, and he hung out his shingle as Dr. Kennedy. Despite his youth—he was barely of age—and want of credentials, he soon enjoyed a thriving practise, while his partner devoted herself to teaching and writing. It was a profitable alliance while it lasted. When they separated two years later, Mrs. Glover had accumulated enough capital to buy the two-and-a-half story house at 8 Broad Street which later became a veritable shrine for her followers. Her first students paid a hundred dollars for their lessons. Subsequently the tuition for twelve lessons was raised to three hundred dollars. This fee, she afterward said, greatly troubled her; but "a strange providence" finally led her to accept it (*Retrospection and Introspection,* p. 61).

Gradually Mrs. Glover lost her sense of dependence upon Quimby and his teachings. The manuscripts which she put into the hands of her students no longer bore his name but contained matter of her own composition (*McClure's Magazine,* May 1907). Little by little, with infinite effort, in her third-floor study under the roof, she was trying to give coherent expression to the "metaphysical" system which she believed would mark an epoch in religious thought and practise. Except for her indomitable will, the task would have been beyond her powers, for she was essentially an ignorant woman—ignorant not only of the very metaphysical terms which she employed, but of some of the elementary facts of human anatomy and physiology and of the requirements of correct usage in composition. Yet few manuscripts have had a more remarkable influence upon American religious history than that which finally found its way into print in

1875 under the title *Science and Health*. Only a thousand copies were printed and these were paid for in advance by two of the author's students (*Ibid.*). Eternal Mind, she wrote in her first chapter, is the source of all being. There is no matter. The dualism of mind and matter is an error. What the five senses report are only beliefs of mortal mind. "Disease is caused by mind alone" (p. 334). Science is the wisdom of the Eternal Mind revealed through Jesus Christ, who taught the power of Mind (*i.e.* Truth, God, Spirit) to overcome the illusions of sin, sickness, and death. Hence the appropriateness of calling metaphysical science "Christian Science." The mission of the metaphysical healer is to put an end to the illusory conflict of mind and body by dispelling the belief in disease and so bringing the patient into harmony with Truth. "The basis of all disease is error or belief; destroy the belief and the sick will recover" (p. 418). "You can prevent or cure scrofula, hereditary disease, etc., in just the ratio you expel from mind a belief in the transmission of disease, and destroy its mental images" (p. 398). Moreover, "Healing the sick through mind instead of matter, enables us to heal the absent as well as the present" (p. 348). In subsequent editions, this doctrine is given more pointed application. "We must understand that the cause and cure of all disease rest with the mind, and address ourselves to the task of preventing the images of disease taking form in thought and effacing the forms of disease in the mind" (edition of 1883, p. 139). "If the auditory nerve is destroyed and the optic nerve paralyzed, that need not occasion deafness and blindness, for mortal mind must say, I am deaf and blind, and believe it, to make it so" (p. 159). "Recollect it is not the body, but mortal mind, that says food is undigested, that the gastric juices, the nervous tissues, and mucous membrane are diseased" (p. 202). "Mind constructs the body, and with its own materials instead of matter; hence no broken bones or dislocations can occur" (p. 220).

Here is the essence of the gospel of Mary Baker Glover and the key to her system of therapeutics. That she owed much to Quimby cannot now be doubted, in the light of his published manuscripts (H. W. Dresser, *The Quimby Manuscripts*, edition of 1921). It is highly probable, however, that she owed much also to the writings of Warren Felt Evans [*q.v.*], who had been a pupil of Quimby and who had published *The Mental-Cure* as early as 1869. It remains true, nevertheless, that in spite of her literary helplessness, her tiresome reiterations, and her faulty logic, she gave a certain propulsive force to her thought which both Quimby and Evans lacked. The glowing assurance that mind working in harmony with the Eternal could triumph over bodily infirmities often brought comfort and faith where mere logic would not convince. In later years, she and her followers laid emphasis on the essential unreality of evil, holding that even sin was primarily wrong thinking (article on "Christian Science" by C. B. Smith in *The Encyclopedia Americana*, VI, 613). Christian Science thus appeared as a spiritually educative force, "interpreting and demonstrating the divine Principle and rule of universal harmony" (Mrs. Eddy, *Rudimental Divine Science*). In this aspect it made a strong appeal to those who felt the need of a sustaining faith in eternal goodness.

It is significant of her compelling personality that Mrs. Glover could always find men and women to become willing servitors in her little court, yet no queen could have been more arbitrary or more difficult to serve. She soon found a substitute for Kennedy in Daniel H. Spofford, who became her ardent admirer and devoted disciple and her first sales-manager. On New Year's Day 1877, Mrs. Glover startled Spofford and her other followers by marrying a new recruit, Asa Gilbert Eddy. She was then in her fifty-sixth year. Eddy was a simple soul of humble origin, capable of a sort of animal-like devotion, but possessed of limited intelligence. Even his bride wrote of his "latent" noble qualities of mind and heart (*McClure's Magazine*, July 1907). Within a year Spofford went into exile in disgrace, for the Christian Scientists' Association notified him that he had been expelled for "immorality." What Mrs. Eddy meant by immorality is best explained by a passage in the second edition (1878) of *Science and Health*. This rare "Noah's Ark" edition, of which only two hundred copies were hastily printed, consisted of two chapters from the first edition and of three new chapters, of which that on mesmerism is most significant. In it the author gave public utterance for the first time to that belief in mental malpractise which offers such a strange contrast to her fundamental tenets. She had come firmly to believe in malicious animal magnetism ("M.A.M."), a mental influence which evil-minded persons could exert, to produce disease or misfortune in others. The doctrine had particular application to Spofford and Kennedy, who, she believed, possessed the power to do her and her cause irreparable harm. Kennedy became in her overwrought imagination a "mental assassin" capable of the darkest crimes. Her prose style never rose to greater heights than in the chapter on "Demonology," in the third edi-

tion (1881) of *Science and Health,* when she denounced "this Nero of today." To counteract this baleful influence she devised a method of treatment which became a regular routine for her household in later years. Singly or in groups the inmates would set their minds upon warding off the evil that she vaguely apprehended or specifically mentioned. (These "watches" are described in minute detail by Adam H. Dickey in his *Memoirs of Mary Baker Eddy,* 1927, pp. 45, 107, 123–24.)

The years of Mrs. Eddy's married life with her third husband can hardly be described as happy, nor her mental outlook as generous and charitable. Between 1877 and 1879 she was involved in several litigations both as plaintiff and defendant. Three times in 1878 she brought suit to recover funds which she alleged had been wrongfully withheld. Two of these were decided against her. She was sued by a former student and compelled to pay the referee's award for secretarial and other services rendered by this student. She countenanced at least the strange suit brought by another student against Spofford for injuries sustained from Spofford's practise of malicious magnetism. This suit never came to trial (*McClure's Magazine,* May, July 1907). When Asa Eddy's health began to fail, his wife was certain that he was also a victim of malicious animal magnetism. His condition became so serious after their removal to Boston, however, that, not trusting to her own therapy, she called in a physician, who reported the patient as suffering from an organic disease of the heart. On June 3, 1882, Asa Eddy died of this malady, according to an autopsy performed by this same physician, at Mrs. Eddy's request. In an interview published in the *Boston Post,* June 5, 1882, however, she declared that her husband had died of "mesmeric poisoning" mentally administered by one of her former students, "a malpractitioner" who had been heard to say that "he would follow us to the grave." Had she herself treated her husband in time, she averred, she could have saved his life; but "after a certain amount of the mesmeric poison has been administered it cannot be averted." This malpractitioner was probably Edward J. Arens, whom Asa Eddy had denounced in a preface to the third edition of *Science and Health* as "a certain man" who was publishing parts of the book in a pamphlet of his own. In 1883 Mrs. Eddy brought action against Arens for infringing her copyright, and won her case.

Though Mrs. Eddy did not at first desire an organization to support the new faith (*Science and Health,* 1875, pp. 166–67), she yielded to

Eddy

practical exigencies. The informal group of students who called themselves Christian Scientists in 1875 formed "The Christian Scientists' Association" in 1876; and with her active support they sought and secured a charter as "The Church of Christ, Scientist," Aug. 23, 1879. For many years the membership was small, so small that the Lynn meetings were held in private houses, and it was weakened in October 1881 by the withdrawal of eight prominent leaders who stated that they could no longer follow Mrs. Eddy, because of her "frequent ebullitions of temper, love of money, and the appearance of hypocrisy" (*McClure's Magazine,* August 1907). Two others withdrew because they "could no longer entertain the subject of mesmerism," which seemed to form the main theme of Mrs. Eddy's Sunday talks. Though the faithful remnant indignantly repudiated these charges, Mrs. Eddy found herself a prophet without honor in Lynn and determined to take up her residence in Boston. She had already (1881) secured a charter for another organization, the Massachusetts Metaphysical College, which was to be the training school for practitioners. When she and her husband took up their abode at 569 Columbus Avenue, in the spring of 1882, the college moved with them. In the nine years of its existence, it had no other regular instructor but Mrs. Eddy, and for a short time, her adopted son.

On Apr. 14, 1883, appeared the first number of the *Journal of Christian Science,* a small eight-page publication, with Mary B. Glover Eddy as editor. It not only gave her desire to write free rein, but it carried her influence beyond the confines of New England. It reveals many facets of her interesting personality, for it printed not only her editorials, sermons, and Bible lessons, but her verses, her answers to questions, her acknowledgments of personal gifts, and her caustic replies to critics. But she found the burden heavier than she anticipated, and after a year shifted the responsibility to a succession of unhappy editors, while never allowing control to pass out of her hands. She continued to contribute to its columns and many of her contributions were afterward printed with substantial changes in her *Miscellaneous Writings* (1896). These were not always original productions. She took freely from printed sources without acknowledgment whatever she needed to give pith and point to her thought (*The Christian Science Watchman,* vol. V, 1929. See also Appendix B in E. F. Dakin, *Mrs. Eddy,* ed. of 1930). The "Healing Department" of the *Journal* with its reports of alleged cures undoubtedly won many recruits. Institutes and academies sprang up

which became feeders for the Metaphysical College; and every graduate with a diploma became in turn a practitioner and a missionary. In January 1886 the National Christian Science Association was formed and in February a general convention was held in New York.

In this same year appeared a new edition of *Science and Health.* Never content with her handiwork Mrs. Eddy published edition after edition, with various and sundry alterations. This sixteenth edition differed from preceding revisions, however, not merely in general outward form—it was printed in one volume instead of two—but in literary style and content. It had been prepared by Rev. James Henry Wiggin, formerly a Unitarian minister and then employed as literary adviser and editor by the University Press at Cambridge. After her contacts with people of cultivation, Mrs. Eddy had become somewhat conscious of her literary deficiencies; and she never exhibited greater shrewdness than when she brought her manuscript to Wiggin for final revision (Livingston Wright, *How Rev. Wiggin Rewrote Mrs. Eddy's Book,* n.d., reprinted from the New York *World,* Nov. 4, 1906). What Wiggin did was not merely "to defend my grammatical construction," as Mrs. Eddy afterward alleged (*New York American,* Nov. 22, 1906), but to rewrite large portions of the book as only a skilful literary editor could, giving clarity to the thought so far as it could be understood, excising irrelevant matter, and reducing vague forms of expression to simple, idiomatic language. Yet Mrs. Eddy continued to make changes from time to time, and the changes were always a source of profit, for the faithful were always warned to use the latest edition. Her yearly royalties, never less than a dollar a volume, amounted to nearly $19,000 in 1895 (*McClure's Magazine,* April 1908), and could not have fallen short of $50,000 by 1900. In January 1888, the *Journal* announced that Mrs. Eddy had moved into her new house at 385 Commonwealth Avenue, which had been purchased for $40,000.

Already letters printed in the *Journal* and unsigned editorials were suggesting that Mrs. Eddy was "God-sent to the world as much as any character of Sacred Writ" and that perhaps it was left to her to supplement the New Testament and explain the miracles of Jesus. "We are witnessing," said one enthusiastic follower, "the transfer of the Gospel from male to female trust" (sermon reprinted in the *Journal,* April 1889). When Mrs. Eddy appeared in person to address the delegates at the third annual convention of the national association at Chicago June 13, 1888, the entire audience rose to greet her; and after she had finished, scores of believers who had been cured of disease or hoped to be, pressed forward so that they might perchance touch the hem of her garment (letter to the *Boston Traveller,* printed in *McClure's Magazine,* February 1908). She might well have believed that her apotheosis had come.

Signs of dissent in the Boston organization, however, were not wanting. Julius A. Dresser, who had also sat at the feet of Quimby, now pointed out with damaging particularity the indebtedness of Mrs. Eddy to the doctor (*The True History of Mental Science,* 1887). Then a Christian Science practitioner who had attended her own daughter in child-birth was prosecuted for the death of the mother and child; and Mrs. Eddy, thoroughly alarmed, tried to clear her skirts by having the "Committee on Publication" state in a public letter (*Boston Herald,* Apr. 29, 1888), that while the woman had attended her course in obstetrics at the Metaphysical College for a term, she was not fitted to be an *accoucheur* (*sic*). The Christian Science Association, however, came to the defense of the unhappy woman and she was acquitted. These and other incidents shook the faith of some of the Boston Scientists and thirty-six dissenters withdrew from the organization.

Soon after the death of Asa Eddy, there entered into the employ of his widow, Cal.in A. Frye, a young machinist from Lawrence, Mass., who had become a Christian Scientist. Of all her many followers he is in many ways the most remarkable. From 1882 until her death, he served her as steward, secretary, bookkeeper, and footman. In July 1888, another individual entered her household who was regarded with some jealousy by the faithful Frye. This was Dr. Ebenezer Johnson Foster, a homeopathic physician of Waterbury, Vt., who had been a student in the Metaphysical College. In November, though he was forty-one years of age, he was formally adopted as a son, taking the name of Ebenezer J. Foster Eddy. "Mother Eddy" was now sixty-eight and in sore need of the sustaining strength of youth. She was tired of students, tired of turmoil, tired of the endless struggle against malicious animal magnetism. In the following spring she transferred her residence to Concord, N. H. "Our dear Mother in God," announced the *Journal* (May 1889), "withdraws herself from our midst and goes up into the Mount for higher communings"; and Mother Eddy further fortified her retreat by issuing Seven Fixed Rules, forbidding the faithful to consult her "verbally or through letters" on matters public or private.

A rude awakening, however, awaited those who fancied that she had withdrawn from active control of the church. It was in these years of retirement that she built the church organization which, next to *Science and Health,* is her most enduring monument.

By a much-criticized financial transaction in 1888, Mrs. Eddy had secured ownership of the lot on Falmouth Street, Boston, which had been acquired as a site for the church by individual gifts (*McClure's Magazine,* March 1908). On September 1, 1892, she conveyed this lot to four trustees, constituting them a perpetual body to be known as the Christian Science Board of Directors, with power to fill vacancies (Deed of Trust, *Church Manual,* 1895). Within five years this board was to build a church edifice costing not less than $50,000 and to maintain regular Christian Science services therein. If the board failed to carry out the terms of the deed, title was to revert to Mary Baker G. Eddy, her heirs and assigns. On Sept. 23, 1892, twelve loyal followers whom she had selected established The First Church of Christ, Scientist, by adopting the rules and by-laws which, she declared, were "impelled by a power not one's own." These twelve with subsequent additions were known as "First Members" and passed upon all candidates for admission. Membership in branch churches did not confer *ipso facto* membership in The Mother Church, nor for that matter did previous membership in the Boston church. There was only one Mother Church. It was officially "The" Mother Church. Branch churches might take the title of First Church of Christ, Scientist, or Second Church of Christ, Scientist, but might not use the article "The" (Art. 12 of By-laws, *Church Manual,* 1895). Here, then, was a national organization made to hand, deriving its powers, its body of doctrine, and its property from a single source.

Mrs. Eddy masked her autocratic authority under the gentle title "Pastor Emeritus"; but she could no more refrain from consolidating her authority by changes in the *Church Manual* than she could desist from revising *Science and Health.* The subsequent history of the Mother Church in her lifetime is written in the steadily expanding by-laws which she dictated. Two other institutions attest her business sagacity: the board of lectureship and the committee on publication. Members of the first were charged with the duty of defending Christian Science against critics and of bearing testimony to the facts pertaining to the life of the Pastor Emeritus. The committee on publication, consisting of one man responsible to the Board of Directors

Eddy

and through it to Mrs. Eddy, was to correct false newspaper articles, and, if need be, bring pressure to bear upon editors who did not yield readily to suggestion. Such a "committee" was to be named in every state of the Union (Dakin's *Mrs. Eddy,* 1929, pp. 259–72, 392–95, contains an excellent account of these institutions).

Whatever may have been Mrs. Eddy's motives for retiring to Concord, it proved to be one of the most sagacious moves in her career. In these long years of absence from the Mother Church—she visited Boston only four times in nineteen years—she escaped the daily contacts with her followers which often brought a degree of disillusionment to them. In retirement she acquired a reputation for saintliness which added immeasurably to her influence. To those who saw her daily, however, she was no saint, but a frail elderly woman pursued by delusions of persecution, forever talking about malicious animal magnetism, and beset by strange superstitions. She was indeed a curiously complex personality, capable of moments of religious exaltation, but capable also of conduct that was unlovely and ruthless, when her will-to-power was crossed. Though she could be gentle and gracious, she cannot fairly be described as unselfish or generous. She often berated Frye like a common scold (E. F. Dakin, *Mrs. Eddy,* ed. of 1930, Appendix A). She evinced no real affection for her son, though she kept up an irregular correspondence with him, had his children vaccinated at her expense, and loaned him considerable sums of money. His illiteracy worried her. "I am even yet too proud to have you come among my society," she wrote in 1898 (N. Y. *World,* Mar. 11, 1907). She crushed possible rivals ruthlessly; and in the case of Mrs. Josephine Woodbury she had to meet a libel suit for a scorching message to the Church on "the Babylonish woman." Only one witness would testify, however, that this outburst was directed specifically against Mrs. Woodbury, who lost her case (see Dakin, *Mrs. Eddy,* Ch. XXII).

Her nocturnal paroxysms, as Foster Eddy called her strange seizures, increased in frequency. At such times either Frye or Foster Eddy would administer a morphine tablet or a physician would be called in to administer a hypodermic (Frye diary, May 3, 4, 1903). From these attacks, nevertheless, she would rise with amazing energy, her mind never more on the alert. Her intimates remarked that some of her most important *coups* followed these seizures. It was out of this tragic experience that another "revelation" came. In the edition of *Science and Health* published in 1905 appeared for the first

time the significant statement (p. 464), that, whenever pain too violent for mental treatment occurs, a Scientist may call a surgeon to administer a hypodermic injection. When the pain has ceased, he should "handle his own case mentally." In 1896, after Foster Eddy had been dismissed, Frye became her main support, not only ministering to her personal needs, but acting as confidential secretary, steward, and financial agent. As she grew more feeble with advancing years and a serious disease, she became almost a mythical figure, so that even her directors rarely saw her. Rumors spread that she was in the power of Frye and designing men who were diverting her income to their own use. It was even said that she was dead and that another woman rode behind the drawn curtains of her carriage.

It was these rumors that moved the New York *World* and other newspapers to ascertain the true state of things at Pleasant View. With amazing courage Mrs. Eddy yielded to their importunities, granted an interview, and faced nine reporters on Oct. 30, 1906—a shrinking, pathetic figure. Not satisfied with this achievement, the *World* set on foot the inquiries which eventuated in the suit brought by the "Next Friends"—her son and his daughter and a nephew—to secure the appointment of a receiver of her properties, alleging that she was mentally incapable of managing her affairs and that she was under the control of designing men, naming the chief officials of the church. Thereupon Gen. Frank S. Streeter, counsel for Mrs. Eddy, advised her to execute a deed of trust, placing all her assets in the hands of three trustees. At once Senator William E. Chandler, counsel for the plaintiffs, challenged the competence of Mrs. Eddy to create such a trusteeship. Three masters appointed by the court then examined her to test her sanity, but there the prosecution halted and the defendants settled out of court by liberal financial provisions for the heirs, including Foster Eddy.

These sensational news items appeared in the press just at a time when *McClure's Magazine* was publishing the biography by Georgine Milmine. Greatly perturbed, Mrs. Eddy determined that the church should have a trustworthy newspaper of its own; and eventually she gave her approval of an official biography. The founding of *The Christian Science Monitor* and the publication of Mrs. Sibyl Wilbur O'Brien's *Life of Mary Baker Eddy* followed. One other decision she made: she would leave the place where she had been humiliated and where "M.A.M." was so actively at work. On Sunday, Jan. 28, 1908, preceded by a pilot locomotive for safety's sake, and accompanied by a physician, she took train for



Chestnut Hill, where a spacious mansion had been prepared for her. From her carriage she was carried, a mere shadow of her former self, in the arms of a stalwart coachman to an upstairs room in her last domicile (private information).

Her days were now numbered and she knew it (MS. letter to Archibald McLelland, Aug. 18, 1908). For some years she had suffered intensely from a fatal disease, probably gall-stones, and she had sought relief from several Concord physicians at various times (printed statement of A. A. Beauchamp and J. V. Dittemore, Oct. 9, 1928; Frye diary, May 3, 1903). As the disease progressed, only hypodermic injections of morphine would relieve her agony. At Chestnut Hill several Christian Scientists were instructed how to give hypodermics (E. F. Dakin, *Mrs. Eddy*, ed. of 1930, p. 514 note), and she frequently had the services of a regular physician (Frye diary, Aug. 3, 1909). There were times when the pain became unbearable and the Chestnut Hill mansion little better than a "mad-house" (Dickey, *Memoirs, passim;* Frye's diary; the testimony of inmates). In her rational moments Mrs. Eddy was harassed by fears of the growing prestige of Mrs. Augusta Stetson [*q.v.*] in New York. Not less concerned were the directors of the Mother Church to know who would succeed the Pastor Emeritus whose consent was still necessary to every by-law. Mrs. Stetson finally went the way of every rival. At a word from Mrs. Eddy she was expelled from the Mother Church. But the question of succession remained unanswered, when a year later the body of the Pastor Emeritus was borne to its last resting place at Mount Auburn. Three notable achievements survived her: a religious organization with nearly one hundred thousand members, a book of which about four hundred thousand copies had been sold, and an estate appraised at more than two and a half million dollars.

[The most useful source of information in print is still the series of articles by Georgine Milmine in *McClure's Magazine*, 1907–08: "Mary Baker G. Eddy: the Story of her Life and the History of Christian Science." Though sharply critical of Mrs. Eddy, they contain invaluable documentary material. The papers of William E. Chandler in the custody of the New Hampshire Historical Society yield interesting information about the origin and course of the Next Friends' suit. The writer has aiso been allowed to examine the unique collection of Mr. John V. Dittemore, which contains many unpublished letters of Mrs. Eddy and large portions of the diary of Calvin Frye for the last few years of her life. Her own reminiscences and her official biography have little historical value except as they reveal the impression which Mrs. Eddy desired to make upon her readers. The most impartial and scholarly biography is Edwin F. Dakin's *Mrs. Eddy* (1929), which contains a bibliography of her writings and of the controversial literature about her and her work. A new edition (1930) has additional footnotes and two

valuable appendices, one of which contains extracts from the Frye diary.] A. J.

**EDDY, THOMAS** (Sept. 5, 1758–Sept. 16, 1827), reformer, was the son of James and Mary (Darragh) Eddy of Ireland, who had been Presbyterians in early life, but had joined the Society of Friends before removing to Philadelphia. In this city Thomas Eddy was born. He was apparently influenced even in early youth to serious ideas and unselfish purposes by the religious atmosphere of his home and especially by his association with William Savery, who later became a famous Quaker preacher. His family was of Tory sympathies and Eddy felt the "bitter spirit of persecution" shown by the "Whigs" in Philadelphia after the war. On Mar. 20, 1782, he married Hannah Hartshorne. After experiencing business reverses in various localities he settled in New York City and became successful as an insurance broker. "About 1792," he writes, "the public debt of the United States was funded; this afforded an opportunity for people to speculate in the public funds. In this business I made a good deal of money." He was also successful as an insurance underwriter, and was soon free to devote himself largely to philanthropic activities.

His greatest work as a humanitarian was in the field of prison reform. He became imbued with the progressive ideas of Beccaria, Montesquieu, William Penn, and John Howard. In 1796 he and Gen. Philip John Schuyler journeyed to Philadelphia and examined carefully the penitentiary there (the Walnut Street jail), which then embodied advanced ideas. Eddy and his friends persuaded the New York legislature to authorize two similar penitentiaries in New York. Only one was built at the time, the so-called "Newgate Prison," in Greenwich Village. Thomas Eddy helped superintend the building operations and then acted for several years as inspector and agent of the penitentiary. This prison had no single cells, however, and Eddy soon became convinced that the single-cell system, especially for hardened criminals, was desirable. It had been tried in a small way in England, and in Philadelphia, and Thomas Eddy, by his ardent advocacy of it, aided in its further extension. For more than twenty-five years he devoted himself unsparingly to the reform of prisons and of the penal code in New York. His *Account of the State Prison or Penitentiary House in the City of New York* (1801) is an important document in the history of prison reform. His last great service in this field was to defend and justify the main features of his penitentiary system in 1825 when it was being sharply criticized because of lax administration.



Eddy was apparently interested in or actively associated with most of the progressive movements of his day. He helped DeWitt Clinton initiate and carry through the project of the Erie Canal, and was active in the New York Corresponding Association for the Promotion of Internal Improvement. In 1810 he published "Observations on Canal Navigation" in the *American Medical and Philosophical Register* (N. Y.). He was an active supporter of the New York Hospital and helped to found the Bloomingdale Asylum for the Insane, and wrote *Hints for Introducing an Improved Metnod of Treating the Insane in the Asylum,* published in 1815. He opposed imprisonment for debt. In 1805 he helped establish a free school for poor children in New York City, which was one of the important steps toward a public school system. He helped found the House of Refuge, the New York Savings Bank, and the New York Bible Society. He was an anti-slavery advocate, and he served on Quaker committees to visit and aid the American Indians. Yet prison reform was his great life-work, and because of his labors in that movement he was sometimes called by his contemporaries, "The John Howard of America."

[S. L. Knapp, *The Life of Thomas Eddy* (1834), an unorganized collection of narrative and eulogy by the author and others, and reprints of the autobiography, correspondence, and reform writings of Eddy; H. E. Barnes, *The Repression of Crime* (1926); W. W. Campbell, *Life and Writings of DeWitt Clinton* (1849); Letter of John W. Francis (on Eddy) in N. Y. Pub. Lib.; brief biographical sketches in the *N. Y. Mirror,* Mar. 8, 1834; Freeman Hunt, *Lives of American Merchants* (1858), I, 329–43.] R. W. K.

**EDEBOHLS, GEORGE MICHAEL** (May 8, 1853–Aug. 8, 1908), surgeon, was the son of German immigrants, Henry and Catherine (Brull) Edebohls, who came to the United States about 1843. His father, a Hanoverian, was a dairyman in that part of Manhattan known as "Little Germany." As a boy Edebohls attended De La Salle Institute and St. Francis Xavier's College, from which he went to St. John's College, Fordham, N. Y., graduating B.A. in 1871. He then studied medicine at the College of Physicians and Surgeons of Columbia College (M.D. 1875), and for nearly five years thereafter served as a house officer in St. Francis' Hospital, New York City, where he received a wide training and came into close contact with the poor of the East Side. In 1880 he went to Europe intending to study diseases of the eye and ear. He evidently abandoned this idea and occupied his time by filling in the gaps in his theoretical knowledge. On his return he engaged in general practise, but with only moderate success. He then turned his attention to gynecology and in 1887 was ap-

pointed gynecologist to St. Francis' Hospital. Possessing a cool head, dextrous fingers and an excellent knowledge of anatomy, he soon earned a reputation as a gynecologist of sound judgment. His minor contributions to medicine were technical. He invented an operating table, a speculum, leg holders, needle holders and other devices. His name will go down to posterity, however, as the originator of Edebohls's operation for Bright's disease, which consisted in exposing the diseased kidneys and stripping off their fibrous coverings or capsules. Though the practise received much unfavorable comment at the time and is now seldom used, the idea underlying it was original and theoretically plausible.

Edebohls's contemporaries held him in high esteem both as a surgeon and as a man. He was tall and erect, grave, dignified and polite, withal somewhat retiring and excessively modest. He disliked controversy, feeling that whatever he contributed to the advance of the medicine of his day should stand or fall on its merits. He was an excellent teacher, presenting his subject clearly and simply. He also wrote well, and in addition to his *Surgical Treatment of Bright's Disease* (1904) contributed freely to the medical literature of his day. On Sept. 19, 1882, he married Barbara Leyendecker, by whom he had several children. While visiting his married daughter in Mexico in 1907 he, with his wife and two sons, contracted typhus fever, of which his eldest son died. The disease is said to have left him in a weakened condition. He died in 1908 of Hodgkin's disease, and was buried at Blauvelt, N. Y., where his father had owned a farm when he was a boy.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Dict. of Am. Medic. Biog.* (1928); *Am. Jour. of Obstetrics*, May 1909; *Deutsche Medizinische Wochenschrift*, vol. XXXIV, 1908, p. 1860.] G.B.

**EDEN, CHARLES** (1673–Mar. 26, 1722), governor of North Carolina under the Lords Proprietors, 1714–22, used the armorial bearings of the family of Eden of the county palatine of Durham in the North of England. Of the same connection was Sir Robert Eden [*q.v.*], last Royal governor of Maryland. Charles Eden's appointment to the governorship received the approval of Queen Anne at a meeting of the Royal Council on May 18, 1713. It was a year, however, before he came to America, where he was sworn in before the North Carolina Provincial Council "holden at ye house of Capt. John Hecklefield in Little River on ffriday the 28th day of May, Ano. Dom. 1714." Gov. Eden was deeply interested in the religious development of the province, and on Jan. 3, 1715, was chosen a vestryman of "the Eastern Parish of Chowan Precinct" (still existing under the name of St. Paul's Parish) on Queen Anne's Creek. Under the constitution or "Grand Model" framed for the government of Carolina by John Locke, several grades of society were created, the highest title of nobility being "Landgrave." At a meeting of the Lords Proprietors held at St. James's Palace on Feb. 19, 1718, Eden was made a landgrave, being the last person ever to receive that title. His reputation suffered somewhat at one time during his administration from his reported leniency toward the ex-pirate Edward Teach, commonly known as "Black Beard," who had accepted the King's pardon in 1717, but had not, it was believed, entirely discontinued his lawless practises. Enemies of the governor even hinted that he had shared in some of the pirate's questionably gotten gains. Eden, however, presented before the Council a complete story of his dealings with Teach, and ultimately received their approbation. He married Mrs. Penelope Golland, a widow, but left no children. In the eighth year of his governorship he died and was buried at Eden House, his seat in Bertie County. Shortly after his death the name of the town of Queen Anne's Creek was changed to Edenton in his honor. In 1889 his remains, those of "Penelope Eden, his virtuous Consort," and the original monument over them both were removed to the burial ground of St. Paul's Church in that place. His original epitaph, which is in a fine state of preservation, declares that he "governed the province eight years to ye greatest satisfaction of ye Lords Proprietors & ye ease & happyness of ye people. He brought ye country into a flourishing Condition & died much lamented march ye 26, 1722, ætatis 49."

[*Colonial Records of N. C.*, vol. II, pp. 129, 150, 207–08, and 256; Edward McCrady, *The Hist. of S. C. Under the Proprietary Govt., 1670–1719* (1897), p. 718; sketches by M. DeL. Haywood in S. A. Ashe, *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, vol. I (1905), and in *N. C. Booklet*, Dec. 1903 (repr. in R. A. Eden, *Hist. Notes of the Eden Family*, London, 1907); F. X. Martin, *Hist. of N. C. from the Earliest Period* (1829), vol. I; Hugh Williamson, *Hist. of N. C.* (1812), vol. II; J. H. Wheeler, *Hist. Sketches of N. C. from 1584 to 1851* (1851).] M. DeL. H.

**EDEN, ROBERT** (Sept. 14, 1741–Sept. 2, 1784), colonial governor, was descended from a prominent family of northern England, the head of which for three generations had borne the title of baronet. His father, Robert, and his grandfather, John, sat in Parliament for Durham. His father married Mary, daughter of William Davison, and to them were born eight sons and three daughters. Four of the sons had notable careers. Robert, the second son, was born in

Durham. Nothing is known of his school days except that he became proficient in Latin and learned to write fluently. His father died when the boy was not quite fourteen years of age and less than two years later he was commissioned as lieutenant fireworker in the Royal Regiment of Artillery. He served two years in Germany during the Seven Years' War, first as ensign and later as lieutenant and captain, in the Coldstream Guards. He married, in 1765, Caroline Calvert, who was a sister of Lord Baltimore, proprietor of Maryland, and in 1768 he was commissioned governor of that province.

With his wife and two infant sons, Eden arrived at Annapolis on June 5, 1769. His first important act as governor was to prorogue the General Assembly to prevent it from voicing a protest against the passage by Parliament of the Townshend revenue acts. In his first address to the Assembly he recommended more adequate provision for education, but during his entire administration he was engaged chiefly as a diplomatist, in the dispute between the two houses of the Assembly over the right to regulate the fees of officers, and in dealing with relations between the colonies and with the mother country during the outbreak of the Revolution. For the difficult situation which contronted him he was admirably qualified by integrity, prudence, affability, and large capacity for making friends among the gentry, enhanced by his fondness for horses and racing. Fees were regulated by his proclamation until the proprietary government ceased to function. In his letters to England he was an apologist for the people of the province. He manifested sympathy with their point of view but deprecated their militant methods and intemperate zeal. "It has ever been my endeavor," he wrote Lord Dartmouth, "by the most soothing measures I could safely use, and yielding to storm, when I could not resist it, to preserve some hold of the helm of government, that I might steer as long as should be possible, clear of those shoals which all here must, sooner or later, I fear, get shipwrecked upon." In April 1776, an intercepted letter from Lord George Germain gave rise to suspicion that Eden was an enemy of the colonists. It was sent through irregular and improper channels to the Continental Congress and that body passed a resolution requesting the Maryland Council of Safety to arrest the governor. Because the suspicion was considered groundless the Council did not do so, but in the following month, on account of orders he had received requiring him to give facility and assistance to British armament, Eden was requested to quit the province. He accordingly left Annapolis, June 26, 1776, on a British warship and after a delay of some weeks in the Chesapeake Bay returned to England aboard another vessel. His conduct in Maryland and the judicious manner of his leaving were highly commended and he was created a baronet, Sept. 10, 1776, as a reward for faithful service. Immediately after the close of the war he returned to Maryland to recover some property and died at Annapolis, in 1784.

[For source of material relative to Eden's administration see *Archives of Md.*, and Wm. Eddis, *Letters from America* (1792). The only important secondary source is B. C. Steiner, "Life and Administration of Sir Robert Eden," *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies in Hist. and Pol. Science*, 16 ser., nos. 7–9 (1898).] N. D. M.



**EDES, BENJAMIN** (Oct. 14, 1732–Dec. 11, 1803), journalist, was one of the most influential and active newspaper editors and political writers of the Revolutionary period. He was born in Charlestown, Mass., the son of Peter and Esther (Hall) Edes. His great-grandfather, John Edes, came over from England about 1674. After receiving a meager education in the schools of Charlestown or Boston, he founded, on Apr. 7, 1755, in partnership with John Gill, the *Boston Gazette and Country Journal*, the third paper of its name in that city. Both Edes and Gill were described as "men of bold and fearless hearts." Their paper became the organ of the Patriots, who gave it their undivided support and encouragement. Unwavering in its opposition to the British policy, it fought the political battles of the day continuously in its columns, especially those against the Stamp Act, the tea tax, and the Boston Port Bill. Its office became the resort of the leading opponents of King George III, many of whom contributed to its pages. Report says that the members of the Boston Tea Party assembled at Edes's house on the afternoon of Dec. 16, 1773, later using the *Gazette* office at the corner of Court St. and Franklin Ave. to assume their Indian disguise. The temper and spirit of the time, largely voiced through Edes's own writings, are revealed during a long period of years in the files of the *Gazette*. It was described by Lieut.-Gov. Andrew Oliver in a letter from England as "that infamous paper," and the arrest of both Edes and Gill as instigators of sedition was advised by Sir Francis Bernard, the governor of the colony. During the siege of Boston, Edes secretly conveyed his press and types into the suburbs of Boston and set up his printing office in Watertown.

After the dissolution of his partnership with Gill in 1775, Edes and his two sons, Benjamin and Peter, continued the paper until 1794, when the father took over the business alone. The pop-

ularity of the *Gazette* waned during the years following the Revolution, its patriotic mission being apparently completed and all of Edes's efforts to obtain the financial aid of his friends proved unavailing. Its publication was discontinued on Sept. 17, 1798, after a remarkably long and notable career of over forty-three years. He continued his printing business for a short time thereafter, but with little success. Largely because of the depreciation of paper currency, he lost the competency he had acquired before the Revolution, his last years being marked by ill health and poverty. His wife was Martha Starr, to whom he was married about 1754.

[Jos. T. Buckingham, *Specimens of Newspaper Literature, with Personal Memoirs, Anecdotes, and Reminiscences* (1850), vol. I; Frederic Hudson, *Journalism in the U. S. from 1690 to 1872* (1873); Justin Winsor, ed., *The Memorial Hist. of Boston, 1630–1880*, vols. II, III (1881–82); Jas. M. Lee, *Hist. of Am. Journalism* (1923); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, vol. XVI (1862), 16.] E.F.E.

**EDES, ROBERT THAXTER** (Sept. 23, 1838–Jan. 12, 1923), physician, author, was born at Eastport, Me., the son of Richard Sullivan Edes, a Unitarian clergyman, and Mary (Cushing) Edes. He came of English ancestors, being descended from John Edes who settled in Massachusetts about 1674. He graduated from Harvard College in 1858 and from the Harvard Medical School in 1861. After a short period of hospital service, he was appointed an acting assistant surgeon in the United States navy, Sept. 30, 1861. He resigned May 31, 1865, after serving as medical officer on a mortar flotilla on the Mississippi River below New Orleans and in Pensacola Bay, in addition to doing duty in various hospital posts. Twice promoted, he finally attained the rank of passed assistant surgeon at the age of twenty-seven.

Returning to Boston, he began to practise medicine and to teach in the Harvard Medical School and at the Boston City Hospital. His first publication was a prize essay on *The Part Taken by Nature and Time in the Cure of Disease* (1868). In 1871 he was appointed assistant professor, and in 1875 professor, of materia medica, and in 1884 Jackson Professor of Clinical Medicine, in the Harvard Medical School. He is said to have been a scholarly and erudite instructor, his differential diagnoses being models of accuracy and thoroughness. In 1885 he founded, with Delafield, Osler, Pepper, and others, the Association of American Physicians. A year later he resigned from the Harvard Medical School because of illness in his family, and went to Washington, D. C., where he remained for five years; during this period he wrote his *Text-Book of Therapeutics and Materia Medica* (1887), in addition to lecturing at Columbian and Georgetown universities. He then became superintendent of the Adams Nervine Asylum in Boston, a position which he held for six years. Here he wrote *The Story of Rodman Heath; or, Mugwumps by one of them* (1894), an anonymous novel, based partly on his Civil War experiences. The next year he delivered the Shattuck lecture before the Massachusetts Medical Society on "The New England Invalid," a lecture which reviewed his experiences at the Adams Nervine Asylum and "foreshadowed with extraordinary perspicacity the modern trend in the treatment of the psychoneuroses" (Taylor, *post*). After an unsuccessful attempt to establish a small private sanatorium for patients with nervous diseases, Edes retired from practise. The death of his son at the age of thirty-two, in 1901, a young man of exceptional promise in medicine, was a blow from which Edes never recovered. He continued to write, however, for the daily papers of Springfield, Mass. His last publication, *Parson Gay's Three Sermons; or Saint Sacrement* (1908), appearing a few years after he retired, was a novel of the Indian Wars of 1757–58. He died at Springfield in his eighty-fifth year, after a long period of semi-invalidism.

Diseases of the nervous system always interested Edes, and he wrote many medical papers on brain tumors, anemia, and allied subjects. "He was always in the forefront of progress and often distinctly ahead of the thought of his time" (Taylor, *post*). Many societies honored him, including the Philosophical Society of Washington, the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, the American Neurological Association, and the Military Order of the Loyal Legion. He was twice married: first, in 1867, to Elizabeth T. Clarke of Boston, by whom he had three daughters and a son; second, in 1881, to Anna C. Richardson, of Dorchester, Mass. She died in 1921.

[E. W. Taylor in *Archives of Neurology and Psychiatry*, IX (1923), 506–09; *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.*, CLXXXVIII (1923), 117; *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, LXXX (1923), 418; *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *Boston Evening Transcript*, Jan. 13, 1923.] H.R.V.

**EDGAR, CHARLES** (Apr. 9, 1862–Feb. 15, 1922), lumberman, inventor, was born in Metuchen, N. J., the son of Benjamin Winant and Phebe (Dunham) Edgar. Until he was eighteen years old, he attended the public schools of his native town and upon graduation from high school in 1880, went to Chicago, Ill. He found employment with the lumber interests of Chicago, his first job being with the Shepard Lumber

Company. After four or five years of service, during which time the first real steps were being taken in the development of the lumber industry of Wisconsin and Michigan, Edgar moved with his family to Wausau, Wis. Here he entered the employ of the Jacob Mortensen Lumber Company of which he soon became general manager. He continued with this company for four or five years and then formed, with Walter Alexander, the Alexander-Edgar Lumber Company. Edgar was then but twenty-eight years old and had had approximately ten years' experience in the lumber business. In spite of his youth he possessed unusual business ability, and in the succeeding twelve years under his leadership his company played a prominent part not only in the development of the northern lumber areas of Michigan, Wisconsin, and Minnesota, but also of the southern pine districts as well. Throughout this period Edgar maintained a close contact with all branches of the lumbering industry and even found time to perfect certain improvements in saw-mill machinery. As the band saw was originally applied to cutting logs, the backward movement of the log carriage would, if there were any slivers on the cut face of the log, be liable to force those slivers against the smooth edge of the band saw and either distort or break it. To obviate this danger, there was developed a lateral adjustment on the back movement of the carriage called an "off-set," so that the log returned for a new cut out of contact with the saw. Edgar first made an improvement on the "off-set," and then designed a band saw with teeth on both its edges so that the saw cut in both directions and thus eliminated the off-setting mechanism. He patented this device in 1894 and 1895, and subsequently sold the rights to a manufactory in Milwaukee. The process has been in general use by lumber manufacturers for sawing certain classes of small timber ever since. On account of ill health Edgar was compelled to retire from active business about 1902, and for the next ten years lived on his farm near Charlottesville, Va. In 1914, however, because of the death of one of his associates, he was again obliged to take up active work as president and general director of the Wisconsin & Arkansas Lumber Company of Malvern, Ark., and he continued in that capacity until his death. During the World War he was identified with the Southern Pine Emergency Bureau, later was a member of the Lumber Committee of the Council of National Defence, and finally was lumber director of the War Industries Board, in which capacity he served until the end of the war. A distinguished service medal was awarded to him on Apr. 7, 1922, after



his death. On Dec. 18, 1884, Edgar was married in Chicago, to Gertrude Pomeroy of Pottsville, Pa., daughter of George W. Pomeroy. At the time of his sudden death in Miami, Fla., he was survived by his wife, three sons, and a daughter. He was buried at Essex Fells, N. J., where he had resided for a number of years.

[*Lumber World Rev.*, Feb. 25, 1922; *Am. Lumberman*, Feb. 18 and Feb. 25, 1922; E. W. Byrn, *The Progress of Invention in the Nineteenth Century* (1900); A. A. Pomeroy, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Pomeroy Family* (1912); *Newark Evening News*, Feb. 16, 1922; Patent Office Records; U. S. Nat. Museum correspondence.] C. W. M.

**EDGERTON, ALFRED PECK** (Jan. 11, 1813–May 14, 1897), politician, was born at Plattsburg, Clinton County, N. Y., the son of Bela and Phebe (Ketchum) Edgerton. He was educated at the Plattsburg Academy and after graduation was for a short period editor of a newspaper in that town. In 1833 he removed to New York, where he was a clerk in a mercantile house. Four years later he became the agent of the American Land Company, and of the Messrs. Hicks, and settled at Hicksville, Ohio. He was married, Feb. 9, 1841, to Charlotte, daughter of Charles Dixon, of Portland, Conn. In 1845 he was elected as a Democrat to the Ohio Senate where his ability as a debater made him a prominent leader in his party. After serving in this body 1845–46 and 1846–47, he was elected to Congress from the Toledo district, and served 1851–55. Always a strong opponent of slavery on constitutional grounds, in Congress he vigorously opposed the rescinding of the Missouri Compromise and the Kansas-Nebraska Act. He was chosen financial agent of the state by the Board of Fund Commissioners of Ohio, and in this capacity resided in New York City from 1853 to 1856. The following year he removed to Fort Wayne, Ind., but remained a citizen of Ohio until 1862. In 1859, in association with Hugh McCulloch and Pliny Hoagland, he leased the Wabash & Erie Canal, of which he was the general manager for nine years. In 1868 he was the Democratic candidate for lieutenant-governor of Indiana but was defeated. As a Democrat, he refused to support Horace Greeley in 1872 and came within six votes of being nominated for the vice-presidency on the O'Conor ticket, over John Quincy Adams, second. He was then nominated by the O'Conor Democrats—the "Bourbon" or "Straightout" Democrats—for governor of Indiana, but declined. After many years of retirement from active public service, early in November 1885, he was appointed by President Cleveland a United States Civil Service Commissioner, succeeding Dorman B. Ea-

ton [*q.v.*] as president of the Commission. His appointment was sharply criticized on account of his advanced age and a fear that he was not in sympathy with civil-service reform. President Cleveland grew dissatisfied with his work on the Commission and summarily removed him, Feb. 10, 1889. Edgerton published a letter declaring his dismissal was due to the fact that the President was a "mugwump—a mugwump of mugwumps," which, he defiantly announced, "I am not." For many years Edgerton was president of the board of education of Fort Wayne, Ind., where he resided for two decades, but he died at his country home at Hicksville, Ohio.

[For biographical sketches see Henry Howe, *Hist. Colls. of Ohio* (1896); B. J. Griswold, *The Pictorial Hist. of Fort Wayne* (1917); *Biog. Hist. of Eminent and Self-Made Men of the State of Ind.* (1880), 12th Dist., p. 44; *Ohio Statesmen and Hundred Year Book 1788–1892* (1892); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); obituary in *N. Y. Times*, May 16, 1897. See also E. J. Benton, "The Wabash Trade Route in the Development of the Old Northwest," in *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies*, Jan.–Feb. 1903; and for the controversy over his appointment and dismissal as Civil Service Commissioner, see *N. Y. Tribune*, Nov. 5, 1885, Feb. 19, 1889; *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Nov. 5, 1885, and *Nation* (N. Y.), Nov. 12, 1885.] R. C. M.

**EDGERTON, SIDNEY** (Aug. 17, 1818–July 19, 1900), Abolitionist, congressman, first territorial governor of Montana, was born in New York of old New England ancestry. His parents were Amos and Zerviah (Graham) Edgerton. His father died while Sidney was an infant, and the boy had to educate himself. He studied and taught and in 1844 went to Akron, Ohio, where he again taught school and studied law. In 1846 he graduated from the Cincinnati Law School. Beginning his public life as an Abolitionist, he was a delegate to the Free-Soil Convention of 1848, and continued his fight on slavery during the years following. In 1856 he was delegate to the first Republican National Convention. Elected to Congress in 1858, he served two terms. His efforts were directed toward the abolition of slavery in the territories, in the District of Columbia, and on the public property of the United States. As a Union man he felt the need of holding the West to the East. He was an ardent advocate of a transcontinental railroad and voted for every measure which he thought would promote its construction.

When the territory of Idaho was organized, Mar. 3, 1863, President Lincoln offered the position of chief justice to Edgerton. He took office at Bannack in eastern Idaho (now in Montana) and there remained in charge of the eastern judicial district of the territory. This assignment was distasteful to him for he felt that as chief justice he should have a district nearer the capital. The court had no marshal and no power to enforce its decisions. With bands of road agents infesting the country, Edgerton gave his approval of the vigilantes who were trying to exterminate them. The counties east of the Bitter Root Mountains, dissatisfied with their connection with Idaho, sent Edgerton to Washington to work for a separate territory. He was well acquainted with James M. Ashley, chairman of the House committee on territories, with other congressmen, and with Lincoln. Following the approval of the act forming Montana (May 26, 1864), Lincoln appointed Edgerton governor, legal provision for a temporary government being made May 27. His territory had been overrun by bandits and the majority of its population were opposed to the Union. It was his work to organize government among a hostile people and establish obedience to law. With firmness and tact he undertook the task and during the year of his administration made progress. He foresaw in Montana a great commonwealth and he urged the building of roads and the founding of schools. He was unable to conclude his program, since the succession of Johnson to the presidency led to his resignation.

Edgerton was a man of unusual intellect, pleasing personality, and notable oratorical ability. He had great courage and frankness. He was an Abolitionist when abolition was unpopular, and an agnostic among a people thoroughly devoted to Christianity. He married Mary Wright in 1849 and to them were born eight children. After 1865 he devoted himself to the practise of law, but he did not lose interest in public affairs. When Mark Hanna invited him as a member of the first Republican Convention to sit in the one of 1900, Edgerton declined, stating that there was little in common between the principles held by him and the "fore ordained work" of the latter convention (*Great Falls News*, July 5, 1900).

[Wilbur F. Sanders, "Life of Gov. Sidney Edgerton," in *Rocky Mountain Mag.*, Feb. 1901, and Martha Edgerton Plassmann, "Biog. Sketch of Sidney Edgerton," in *Contributions to the Hist. Soc. of Mont.* III (1900), are sympathetic but fair. See also *Biog. Directory of the Am. Cong., 1774–1927* (1928).] P. C. P.



**EDGREN, AUGUST HJALMAR** (Oct. 18, 1840–Dec. 9, 1903), soldier and scholar, was born in Vermland, Sweden, the son of Axel and Mathilda Edgren. He was graduated from the Lyceum of Stockholm in 1858, and from the Swedish Royal Military Academy in 1860. His interest in the issues of the American Civil War led him to emigrate to the United States and enlist in the 99th Regiment, New York Infantry, which was incorporated in the Army of the Potomac. He participated in many battles and was

promoted to a first lieutenancy for "bravery in action" in 1863; he was then detailed as staff engineer in charge of the construction of fortifications at Yorktown. He returned to his native land in 1863, and remained a lieutenant in the Swedish army until 1870.

By this time the life of the soldier had begun to pall upon him. He had been enabled to follow his scholarly bent during a leave of absence in 1867–68, which he spent studying in France and Germany, and teaching English and German at the Lycée Saint Quentin in Paris. On his return home in 1869 he was promoted first adjutant, but the experience of the two previous years had so whetted his natural appetite for study that he resigned his commission in 1870, returned to the United States, and entered Cornell University, where he received the bachelor's degree in 1871. After a year on the staff of the Riverview-on-the-Hudson Military Academy at Poughkeepsie, he entered Yale College from which he received the degree of Ph.D. in 1874. He had meanwhile become instructor in the Sheffield Scientific School in 1873, and continued there until 1880, when he returned to Sweden to become privat-docent in Sanskrit in the University of Lund. In 1880 he married Marianne Steendorff of Copenhagen, Denmark. In 1881 he spent the summer in further study at the University of Berlin, and was awarded the Norberg Prize of the University of Lund for his work in linguistics.

From 1885 to 1891 he was again in the United States, as professor of modern languages at the University of Nebraska. After an interval of two years (1891–93) at the University of Gotenburg, Sweden, as professor of Germanic languages and rector, he returned to Nebraska, first as professor of Romance languages, later as professor of linguistic science and Sanskrit. To his teaching duties were added, in 1896, the functions of dean of the Graduate School. In 1900 he was recalled to Sweden to represent the United States as a member of the Nobel Institute at Stockholm, at which place he died in December 1903.

Edgren was a linguist and philologist of extraordinarily wide range. He published a long series of monographs and articles on Sanskrit philology and literature, Germanic and Romance languages, and comparative philology, written in Swedish, German, French, and Latin; he edited German, French, and Italian dictionaries, German, French, Spanish, Italian, and Sanskrit grammars, and French school texts. Through translation and criticism he did much to introduce Sanskrit masterpieces and English and American literature to the Swedish people, and to interpret to them American life and educational institutions. He also published two volumes of his own poems. He was a member of many learned societies in both Europe and America, and in 1893 was president of the Royal Society for Science and Literature in Gotenburg. Among his many published works are the following: *A Compendious German and English, English and German Dictionary* (with W. D. Whitney, 1877); "On the Verbal Roots of the Sanskrit Language and of the Sanskrit Grammarians" (*Journal of the American Oriental Society*, 1878); *A Compendious Sanskrit Grammar* (Trübner, London, 1885); *A Compendious French Grammar* (1890); *Kalidasa Shakuntala* (1894), translated from the Sanskrit; "The Kindred Germanic Words of German and English, Exhibited with Reference to their Consonantal Relations" (*Transactions of the American Philological Association*, 1880, vol. XI); "American Graduate Schools" (*Educational Review*, 1898); "En serie af resebref och skildringer fran Amerika" (*Goteborgs Handelstidning*, 1871–73); *Sommarferier i Montezumas land* (Stockholm, 1898); *Dikter i orignal och öfversättning* (Lund, 1884); *Blåklint: Ny Diktsamling* (Stockholm, 1894); *A French and English Dictionary* (1901), with Percy B. Burnet; *An Italian and English Dictionary* (1901), with Giuseppe Bico.

[Data from a son, Arthur Edgren, Esq., Lincoln, Nebr.; *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Obituary Record Grads. Yale Univ.*, 5 ser. (1910); *Nordisk Familjebok* (Stockholm, 1927), VI, 303; *Salmonsens Konversations Leksikon* (Kbønhavn, 1917), VI, 716; *Lincoln The Capital City and Lancaster County, Nebr.* (1916), II, 793; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 11, 1903.] J. S. N.



**EDMANDS, JOHN** (Feb. 1, 1820–Oct. 17, 1915), librarian, a descendant of Walter Edmands who emigrated from England and settled in Concord, Mass., in 1639, was the son of Jonathan and Lucy (Nourse) Edmands and was born in Framingham, Mass. He lived and worked on a farm, attending the district school for about three months each summer and winter, until about 1836, when he was apprenticed to a carpenter and house-builder. He was graduated from Phillips Academy, Andover, in 1843, and entered Yale College. During the latter part of his college course he became librarian of the Brothers in Unity, a society in Yale College, and he then prepared a booklet of eight pages, indicating material of assistance to the students in writing or speaking, which was printed in January 1847 under the title, *Subjects for Debate, with References to Authorities*. This was the beginning from which developed the *Index to Periodical Literature compiled by W. F. Poole* [*q.v.*], who followed Edmands as librarian of the Brothers in Unity. After his graduation in 1847, Edmands spent a

year in teaching school in Rocky Mount, N. C. He then entered the Yale Divinity School, was licensed to preach by the New Haven West Association of Ministers in 1850, and graduated in 1851. In that year he became assistant in the Yale College Library, serving until 1856, when he went to Philadelphia, to become librarian of the Mercantile Library. With this institution he was connected for fifty-nine years. Doubtless it is due to the fact that he was a retiring, modest person that he has never been given full credit for his pioneer work. He was a much better practical librarian than was Poole, who had a wide interest in books but contributed very little to practical librarianship. Edmands devised a system of classification and put it into operation about the same time that Melvil Dewey began work on his decimal classification. (See Edmands's *Explanation of the New System of Classification Devised for the Mercantile Library of Philadelphia*, 1883.) Although the use of decimals in the Dewey system proved rather more practical in the expansion of the different classes, and won a wider popularity, which it has maintained to the present, Edmands's classification has proved satisfactory wherever it has been employed. He prepared for publication book lists that were of great interest, placing under the titles of important additions to the Library criticisms and discussions of the views of the authors. His list of historical novels, *Finding List for Novels in the Mercantile Library of Philadelphia* (1878), was one of the first efforts in that direction. He was a careful bibliographer, as is proven in his bibliographies of the Latin hymn *Dies Irae* (*Bulletin of the Mercantile Library of Philadelphia*, Oct. 1, 1884, Jan. 1, 1885) and the Junius Letters (*Ibid.*, July 1, 1890–Jan. 1, 1892). He also published a *Catalogue of the Mercantile Library of Philadelphia* (1870), *Reading Notes on Luther* (1883), and *Reading Notes on Wycliffe* (1884). He was one of the original members of the American Library Association, founded in Philadelphia in 1876, and the first president of the Pennsylvania Library Club, founded in 1890. From time to time he contributed to the *Library Journal* practical notes collected during his long service. He was a founder of the Central Congregational Church in Philadelphia, in 1864, and was the clerk and one of the deacons from its organization. He was married three times: first, on Aug. 1, 1854, to Abigail Jane Lloyd, who died in January 1883; second, on June 17, 1889, to Ellen Elizabeth Metcalf, who died in July 1892; and third, on Aug. 23, 1893, to Clarinda Augusta Roberts. Edmands was physically well adapted to his profession; of slight build, with white hair and ruddy cheeks, he moved nimbly but silently in his domain and he had a low voice with clear enunciation. He was ninety-five years of age when he died, and had maintained his mental alertness and interest in current affairs until the last. He left in trust for publication the manuscript of a book which was issued posthumously under the title, *The Evolution of Congregationalism* (1916).

[*Who's Who in America*, 1915–16; *Yale Univ. Obit. Record*, 1915–16; *Hist. Sketch of the Mercantile Lib. of Phila. and the Ninety-third Ann. Report*, 1915; *Library Jour.*, Nov. 1915; *Pub. Libraries*, Nov. 1915; *Evening Bull.* (Phila.), Oct. 18, 1915; *Phila. Inquirer* and *Pub. Ledger* (Phila.), Oct. 19, 1915.] T. L. M.



**EDMONDS, FRANCIS WILLIAM** (Nov. 22, 1806–Feb. 7, 1863), genre painter, was born in Hudson, Columbia County, N. Y., son of Samuel and Lydia (Worth) Edmonds, and brother of John Worth Edmonds [*q.v.*]. Francis gave early promise of artistic talent, but financial necessity turned his attention from art to an immediate source of income. The youngest of a numerous family, he could not enjoy the educational opportunities afforded his elder brother. When he was sixteen he was offered a position in the Tradesmen's Bank in New York by his uncle, Gorham A. Worth, then its president, and he remained there until 1830 when he returned to Hudson to become cashier of the Hudson River Bank in his native town. He was later cashier in New York City, first in the Leather Manufacturers' Bank, 1832, and later in the Mechanics' Bank, 1839. He assisted in establishing the New York Clearing House in 1853 and the same year helped to organize the Bank Note Engraving Company, later called the American Bank Note Company. He was at one time city chamberlain of New York, and was closely identified with the New York Gallery of Fine Arts, the Sketch Club, Century Association, New York Society Library, and New York Historical Society. In 1855 he retired from business and settled in a country home, "Crow's Nest" on the Bronx River.

Although he lacked conventional art education, throughout his business career he pursued his art in his leisure time with perseverance and devotion to his ideals. Soon after 1826 he became a student at the National Academy of Design, was made an associate in 1837, and National Academician in 1840. He was recording secretary of the institution for a while and became one of its trustees. He first exhibited at the Academy in 1836, under the assumed name F. Williams, the painting "Sammy the Tailor." He gained much through a visit to Europe in 1840, and his study of the art of the Old World, especially in Italy. In the early fifties he made several drawings for

notes produced by the American Bank Note Company, among them being "Sewing-Girl," "Grinding the Scythe," "Barn-yard," and "Mechanic." Other notable works are: "Scene from Butler's Hudibras" (1827); "Dominie Sampson" (1837); "The Epicure" (1838); "The Penny Paper" (1839); "Sparkling" (1840, engraved by the Art Union); "The Bashful Cousin" (1842); "Boy Stealing Milk" (1843); "Vesuvius and Florence" (1844); "The Image Peddler" (1844); "The New Scholar" (1845); "Facing the Enemy" (1845; engraved, a popular illustration of temperance reform); "The Sleepy Student" (1846); "Bargaining" (1858); and "Gil Blas and the Archbishop."

Edmonds was twice married: first, while he was cashier of the bank at Hudson, to Martha Norman; and second, on Nov. 4, 1841, to Dorothea Lord. He died at "Crow's Nest" in his fifty-seventh year.

[C. E. Clement and Laurence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century* (1879), I, 235; H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); J. D. Champlin, Jr., *Cyc. of Painters and Paintings* (1886), II, 9; Ulrich Thieme and Felix Becker, *Allgemeines Lexikon der Bildenden Künstler*, X (1914), 345; *N. Y. Times*, N. Y. *Evening Post*, Feb. 9, 1863.] J. M. H.

**EDMONDS, JOHN WORTH** (Mar. 13, 1799–Apr. 5, 1874), jurist, was the son of Samuel Edmonds, a native of New York City, who, after the Revolution, settled at Claverack Landing (Hudson), N. Y., became prominent in public life, and married Lydia, daughter of Thomas Worth, one of the first settlers of Hudson. He was born at Hudson, and received his early education in the public schools and the Academy there. In 1814 he entered Williams College, Williamstown, Mass., transferring, in 1815, to Union College, Schenectady, N. Y., where he graduated in 1816. He then began to read law at Cooperstown, N. Y., six months later entering the office of Martin Van Buren at Hudson, and completing his studies at the latter's Albany office. On his admission to the Columbia County bar in 1819, he commenced practise at Hudson, at the same time interesting himself in local politics on the Democratic side, and becoming editor of the *Hudson Gazette*, the party organ, at a salary of three dollars a week. In 1827 he was appointed city recorder, which office he retained till his election in 1830 to the state Assembly. In 1831 he was elected to the state Senate, in which body he became prominent, being a member of the judiciary committee and chairman of the bank committee. At this period the resistance of South Carolina to the tariff laws had raised the subject of nullification, and he was a member of the joint committee of the two houses of the legislature which considered and reported on the matter. His able justification of the committee's report procured its adoption in the face of prolonged opposition. He was also chairman of the joint committee which considered the subject of the United States Bank. He did not complete his term, however, resigning in 1836 on his appointment by President Jackson as commissioner to procure the carrying out of the provisions of the treaty between the United States and the Ottawa and Chippewa Indians bordering on Lakes Huron and Superior—his duties therein requiring him to spend some months at Michilimackinac. On his return from the West in 1837, he moved to New York City, where he engaged in practise and obtained a large connection in mercantile circles. In April 1843, Gov. Bouck appointed him inspector of state prisons, in which capacity he effected great and lasting reforms at Sing Sing. The prisons at that time were in bad condition, with little discipline and a large yearly deficit, and the only punishment administered to refractory prisoners was whipping. Prior to his resignation in 1845 he had established order, systematized administration, practically eliminated the deficit, and humanized punishments. In addition he inaugurated a system of rewards for good conduct, and founded a society to aid discharged convicts to earn an honest living. He was appointed judge of the first New York circuit, Feb. 18, 1845. In 1847 he was elected a justice of the state supreme court. Shortly afterward the state justiciary was reorganized under the new state constitution, and, though he had rendered some unpopular decisions, he was nominated for justice of the new supreme court by Tammany and indorsed by the bar. In 1852 he became a judge of the New York court of appeals, but resigned from the bench in 1853 and resumed practise in New York City. He had for some years conducted investigations in the subject of spiritualism. In 1853, becoming convinced that the living could communicate with the dead, he openly announced his belief, and, in collaboration with Dr. Dexter, published *Spiritualism*, a work which provoked much comment, though the honesty of his convictions was never impugned. In 1863 he published *Statutes at Large of the State of New York* (5 vols.), containing the Revised Statutes and General Statutes up to 1863, with elaborate notes and references. The labor involved in this compilation was immense, but so accurate was his work that it was at once accepted by the profession as the standard authority, superseding all former editions. He subsequently prepared two supplemental volumes and an index. In 1868 he compiled *Reports of Select Cases decided in the*

*Courts of New York,* consisting of cases heard before him on circuit. Several of his occasional addresses were published in pamphlet form and he was a frequent contributor to the *Albany Law Journal.* He died in New York City.

[An excellent contemporary appreciation of Edmonds appeared in Wm. Raymond, *Sketches of the Distinguished Men of Columbia County* (1851), p. 79. His career is also detailed in P. F. Miller, *A Group of Great Lawyers of Columbia County, N. Y.* (1904), p. 172. See, in addition, D. McAdam and others, *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.* (1897), I, 317; 1 *Central Law Jour.*, 163; 9 *Albany Law Jour.*, 244; 4 *U. S. Monthly Law Mag.*, ed. by John Livingston, 335; *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Tribune,* Apr. 6, 1874.] H.W.H.K.

**EDMUNDS, GEORGE FRANKLIN** (Feb. 1, 1828–Feb. 27, 1919), lawyer, senator, was born and spent his childhood on a farm near Richmond, Vt. His parents, Ebenezer and Naomi (Briggs) Edmunds, were both of Rhode Island Quaker origin. His education, conducted in various schools and by private teachers, was frequently interrupted by illness, and poor health eventually forced him to give up the college course for which he had planned. In later years, however, he received numerous honorary degrees. Whatever he may have lacked in formal education seems to have been more than outweighed by an early acquired taste and capacity for individual study. When about seventeen he began the study of law in the office of his brother-in-law, but the threat of tuberculosis obliged him to spend the winter of 1845–46 in the milder climate of Washington, D. C. The opportunity to use the great law libraries of the capital and to hear the leading lawyers of the day in proceedings before the United States Supreme Court constituted what he always considered one of his most valuable educational experiences. He continued study after returning to Vermont and was admitted to the bar in 1849.

He began practise in Richmond but in less than two years moved to Burlington, where professional opportunities were better. In 1852 he married Susan Marsh, daughter of Wyllys Lyman and niece of George P. Marsh, then minister to Turkey. Their married life lasted until her death in 1916 and she was generally considered to have been an influential factor in his professional and political career. Success at the bar came early and throughout the rest of the decade his name appears with increasing frequency in the Vermont Reports. Later, after entering the United States Senate, he devoted himself largely to federal practise and handled many important cases before the United States circuit courts in various parts of the country as well as before the Supreme Court in Washington. There was at that time no legal or ethical objection to a senator's

Edmunds

engaging in such work. While Edmunds had much of the conservatism of the legal profession, he showed, both in practise and in his work as a legislator, a clear realization that the changing economic and social needs of the nineteenth century were rendering many common-law concepts inadequate and that these obsolete principles should not be permitted to protect abuses. He continued active work after leaving the Senate, accumulated a comfortable estate, and finally retired about 1897. One of his greatest legal successes came in 1895, when he argued successfully against the constitutionality of the income tax in the famous case of *Pollock* vs. *The Farmers' Loan and Trust Company* (157 *United States,* 429; Edmunds's argument, pp. 482–99). His standing as a legal authority is also shown by the fact that in 1885 he was invited to testify, on a technical matter involving the marriage laws of New York in 1770, before the Committee of Privileges of the British House of Lords.

Important as was Edmunds's professional career, it was overshadowed by his public services. Like many other New Englanders he first attracted the attention of his fellow citizens in town meeting. Then followed a period of service as representative in the legislature 1854–59, the last three years as speaker. In 1861–62 he was a member of the Vermont Senate and president *pro tempore.* His first distinctly national service came in 1864, when he was appointed special counsel by Secretary Seward in an unsuccessful effort to secure the extradition of the St. Albans raiders. He had been, naturally, a supporter of the anti-slavery movement, and became an active Republican. The death of Senator Solomon Foot of Vermont, Mar. 28, 1866, came at a time when the Republican party needed every possible vote for the contest with President Johnson. On April 3, Gov. Paul Dillingham appointed Edmunds to the vacant place. He left promptly for the capital, was sworn in on April 5, and on the following day supplied the one vote necessary to carry the Civil Rights Bill over the President's veto. His career in the Senate, thus begun, covered the next twenty-five years and made him an active and influential participant in most of the important constitutional, legislative, and political developments of the period. Although he was interested in some aspects of foreign policy, especially in the extension of American interests in the Caribbean and in transisthmian canal problems, his most important contributions were in the field of domestic legislation, the ensuing decades offering unusual opportunities to a legislator of his ability and constructive temperament.

Edmunds, for the most part, supported the Rad-

ical policies throughout Reconstruction. When he opposed them, it was usually much to the credit of his sense of honor and decency. Within a few weeks after entering the Senate he had attracted public attention and drawn special commendation from Sumner by a speech against the admission of Colorado with a "white" suffrage qualification in its constitution (*Congressional Globe,* 39 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 2176). His rapid advance to a position of power and importance was seen a year later when he was made chairman of the committee to arrange rules of procedure for the trial of President Johnson. He was prominent in the proceedings preliminary to the trial, voted for conviction, and filed a lengthy and closely reasoned opinion on the President's alleged offenses (Supplement, *Congressional Globe,* 40 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 424–28). He had been active in securing adoption of the Tenure of Office Act of 1867, and opposed its total repeal in 1869 when it was urged that to President Grant should be restored the entire power so long exercised by his predecessors in office. Almost twenty years later he had a notable clash with the Cleveland administration and a Senate majority when the obnoxious restrictions were finally removed by the act of Mar. 3, 1887. On Dec. 14, 1886, he delivered one of his most notable constitutional arguments (*Congressional Record,* 49 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 136–40), dealing at considerable length with the removal power and declaring that the existing statutes constituted "a wholesome restraint upon the temptations to abuse in executive power," and that they were necessary for the security of public offices which could not, without them, carry any assurance of "honorable and responsible employments of the Government for fixed terms."

With the passing of Fessenden he was generally considered the ablest constitutional lawyer in Congress, and it must have been a painful experience for him to see many of the principles for which he had contended and which he had succeeded in having embodied in legislation, such as the Ku Klux Act of 1872 or the second Civil Rights Act of 1875, the latter largely his personal handiwork, rejected by the Supreme Court. He became chairman of the committee on the judiciary in 1872 and held this important post until his retirement in 1891, with the exception of the two years of Democratic control, 1879–81. Perhaps his best-known achievement was the act of Jan. 29, 1877, providing for the appointment of the electoral commission, "to regulate the counting of the votes for President and Vice-President and the decision of questions arising thereon," in the disputed election of 1876. Posterity has not agreed as to the equities involved in the original controversy, and the act itself has been criticized as unfair and legalistic, but Edmunds unquestionably made a great contribution toward the settlement of a dangerous crisis, and by securing the adoption of the Electoral Count Act of 1887 rendered less probable its recurrence in the future (see *Century Magazine,* May, June 1913, for interesting interchanges between Edmunds and Henry Watterson on the disputed election of 1876 and the electoral commission). One of his notable legislative successes was the Thurman Act of 1878, framed in collaboration with Senator Thurman of Ohio, also a member of the judiciary committee, and pushed through Congress by their joint efforts in the face of a most determined opposition. By this measure the Central and Union Pacific railroads were compelled to fund their debts to the government and make adequate provision for a sinking fund. The act was intrinsically an important measure and is also a notable step in the development of governmental control of the railroad business.

The act of Mar. 22, 1882, adopted for the purpose of suppressing polygamy in the territories, especially Utah, is the only enactment of his long career which was known by his name. Polygamy he declared to be "an inherent and controlling force in the most intense and anti-republican hierarchy, theocracy, as an organized and systematic government that, so far as my small reading has gone, has ever existed on the face of the earth" (*Congressional Record,* 47 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 1213). The statute itself, although unsatisfactory in its operation until strengthened by the supplementary enactment of 1887, eventually broke the Mormon power and resulted in important changes in the polity of the organization. One of the objects, he stated, was "to take the political power in that Territory out of the hands of this body of tyrants," and the administrative clauses were such as to guarantee adequate enforcement by responsible and independent officers and juries. He was the author of the greater part of the Sherman Anti-Trust Act of 1890, a fact not generally known until many years later. In 1911, in a magazine article of extraordinary interest and historical value, he explained the objectives of the men who drafted the law. It was directed against the "unnatural and unequal distribution of wealth and power," he said, and intended to apply to combinations of labor and capital alike. He pointed out that it was impossible to frame specific definitions for the various offenses at which it was directed, and that literal construction, till then attempted by the courts, had not been intended by the original framers (*North*

*American Review,* December 1911, p. 801).

Throughout the long financial contest which covered his entire period of service he fought against all forms of public debt repudiation, was a powerful influence in securing the passage of the Specie Resumption Act of 1875, opposed remonetization of silver, and denounced those members of the Republican party who went over to the free silver heresy. In 1897 he was appointed chairman of the monetary commission authorized by the Indianapolis conference, and the reports of this organization exerted great influence on subsequent banking and currency legislation. His support of civil-service reform was consistent and courageous, beginning with his appointment on a retrenchment committee soon after entering the Senate. In 1871 he introduced a bill "to regulate the Civil Service of the United States and promote the efficiency thereof" which in many respects anticipated the Pendleton Act of 1883 to which he gave generous support. In tariff matters he had the views of the orthodox Republican of his time.

He was on confidential terms with Presidents Grant, Hayes, and Arthur, and is reported to have been called into frequent consultation on public business. He declined several important appointments in both the executive and judicial services. Following the death of President Garfield he was elected president *pro tempore* of the Senate, an action which was generally regarded as a special tribute, inasmuch as it made him, under the existing law, next in succession to the presidency of the United States. Edmunds received some support for the presidential nomination in 1880, and four years later a similar movement had a great, if not decisive, influence on the result of the election. He was strongly backed in 1884 by the reform element of the party, including such men as George W. Curtis, John D. Long, who placed his name before the convention in an admirable address, Henry Cabot Lodge, Theodore Roosevelt, Andrew D. White, George F. Hoar, and others. He received a maximum of ninety-three votes. Blaine, the nominee, failed to hold the support of a considerable number of the independents who had backed Edmunds and lost the election as a result. Edmunds himself, while not anxious for the office, had a profound distrust for the Republican candidate and refused to campaign in his behalf, a defection which attracted popular attention and caused considerable dismay in party circles.

During the greater part of his career in the Senate political morality was far from high, but Edmunds came through unsmirched. He had a profound contempt for hypocrisy and humbug

Edmunds

and a tongue which on occasion could blister opponents like sulphuric acid. He was never popular with a majority of his colleagues and was often feared. One of them once remarked that if led blindfold into the Senate chamber, he could tell at once, from the nature of the business under discussion, whether or not Edmunds was in his seat. When he was absent, the members usually tried to rush through the petty jobbery which they were reluctant to submit to his keen scrutiny and merciless sarcasm (quoted by F. E. Leupp, in "The Father of the Anti-trust Law," *Outlook,* Sept. 20, 1911, p. 271). It was said of Edmunds, when at the height of his powers, that "his bald head and flowing white beard gave him a resemblance to the classic portrait of St. Jerome, but, unlike that portrait, his head is dome shaped, symmetrical, while his temples are wide apart and full between. He debates a question in a clear, half-conversational manner, occasionally indulging in a dash of sarcasm which makes those Senators who are the objects of it wince. What he says goes into the *Congressional Record* without revision or correction" (Poore, *post,* II, 208). He had few intimates, but his friendship with Thurman, a Democrat, became one of the traditions of the Senate. His lack of amiability and his contentious nature are attested by many of his contemporaries. Senator G. F. Hoar tells how, after making some disparaging remarks about the attractiveness of the presidency, "he smiled and his countenance beamed all over with satisfaction," when reminded of the pleasant possibilities inherent in the veto power.

His resignation in 1891 caused wide-spread comment inasmuch as his hold on Vermont was such as to have insured an indefinite tenure. He gave the illness of his only daughter as the chief reason, though a fellow senator adds that Edmunds believed the Senate was deteriorating and that service therein was losing its attractions (Cullom, *post,* p. 208). In retirement he never lost touch with public affairs, and from time to time, in letters, published articles, or interviews, he expressed opinions with all his old cogency and force. He remained a strong partisan to the end but showed his characteristic independence by occasional criticism of Republican policies, notably the "imperialism" resulting from the war with Spain. For some years after retirement from the Senate he lived in Philadelphia, but his last years were spent in Pasadena, Cal. There his death occurred on Feb. 27, 1919, but his remains were interred at Burlington, Vt. For many years he had occupied the position of an elder statesman, and there had been ample opportunity to weigh his merits and defects. The

editorial comment of the *New York Times*, Mar. 1, 1919, can be generally accepted: "He had the dry wit, as he had the twang and the fine, solid, simple, rugged characteristics of his native state. . . . He was . . . one of the most thoughtful, most patriotic, most useful, and most independent of American Statesmen."

[The importance of Edmunds's position in the Senate gave him prominent mention in the memoirs of the period, such as: S. M. Cullom, *Fifty Years of Public Service* (1911); J. B. Foraker, *Notes of a Busy Life* (1916); S. S. Cox, *Three Decades of Federal Legislation* (1886); G. F. Hoar, *Autobiography of Seventy Years* (1903); Ben P. Poore, *Perley's Reminiscences of Sixty Years in the National Metropolis* (1886); *John Sherman's Recollections of Forty Years in the House, Senate, and Cabinet* (1895); J. G. Blaine, *Twenty Years of Congress* (1884–86); A. W. Dunn, *From Harrison to Harding* (1922). *The Nation* and *Harper's Weekly* contain frequent references and editorial comments. Walter H. Crockett has a brief memorial sketch, privately reprinted from *The Vermonter* of August 1919. See also the same author's *Vermont, The Green Mountain State* (1923), IV, 13 ff., V, 271–72; *Geo. F. Edmunds Centenary Exercises, 1828–1928* (1928); and Burlington (Vt.) *Free Press*, Feb. 29, 1928.] W. A. R.

**EDWARDS, BELA BATES** (July 4, 1802–Apr. 20, 1852), clergyman, editor, was born in Southampton, Mass., the son of Elisha and Anne (Bates) Edwards. He was a second cousin of Justin Edwards [*q.v.*], and was descended from Alexander Edwards who came to America from Wales, about 1640, and settled in Springfield, Mass. He attended Williams College for one year (1820–21) and then entered Amherst, graduating in 1824. After a year at Andover Theological Seminary, he returned to Amherst as a tutor (1826–28), but then reëntered Andover, taking his degree with the class of 1830. While still in the Seminary he became assistant secretary of the American Education Society, and after his graduation he spent five years (1830–35) in the Boston office, beginning there his long career as editor of educational and religious publications. For nearly sixteen years (1827–43) he was in charge of the *American Quarterly Register*, in which he garnered facts which are of much value to the historian of that period. He founded the *American Quarterly Observer* in 1833 and continued to direct the magazine when it was merged in 1835 with the *American Biblical Repository*.

In 1837, Edwards accepted an appointment as professor of the Hebrew language and literature in Andover Theological Seminary and was ordained to the ministry on Oct. 3, 1837, at Methuen, Mass. In 1842 he and Prof. Edwards A. Park established the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, which he edited during the years 1844–52. Superseding the *Repository* and published in Andover, this quickly became the most scholarly and authoritative of American religious periodicals. He was appointed in 1848 professor of Biblical literature at Andover. During this period he declined the presidency of both Amherst and Dartmouth, as well as the secretaryship of the Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. He was a trustee of Amherst College and of Abbot Academy. When, because of his arduous labors, his health broke down in 1845, he made a visit to Florida, followed by a year of travel in Europe. He died at Athens, Ga., of malarial fever, when he was just under fifty years of age. He had married, Nov. 3, 1831, Jerusha Williams Billings, daughter of Col. Charles E. Billings of Conway, Mass., who survived her husband forty-four years. Of their three children, only one daughter was living at the time of his death.

Besides the numerous criticisms and special articles which he printed from time to time in his magazines, Edwards published several books, including *Biography of Self-Taught Men* (1832), *The Missionary Gazetteer* (1832 and 1833), *Memoir of Elias Cornelius* (1833), *Selections from German Literature* (1839), in collaboration with Prof. Park, and a translation of Raphael Kühner's *Grammar of the Greek Language* (1844), in collaboration with Principal Samuel H. Taylor. A selection of his sermons and addresses, edited, with a memoir, by Prof. Park, was published posthumously as *Writings of Professor B. B. Edwards* (2 vols., 1853). Edwards was a remarkably energetic and persistent man, whose restless energy drove him into many projects and eventually wore him out. He was a sound scholar, an excellent linguist, and a fascinating lecturer. A born philanthropist, he was interested in missionary enterprises and social reforms, including temperance and anti-slavery.

[Edwards A. Park, "Life and Services of Prof. B. B. Edwards," in *Bibliotheca Sacra*, Oct. 1852, and memoir in Edwards's *Writings* (1853); W. L. Montague, ed., *Biog. Record of the Alumni of Amherst Coll., 1821–71* (1883); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. II (1857); *Gen. Cat. Theol. Sem., Andover, Mass., 1808–1908* (n.d.).] C. M. F.

**EDWARDS, CHARLES** (Mar. 17, 1797–May 30, 1868), lawyer, author, was born at Norwich, England, and educated at Cambridge University, emigrating later to New York, where he studied law and was admitted to the bar. Shortly after commencing practise he became standing counsel to the British consulate general in New York City, a position which he occupied for twenty-five years, and through this connection attracted a select and influential but never extensive clientele. Thorough and reliable, but not brilliant, his untiring zeal, sound judgment, and wide acquaintance with the principles of municipal and

international law enabled him to appear to signal advantage in a number of leading cases in the United States courts. He was counsel for the British government and for the owners of the *Crenshaw* and *Hiawatha* in the *Prize Cases* (1862; 2 *Black*, 635–99)—involving the status of the seceding states and perhaps the most momentous in its consequences of all the decisions of the Supreme Court of the United States during the Civil War—where the President's right *jure belli* to institute a blockade of ports in possession of insurgent states which neutrals are bound to regard was established. He also represented the British Government in *in re Thomas Kaine* (1852; 14 *Howard*, 103), where vital matters of jurisdiction in extradition proceedings were argued before the Supreme Court *in banc*. Following the sensational trial of Mrs. Cunningham in 1857 for the murder of Dr. Burdell, he successfully contested on behalf of the heirs and next of kin her claim to the murdered man's estate (see *Cunningham* vs. *Burdell*, 4 *Bradford*, 343).

He was a prolific writer on a variety of subjects and his books had considerable vogue in their day. Among his legal works were: *The Juryman's Guide Throughout the State of New York* (1831); *A Practical Treatise on Parties to Bills and Other Pleadings in Chancery* (1832); *On Receivers in Chancery* (1839); *On Receivers in Equity and under the New York Code of Procedure* (2nd ed., 1857); *The Law and Practise of Referees under the New York Code and Statutes* (1860). These, though favorably received by the profession, were by the nature of their subject ephemeral, but he made a permanent contribution to the legal literature of the State of New York by his *Reports of Chancery Cases Decided in the First Circuit of the State of New York by the Hon. William J. M'Coun* (4 vols., 1833–51), known as "Edwards' Chancery Reports," containing the decisions of Vice Chancellor McCoun from 1831 to 1846. "The reports are well drawn and are often cited, although the tribunal was not of leading authority" (Abbott, *post*). Of his miscellaneous works, the more prominent were *Feathers from my own Wings* (1832), a miscellany of prose and verse; *The History and Poetry of Finger-Rings* (1855), a work of much erudition, containing a large amount of curious out-of-the-way information, conveyed in somewhat turgid language; and *Pleasantries about Courts and Lawyers of New York* (1867).

[Apart from his professional record, source material dealing with Edwards's life and career is scanty. Joseph Sabin states (*Dict. of Books Relating to America*, vol. VI, 1873, p. 97) that he changed his name from Charles Edward Ellis to Charles Edwards in order to inherit some property, but cites no authority in support of his assertion. See D. McAdam, *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.* (1897), I, 318; B. V. Abbott and Austin Abbott, *A Digest of N. Y. Statutes and Reports*, I (1860), xvi; H. L. Clinton, *Celebrated Trials* (1897), pp. 84 ff.; obituary in N. Y. *World*, June 1, 1868.]

H.W.H.K.

**EDWARDS, HENRY WAGGAMAN** (October 1779–July 22, 1847), lawyer, congressman, governor of Connecticut, was born in New Haven. His grandfather was the famous New England divine, Jonathan Edwards [*q.v.*]; his father, Pierpont [*q.v.*], was a lawyer of repute, a member of the Continental Congress, and federal judge for the district of Connecticut; his mother, Frances Ogden, was a New Jersey woman. He was graduated from Princeton with the class of 1797 and, after attending the Litchfield Law School in Connecticut, was admitted to the bar and began practise in New Haven. Shortly after 1800 he became active in the Republican party. He was associated with the local section known as Tolerationists, whose primary purpose was to secure a new state constitution. In 1819 he was elected to Congress on the Republican ticket. He remained in the House until 1823, when he was appointed by Gov. Wolcott to the Senate, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Elijah Boardman. At the next regular election Edwards was chosen to the Senate in his own right, remaining in office until 1827.

Upon his return to Connecticut, he was for two years a member of the state Senate, and in 1830 was speaker of the House of Representatives. He was first chosen governor in 1833. During that year President Jackson visited the state, and was enthusiastically received by Edwards and the Connecticut Democrats. In the election of 1834 Edwards was defeated by Samuel A. Foot, but the following year he was successful, being then reëlected regularly until 1838. His latter period of office coincided with that era in the development of the state marked by great progress in the construction of railroads. In his messages to the Assembly, he advocated the abolition of property qualifications for voting (*Connecticut Courant*, May 11, 1835), the districting of the state for the choice of national representatives (*Ibid.*, May 14, 1833), increased governmental control of large business interests, and stricter legislation regarding joint-stock companies (*Ibid.*, May 9, 1836). The Hinsdale Act of 1837 was in line with the governor's desires. Edwards advocated the granting of financial aid to railroads, but he was not able to effect any immediate change in the conservative policy of the state (*Ibid.*, May 6, 1837). Finally, he favored the making of a geological survey, as a means of de-

veloping the natural resources of the state. Little is known about his family life. His wife was Lydia Miller (Moffatt, *post*, p. 56). A son, Henry P. Edwards, took up the legal profession and became a judge of the supreme court of New York State. In character, Edwards was determined and straightforward. Although a member of a distinguished family, he was hardly a man of brilliance. As a politician, he did not rise above the level of other men of his day.

[The best sketch is contained in *The Governors of Conn.* (1905), by F. C. Norton. Scant information can be gleaned from Wm. H. Edwards, *Timothy and Rhoda Ogden Edwards of Stockbridge, Mass., and Their Descendants* (1903); and R. B. Moffatt, *Pierrepont Genealogies from Norman Times to 1913* (1913). An obituary notice is in the *New Haven Evening Register*, July 23, 1847. Letters in the Conn. Hist. Soc., written by Edwards from Washington to Gideon Tomlinson, are the personal property of the librarian, Mr. A. C. Bates.]

J. M. M.

**EDWARDS, JOHN** (*c.* 1671–Apr. 8, 1746), silversmith, was born, and probably served his apprenticeship, in Limehouse, London, England, from which place he migrated to Boston. His father, John Edwards, a "chirurgeon," was mentioned in the diary of Samuel Sewall in 1689. According to the records, the younger Edwards was a faithful citizen. He served as tithing-man in 1701, 1708, 1711; as a sergeant of the Boston Artillery Company in 1704; as a constable in 1715; as an assessor from 1720 to 1727; and he was an attendant of the Brattle Street Church. He produced a great deal of silverwork of fine quality, marked with crude capitals in plain quatrefoil, or in quatrefoil with four projections; or Roman capitals in two semicircles with two projections; or crude capitals crowned, fleur-de-lys below in shield (Hollis French, *A List of Early American Silversmiths and their Marks*, 1917). His first wife was Sybil Newmann, the granddaughter of the second John Endecott; his second wife was Abigail Fowle, the widow of William Smith, whose grand-daughter, Abigail Smith, became the wife of John Adams, the second president of the United States. His sons Thomas, Samuel, Joseph, and his grandson Joseph, followed his trade. His sister was the wife of the silversmith, John Allen, who was related by marriage to Jeremiah Dummer, another worker in precious metal. These interrelationships among the craftsmen were the natural result of the apprenticeship system. Prosperous in his business, at his death he left an estate of £4,840, a fairly large sum for his day. In the Supplement to the Boston *Evening-Post* of Apr. 14, 1746, appeared this notice: "Tuesday last died, and Friday was decently interred, Mr. John Edwards, Goldsmith, in the 75th Year of his Age; a Gentleman of a very fair Character, and well respected by all that knew him."

[Stephen Ensko, *Am. Silversmiths and their Marks* (1927); F. H. Bigelow, *Historic Silver of the Colonies and its Makers* (1917); S. G. Drake, *The Hist. and Antiquities of Boston* (1856); C. L. Avery and R. T. H. Halsey, *Am. Silver of the XVII and XVIII Centuries* (1920); *Records of the Church in Brattle Square* (1902).]

K. H. A.

**EDWARDS, JOHN** (1748–1837), planter, senator, was born in Stafford County, Va., a son of Hayden and Penelope (Sanford) Edwards. He moved in 1780 to that part of Virginia which later became the state of Kentucky, where he speculated in land and got title to about 23,000 acres. This competency made him a leader in a region where the people were soon intent upon gaining statehood. The district of Kentucky was at this time divided into three counties, Jefferson, Fayette, and Lincoln. Edwards settled in Lincoln County, and the year following his arrival he was elected to represent it in the Virginia House of Delegates. He continued to act as a representative in 1782, 1783, 1785, and 1786. In 1783 he became a justice of the peace, which position automatically made him a member of the county court. In 1785 Bourbon County was cut out of Fayette. Edwards took up his residence in this new county, and the next year he became the clerk of the first court to be held there.

In the meantime this western part of Virginia had begun its long and tortuous course toward statehood. Edwards was a member of the two preliminary conventions held in Danville in 1785, and after the formation of Bourbon County he represented that division continuously until statehood was secured. The sinister Spanish activities in connection with the proceedings of 1787 and 1788 did not directly implicate him as they did certain other Kentuckians. In fact Edwards assumed the leadership of the opponents of the Spanish conspiracy. In the convention of November 1788, he reported and read the petition to Virginia for the independence of Kentucky, but he opposed the doctrine that Kentucky would thereby become sovereign and might enter the Union or not as she pleased. He also took part in framing the constitution of 1792.

He first served the new state by acting as one of the electors provided for by the constitution to choose the state senators. Then, in June 1792, he was appointed on a commission to choose a permanent state capital, but was not present when the decision was made giving the honor to Frankfort. As a fitting reward for his service to the district and state, he was unanimously elected one of the two first United States senators to represent Kentucky, but took no very prominent

part in the deliberations of the Senate. He returned to Kentucky in 1795 never to leave the state again in an official capacity. He was immediately elected to represent Bourbon County in the state House of Representatives and thereafter, from 1796 to 1800, he was a member of the state Senate. At the latter date he retired to private life on his Bourbon plantation where he died thirty-seven years later. Ninian Edwards [*q.v.*], chief justice of Kentucky in 1808 and later governor of Illinois Territory, was his nephew.

[Lewis and R. H. Collins, *Hist. of Ky.* (1882), I, 23, 351, 354–56, II, 71, 771; Georgie Hortense Edwards, *Hist. Sketches of the Edwards and Todd Families* (1894); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *The South in the Building of the Nation* (1909), XI, 313–14; T. M. Green, *The Spanish Conspiracy* (1891), pp. 197, 221–28; Wm. Littell, *Pol. Trans. in and Concerning Ky.* (1806), reprinted as *Filson Club Pub. No. 31* (1926); Breckenridge MSS. (1794), in Lib. of Cong.]

E. M. C.

**EDWARDS, JONATHAN** (Oct. 5, 1703–Mar. 22, 1758), Congregational clergyman, theologian, philosopher, was the son of Rev. Timothy Edwards of East Windsor, Conn. He was descended from Rev. Richard Edwards, a London clergyman in the age of Elizabeth, whose widow with her second husband, James Coles, and her son William Edwards came to New England about 1640. William and his son Richard were merchants in Hartford, Conn. Timothy, oldest son of Richard, was born in 1669, graduated from Harvard College 1691, and became pastor of East Windsor, May 1694, serving the parish until his death, January 1758. By his marriage with Esther, daughter of Rev. Solomon Stoddard of Northampton, he had eleven children, Jonathan being the fifth child and only son. For lack of schools, the son was taught with other pupils at home, developing precociously under a learned father and a mother of uncommon intellectual power. In September 1716, not yet thirteen, he entered Yale College, which after an initial period of scattered groups of students was now, by vote of the trustees, to open in New Haven. One tutor, however, Rev. Samuel Smith, and his students, refused to come from Wethersfield; and discontent with another tutor, Rev. Samuel Johnson, led the New Haven students, including Edwards, to join the Wethersfield group until, in the summer of 1719, under Timothy Cutler as Rector, the college was finally established in New Haven. Since, after some months, Johnson resigned his tutorship, Edwards cannot have been much affected by this eminent thinker, later a Berkeleian philosopher and president of King's College; but the revolutionary effect already made on Johnson's mind by Newtonian science, emancipating him from the old scholasticism, was paralleled by the formative action of Newton and Locke on Edwards, who at the age of fourteen read Locke's Essay with more delight "than the most greedy miser finds when gathering up handfuls of silver and gold, from some newly discovered treasure" (*Works,* Dwight edition, I, 30). In these college years, as if planning a *Summa* of human knowledge, the youth began to record his reflections on the nature of the human mind and on natural science (*Ibid.*, vol. I, Appendix H, I, pp. 664–771), as well as "Notes on the Scriptures" and "Miscellanies," which he continued in later life (*Ibid.*, vols. VII, VIII, IX). Even at the age of twelve he had shown close and delicate scientific observation in an account of phenomena relating to "flying spiders" (*Ibid.*, I, 23–28), and in college he added a power of theoretic reasoning in terms of Newtonian science. Before him opened a world ranging from the indiscernible atoms of which all bodies are composed to the enormously distant stars that, by his reasoning, must be blazing suns attended like our own by encircling planets. It was a world of natural laws, yet not a mechanism of bodies acting purely by themselves, for body is only intelligible as a resistance of divine power exercised at points of space. Our idea of space is only colored space, and if color be taken away, gone is all space, extension, motion, figure. Color, however, is only in the mind. "The secret lies here: That which truly is the substance of all Bodies, is the infinitely exact, and precise, and perfectly stable Idea, in God's mind, together with his stable Will, that the same shall gradually be communicated to us, and to other minds, according to certain fixed and exact established Methods and Laws" (*Ibid.*, I, 674). This was a boy's venture in Berkeleian Idealism without knowledge of Berkeley.

Even more remarkably the youth divined another aspect of reality than that of orderly related fact, and a mode of apprehension other than that of the logical understanding. In his notes on "Mind" he said: "There has nothing been more without a definition than Excellency; although it be what we are more concerned with than anything else whatsoever: yea, we are concerned with nothing else" (*Ibid.*, I, 693). In this beginning of a study of value, or perfection in any degree, lurks the master idea of his whole career. He discovers a functioning of consciousness independent of intellectual reason without, however, distinguishing the esthetic and the purely religious. Excellency, he finds, consists in greatness—degree of being—and beauty, which is consent or love of being to being. Di-

vine majesty is more, then, than the infinitude of being and power from which the Calvinistic inferences had been chiefly made. It is an infinitude of beauty which is God's love of himself, or, since all things are communications of himself, a love of all things made manifest in the tranquillity and peace that overspreads the world. Later he was to argue that the *due* apprehension, the direct sense of the sweetness of beauty in the divine being, was God's redemptive disclosure of himself to the privileged elect.

Graduating from Yale in September 1720, Edwards spent two years in theological study in New Haven, and in August 1722 began a ministry to a Presbyterian church in New York, from which, owing to meager support, he withdrew in the following May. On May 21, 1724, he was elected to the office of tutor at Yale, though his services were not needed until June. His teaching was interrupted in September 1725 by a long illness, and a year later he resigned to become the colleague of his grandfather, Solomon Stoddard, in Northampton, Mass. The incongruity of his spiritual history with the tradition of this parish was destined to end in painful conflict.

An exquisite charm belongs to Edwards's own narration of his religious development, written about 1740 (*Ibid.*, I, 58–67). Even at the tender age of seven or eight the boy shared in the awakened fervor of the village church, and in a secluded woodland spot led other children in moments of prayer. Absorbing college study checked these susceptibilities, but at the end of that period distress of soul made seeking salvation the main business of his life. Early in 1721 thought and emotion culminated in an experience which was evidence of a heart visited by regenerating grace. Holiness was revealed to him as a divine beauty, in comparison with whose ravishing loveliness everything else was mire and defilement. Rapt by such majesty of worth, his heart panted "to lie low before God, as in the dust; that I might be nothing, and that God might be all, that I might become as a little child." This experience brought with it an acquiescence in the central Calvinist doctrine of absolute divine sovereignty. God's arbitrary apportioning by his sheer pleasure of eternal happiness or everlasting torment in hell had from childhood been a repellent idea. "It used to appear like a horrible doctrine to me." Now objections began to fade. The overwhelming sense of divine infinitude of will pulsing in every object of the vast cosmos and the rapturous experience of supreme beauty and worth in that infinitude convinced him that sheer sovereignty in the bestowal of salvation is the essential glory of divine majesty. This is the

Edwards

view offered in his sermons on divine sovereignty (*Ibid.*, VI, 293; VIII, 105). It is clear that election and reprobation are implicit in the identification of saving grace with an esthetic intuition too intense for all men to share. The notes on "Mind" and his diary (*Ibid.*, I, 76–106; Dec. 18, 1722, May 25 and Aug. 12, 1723) show that Edwards was aware of some divergence here from older divines. It was in any case discrepant with the religiosity typical of the Northampton parish, and the contrast was even more marked by the emotional fervor of his wife, Sarah Pierpont of New Haven, whom he married in July 1727. Four years earlier Edwards had recorded reports of her privileged communion with God when a child of thirteen. She was "always full of joy and pleasure and no one knows for what." In solitude, which she loved to keep, she seemed "to have some one invisible always conversing with her" (*Ibid.*, I, 114). Twenty years later she herself recorded her maturer experiences of divine presence in extreme emotional form and Edwards seems to have valued them as a standard for judging the experiences of others (*Ibid.*, I, ch. XIV). In that household divine grace and human faith had intensities of manifestation rare in the lives of others.

Originally the Congregational churches were formed of those only who by a profession of an experience of saving grace could be accepted as visible saints, but, owing to the great decline of such professions, the Massachusetts Synod of 1662 sanctioned an additional "covenant membership" of such as could offer an intellectual faith and a desire to assume the obligations of the Christian life. In the Northampton neighborhood Edwards's grandfather had brought about another relaxation by admitting all the parish to the Lord's Supper, viewing the sacrament as a possible means of grace for the unregenerate. Membership tended thus to rest on "moral sincerity." Such changes diminished the difference of a Congregational church from the Church of England parish, which embraced all the baptized. Another dangerous possibility opened. The alarming defection of Samuel Johnson, Timothy Cutler, Rector of Yale, and one of the Yale tutors, to the Church of England in 1722 meant an adoption also of the Arminian theology prevalent in the English Church, a theology which rested salvation on human moral effort as well as divine grace. Attention to the Arminian Episcopalian propaganda in Connecticut was stirred the more, in 1729, when Daniel Dwight, born in Northampton and related to the distinguished Partridge family in Hatfield, abandoned Congregationalism for the English Church. From this time,

Edwards

also, Edwards feared an Arminian tendency in neighbors who failed to support his psychology of saving grace. These were his own relatives of the dominant Williams family of Hatfield, and especially his imperious and worldly cousin, Israel Williams, who, graduating from Harvard in 1729, began the prominent career of landholding and public office which won him the style of "Lord of the Valley." Their real opposition was to Edwards's insistence on the "sensible perceiving of the immediate power and operation of the Spirit of God." With them in mind Edwards later defined the controversy (*A Treatise Concerning Religious Affections,* 1746; *Works,* Dwight edition, V, 45): "They say, the manner of the Spirit of God, is to cooperate in a silent, secret, and undiscernible way with the use of means, and our own endeavors; so that there is no distinguishing by sense, between the influences of the Spirit of God and the natural operations of our own minds." From his view of divine immanence Edwards agreed to an undistinguished mingling of the human and divine in the action of the moral conscience; but the vision of divine beauty, which for him meant salvation, came only by supernatural illumination and was sensibly perceived as such. The Rev. Solomon Williams, brother of Israel, held that assurance of saving faith was a man's inference from his moral improvement and the sincerity of his obedience, and "that there is not any spiritual and gracious discovery made to the soul of the infinite beauty and amiableness of God, but as he is in Christ" (*A Vindication of the Gospel Doctrine of Justifying Faith,* 1746, pp. 41, 46).

In his parish, with meager aid from books and limited bodily energy, Edwards lived the life which before the age of twenty he had vowed in his seventy "Resolutions" (*Works,* Dwight edition, I, 67 f.), a life of stern discipline over the springs of impulse and of intense mental application; rising at 4:00 A. M., devoting thirteen hours of the day to study, finding recreation in solitary woodland rambles, during which he jotted down memoranda of his thoughts for later elaboration. After Stoddard's death, Feb. 11, 1729, his own distinctive thought began to find recognition and effect. His discourse in Boston, *God Glorified in the Work of Redemption by the Greatness of Man's Dependence upon Him in the Whole of it* (1731; *Works,* Dwight edition, vol. VII), was published at the request of the Boston ministers. It was a protest against reliance on moral effort, and viewed redemption as known by the spiritual joy attending an effusion of God's beauty on the soul. At home, the younger people became increasingly responsive, and by the autumn of 1734 formed neighborhood meetings of their own for prayer. The parish, too, procured the publication of another sermon typical in title and content: *A Devine and Supernatural Light, Immediately Imparted to the Soul by the Spirit of God, Shown to be both a Scriptural, and Rational Doctrine* (1734; *Works,* Dwight edition, vol. VI). Here again, moral discernments and repentant misery lie only in the sphere of God's common grace, his universal causative action in the limitations of natural law, while saving grace is enacted from God's transcendent freedom. This is a supernatural illumination of the mind, by which the loveliness of God's holiness is seen, and the mind acts here not with ratiocination but with direct intuitive awareness and self-evident certainty. "Reason's work is to perceive truth, and not excellency." As other sermons argued, the natural man has a sottish and brutish blindness even when he repents and prays. Though he had the mental faculties for it, he is ignorant of the excellency of God's nature as one born blind is of colors (*Discourses on Various Important Subjects,* 1738; *Works,* Dwight edition, vol. V)

Objections began from those who were accustomed to milder tests of election but in spite even of an arrogant categorical veto from Israel Williams of Hatfield, Edwards continued the theme in sermons on Justification by Faith (*Ibid.*) He exhibited faith as a divinely wrought union with Christ by which Christ's righteousness is imputed to the elect without the condition of any qualifying excellence in the recipient. Though openly abused for this, Edwards felt himself divinely vindicated by the striking revival that ensued, the only movement of extent and power since the passing enthusiasm attending the early preaching of John Cotton a century before. In December 1734 there were six sudden conversions and in the following spring they were counted as thirty a week. Since visitors from other towns flocked to Northampton, the revival spread throughout the county and many places in Connecticut. Religious themes absorbed the thought and talk of the whole population of Northampton, even at weddings. Children formed their own religious meetings. One notable conversion was that of Phœbe Bartlett, a child of four, though the majority of conversions counted as indubitable by the critical and cautious Edwards were of people over forty years of age. The revival was skilfully guided by a pastor unsparing in the logic of Calvinism and, like Ignatius of Loyola, a psychological expert in the *exercitia spiritualia.* At the outset the hearer must know his guilt as an actual hater of God: "You object against your having a mortal

hatred against God; that you never felt any desire to kill him. But one reason has been, that it has always been conceived so impossible by you, and you have been so sensible how much desires would be in vain, that it has kept down such a desire. But if the life of God were within your reach, and you knew it, it would not be safe one hour." ("Men Naturally God's Enemies," *Works,* Austin edition, VII, 180.) "When you come to be a firebrand of hell . . . you will appear as you are, a viper indeed. . . . Then will you as a serpent spit poison at God and vent your rage and malice in fearful blasphemies." (*Ibid.,* VII, 198; Dwight edition, VII, 58.) Creatures of such iniquity were useful only in their destruction. "The devil is waiting for them, hell is gaping for them, the flames gather and flash about them, and would fain lay hold on them and swallow them up. . . . All that preserves them every moment is the mere arbitrary will and uncovenanted, unobliged forbearance of an incensed God." (*Works,* Dwight edition, VII, 168.) "Though he will know that you cannot bear the weight of omnipotence . . . he will crush you under his feet without mercy; he will crush out your blood, and make it fly, and it shall be sprinkled on his garments, so as to stain all his raiment." (*Ibid.,* VII, 173.) With a change of imagery the preacher pictured the vast liquid mountains of fire and brimstone flowing without rest, giving no rest day or night to all eternity.

Brought thus to the anguished conviction that God was absolutely just in their condemnation and made completely submissive to divine sovereignty, the hearers passed from depth of terror to a calm acquiescence, with a bare hope of possible divine mercy. Regeneration was a third stage of experience in which the submissive heart felt a disinterested joyful adoration in contemplation of the unmerited mercy that would elect any of a race so fallen and corrupt to eternal felicity. Often Edwards had to persuade the penitents that this admiring awe was in fact the impartation of a supernatural light and evidence of a new heart. They did not easily distinguish the divine from the human in this frame of soul. In May the high tension began to subside, partly because despairing seekers now had morbid impulses to commit suicide. Edwards inferred that Satan had regained control.

For some years quieter conditions prevailed and the preaching of Edwards dealt more with Christian love as manifested in the heart and life. This is the theme of *Charity and its Fruits,* a series of sermons preached in 1738, first published by Tryon Edwards in 1851. Edwards was not alone, however, in expecting repetitions of re-

Edwards

vival fervor, and his communications, private and public, contributed to this result. *A Faithful Narrative of the Surprising Work of God in the Conversion of Many Hundred Souls in Northampton, and the Neighboring Towns and Villages,* published in Boston and London in 1737 (*Works,* Dwight edition, vol. IV), is linked with intenser interests in Scotch churches, and prepared the great social response to the evangelistic tour of George Whitefield in 1740–42. That "Great Awakening," however, evoked divisive tendencies in New England life. Whitefield's denunciations of ministers as devoid of grace, and the fanatic extravagances of unlearned lay itinerants who intruded in the parishes, brought protests against disorderly excitements and convulsive physical effects. Edwards himself offered judicious criticisms in *The Distinguishing Marks of a Work of the Spirit of God* (1741; *Works,* Dwight edition, vol. IV). In 1742, also, partly in answer to Charles Chauncy of Boston, he published *Some Thoughts Concerning the Present Revival of Religion in New England* (*Ibid.,* vol. IV). Here he defends the awakening of 1740 by its moral results, but frankly admits remedial faults incidental to it. His sense of living in a momentous time appears in his argument that Scripture prophecies of the Latter-Day outpouring of the Spirit apply to America as the scene of a prelude to that great manifestation. This was no momentary thought. When not yet twenty he had been eager to see in contemporary events foregleams of some great Advent, and from now on apocalyptic expectancy and calculations were a powerful interest. The theme has place in his correspondence with the Scotch clergyman, William McCulloch (*Ibid.,* I, 196 f., 261 f.), and in the sermons of 1739 which John Erskine of Edinburgh made into *A History of the Work of Redemption* (Edinburgh, 1774); and it dominates *An Humble Attempt to Promote Visible Union of God's People in Extraordinary Prayer for the Revival of Religion* (1747; *Works,* Dwight edition, vol. III). It is obvious that the revival was supported by the conviction of a crisis in human history. Since, however, in Connecticut and central Massachusetts, revivals resulted in social cleavage and church divisions with partisan conflict between exponents of religion as violent emotion and those who regarded it as rectitude of conduct, Edwards needed to intervene further by a series of sermons in 1742–43 which became *A Treatise Concerning Religious Affections,* published in 1746 (*Ibid.,* vol. V). This is the supreme expression of Edwards's psychology of religion. The mind has two activities: understanding, and inclination or will, the latter having

inseparable aspects of affections and choice, since man wills what he loves. True religion involves both activities. While in great part it consists in holy affections, there must also be light to the understanding implied in all reasonable affections. At great length he cautions against reliance on mere intensity of feeling, on its effect on the body, on fervor of speech, or on a confidence in righteousness which may be only exalted natural feeling. The conversion of a child of Satan to a child of God lies in the birth of a love of God originating in the disclosure to the soul of God's moral perfections: "A true love to God must begin with a delight in his holiness, and not with a delight in any other attribute; for no other attribute is truly lovely without this." (*Ibid.*, V, 143). This is no gift of new doctrinal information, no initiation into mystical meanings of Scripture. It is a new discernment of the truth already furnished. It is a direct, intuitive vision of the beauty that is in God and Christ, which by its perfect joy convinces the soul of the reality and certainty of divine things. The soul's nature is changed. It shares in the divine light, shares in the character of Christ. Now the affections are brought into beautiful harmony, and new conduct manifests the divinity of the principle from which it flows, a union of Christ with the faculties of the soul. To this analysis of piety Edwards soon added a study of an illustrious example of divine movements in the heart of one who sounded the depths of sorrow and joy. This was *An Account of the Life of the Late Reverend Mr. David Brainerd* (1749), compiled from his diary and papers. (*Ibid.*, vol. X.)

Republications of the *Treatise Concerning Religious Affections* in England and Scotland led to more extensive correspondence with Scotch divines, who initiated a Concert of United Prayer for the Coming of Christ's Kingdom. To the Rev. John Erskine (1747) he announced his intention of writing a systematic attack on Arminianism, beginning with the topic of the Will and moral agency, and from Erskine he received a number of Arminian works of use for this purpose. The project, however, had to be postponed, for in the meantime Edwards was involved in serious difficulty with his parish. He had already in preaching on Religious Affections made known his disapproval of the long standing Stoddardean practise of admitting to full membership without satisfactory evidence of a regenerated heart. Examination of Scripture and the older divines convinced him of the error in this practise. Originally, a Congregational church consisted of visible saints, known as such by a recital of experiences accepted as evidence

Edwards

of a renewal by divine grace. Stoddard, often inconsistent in expression, could be quoted as saying that moral sincerity in professing faith and repentance made a man a visible saint in the sense of the New Testament, and "moral sincerity" had become the catchword of some of his Williams descendants. Edwards could find moral sincerity only in the regenerate, and he would limit membership to those at least who humbly trusted that their heart was now capable of a true Christian life. Gossip exaggerated the rigor of the tests that he would demand. He was in any case placing himself in opposition to the settled usage of all but two churches in the county, and to his socially and politically eminent relatives unfriendly to revivals and revival tests. Israel Williams, now in high military station in the first French and Indian war, fomented discontent in Northampton. No test came until December 1748, when an applicant refused to accept the terms of a profession of Godliness offered by Edwards. Unfortunately, by his own maladroitness in a very different matter, Edwards had alienated many parishioners. In 1744 on hearing of the circulation of books provocative of indecent speech among the young, he had the church appoint a committee of inquiry, and at once from the pulpit read a list of names of those who were to meet the committee. Nearly all the important families found themselves compromised by the publication of the long list in which there was no distinction of witnesses and accused. Their indignation stopped the investigation.

After the difficulty concerning admission to the church in December 1748, Edwards asked the Standing Committee of the church to consent to an exposition of his views in the form of sermons, but the committee preferred an explanation in print. Well aware that dismission from the pastorate would be the probable result, but conscientiously unwilling to admit applicants without the public profession, Edwards offered on Apr. 13, 1749, to resign his charge if, after reading his projected book, the members, with the approval of a mutual council, should so vote. This was the beginning of a long and complicated series of negotiations involving disputed rights of the precinct (the civil community supporting the church) to direct the action of the church organization, the right of Edwards to be heard from the pulpit in defense of his position, his right to secure churches from outside the county (then comprising the three present counties of Franklin, Hampshire, and Hampden) to represent him in the council, as well as the definition of the council's functions when formed. Edwards has left an accurate, detailed record of

every incident in the controversy in an unimpassioned, scrupulous journal, which is a monument to his intellectual integrity (*Works,* Dwight edition, I, 313–99). The church finally conceded to him the calling of a mutual council of ten churches, two of the five selected by himself to be drawn from outside the county, and the council to be free to proffer any advice. It met June 19, 1750, but it was incomplete; one church called by Edwards failed to send delegates. Nevertheless, the majority refused to postpone action until the disparity could be remedied. After vain attempts to bring church and pastor to agreement, it voted by its partisan majority of one that the pastoral relation ought to be at once dissolved if the church persisted in that desire. Thereupon more than 200 of the 230 voting (that is, male) members of the church voted for his dismission, and the council on June 22, again by a majority of one, so gave final judgment. The minority united in a published protest. On July 1 Edwards preached his farewell sermon (1750; *Works,* Dwight edition, I, 626), a discourse of the highest dignity and restrained intensity, marked by a strong sense of ministerial authority. His conception of the cause of all the trouble is shown by his warning to watch against the encroachments of Arminianism: "If these principles should greatly prevail in this town, . . . it will threaten the spiritual and eternal ruin of this people, in the present and future generations."

"I am now," he wrote to Erskine, July 5, 1750, "thrown upon the wide ocean of the world, and know not what will become of me, and my numerous and chargeable family" (*Ibid.,* I, 411). Erskine already had offered aid in procuring a call to some Scotch parish, but Edwards, while ready enough to accept the Presbyterian polity, shrank from the uncertainties involved. The Northampton people, long unable to secure another pastor, asked occasional preaching from him, but in November determined opponents got the town to end such service. A friendly minority proposed to join with him in forming a new church, but he refused from an unwillingness to divide the parish. He did, on further solicitation, invite a council of ministers to advise in the matter (May 15, 1751), but in view of an abusive remonstrance addressed to the council, he welcomed the advice of that body that he should accept another charge already offered him. He had been called to be missionary to the Indians in Stockbridge and pastor of the church formed by the Indians and a few white settlers. After two visits of investigation, he settled in Stockbridge, Aug. 8, 1751. A meager church support was to be supplemented by mission funds from

Edwards

the provincial legislature and the London Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England.

Until his Northampton house could be sold he struggled with adversity, being heavily in debt for land and house in the new field and for the marriages of two daughters. Wife and children eked out the family living by selling in the Boston market their handwork of lace, embroideries, and painted fans.

More painful still was the necessity of conflict with the greed and intrigues of a resident merchant, Ephraim Williams, a relative of the family which in large part had brought about the catastrophe in Northampton. Education of Indian boys was supported by a grant from the King, by the London Society, and by individual philanthropists in London; and now another English benefactor proposed a school for girls. To remedy previous mismanagement, Edwards secured from the legislature the appointment of three trustees for all the funds. Two of his Williams kinsmen, however, got from London appointment on the Boston board of commissioners of the Society, and brought about the nomination of a woman relative as mistress of the girls' school. Furthermore, one of the new trustees, marrying into the Williams family, came to Stockbridge to assume control. Under this régime, on request from the Boston commissioners Edwards could only report lax arrangements profitable to private pockets; whereupon the Williams group tried to have him and Gideon Hawley [*q.v.*], teacher of the boys' school, removed, and to buy out the lands of settlers who supported them. Owing to the courage and skill of Edwards, however, these intriguers found themselves thwarted and repudiated by settlers, Indians, commissioners, and the legislature. During this time there occurred another skirmish growing out of the Northampton controversy. In August 1749 Edwards had defended himself by publishing *An Humble Inquiry into the Rules of the Word of God, Concerning the Qualifications Requisite to a Complete Standing and Full Communion with the Visible Christian Church* (*Works,* Dwight edition, vol. IV). Though alienated parishioners refused to read it, Elisha Williams [*q.v.*], former Rector of Yale, began a work in reply, but on going to England gave the material to his half-brother, Rev. Solomon Williams of Lebanon, who in 1751 produced a work: *The True State of the Question Concerning the Qualifications Necessary to Lawful Communion in the Christian Sacraments.* In Stockbridge Edwards found time to answer with *Misrepresentations Corrected, and Truth Vindicated* (1752;

*Works*, Dwight edition, vol. IV), a wearisome masterpiece of controversial subtlety. Done now with these personal battles, he resumed the plan of a general campaign against Arminian theology. Before his early death in his fifty-fifth year he had completed four notable works and had others in prospect.

The youthful notes on "Mind," which evince a philosophic talent of the highest promise, were unknown to his contemporaries. His fame was that of preacher and revivalist. But the publication in 1754 of *A Careful and Strict Enquiry into the Modern Prevailing Notions of that Freedom of Will which is Supposed to be Essential to Moral Agency, Vertue and Vice, Reward and Punishment, Praise and Blame* (*Works*, Dwight edition, vol. II), revealed him as the first great philosophic intelligence in American history. The work shows his debt to Locke but also a profound originality, logical acumen, and critical discrimination in the use of terms. Its purpose was to maintain the dogmas of absolute divine sovereignty and unconditional predestination against Arminian objections found especially in Whitby's *Six Discourses* (1710). There is freedom, for the mind can freely act out its choice. The origination of the choice is nevertheless absolutely determined. It is determined by the motive—that which has the greatest tendency to excite volition by being seen as the greatest apparent good. Man has the natural power to serve God, if he is so inclined; but he will not be so inclined unless God reveals himself as the man's highest good—a revelation which is not for all. Moral responsibility lies in the choice, whatever be its origin, not in the cause of the choice. Necessitation cancels no liberty or moral responsibility. Liberty means only that man can do what he wills, but, as appears from the fact of divine foreknowledge, volitions are determined. God's foreknowledge, which is evidenced by the fulfilment of prophecies, means the certainty of events, and only the will of God establishes their certainty. Adam's fall was a choice caused by motives. In the last analysis the motives were due to God. God wills the system under which sin infallibly comes to pass. The system is God's. The sin is man's.

What then is man's inclination? In 1758 Edwards published his work *The Great Christian Doctrine of Original Sin Defended* (*Ibid.*, vol. II), chiefly in reply to works of John Taylor of Norwich, England, which were widely circulated in New England in the propaganda of Episcopalian churches. Taylor regarded all human propensities as in themselves good, since they act as incentive to the development of controlling reason and virtue. Edwards determines the human tendency by abstracting all restraining divine action—all that insures moral behavior. Man is born depraved and in conditions that infallibly lead to sin. The sin is infinite, for it is sin against infinite being. We were depraved when Adam was depraved. We committed Adam's sin. For what is personal identity? It is a sameness of consciousness explicable only as due to continuity of divine action. Our identity is a constituted identity. God constitutes us one person with Adam. This ingenious novelty was a mode of escape from Taylor's plea that God cannot hold us guilty for the sin of one who represents us without our knowledge or consent.

Between the last two works Edwards had written two others which he then laid aside. One is an essay, "The Nature of True Virtue," a study of the genuine Christian character (first published in *Two Dissertations*, 1765; *Works*, Dwight edition, vol. III). Possibly the formulation may owe something to his disciple Hopkins. Certainly Hopkins and Bellamy, theologically trained in Edwards's home, effectively carried on the formulation here found. Nevertheless, it is an elaboration of what belonged to the notes on "Mind." Virtue, it is argued, is a kind of beauty—that moral beauty which is the form of love, the beauty of a disposition of good will to being in general. "If every intelligent being is in some way related to being in general, and is a part of the universal system of existence; and so stands in connection with the whole; what can its general and true beauty be, but its union and consent with the great whole" (*Works*, Dwight edition, III, 95). This propensity seeks the highest good of being in general. The object that has most of being draws the greatest share of the heart's benevolence. God, then, is the supreme object of virtuous propensity. The ethical thus merges in the religious attitude. All men, to be sure, have "natural conscience." They approve justice and benevolence, they even perceive its beauty, but to love, to taste its primary and essential beauty, belongs only to him whose conscience is enlightened by saving grace. The natural virtues are spurious; they rest on self-love. Disinterested love belongs to God and the redeemed.

Apparently Edwards left this aside for some revision. Did he find that the development of this thought was somewhat incongruous with his Calvinism? The surmise has been made also with reference to the other unpublished work of 1755, "Concerning the End for which God Created the World" (*Ibid.*). This is a high flight in the pantheistic mysticism of his boyhood, and an

elaboration of reflections recorded in his "Miscellanies" without use in his sermons. Why a world? An ultimate question. The briefest expression of this hovering contemplation is "that a disposition in God, as an original property of his nature, to an emanation of his own infinite fullness, was what excited him to create the world; and so that the emanation itself was aimed at by him as a last end of the creation." The universe, then, is an exfoliation of God, an emanation, not a creation out of nothing. Nothing has real existence save as it partakes of God. His final end in the great manifestation is Himself. The world exists for His glory. He, the supreme and only excellence, necessarily loves Himself. If God has pleasure in the creature, it is because the creature is His emanation, has the divine essence in him. It is difficult to see how in this view the human self has any distinctive reality, and the surmise again is offered that speculative thought has become independent of the theological system.

Obviously this stern logician had a singular capacity for esthetic joy. The exquisite narrative of his religious experience, almost a poem, exhibits a rare delight in the beauty of nature. His answer to the question, "Why a world?" is that God is the supreme artist who gives Himself expression in infinitely varied perfections. Edwards the theologian could not be content with a rational ethical relation to God. The soul's real response must be the delight of the lover of beauty.

His end was not in Stockbridge. His third daughter, Esther, was married June 29, 1752, to Rev. Aaron Burr, president since 1748 of the College of New Jersey, which in 1756 removed from Newark to Princeton. Two days after Burr's death on Sept. 24, 1757, Edwards was chosen as his successor. On Oct. 19, Edwards wrote in doubt of his fitness for the office, stressing the lack of physical vigor with its check on social responsiveness, as well as his reluctance to abandon further literary projects. He sought counsel of a group of ministers, however, who urged that acceptance was a duty. Given leave to resign his missionary office, he went early in January to Princeton. There he preached regularly and conducted what would now be called a seminar course in theology for seniors. On Mar. 22, 1758, he died of fever following inoculation against smallpox. He was buried in Princeton.

Edwards was tall of stature, slender in form, obviously of delicate constitution. His somewhat feminine visage had comely features and piercing eyes, and his quiet voice, toned with a certain pathos, had penetrating effect by its perfect



distinctness and its modulated expression. Venerated for the saintliness of his disciplined character, he was bitterly hated because of a pitiless logical consistency that trammeled life. He created the first great religious revival of modern times; intensified the power of Calvinism to stem the tide of the world's new thought; fused the iron logic of that system with a rapture of mystic communion; and initiated a New England Theology as a new chapter in the history of doctrine.

[A bibliography by John J. Coss of Edwards's published writings and works relating to him appears in the *Cambridge Hist. of Am. Lit.*, I (1917), 426–38, and a bibliography of his publications, in F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. I (1885). Edwards's *Works* have been twice edited, by Sereno Dwight (10 vols., 1829, vol. I containing Dwight's life of Edwards), and by S. Austin (8 vols., Worcester, 1808–09, repub. in 4 vols., 1843, and several times since). The youthful writings are more exactly reproduced by Egbert C. Smyth in *Andover Rev.*, Jan., Mar. 1890, and in *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, n.s., X, 212–47 (Oct. 1895). Additional selections from the "Miscellanies" were printed by A. B. Grosart in *Selections from the Unpublished Writings of Jonathan Edwards* (Edinburgh, 1865), and by E. C. Smyth in *Exercises Commemorating the Two-Hundredth Anniversary of the Birth of Jonathan Edwards held at Andover Theol. Sem. Oct. 4 and 5, 1903* (1904). Other publications from the MSS. are by Tryon Edwards, *Charity and its Fruits* (copyright 1851); E. C. Smyth, *Observations Concerning the Scripture Œconomy of the Trinity* (1880); G. P. Fisher, *An Unpublished Essay of Edwards on the Trinity* (1903). Concerning the MSS. see F. B. Dexter in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser., XV, 2–16 (Mar. 1901). For Edwards's theology and philosophy see A. V. G. Allen, *Jonathan Edwards* (1890); F. H. Foster, *A Genetic Hist. of the New Eng. Theology* (1907); Jan Ridderbos, *De Theologie van Jonathan Edwards* (1907); G. P. Fisher, *Hist. of Christian Doctrine* (1896); Frank Sanborn, in *Jour. of Speculative Philosophy*, Oct. 1883. Adam Leroy Jones, *Early Am. Philosophers* (Columbia Univ. Press, 1898); E. C. Smyth, *Am. Jour. of Theology*, Oct. 1897; H. N. Gardiner, *Philosophical Rev.*, Nov. 1900; J. H. MacCracken, *Philosophical Rev.*, Jan. 1902; F. J. E. Woodbridge, *Philosophical Rev.*, July 1904; Woodbridge Riley, *Am. Philosophy; The Early Schools* (1907); *Am. Thought* (1915); Mattoon M. Curtis, "Kantian Elements in Edwards" in *Festschrift für Heinze* (Berlin, 1916); Vernon L. Parrington, *Main Currents of Am. Thought*, vol. I (1927); Erich Voegelin, *Uber die Form des Amerikanischen Geistes* (1928).]

F.A.C.

**EDWARDS, JONATHAN** (May 26, 1745–Aug. 1, 1801), theologian, the second son of his more celebrated father of the same name, was born in Northampton, Mass. At the age of six he went with his father to Stockbridge and lived there among the Mohican Indians, to whom his father was missionary, and learned their language. In January 1758, his father moved with his family to Princeton, N. J., to become president of the College of New Jersey, but died in the following March, his wife, the noted Sarah (Pierpont) Edwards, dying in October of the same year. Thus orphaned, the son was enabled by friends to prepare for the college at Princeton, from which he graduated in 1765. During his

Edwards

course he had a deep religious experience, and made profession of his faith. For a year after graduation he studied theology with his father's friend, Joseph Bellamy [*q.v.*], at Bethlehem, Conn., and for another year preached here and there. He then accepted a tutorship at Princeton. After two years of teaching he became, in January 1769, pastor of the White Haven Church of New Haven, Conn. The year after his settlement he married Mary Porter, who was drowned in 1782. In December 1783, he married Mercy Sabin.

"In person," says his grandson, "Dr. Edwards was slender, erect, and somewhat above the ordinary stature. His complexion was dark; his features bold and prominent; his hair raven black; his eye keen, piercing and intelligent to a remarkable degree." The portrait prefixed to his *Works* indicates that his features and expression were harsh and severe; yet he was a man of tender feelings, generous to the poor, with a special interest in the negroes and a hatred of slavery and the slave-trade. His experience in his first pastorate was not unlike that of his father, for he was unable to heal the divisions that existed at the time of his coming, and two years later the church split on the same issue of the Half-Way Covenant which had made trouble for his father at Northampton. The particular point in question was whether the children of those who were not members of the church should be baptized, a practise to which both the Edwards were opposed. The larger part of his church remained under his pastorate for a number of years, but there came a new access of dissatisfaction owing to the Revolution and to the growth of liberal opinions among his people, and the church dwindled, so that in January 1795 he was dismissed from his charge, on the ground that the church was no longer able to maintain a pastor, though it bore witness to his high character and ability. A year later he became pastor at Colebrook, Conn., where he was able to give time to literary work. After some three years at Colebrook, he accepted the presidency of Union College, Schenectady, N. Y., but, as in his father's case at Princeton, his presidency was short; for he died only two years after taking up the work. Like his father he preached on the first Sunday of the year of his death from the text, "This year thou shalt die."

The similarity of his career to that of his father corresponds to a similarity in their mental qualities. Both were silent and reserved men, somewhat morbidly religious, and devoted to the development of doctrine by the keenest and most uncompromising logic, though not without personal tenderness of feeling. Yet their doctrine, for all its severity, had in it an important progressive element, not generally appreciated as such, which later contributed largely to the more humane teachings known as "progressive orthodoxy." The father took a great step forward by maintaining, in opposition to the older Calvinism, that men could repent if they would, though the will itself was determined from above. The particular contribution of the son to the "improvements" on the older Calvinism was the "governmental" theory of the atonement, as opposed to the previous "satisfaction" theory. This newer theory was not entirely original with him, but gained acceptance mainly through his presentation of it. It declared that the sacrificial sufferings of Christ were not to be understood either as the payment of a debt due to God, or as the infliction on Christ of precisely those sufferings which would otherwise have been endured by those who were forgiven for his sake; they were rather the demonstration, by means of a willing victim, of the moral government of the world, whereby God could without inconsistency forgive freely such as repented and put their trust in Christ. This theory was based on a conception of God as a benevolent moral governor, rather than as an arbitrary sovereign, developed by the elder Edwards. Two important consequences were drawn by the son and his fellow-workers from these conclusions: first, that Christ died for all men and not simply for the elect; second, that neither the sin of Adam nor the righteousness of Christ were imputed to men, moral qualities not being thus transferable. These points, along with the declaration of the ability of men to repent, formed the distinctive characteristics of the New England Theology over against the older "Triangle" of inability, imputation, and limited atonement.

In addition to his discussion of the atonement, Edwards published a defense of eternal punishment and also a defense of his father's theory of the will, a treatise on the Mohican language, and a number of short theological articles. He also edited a number of his father's manuscripts for publication. He lacked the imagination and originality of the elder Edwards, but he had a powerful mind, and gave a great impulse to the development of a more progressive type of thought in theology.

[The chief sources of information are the memoir by his grandson, Tryon Edwards, in *The Works of Jonathan Edwards, D.D., Late President of Union College, with a Memoir of his Life* (2 vols., 1842); and the funeral sermon in the collected edition of his *Works* (2 vols., 1850). For a discussion of his theological thought, see F. H. Foster, *A Genetic Hist. of the New England Theology* (1907). See also Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. I (1857), p. 653.] B.W.B.

**EDWARDS, JULIAN** (Dec. 11, 1855–Sept. 5, 1910), stage composer, was born at Manchester, England, where he received his early schooling. He soon showed an aptitude for music, and was placed under Sir Herbert Oakley and Sir George Macfarren for studies in theory and composition, then became "Maestro al piano" with Carl Rosa, and conductor of the Royal English Opera Company. In 1888 he came to America to become leader of the J. C. Duff Opera Company, settled at Yonkers, and was soon identified with the New York musical colony. He married Philippine Siedle, sister of the technical manager of the Metropolitan Opera House. His best-known work in serious vein was the opera *King René's Daughter* (1893), based on the one-act play of Henrik Hertz, and intended for a Sonzogno competition. In this, Iolanthe, the daughter, who has lost her sight through fright at a fire occurring during her childhood, is shown living in a secret vale, surrounded by loving care, and brought up not to know what sight is. A parental marriage contract makes Tristan, Count of the rival Vermandois, her future spouse; but he has never seen her. Entering the vale by chance, he finds her sleeping, awakens her by taking as keepsake a magic amulet by which her physician, Ebn Jahia, kept her at rest, and is completely charmed by her courtesy. Not knowing who she is, he attempts to repudiate his betrothal to the king's daughter. He leaves, but returns with his retainers, to find that his unknown adored and the king's daughter are the same person. This crisis, with her physician's care, restores her sight. Another short opera by Edwards was *The Patriot* (1907), in which Washington, alone, takes refuge from a storm in the house of a Tory who, with a spy, has been plotting the commander's death. The daughter of the house, sympathizing with the Colonials, recoils at having to betray her father, and instead, stays in the room Washington was supposed to occupy and takes the stab intended for him. Other serious operas by Edwards were *Corinne, Elfinella,* and *Victorian,* the last a setting of Longfellow's "Spanish Student," produced by the Royal English Opera Company at Covent Garden in 1883. It was as a creator of light opera of a high standard, however, that he became best known. He could write good concerted music and strong finales, which accounted for his success. His *Brian Boru* (1896) became especially popular and caused its composer to be compared with Balfe. Its plot, which might well serve for serious opera, shows Brian defeating Briton invaders, but coming under the spell of their princess, Elfrida, who uses her power over him to get him taken prisoner by a band of her soldiers. After a rescue he defeats the invaders again, and this time proceeds to his coronation without being bewitched by any foreign siren. The story is strongly dramatic, but fairies, magic fiddles, and comic love scenes, as well as verbal dialogue, give the work a rather light effect. Other notable light operas were: *Jupiter* (1892), *Friend Fritz* (1893), *Dolly Varden* (1901), *The Goddess of Truth* (1896), *The Princess Chic* (1899), *The Jolly Musketeer* (1898), *The Wedding Day* (1897), *The Girl and the Governor* (1907), *The Motor Girl* (1909), *The Maid of Plymouth,* and *The Belle of London Town. When Johnny Comes Marching Home* had a long summer run at McVicker's in 1902. It contained the effective song "My Own United States" which was published separately, with new verses, at the request of the National Song Society. Naturally vigorous and rhythmic, this song is especially noteworthy for its use of the official title of the country instead of the more common but less accurate "America." The composer's more serious style was illustrated by several cantatas, including "Lazarus" (1907), which, led by him in a Sunday concert at the Metropolitan, won much appreciation for its classical learning and oratorio effects of strength; "The Redeemer" (1907), "Mary Magdalen," and "Lord of Life and Love" (1909). His secular works in this form included "The Mermaid" (1907) and "De Montfort's Daughter" (1899), the latter for treble voices. His incidental music to *Quo Vadis* deserves mention, also several song collections, of which *Sunlight and Shadow* was the most successful.

[*Boston Transcript,* Jan. 7, 1897, and Sept. 7, 1910; *Musical Courier,* Sept. 7, 1910; *Musical America,* Sept. 10, 1910; Janet M. Green, "Musical Biographies," being vol. I of the *Am. Hist. and Encyc. of Music* (1908), ed. by W. L. Hubbard; W. J. Baltzell, *Baltzell's Dict. of Musicians* (1911); *Who's Who in America,* 1910–11.] A. E.

**EDWARDS, JUSTIN** (Apr. 25, 1787–July 23, 1853), Congregational clergyman, writer of tracts, was born in Westhampton, Mass., the third child of Justin and Elizabeth (Clark) Edwards, and a direct descendant of Alexander Edwards, who came to America from Wales in 1640 and settled in Springfield, Mass. He was a second cousin of Bela Bates Edwards [*q.v.*]. The elder Justin Edwards was a farmer, who allowed his son to go to Williams College, where he graduated in 1810 as valedictorian of his class. To save money, he often walked from his home to college, a distance of forty miles, and he spent his winter vacations in teaching. After some experience as a teacher in Athens, N. Y., he en-

tered Andover Theological Seminary, at Andover, Mass., then a center of orthodox Calvinism, in March 1811. Before he could complete his course, he was elected pastor of the South Church, in Andover, being ordained on Dec. 2, 1812. On Sept. 17, 1817, he was married to Lydia, daughter of Asa Bigelow, of Colchester, Conn., by whom he had six children. His service continued until 1827, when he resigned to accept the agency of the American Temperance Society. On Jan. 1, 1828, he was installed as pastor of the Salem Street Church, in Boston, but his health broke down and he was soon obliged to abandon his clerical duties.

While in Andover, Edwards helped to start some significant social and religious movements. In 1814 he aided in organizing the New England Tract Society, and he was early enlisted in the temperance cause. In 1829 he took a position as corresponding secretary of the American Temperance Society, in which capacity he traveled over a large section of the United States and published a series of pamphlets called the Permanent Temperance Documents which had a large circulation. He maintained his permanent residence in Andover, however, and, on Sept. 7, 1836, was inaugurated as president of Andover Theological Seminary, his salary for five years having been guaranteed by the philanthropist, William Bartlet. On Apr. 19, 1842, when funds for the position were no longer forthcoming, he resigned. For thirty-three years after 1820 he was a trustee of Andover Theological Seminary, being president of the Board from 1850 to 1853. At the formation of the American and Foreign Sabbath Union in 1842, he was chosen secretary, and, during the next seven years, covered more than 48,000 miles and prepared the Permanent Sabbath Documents, of which more than 600,000 copies were printed. He was the author of several widely popular tracts, including: *A Well Conditioned Farm, A Sermon on the Way to be Saved* (1826), *On the Traffic in Ardent Spirit,* and *A Sermon on the Unction from the Holy One* (1830), and many of his sermons were published as pamphlets. The American Temperance Society circulated more pamphlets from his pen than from that of any other man. From 1849 until his death he was employed by the American Tract Society in preparing a brief commentary on the Bible, of which he actually completed the New Testament and as far as the Ninetieth Psalm in the Old Testament. Taken ill in April 1852, he never fully recovered, and in the following year he died at Bath Alum Springs, Va., where he had gone for his health. He was buried in the Chapel Cemetery at Andover. He was tall and erect, with a reserved and stately bearing which often wrongly seemed to be austerity. He was rather awkward in manner, with few oratorical graces, but his homely sincerity impressed his congregations. His speech in the pulpit was direct and practical, and he was an uncompromising Calvinist in his theology.

[Wm. A. Hallock, *A Sketch of the Life . . . of the Rev. Justin Edwards* (Am. Tract Soc., 1855) is somewhat verbose and effusive; an excellent brief account may be found in *Hist. Manual of the South Church in Andover, Mass.* (1859). See also W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. II (1859); S. L. Bailey, *Hist. Sketches of Andover* (1880).] C.M.F.



**EDWARDS, MORGAN** (May 9, 1722 o.s.–Jan. 28, 1795), Baptist clergyman, church historian, was born of Welsh stock in Trevethin Parish, Monmouthshire, England. His first religious training came from the Anglican church, for which he ever retained high respect, but in 1738 he passed over to Baptist views. After attending a village school near his home, he entered the Baptist college at Bristol. At sixteen he had begun to preach and for seven years, while continuing his theological studies, he supplied a small church at Boston, Lincolnshire. Acquiring a smattering of Hebrew and becoming somewhat proficient in New Testament Greek, he later ranked among Baptist ministers in America as a classical scholar. Herein lay the elements of intellectual attainment which impressed his contemporaries. Though his ordination did not occur till June 1, 1757, for nine years, 1750–59, he was pastor at Cork, Ireland. It was here that he married his first wife, Mary, daughter of Joshua Nun of Cork, by whom he had eight children. After preaching for a year at Rye, Sussex, he was proposed by Dr. John Gill to the Baptist church in Philadelphia, Pa., which had written to London for aid in securing a pastor. Arriving in America in May 1761, he began on July 1 his pastorate of ten years. Within this relatively short period falls what may most distinctively be considered his public career.

Although tradition ranks Edwards among the greater ministers of this noted Philadelphia church, there is little specific record of his contribution to the development of the local field. That there was some growth of the church is evidenced by the number of baptisms, by the erection, after about a year, of a larger edifice, and by the appointment of an assistant. His relations with the church were marked by frankness on his part and by liberality on the part of both. For fifteen years Edwards had an obsession that he would die in 1770, and on Jan. 1 of that year he preached a sermon setting forth this idea, using as text, "This year thou shalt die." This event had been

erroneously represented as the preaching of his own funeral sermon. It doubtless impaired his reputation and the next year he retired from the pastorate. A recurring habit of intoxication leading much later to his exclusion for several years from membership in the church, was a more important cause of the severance of the pastoral tie. In the broader relations of the denomination, Edwards, from his arrival, occupied an eminent place and became a constructive force. It has been asserted that he took the initiative in the founding of Rhode Island College. He certainly showed zeal in the enterprise, was a prime mover in securing a charter for the college, and in 1767 and 1768 undertook a fairly successful mission in Great Britain, raising funds especially for the president's salary.

At the close of his services with the Philadelphia church, he removed to Newark, Del. He never again entered the pastorate, but traveled widely and gave addresses on religious subjects. On his many journeys he was assiduous in gathering information on Baptist history and developments, preserving it usually in manuscripts arranged according to the states to which the data belonged. This collection, together with his influence upon the preservation of ecclesiastical records, was his chief contribution to church history and the basis of his popular reputation in that field. Of a twelve-volume work which he planned, four parts of *Materials Toward A History of the American Baptists* have been printed, bearing respectively upon Pennsylvania (1770), New Jersey (1792), Rhode Island (in *Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society,* vol. VI, 1867), Delaware (1885, printed earlier in the *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography,* April, July 1885). Brief manuscript volumes, dealing with Delaware, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia are at Crozer Theological Seminary.

Morgan Edwards is frequently referred to as the only Baptist minister in America who supported the British cause in the Revolution. This is an exaggeration, although he is correctly placed among the Loyalists. He was among those Baptists, including James Manning and Isaac Backus [*qq.v.*], who were at the conference at Carpenter's Hall, when in 1774 the attempt was made to win over the Massachusetts delegates to the Continental Congress to the principle of separation of church and state. The next year, before the Committee of Safety, he made a recantation of some indiscreet utterances. He died at Pencader, Del. A second wife of his later years, a Mrs. Singleton of Delaware, had predeceased him.

Edwards

[A. D. Gillette, ed., *Minutes of the Phila. Bapt. Asso.* (1851); Wm. Rogers, memorial discourse preached in Phila., Feb. 22, 1795, printed in John Rippon, *Baptist Ann. Reg.* (London, 1796) and in David Benedict, *A Gen. Hist. of the Baptist Denomination in America* (1813), II, 294–301; W. W. Keen, *The Bi-Centennial Celebration of the Founding of the First Bapt. Church of the City of Phila.* (1899); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. VI (1860); R. A. Guild, *Early Hist. of Brown Univ.* (1897).] W. H. A.

**EDWARDS, NINIAN** (Mar. 17, 1775–July 20, 1833), governor of Illinois, senator, was born in Montgomery County, Md., the son of Benjamin and Margaret (Beall) Edwards. His father, a native of Stafford County, Va., and a brother of John Edwards [*q.v.*], United States senator from Kentucky, was a member of the Maryland convention which ratified the Federal Constitution and a representative in the Third Congress. Ninian Edwards was instructed by private tutors and later attended Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pa. After leaving college he entered upon the study of law. In 1795 he removed to Kentucky, where he took up a tract of land on behalf of his father. Within a short time he began the practise of law and almost immediately entered state politics, being elected to the legislature before he was of age. In 1803 he was appointed to the bench and at the age of thirty-two became chief justice of the Kentucky court of appeals.

A decisive event in his early life was his appointment as governor of Illinois Territory by President Madison in 1809, a post which he held until 1818, when the territory became a state. He also became *ex officio* superintendent of Indian affairs, and during the period of his governorship occupied much of his time in maintaining the authority of the United States among the Indians upon the frontier. During the War of 1812 he was active in the defense of the Illinois border, and in the first year of the war organized and led an expedition to Peoria. By the time of the admission of Illinois in 1818, there had emerged from the chaos of territorial politics two factions, an Edwards and an anti-Edwards group, an alignment which persisted through the early years of statehood. At the first state election, Edwards was chosen United States senator for the short term, and was reëlected for the full term in 1819. His career in the Senate was scarcely a brilliant one. He was a strong advocate of legislation which would grant land to settlers on easier terms, and he favored the admission of Missouri as a slave state. He seems to have played little part in the famous convention struggle in Illinois, culminating in 1824, which turned largely on the issue of slavery. In 1824, he resigned from the Senate to accept an

appointment by President Monroe as minister to Mexico. Before taking his post, however, he was obliged to resign this office in turn, owing to his having made certain reckless charges against William H. Crawford, secretary of the treasury, which he was unable to substantiate. He sought to rehabilitate and vindicate himself by turning to state politics, and in 1826 was elected governor of Illinois by a narrow margin. Though his power had begun to wane, he was still the main center around which Illinois factional politics revolved. Both before and after his election, he carried on a bitter attack against those who had been responsible for the administration of the state bank at Edwardsville, which added nothing to his popularity. As governor, he urged the removal of the Indians from the state (Washburne, *post*, pp. 306 ff.). He also continued to insist upon the right of the state to that part of the public domain lying within its borders.

He did not seek reëlection in 1830, but two years later he was defeated in an attempt to win a seat in Congress. His political prestige, which had at one time been considerable, was a thing of the past. His decline in power may be explained partly on the basis of certain political shortcomings, partly on the ground of instability of temperament and character. Edwards was not a man of strong political convictions and was inclined to hesitate at critical times. On the other hand, he occasionally acted rashly, with little appreciation of probable consequences. Perhaps the worst that can be said of him is that he was lacking in judgment (Pease, *post*, p. 93). In 1803 he was married to Elvira Lane, and his son, Ninian Wirt Edwards [*q.v.*], later attained to some prominence in the state. He died of cholera at Belleville, Ill.

[Many of the Edwards papers now preserved in the Chicago Hist. Soc. are published in the following: Ninian W. Edwards, *Hist. of Ill. from 1778 to 1833, and Life and Times of Ninian Edwards* (1870); "The Edwards Papers," in *Chicago Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. III (1884), ed. by Elihu B. Washburne; "Executive Letter-Book of Ninian Edwards, 1826–1830," in *Colls. Ill. State Hist. Lib.*, vol. IV (1909), ed. by E. B. Greene and C. W. Alvord. For the background of Edwards's career, see S. J. Buck, *Ill. in 1818* (1917); C. W. Alvord, *The Ill. Country, 1673–1818* (1920); and T. C. Pease, *The Frontier State, 1818–1848* (1919). See also Thos. Ford, *A Hist. of Ill. from its Commencement as a State in 1818 to 1847* (1854); John Moses, *Ill. Hist. and Statistical* (1898); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); and Georgie Hortense Edwards, *Hist. Sketches of the Edwards and Todd Families*, etc. (1894); John Reynolds, *My Own Times, Embracing also the Hist. of My Life* (1855).] W. E. S.

**EDWARDS, NINIAN WIRT** (Apr. 15, 1809–Sept. 2, 1889), first superintendent of public instruction of Illinois, was born at Frankfort, Ky., the son of Ninian Edwards [*q.v.*], later governor

Edwards

of Illinois Territory, and his wife, Elvira Lane. While attending Transylvania University, from the law department of which he graduated in 1833, young Edwards married, Feb. 16, 1832, Elizabeth P. Todd, elder sister of the future wife of Abraham Lincoln. He was appointed attorney-general of Illinois by Gov. John Reynolds in 1834, but resigned in 1835 and established himself as a merchant at Springfield, Ill. He served in the state legislature as a representative, 1836–40, 1848–51, and as a state senator 1844–48. He was a member of the constitutional convention of 1847. Edwards has been described as proud of his family and name, aloof, one of the most eminent figures in Springfield society (Beveridge, *post*, p. 178). He was, however, a close friend of Abraham Lincoln, being associated with him as a member of the "Long Nine" delegation from Sangamon County. It was at Edwards's house, where she had come on a visit in 1839, that Lincoln first met Mary Todd; it was with Edwards's encouragement that their stormy courtship was begun; and it was in his home that their marriage took place.

In 1852 Edwards deserted the ranks of the Whigs and became a Democrat. Standing for reëlection to the Assembly, he was defeated, and in 1854 he was appointed by Gov. Matteson, under the authority of a law establishing the office, to be superintendent of public instruction. His duties included lecturing in every county in the state and endeavoring to secure uniformity of text-books. He proceeded to perform them earnestly in the face of active hostility to and passive contempt for improvement of the state's educational system. A visit to the East sent him back an advocate of a state normal school, later established near Bloomington (*Urbana Union*, Oct. 22, 1857), which he hoped to support by a share of the publishers' profits from text-books adopted (*Prairie Farmer*, January 1855; *Illinois State Journal*, Dec. 28, 1854; *Ottawa Weekly Republican*, Oct. 7, 1854). His lectures were often treated with contempt, as at Ottawa where nine persons turned out to hear him. He secured, however, from the Illinois legislature of 1855 the passage of a school law, which, though it fell far short of his wishes, laid the foundation of the state's school system (*Report of the State Superintendent of Common Schools . . . of the State of Illinois, Dec. 10, 1854; Laws of the State of Illinois*, 1855, pp. 51–91). His term ended in 1857. Between 1862 and 1865 he held by Lincoln's appointment the place of captain commissary of supplies. In 1870 he published the *History of Illinois from 1778 to 1833 and Life and Times of Ninian Edwards*. The sole value of this

work lies in the fact that it contains, very ill-arranged, a large body of his father's papers and letters.

[In addition to references above, see: *Biennial Reports of the Supt. of Public Instruction of the State of Ill.*, 1884–86, p. cxc, 1888–90, p. cxii; Arthur C. Cole, *Era of the Civil War, 1848–70* (1919); Albert J. Beveridge, *Abraham Lincoln, 1809–1858* (1928); *Chicago Tribune*, Sept. 1, 3, 1889; *Daily Inter Ocean* (Chicago), Sept. 3, 1889.] T. C. P.

**EDWARDS, OLIVER** (Jan. 30, 1835–Apr. 28, 1904), Union soldier, inventor, was born in Springfield, Mass., the son of Elisha and Eunice (Lombard) Edwards. He attended public and high schools in Springfield, graduating from the latter in 1852. In 1856 he went West and built a foundry at Warsaw, Ill., becoming a partner in Neberling, Edwards & Company. Here he remained until the outbreak of the Civil War, when he returned to Massachusetts and entered military service. He raised a company to be part of the Hampden County Regiment, but his men were taken for the 10th Massachusetts Volunteers, then being organized, of which he was appointed first lieutenant and adjutant June 21, 1861. He was selected as senior aide-de-camp, and served as such on the staff of Gen. Couch until Aug. 9, 1862, when he was commissioned major, 37th Massachusetts Volunteers, and directed to organize this regiment, of which he was later made colonel. He served through the Peninsular campaign of 1862, also in the battles of Fredericksburg and Gettysburg, after which he was ordered to New York City, in command of a special brigade, to quell the draft riots of July 1863. On the completion of this duty he returned with his regiment to the Army of the Potomac, and took part in the battle of Rappahannock Station. During the second day of the battle of the Wilderness, when in command of a brigade, he made a charge at the head of the 37th Regiment and succeeded in breaking through the Confederate lines. His service was most conspicuous at the battle of Spotsylvania, where on the second day he held the "bloody angle" for eleven hours with his own brigade, and at the head of twenty-one regiments for thirteen hours thereafter, making twenty-four hours of continuous fighting. He subsequently participated in the battles of the overland campaign and in the defense of Washington, was with Sheridan in his campaign in the Shenandoah Valley, and took part in the battle of Winchester, of which town he was placed in command by that officer. He was offered the provost-marshal generalship of the middle military division, but declined, preferring to command combat troops. In the final assault on Petersburg, his brigade captured many guns and



prisoners, and he received the surrender of the city from the mayor, Apr. 3, 1865. At the battle of Sailor's Creek, Edwards with his brigade captured Lieut.-Gen. Early and his staff, Maj.-Gen. Custis Lee with his staff and an entire brigade, and many other prisoners. He received the brevets of brigadier-general, United States Volunteers, Oct. 19, 1864, for gallant and distinguished services at the battle of Spotsylvania Court House, Va., and for meritorious conduct at the battle of Winchester, Va., and major-general, United States Volunteers, for conspicuous gallantry at the battle of Sailor's Creek, Va. He was appointed brigadier-general, United States Volunteers, May 19, 1865, and mustered out of the service, Jan. 15, 1866. On Sept. 3, 1863, he married Ann Eliza Johnson. After the war he was for a year and a half postmaster at Warsaw, Ill., resigning to become general agent of the Florence Machine Company, Northampton, Mass., of which he later became superintendent. While there he patented several improvements on the sewing machine, and invented the Florence spring skate and the Florence oil stove. After being with the Florence Machine Company seven years, he resigned and returned to Warsaw. In 1882 he went to England, where for two or three years he was general superintendent of the Gardner Machine and Gun Company. Returning to Illinois, he served three terms as mayor of Warsaw.

[*Official Records* (*Army*); Jas. L. Bowen, *Hist. of the Thirty-Seventh Regiment, Mass. Vols.* (1884) and in *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, IV (1888), 177; Alfred S. Roe, *The Tenth Regiment, Mass. Vol. Infantry* (1909); Chas. W. Chapin, *Sketches of the Old Inhabitants and Other Citizens of Old Springfield*, etc. (1893); *Portr. and Biog. Record of Hancock, McDonough and Henderson Counties, Ill.* (1894); *Biog. Rev. of Hancock County, Ill.* (1907); *Ann. Report of the Commissioner of Patents*, pp. 1869 ff.] C. F. C.

**EDWARDS, PIERPONT** (Apr. 8, 1750–Apr. 5, 1826), lawyer, politician, jurist, was the eleventh and youngest child of the Rev. Jonathan Edwards [*q.v.*] and Sarah (Pierpont) Edwards. He was born in Northampton, Mass., but spent most of his childhood in Stockbridge, where his father served as missionary after dismissal from his Northampton pastorate. He graduated at the College of New Jersey in 1768, studied law, and began practise at New Haven, Conn., in 1771. In May 1769 he married Frances, daughter of Moses Ogden of Elizabethtown, N. J., and after her death, which occurred on July 7, 1800, he married Mary Tucker of Bridgeport, Conn. He spent the greater part of his life in New Haven, although he removed, later on, to Bridgeport. He supported the Revolutionary movement and performed military service during the campaigns

in Connecticut. He was elected to the lower house of the legislature in 1777, 1784–85, and 1787–90. He served as speaker for three sessions during the last period. In 1787–88 he was a delegate to the Continental Congress. He supported the Federal Constitution and was a member of the Connecticut ratifying convention.

As a lawyer he was successful and prosperous. He had liberal views in both politics and religion, and if he is not belied, in morals as well. During his political career his character was savagely attacked. Whether he was an ordinary example of the alleged delinquent "minister's sons," a pathological result of too much Calvinism in early youth, or merely the victim of Federalist propaganda, is of no great importance in view of his willingness to assume the defense of minority causes, champion liberalism and religious freedom, and conduct a long and discouraging contest with the dominant elements in Connecticut affairs. In 1800 he took an active part in organizing the Jeffersonian Republicans and for some years thereafter was the recognized leader of the party in the state, serving as chairman of the general committee. He led the movement for a new state constitution and in 1804 defended before the legislature the justices whose commissions had been revoked for participation in the Republican convention of that year. He was especially interested in securing the disestablishment of the Congregational Church and was the object of considerable clerical abuse as a result. A few letters exchanged with President Jefferson show that he was trusted to a large degree with the distribution of federal patronage within the state, and fully realized its importance in establishing an efficient organization.

In 1806 he was appointed judge of the district court of Connecticut by President Jefferson. In this court he served throughout the remainder of his life. Shortly after his appointment, while presiding in the circuit court, he charged the grand jury that it was their duty to consider the authors and publishers of libels against the government, and "diligently enquire after all breaches of law," inasmuch as "such publications, if the authors of them may not be restrained . . . will more effectually undermine and sap the foundations of our Constitution and Government, than any kind of treason that can be named" (*Litchfield Witness*, Apr. 30, 1806). For a Republican, with recollections of the Sedition Law fresh in mind, this was astonishing doctrine. Furthermore it involved, in effect, the principle that the United States courts had jurisdiction at common law, no statutory authority for libel prosecutions having been conferred. In response to Judge Edwards's charge, the grand jury indicted several clergymen and editors, although there was manifest reluctance to push the cases. When, however, the publishers of the *Connecticut Courant* were prosecuted for a libel on President Jefferson and Congress, the federal Supreme Court demolished the doctrine of common-law jurisdiction by declaring that "the legislative authority of the Union must first make an act a crime, affix a punishment to it, and declare the Court that shall have jurisdiction of the offence" (*United States* vs. *Hudson & Goodwin*, 7 *Cranch*, 34, February term, 1812). The Connecticut libel prosecutions received wide-spread publicity in connection with the newspaper warfare then in progress throughout New England, but can hardly be held to redound to the credit of Judge Edwards.

In 1818 he was a member of the famous Connecticut constitutional convention, serving as chairman of the committee which drafted and presented the new instrument of government. This constitution established most of the reforms which Republicans had demanded for almost twenty years. The calling of the convention was preceded by involved political maneuvers, and Edwards took an important part in developing the strategy by which the various elements opposing Federalist rule were consolidated into a powerful and victorious majority. The adoption of the constitution of 1818, the triumph of "toleration" which he had so long advocated, marks the high point of his career and constitutes his greatest service to the state and indirectly to the country at large.

[The best account of Pierpont Edwards is contained in E. E. Atwater, *Hist. of the City of New Haven* (1887). A very brief sketch can be found in D. Loomis and J. G. Calhoun, *The Judicial and Civil Hist. of Conn.* (1895). See also W. H. Edwards, *The Memorial Volume of the Edwards Family Meeting* (1871) and *Timothy and Rhoda Ogden Edwards . . . and Their Descendants* (1903); and R. B. Moffat, *Pierrepont Genealogies* (1913). Edwards's activities as a politician are referred to in B. C. Steiner, "Connecticut's Ratification of the Federal Constitution" in *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, n.s., vol. XXV (1915); and in R. J. Purcell, *Conn. in Transition* (1918). An obituary notice is contained in the *Columbian Register* (New Haven), Apr. 8, 1826.] W. A. R.

**EDWARDS, TALMADGE** (1747–June 4, 1821), glove manufacturer, was born of English ancestry in England near the Scottish border. Here he was educated and learned the trade of leather dresser while still in his teens. A younger son, and therefore ineligible, by English law, to inherit the family estate, he emigrated to America about 1770, going first to Rhode Island but later to Beekman's Precinct in Dutchess County, N. Y., where he found employment at his trade.

During the Revolution he sided with the colonists, serving in the 6th Regiment of militia of his county. After the war, in 1783, he moved with his family to the more virgin portion of New York in the vicinity of Johnstown, Fulton County, where trading-posts had been established and Indians as well as early settlers brought in skins and furs for trade. Here he started a tannery of his own. In 1784 he bought land within the present city limits of Johnstown, continuing to ply his trade and also opening a general store. Some years earlier, a group of glove-makers, members of the glove guild of Scotland, had settled at Kingsboro, a short distance north of Johnstown. They lived a hand-to-mouth existence, making gloves and mittens for the surrounding settlers. Their process of dressing leather was unsatisfactory, however, and in 1809, having heard of Edwards's success with the "ring-tail" process, William Mills and James Burr induced him to go to Kingsboro to teach his method of leather-tanning to the glove-makers. Edwards, who was in reduced circumstances, thus became directly interested in glove manufacture. Being able to dress leather in quantities and feeling that there should be a larger market for gloves and mittens than existed locally at the time, Edwards secured country girls to come to his tannery in Johnstown to cut out gloves, which were then sent to the farmers' wives to be sewed together. This marked the beginning of the glove and mitten industry in the United States. The first sales of gloves in "wholesale lots" occurred in 1810 when Edwards took a few dozen pairs with him on a horseback trip to Albany to purchase a new stock of merchandise for his store, which he was still operating. On the way, and after he had reached Albany, he sold his pack in dozen and portion-of-dozen lots. In addition to his innovation in organizing the manufacture of gloves, he improved the process of tanning glove leather. He originated the "oil-tan" method for preparing buckskin, a process still in use. About 1780 he had married Mary, daughter of Ezekiel and Mary (Knowles) Sherman, of Exeter, R. I. They had eight children, the eldest of whom, John, represented the 15th Congressional District of New York in the Twenty-fifth Congress, 1837–39. Both Edwards and his wife are buried in the colonial cemetery in Johnstown.

[David H. Sherman, *Records of the Sherman Family* (1887); *Calendar of Hist. MSS. Relating to the War of the Revolution in the Office of the Sec. of State, Albany, N. Y.* (1868), I, 73; Chas. E. Fitch, *Encyc. of Biog. of N. Y.* (1916), vol. IV; correspondence with the Johnstown Public Library.] C. W. M.

**EDWARDS, WELDON NATHANIEL** (Jan. 25, 1788–Dec. 18, 1873), planter, legislator, president of the North Carolina secession convention, was a native of Northampton County, N. C., the son of Benjamin Edwards. After attending the Warrenton Academy, he read law and began practise at Warrenton, but his professional career was soon terminated, for he entered public life and developed an absorbing interest in agriculture. "Poplar Mount," his plantation near Ridgeway, became under his management almost a model of scientific agriculture. He soon abandoned cotton planting and, centering his attention on grain, hay, fruit, tobacco, and the breeding of improved stock, amassed a large fortune. His game chickens were his particular pride and delight. Genuinely hospitable and fond of society, he kept his home constantly full of guests. He loved children and had them always about him.

A protégé of Nathaniel Macon, he was in politics completely in sympathy with him. He represented Warren County in the House of Commons in 1814 and 1815, and, also in 1815, succeeded Macon in the lower house of Congress, being sworn in with Daniel Webster and serving until 1827, when he declined a reëlection. In Congress he was, like Macon, an advocate of economy. He voted against the tariff of 1826 and the later protective measures, fought the Missouri Compromise, and consistently opposed internal improvements by the federal government, though he championed them by state action. He favored censure of Jackson for the invasion of Florida in 1819, but he later belonged to the Jackson group which opposed the Adams administration. He seldom made a speech and held few committee assignments. From 1833 to 1846 and from 1850 to 1854 he was state senator, and was speaker during the latter period. In 1835 he was a delegate to the constitutional convention, where he was active in the movement to remove Catholic disabilities, and offered an amendment providing for complete religious toleration. Liberal as he was in this particular, he was politically a conservative and voted against the democratic changes in the constitution. In the same spirit, as state senator in 1852, he opposed and thereby defeated the amendment abolishing a freehold qualification of fifty acres of land for voting for state senator, which was his party's chief pledge. His action infuriated his party, but the proposition was hateful to him as depriving property of protection and as a sure sign that "the idea of the Republican system is fast becoming obsolete and that we are rapidly drifting into a pure democracy." In 1857 Edwards was made a commissioner of the sinking fund and served until Congressional Reconstruc-

tion abolished the commission and destroyed the sinking fund.

He was a stanch believer in the right of secession and, while he shrank from its exercise, he felt that the election of Lincoln justified it. He became the leader of the secession party organized in North Carolina early in 1861, and presided over its first state meeting held in Goldsboro in March. He was a delegate to the secession convention and was chosen president by the secessionist group. After the first adjournment of the convention in 1862, he occupied himself in retirement by writing his *Memoir of Nathaniel Macon of North Carolina* (1862). Despite the destruction wrought by the Civil War, his last years were spent in comfortable circumstances. In 1823 he had married Lucy Norfleet of Halifax County, who survived him.

[S. A. Ashe, *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, I (1905), 265; *Jours. of the Senate and House of Commons . . . of N. C.*, 1833–46, 1850–54; J. G. de R. Hamilton, ed., *The Papers of Thomas Ruffin* (1918–20); "Poplar Mount," in Raleigh *Daily Standard*, Aug. 30, 1871.]

J. G. de R. H.

**EDWARDS, WILLIAM** (Nov. 11, 1770–Dec. 29, 1851), tanner, inventor, was born in Elizabethtown, N. J., the sixth child of Timothy and Rhoda (Ogden) Edwards. His father was the oldest son of Rev. Jonathan Edwards [*q.v.*] and a brother of Jonathan and Pierpont Edwards [*qq.v.*]. When William was a year old, Timothy Edwards removed to Stockbridge, Mass., where he engaged in trade and prospered, only to lose almost everything but his farm during the Revolution. William attended school until he was twelve and then assisted on his father's farm until he was fourteen. In that year he returned to Elizabethtown to learn the tanning trade with his uncle who was conducting the business established by William's maternal grandfather. The work affected his health, and after a year he went back to Stockbridge and remained on the farm until 1787 when he again returned to Elizabethtown, finishing his apprenticeship in 1789. After serving about a year at his trade in East Haddam, Conn., he went to Northampton, Mass., and with the aid of friends built a tannery there. In this plant he incorporated improvements in arrangement, partially reducing the manual labor involved in the process. When the plant burned down in 1799, a new one was immediately built in which he added still other improvements, chiefly through the use of water power and in heating the leaching liquors. During the succeeding fifteen years this business grew rapidly and a company was organized and incorporated, and one by one five tanneries were put in operation about Northampton. As each was built the newest inventions of Edwards were installed. These included rollers for preparing leather and a hide mill for softening dry leather, patented Oct. 19 and Dec. 30, 1812, respectively, and an improved sole leather tanning process, patented on the latter date. The industrial collapse following the War of 1812, coupled with financial manipulations by Edwards's backers, brought about his complete bankruptcy in 1815. Two years later, however, with the assistance of his sons and New York friends in the leather business, he began anew at Hunter, Greene County, N. Y., and built what was for years the largest tannery in the United States. This was burned down in 1830 but was immediately rebuilt, and four years later Edwards retired and removed to Brooklyn, N. Y. The importance of his improvements can probably be gauged best from the fact that with them the cost of tanning sole leather was reduced from twelve cents to four cents a pound. He is to-day recognized as the founder of the hide and leather industry in the United States. In addition to his business, he found time for military service and politics as well. He served in a Berkshire regiment in 1786 during the Shays Rebellion; joined a grenadier militia company while in Elizabethtown; was captain in 1800 and later was colonel in the regular Massachusetts militia, and commanded a regiment of artillery at Boston in 1813. He also repeatedly represented Northampton in the General Court. On his twenty-third birthday he married Rebecca Tappan of Northampton, daughter of Benjamin and Sarah (Holmes) Tappan. They had eleven children, ten of whom as well as his widow, survived him when he died in his eighty-second year in Brooklyn, N. Y.

[*One Hundred Years of American Commerce* (1895), ed. by C. M. Depew; *Memoirs of Col. Wm. Edwards*, written by himself with notes by son and grandson, printed in 1897; Wm. H. Edwards, *Timothy and Rhoda Ogden Edwards of Stockbridge, Mass. and Their Descendants* (1903); Patent Office Records; *N. Y. Tribune*, Dec. 31, 1851.]

C. W. M.

**EDWARDS, WILLIAM HENRY** (Mar. 15, 1822–Apr. 4, 1909), entomologist, was born at Hunter, Greene County, N. Y., the son of William W. Edwards and Helen Ann Mann. His father, a tanner by trade, was a son of William Edwards [*q.v.*], whose grandfather was Jonathan Edwards [*q.v.*], the great divine. William H. Edwards, born and brought up in the Catskill Mountains, undoubtedly gained his love of nature during his early days. He entered Williams College, and graduated with the class of 1842, then studied law in New York City. In 1846 he made a journey to South America, in the course of which he collected many birds and butterflies, and as a result of which he wrote *Voyage up the*

*River Amazon,* a delightful book with vivid descriptions of the tropical vegetation and the strange creatures of the Amazon forests. It was published by the Murrays of London in 1847, and in 1909 (according to Bethune, *post*), there was still a steady sale. Alfred Russel Wallace, in his story of his life (*My Life,* 1905, I, 264–65), states that it was the reading of Edwards's book with its graphic descriptions of the flora and fauna and its pleasing accounts of the people that determined Henry W. Bates and himself to undertake their memorable expedition to the Amazon Valley.

Returning to the United States, Edwards was admitted to the New York bar in 1847, and settled at Newburgh on the Hudson. On May 29, 1851, he was married to Catherine Colt Tappan, at Belleville, N. J. Some years later, having become interested in West Virginia coal fields, he removed to Coalburg in that state, where he was the president of the Ohio & Kanawha Coal Company. He owned much land, built railroads and opened coal-mines, and led a very busy life. He always found time, however, to study butterflies and to prepare articles about them for publication. He sent his first contribution to the *Canadian Entomologist* in October 1868, and later published many papers in that periodical, in the *Transactions of the American Entomological Society,* and in the journal called *Papilio.* His main plan throughout his study was to issue in parts a complete and beautiful work on the butterflies of North America. The first part was issued in 1868. It was a quarto pamphlet of beautiful appearance, with plates that were a revelation. The first volume was completed in July 1872,.with fifty plates. The second volume was completed in November 1884. The first part of the third volume was issued in December 1886, and the eighteenth and last in 1897. Edwards paid the greatest attention to the life histories of the insects treated, every stage being described and figured. Important discoveries in the way of seasonal dimorphism and trimorphism of certain species were discussed. Nearly all the plates were drawn by Mrs. Mary Peart, and the coloring was done by Mrs. Lydia Bowen. *The Butterflies of North America* received the enthusiastic praise of European biologists, and ranks as one of the finest contributions to the biology of insects that have come from the United States.

At the age of seventy-five, Edwards gave up his studies of butterflies and spent his remaining years in the production of two books of entirely different character. The first of these was a remarkable volume entitled *Shaksper not Shakespeare,* published in 1900, in which he took up with great vigor the question of the authorship of the Shakespearian plays. It shows a wealth of reading and a remarkable combination of the trained legal mind with the trained scientific mind. It is an aggressive book, and insistent upon the thesis that Shaksper, the actor, could not have written the plays attributed to Shakespeare. The second work was *Timothy and Rhoda Ogden Edwards of Stockbridge, Mass., and their Descendants* (1903), a genealogy of the Edwards family.

[C. J. S. Bethune, in *Canadian Entomologist,* Aug. 1909; Henry Skinner, in *Entomological News,* May 1909; F. A. Dixey, in *Proc. Entomological Soc. of London,* 1909, p. lxxxix; J. W. Tutt in *Entomologists' Record and Journal of Variation* (London), Jan.–Dec. 1909, pp. 193–94; *The Entomologists Monthly Mag.* (London), Aug. 1909; *Gen. Cat. . . . Williams Coll.* (1920); *Wheeling Intelligencer,* Apr. 5, 1909.]

L. O. H.



**EDWIN, DAVID** (December 1776–Feb. 22, 1841), stipple engraver, was a son of the popular English comedian, John Edwin the elder, and a Mrs. Walmsley, described as "a reputable milliner" of Bath (Thomas Gilliland, *The Dramatic Mirror,* 1808, p. 742). He was born in Bath, England, and was articled to Christian Jossi, a Dutch engraver who studied the art of stipple engraving in England and in 1796 returned to Amsterdam, taking with him his apprentice. Disagreements arising, young Edwin left his preceptor before he had completed his apprenticeship and worked his passage across the Atlantic as a foremast hand, landing in Philadelphia in December 1797, when he was barely twenty-one. Without friends or money, he introduced himself to his fellow countryman, T. B. Freeman, a Philadelphia publisher, who welcomed him and gave him employment. Engravers' supplies were not readily available in Philadelphia, and he found it necessary to manufacture his own tools. His first work, "Infancy of the Scottish Muse," after a painting by Cosway, was a title-page for a collection of Scotch airs selected by Benjamin Carr [*q.v.*]. In 1798 he engraved several portraits of actors for a series published by Freeman.

For a time he was associated with Edward Savage [*q.v.*], portrait-painter and engraver, and, according to Dunlap (*post,* II, 202), accompanied that artist to New York. Probably most of his work was done in Philadelphia, however, where most of his engravings were published, although his name did not appear in the Philadelphia Directory until 1806. His skill was immediately recognized, and he had abundant commissions. About 1801 he engraved Gilbert Stuart's portrait of Dr. William Smith, provost of the University of Pennsylvania. He and Stuart became friends, and Edwin thereafter en-

graved many of Stuart's portraits. For the *Mirror of Taste and Dramatic Censor* (Philadelphia, 1810–11), he engraved portraits which ornamented each monthly number of the magazine. For the other magazines published in Philadelphia, the *Port Folio*, the *Analectic*, and later the *Casket*, he was called upon to furnish many of the portraits and titles which formed the most notable feature of those publications. In addition he produced a large number of separate plates, among them several portraits of Washington after Stuart, Peale, and Birch, and one of Jefferson. During the War of 1812 his talents were in great demand, and he told Dunlap (*post*, II, 203), "that there was no town of any consequence, from Maine to Louisiana, . . . whose citizens were not in his debt for work done." His close application to business, and severe financial losses which he sustained brought on an illness which for a time led him to abandon his profession. He sought a position as clerk in the auction house of his former employer, Freeman, and for a time, engraved only occasionally. He "opened a grocery store . . . but it was closed through bad debts" (Sartain, *post*, p. 194). Between the years 1818 and 1822 inclusive, he was described in the Philadelphia Directories as "grocer and engraver." His last piece of work was a portrait of Gilbert Stuart by John Neagle. According to Simpson (*post*, p. 348), the finishing touches had to be made by Thomas Kelly, much to the humiliation of Edwin.

In 1831 he lost his position with Freeman and could not induce any publisher to entrust him with a plate (Dunlap, II, 204). In the fall of the same year his eyesight failed him as the result of an attack of influenza. For a time he was engaged as a clerk by William Warren [*q.v.*], manager of the Chestnut Street Theatre, Philadelphia (Sartain, p. 54). Mrs. William Francis, a retired actress, who died in 1834, bequeathed Edwin "a dwelling house and some money invested in stocks" (Simpson, *post*, p. 349). When the Artist's Fund Society of Philadelphia was formed in 1835 he became its treasurer and served in that capacity until his death. He died on Feb. 22, 1841, in Philadelphia and was buried in Ronaldson's Cemetery in that city. Dunlap called him "the first good engraver of the human countenance that appeared in this country" (*post*, II, 199) and it is said of him (Simpson, p. 349) that "no engraver in this country ever imparted to his prints more faithfully the peculiarities of manner belonging to the artist whose pictures he copied."

[The principal authority for Edwin's career is the article in Dunlap's *Hist. of the Arts of Design* (1834, rev. ed., 1918), which was mainly founded on the engraver's own letters. See also John Sartain, *The Reminiscences of a Very Old Man* (1899) and Henry Simpson, *The Lives of Eminent Philadelphians now Deceased* (1859). For lists of his works consult Mantle Fielding's *Catalogue of the Engraved Works of David Edwin* (1905); and David McN. Stauffer's *American Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (2 vols., 1907).] J. J.



**EELLS, DAN PARMELEE** (Apr. 16, 1825–Aug. 23, 1903), banker, capitalist, descended through a line of New England ministers from Samuel Eells of Barnstable, England, who became in 1661 an inhabitant of Milford, Conn., was born in Westmoreland, Oneida County, N. Y. His father was the Rev. James Eells, and his mother, Mehitable Parmelee, daughter of Deacon Dan Parmelee of Durham, Conn. When he was eleven the family moved to Amherst, Lorain County, Ohio, whence in 1839 he was sent to Elyria, and in 1841 to Oberlin to prepare for college, working his way by doing chores and later by being clerk in a store. In 1843, he entered Oberlin College, and in 1844, Hamilton College. After two years he was obliged to leave college to seek means of self-support. He taught the district school in Amherst in the winter of 1846–47, then worked as a bookkeeper in a Cleveland commission house until 1849. He managed to continue his college studies, however, and is listed among the graduates of Hamilton as of the class of 1848 (*General Roll of Hamilton College, 1812–1908*). Later, he was awarded the degree of master of arts, and in 1890 was made an honorary member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society. In 1850 he entered the Commercial Branch of the State Bank of Ohio in Cleveland and continued in its service through successive stages as bookkeeper, teller, and cashier until the expiration of the charter of the bank in 1865. The Commercial National Bank of Cleveland succeeded to the business of the Branch bank. Of this Eells was vice-president. In 1868 he was elected president and continued in that office until his retirement in 1897, a banking career of fifty years. His command of capital enabled him to take an active part in the development of transportation and manufacturing during the last quarter of the nineteenth century. He was one of the promoters of the Lake Erie & Western, of the New York, Chicago & St. Louis, and of the Ohio Central railways. He was one of the founders and first president of the Ohio Central Coal Company, active in the management of the United States Express Company, and of the Otis Iron and Steel Company. His autobiography lists thirty-two companies in which he was a director, in fifteen of which he held an executive office. His industrial interests included oil refining, ce-

ment manufacture, iron and steel in all phases, smelting, coal, coke and gas works, electric and steam railway operation. Those in Cleveland who knew him intimately also remember him for his part in many religious, educational, and charitable enterprises. He was a member of the Board of Education of Cleveland (1865–68), a trustee of Lane Theological Seminary, of Lake Erie, Oberlin, and Hamilton colleges. He was described in a memorial address as "a gentleman of the old school,—courtly gracious, genial, affectionate, kind" (Rev. Paul F. Sutphen, May 15, 1904, *Memorial Sermon*). In appearance he was tall, slender, full bearded (portrait in *World's History of Cleveland,* 1896, p. 300).

Eells was twice married. His first wife was Mary M. Howard, daughter of Col. George A. Howard of Orwell, Ashtabula County, Ohio. She died in 1859. In 1861, he married Mary Witt, daughter of Stillman Witt of Cleveland.

[Eells's unpublished autobiography is in Western Reserve Historical Society and is important for an account of his early life. Rev. Paul F. Sutphen's *Memorial Sermon,* May 15, 1904, was printed (15 pp.); copy also in Western Reserve Historical Society Colls.]

E. J. B.

**EGAN, MAURICE FRANCIS** (May 24, 1852–Jan. 15, 1924), author, diplomat, was born and grew up in Philadelphia. His mother, Margaret MacMullen, of a Scotch-Irish family long settled in Philadelphia, was a constant reader and in later years a devout Catholic. Under her strict discipline, Egan and his sister spent a pleasant, yet rather bookish and secluded childhood. He inherited his mother's religious feeling and love of literature, both of which were dominant influences in his life. From his father, Maurice Florent Egan, a handsome Irishman of good family who landed in Philadelphia in 1825 and made his own way, came a democratic spirit, humor, and irrepressible geniality, which found him ever a host of friends. In the son, democracy mingled happily with love of good wine and good food, of both of which he was a connoisseur, and with fondness for good music and good society. "I was always," he writes half-jokingly, "devoted to all kinds of ceremonials." In this and more important ways, he was admirably fitted for diplomacy. At St. Philip's Parochial School and at La Salle College, where he graduated B.A. in 1873, he enjoyed classical studies, but he profited most from wide independent reading. At seventeen he had an essay, "On Roses," in *Appletons' Journal,* and was soon writing regularly for Philadelphia papers. For three years, 1875–78, he taught and studied philosophy at Georgetown University, also seeing much of social and diplomatic life in Washington. Always a facile writer, he was again busy in newspaper work toward the close of this period, turned out two or three novels, and published sonnets of distinction in *Scribner's.* After desultory study of law and a journey to Texas, he went to New York in the spring of 1878, settling definitely on a journalistic career. He was first sub-editor of *Magee's Weekly,* then, after 1881, associate editor of the *Freeman's Journal,* and in 1888 editor and part-proprietor. Meanwhile, for newspapers and magazines of more general circulation he wrote "ten to fifteen thousand words a week," consisting of book reviews, miscellaneous articles, and verse. Welcomed into the *Century Magazine* circle, he numbered the Gilders, Robert Underwood Johnson, James Huneker, and Augustin Daly among his closer friends. After his marriage, in September 1880, to Katharine Mullin of Philadelphia, he lived in Brooklyn, where his three children were born.

Partly on account of the children, partly because of the desire for quiet and study, Egan accepted in 1888 a professorship of English literature at Notre Dame University, South Bend, Ind. Here he found change, if not rest. A delightful lecturer, entering heartily into town and college life, he exerted a strong liberalizing influence upon faculty and students. A transfer in 1896 to the Catholic University in Washington brought him again fortunately into touch with the political and social world. Prominent among liberal Catholics and familiar with European conditions, he became, in Roosevelt's phrase, "unofficial diplomatic adviser" of three presidents. To both McKinley and Roosevelt he was of service in adjusting the problem of the friars' lands in the Philippines. With Roosevelt an old friendship was renewed at frequent White House luncheons (see Egan, "Theodore Roosevelt in Retrospect," *Atlantic Monthly,* May 1919), and it was Roosevelt who in 1907 appointed Egan minister to Denmark. He was to work for the purchase of the Danish West Indies, and from Copenhagen, "the whispering gallery of Europe," keep the administration in touch with European affairs. Largely through Egan's persistence, the first aim was accomplished in 1916. At Copenhagen his social gifts, political shrewdness, and ardent patriotism found full play. Declining from both Taft and Wilson an ambassadorship at Vienna, he became in 1916 senior diplomat at Copenhagen, and administered his post with great success until the close of the World War. "He was not only the Dean of the Diplomatic Corps," writes Henry Van Dyke, "he was its Prince Charming, the one to whom all turned for help in difficulties" (Introduction to Egan's

*Recollections*). The story of his service, *Ten Years Near the German Frontier* (1919), was an immediate success. This was followed by *Confessions of a Book Lover* (1922). Reviews, familiar essays, stories, and verse, marked by increasing mellowness and charm, continued to appear until Egan's death, from kidney trouble, at his daughter's home in Brooklyn. In the long list of his writings, including literary criticisms, school text-books, juvenile novels, verse, and translations, *Everybody's St. Francis* (1912) and the stories centering around his Irish-American character, Sexton Maginnis (1902–05), are outstanding. Best of his books is his *Recollections of a Happy Life* (1924), for it most closely reflects the man, and with Egan interest must center, not in his writings primarily, but in the charm of his personality and in his career of varied service.

[Egan's *Recollections of a Happy Life*, itself invaluable, contains also a biographical sketch by T. F. Meehan, and a full list of his writings, pp. 373–74. The Am. Acad. of Arts and Letters published a commemorative tribute by David Jayne Hill, 1924.] A. W.

**EGAN, MICHAEL** (1761–July 22, 1814), first bishop of Philadelphia, was in all probability born in Ireland. Historical societies have vainly endeavored to determine the exact place of his birth; inquiries prosecuted through the houses of his Order have resulted only in the information that when as a young man he filled the office of Guardian of St. Isadore's, the house of the Irish Franciscans at Rome, it was generally believed that he was born in Galway—a belief that the archives of that diocese fail to confirm. He was about thirty years old when he returned to Ireland as a missionary priest. Ten years later, he came to America and succeeded Father Antoine Garnier as assistant priest at Lancaster, Pa. In April 1803, he was appointed one of the pastors of St. Mary's Church in Philadelphia. The new See of Philadelphia was erected by Pius VII on Apr. 8, 1808, but owing to the struggle between the Pope and Napoleon, the bulls did not reach America until more than two years later. On Oct. 28, 1810, Bishop Egan was consecrated by Archbishop Carroll in St. Peter's Church, Baltimore.

When Carroll had been asked earlier for his opinion of the several candidates who were being considered, he had written concerning Egan: "He is truly learned, remarkable for his humility, but deficient, perhaps, in firmness and without great experience in the direction of affairs" (Shea, *post*). Every event in the short episcopal career of the mild Franciscan shows that the portrait was limned with insight. That the first bishop of Philadelphia was a man of more than ordinary learning is evident from the fact that he preached in English and German with equal facility and more than average felicity and read and spoke French with ease and fluency. That he was humble is apparent in much of his correspondence with Carroll and others. But his lack of firmness was at times coupled with that obstinacy in matters of small consequence which in some natures, otherwise unassertive, is the substitute for consistent stability.

In response to a letter which the then bishop of Baltimore had written to the trustees of St. Mary's, Holy Trinity, and St. Augustine's, the three existing Philadelphia parishes, it had been agreed that certain sums should be paid by each of these congregations to the new bishop as rector of the cathedral church of St. Mary's and additional proportionate amounts for his fitting maintenance as head of the diocese. The trustees, however, reserved the exclusive rights to the pew rents. It was perhaps inopportune that with the assumption of these obligations, the trustees should almost immediately have planned the enlargement of the cathedral church, for it was not long before they were engaged in a bitter quarrel with the ordinary over financial matters. It is possible that the difficulties might have been composed, but for the dictatorial methods adopted by two priests, Father James Harold and his nephew, William Vincent Harold. The two clerics induced Bishop Egan to sign an address to the congregation which that prelate later assured Archbishop Carroll was "never approved of by me," but signed through "a pliability of disposition" (Griffin, *post*, p. 69). But if the demands of the bishop and his assistants were more definite than diplomatic, the language and the tactics of certain of the laity were neither Christian nor honorable. To make matters worse, the two clergymen who had helped to precipitate the deplorable controversy became as insubordinate as any members of the flock and it was with difficulty that the bishop rid himself of these enemies of his own household. So devastating were the results of the quarrel between clergy and laity, that Archbishop Maréchal, writing to Propaganda some years later, declared that "religion had been almost overthrown in Philadelphia" (Guilday, *post*). Worn out by incessant strife, Bishop Egan developed pulmonary difficulties, and, following an attack of nervous prostration, died on July 22, 1814, three years and nine months after his consecration.

[Martin I. J. Griffin, *Hist. of Rt. Rev. Bishop Egan* (1893); J. D. G. Shea, *Hist. of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.* (4 vols., 1886–92); Peter Guilday, *Life and Times*

*of John England* (2 vols., 1927); *Am. Cath. Hist. Researches* (see Index); *Cath. Encycl.* (1913).] E. F. B.

**EGAN, PATRICK** (Aug. 13, 1841–Sept. 30, 1919), politician, diplomat, was born at Ballymahon, County Longford, Ireland, the son of Francis Egan, a civil engineer. Moving with the family in his boyhood to Dublin, at fourteen Patrick entered the employ of the North Dublin City Milling Company, but for several years he studied in the evenings under private tutors. Before he was twenty, he had become head bookkeeper and chief confidential man, and when in 1872 the owners died, he was made responsible for reorganizing the firm into a joint stock company, said to be the largest in Ireland in that day, and was elected managing director. He also founded a successful bakery business in 1868 in partnership with James Rourke.

A man of quick and generous sympathies, intense patriotism, with a joyous Gaelic love for a fight—later in life he confessed that one did him "more good than medicine"—he was stirred by the pitiful condition of the Irish peasants under the grinding system of absentee landlordism, and soon became deeply interested in the land movement. The same qualities of personal integrity, executive ability, and rare judgment of men which brought him early success in business, combined with an irrepressible energy and a charm of personality that won the admiration of even his enemies, made him a dominating figure in Irish politics while yet a young man. He became a member of St. Patrick's Brotherhood in 1860; was one of the founders of the Amnesty Association, whose purpose was to obtain the release of Irish political prisoners; and was said to have originated the Martin election contest of 1869, out of which grew the Home Rule League, organized by him, Archie Butt, John Martin, Professor Galbraith, A. M. Sullivan, and others. He was mainly instrumental in Parnell's first successful campaign, in County Meath, in 1874. The following year he presided over the Supreme Council of the Fenian Brotherhood in Dublin. When the Irish National Land League was organized in October 1879, Charles S. Parnell, Thomas Brennan, and Patrick Egan were named its Executive Council, with Egan as treasurer, and in December of that year he left his business to his partners in order to devote full time to the League. He subsequently handled enormous sums for the League without audit. In December 1880 and January 1881, he was one of the thirteen defendants in the famous State trials, whom the jury acquitted by a vote of ten to two. The Government then suspended the *habeas corpus* so that the suspected



Leaguers could be imprisoned without trial, and to prevent the confiscation of the Land League funds, Egan moved the treasury to Paris. Until the close of 1882 he skilfully directed activities for the whole movement, while the other leaders were confined in an Irish prison. He was several times urged to run for Parliament, and was twice unanimously elected, once from Queen's County and once from County Meath, but declined rather than take the oath of allegiance to Great Britain. In December 1882 he resigned as treasurer and returned to his business in Ireland. Shortly afterward he learned of Government plans to arrest him, and in February sailed for Holland, and thence for New York. Soon afterward he settled with his family in Lincoln, Nebr., having sold his share in the Dublin bakery firm to Rourke.

At Lincoln he again entered the grain and milling business, establishing a chain of elevators; and also interested himself in real estate and woolen mills. He took an enthusiastic part in the development of Lincoln during the boom days. He applied for his citizenship papers in 1883 and received them in 1888. He was one of the three who called the great Irish convention of April 1883 at Philadelphia, at which the Land League was dissolved and the Irish National League of America was organized. At the Boston convention a year later, he was elected president of the League, an office which he held two years. In 1888–89, when the Parnell Commission made its sensational inquiry into the truth of the London *Times* articles charging Parnell and Egan with complicity in the Phœnix Park murders, Egan sent evidence from America which proved the letters on which the charges were based to be forgeries.

He threw himself just as vigorously into American politics. Having observed the effect of free trade upon Ireland, he joined the Republican party. He became a close friend of Blaine, and supported him in the campaign of 1884. He was elected delegate-at-large to the Republican National Convention in 1888 by a vote of 594 to 67, and declined the chairmanship of the convention in favor of John M. Thurston. Again he supported Blaine for president, and later swung a large Irish vote to Harrison. Harrison was elected, and Blaine became secretary of state. Egan was thereupon appointed minister to Chile, and served to the end of the administration. All through his term of service, and long afterward, his appointment was bitterly attacked by political opponents, who asserted that here was a flagrant example of the spoils system. Nevertheless, it is certain that Secretary Blaine

considered Egan well fitted to carry out his policy of discouraging British influence in South America. Events justified Egan's appointment. At Santiago he quickly established cordial relations with President Balmaceda. In 1890, however, the Balmaceda Government was overthrown by a revolution, and for some time conditions were very unsettled. The position of the American minister through this period was a peculiarly difficult one, and Egan maintained it with suitable dignity, and with his characteristic energy. The chief incidents in his term were his granting of asylum in the American legation to political refugees; the serious *Baltimore* affair, in which about 120 sailors from the U. S. S. *Baltimore* were attacked by mobs while on shore leave at Valparaiso, two being killed and several wounded; and a treaty submitting to arbitration the claims of Chilean and United States citizens, negotiated and signed by Egan. He threw himself wholeheartedly into the work of promoting better diplomatic and commercial relations between the two countries. Although he was unfavorably criticized in a number of historical writings published during the two decades following his term of service, in the words of a recent diplomatic historian "He demonstrated unusual ability. He was singularly upright. Moreover, he was tactful, discreet, and courageous." A survey of his diplomatic correspondence confirms this judgment.

On his return to the United States, Egan settled in New York City, where he engaged in various business enterprises and renewed his activities in Irish and American politics. He supported Bryan in his free-silver campaign. He again became an active leader of the Irish Home Rule sympathizers in America, and vigorously opposed the forces in the United States who supported the move for Irish independence. At the outbreak of the World War he defended John E. Redmond against those who attacked him for holding Ireland loyal to the British Empire. He visited Ireland again only once, in 1914. On Sept. 30, 1919, after an illness of several months, he died at the home of his daughter in New York City.

[Principal sources of information concerning Egan's earlier career are T. P. O'Connor and Robert McWade, *Gladstone-Parnell, and the Great Irish Struggle* (1886), pp. 737–42; Wm. O'Brien, *Recollections* (1905), pp. 135–36; F. Hugh O'Donnell, *A Hist. of the Irish Parliamentary Party* (1910), I, 452, II, 268–73; A. B. Hayes and S. D. Cox, *Hist. of the City of Lincoln, Nebr.* (1899), pp. 309–12. Source material for his work as minister to Chile is found in the U. S. Dept. of State Diplomatic Correspondence, Chile, vols. XXXVII–XLII; *Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1891, 1892, 1893; "Message of the President of the U. S. Respecting the Relations with Chile," *House Ex. Doc. No. 91, 52* Cong., 1 Sess. (1892). His work as minister is described in Osgood Hardy, "Was Patrick Egan a Blundering Minister?" in the *Hispanic Am. Hist. Rev.*, Feb. 1928, pp. 65–81; Jos. B. Lockey, "James Gillespie Blaine," in *The Am. Secretaries of State and Their Diplomacy*, ed. by Samuel F. Bemis, VIII (1928), 155–63. Obituaries appear in *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 1, 1919; London *Times*, Oct. 2, 1919; *Nebr. State Jour.*, Oct. 1, 1919.]

I. L. T.



**EGGLESTON, EDWARD** (Dec. 10, 1837–Sept. 2, 1902), novelist, historian, was born at Vevay, Ind. His father, Joseph Cary Eggleston, lawyer and politician, was a graduate of the College of William and Mary and belonged to a family of some importance in Virginia from colonial times; his mother, Mary Jane Craig, was the daughter of Capt. George Craig, Western frontiersman and Indian fighter. Before his father's death, in 1846, the family spent much time at the Craig farm, several miles from Vevay, so that the future author of *The Hoosier Schoolmaster* early attended a country school. Some three years in Vevay followed, and then young Eggleston was sent for a long visit in Decatur County, where he enriched his knowledge of uncouth Hoosier dialect and backwoods manners. Meantime, on Dec. 25, 1850, his mother had married Williamson Terrell, a Methodist preacher, and Eggleston returned home in March 1851, not to Vevay, but to New Albany. There the family remained a half year, then spent some two years at Madison, then returned to Vevay, in 1853. Here Eggleston liked the high school and flourished under the special favor of the locally famed Mrs. Julia Dumont, who pleased him with the assurance that he was destined to be an author. In June 1854, he was off for thirteen months in Virginia, spent partly with relatives and partly at the Amelia Academy where his accidental discovery of *The Sketch Book* began the slow process of liberation from his almost fanatical devotion to a narrow religious creed (*Forum*, August 1887). Meantime his growing hatred of slavery caused him to refuse the offer of a course at the University of Virginia; indeed, ill health prevented his attending any college, and his formal schooling was now at an end.

After his return to Indiana he was employed for some time as a Bible agent; but his health, always precarious, was soon completely broken. Fearing death from consumption, he set out westward, but suddenly changed his course for Minnesota, where during the summer of 1856 he restored his health by vigorous labor in the open air; then, after an abortive attempt to reach Kansas and aid the anti-slavery cause, he returned home. Some six months (November 1856–April 1857) on a Methodist circuit in

southeastern Indiana wrought, however, new disaster to his health, and he was back in Minnesota the following spring, this time for nine years: he was Bible-agent (1858–59); he was pastor of small churches at Traverse and St. Peter (1857–58), St. Paul (1859–60 and 1862–63), Stillwater (1860–61), and Winona (1864–66); and he tried a variety of other occupations, always frequently interrupted by ill health (*Forty-third Annual Report of the American Bible Society,* 1859; *Minutes of the Annual Conferences of the Methodist Episcopal Church,* 1857–66; and Eggleston Papers). Early in 1866 he gave up the ministry for journalism and removed to Evanston, Ill. He was associate editor (June 1866–February 1867—but much of the time only nominally) of the *Little Corporal* of Chicago. In February 1867, he became editor of the *Sunday School Teacher,* soon renamed the *National Sunday School Teacher;* and even after he had left the West he continued as its corresponding editor, until December 1873. Meantime, as early as 1868, he was announced as "a contributor to all the leading juvenile periodicals in the United States" (*Sunday School Teacher,* vol. III, no. 12); and *Mr. Blake's Walking-stick* (1870) was the first of several small volumes of fantastic fairy lore or moral tales of too sentimental children.

Migrating eastward, Eggleston began in May 1870 a period of about fourteen or fifteen months on the *Independent* (New York), of which he had for some time been Western correspondent (*Independent,* May 12, 19, 1870; and *Scribner's Monthly,* September 1873). His editorial connection, from August 1871, with the then moribund *Hearth and Home* (III, 622) seems to have lasted only a year, but served both to revive the magazine and to start Eggleston on his career as a popular novelist destined to have an important influence in turning American literature toward realism. His first novel, "The Hoosier Schoolmaster" (*Hearth and Home,* Sept. 30–Dec. 30, 1871), was already marked by the sentimental quality as well as by the realism of his later writings. Little read in fiction, he may not have been aware of Bret Harte's recent experiments in local color; at all events H. A. Taine's *Art in the Netherlands* (English translation, 1871) was the conscious influence in this direction. The Ohio River country is the setting of "The End of the World" (*Hearth and Home,* Apr. 20–Sept. 7, 1872), a story of religious fanaticism and racial prejudice. In "The Mystery of Metropolisville" (*Hearth and Home,* Dec. 7, 1872–Apr. 26, 1873) he turned to the Minnesota frontier and made, apparently, some use of

Eggleston

Dickens's method in his humorous character portrayals. "The Circuit Rider" (*Christian Union,* Nov. 12, 1873–Mar. 18, 1874), with its setting in southern Ohio at the beginning of Madison's administration, pictures the devoted members of a religious fraternity of which Eggleston himself was once a member. Of the later novels, "Roxy" (*Scribner's Monthly,* November 1877–October 1878) dealt with unusual frankness, for the period, with the problem of marital infidelity against a background of old Vevay life; "The Hoosier Schoolboy" (*St. Nicholas,* December 1881–April 1882) preached a sentimental sermon against the harshness of rural schools; and "The Graysons" (*Century,* November 1887–August 1888) made an incident of Lincoln's law practise in Illinois the climax of a story of love rivalry and crime. *The Graysons* (1888), which deserves to share with *Roxy* (1878) the honor of being Eggleston's best fiction, was the last of his series on Western life. His only other novel, "The Faith Doctor" (*Century,* February–October, 1891), was a satire on the enthusiasm for Christian Science among the socially ambitious of New York. In the meantime he had published numerous stories in *Scribner's Monthly,* from December 1870, and *St. Nicholas,* from January 1876, and had continued his series of volumes of collected stories which was to come to an end with *Duffels* (1893).

Eggleston's religious enthusiasm, long since waning, finally spent itself entirely during his pastorate (1874–79) of the non-sectarian Church of Christian Endeavor, in Brooklyn (*New York Tribune,* Dec. 27, 1877; *New York Times,* Dec. 27, 1879). At the same time with the end of his religious zeal came also the change of his main literary interest from fiction to history. He had, indeed, early come to look upon the novel as a means of making "a contribution to the history of civilization in America" (*The Mystery of Metropolisville,* Preface of 1873); and now he simply adopted a more direct method of achieving the same purpose. His eight historical lectures at Columbia College (*Fourth Annual Report of President Low,* 1893, p. 42), his thirteen historical articles in the *Century* (from November 1882), and his school histories and other minor historical and biographical publications were merely by-products of his work on an ambitious plan for a history of life in the United States, only two volumes of which he lived to complete—*The Beginners of a Nation* (1896) and *The Transit of Civilization* (1901). Both in his prefaces and in his inaugural address as president of the American Historical Association (*Annual Report* for 1900, I, 37–47) he

set forth his conception of the ideal history as primarily a record of the culture of a people, not merely or even chiefly a record of politics and war; and no doubt his two memorable volumes, imperfect and fragmentary as they were, had an important part in advancing this view of the historian's function, which is only now becoming orthodox in America.

From 1870 until his first voyage to Europe, late in 1879, Eggleston's home was in Brooklyn; from 1881 until his death he lived at Joshua's Rock, on Lake George, but usually spent his winters in New York or other cities and delivered many lectures. His first wife, Lizzie Snider, whom he had married at St. Peter, Minn., Mar. 18, 1858, died in 1889 (Eggleston Papers), and on Sept. 14, 1891, he married Frances Goode, of Madison, Ind. (*New York Times,* Sept. 15, 1891). His last years, like his earlier life, were troubled with serious illness. Some three years before his death he suffered a stroke of apoplexy from which he never really recovered. Another stroke in August 1902 was followed by his death on Sept. 2 of that year.

[The voluminous Eggleston Papers are in the possession of members of the family at Joshua's Rock, Lake George, and of Frances Eggleston, at Madison, Ind. Citations from these papers have been supplied by Mr. Harlan Logan, of the University of Oxford, who is preparing a full-length biographical and critical study. The chief published sources are Frances Eggleston's pamphlet, *Edward Eggleston* (n.d., 1895), and Geo. C. Eggleston's *The First of the Hoosiers: Reminiscences of Edward Eggleston* (n.d., 1903), a somewhat lengthy but by no means adequate record of Eggleston's life by his brother. Other brief accounts of importance are Washington Gladden's "Edward Eggleston," *Scribner's Monthly,* Sept. 1873; Eggleston's own articles, "Books that have Helped me" and "Formative Influences," *Forum,* Aug. 1887 and Nov. 1890; the anonymous "Edward Eggleston: an Interview," *Outlook,* Feb. 6, 1897. See also sketch in *Who's Who in America,* 1901–02; and obituary in *N. Y. Tribune,* Sept. 4, 1902. Eggleston's books are listed in *Cambridge Hist. Am. Literature* (1917–21), II, 634, IV, 661, 737.] R. L. R.

**EGGLESTON, GEORGE CARY** (Nov. 26, 1839–Apr. 14, 1911), journalist, novelist, was born at Vevay, Ind., the son of Joseph Cary Eggleston and Mary Jane Craig. After an early youth of play and reading guided by his mother, and a later youth restricted by Methodism, he went to school at Madison and was for something over a year at Indiana Asbury (now De Pauw) University. Straitened circumstances, however, forced him when only sixteen to teach school at Riker's Ridge and to meet those amusing and trying experiences that inspired *The Hoosier Schoolmaster,* of his brother Edward [*q.v.*]. When seventeen, having inherited his family's plantation in Amelia County, Va., he was whisked into an aristocratic, genial, and leisurely life that astonished and charmed him.

Eggleston

He then studied law at Richmond College and made friends with the Richmond literary group, especially with John Esten Cooke. In 1861, with many other gentlemen horsemen he saw service in northern Virginia in the 1st Virginia Cavalry, first under Col. J. E. B. Stuart and later under Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. In the autumn he transferred to the field artillery on the South Carolina coast, but in 1863 he was back north in Longstreet's artillery. That winter, as sergeant-major of his battery, doing provost guard duty under Gen. Lindsay Walker, he was detailed because of his legal training to defend the worst offenders before courts martial. In 1864 his battery served as sharpshooters through the bloody siege of Petersburg; and Eggleston, with his brother Joseph as second in command, was in charge of a mortar fort.

Immediately after the war he went to Cairo, Ill., to take a position with a banking and steamboating firm; and there on Sept. 9, 1868, he married Marion Craggs. Later he practised law in Mississippi. The work in both places, however, was uncongenial; accordingly, in 1870, with his wife and one child, he went to New York. Here he began a newspaper and editorial career that lasted, except for short intervals, for twenty years. After a year first as a reporter and later as an editorial writer on the *Brooklyn Daily Union* under the guidance of Theodore Tilton, and after a brief period of free-lance writing, he joined his brother Edward in securing good writers for the *Hearth and Home,* bringing among others Frank R. Stockton to the staff. He was editor-in-chief in 1874 when the magazine was sold. A free-lance again, he wrote for the *Atlantic Monthly, Galaxy, Appletons' Journal,* and other periodicals. In 1875 he became a member of the editorial staff of the New York *Evening Post,* and a chat with William Cullen Bryant soon thereafter brought him the *Post's* literary editorship. Here he stated his views forcibly, candidly, and independently, except when constrained by Bryant's gentleness, and often with excellent humor. He yearned for America to produce its own literature without dependence upon British books and criticism. In 1889, after eight years in which he had been literary adviser to Harper & Brothers, and literary editor and later editor-in-chief of the *Commercial Advertiser,* he was called to the editorial staff of the New York *World* and there for eleven years he wrote under Joseph Pulitzer's inspiring guidance, being his mouthpiece in many of the *World's* political campaigns.

In the quieter periods of his New York life, Eggleston had written excellent non-moralizing

boys' stories with his own boys as critics, among others The Big Brother Series (1875–82), and *Strange Stories from History* (1886); he had published the autobiographical *A Rebel's Recollections* (1874), and the novels, *A Man of Honor* (1873) and, with Dolores Marbourg, *Juggernaut* (1891); and he had done much magazine writing and miscellaneous book-making. Now, refusing to yield further to the "call of the wild," as he termed the lure of journalism, and retiring to his Lake George home every summer, he zestfully wrote a score or more of works: boys' stories, history, biography, autobiography, and especially novels. Some of the latter he based upon experiences in Indiana, on the Mississippi, and in South Carolina. His most glamorous memories, however, were of pre-war Virginia. With unbounded affection he wrote *Dorothy South* (1902), *The Master of Warlock* (1903), *Evelyn Byrd* (1904), and seven other novels, many of them containing autobiographical details. The characters in these books are too perfect to seem real, but Eggleston always denied having idealized them. "The greatest joy I have known in life has come," he said, "from my efforts to depict it [ante bellum Virginia life] in romances that are only a veiled record of the facts." His leisurely autobiography, *Recollections of a Varied Life* (1910), describes many newspaper and literary friendships; and *The First of the Hoosiers: Reminiscences of Edward Eggleston* (1903) pictures incidentally and with much charm his own early life. Upon *The History of the Confederate War* (2 vols., 1910), a clear and remarkably fair work, rests his reputation as a historian.

[*Lib. of Southern Literature* (1909), IV, 1525–32 (memoir by J. C. Metcalf) and XVI, p. 14 of bibliog.; Allan Nevins, *The Evening Post: A Century of Journalism* (1922); *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; *Outlook*, Apr. 29, 1911; *Bookman*, May 1912; N. Y. *Evening Post*, Apr. 15, 1911.] A. L. H.

**EGLE, WILLIAM HENRY** (Sept. 17, 1830–Feb. 19, 1901), Pennsylvania historian, was the son of John Egle and Elizabeth von Treupel. His father was fourth in descent from Marcus Egle, who in 1743 came to Cocalico Township, Lancaster County, Pa., from the canton of Zurich, Switzerland; his mother was the daughter of John von Treupel, who in 1805 emigrated to Pennsylvania from Nassau, Germany. Left fatherless at the age of four, and motherless at the age of eleven, William Henry found a home with his paternal grandmother, who was to the lad, as he himself declared, "more than a mother." Her stories of frontier scenes and Revolutionary days, drawn from her own experience, probably aroused in him an early interest in history. He received his formal education in private and public schools in Harrisburg, and at the Harrisburg Military Institute. He first earned his living through the printer's trade. After three years in the office of the *Pennsylvania Telegraph*, Harrisburg, he took charge of state printing. In 1853, as editor of the *Literary Companion* and the Harrisburg *Daily Times*, he gained valuable literary experience.

In 1854 he began his study of medicine in the office of a local physician, supporting himself by teaching in a boys' school and working as clerk in the post office. Three years later he entered the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, graduating in 1859. He settled down to practise his profession in Harrisburg, and on July 24, 1860, was married to Eliza White Beatty. Within three years he was called to Washington to take care of the sick and wounded of the northern armies engaged in the Civil War. During the war he served as surgeon or chief medical officer with several different regiments. At the close of the war he resumed practise in Harrisburg, and in 1870 he became surgeon-in-chief of the National Guard of Pennsylvania, with which organization he maintained his connection until 1899.

Scholars remember Egle gratefully for his contributions to American history. In 1887, upon appointment to the office of state librarian, he began the important work of developing the library as a center of historical research. His own publications include: *An Illustrated History of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, Civil, Political and Military* (1876); several county histories, numerous biographies, and genealogical writings. Among the latter may be mentioned his valuable *Pennsylvania Genealogies: Scotch-Irish and German*, and his *Genealogical Record of the Families of Beatty, Egle, Müller, Murray, Orth, and Thomas*, both published in 1886. He corresponded with historical societies, contributed to their magazines, and assisted other scholars in their research. For many years he edited annually: *Notes and Queries, Historical, Biographical, and Genealogical, Relating Chiefly to Interior Pennsylvania*. Perhaps most important of all his historical work was his editing of the *Pennsylvania Archives*. He collaborated with John Blair Linn in the second series, Volumes I–XII, but was sole editor of Volumes XIII–XIX in the same series, and also sole editor of the third series. He was one of the founders, and the first president, of the Pennsylvania German Society. Although he was more widely known for his editorial ability, friends and acquaintances remembered him for his geniality

and kindliness. He died of pneumonia, in his seventy-first year.

[*Geneal. Record,* mentioned above; Geo. H. Halberstadt, in the *Jour. Assoc. Mil. Surgeons of the U. S.* (Carlisle, Pa.), Aug. 1901; H. M. M. Richards, in *Pa. German Soc. Proc. and Addresses,* vol. XI (1902); H. E. Hayden, in *Proc. and Colls. of the Wyoming Hist. and Geol. Soc.,* vol. VI (1901); *Notes and Queries . . . Annual Vol., 1900* (1901); *Alumni Reg.* (Phila.), Mar. 1901; *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.,* Apr. 1901; Theo. B. Klein, in *Trans. Hist. Soc. Dauphin County, Pa.,* vol. I (1903); *Papers Read before the Lancaster County Hist. Soc. Mar. 1, 1901* (1901); *Harrisburg Patriot,* Feb. 20, 1901.] D. M. C.

**EGLESTON, THOMAS** (Dec. 9, 1832–Jan. 15, 1900), mineralogist, founder of the School of Mines of Columbia College, was the son of Thomas and Sarah (Stebbins) Egleston of New York City. His father came from New England, where his forebears had first settled in 1635. As a boy Thomas was interested in minerals and rocks, making his first collection at the age of thirteen. During his course at Yale, where he graduated in 1854, he took special work in chemistry. In Paris, through his laboratory work in the geology and chemistry departments of the Jardin des Plantes, he attracted the attention of some of the members of the faculty of the École des Mines and they offered him the facilities of their larger institution. He became so interested in his studies in the paleontological laboratory that he decided to take the whole course, which he completed in 1860. Upon his return to America in 1861 he was called to Washington to take care of the sorting and arranging of the geological specimens which had accumulated at the Smithsonian Institution. This work helped him to realize both the need and opportunity for an institution which should occupy in this country such a place as the École des Mines in France. The schools of science existing in the United States at the time were either too general or too special to include distinct and adequate training in mining and metallurgy. In March 1863, therefore, Egleston published a *Proposed Plan for a School of Mines and Metallurgy in New York City,* which he submitted to the trustees of Columbia College, who gave their consent to the experiment, although it was a new departure in American education. Accordingly, the department was opened on Nov. 15, 1864. It was a success from its beginning. In the early years of the institution Egleston was its central and leading spirit but as the work grew by leaps and bounds he limited his attention to his own special departments of mineralogy and metallurgy. His first love was for mineralogy and his work in building up the great mineralogical collection of the School was a remarkable achievement. Shortly after his death the trustees of the university paid him fitting tribute when they attached to the collection the name Egleston Mineralogical Museum as a permanent memorial to its founder.



Egleston was a prolific writer. Nearly a hundred books, pamphlets, and articles on metallurgy and mining engineering in its varied phases give evidence of his literary activity. His most ambitious work was *The Metallurgy of Silver, Gold and Mercury in the United States,* published in two large volumes in 1887 and 1890. His services to New York City were almost as memorable as his contributions to science. Through his efforts a monument was erected to mark the resting place of Audubon, the artist ornithologist. It was, however, in saving Washington Square (facing which he lived for many happy years with his wife, Augusta McVickar) that he won the city's deepest gratitude. Under the notorious "Boss" Tweed, a bill had all but passed which would have given this recreation spot to a group of schemers; but Egleston discovered the purpose of the bill, aroused public opinion, helped to organize the Public Parks Protective Association, with himself as secretary and John Jay as president, and not only stirred the legislators to the point of refusing to pass the bill but put through a resolution providing that Washington Square should be "Kept *forever* as a park for purposes of public health and recreation."

[G. F. Kunz, in *Trans. Am. Inst. Mining Engineers,* vol. XXXI (1902); A. J. Moses, in *The School of Mines Quart.,* Apr. 1900; D. S. Martin, in *Popular Sci. Monthly,* June 1899; *Record and Statistics . . . Class of Fifty-four, Yale Univ.* (1896); *N. Y. Times,* Jan. 16, 1900.] E. Y.

**EHNINGER, JOHN WHETTEN** (July 22, 1827–Jan. 22, 1889), painter and illustrator, was born in New York City, the son of George and Eliza (Whetten) Ehninger. He graduated B.A. from Columbia College in 1847. Immediately after taking his degree, he was sent to Europe to study painting, spending his earlier years at Düsseldorf, with Leutze. On his second visit to Europe he worked in the Paris studio of Thomas Couture, an eminent historical painter who carried on the traditions of Gros and Paul Delaroche. He visited the principal European art galleries and in 1850 attained his first popular success with "Peter Stuyvesant," illustrating an incident in Washington Irving's *History of New York,* which was engraved for the American Art Union. He made many trips to Europe, the last one of which occurred a year before his death. While abroad he made illustrations for the *Illustrated Times* and the *Illustrated News.* He also drew designs for gift editions of Longfellow's *Courtship of Miles Standish,* Hood's

*Bridge of Sighs*, and *Ye Legende of St. Gwendoline*, founded upon one of Tennyson's Idylls. The latter illustrations were reproduced by photographs. Ehninger was also a frequent contributor to the exhibitions of the National Academy of Design, New York, and was elected an academician in 1860. His paintings, which usually were in oils, were devoted to genre subjects. In the words of a contemporary critic, "Not only has he proved a faithful student of the elements of his art, but he has attained a degree of practical skill and manifested an individuality rarely achieved in so brief a period" (Tuckerman, *post*, p. 462). According to the same authority he was regarded as "one of the most accomplished draughtsmen among American artists of his period." He died suddenly of apoplexy at Saratoga Springs, N. Y., where for years he had made his home. Some ten years before his death he had married a Miss Beach.

[Henry T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Record*, Apr. 1889; *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 23, 1889; *Appletons' Ann. Cyc.*, 1889, p. 629.]

J. J.

**EHRLICH, ARNOLD BOGUMIL** (Jan. 15, 1848–Nov. 5, 1919), Bible exegete, was born in Wlodawa, Polish Russia, the posthumous and only child of Mordecai and Zelda Biederman Ehrlich. He emerged from the playless childhood of the scholastic Ghetto to marry at the age of fourteen. Three years later, still a Talmud student, he crossed the border into Germany, and there he laid the foundations of his secular learning. Later he settled in Leipzig, where for several years he worked with Germany's most gifted Christian Biblical scholar, Franz Delitzsch. The masterly touch of Ehrlich's unrivaled instinct for Hebrew usage has been traced in Delitzsch's classical Hebrew translation of the New Testament. After a short stay in England, Ehrlich came to America in 1878, armed with a literary knowledge of a large number of languages, an expert knowledge of classical Arabic, and a unique knowledge of the Hebrew Bible. Here all doors were closed to his learning. Christian institutions had no place for this Polish Jew, while Jews suspected his long contact with Delitzsch, the head of the missionary Institutum Judaicum in Leipzig. The first work he obtained in New York was that of rolling barrels. Later he secured an instructorship in the Emanu-El Preparatory School for the Hebrew Union College. When that school closed he supported himself first as a social worker, then as a business man, and finally, as a private Hebrew teacher, the precarious income from which was augmented by the dressmaking skill of his second wife, Pauline Offner.



Ehrlich received scant notice during his life, despite the fact that he had a veritable genius for Biblical interpretation. In the three volumes of his *Mikra ki-Pheschuto* (Berlin, 1899–1901); in his edition of *Die Psalmen* (Berlin, 1905); and in the seven volumes of his *Randglossen zur hebräischen Bibel* (Leipzig, 1908–14), he concentrated a wealth of masterly exegesis, marked by brilliant, if erratic, originality. These volumes are the most comprehensive and valuable contribution to Old Testament scholarship made in America. Ehrlich regarded Biblical higher criticism as premature and unreliable because based on an insufficiently understood text. With extraordinary tenacity and single-mindedness he set himself to establish what he believed to be the true reading and true meaning of the text. To this life task, he brought intuitive verbal and literary keenness. He would say of himself, "I am like a tea taster. I put the word on my tongue, and I know whether it is good or bad." Acute in his understanding of the fine points of Hebrew idiom and syntax, he was contemptuously impatient of sciolists and plodding pedants, declaring that a poet could grasp the real meaning of the Biblical word better than an unimaginative professor relying on lexicon and grammar. Ehrlich's contributions to Biblical exegesis and Hebrew lexicography and grammar are replete with illuminating suggestion, but his excessive quest of originality, the audacity of many of his later suggestions, his contempt for the mistakes of others, and the current preoccupation with the higher rather than the lower criticism of the Bible, have militated against a due recognition of his work. In scholarship as in life he fell between two stools. His treatment of the Biblical text was regarded by many Christian scholars as too Jewish, and by many Jewish scholars as too little Jewish. However, productive Old Testament study of the future must follow Ehrlich in combining the linguistic methods of Christian commentators with Jewish mastery of the Hebrew text and its collateral Hebrew literature.

[Ehrlich published his childhood recollections anonymously in *Saat auf Hoffnung*, XXV (1888), 15–20, XXVI (1889), 18–34, 72–86. His contribution to Biblical scholarship has been appraised in reviews of his works, and more especially by Israel Friedlaender in the *Nation*, Jan. 10, 1920; Joshua Bloch in *Hachme Yisrael B'America* (1915); and by Benzion Halper in *Miqlat*, II (1920), 417–26. See also the *Jewish Encyc.* (1925); *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 6, *N. Y. Tribune*, Nov. 7, 1919.]

D. deS. P.

**EICHBERG, JULIUS** (June 13, 1824–Jan. 18, 1893), violinist, teacher, composer, was born at Düsseldorf, of a musical family. He was taught at first by his father, and could play the violin

acceptably when he was seven years old. Among his other teachers were Eichler of Mainz, Frölich of Würzburg, and, more important, Rietz, who introduced his pupil to Mendelssohn. The latter wrote, as testimonial, "At so early an age, young Eichberg joins to a remarkable firmness and certainty in bowing, and use of his left hand, a great deal of true expression, which will lead him, I doubt not, to become a great artist." In 1842 Eichberg entered the Brussels Conservatory, then headed by Fétis, and studied with Meerts and De Beriot, graduating in 1845 with first prizes in violin and composition. After a brief stay in Frankfurt, he went to Geneva as conductor of an opera troupe, and was retained there for eleven years as conservatory professor and church music leader. In 1857 he migrated to New York; but after two years of desultory teaching and playing, he moved to Boston and made it his permanent home. For seven years he was musical leader at the Boston Museum. In 1867 he established the Boston Conservatory of Music, which flourished for years and of which he was director, 1870–72. At one time he was supervisor of music in the public schools; and he published many singing-books and musical collections for school use. He also founded the Eichberg Violin School. He composed much for his instrument, including graceful solos and valuable studies as well as various ensemble numbers. Among the latter were an Ave Maria and Reverie for violin, 'cello, piano, and organ, given in the old Music Hall, and a Concertino for four violins, performed for the Harvard Musical Association; also several string trios and quartets. Among his piano works is a charming set entitled "Lebensfrühling." For voices he wrote the patriotic quartet "To Thee, O Country Great and Free" (1872), and many songs of real artistic merit, including several settings of Celia Thaxter's words, such as "Sunset," and "O swallow sailing lightly." Most successful, however, and giving the composer most prominence, were his various operettas, or light operas. The first of these, *The Doctor of Alcantara* (1862), had a plot worthy of the palmy days of Italian comedy. Doctor Paracelsus and his somewhat shrewish wife Lucrezia have a daughter, Isabella, who is told that she must marry a certain young man. But before learning his identity, she is charmed by the serenade of Carlos, and asserts her preference for him. Carlos smuggles himself into the house in a basket sent to Inez, Isabella's companion. Left alone a moment, he emerges and hides. Lucrezia forces Inez and the Doctor to throw the basket in the river; and when Inez explains its supposed contents, the latter considers himself a murderer. The night watch, under the Alguazil Pomposo, harrow him still further with their suspicions. Even when Carlos himself appears, he is taken for a police spy, but he finally dispels the Doctor's anxiety. Entering the house, they drink a toast; but Carlos is given one of the Doctor's decoctions, by mistake, and falls insensible. Again thinking himself a murderer, the Doctor hides the body under a sofa. Balthaser, father of Carlos, enters, and will not move from the sofa, despite his host's schemes; so he is left to sleep there. In the dark, Carlos recovers from the drug (an opiate), and has an unexpected clash with his father, which arouses the household. All ends happily, for it turns out that Carlos is the one for whom Isabella's hand has been asked. Other operettas by Eichberg, also well received, were *The Rose of Tyrol* (1865), *The Two Cadis* (1868), and *A Night in Rome* (1874).

[*Boston Sunday Herald*, June 18, 1887; *Boston Jour.*, Jan. 20, 1893; L. C. Elson, *The Hist. of Am. Music* (rev. ed., 1925); *Grove's Dict. of Music and Musicians* (3rd ed., 1927); *The Art of Music*, vols. IV (1915); XI (1917).] A. E.



**EICHHOLTZ, JACOB** (Nov. 2, 1776–May 11, 1842), painter, was born in Lancaster, Pa., son of Leonard and Catharine Eichholtz. His grandfather, John Jacob Eichholtz, a native of Bischoffsheim, Bavaria, was one of the earliest settlers of Lancaster, where he was assistant burgess in 1750–52. His wife, Anna Catharine Reichert, established the Bull's Head Tavern in Lancaster in 1765. She was succeeded in the proprietorship by her eldest son, Leonard, father of Jacob. Like his brothers and sisters, the latter received a plain English education. His father did not welcome his early evidence of artistic talent; nevertheless, a friendly sign-painter was engaged to teach the lad rudimentary drawing. His teacher's untimely death brought about Jacob's apprenticeship to a coppersmith, but did not end his dreams of painting. With a bootjack for a palette and any available substitute for a brush he continued his rude efforts. After completing his apprenticeship, he assumed family responsibilities by his marriage to Catharine, daughter of John Hatz, a widow with two children by whom he had four of his own. He divided his time between art and coppersmithing until his portraits assured him a reasonable living. Having acquired a local reputation, upon the suggestion of his friend, Mr. Barton, Eichholtz visited in Boston the celebrated Gilbert Stuart, who welcomed, advised, and encouraged him. He thereupon sought wider opportunity in Philadelphia and, after ten strenuous years in that city, gained sufficient recognition to return

to his native town with a fair income. In Philadelphia he had as neighbor and warm personal friend the famous John Sartain, who engraved many of his portraits. Most of Eichholtz's painting was done in Philadelphia, but he did some in Baltimore, during several sojourns of a few weeks at a time, and some in Lancaster. In 1817 his first wife died, and a few years later he married again.

Following the style of Sully and Stuart, between 1810 and 1842 he painted over two hundred and fifty portraits, a few landscapes, and some historical groups. His reading and classical study inspired his decoration for the hose carriage of the Union Fire Company of Lancaster, an allegorical representation of water. In 1818 he painted the portraits of George Graeff and his wife, and about 1822 a portrait of their daughter, Maria, a bit of romance in this connection being that he did it gratuitously because she favorably influenced his suit with Catharine Trissler, who became his second wife and eventually bore him nine children. Other notable portraits are those of Chief Justice John Bannister Gibson, considered an example of the artist's best portraiture, now in the possession of the Law Association of Philadelphia; Col. James Gibson, painted in 1829 for the State House at Dover, at the request of the Delaware legislature; Nicholas Biddle; James Buchanan (now in the Smithsonian Institution); Mrs. Catharine Long (1838, in the Long Asylum for Women); Chief Justice John Marshall (in the Historical Society of Pennsylvania); Admiral David D. Porter; Bishop Ravenscroft (painted for Edward Rutledge); Gov. J. Andrew Shulze (in the Historical Society of Pennsylvania); Thaddeus Stevens (1830), and five self-portraits.

[Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (rev. ed., 1918), II, 384–85; Wm. U. Hensel, "Jacob Eichholtz, Painter," an address, published as supplement to *Hist. Papers and Addresses of the Lancaster County Hist. Soc.*, vol. XVI (1912) and abridged in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Jan. 1913, pp. 48–75; information from Mrs. D. B. Landis, cor. sec. of the Lancaster County Hist. Soc.]

J. M. H.

**EICKEMEYER, RUDOLF** (Oct. 31, 1831–Jan. 23, 1895), inventor, manufacturer, was born in Altenbamberg, Bavaria, Germany, the son of Christian and Katherine (Bréhm) Eickemeyer. He was educated in his village schools, the Realschule at Kaiserlautern, and the Polytechnic Institute at Darmstadt, where he completed his studies at the age of seventeen. Immediately thereafter, with his friend and future partner, George Osterheld, he joined the insurgents in the Revolution of 1848. After its collapse the two left Germany for New York, arriving Nov. 20, 1850. In the United States they found employment, first in the building of the Erie Railroad, later with the Buffalo Steam Engine Works, and finally, in 1854, settled at Yonkers, N. Y., where they opened a small machine repair shop. Hat-making was then the chief industry of Yonkers; and through their repair work the partners became familiar with the art, and Eickemeyer began to give serious attention to the improvement of its crude mechanical appliances. He first patented machines to fold the edges of leather hat bands and to sew them into the hat, devising the first "whip-stitch," still used. These were followed by other important inventions such as the first hat-blocking machine, patented in 1865 by the partners; the first successful hat-stretching machines; and a machine to pounce hats in 1869. In this way Eickemeyer, through his products, gradually revolutionized the hat-making industry throughout the world. Following the Civil War, during which he converted his plant into a revolver factory and also served a thirty-day enlistment, he perfected and patented in 1870 a differential gear for a mowing and reaping machine which was profitably sold to a Canadian manufactory. He continued, too, to improve his hatting machinery and to devise additional equipment, including a shaving machine and one to make blocks and flanges. Being a most intelligent man, he had all along followed the progress of scientific thought, especially in electricity, and in the seventies when this science came to the foreground, he began some experimental work in telephony, taking out a number of patents. This experimentation was followed by work on armatures and armature windings which resulted in the perfecting and patenting of the first symmetrical drum armature and the iron-clad dynamo. So superior were they to existing equipment that the demand for them was immediate—armatures for motor manufacturers and iron-clad motors for elevators—and by 1884 the hat machinery factory had been largely converted into a prosperous electric plant and laboratory. Eickemeyer continued with experimental work and soon electric-lighting and railway generators and motors were produced. He and Stephen D. Field [*q.v.*] together developed the first direct-connected railway motor, designing it for use on the New York Elevated Railroad. In addition he made many investigations on hysteresis, high potential phenomena, and alternating-current machinery, devising special instruments for the purpose. In 1892 his business was consolidated with the General Electric Company, but he continued his electrical investigations until his death. He was the discoverer and first employer of the

illustrious electrical engineer, Charles P. Steinmetz [*q.v.*]. All told, Eickemeyer secured about a hundred and fifty patents in the United States and abroad. He was active in civic affairs in Yonkers: a fireman in his youth; a militiaman for fourteen years; a water commissioner for twenty-two years; and vice-president of the school board, of which he was a trustee for twenty-three years. He married Mary True Tarbell of Dover, Me., in July 1856, who with six children survived him.

[Theodor Lemke, *Geschichte des Deutschthums von N. Y.* (1893); *Electrical World*, Mar. 16, 1895; *Hatters' Gazette*, Mar. 1, 1895; *Yonkers Gazette*, Feb. 2, 1895; *Electrical Age*, Feb. 2, 1895; *Electrical Rev.*, Jan. 30, 1895; *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Jan. 24, 1895; Patent Office Records; U. S. Nat. Museum correspondence.] C.W.M.

**EIDLITZ, CYRUS LAZELLE WARNER** (July 27, 1853–Oct. 5, 1921), architect, was the son of Leopold Eidlitz [*q.v.*] and Harriet Amanda Warner Eidlitz, daughter of an architect and of Massachusetts colonial stock. He was born in the house at the foot of West Eighty-sixth St., New York City, which his father had built several years before. Almost from his birth the son was destined for the profession of architecture and at the age of twelve was sent abroad for his education. After three years of school in Geneva, he entered the Royal Polytechnic School in Stuttgart, and in 1871 returned to New York and entered his father's office as a draftsman. On May 23, 1877, he married Jennie Turner Dudley, a descendant of Gov. Thomas Dudley of Massachusetts. His first independent work was the rebuilding in 1878 of St. Peter's Church in Westchester, a church originally built by the elder Eidlitz, which had been badly damaged by fire. This was followed by a railway station in Detroit, and this in turn by the important Dearborn Station in Chicago, completed in 1885. In 1884 Cyrus Eidlitz was successful in a competition for the building of the Buffalo Library, which when completed at once gave him rank as one of the leading American architects. The plan was complicated by the fact that it was necessary to accommodate a library, an art gallery, and the collections of a historical society on a site which was of extreme irregularity, forming a right-angled triangle truncated at the apex which was also the most conspicuous part. The building, of a more or less orthodox German Romanesque, is a splendid solution of unpromising conditions of site and use. Of about the same date were the Telephone buildings in Cortlandt and Broad Streets; followed by the Western Electric Building in Greenwich St., the Fidelity and Casualty

Eidlitz

Building in Cedar, the Racquet Club in Forty-third St., the Bank for Savings on Fourth Ave. at Twenty-second, and the building for the Bar Association in Forty-fourth running to Forty-third St., all in New York City. The Western Electric Building was an example of a factory and showed that such a structure might be ornamental as well as useful. The Fidelity Building, which reached upward to the extent of ten full stories, was the first "skyscraper" which Eidlitz was called upon to design, his previous efforts having been confined to constructions of less elevation. The pioneers in this class of building had established as an axiom that the edifice must have a powerful base, a plain shaft and a rich crown. This principle was followed by Eidlitz in the design for the Townsend Building at the northwest corner of Broadway and Twenty-sixth Sts. Each of his new designs showed advancement in his art over those preceding. The group of three which comprised the Racquet Club, the Bank for Savings, and the Bar Association were the most important and interesting of his career up to the time of their construction. In the case of the Racquet Club the conditions gave a frontage of 142 feet and that the playing courts at the top of the building should be bounded by solid walls without windows on the front. The design centered in an arcade of five openings running through the second and third stories and dominating the whole front, with great depth to the piers of the arcade, leaving an impression of nobility and power. The Bank for Savings is one of the solidest as well as one of the most dignified in New York, and at the time of its erection was spoken of as one of the most "popular" buildings of the time and is still one of the most classical buildings to be found in New York.

The most noteworthy structure designed by Eidlitz was the *New York Times* Building, constructed in the narrow triangle between Broadway and Seventh Ave., and Forty-second and Forty-third Sts., in New York City. There the manifold requirements of a structure heavy enough for the great presses, and providing sufficient office space for rental in addition to what was needed for the editorial and mechanical staffs of the great newspaper, were complicated by the many additional stories of the tower dominating Broadway and adding so greatly to the advertising value of the site for its purpose. This rich and stately building was eminently successful and still stands a monument to the professional skill of the architect who designed it.

[Montgomery Schuyler, "Cyrus L. W. Eidlitz," *Architectural Record*, Apr. 1906; *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 6, 1921; personal acquaintance.] M. Sc—r.

**EIDLITZ, LEOPOLD** (Mar. 29, 1823–Mar. 22, 1908), architect, son of Adolph and Julia Eidlitz, was born in Prague, Bohemia. After his school years in that city, he entered the Polytechnic at Vienna in order to train himself for the profession of land-steward, and it was, apparently, while studying the construction of buildings for estates, that he began to take interest in the wider field of architecture. Early in 1843 he came to New York and almost immediately entered the office of Richard Upjohn, the leading exponent at the time of the "Gothic revival" in American architecture, who was then working on the present building of Trinity Church, New York. Eidlitz left Upjohn before long, however, and with a young Bavarian formed the firm of Blesch & Eidlitz, to draw the plans of a new edifice for St. George's Episcopal Church. Blesch seems to have fallen ill soon after the preparation of the drawings, and the work was executed entirely by Eidlitz, who had also drawn the plans for the interior. The partnership lasted only a short while, but it gave Eidlitz an association with a "Grand Prix" of Munich, who had the regular architectural training which he himself lacked. The construction of St. George's Church with its successful German Gothic design and two open spires of carved stone, later taken down as the result of a fire which compelled the reconstruction of the interior, started young Eidlitz upon a successful career as a Gothic practitioner, which at that time meant a church architect. Much of his best earlier work, therefore, was in church design. "Gothic," said Eidlitz, however, "is adequate to every expression," and during his earlier period he designed a number of houses, of which there are examples at Englewood, N. J., and Springfield, Mass., and the Hamilton Ferry House in Brooklyn, an interesting example of carpentry, with bold timber hoods projecting over the slips. Among his churches, St. Peter's, Westchester, N. Y., the Church of the Holy Trinity at Madison Avenue and Forty-second St., New York City, completed in 1853, and the Congregational Church in Greenwich, Conn., show his skill; but his most successful church is considered to be Christ Church, St. Louis, afterward and for many years the Episcopal cathedral of that city. Charles Kingsley found it the "most churchly" church in the United States. Perhaps the most original ecclesiastical building which Eidlitz planned was the synagogue "Emanu-El" at Fifth Avenue and Forty-third St., New York. Erected in 1868 and demolished to make way for a business skyscraper in 1928, it was an extraordinarily successful combination of Gothic structure with Saracenic decoration, including carved and molded as well as colored ornament. The critics of the time attacked the incongruity of a cruciform interior for a Jewish temple. In secular construction, Eidlitz adorned New York with many notable buildings. Among them were the Continental Bank (1856); the American Exchange Bank (1857), the first fireproof commercial building in the city; the old Produce Exchange (1860); the Brooklyn Academy of Music, of the same year; and the Dry Dock Savings Bank (1875). In these, as in other work, he kept reverting to his favorite German Gothic style with marked success.

The most spectacular example of his work was the redesigning of the State Capitol at Albany. When in 1875 Tilden succeeded Dix as governor of New York, a commission was appointed to investigate the partly finished new Capitol. Its scope was extended to include the architecture itself, and as a result, an advisory board was formed with Eidlitz, H. H. Richardson, and F. L. Olmsted as members. The commission's report was strongly against continuing with the commonplace Romanesque design of the previous architect. As a result the changing of the design and plans was entrusted to the three commissioners, who formed the firm of Eidlitz, Richardson & Company to complete the work. His work on this and on the New York Court House was Eidlitz's last significant undertaking.

He wrote a number of professional articles and two volumes: *Nature and Function of Art* (1881) and *Big Wages and How to Earn Them* (1887), the latter a criticism of trades unions which was published anonymously. He was elected to the Century Club in 1859 and an honorary corresponding member of the Royal Institute of British Architects in 1897. Eidlitz had a gift of witty expression; one of the acid sayings much quoted by his friends was: "American architecture is the art of covering one thing with another thing to imitate a third thing which, if genuine, would not be desirable." He was married in 1846 to Harriet Amanda Warner, daughter of Cyrus Lazelle Warner, an architect with whom he was professionally associated soon after coming to the United States. Three of his wife's brothers were architects, and his son, Cyrus Lazelle Warner Eidlitz [*q.v.*], also entered the profession of his father and uncles.

[Montgomery Schuyler, "A Great Am. Architect: Leopold Eidlitz," in the *Architectural Record*, Sept. 1908, and "The Work of Leopold Eidlitz" in the same journal, Oct. and Nov. 1908; *Jour. Royal Inst. of British Architects*, Oct. 17, 1908; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 23, 1908; personal acquaintance.]

M. Sc—r.

**EIELSEN, ELLING** (Sept. 19, 1804–Jan. 10, 1883), noted lay preacher and founder of the

Norwegian Evangelical Lutheran Church of North America (also called The Ellingian brotherhood, Elling Eielsen's Synod, or simply The Ellingians), was born on the farm Sunve, at Vossestranden, in the district of Voss, Western Norway. His parents were Eiel Ingebrigtsen and Anna Ellingsen Sunve. His father, a farmer and schoolmaster, was for a time influenced by the pietistic movement known as Haugeanism (from Hans Nielsen Hauge, 1771–1824), and it is not unlikely that the boy Elling imbibed something of the devout religious spirit of the Haugeans. As a child he was sociable but of a headstrong nature, and later was subject to moods of melancholy. He showed a religious bent from the age of eight, but then apparently changed and in the years of his youth lived a somewhat wild and uncontrolled life in his home community. In his twenty-second year he experienced a religious awakening; there followed three years of religious depression that once almost drove him to suicide. He looked upon his life as one of sin and degradation, though there appears to be no evidence from those years that he had committed excesses of any kind. He continued to live in Voss until he was twenty-five, then in 1829, went to Bergen, learned there the carpenter's trade, and secured a position. His chief reason for moving to Bergen was that he might be among Haugean friends, and they received him with their characteristic kindly Christian spirit. He remained in Bergen until 1831. There had developed at this time in his mental make-up a strong anti-clerical feeling. The ordained clergy of the State Church were, in his opinion, worldly-minded and negligent of their duty as ministers. Feeling that in his own case he had received no help from the clergy, he came to look upon them as an official class serving the State, an aristocracy, who held themselves aloof from the masses, and made no effort to instruct their humbler charges in morality and right living. The theologically trained clergy were "High Church," and antipathy to everything for which this term stood was a dominant principle with him throughout most of his later life. In Bergen he was permitted to preach to the soldiers and his sermons found so much favor that the captain of the company urged him to enter upon preaching as his life-work. During a long illness at this time he had an experience that he interpreted as a divine call to go out and preach. Accordingly, in 1831 he set out, going to the northern provinces, Trondhjem, Nordland, Tromsö, Finmarken, traveling as an itinerant missionary here and among the Lapps of the extreme North, walking on foot in summer and in the cold of winter, often



suffering untold hardships. Thus began a career that lasted for nearly fifty years. During the first eight years he visited all parts of Norway, as well as Sweden and Denmark, usually walking, and preaching two or three times a day, but in 1839 he emigrated to America. At Chicago, in October of that year, he preached in a log cabin the first Norwegian sermon delivered on American soil. The Fox River Settlement, La Salle County, Ill., became his home. Here he at once built himself a house, the second story of which was fitted out as a "meeting-house," where for years he preached regularly, except when he was visiting and preaching in the new settlements that were springing up in Illinois, Wisconsin, and other parts of the northern Middle West. In 1859 he visited settlements recently formed in Texas, and did missionary work among the Potawatomi Indians of Missouri. Yielding to the wishes of his people at Fox River he was ordained, Oct. 3, 1843; less than three years later, Apr. 13–14, 1846, he organized the Evangelical Lutheran Church of America, the largest organization of Norwegian Lutherans in the New World. During the church controversies of the next two decades he sometimes alienated co-religionists by his dictatorial methods and intolerance of opposition; ground that had been gained for his church he sometimes lost again, for he did not have the capacity for cooperation and the talent for organization required of the true leader. Yet he achieved results that were of outstanding significance; and in the pioneer period of Norwegian-American history no one, perhaps, had a greater religious influence among Norwegians that Elling Eielsen. He had married Sigrid Nilson Tufte, in Muskego, Wis., on July 3, 1843. After 1873 the family lived in Chicago, where he died.

[J. Magnus Rohne, *Norwegian American Lutheranism up to 1872* (1926); C. O. Brohaugh og J. Eisteinsen, *Kortfattet Beretning om Elling Eielsens Liv og Virksomhed* (1883); E. O. Mørstad, *Elling Eielsen og den Evangelisklutherske Kirke* (1917); R. B. Anderson, *First Chapter of Norwegian Immigration* (1895); Geo. T. Flom, *A Hist. of Norwegian Immigration to the U. S.* (1909); Th. Bothne, *Kort Udsigt over det Lutherske Kirkearbeide blandt Nordmaendene i Amerika* (1898); *Who's Who Among Pastors in all the Norwegian Synods of America 1843–1927* (1928).]

G. T. F.

**EIGENMANN, CARL H.** (Mar. 9, 1863–Apr. 24, 1927), zoölogist, educator, was born to parents of moderate means—Philip and Margaretha (Lieb) Eigenmann—in Flehingen, Germany. Sent to the United States in 1877, he grew up in the care of an uncle in Rockport, Ind. In 1882 he entered the state university at Bloomington, where he soon came under the influence of the progressive professor of zoölogy, David Starr

Jordan. Three years later (1885) Eigenmann published his first ichthyological paper, a review of the *Diodontidae* of North America. In 1886, the year he received his bachelor's degree, he made a trip to California, and at San Diego met Rosa Smith, already becoming known by her papers on West Coast fishes. They were married on Aug. 20, 1887, and immediately proceeded to Harvard University to study the immense collections of South American fishes made by Louis Agassiz in 1865. They worked there until December 1888, completing, besides several smaller papers, a monumental review of the catfishes of South America. In 1887 Eigenmann was granted his master's degree by Indiana University, and in 1889, the doctorate. Returning to California, he established a small biological station at San Diego where he and Mrs. Eigenmann studied the fishes of the region.

He was called in 1891 to Indiana University as professor of zoölogy and rendered that institution valuable service during the rest of his life. In 1895 he founded the university's Biological Station at Turkey (now Winona) Lake, remaining its director until 1920. In 1908 he organized the Graduate School, and he was its dean until his death. The following year he went to the Northwest, to collect fishes for the British Museum, and with Mrs. Eigenmann reported the collections before shipping them to London. He then turned his attention toward studies of variation and of the origin and differentiation of the sex cells in certain of his Pacific Coast fish material. This latter work contributed greatly to his reputation. He next undertook a study of the degenerate eyes of the blind creatures inhabiting the caves of Southern Indiana and Kentucky and of the underlying evolutionary causes of this degeneration. The culmination of his studies was the publication, in 1909, by the Carnegie Institution of Washington, of *Cave Vertebrates of America, a Study in Degenerative Evolution,* a magnificent volume and the best known of Eigenmann's many works.

The loan of materials from the Agassiz collection allowed him to begin what he intended to be his greatest work, a monograph of the Characins, the largest family of South American river fishes. Financed in part by the Carnegie Museum of Pittsburgh, in which he was curator of fishes, 1909–18, in 1908 he made a trip to British Guiana which resulted in a ponderous volume, *The Fresh-water Fishes of British Guiana,* published in 1912. The results of other expeditions were embodied in a report entitled *The Fresh-water Fishes of Northwestern South America* (1922), issued by the Carnegie Museum. In 1918 he



went again to South America, this time to the high Andes of Peru and along the coast through Chile; the principal result of this trip, *The Fresh-water Fishes of Chile,* was published by the National Academy of Sciences in 1927. On this expedition the strain of the great altitudes broke his strength, previously weakened by fever in Colombia, and from this time his health gradually declined. In 1926 he was taken to his old haunts in Southern California, where after a long illness he died, the great Characin monograph being but a third completed. He was recognized as one of the foremost ichthyologists of the country and, indeed, may be considered one of the four greatest of his time. He was also a teacher of great influence. A kindly man with a heart of gold, and a will of iron, sympathetic, jolly, yet stubborn in carrying out that on which he had set his mind, no professor was ever more beloved by students and colleagues alike, and few will be so kindly remembered.

[Eigenmann's middle initial did not stand for a name. For biographical sketches see *Who's Who in America,* 1926–27; A. W. Henn, in *Annals of the Carnegie Museum,* June 1927; G. S. Myers, in *Natural History,* Jan., Feb. 1928; Eigenmann's scientific papers, totaling upward of 200, are listed in Bashford Dean, *A Bibliography of Fishes* (1916–23), vol. I and supplements.] G. S. M.

**EILERS, FREDERIC ANTON** (Jan. 14, 1839–Apr. 22, 1917), metallurgist, was born at Laufenselden, Nassau, Germany, the son of E. J. A. Frederic and Elizabeth Eilers. His father was chief forester of Nassau. Following the gymnasium, Eilers attended the mining school at Clausthal and the University of Göttingen. He came to America in 1859, his first engagement being with Adelberg & Raymond, a firm of mining engineers. From 1866 to 1869 he operated a copper smelter in Carroll County, Va. In 1869 he was appointed a federal deputy commissioner of mining statistics, which position he occupied for seven years, making extensive journeys of investigation throughout the Rocky Mountain and Pacific Slope region in collaboration with the commissioner, Rossiter W. Raymond [*q.v.*]. In those days of inadequate transportation facilities and unsettled condition of the country, such journeys demanded the greatest resourcefulness and involved no little personal danger. At the conclusion of this engagement, Eilers chose the Salt Lake Valley, Utah, as his field of activity, and acquired a part ownership in the Germania Smelter.

From the very first he had recognized the necessity of a more adequate system of metallurgical accounting, that metal losses and operating costs be more accurately known. The metal-

lurgical management of the Germania enabled him to put into practise such systematic accounting and chemical control of furnace operation as he had already warmly advocated in his writing. He was a leader among those who "changed lead smelting from a rule-of-thumb affair to an exact science by working out the theory and practise of slag formation on an accurate chemical basis" (*Engineering and Mining Journal,* Apr. 28, 1917). The present-day practise, however, with so largely pretreated charge, precludes such meticulous regulation. He moved to Leadville, Colo., in 1879, with Gustav Billing building what is now the Arkansas Valley plant, and in 1883 made another move, building at Pueblo, Colo., the Eilers Smelter, which became a veritable metallurgical training school and produced a number of the best-known metallurgists of the United States. Eilers was unquestionably the dean of American lead-silver smelting, the recognized leader in metallurgical theory of that group of well-known pioneers who, throughout Nevada, Utah, and Colorado, developed American lead, silver, and copper smelting so effectively. He also showed ability as a mechanical engineer, devising improvements in furnace and smelter design and construction. With the purchase of the Eilers plant by the American Smelting & Refining Company, he became metallurgical head of that organization, which post he retained until his retirement from active work.

In 1863, four years after arriving in America, he had married Elizabeth Emrich; one son, Karl Eilers, became distinguished as a metallurgist. Notwithstanding his undoubted Americanism, Anton Eilers constantly gave evidence of devotion to his native land, by the practise, for example, of using German at table in the smelter mess at his Colorado plant, and of having served a menu reminiscent of the Fatherland. The many friendships which he made throughout his eventful career were shared by his wife and children and his home was one of greatest charm. His own death was the first break in his large and notably happy family.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1916–17; *Metallurgical and Chemical Engineering,* May 1, 1917; *N. Y. Times,* Apr. 23, 1917; private memoir in possession of the family.] R. C. C.

**EIMBECK, WILLIAM** (Jan. 29, 1841–Mar. 27, 1909), geodetic engineer, was born in Brunswick, Germany, the third son of Frederick and Henrietta Eimbeck. He attended public and private schools in his native city and later the Polytechnical and Agricultural College, but considered himself as largely self-educated. In 1857 he came to the United States. Landing in New Orleans, and proceeding to St. Louis, he became a draftsman with Palm & Roberson, locomotive builders. In 1860 he took up civil engineering and for the next nine years he assisted in various municipal and county engineering projects in and about St. Louis. For the last two years of this period he also served as professor of engineering and practical astronomy at Washington University.

In 1869 he assisted, as one of a group of voluntary observers organized by the Coast and Geodetic Survey, in observing the solar eclipse of August of that year. His work in this connection led to his selection as an observer in the party which the superintendent of the Coast Survey took to southern Europe to observe the total solar eclipse of December 1870. The following year he was appointed to the engineering force of the Coast Survey; and here for thirty-five years he was engaged in various phases of geodetic field work, but principally in triangulation, in which branch he made his principal contributions. After various assignments which took him into a number of different eastern and western states, and during which he secured a thorough command of geodetic operations, he was assigned, in 1878, to begin the eastward extension of the primary scheme of triangulation which was to follow approximately the 39th parallel of latitude. Beginning in Nevada he carried this work forward for eighteen years to a connection with another party on the Continental Divide. The region traversed necessitated the carrying of supplies and instruments over hundreds of miles of desert and waste, and included observations on mountain peaks up to 14,000 feet in elevation. On one occasion a remarkably long line of triangulation was observed, a distance between two mountains of 183 miles. The successful execution of this work called for high qualities of leadership and resourcefulness, in addition to the technical qualifications of the geodetic engineer. In 1885, while engaged on the triangulation of the 39th parallel, Eimbeck submitted to the superintendent of the Coast Survey plans and specifications for a new type of base-measuring apparatus. This was later constructed and became known as the duplex base apparatus; and in 1896, along the eastern shore of Great Salt Lake, Eimbeck measured a base of about seven miles in length with this apparatus, the probable error of which was derived as one part in 1,600,000. A description of the duplex base apparatus and the report on the measurement of the Salt Lake base line are given in the *Report* of the superintendent of the Coast and Geodetic Survey for 1897.

A bachelor all his life, Eimbeck was a member

of a number of scientific societies and one of the founders of the Cosmos Club in Washington. A fine figure and of robust health for the greater part of his active life, the onset of Bright's disease compelled him to resign from the Survey in 1906. Three years later he died, in Washington, from a stroke of paralysis and was buried at New Haven, Mo., where members of his family lived.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Science*, July 9, 1909; *Jour. Asso. of Engineering Soc.*, July 1909; Coast and Geodetic Survey records.] H. A. M.

**EINHORN, DAVID** (Nov. 10, 1809–Nov. 2, 1879), rabbi, son of Maier and Karoline Einhorn, was born in Dispeck, Bavaria. He received a traditionally intensive Jewish education in the school of the village of his birth and in the Talmudic Academy of Fürth. After an abrupt plunge from this circumscribed, compact, and medieval scholastic world into the comparative liberalism of the Universities of Erlangen, Würzburg, and Munich, he emerged a religious radical. For ten years his frankly avowed views debarred him from an appointment as rabbi in Germany. When he was appointed rabbi in 1842, he found himself in constant opposition to the opinions and practises of the orthodox majority of his flock. This led in 1851 to his leaving Germany for Pesth, Hungary. There a reactionary government, confusing religious with political liberalism, closed his temple two months after he had taken office.

There being little prospect in Europe for a rabbi of his radical religious ideas, he turned his eyes to the United States. After four years of waiting, during which he published his system of Jewish theology, *Das Prinzip des Mosaismus und dessen Verhaeltnis zum Heidenthum und Rabbinischen Judenthum* (Leipzig, 1854), he sailed for America in 1855, to become the religious leader of the Har Sinai Synagogue in Baltimore. There his unwavering moral courage and loyalty to the truth as he saw it were notably shown in his attacks on slavery. Though these were launched in German, a language which he regarded as the official tongue of reform Judaism in America, they drew down on him the angry resentment of some of his fellow citizens, and a few nights after Apr. 19, 1861, the night of the Baltimore riot, he had to flee the city under guard to avoid attack from the mob. His congregation would have welcomed him back on condition that he did not refer in the pulpit to the subject of slavery, but he refused all compromise and settled in Philadelphia, where he was soon elected rabbi of Keneseth Israel Congregation. His stand against slavery led to his election as an honorary member of the Union League Club of Philadelphia. In 1866 he was called to New



York, as minister of Congregation Adath Jeshurun, merged in 1874 with an orthodox congregation under the new name of Congregation Beth El, where he officiated until he retired from active service in July 1879. Four months later he died.

His literary output in America was considerable. In 1856 he founded *Sinai*, a monthly German magazine devoted to reform Judaism. He issued this for seven years until, as he wrote, "it died in the battle against slavery." Through this organ he waged vigorous controversy with some of his colleagues, both orthodox and reform. In 1856 he published *Olath Tamid*, a reform modification of the traditional Jewish prayer book, with a German translation. This subsequently became the basis of the *Union Prayer Book*, the official liturgy of reform Judaism in America. Ten years later, in Philadelphia, he published *Ner Tamid, Die Lehre des Judenthums dargestellt für Schule und Haus*. A collected volume of his sermons was published in 1880 by his son-in-law, Rabbi Kaufmann Kohler. (In 1844 Einhorn married Julie Henrietta Ochs, of a prominent family in Kreuznach.) He was a leading figure at the Philadelphia Conference of Reform Rabbis in 1869 and at several Jewish Reform conferences in Germany.

As his writings consistently show, he was essentially a theologian, forthright and unyielding in the opinions which he expressed with ardent eloquence. His appreciation of Judaism was rationalizing rather than romantic, universal rather than national. As with most of the other early leaders of reform Judaism in America, who were born and trained in Germany, his religious revolt reflected the liberal politico-cultural ideology current in the newly awakening Germany of the early nineteenth century. By his forceful application of this ideology in the domain of Judaism, David Einhorn became the leading theologian of the reform Judaism of his generation in the United States.

[Besides Einhorn's own works mentioned above, see *David Einhorn Memorial Volume* (1911), by Kaufmann Kohler, containing a biography by Kohler, reprinted from the *Year Book of the Central Conference of Am. Rabbis*, XIX (1909), 215–70, and a memorial oration by Emil G. Hirsch; *Pubs. of the Am. Jewish Hist. Soc.*, No. 5 (1897), 147–52; Adolf Brüll, *Dr. David Einhorn und seine Bedeutung für das Judentum* (Frankfurt, 1882); David Philipson, *The Reform Movement in Judaism* (1907); Jacob Voorsanger, *The Chronicles of Emanu-El* (1900); Jos. Leiser, *Am. Judaism* (1925); F. de Sola Mendes, "America, Judaism" in *Jewish Encyc.* (1901), vol. I.] D. de S. P.

**ELBERT, SAMUEL** (1740–Nov. 1, 1788), Revolutionary soldier, governor of Georgia, was born in Prince William Parish, S. C., the son of a Baptist clergyman. Deprived of both parents

in his early youth, he emigrated to Georgia, prospered exceedingly as a merchant and Indian trader, and attained position and influence in Savannah. At the outbreak of the Revolution he was among the Sons of Liberty and a member of the first Georgia Council of Safety (June 1775). A delegate to the Provincial Congress that met at Savannah in July, he was elected by that body to the Council of Safety, which had charge of public affairs, and was a member of the committee on militia and of the committee appointed to supply the province with arms and ammunition. He then entered the Continental service as lieutenant-colonel (January 1776) and a few months later was promoted to colonel. In the spring of 1777 he commanded the Continental troops in the abortive expedition against East Florida planned by Button Gwinnett [*q.v.*], president and commander-in-chief of Georgia. Elbert landed on Amelia Island, but finding the enemy prepared and a surprise attack impossible, the heat intense, and his stock of provisions low, he made no attempt to conquer the mainland. His presence, however, so frightened Patrick Tonyn, Royal Governor of East Florida, that he summoned the Creeks and sought to dispatch Cherokees into South Carolina or Georgia. Returning to Savannah, Elbert succeeded to the command of the Continental forces in Georgia after the departure of Brig.-Gen. Lachlan McIntosh [*q.v.*] for Washington's headquarters. Threatened with an invasion of Georgia by Brig.-Gen. Augustin Prevost, Maj.-Gen. Robert Howe [*q.v.*] moved southward, intending to strike a blow against East Florida. At Frederica (Apr. 19, 1778), with 300 men and three galleys, Elbert captured the brigantine *Hinchenbrooke,* the sloop *Rebecca,* and a prize brig. While the Howe expedition failed, it had the merit of retarding Prevost's efforts. In the fall of 1778 Col. Archibald Campbell arrived from New York intending to attack Savannah while Prevost marched northward from Florida to join him. Realizing that Girardeau's Bluff (now Brewton Hill) was the key to Savannah, Elbert urged that it be occupied in force. Howe's refusal was followed by the disastrous battle of Dec. 29, 1778. Sunbury having fallen and southern Georgia being occupied by the British, Elbert was unable to assemble sufficient troops to offer effective resistance to Campbell's march upon Augusta. Joining Brig.-Gen. John Ashe [*q.v.*], he commanded the left wing in the battle at Briar Creek, Mar. 3, 1779. The militia fled, but Elbert and his Continental troops fought so bravely that Lieut.-Col. J. M. Prevost was compelled to order up reserves. He then captured Elbert and his remaining troops. Elbert was exchanged in June 1781, commanded a brigade during the siege of Yorktown, and was brevetted brigadier-general (1783). He was one of the commissioners elected (Jan. 22, 1783) to negotiate with the Creeks and Cherokees and later declined an election to the Continental Congress (1784). Elected governor of Georgia in July 1785, he at once took firm measures to put down the band of freebooters inhabiting the district between the St. Mary and Satilla rivers and sought to pacify the Indians on the northern frontier, who were being stirred up by "disaffected and mercenary persons." He was afterward sheriff of Chatham County, vice-president of the Society of the Cincinnati, and Grand Master of the Masonic order in Georgia. He died at Savannah survived by his wife, Elizabeth (Rae) Elbert, and six children.

[Elbert's Order Book, 1776–78, and Letter-Book, 1785, printed in *Colls. of the Ga. Hist. Soc.*, vol. V (1901–02); Jos. Johnson, *Traditions and Reminiscences, Chiefly of the Am. Revolution in the South* (Charleston, 1851) and in the *Hist. Mag.*, Jan. 1868; Chas. C. Jones, Jr., *Life and Service of the Hon. Maj.-Gen. Samuel Elbert of Ga.* (1887) reprinted in *Mag. of Hist. Extra No. 13* (1911); *Revolutionary Records of the State of Ga.* (1908); Lewis W. G. Butler, *Annals of the King's Royal Rifle Corps,* vol. I (London, 1913); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. of Officers of the Continental Army* (1893); Wm. H. Siebert, *Loyalists in East Fla.* (Pubs. of the Fla. State Hist. Soc. No. 9, 1929); Mrs. Peter W. Meldrim, *Some Early Epitaphs in Ga.* (1924); *Georgia Gazette* (Savannah), Nov. 6, 1788; *Georgia State Gazette* (Augusta), Nov. 8, 1788.]

F. E. R.



**ELDER, SAMUEL JAMES** (Jan. 4, 1850–Jan. 22, 1918), lawyer, was born in Hope, R. I., the son of James Elder, a sea-captain of Baltimore who was killed when his only child was nine months old. The mother, Deborah Dunbar Keen of Camden, Me., went to Lawrence, Mass., where she opened a boarding house. Samuel's early education was in the schools of Lawrence. He graduated from Yale in 1873 and began reading law in the office of Morse & Hardy, Boston, attending some lectures at the Boston Law School. Admitted to the Massachusetts bar in June 1875, he at once opened his own office. He married, May 10, 1876, Lilla Thomas of Hastings-on-Hudson. Early struggle deepened his native instinct for stern effort, yet he was essentially Latin in temperament, buoyantly tolerant, gifted in friendship.

Success in the law came rapidly. He became a national authority in copyright law and was active in the campaign for international copyright, drafting part of the Act of 1891. He wrote a widely read monograph, *Our Archaic Copyright Laws* (1903), and contributed substantially to the revision of domestic copyright laws in 1909. His great ability lay in the trial of jury

cases. He had a rare gift for eliciting information from friendly or reluctant witnesses, perceiving the drift of a jury's mind, revealing the drama of fact. He became a partner with John H. Hardy, later a judge of the superior court of Massachusetts, and Thomas W. Proctor, as Hardy, Elder & Proctor, and in the nineties he formed the firm of Elder, Wait & Whitman. In 1901 he defended Charles R. Eastman, Harvard instructor accused of murder. Acquittal was won in the face of the State's damaging evidence and determination to convict. Not a Christian Scientist, he conducted important litigation for Mary Baker Eddy, advising her in copyright matters and successfully defending her in the Woodbury libel suit. He assisted in sustaining the trust fund created for the church in her will against the attack of her son. In *People* vs. *Cole*, a test case brought by the New York Medical Society against a Christian Science practitioner, he made an argument before the New York court of appeals which reversed the conviction sustained by two courts below.

In 1910 Elder appeared at The Hague with Elihu Root and others as counsel for the United States in the North Atlantic Fisheries Arbitration with Great Britain. He argued three of seven questions, winning a decision in all three. When Taft proposed his Arbitration Treaties, Elder threw his energies into the movement for arbitration. In May 1914, he was elected president of the Massachusetts Peace Society and in 1915, member of the Executive Committee of the League to Enforce Peace. Always a Republican, he served one term in the Massachusetts House, was elected Taft delegate to Chicago in 1908, campaigned for Taft in 1912, and was presiding officer at the Taft banquet in New York after Wilson's election. Effective as a public speaker in important causes, "Sam Elder" was also sought as master raconteur of dialect stories, famous for his wit, contagious laughter, and spontaneous impersonations. His hobbies were the sea and college sports. In his profession he was recognized as a national authority on copyright and as a leader of the Massachusetts bar; as a man he was gifted with the rare power to raise all about him to their highest level of charm and achievement.

[*Proceedings of the Bar of the City of Boston and the Supreme Judicial Court of the Commonwealth of Mass., Feb. 8, 1919; The Life of Samuel J. Elder* (1925), by Margaret M. Elder with chapters by Edmund A. Whitman and Wm. Cushing Wait; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 22, 1918.] W.C.W.

**ELDER, SUSAN BLANCHARD** (Apr. 19, 1835–Nov. 3, 1923), author, daughter of Albert Gallatin and Susan (Thompson) Blanchard, was born at Fort Jessup, Sabine Parish, La. Her father, a graduate of West Point and a captain in the United States army, was stationed at Fort Jessup, a frontier post against the Indians on the Texas border. He later served through the Mexican War, and in the Civil War became a brigadier-general in the Confederate army. Her mother, a native of Massachusetts, died when the daughter was very young. After spending several years in the North with relatives, Susan Blanchard returned to Louisiana and attended the Girls' High School of New Orleans and St. Michael's Convent of the Sacred Heart, St. James Parish. At sixteen she was writing, under the name "Hermine," stories and poems for newspapers. In 1855 she married Charles D. Elder of Baltimore, a brother of Rev. William H. Elder [*q.v.*], Archbishop of Cincinnati. A few years later the Civil War broke, and upon the capture of New Orleans, the Elders took refuge in Selma, Ala., where they turned their home into a Confederate hospital. After Lee's surrender they returned to New Orleans and Susan Elder became a teacher of natural science and mathematics at the Picard Institute and the New Orleans High School. She was on the editorial staff of the *Morning Star* and contributed to various Roman Catholic journals. Her writings include historical and literary criticisms, biographies, stories, poems, and dramas written especially for presentation in Roman Catholic colleges. Her chief published volumes are *James the Second* (1874); *Savonarola* (1875); *Ellen Fitzgerald* (1876), a novel; *The Leos of the Papacy* (1879); *Elder Flowers* (1912), a collection of poems; *Character Glimpses of the Most Reverend William Henry Elder, D.D.* (1911), anonymous; *The Life of Abbé Adrien Rouquette* (1913), a biography of the poet, priest, and missionary of the Louisiana Choctaw Indians; and *A Mosaic in Blue and Gray* (1914). The two predominant motives in the author's life, aside from her domestic affections, were her devotion to the cause of the South and her devotion to the Roman Catholic Church, to which she was a convert early in life. Her prose works show careful study and, in the case of the biographies of her brother-in-law and the Abbé Rouquette, the use of original material. Her one novel was little read outside the South. Her verse, which includes domestic, religious, and patriotic subjects, has deep, usually melancholy, feeling, but little originality, and the expression is often stilted. Noteworthy personal poems are "My Bridal Veil," "The Mother's Round," and "Home," which celebrates her fiftieth wedding anniversary. "Ash Wednesday" and "Palm Sun-

day" are religious poems of some merit. Probably her best poems are those which reflect the life and emotions of the old South, such as "Mammy's Grieving" and "The Passing of Mammy." Susan Elder was a serious woman to whom life seemed full of struggle and sorrow. Her rather square face, with strong chin, high forehead, and deep-set thoughtful eyes, was sad, but neither severe nor bitter. Upon the death of her husband in 1890, she long continued to live in New Orleans, but in her last years made her home with her only surviving child, a daughter, at whose home in Cincinnati she died.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Woman's Who's Who of America*, 1914–15; J. W. Davidson, *The Living Writers of the South* (1869); Mary T. Tardy, ed., *The Living Female Writers of the South* (1872); *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Nov. 4, 1923.] S. G. B.

**ELDER, WILLIAM** (July 23, 1806–Apr. 5, 1885), physician and writer, was born in Somerset, Pa., the son of William Gore and Magdalen (Armstrong) Elder. He spent his boyhood in Somerset and on his father's farm and attended the country schools. When he was about twenty he began the study of medicine under Dr. Deane of Chambersburg, Pa., and later became assistant to Dr. Whiteside in Juniata County. He attended lectures at Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, and in 1833 established himself in practise at Oakland Mills in Juniata County. On Dec. 24 of that year he married Sara Maclean. He acquired a local reputation as a speaker on anti-Masonry and Colonization and on subjects in the field of "mental and moral philosophy." In 1838 he settled in Pittsburgh and the following year was elected recorder of deeds of Allegheny County on the Whig–Anti-Masonic ticket. He studied law, was admitted to the bar at Bedford, Pa., on Aug. 24, 1842, and in the same year commenced a legal practise in Pittsburgh, in partnership with John F. Beaver. After the Pittsburgh fire of 1845 he moved to Philadelphia, where for a number of years he was occupied with lecturing and writing, first on abolition, then on questions of finance, commerce, taxation, and public wealth. He was in charge of the *Liberty Herald* in 1847 and in 1848 wrote much for *The Republic*, a Free-Soil campaign paper. During this period he also contributed papers, signed "Senior," on political science and finance, to the *National Era* of Washington, and a series, "Familiar Life in Pennsylvania," to the Philadelphia *Press*. His first books were *Periscopics* (1854)—a volume of familiar essays, sometimes not more than a paragraph in length, dealing in an intimate way with matters of religion, politics, economics, philosophy, and literature, gathered from the periodicals for which he had been writing for several years past—and *The Enchanted Beauty* (1855), chiefly a reprint of *Periscopics*. In response to the request of the family of the explorer, he brought out a laudatory but somewhat lifeless *Biography of Elisha Kent Kane* in 1857. Henceforth his work was confined to questions of economic interest. From 1861 to 1866 he was a statistician in the Treasury Department at Washington. In 1863 his *Debts and Resources of the United States* was distributed as one of the pamphlet publications of the Union League of Philadelphia; in 1865 his paper, *How our National Debt can be Paid*, was issued by Jay Cooke as part of his campaign to sell government securities. After the war Elder returned to Philadelphia, where he resided from 1866 to 1873. His most important work, *Questions of the Day: Economic and Social* (Philadelphia, 1871), was intended as "political economy for popular perusal." From it extracts were republished the same year, as *A Short History of a Long Fight: Free Trade and Protection*. The burden of the work is to disprove the tenets of the classical economists of rent, international trade, and population. He was a faithful disciple of Henry C. Carey, as well as a devoted personal friend. In 1880 he read before the Historical Society of Pennsylvania a *Memoir of Henry Carey*, which not only sketched the facts of Carey's life, but surveyed economic writing to that time, in order to determine Carey's place in the hierarchy of economists. Elder was thoroughly imbued with the protectionist doctrines prevalent in Pennsylvania at the time and his later pamphlets practically all relate to that subject. The last twelve years of his life were spent in Washington, as a clerk in the Comptroller's Office in the Treasury Department, where he worked until a short time before his death. The Philadelphia *Public Ledger* (Apr. 6, 1885) contained the following characterization: "A man of brilliant talents, which were veiled from the public eye in his later days by his employment as a statistician in the Treasury Department at Washington, . . . he flourished in the days of the antislavery agitation, being a fervid friend of free soil, free speech, and free men." There might well have been added, "but not of free trade."

[See J. W. Forney in *Progress* (Phila.), Jan. 25, 1879; *Bull. Am. Iron and Steel Asso.* (Phila.), May 15, 1898, repr. from *Home Market Bull.* (Boston), May 1, 1898; obituary in *Evening Critic* (Washington, D. C.), Apr. 7, 1885. The *Hist. Soc. of Pa.* possesses several letters, in MS., and a portrait. Certain information has been supplied by Elder's grand-daughter, Miss Katharine H. Ringwalt of Phila., through the courtesy of Mrs. Fayette B. Dow.] E. D.

**ELDER, WILLIAM HENRY** (Mar. 22, 1819–Oct. 31, 1904), Roman Catholic prelate, was born in Baltimore, Md., the ninth child of Basil Spalding and Elizabeth Miles (Snowden) Elder. He received his early education in a Catholic private school in Baltimore and in 1831 entered Mount St. Mary's College, Emmitsburg, Md., then presided over by Rev. John Baptist Purcell whom he afterward succeeded as archbishop of Cincinnati. In 1837 he graduated from this institution and in the fall of the same year entered Mount St. Mary's Theological Seminary. In 1842 he was sent to Rome to complete his theological training in the College of the Propaganda, where he received his degree of doctor of divinity. On Mar. 29, 1846, he was ordained priest in the chapel of that institution, the officiating prelate being Msgr. Brunelli. Elder then returned to his alma mater as professor of theology and remained there for eleven years.

On Mar. 3, 1857, he was consecrated bishop of Natchez by Archbishop Kenrick. For twenty-three years he remained in charge of that see, endearing himself to the people of Mississippi by his deep devotion, his dauntless courage, and his manifold acts of charity, which were frequently performed at great personal risk. During the Civil War he visited the camps and battlefields, rendering spiritual and material aid alike to friend and foe. In 1864 the Federal post commandant at Natchez directed him to use a form of prayer for the president of the United States in the churches of his diocese. Deeming this an infringement of religious liberty and refusing to allow any but his ecclesiastical superiors to dictate his episcopal functions, he declined to obey. He was arrested, tried, and convicted; but the decision of the military court was overruled in Washington. In 1878 his diocese was swept by yellow fever, and his acts of mercy during the epidemic won for him universal commendation.

On Jan. 30, 1880, he was transferred to the titular See of Avara and made coadjutor with the right of succession to Archbishop Purcell of Cincinnati, whom he succeeded July 4, 1883. He assumed his episcopal duties when the financial affairs of the diocese were in a chaotic condition. By his prudence and wisdom order was restored; the diocese was built up, much property and several churches were added; new seminaries were founded and old ones were reopened; charitable institutions were placed upon a sound footing; and the number of the faithful increased. He was devotedly attached to his parishioners. "I want to be near my children always," he said when refusing the offers of more comfortable quarters (*Cincinnati Times Star*, Nov. 2, 1904). His personal modesty, his universal charity, his great piety and his sincere catholicity gained him the love and respect of all creeds and denominations.



[J. G. Shea, *Hist. of the Cath. Church in the U. S.* (1892); J. H. Lamott, *Hist. of the Archdiocese of Cincinnati* (1921); *Cath. Encyc.*, V, 373; *Character-Glimpses of Most Rev. Wm. Henry Elder, D.D.* (1911); *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Nov. 1, 1904; and *Cath. Telegraph*, Nov. 3, 1904.] R.C.M.

**ELDRIDGE, SHALOR WINCHELL** (Aug. 29, 1816–Jan. 16, 1899), Kansas leader and business man, was born at West Springfield, Mass., the son of Lyman Eldridge, a mechanic, and his wife, Phœbe Winchell. He engaged in business, chiefly as a railroad contractor, at Southampton, Mass., where in 1839 he married Mary Norton. In 1855 he undertook the management of the Gillis House in Kansas City, Mo., which the New England Emigrant Aid Company had bought as headquarters for their emigrants to Kansas Territory. On account of violent opposition to the Aid Company, Eldridge bought the hotel, and for a time he was able to maintain friendly relations with the local public. While in Kansas City he aided the Free-State party in Lawrence in many ways. Early in 1856 he leased the Free State Hotel, built by the Emigrant Aid Company in Lawrence, and also established the first stage lines from Kansas City to Lawrence and Topeka and from Kansas City to Leavenworth and other points. Later in that year the pro-slavery interests secured an indictment under the federal judge against the hotel and two anti-slavery newspapers, recommending their abatement as nuisances, and on May 21 the hotel, the offices of the *Kansas Free State* and the *Herald of Freedom*, and the home of Gov. Robinson were destroyed by a mob. Eldridge was sent to Washington by a committee of citizens to protest to President Pierce against these outrages and he rendered notable service in securing the appointment of John W. Geary as territorial governor of Kansas. Although heretofore a Democrat, he now joined the Kansas delegation at the Republican National Convention in Philadelphia.

On July 9, 1856, he attended the National Convention of the Friends of Kansas in Buffalo, and was appointed the Kansas member of the National Committee, known as the Hyatt Committee. James H. Lane [*q.v.*] had been visiting Northern cities enlisting recruits for the Free-State party in Kansas. As Free-State men had been stopped in Missouri, these recruits were sent across Iowa. Starting without adequate equipment, they became disorganized and were stranded on the way. Eldridge was sent by the National Committee to take charge of them and

succeeded in leading them to their destination in safety. Later, with Robert Morrow, he was sent to Chicago to bring back another party of 250 recruits. Upon their arrival in Kansas they were disarmed by Gov. Geary, who by this time had established order in the territory. When the Free-State party captured the territorial legislature, Eldridge induced Gov. Stanton to call a special session, which undoubtedly averted a renewal of hostilities. The legislature submitted the entire Lecompton constitution to popular vote, took control of the militia, gave the command to Lane, and made Eldridge quartermaster-general.

When the Emigrant Aid Company decided not to rebuild the Free State Hotel, Eldridge bought the site and built the Eldridge House. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he enlisted in the 2nd Kansas, was made quartermaster, and served in the Missouri campaign until the regiment was mustered out five months later. In 1863 he was made an army paymaster and served until his resignation a year later. While he was absent in this service, his hotel was destroyed in the sack of Lawrence by Quantrill, Aug. 21, 1863. After the Civil War he became a building contractor, rebuilt the Eldridge House in Lawrence, which he sold soon afterward, built hotels in other cities, and Fraser Hall at the State University. When the crisis of 1873 brought building to a halt, he engaged in mining in Colorado and Arkansas. In these operations he made a fortune which he later lost. His first wife died on Mar. 5, 1869, and in 1871 he married Caroline Tobey of Dundee, N. Y., who survived him. His declining years were spent in retirement at his home in Lawrence. Toward their close, in collaboration with R. G. Elliott, former editor of the *Kansas Free State*, he wrote his "Recollections of Early Days in Kansas."

[Eldridge's "Recollections" in *Kans. State Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. II (1920); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (1903); *Kansas City Star*, Jan. 16, 1899.] F.H.H.

**ELIOT, CHARLES** (Nov. 1, 1859–Mar. 25, 1897), landscape architect, author, son of Charles William Eliot [*q.v.*], president of Harvard University, and Ellen Derby (Peabody) Eliot, was born in Cambridge, Mass. His early education was received at home and in Europe, where the family spent nearly three of his first ten years. Later he attended school in Cambridge. Among his ancestors were men and women of education, wealth, and position, able to give their children every advantage. Charles early developed a talent for sketching, a sense of locality, a fondness for maps, and an appreciation of scenery—all of which later combined to determine his career. He entered Harvard University in 1878, spending vacations in yachting and camping, and deriving especial benefit from the Champlain Society, a club-camp, which he organized for scientific study on Mt. Desert Island, Me. This experience, which helped him to overcome some of his natural diffidence, brought out his qualities of leadership, organizing power, and persistence, which were notable throughout his professional work. On receiving his B.A. degree from Harvard in 1882, he sought a field in which his natural tastes would find scope and was drawn to landscape architecture, then known in Boston largely through the work of Frederick Law Olmsted [*q.v.*]. Although no school in the country then offered preparation for this profession, several fundamental subjects were taught at the Bussey Institution, a branch of Harvard. There Eliot studied until, in April 1883, he was given the opportunity of an apprenticeship in Olmsted's office, just established in Brookline.

In November 1885, Eliot sailed for a year's study in Europe, visiting England, France, Italy, Germany, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, and Russia. He kept a record of his observations on gardens, parks, and scenery, which forms the beginning of the series of professional writings preserved in *Charles Eliot, Landscape Architect* (*post*). On his return to Boston, he set up in independent practise as a landscape architect (December 1886), and met with increasing recognition and success. Some examples of his early work are the Longfellow Memorial and subdivision of the Norton estate in Cambridge, and White Park, Concord, N. H.

On Nov. 28, 1888, he married Mary Yale Pitkin of Philadelphia. They lived first in Cambridge with President Eliot, then later moved to Brookline. Their family life, although abbreviated by Eliot's untimely death, was an exceptionally happy background for the brilliant professional contribution which he made in scarcely over a decade of practise.

Although he had a substantial amount and variety of work for private individuals and institutions, his main service was directly to the public through his writings for the press, and more especially through his conception and realization of a system of metropolitan park reservations for Greater Boston. He understood and voiced the need for the public acquisition of scenic regions, and his endeavors led to the incorporation in Massachusetts of the Trustees of Public Reservations, composed of certain leading members of the Appalachian Mountain Club and other public-spirited citizens, who proceeded

to acquire several threatened areas. Backed by this new organization, Eliot succeeded in securing state legislation establishing the Metropolitan Park Commission (1892), to which he became professional adviser, and in connection with the selection and development of its holdings, formulated principles of park and reservation planning which have exerted a profound influence throughout the country.

In March 1893, at Olmsted's urgent invitation, he joined the Olmsted firm (which then became Olmsted, Olmsted & Eliot), and for four years was concerned with large public and private enterprises in many parts of the United States, still keeping his major interest in the development of the Boston metropolitan parks. Returning from the Hartford parks early in 1897, he died suddenly of cerebro-spinal meningitis, thus cutting off a future of almost unlimited promise. His kindly, earnest uprightness, his family and social connections, his persuasiveness as a public speaker, and his literary and artistic abilities, had placed him in the forefront of a young profession, which he joined with his master, Olmsted, in defining and establishing. The course in landscape architecture at Harvard University, founded in 1900, preserves fitting memorials to him in the Charles Eliot Professorship, the Charles Eliot Travelling Fellowship, and the Charles Eliot collection of books.

[Eliot's principal writings, originally contained in *Garden and Forest*, of the Arnold Arboretum, and his official reports, together with his journals and letters to clients, were collected and edited by President Eliot as a part of the biographical work *Charles Eliot, Landscape Architect* (1902). See also *Class of 1882, Harvard Coll.*, 1882–1907; *Boston Herald*, Mar. 26, 1897.]

T.K.H.

**ELIOT, CHARLES WILLIAM** (Mar. 20, 1834–Aug. 22, 1926), president of Harvard, and in his day the most influential leader in the educational activities of the country, was the only son of Samuel Atkins [*q.v.*] and Mary (Lyman) Eliot. Through his father he was descended from Andrew Eliot who came from Somersetshire, England, to Beverly, Mass., about 1668. His Eliot ancestors were prominently identified with the cultural, political, and educational development of New England, and were closely associated with Harvard. The father, Samuel A. Eliot, was a graduate of the College and of the Divinity School, and afterwards treasurer and historian of the College. He was prominent in the civic affairs of Boston, became mayor of the city in 1837, was a member of both branches of the state legislature, and was elected to Congress in 1850. Mary Lyman, wife of Samuel A. Eliot, came of similar

Eliot

stock, her father being a leading merchant of Boston, her brother, Theodore Lyman, Jr. [*q.v.*], a well-known philanthropist, and mayor of Boston.

Charles William Eliot was born in Boston, and received his secondary education under the rigorous, coercive methods then employed at the Boston Latin School. His early religious influences, on the other hand, were of the more emancipating sort then emanating from King's Chapel, of which his father was warden and choir-master, and where, at the beginning of the century James Freeman had launched the liberal movement which afterwards developed into Unitarianism. The young Charles entered Harvard in 1849, at the age of fifteen, when the college under the presidencies of Jared Sparks and James Walker was entering upon a period of reaction against the relatively progressive policies of Josiah Quincy. Eliot interested himself in English, and especially in mathematics and science; profiting by the stimulating atmosphere created by Benjaman Peirce, Louis Agassiz, Asa Gray, Joseph Lovering, Jeffries Wyman, and Josiah Parsons Cooke, and having under Cooke the then unique experience for an undergraduate of laboratory and field work in chemistry and mineralogy.

Graduating in 1853 second in his class of eighty-eight, he became tutor in mathematics at Harvard in 1854, and four years later assistant professor of mathematics and chemistry. His teaching brought him into contact with the Medical and Lawrence Scientific schools as well as the college; and gave him the opportunity of introducing the first written examination at Harvard, of emphasizing laboratory exercises, and of offering on a small scale elective as well as compulsory instruction. In 1858 he married Ellen Derby Peabody, daughter of the Rev. Ephraim Peabody, minister of King's Chapel. Failing to secure promotion upon the expiration in 1863 of his five years' term as assistant professor, he severed his connection with Harvard and even considered the abandonment of the teaching profession. Gov. Andrew offered him an appointment as lieutenant-colonel of cavalry in the forces which Massachusetts was mobilizing for the armies of the North; but in the previous year his father had died after suffering severe financial reverses, and the ensuing family responsibilities together with his defective eye-sight compelled him to decline. He sailed for Europe to pursue his studies, and while abroad was appointed to a professorship of chemistry at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology where he resumed his teaching in September 1865.

During these years of sojourn abroad, and

during a second similar trip taken in 1867, Eliot embraced the opportunity of making a first-hand study of European education. These observations, together with his own personal and professional experiences, inspired two articles on "The New Education: Its Organization," which appeared in the *Atlantic Monthly* early in 1869 and attracted wide attention. His broad grasp of contemporary educational problems commended their author to the Harvard Corporation, who were called upon at this time to select a successor to President Thomas Hill. Eliot's election, on Mar. 12, 1869, was first disapproved by the Board of Overseers, and afterwards, on May 19, confirmed by a divided vote. He was inaugurated on Oct. 19, 1869.

Eliot's Harvard presidency marked a new era and not merely a new administration. The country at large was entering upon the period of enterprise and expansion which followed the conclusion of the Civil War. A more liberal and progressive spirit had already begun to appear at Harvard in Hill's administration, and many members of the faculties and governing boards were ready and eager for change. There was a wide-spread feeling that reforms were needed, and Eliot was elected with the full consciousness that he would bring them to pass. This promise of innovation was the principal cause both of his support and of the resistance which he encountered. Although the twenty-second Harvard president, he was only the third layman elected to that office; he was primarily an administrator, rather than a scholar or teacher; by innate capacity, as well as by circumstance and opportunity, he was marked out for leadership.

When Eliot entered upon his term of office in the autumn of 1869 the University consisted of Harvard College, together with Divinity, Law, Medical, Dental and Scientific Schools, having a total enrolment of approximately 1,000 students and 60 teachers. Forty years later, at the close of his administration, the University contained in addition to the above, Graduate Schools of Arts and Sciences, Applied Science and Business Administration, and had a total enrolment of approximately 4,000 students (exclusive of the Summer School) and 600 teachers. The increased ratio of teachers to students was notable, and was reflected in the immeasurable increase of the volume and diversity of instruction. The income-bearing funds of the University amounted to two and one-quarter millions of dollars in 1868–69, and to over twenty millions in 1908–09. There was a corresponding, if not greater, increase in the value of the plant.

Although the major professional schools had existed for many years, the University as a whole had prior to Eliot lacked coherence, both in educational purpose and in administration. Eliot's policy was to draw the different parts of the University together in order that, having acquired an organic relationship, they might then be given a larger autonomy under their own faculties and deans. His general plan, conceived in the opening years of his administration, pressed persistently, and realized gradually as circumstances permitted, was to embrace all undergraduate studies within Harvard College, and establish about this center a complete group of graduate, research, and professional schools. To carry out this plan it was necessary to incorporate the undergraduate Lawrence Scientific School into Harvard College, a change which was approaching completion in 1909; and to require a bachelor's degree for admission to all other parts of the University. This requirement was adopted in the Divinity School in 1886, in the Graduate School in 1892, in the Law School in 1896 (for candidates for the degree, in 1893), and in the Medical School in 1900. The Schools of Applied Science and Business Administration were graduate schools from their foundation, and into the former were incorporated (in addition to engineering) the instruction in architecture, landscape architecture, and forestry, and the research in applied biology which had been conducted at the Bussey Institution.

The plan was never perfectly realized. The University Observatory and Museums retained a semi-detached existence as institutes of research. Summer courses in chemistry, botany, and geology were given as early as 1875, grew speedily in importance, and eventually came to form the nucleus of a "school" with a somewhat fluctuating and ambiguous relation to Harvard College and the Graduate School. Eliot's readiness to undertake novel and irregular ventures is illustrated by the special summer schools held at Harvard for Cuban teachers in 1900, and for teachers from Porto Rico in 1904. On the subject of the higher education of women Eliot had taken an open-minded and hopeful view in his inaugural address. He cooperated with the efforts of those who, under the lead of Mrs. Elizabeth Cabot Cary Agassiz [*q.v.*], inaugurated in 1879 the teaching of private classes of women by members of the Harvard College faculty. In 1882 this instruction assumed a more organized and formal character under the Society for the Collegiate Instruction of Women (commonly known as the Harvard Annex), and in 1894 the present Radcliffe College came into existence as a distinct corporate entity, with degrees guaranteed and

countersigned by Harvard. Eliot's attitude throughout was one of cautious, experimental benevolence. But while he was willing for good reasons to depart from it in special cases, he had none the less a comprehensive plan for Harvard University as a whole.

Among Eliot's policies affecting the University none was more fundamental than his care for the teaching personnel. He regarded the recruiting of the faculties from all parts of the United States, and even from abroad, as his most important duty, and the growing prestige of the University in science and letters was evidence of the vigilance and sound judgment which he exercised. The invention of the "Sabbatical Year," and the establishment in later years of the French and German Exchange Professorships, provided opportunities of European contact and greater leisure for research. In 1904–05 the alumni raised $2,300,000 in response to Eliot's appeal for a general increase of faculty salaries. This step was one of the early examples of the "drives" which afterwards came into vogue, and had an important influence on prevailing standards of remuneration in the teaching profession. Not less important was the establishment in 1899 of a liberal system of teachers' retiring allowances, which was maintained independently by the University until in 1906 provision for this purpose was made by the Carnegie Foundation. Academic freedom was jealously safeguarded, and every effort was made to create an atmosphere favorable to productive scholarship.

In Harvard College, the undergraduate department of the University, the most radical change introduced during Eliot's administration was the development of the so-called "elective system." This reform sprang, so far as Eliot was concerned, from his profoundest educational convictions, as set forth in the Inaugural Address of 1869. He believed in giving the individual student a wide latitude of choice in order that he might acquire self-reliance, discover his own bent, rise to higher stages of attainment in his chosen field, and be governed in his work by interest rather than compulsion. He desired, furthermore, that the course of study should give to modern subjects, such as English, French, German, history, economics, and above all the natural sciences, equal rank with Latin, Greek, and mathematics, so that "liberal education" might be more closely related to contemporary life.

In 1824 students of the junior class in Harvard College had been permitted to substitute some other subject for thirty-eight lessons in Hebrew, and seniors might choose between chemistry and fluxions; otherwise all studies were required.

Eliot

Born in 1825 of the report of a committee of the Board of Overseers headed by Judge Joseph Story, the elective system had maintained during the next forty years a continued but precarious existence. Some presidents, like Quincy, Felton, and Hill had supported it, others, such as Everett and Sparks had been opposed; and the faculty usually had been divided. Over and above the natural tendency to cling to the old curriculum, the small size of the faculty presented a serious practical difficulty. Evidently election of studies could not be significant without a considerable range of choice. Furthermore, elective studies could not reach the same level of advancement as the older required studies unless they were pursued consecutively for several years. Attempts to graft election on compulsion by introducing new studies as additions or as "options" to existing requirements, tended to divide the student's time among many elementary studies with proficiency in none. It became evident that the values of the elective system could be realized only provided there was a considerable offering of graded courses in each subject, with the student free to make his choice in his early years. This was Eliot's program, which, like most of his reforms, was put into effect gradually, beginning at once. With some minor exceptions, requirements for seniors were abolished in 1872, for juniors in 1879, and for sophomores in 1884. In 1885 prescriptions for freshmen were materially reduced, but short courses in physics and chemistry were required until 1894, after which the modern language and English requirements alone persisted.

After some years of discussion, especially in the medical faculty, Eliot introduced in 1890 his plan for the shortening of the college course to three years. Unless some such concession were made, he feared that the lengthening and encroachment of the period of professional studies would destroy the liberal college altogether. A degree granted, as at Harvard in Eliot's time, on the satisfactory completion of a certain number of courses, could be taken in a shorter time by the simple expedient of carrying on more courses simultaneously. This would involve intenser application to studies on the part of undergraduates, which Eliot thought both possible and desirable. At the same time he hoped that an improved system of secondary instruction might deliver a riper product to the college, and that the pressure could be lightened by the anticipation of college studies in school, as well as by the use of the summer vacations. Approved both in the faculty and in the Board of Overseers, the new arrangement went partially into effect, although without any statutory recognition of three years as the normal

period for the degree. The disorganization of the senior year, the multiplication of unrelated courses in the student's program, and the sacrifice of intellectual thoroughness to the accumulation of course credits, occasioned much criticism, and left the issue unsettled at the close of Eliot's administration.

Under Eliot the disciplinary regulations of Harvard College were greatly liberalized. In 1886, after a decade of agitation the ancient statute of the university requiring attendance at the college chapel was rescinded and all religious activities were put upon a voluntary basis under an interdenominational Board of Preachers. Throughout his entire administration Eliot took a keen interest in athletic policy. In 1888 he instituted the form of control which has since been very widely adopted, with a general athletic committee including alumni and undergraduates as well as officers of instruction. He took an important part in the introduction of stricter rules of eligibility by agreement among the colleges, and especially between Harvard and Yale. Although himself an oarsman and a friend of sport, he was a formidable and tireless critic of football. He believed not only that its intercollegiate competitions received excessive publicity and overemphasis, but that the game was inherently vicious because it placed a premium on the breaking of unenforceable rules, and because its code was a code of war rather than of sport.

A university president could influence primary and secondary education only indirectly through requirements for admission to college and through the dissemination of his ideas. As to admission requirements, Eliot's policy at Harvard was both to raise and to diversify them. High standards of admission were, he believed, a proper means of exerting pressure upon secondary schools to improve the thoroughness of their work. At the same time his attachment to the principle of election and his desire to maintain Harvard as a national college, led him to advocate considerable liberty of choice among entrance subjects, and the recognition of other subjects than the Latin, Greek, and mathematics which had held the field alone before 1870. Important steps in these directions were taken in 1887, when Greek became optional, and again in 1899. His interest in the relation between secondary and higher education led Eliot to participate actively in the work of the New England Association of Colleges and Preparatory Schools from its foundation in 1885, and in that of the National Education Association, of which he became president in 1903. In 1892 he was made chairman of the latter Association's Committee

Eliot

on Secondary School Studies, commonly known as the "Committee of Ten." The report, prepared by Eliot, embodied the valuable recommendations on the teaching of Latin, mathematics, history, and other subjects, submitted by a group of special conferences; defined the scope and sequence of these subjects; and formulated standard programs for secondary instruction. The committee advocated the downward extension of secondary subjects into the elementary grades, and believed that a standard secondary school should fit all of its graduates for college, so that its pupils should be able to postpone their decision as to entering college until they had had the opportunity of fully testing their ambition and competence. This Eliot held to be an important application of democratic principles. The work of this committee had a far-reaching influence upon the curricula of public schools throughout the country, mainly in the direction of standardization and uniformity. It also paved the way for the organization in 1901 of the Board of College Entrance Examinations, a central agency for the setting and grading of written examinations for admission to college, which had been supported by Eliot as early as 1877, and constantly advocated by him.

Eliot's numerous published articles and addresses before teachers' organizations covered a wide range of subjects, and at the same time exhibited a grasp of detail that made his hearers and readers feel that he understood and shared their problems. He believed that by increased application to studies enough time could be saved, especially in the grades, both to enrich the program of the secondary school and to relieve the colleges of the essentially secondary instruction they were compelled to undertake. He argued for the better training and greater security of teachers and for improved hygienic conditions in the school-room; his faith in the beneficence of freedom disposed him to favor so-called "progressive" schools; and with a growing emphasis in later years he insisted upon the importance of the training of the senses, the body, and the imagination.

While primary and secondary education formed the substructure of the college, graduate and professional education formed its superstructure. Here Eliot's influence was even more strongly felt. In his annual report for the year 1871 he wrote: "At whatever sacrifice, the University means to persevere in the good work of raising the standard of its professional schools." Graduate study in the subjects forming parts of the curriculum of Harvard College grew naturally out of the elective system. In 1872 the de-

grees of Master of Arts, Doctor of Science, and Doctor of Philosophy were established, and candidates for them were admitted to the undergraduate elective courses, which were becoming more numerous and more specialized. This was six years earlier than the epoch-making movement for graduate study launched at The Johns Hopkins University; but Eliot was much impressed by the steps already taken in this direction at Yale, where the degree of Ph.D. had been established in 1860. After an attempt to set apart a further group of courses which should be open only to graduate students, it was voted in 1882 to open all courses to any students, whether graduates or undergraduates, who were qualified to pursue them. In 1890 the Graduate School, afterwards called the "Graduate School of Arts and Sciences," was organized under the same faculty as that of Harvard College and the Scientific School, thus completing the characteristic Harvard organization. Graduates and undergraduates mingled in their courses, and as every teacher in the Faculty of Arts and Sciences was expected to attract graduate students as well as undergraduates, a higher premium was thus put on their scholarship and distinction.

Under Eliot's liberal policy the Harvard Divinity School became a non-sectarian institution of higher learning, instead of a denominational training school for ministers. The Graduate School of Applied Science was discontinued in 1914, but its underlying idea of placing engineering among the learned professions has endured and spread. The Graduate School of Business Administration was a novel departure, the full significance of which became apparent under the administration of his successor. But Eliot's most notable contributions to professional education were in law and medicine.

Throughout a history of more than a century the Harvard Law School has undergone no changes comparable in importance both for the school itself and for legal education in general with those which occurred within the first few years of Eliot's administration. The school had had a period of fame and rapid growth in Justice Joseph Story's time (1829–45), but had subsequently, in spite of its national reputation, declined in numbers, scholarship, and enterprise. Although housed in a building of its own and having an eminent faculty, its methods and organization were modeled on the lawyer's office. There were no requirements for admission and the quality of the students had deteriorated; there was neither gradation of courses, nor examination for graduation; the library was small and badly administered. This general slackness, which was characteristic of the times, was in part due to inertia and neglect, and in part to a desire to attract students, since the revenue was almost wholly derived from tuition fees. Seeing the need of fresh blood and active leadership, Eliot secured the appointment, as Dane Professor and afterwards as dean, of Christopher Columbus Langdell [*q.v.*], a former graduate of the school who was then practising law in New York City, and whose youthful promise had lingered in Eliot's memory from the time when they had been fellow students twenty years before. The partnership of Eliot and Langdell was instrumental in bringing about a rapid succession of reforms, for which Langdell supplied the expert knowledge and creative ideas, and Eliot the strategy and public support; both being endowed with courage and patience. The changes were of two kinds, those affecting organization and those affecting methods of instruction. To the first category belong the inauguration in 1872 of a two-years' course, with examinations both for promotion and for graduation; the lengthening of the course to three years in 1877–78; and the introduction, in the same year, of an admission examination for all candidates for the degree who were not college graduates. The tuition was raised, the library enlarged and reorganized, and the faculty increased. The appointment in 1873 of J. B. Ames, a recent graduate without legal practise, as assistant professor, was the first recognition of legal teaching as a distinct career requiring special qualifications. The reform in methods of instruction consisted in the famous "case system," introduced into his own classroom by Langdell and afterwards by his colleagues. All of these innovations met with stubborn resistance and harsh criticism, and their first effect was to diminish the number of students. But Eliot and Langdell held on unflinchingly until the tide definitely turned in 1883, the year of the building of Austin Hall. The subsequent history of the Harvard Law School was one of steady growth, in size, in resources, and in prestige. It attracted students in increasing numbers from all parts of the world, and through its graduates who became teachers it powerfully affected the general trend of legal education.

Eliot's interest in medicine was more than an educational interest. Preventive medicine, mental and social hygiene, as well as medicine in the narrower sense, were profoundly in accord with his humanitarian philosophy, as being applications of science to social progress. The changes in the Medical School were in many respects parallel to those in the Law School. Here also the time was ripe for reform. The school had

begun in 1783 with high standards of admission and of scientific attainment, but during the nineteenth century there had been a change in the direction of more elementary entrance requirements and a relatively practical and commercial emphasis. The medical degree was based largely upon credit for study under a practising physician, for which a certificate was accepted, this, as in the case of legal education, being a survival of the apprenticeship method. Candidates were also required to "attend" two four-months' courses of lectures, only one of which was necessarily taken at Harvard. The principal requirement in connection with these lectures seems to have been the purchase and presentation of "tickets." There were oral examinations for the degree, to be sure, but nine subjects were covered in an hour and a half, and of these it was necessary to pass only five. There were also theses, but it is recorded that when Louis Agassiz heard the best of them read at the Commencement ceremonies in 1867 his "look of mingled wonder, pain, and disgust at their flimsy badness" was "amusing to observe." The faculty depended for their compensation on the students' fees and attached great importance to the size of the enrolment. In addition to these conditions reflecting the general backwardness of professional education in America, a peculiar difficulty in medical education arose from the need of clinical facilities. As late as 1876 two-thirds of the medical students of the country enjoyed no access to clinical material; while the better schools, in order to obtain such material, were obliged to utilize the services of physicians having hospital appointments even when they were incompetent as teachers. That the Harvard School with all these defects should have been one of the best, indicates the state of medical education in the country as a whole. Reforms had been courageously attempted by the Chicago Medical School (afterwards affiliated with Northwestern University) and by the Humboldt Medical College in St. Louis, but without marked influence on the generally prevailing standards, which were at this time so far below those of Europe that it was customary for ambitious American students to complete their medical education in Berlin, Vienna, Paris, or Edinburgh.

Eliot's humanity was shocked by the menace to the community of an ignorant and incompetent medical profession, and the improvement of medical instruction was one of the purposes nearest his heart. The first step was to link the school more closely to the administration of the University, and Eliot provided the link in his own person. It was at a meeting of the medical faculty early in 1870 that there occurred the famous incident related by Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, who then belonged himself to the conservative faction. When asked why, after being let alone for eighty years, the faculty should suddenly have been called upon to change everything, Eliot unblushingly answered, "There is a new President." The first annual report of this new president (issued in January 1871) announced that "the whole system of medical education in this country needs thorough reformation." The reformation began at once, though it was disputed at every step by sincere and able advocates of the old order, who thought the innovators both reckless and doctrinaire. A progressive three-years' course, with laboratory work in the medical sciences, was introduced in the autumn of 1871, together with written examinations for the degree, and the requirement that the students should pass in all subjects. The division of the students into classes, with examinations for promotion and provisions for graduate clinical and laboratory study, were introduced in 1874. After 1877 admission requirements were steadily raised. The curriculum being enriched and elaborated, the four-years' course was introduced on an optional basis in 1879–80, and became obligatory in 1892, credit for study with practising physicians having been abandoned in 1889. There was the expected decline in students and income from fees, but this crisis being safely weathered, there began the period of steady growth in strength and repute which has continued down to the present. In 1883, on the hundredth anniversary of its founding, the school moved from the old quarters on North Grove Street, Boston, to a new building on Boylston Street, with greatly increased laboratory facilities. These quarters being outgrown, the present great plant in Brookline was erected in 1905, at a cost of approximately $5,000,000 for buildings, equipment, and endowment. Meanwhile the development of more intimate relations between the school and the Boston hospitals, new and old, greatly improved the opportunities for clinical instruction and interneships. The advance in medical education since 1870 has been a nation-wide movement. Changes similar to those instituted at Harvard in the early years of Eliot's administration were speedily adopted at other universities, such as Pennsylvania and Michigan. The Medical School of The Johns Hopkins University was opened in 1893, and exercised a powerful influence in the direction of advanced entrance requirements and emphasis on scientific research. But though the reform soon spread and had here and there been anticipated, Eliot appears to have

been more responsible than any other single individual for the impulse by which it was effectively launched.

During the long period of his presidency, Eliot's private life was comparatively uneventful. His first wife had died in the very month of his election. In 1877 he married Grace Mellen Hopkinson, who was his constant companion until her death in 1924. Of his two sons, the elder, Charles, whose papers he edited under the title of *Charles Eliot, Landscape Architect* (1902), died in 1897; the younger, Samuel Atkins Eliot, survived him. Being much in demand as a speaker he made frequent and sometimes extensive trips in the United States, and at rare intervals went to Europe or the Bermudas. His resignation in 1909, at the age of seventy-five was due to no disability, and marked a change in the kind rather than in the degree of his labors. Henceforth he divided his residence between Cambridge and Mt. Desert, Me., where he had built a house at Northeast Harbor in 1881. He declined offers from both President Taft and President Wilson to nominate him as ambassador to Great Britain, and devoted himself to writing, speech-making, and correspondence, thus continuing the diversified public service for which he had found time even during the years of his presidency.

His educational activities did not cease. As member of the Board of Overseers from 1910 to 1916, he continued to interest himself in Harvard; and as member of the General Education Board and trustee of the Rockefeller Foundation and Carnegie Foundation for the Advancement of Teaching, he took an influential part in shaping the general policies of these great benevolent organizations. In 1911–12 he made a trip around the world under the auspices of a committee containing the president and two former presidents of the United States. In full vigor up to the last year of his life, he died at Northeast Harbor, Aug. 22, 1926, at the age of ninety-two. His body was brought to Cambridge, and after a funeral in Appleton Chapel, was interred in Mount Auburn Cemetery.

Though Eliot's peculiar competence and influence lay within the field of education, his long experience, his wide range of information and his sagacity and public spirit gave weight to his utterances on all the topics of the day. In politics he was an independent with a leaning towards the Democratic party. During the period of the World War he warmly supported President Wilson, both in his early neutrality and in his later advocacy of the cause of the Allies and of the League of Nations. He interested himself in the social effects of modern industrialism, and in a famous speech before the Boston Economic Club in 1902 boldly attacked the closed shop, limitations of output, the uniform wage, and similar restrictive methods practised by organized labor. Profit-sharing, arbitration, and cooperation were his favorite remedies for industrial difficulties. His opinions on these and other issues, such as immigration, the race problem, and the prevention of war, were dictated by adherence to the same fundamental principle of individual liberty which governed his educational policies. He thought the essence of democracy to consist not in equality of attainment or station, but in a social mobility that enabled each man to discover and realize his own special capacities. The "happy life" and its "durable satisfactions" were to be found in health, in the enjoyment of nature, books, and friends, in the exercise of human faculties, but above all in two things: in that "maximum of effort" which a man attains through the interested exercise of his own aptitudes, and in the love of human kind. This optimistic philanthropy, confirmed by his native health of body and of mind, and warmed by his strong domestic affections, found concrete expression in ways that he believed effective and useful rather than merely pleasing. It was in accord with his Unitarian religious training and was the central core of his faith. The certainty of his moral convictions, and his personal discovery that the way of duty and service was also the way of happiness were the premises of his belief in divine immanence and the spiritual order of the world. His was a religion without authority, mysticism, or other-worldliness, but it contributed effectually to his serenity and steadiness of purpose.

Speaking retrospectively of himself as a youth of fifteen, just entering upon his college career, Eliot once said: "He was reserved, industrious, independent and ambitious; he trod the giddy edge of precipices with a complete unconsciousness of danger." Age and experience supplemented but did not eradicate these essential traits. He was eminently qualified for leadership. It was easy for him to reach definite convictions on matters of policy, and in supporting his convictions he was both bold and persevering. Confident of his judgment once it was formed he did not allow personal feelings or interests to deflect him from his course. Although, especially in his early years, he was lacking in tact, he had a profound respect for constitutional methods, and was content to use persuasion rather than coercion, even when this required the postponement of action. By listening to his opponents he learned from them as well as about them, disarmed them, and often won their loyal coopera-

tion. He was incessantly active, and possessed a patience and endurance proportional to his tenacity of will. Physically, he was always in training. He was prominent as an oarsman when in college, was fond of long walks, horse-back riding, bicycling and yachting, and assiduously cultivated his health by diet, sleep, and regular exercise. His imperfect eyesight compelled him to wear glasses, and he carried a disfiguring facial birthmark. These defects only served, however, to heighten the total impression created by his bodily vigor, tall and erect figure, resonant voice, and strong, clear-cut features. As a public speaker he was distinguished not by any histrionic appeal, but by the majesty of his bearing, his candor and air of conviction, his force of character, and by the lucidity of his thought and diction.

Eliot's published writings are extensive. His annual *Reports of the President of Harvard College,* covering a period of forty years, are documents of first importance in the history of education. The more important of his earlier essays and addresses on educational topics are contained in *Educational Reform* (1898), while those dealing with broader political and social questions appeared in *American Contributions to Civilization* (1897). His moral and religious creed was set forth in *The Religion of the Future* (1909), in *The Durable Satisfactions of Life* (1910), and in two books which he himself thought might have lasting value: *The Happy Life* (1896); and the sympathetic appreciation of his neighbor at Northeast Harbor, *John Gilley, Farmer and Fisherman* (1899). A collection of writings after 1914, is to be found in *A Late Harvest,* edited by M. A. DeWolfe Howe (1924); and a comprehensive collection in *Charles W. Eliot, the Man and his Beliefs,* by W. A. Neilson (1926). In the last year of his presidency, challenged to make good his remark that a man might acquire a liberal education by reading fifteen minutes a day from books that could all find room on a "five-foot shelf," he undertook the editing of the *Harvard Classics,* which had a wide circulation and focussed attention upon the question of adult self-education. The preparation of this series of fifty volumes, embracing several hundred authors, and representing every period of human history, is illustrative of the immense range of Eliot's curiosity and information. There was a quality of aptness and simplicity in his style which gave distinction to the phrases which he applied to recipients of honorary degrees at Harvard Commencements, and brought him many invitations to prepare architectural inscriptions, such as those of the World's Fair in Chicago and the Shaw



Monument in Boston. He wrote and spoke as a man of affairs, addressing himself directly to the matter in hand. Although devoted to general purposes and firmly attached to a fundamental moral creed, he was as faithfully attentive to detail in discourse as he was circumspect in the overcoming of practical difficulties.

There have been many eminent university and college presidents in America, and the lives of many of them fell in the second half of the nineteenth century, when education felt the quickened impulse of the life of the united nation. As compared with others of this group, such as Hopkins, McCosh, Gilman, and Angell, Charles William Eliot was distinguished by his universality of interest reflecting a peculiarly rounded and complete personality, and by the fact that his perseverance and length of years enabled him to bring to slowly ripened fruition the remote dreams of his own youth.

[C. W. Eliot, "Contributions to the Hist. of Am. Teaching" (autobiographical), *Educational Rev.,* Nov. 1911; E. H. Cotton, *Life of Chas. W. Eliot* (1926); C. F. Dunbar, "President Eliot's Administration," in *Harvard Grads. Mag.,* June 1894, and other articles in the same publication; *The Centennial Hist. of the Harvard Law School* (1918); T. F. Harrington, *Harvard Medic. School* (1905); *The Ninetieth Birthday of C. W. Eliot* (1925); "Report of the Committee of Ten on Secondary School Studies" in *Report of the Commissioner of Education for the Year 1892–93* (U. S. Bureau of Educ., 1895); F. G. Peabody, *Reminiscences of Present Day Saints* (1927); H. H. Saunderson, *C. W. Eliot, Puritan Liberal* (1928); M. A. DeW. Howe, *Classic Shades* (1928); W. DeW. Hyde, "President Eliot as an Educational Reformer," *Atlantic Monthly,* Mar. 1899; C. F. Thwing, "President Eliot's Twenty-five Years of Service," *Forum,* May 1894; *Boston Transcript,* Aug. 22, 1926.]

R. B. P.

**ELIOT, JARED** (Nov. 7, 1685–Apr. 22, 1763), Congregational clergyman, physician, the son of Joseph and Mary (Wyllys) Eliot, was born in Guilford, Conn. His grandfather was John Eliot [*q.v.*]. He graduated at Yale College, then called the "Collegiate School" of Connecticut, in 1706, and after teaching for about two years was settled over the church in Killingworth, now Clinton, where he served until his death. For more than forty years he never failed to preach at least once every Sunday, and was highly regarded in the colony as a minister and adviser in church matters. Without neglecting the duties of this office, he pursued his interest in natural science and achieved eminence in widely different fields. Inheriting a taste for the practise of medicine from his grandmother, who had been noted for her skill in medicine and surgery, and from his father, also a physician, he received medical instruction from Rev. Joshua Hobart of Southold, L. I. In time he became the leading physician in the New England colonies, and his service was called for in all parts of the colony, as well as in Newport

and Boston. "Of all those who combined the offices of clerygman and physician, not one, from the foundation of the American colonies, attained so high distinction as a physician as Jared Eliot." He was an instructor of physicians also, and his influence on medical practise in the colony was wide and lasting.

As a scientist, Eliot became interested in the black sand which at times covered the sea beach. He carried a quantity of it in his saddle bags, from time to time, to an iron furnace in Killingworth, where it was smelted. It proved to be an iron ore from which he extracted excellent iron. His *Essay on the Invention, or Art of making very good, if not the best Iron, from black Sea Sand,* published in 1762, was awarded a gold medal by the Royal Society of London. He was already a member of the society. He was one of the first to develop the ore beds in northwestern Connecticut, where later iron works supplied munitions for the Continental Army, and thus established Connecticut as the "munition state" of the country. During his thirty years as a physician, Eliot had visited all parts of the colony, had met the men of influence, and had become acquainted with the condition of farming throughout Connecticut. This wide observation led him to study possible improvements in farm practise. He bought considerable tracts of land, experimented wisely in their improvement, and embodied his results in an *Essay on Field Husbandry in New England,* published in six parts at intervals in the years from 1748 to 1759. These for a long time were the most widely read and prized agricultural essays in America. With President Ezra Stiles of Yale College, he introduced silk culture into the colony.

Eliot lived at a time when general poverty, the absence of outside intellectual stimulus, and the rudimentary means of communication hindered progress in the sciences in America. In a later century he would have been a specialist; in his own time he was a typical pioneer of applied science. In 1710 he married Hannah Smithson. Of their eleven children, nine grew to maturity. Two became physicians; four were farmers. In all they represented their respective towns in twenty-three sessions of the General Assembly. Eliot was a man of iron constitution, capable of enduring all the rigors of a newly settled country, and tireless in his various activities. "In his house he was liberal, courteous and generous in a gentleman-like hospitality." He made the earliest bequest for the permanent endowment of the Yale Library, the income from which has been used for the purchase of books for one hundred and sixty years. The college trained him for

Eliot

"employment in church and civil state" and he filled his seventy-eight years with useful service to both.

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll. 1701–1745* (1885); *Geneal. of the Descendants of John Eliot, 1598–1905* (ed. 1905); *Two Hundredth Anniversary of the Clinton Congreg. Ch.* (1868); W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit,* I (1857), 270.]

E. H. J.

**ELIOT, JOHN** (1604–May 21, 1690), missionary to the Indians, was baptized in the parish church of St. John Baptist, Widford, Hertfordshire, England, Aug. 5, 1604 and presumably was born a few days earlier. He was the son of Bennett and Lettice or Letteye (Aggar) Eliot. Little is known of his parents although a Norman pedigree has been made out for them. His father owned land in several parishes in Essex and had considerable property. John was the third of seven children, of whom the three youngest were baptized at Nazeing, Essex. John matriculated at Jesus College, Cambridge, Mar. 20, 1619, and received the B.A. degree in 1622, pursuing his studies with an excellent reputation for scholarship, especially in the classics. He taught for a time in the grammar school at Little Baddow, Essex, where he came under the influence of Thomas Hooker. It was there, he afterwards said, that his religious life began, and he determined to become a preacher. Some time later a number of his Puritan friends, about to emigrate to New England, asked him to go with them as their minister. He sailed from England in the ship *Lyon,* with some of the Winthrop family, and reached Boston Nov. 3, 1631. There he was at once employed as substitute for Mr. John Wilson, temporarily in England, and was asked to remain as teacher with him on his return. Before he emigrated he had been engaged to marry Ann (or Hannah) Mumford, who followed him about a year later. They were married in Boston in October 1632. Meanwhile his Essex friends had emigrated to Massachusetts and settled at Roxbury. Declining the Boston offer he settled among them as teacher of their church, a connection which lasted for sixty years. For over forty years he was sole pastor. There he came into close contact with the Indians and with the help of a quick-witted young Long Island native who had been taken prisoner, undertook to learn their language. Eliot was devoted to the study of Hebrew, was a good grammarian, and ready at learning languages. His first preaching to the Indians, however, in 1646, was in English. It was at the Indian settlement at Dorchester Mills. His next effort was at Nonantum, and there he continued to preach and catechize every fortnight through the winter, apparently making

some genuine converts. By the summer of 1647 he was preaching to them in their own language. Moreover the work had so far advanced that it was thought best to organize a society in England to help forward it. A number of accounts of the work were published, such as *The Day Breaking* (1647), and in 1649 "The President and Society for Propagation of the Gospel in New-England" was incorporated, which sent over several thousand pounds. Meanwhile, Eliot had been engaged in translating the Bible into the Indian language. The New Testament was published in 1661 and the Old Testament in 1663 —the first Bible to be printed in North America. Its cost, about £1,000, was met in large part by funds from the English society. Other books were also printed in the Indian tongue, and a small Indian college was established at Cambridge. Eliot hoped in time to Christianize and civilize all the tribes in New England, but recognized their distaste for living too near the English. For that reason he made plans for the establishment of an Indian town in the wilderness, and decided on locating it at Natick. In 1651, after a grant was received from the General Court, the town was laid out and several families of "praying Indians" were settled there. Eliot organized what was practically a self-governing Indian community, in which the Indians were left free to manage their local affairs in their own way although they were under the jurisdiction of the general laws of Massachusetts. He continued to organize similar communities, and by 1674 there were fourteen of them, with about 1,100 Christian natives (Byington, *post,* p. 130). Believing that the Indians themselves would make in time the best missionaries to their own people, he carefully taught a number of them to serve as preachers, twenty-four of them being actively engaged in the work at the time of his death. He himself traveled largely over New England among the various tribes, meeting with much opposition from the sachems of some of them, such as the Narragansetts. It is possible that in spite of his saintliness and zeal, he was not wise in the method of segregation which he adopted. In any case the outbreak of King Philip's War scattered the "praying Indians" and to a great extent ruined the work. Although these Indians were loyal to the English, the settlers were in a panic and their treatment of their native wards was unreasoning and cruel. Eliot himself did not escape suspicion and contumely in his efforts to protect them. He and Major Gookin did all they could, at the expense of their popularity, and not wholly without danger from the whites, to mitigate the condition

Eliot

of the Christian natives. After the war was over, Eliot continued his labors, but the faith of the Indians in the good intentions of the Puritans had received a severe shock. The number of villages of "praying Indians" had been reduced from fourteen to four, and they gradually dwindled away.

Besides his work as pastor and missionary, Eliot wrote prolifically. In addition to his translation of the Bible, he published, among other English and Indian works, *A Primer or Catechism, in the Massachusetts Indian Language* (1654); *The Christian Commonwealth* (1659); *Up-Bookum Psalmes* (1663); *Communion of Churches* (1665); *The Indian Primer* (1669); and *The Harmony of the Gospels* (1678). After the Restoration, the Massachusetts government, fearing that the republican sentiments in Eliot's *Christian Commonwealth* might get them into trouble with the home government, condemned and suppressed the book (May 1661), and Eliot had to make a public retraction (*Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts,* vol. XX, 1920, p. 95). He had six children, two of whom, with his wife, survived him. He was one of the most remarkable men of the seventeenth century in New England, and had the rare virtue of thinking of other souls besides his own.

[Mather not only gave an account of Eliot in his *Magnalia Christi Americana* (ed. 1853), I, 526–83, but also wrote *The Triumphs of the Reformed Religion, in America. The Life of the Renowned John Eliot* (1691). The best account is that by E. H. Byington, "John Eliot, the Puritan Missionary to the Indians," in *Papers Am. Soc. Ch. Hist.*, VIII (1897), 109–45. See also Convers Francis, *Life of John Eliot* (1836), in Sparks's *Lib. of Am. Biog.; R. I. Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, n.s. VI (1898), 112–17; *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. II (1886), 44–50; *Ibid.*, 2 ser. VI (1891), 392–95; Wilberforce Eames, *Bibliographic Notes on Eliot's Indian Bible and on his Other Translations and Works in the Indian Language of Mass.* (1890); *Geneal. of the Descendants of John Eliot* (1905).] J. T. A.

**ELIOT, SAMUEL** (Dec. 22, 1821–Sept. 14, 1898), historian, educator, philanthropist, was born in Boston, the son of William Havard and Margaret Boies (Bradford) Eliot. His father, a brother of Samuel Atkins Eliot [*q.v.*], built the Tremont House, interested himself in the musical life of the city, and died suddenly in 1831 while a candidate for mayor. His mother was a daughter of Alden Bradford [*q.v.*]. Eliot graduated first in the class of 1839 at Harvard and after two uncongenial years in Robert Gould Shaw's counting room went to Madeira and thence to Italy to recruit his health. While in Rome he conceived the idea of a history of liberty, to be complete in six parts of two volumes each. In undertaking such a work he mistook literary ambition for capacity, and abandoned the

project after some preliminary studies and four volumes of the history had been published. On June 7, 1853, he married Emily Marshall Otis, daughter of William Foster and Emily (Marshall) Otis of Boston, moved to Brookline, and began teaching a few pupils and giving free instruction to the children of workingmen. A devout Episcopalian, he had formed a warm admiration for Thomas Arnold and consciously modeled his career upon Arnold's. Through his ecclesiastical connections he became professor of history in Trinity College, Hartford, Conn., 1856–60, and president of the college, 1860–64. He then returned to Boston and devoted his life to an amazingly large number of educational, religious, and eleemosynary institutions. Among the more important of these were the Massachusetts General Hospital, the Perkins Institute for the Blind, the Massachusetts School for Feeble Minded Youth, Harvard University, St. Paul's School, the Boston Museum of Fine Arts, and the Boston Athenæum. The state had few more useful citizens than this quasi-professional trustee and chairman of boards. His high regard for public education led him to serve as headmaster, 1872–76, of the Girls' High and Normal School. In 1878 he was appointed superintendent of the city schools. He set to work with his customary energy and enthusiasm to enrich the curriculum and to improve the mode of instruction, but the state of his health compelled him to resign two years later and to make his third sojourn in Europe. His manners were those of a Boston gentleman of the old school. Perhaps his most pervasive trait was his religious faith, which expressed itself equally in his simple fervid adherence to the dogmas of his church and in his selfless devotion to the needy, the suffering, and the oppressed of all creeds. He died of heart trouble at Beverly Farms, Mass., and was buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery.

Besides a number of papers, lectures, and addresses, Eliot published a small, privately printed volume of translations from the Spanish poet, José Zorilla (1846); *Passages from the History of Liberty* (1847); *The Liberty of Rome* (2 vols., 1849), which was revised to form Part I of the *History of Liberty: Part I, The Ancient Romans; Part II, The Early Christians* (4 vols., 1853); and a *Manual of United States History* (1856; 4th ed., rev., 1874). He edited *Selections from American Authors* (1879) and *Poetry for Children* (1879), refusing characteristically to accept compensation for his editorial work.

[G. M. Fessenden, "A Geneal. of the Bradford Family," in *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, IV (1850), 39–50, 233–45; W. H. Whitmore, *Ibid.*, XXIII (1869), 346–40; W. G. Eliot, *A Sketch of the Eliot Family* (1887); *Harvard Quinquennial Cat. 1636–1915* (1915); *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. vol. XII (1889); H. W. Haynes, memoir, *Ibid.*, 2 ser. XIV (1901), 105–26; Barrett Wendell, memoir in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.*, XXXIV (1899), 646–51; *Boston Transcript*, Sept. 15, 17, 1898.]

G. H. G.



**ELIOT, SAMUEL ATKINS** (Mar. 5, 1798–Jan. 29, 1862), statesman and man of letters, was born in Boston, Mass., the third son of Samuel and Catherine (Atkins) Eliot, and a direct descendant of Andrew Eliot, who came to America from Somersetshire about 1668. He graduated from Harvard in the class of 1817 and from the Harvard Divinity School in 1820, but he was never ordained to the ministry. At the death of his father in the latter year, Eliot was left with a considerable fortune. He spent some time in study and then went abroad from 1823 to 1826, traveling extensively in Europe. On June 13, 1826, he married Mary Lyman, daughter of the Boston merchant, Theodore Lyman, by whom he had four daughters and one son, Charles William Eliot [*q.v.*], later president of Harvard. One of Eliot's sisters married Professor Andrews Norton and another George Ticknor, and he was closely connected by blood or marriage with many members of the inner circle of Boston society.

Eliot now entered upon a career of uninterrupted and varied usefulness as a servant of the public. He sat for several terms in the Massachusetts General Court and was an alderman during the mayoralty of his brother-in-law, Theodore Lyman, Jr. [*q.v.*]. Keenly interested in the fine arts, he became the first president of the Academy of Music and delivered an address at the opening of the famous Odeon, Aug. 5, 1835. He was chiefly responsible for the first American performances, in Boston, of Beethoven's symphonies. As a member of the Boston School Committee, he introduced music into the public schools of his city. He himself translated Schiller's "The Song of the Bell," which, set to music by Romberg, was sung at the Academy of Music. Again in political life, he was elected for three consecutive terms (1837–39) as mayor of Boston. When a riot was caused by a collision between a volunteer fire company and an Irish funeral procession, Eliot courageously marched down Broad St. at the head of one hundred militiamen. Later, after an investigation, he disbanded all the volunteer engine companies and established a paid fire department. He also insisted on the formation of a competent police force in the municipality. In 1823, Eliot gave to Harvard Warden's extensive collection of books on American history. From 1842 to 1853 he was treasurer of Harvard College, and, while holding this position, published his *Sketch of the History*

*of Harvard College and of its Present State* (1848).

Although Eliot was strongly opposed to slavery, he believed in the Compromise of 1850. When Robert C. Winthrop was appointed to the United States Senate in 1850 as Webster's successor, Eliot took Winthrop's seat in Congress, serving from Aug. 22, 1850, to Mar. 3, 1851. Webster looked upon the election as indicating approval of his own conduct and said of it, "From the commencement of the government, no such consequences have attended any single election, as those that flowed from Mr. Eliot's election" (*Writings and Speeches of Daniel Webster*, vol. XVIII, 1903, p. 387). While in the House of Representatives, Eliot voted for the compromise measures, including the Fugitive-Slave Law, and was therefore severely denounced by Abolitionists. He defended himself ably in a letter to the *Advertiser*, Oct. 29, 1850. Four years later, though he had declined reëlection to Congress, he presided over a meeting held at Faneuil Hall, Feb. 23, 1854, and again made public his convictions in a vigorous protest against the repeal of the Missouri Compromise. In 1857, a business house in which Eliot had been a silent partner failed, and he and his wife insisted upon turning over their property to pay the debts. He spent his declining years in "honorable poverty" in Cambridge, where he died in his sixty-fourth year, a poor and disappointed man.

As treasurer of the Prison Discipline Society, Eliot was assailed in 1847 by Charles Sumner (E. L. Pierce, *Memoir and Letters of Charles Sumner*, vol. III, 1893, p. 79), but seems to have had the better of the dispute. He was the first president of Boston Provident Association and a warden of King's Chapel. He published *Observations on the Bible, for the Use of Young Persons* (1842), *The Life of Josiah Henson, Formerly a Slave* (1843), and edited selections from the sermons of Francis W. P. Greenwood, with a memoir (1844). He also contributed articles to the *North American Review* and the *Christian Examiner*. He was a high-minded and public-spirited aristocrat, whom even his enemies described as sincere. Sumner said of him (Sept. 2, 1850) that he was "an honest and obstinate man," but a more favorable verdict is that of Webster, who wrote of Eliot (Sept. 12, 1850), "he is considered the impersonation of Boston; ever-intelligent, ever-patriotic, ever-glorious Boston."

[W. G. Eliot, *Sketch of the Eliot Family* (1887); A. P. Peabody, *Harvard Grads. Whom I Have Known* (1890), pp. 149–68; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 31, 1862.]

C. M. F.



**ELIOT, WILLIAM GREENLEAF** (Aug. 5, 1811–Jan. 23, 1887), founder of Washington University, St. Louis, was born in New Bedford, Mass., the son of William Greenleaf and Margaret (Dawes) Eliot. After the War of 1812 his parents moved to Washington, D. C., where he went to school. He graduated from Columbian College in 1829, and from Harvard Divinity School, Cambridge, Mass., in 1834. He was ordained in the following August. Wishing to identify himself with the West, he accepted an invitation from St. Louis to go there for the purpose of establishing a church. He organized the First Congregational Society within two months after his arrival in January 1835, and by October 1836 the first building had been erected. During the next fifteen years his church outgrew its equipment, and a second building, The Church of the Messiah, was dedicated in December 1851. During these years he traveled extensively for his church, in accordance with the terms of his ordination, stimulating the erection of church edifices and persuading promising ministers to accept their pulpits. In 1853 Eliot Seminary (later Washington University) was created by a state charter, and the corporation was organized on Feb. 22, 1854. Within another year two further projects were launched: O'Fallon Polytechnic Institute, turned over to the city in 1868, and Smith Academy, which in 1857 was absorbed by the newly created Washington University. Mary Institute, now a flourishing secondary school for girls still connected with the University, was established in 1859. Eliot remained president of the board until 1870, when he became acting chancellor on the death of President Chauvenet. Two years later he was made chancellor. He resigned his position as pastor of his church in 1870, and was given the title of pastor emeritus.

Eliot was a political and philosophical liberal. He was in favor of the gradual emancipation of slaves as early as 1834. He promoted this cause in many ways until its realization and then turned his energies toward the establishment of a workable status for the freedmen. After the Civil War these interests led him into other fields. He advocated temperance reform, woman suffrage, and in his last years he struggled successfully to prevent the establishment of legalized prostitution in St. Louis. He labored to keep Missouri in the Union, working intimately with the local loyalist government, the federal forces, and the Washington government. He secured an order from Gen. Frémont in September 1861, for the creation of the Western Sanitary Commission, which attended the armies west of the Alleghanies. He and four others served

without pay in its administration until its dissolution in 1871.

In 1848 he was elected president of the St. Louis school board, whose finances had made free educational work impossible, and by June 1849—the most disastrous year the city had known—he had conceived, and had secured the enactment into state law of a provision for a mill tax for educational purposes which permanently established the financial foundation of the public school system of St. Louis. In addition to his other interests, Eliot was a philanthropist. He was the founder of the Mission Free School in 1856, president of the State Institute for the Blind in 1853, and director in many charitable agencies. He raised sums of money which were immense for his day. The Western Sanitary Commission and Washington University each required millions, and his church assumed heavy charitable and missionary obligations.

Eliot married Abby A. Cranch, daughter of William Cranch [*q.v.*], in 1837. He was a frail man and of small stature. "The contrast was almost pathetic between the smallness of his physical resources and the magnitude of [his] enterprises." He often needed to take extended periods for travel and rest and it was on one of these enforced vacations that he died at Pass Christian. His writings were almost all incidental. He did, however, dramatize the tragedy of slavery in his "Story of Archer Alexander" (1885).

[Eliot's daughter, Charlotte C. Eliot, published *William Greenleaf Eliot, Minister, Educator, Philanthropist*, in 1904. See also Walter G. Eliot, *Sketch of the Eliot Family* (1887); J. G. Forman, *The Western Sanitary Commission* (1864); W. Hyde and H. L. Conard, *Encyc. of Hist. of St. Louis* (1899), II, 674; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of St. Louis City and County* (2 vols., 1883); J. H. Heywood, "W. G. Eliot," *Unitarian Rev.*, Mar. 1887; *Mo. Republican*, Jan. 24, 1887.] F.J.B.

**ELKINS, STEPHEN BENTON** (Sept. 26, 1841–Jan. 4, 1911), secretary of war, United States senator, captain of industry, was a son of Col. Philip Duncan and Sarah Pickett (Withers) Elkins, both of whom were Virginians. His father was born in Fauquier County on July 4, 1809, and his mother, whom his father married in Nov. 9, 1840, was born in Culpeper County. His paternal grandfather was a slaveholder of considerable wealth, but, favoring emancipation, he removed to Ohio in 1821 when his son Philip was twelve years of age, settled in Perry County, and bought considerable land in the southern part of the state, including about 3,000 acres in the coal region of the Hocking Valley, which was later sold by Philip for little or nothing.

Young Stephen was a son of the Middle West. He was born on a farm near New Lexington, Perry County, Ohio, and sometime between 1842 and 1847 was taken to the historic big bend of the Missouri River at Westport, Mo., by his parents, who settled there on a farm which furnished him opportunity for useful muscular exercise both before and after he began his preparation for college in a neighboring town. Without fortune and without friends, he entered the University of Missouri at Columbia, from which by diligent study he graduated at the head of his class in 1860 with the B.A. degree, and which later (in 1868) granted him the M.A. degree. He was especially well trained in mathematics, Greek, and Latin. For a year he taught a country school in Cass County, Mo., numbering among his students the later notorious Cole ("Bud") Younger, who during the Civil War saved his life by aiding his escape from the Quantrill guerrillas. At the opening of the Civil War he enlisted in the Union army as a captain of militia in the 77th Missouri Infantry. In so doing, influenced by his knowledge of the Lincoln-Douglas debates and possibly also by his knowledge of incidents on the neighboring Kansas border, he acted against the advice of Gov. Sterling Price to his graduating class of 1860, against the decision of all other members of his class except one, and against his own father and brother, who joined the Confederates.

In spite of financial reverses to his family, which threw him upon his own resources but strengthened his spirit of self-reliance, he entered law school, and in 1864 he gained admission to the Missouri bar. Soon thereafter (1864), in a prairie schooner, he crossed the plains to New Mexico, where he began practise at Messilia and applied himself to the study of the Spanish language in order to aid his transaction of legal business. Within a year after his arrival he was elected to the territorial legislature and in 1865 was reëlected. He was appointed territorial district attorney in 1866 and served until Jan. 14, 1867. On June 10, 1866, he was married to Sarah Jacobs of Wellington, Mo., by whom he had two daughters.

Later he served as attorney-general of the territory (January–March 1867) and as United States district attorney (1867–70). In 1872 he was elected as a Republican to serve as territorial delegate to the Forty-third Congress, defeating a native New Mexican by a majority of 4,000; and in 1874, on his return from Europe, he discovered that he had been reëlected to Congress, where he served until Mar. 3, 1877. He was untiring in efforts to secure the administration of New Mexico to statehood, and made a speech which attracted wide attention, but his bill of Jan.

12, 1876, failed. While residing in New Mexico he became a large landowner and an extensive owner of mines in Colorado.

His later life was influenced by his second marriage, on Apr. 14, 1875, at Baltimore, Md., to Hallie, daughter of United States Senator Henry G. Davis [*q.v.*]. By her he had five children, one of whom, Davis, became a United States senator. For a time after 1876 he devoted his attention to legal practise and the presidency of the Santa Fé First National Bank, which he had founded. He also had a business office and a winter home in New York in connection with certain land, coal, and railroad interests. About 1890, he removed to a new, palatial residence which he built at Elkins, W. Va., a town founded by him in connection with the development of financial and railroad interests in association with his father-in-law and other prominent men. He actively aided the construction of the West Virginia Central & Pittsburgh Railroad (Western Maryland) of which he was vice-president. After 1890 he became interested in options on large tracts of coal lands on the Monongahela near Morgantown. In 1902 he purchased the Morgantown & Kingwood Railroad and by 1907 had completed it eastward to connect with the Baltimore & Ohio at Rowlesburg and made it a valuable factor in the industrial development of the region. He also had an interest with Henry G. Davis in the Coal & Coke Railway.

In national politics Elkins became prominent in 1884, as adviser and political lieutenant of James G. Blaine, the Republican candidate for president. For three successive presidential campaigns he was a member of the Republican National Committee. In 1888 he extended his reputation in West Virginia by speeches on the tariff and by a forcible, practical address on American civilization before the literary societies of West Virginia University. In December 1891 he was appointed secretary of war and served until the close of Harrison's administration. In February 1895 he was elected to the United States Senate, defeating J. N. Camden, the Democrat candidate. Reëlected in 1901 and again in 1907, he served until his death. In the Senate he carefully studied the larger legislative questions, and by his commanding personality combined with genial good nature, courtesy, and optimism he won a leadership especially in commercial and business affairs. As head of the committee on interstate commerce he had charge of measures designed to remove the railroads from politics, to reform and punish abuses in transportation, and to secure larger

Elkins

public control of the great corporations. He was the author and creator of the anti-rebate act of 1903, and joint author of the Mann-Elkins Act of 1910. His strength in debate was due to his common sense and practical experience, his lucidity, and a happy combination of firmness and gentleness. He was a past-master of the art of conciliation and of compromise in harmonizing conflicting interests.

Elkins was an adventurous pioneer of industry, a fearless explorer of undeveloped fields of wealth which he tapped for use. His faith in the industrial opportunities in West Virginia, and his courage, energy, and judgment in undertaking new enterprises of development in an unexplored wilderness, made him a captain of industry and a power in business, a builder of railroads, an operator of mines, and a creator of towns which justified his faith and judgment and won for him a larger influence in the councils of the state and nation. He became preëminently the business man in politics. In physique he was the personification of energetic health, six feet tall, with broad shoulders, muscular limbs, broad and open brow, kindly blue eyes, and a strong jaw. He was gentle and cheerful in manner, and was simple, domestic, and strongly American in tastes and habits, untempted by the ostentations of wealth. He had literary tastes and was a great reader.

[Geo. W. Atkinson and A. F. Gibbens, *Prominent Men of W. Va.* (1890); Chas. M. Pepper, *Life and Times of Henry Gassaway Davis* (1920); J. M. Callahan, *Hist. of W. Va., Old and New* (1923); *Memorial Addresses on the Life and Character of Stephen Benton Elkins* (1912); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Jan. 5, 1911.]

J. M. C.

**ELKINS, WILLIAM LUKENS** (May 2, 1832–Nov. 7, 1903), capitalist, was born near Wheeling, W. Va., the seventh and youngest child of George Elkins, a pioneer paper manufacturer in the United States, and his wife Susanna Howell. He received his education in the public schools of Philadelphia, whither the family had moved in 1840. In 1847, however, he left school and started to work as clerk in a grocery store. In 1852 he went to New York City for a year where he engaged in the produce business. Returning to Philadelphia, he formed a partnership with Peter Sayboldt under the firm name of Sayboldt & Elkins in the same line of business. As the firm prospered it soon became necessary to keep perishable fruit for long periods. To do this Elkins built the first large refrigerator in Philadelphia. In 1860 he bought out his partner and continued the business under his own name until other activities forced him to abandon it. Shortly after the dis-

covery of petroleum in western Pennsylvania he made a thorough survey of the oil region, organized many oil companies between 1861 and 1880, and operated extensively in the industry. In 1875 he became a partner in the Standard Oil Company but disposed of this interest in 1880. After spending some time in the oil-fields he concluded that the refining of the oil for illuminating purposes offered tremendous opportunities for profit if it could be conducted on a sufficiently large scale. He therefore established a small refinery in Philadelphia and as opportunities arose acquired or built others until he controlled the oil-refining business in that city. The first gasoline made was the product of one of his refineries. In 1873, in addition to his other enterprises, he became engaged in the manufacture of illuminating gas. He secured an interest in a number of gas works throughout the United States, and was one of the organizers of the United Gas & Improvement Company. In the same year he also became interested in street railways as an investment and was one of the organizers of the Philadelphia Traction Company, later the Philadelphia Rapid Transit Company. In the course of a few years he was connected with similar companies in New York City, Chicago, Pittsburgh and Baltimore. His investments in street railways in Philadelphia led him to engage in developing the outlying parts of that city. With P. A. B. Widener he purchased large tracts of land in the northwest section, erecting thereon some three thousand homes.

Despite his varied business interests he found time to promote the development of art in the United States. Besides accumulating a very valuable art collection he established a prize of $5,000 for the most meritorious painting exhibited by an American artist at the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts. He also took a keen interest in civic affairs and served one term in City Council in 1876. In 1873 he was a commissioner to the Vienna Exposition and in 1900 went in a similar capacity to the Paris Exposition. He also served as an aide-de-camp with the rank of colonel on the staff of Gov. J. F. Hartranft of Pennsylvania (1874–79). He might have held other offices but cared more for his home and his business.

On Jan. 21, 1857, he married Maria Louise Broomall of Chester County, Pa., by whom he had two sons and two daughters. He died in Philadelphia of heart-failure resulting from arterio-sclerosis. At the time of his death he was a director in twenty-four corporations and left a fortune estimated at $25,000,000. He was considered one of the most successful and sagacious capitalists of Philadelphia and the varied character of his activities bears witness to his remarkable executive ability. He possessed a sturdy physique, and was affable and hearty in manner.



[J. G. Leach, *Geneal. and Biog. Memorials of the Reading, Howell, Yerkes, Watts, Latham and Elkins Families* (1898), pp. 255–58; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; *Phila. Inquirer*, Phila. *Pub. Ledger*, Nov. 8, 1903.] J. H. F.

**ELLERY, FRANK** (July 23, 1794–Mar. 24, 1871), grandson of William Ellery [*q.v.*], signer of the Declaration of Independence, was born at Newport, R. I., the son of Christopher Ellery and his wife, Clarissa Bird. His father was the first Jeffersonian senator from Rhode Island and died as collector of the port of Newport. On Feb. 19, 1812, Frank Ellery entered the navy as a midshipman. He fought in the first engagement of the War of 1812, the chase of the *Belvidera* by the *President*, and was wounded when the latter's main deck bow gun burst on the fifth shot of the war. Two years later he carried to Macdonough on Lake Champlain a letter of introduction from Oliver H. Perry, and for his services under Macdonough received a sword from Congress and $1,427.13 prize money. Again luck favored him when in 1815 he sailed against the Algerian pirates on the *Constellation*, which participated in the capture of the Algerian flagship *Mashouda*. He cruised with Kearney on the *Enterprise* off the coast of Florida, and in particular assisted in capturing a privateer and slaver off the bar of Amelia Island. He was promoted lieutenant on Mar. 28, 1820, and his claim to have been the first midshipman to be promoted after a regular examination seems to be valid. In 1825 he became associated with Capt. Jesse D. Elliott [*q.v.*] and served the rest of his active career at sea under him, first on the Brazil station on the *Cyane*, and later in the West Indies on the *Erie* and the *Shark*, 1831–32. On Aug. 4, 1835, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Martin of Newport.

In 1839, still a lieutenant, he was given command of the *Enterprise*, was ordered to Brazil, became oppressed with homesickness and anxiety for his family, and sent in his resignation. Though he came to his senses as soon as he returned to the United States and managed to have the resignation cancelled, he was placed on waiting orders for twenty years. By 1856 he was the navy's most ancient lieutenant. He did not help his case in 1858 by a pathetic appeal to President Buchanan, in which he attributed his resigning to temporary aberration of mind.

Most of this period was spent among the green hills of Castleton, Vt., in comparative poverty.

At the beginning of the Civil War, however, though he was sixty-seven years old and had probably never trod the deck of a steam warship, he was called from the farm and put in command of a naval rendezvous, first at Philadelphia and then at Boston, to fit out vessels for the blockade. In 1867 he was placed upon the retired list of commodores as No. 13, no worse place than he would probably have secured if he had served on the sea all his days. He died four years later at Castleton.

[Ellery's memorial to Buchanan is in the Manuscript Division of the Navy Dept. Lib. See also Russell Jarvis, *Biog. Notice of Com. Jesse D. Elliott* (1835), esp. pp. 232 ff., 347. The muster rolls of Lake Champlain are in the Navy Dept. Lib. but do not contain Ellery's name; the pay rolls, also there, do contain it under No. 394. See also Navy Registers; Harrison Ellery, *Pedigree of Ellery of the U. S. A.* (1881); *Army and Navy Jour.*, Mar. 25, 1871.]

W. B. N.

**ELLERY, WILLIAM** (Dec. 22, 1727–Feb. 15, 1820), signer of the Declaration of Independence, the son of William and Elizabeth (Almy) Ellery, was born in Newport, R. I. His great-grandfather, William, came to Gloucester, Mass., in the late seventeenth century, but his grandfather, Benjamin, moved to Bristol, R. I., and afterward to Newport. His father was a Harvard graduate and held several public offices. Graduating from Harvard in 1747, Ellery spent the next twenty-eight years at Newport engaging in various undertakings. He tried his hand as a merchant, served for a time as a naval officer of the colony, put in two terms as clerk of the General Assembly, and finally, twenty-three years after graduating from college, took up the practise of law. At this he seems to have had considerable success, developing some practise even outside of the colony.

The war with the Mother Country gave Ellery his great opportunity in life. A sincere patriot from the beginning, he had already served on some local committees when he was elected to Congress by the General Assembly, taking his seat May 14, 1776. When the next year the election of delegates was given by the General Assembly to the people, Ellery was again a candidate, as he continued to be every year until 1786. He failed of election only twice, in 1780 and 1782. Even in 1780 he was appointed to office by Congress and thus continued to serve at the seat of government. Ellery's distinctive service was as a committeeman, principally on matters having to do with commerce and the navy. His letters to officials in Rhode Island are evidence of his ability in



the handling of details. In 1777 and 1778 he was serving on no less than fourteen committees, including the standing committees on marine, on appeals in prize cases, and on commerce. In 1779 he was appointed as one of the congressional members of the newly created board of admiralty. The next year, upon his failure of reëlection, Congress appointed him one of the non-congressional members of this board.

When hostilities ceased, Ellery became sympathetic with the state-rights movement, which was so strong in Rhode Island. In 1785 he was elected chief justice of the superior court of the state but he never took his seat, urging the necessity of his staying in Congress. At this time he was a particularly valuable member of that body because so many of the older members had withdrawn since the war. After retiring from Congress, Ellery was appointed commissioner of the Continental Loan Office for Rhode Island, which position he held from Apr. 18, 1786, to Jan. 1, 1790. In 1790 he was appointed by Washington collector of the customs for the district of Newport. This position he held for thirty years until his death, being one of the few Federalists who were retained by Jefferson and his successors, apparently because of his Revolutionary record.

When the British occupied Newport during the Revolution they burned Ellery's property in revenge for his activities. It was therefore to discouraging conditions that Ellery returned after the war. In the long years which followed, however, he seems to have rebuilt his fortunes, if we may judge by the list of property advertised by his executors after his death. Ellery's nature was genial and kindly. He had wide knowledge of literature, English, French, and Latin. What proved to be his last morning was spent reading Cicero. He was a prolific letter writer both on public affairs and private, and hundreds of his letters are still preserved. He was twice married: first, in 1750, to Ann Remington of Cambridge, who died in 1764; second, in 1767, to Abigail Cary, his second cousin. Two of his grandsons were Richard Henry Dana and William Ellery Channing.

There is a story, often repeated, to the effect that at the signing of the Declaration of Independence Ellery took his position near the secretary in order to watch the expressions on the faces of the delegates as they affixed their signatures to what might easily prove to be their death warrant, and was able to report that all displayed only "undaunted resolution."

[E. T. Channing, "Life of Wm. Ellery," in Jared

Sparks, *Lib. of Am. Biog.* (1836), is interspersed with long homilies, some of which purport to represent Ellery's thoughts but which probably represent those of the author. Ellery's congressional service is summarized in W. R. Staples, *R. I. in the Continental Congress* (1870), which contains in the appendix 106 letters between him and officials in R. I. Thos. W. Higginson, in *Travellers and Outlaws: Episodes in Am. Hist.* (dated 1889, actually issued late in 1888), published an essay, "A Revolutionary Congressman on Horseback," based on one of the diaries which Ellery kept on trips between his home and the seat of government. Parts of these diaries appear in *Penn. Mag. of Hist and Biog.*, Oct. 1887, Jan. and July 1888. See also Harrison Ellery, *Pedigree of Ellery* (1881); H. R. Palmer, "Wm. Ellery," in *The R. I. Signers of the Declaration of Independence* (1913); *Harvard Univ. Quinquennial Cat., 1636–1925.* There are letters and other MSS. in Lib. of Cong., R. I. Hist. Soc., Mass. Hist. Soc., and elsewhere.]

C.C.H.

**ELLET, CHARLES** (Jan. 1, 1810–June 21, 1862), civil engineer, who was known throughout his life as Charles Ellet, Jr., was born at Penn's Manor, Bucks County, Pa., sixth of the fourteen children of Charles Ellet, a Quaker farmer, and Mary, daughter of Israel Israel, high sheriff of Philadelphia. Israel, who had grown wealthy in Barbados before 1776, was of Swedish or Dutch descent, and a Universalist. During his youth Ellet met, as he said, "many impediments and disappointments." He had no sympathetic guidance from his eccentric, litigious father, who opposed the boy's determination to become an engineer; but he was devoted to his mother. At seventeen he left home, working as rodman on the Susquehanna survey, then (1828) entering the service of the Chesapeake & Ohio Canal in Maryland as unpaid assistant in field and office and finally becoming assistant engineer at $800 a year. Natural aptitude enabled him to acquire some proficiency in mathematics and language with little formal instruction. In March 1830, with his mother's financial assistance, he went to France to attend the École Polytechnique. He witnessed the July revolution, was received by Lafayette, and traveling by foot inspected European and English engineering works.

By 1834 he had proposed a suspension bridge over the Potomac, surveyed for the Utica & Schenectady railroad, and located the western line of the New York & Erie. After a year as assistant, in 1836 he became chief engineer of the James River & Kanawha Canal, a work intended to connect Virginia tidewater with the Ohio, and completed as far as Lynchburg when Ellet retired (1839). In 1842 he built, at a cost of $35,000, the first important suspension bridge in the United States, over the Schuylkill at Fairmount. Having surveyed the city and county of Philadelphia (1841), he became associated with the Schuylkill Navigation Company, reconstructing that important carrier of anthracite coal, personally negotiating loans at home and abroad, and sustaining a notable controversy with the Reading Railroad, the competing line. In 1847 he left the presidency of the navigation company to build suspension bridges of his own design over the Niagara—a spectacular achievement—and over the Ohio at Wheeling. After he had erected a temporary bridge, the Niagara project was interrupted by litigation and he relinquished that work; but in 1849 he completed his Wheeling bridge, 1,010 feet long, then the world's longest span. Although suit in the Supreme Court, instituted in the name of the State of Pennsylvania by Edwin M. Stanton [*q.v.*] in behalf of Pittsburghers, resulted in a decree of abatement, Ellet saved his bridge by inducing Congress to declare it a post-route—only to witness its destruction by storm in 1854.

For twenty-five years he urged the improvement of Western rivers. The Smithsonian Institution published his *Physical Geography of the Mississippi Valley* (1849); and investigations undertaken for the War Department in 1850 resulted in several reports and his *magnum opus,* published in 1853, *The Mississippi and Ohio Rivers.* His plan for controlling floods and improving navigation by impounding surplus waters in upland reservoirs, was Ellet's great work; but vigorous efforts failed to secure the legislation to effect it. (His reports were reissued in 1927–28 for the Flood Control Committee of the Seventieth Congress.)

He was engineer for the Hempfield Railroad in 1851–55, the Virginia Central in 1853–57—for which in 1854 he built across the Blue Ridge a track of unprecedented curvature and grade—and the Kanawha improvement, in 1858. His knowledge of Virginia topography and resources enabled him to suggest plans for crushing the Confederacy in 1861.

Visiting Europe during the Crimean War, Ellet urged Russia to employ "ram-boats" in the relief of Sebastopol, a bold innovation in naval warfare; and later offered counter-plans to the allies. Returned home, he persistently urged his ram-boat scheme on successive secretaries of the navy, and widely circulated his *Coast and Harbour Defences* (1855). From 1857 he lived in Washington, devoting himself after 1860 to study and exposition of the military situation. Repeated offers of his services to the national and state governments were disregarded until 1862, when the *Merrimac* demonstrated the efficacy of the ram. Two weeks later Ellet was preparing a ram-fleet to clear

the Mississippi. Stanton commissioned him a colonel, and made him subject only to the secretary of war. Hastily remodeling nine river boats on the Ohio, Ellet, with a volunteer crew, passed Fort Pillow and, on June 6, after sinking four Confederate boats before Memphis, received the surrender of that city. Ellet—the only Union man injured—died as his boat touched shore at Cairo, June 21, and was buried from Independence Hall, Philadelphia. His wife, Elvira, daughter of Judge William Daniel of Lynchburg, whom he had married in 1837, survived him only eight days. Their son, Charles Rivers Ellet (1843–1863), became a colonel, and a brother, Lieut.-Col. (later Brig.-Gen.) Alfred Washington Ellet (1820–1895), succeeded to the command of the fleet of rams.

Ellet was a prolific writer. Forty-six published works, as well as numerous technical and popular articles, attest his trenchant style in scientific and controversial writing. His *Essay on the Laws of Trade* (1839), a recondite treatise on rate-making, was followed by several pioneer contributions to transportation economics. After 1860 articles for American and English periodicals reveal his grasp of war-time problems; and scathing criticism of McClellan's competency, and the strategy of various Union generals made him a conspicuous, though not always popular, figure. In 1861 he published *The Army of the Potomac and Its Mismanagement,* and the following year, *Military Incapacity and What it Costs the Country.*

Recognized at home and abroad as one of the great engineers of his epoch, Ellet was called the "Brunel of America." Six feet two and slender, he presented a commanding appearance. After 1840 his health, never robust, was precarious, but his restless energy was unabated. Although he was the soul of courtesy, his austere integrity, his dislike for society, and his uncanny skill in controversy repelled intimacy, and perhaps account for his almost incredible activity.

[Notices of Ellet appear in C. B. Stuart, *Lives and Works of Civil and Military Engineers of America* (1871), pp. 257–85; J. T. Headley, *Farragut and Our Naval Commanders* (1867), pp. 209–23; W. D. Crandall and I. D. Newell, *Hist. of the Ram Fleet . . . The Ellets and Their Men* (1907); *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887), I, 430–59, 611–31; J. S. C. Abbott, "Charles Ellet and His Naval Steam Rams," *Harper's,* Feb. 1866; obituary notice from the *North American* (Phila.), June 22, 1862, in Littell's *Living Age,* Aug. 1862; obituary in *Evening Star* (Washington), June 23, 1862. "Three Letters on the Revolution of 1830" written by Ellet (edited with a biographical note by H. P. Gambrell), *Jour. of Modern Hist.,* Dec. 1929, are of interest. The above sketch, and the writer's forthcoming biography of Ellet, are based on the rich collection of Ellet MSS. preserved by his daughter, Mrs. William D. Cabell of Chicago.]

H. P. G.



**ELLET, ELIZABETH FRIES LUMMIS** (October 1818–June 3, 1877), author, was born at Sodus Point, Lake Ontario, N. Y., the daughter of Dr. William Nixion Lummis and his second wife, Sarah (Maxwell) Lummis. Dr. Lummis belonged to a New Jersey family and practised medicine in Philadelphia but, purchasing the Pulteney estate at Sodus Point, removed there and became a pioneer in developing western New York. Elizabeth was educated at the Female Seminary, Aurora, N. Y. She began to write when she was fifteen and seems always to have been happiest when she was studying and writing. Her first published work was a translation of Silvio Pellico's tragedy, *Euphemio of Messina* (1834). A volume of original poems and a tragedy based on Venetian history, *Teresa Contarini,* appeared in 1835. In that year or shortly afterward she married Dr. William H. Ellet, professor of chemistry at Columbia College, New York City. He soon became a professor at South Carolina College, Columbia, S. C., where they lived until 1849, when they returned to New York. Two kinds of studies interested Elizabeth Ellet: foreign history and literature, and American history. She was proficient in French, German, and Italian; translated and adapted legends from those languages, and wrote criticism of foreign works. Her books of this type include *The Characters of Schiller* (1839), with a critical essay on Schiller's genius; *Scenes in the Life of Joanna of Sicily* (1840), partly historical, partly imaginary; *Evenings at Woodlawn* (1849), a species of *Arabian Nights,* consisting of adaptations of German legends never before presented in English; *Novelettes of the Musicians* (1852), blendings of fact and fiction of German origin; *Women Artists in all Ages and Countries* (1859). Her books based on American history include: *Women of the American Revolution* (1848); *Domestic History of the American Revolution* (1850); *Pioneer Women of the West* (1852); *Queens of American Society* (1867); *Court Circles of the Republic* (1869). She wrote several miscellaneous books, *Rambles about the Country* (1840), *Family Pictures from the Bible* (1849); *Watching Spirits* (1851); *Summer Rambles in the West* (1853); edited *The New Cyclopædia of Domestic Economy and Practical Housekeeper* (1872); and contributed articles to many magazines, including the *American Quarterly Review,* the *North American Review,* and the *Southern Quarterly*

*Review.* In 1859 her husband died. She continued to live in New York City, and died there at her home on Twelfth St. During most of her life she was an Episcopalian but in her later years became a Roman Catholic. Though most of her time was absorbed by writing, she gave much attention to her home and was actively helpful in various charities for women and children. Her historical and critical writings show a great amount of careful work and, in spite of a vivid imagination, she was apparently scrupulous not to mix fact and fiction without giving notice in her prefaces. She was intensely patriotic and deeply interested in the contributions of women to American history. Her style in her prose works is gossipy and superficially interesting. Her poetry is neither original nor musical; its best quality is its expression of the love of nature and especially of favorite places, as in "Lake Ontario," "Sodus Bay," and "Susquehannah."

[E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (1856); R. W. Griswold, *The Female Poets of America* (1849); Introduction by Anne Hollingsworth Wharton to Mrs. Ellet's *Women of the Am. Revolution* (ed. of 1900); obituaries in the *N. Y. Tribune* and *N. Y. Times*, both June 4, 1877.] S. G. B.

**ELLICOTT, ANDREW** (Jan. 24, 1754–Aug. 28, 1820), surveyor and mathematician, came of Dutch and English Quaker stock. The eldest son of Joseph and Judith (Bleaker) Ellicott and brother of Joseph Ellicott [*q.v.*], he was born in Solebury township, Bucks County, Pa., picked up the scanty schooling of his day in Solebury and Philadelphia, at twenty-one married Sarah Brown of Newton and took her to the new home of his patriarchal clan in Maryland. His father and uncles, prosperous millers with a turn for mechanics, were the founders (1775) of Ellicott City. The young Andrew shared the family bent, and at the age of fifteen helped his father in the manufacture of a masterpiece among grandfather's clocks, but later his ingenuity turned to the making of transits. His taste for mathematics and the tendencies of his times spoiled him for the career of miller or clockmaker—as they drew him out of the Society of Friends. Soon after his marriage he joined the Maryland militia. At the end of the Revolutionary War, during which he rose to the rank of major, he returned to "Fountainvale," the tribal homestead at Ellicott's Upper Mills. In these years he published a series of almanacs, *The United States Almanack*, of which the earliest known copy is dated 1782.

As a pupil of Robert Patterson in Philadelphia, he had been immensely impressed by the two "mathematicians" sent from England to draw that long-disputed boundary between Pennsylvania and Maryland which no local surveyor was competent to find. It must therefore have given Ellicott a thrill in 1784 to be appointed member for Virginia of the group of surveyors that continued the Mason and Dixon Line from the point where the two Englishmen dropped it in 1767. Moving to Baltimore in 1785, he taught mathematics in the Academy of that town, and in 1786 he served a term in the Maryland legislature. At the same time, however, he was a member of the Pennsylvania commissions for running the western (1785) and northern (1786) boundaries of that state and for surveying the islands in the Ohio and Allegheny rivers (1788). In 1789, when he moved to Philadelphia, he enlisted Franklin's aid in getting himself appointed by the new federal government to fix the southwestern boundary of New York. The site of the present Erie was then in dispute between New York and Pennsylvania and one of the determining points of the controversy lay within the Canadian frontier. As the American surveyors arrived at Fort Niagara before the British commandant's instructions, there was a delay by which Ellicott profited to make the earliest topographical study of the Niagara River. His letter to Benjamin Rush describing the falls, and another to Washington relating his encounter with the British commandant (*Buffalo Historical Society Publications*, XV, 384, XXVI, 22), are among the most readable of his writings. In general, it must be owned, he had a happier hand with the theodolite than with the pen. Only to his adored Sally could he be counted on to write with a touch of life.

Ellicott's work in New York, which established his reputation, brought him a less arduous but more vexatious engagement. In February 1791 he began at Alexandria the survey of the ten-mile square ceded by Maryland and Virginia for the "permanent seat" of the government. This kept him busy until 1793, when he published the first map of the "Territory" of Columbia. He had nothing to do with designing the "Federal City." That was L'Enfant's creation. Ellicott, however, did much of the incidental surveying and marking out of the plan on the ground, and after L'Enfant's dismissal by Jefferson he redrew the plan for the engraver, introducing such alterations as Jefferson instructed him to make. On this account, and because his name appeared on it, whereas L'Enfant's did not, the revised version issued in 1792 became known as the Ellicott plan. His account of the methods employed in surveying the city

of Washington is in the *Transactions of the American Philosophical Society*, vol. IV (1799). As a reward for his services in facilitating the publication and execution of the plan, the Commissioners of Washington presented Ellicott with a pair of silver cups. Within a few months, however, relations between recipient and donors grew so strained that Ellicott found his position untenable; and after the final break, at the end of 1793, the Commissioners did their utmost to discredit him (*e.g.*, their letter to Washington of Mar. 23, 1794).

Nevertheless, Ellicott continued to receive public appointments. In 1794 Gov. Mifflin appointed him one of three commissioners to lay out the town of Presqu'Isle (Erie), and he spent the next two years in plotting out a road through the wildest part of Pennsylvania, from Reading to that town. In 1796 he was commissioned to survey the frontier between the United States and Florida. He submitted his report in 1800 and published it at Philadelphia in 1803, with maps and observations (*The Journal of Andrew Ellicott, Late Commissioner on Behalf of the United States . . . 1796 . . . 1800*). For a few years he held the post of secretary to the Pennsylvania Land Office. In 1811 Georgia invited him to run the line between that state and South Carolina—but refused to pay him more than his expenses, because his line ran eighteen miles south of Georgia's hopes. In 1813 he went to West Point as professor of mathematics; and there ended his days in peace, with Sally (mother of nine) still at his side.

[There are four memoirs of Ellicott: C. W. Evans, *Biog. and Hist. Account of the Fox, Ellicott, and Evans Families* (1882), Catharine Van Cortlandt Mathews, *Andrew Ellicott, His Life and Letters* (1908), G. Hunter Bartlett, "Andrew and Joseph Ellicott" in *Buffalo Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. XXVI, and Sally K. Alexander (Ellicott's great-grand-daughter), "A Sketch of the Life of Maj. Andrew Ellicott" in *Records of the Columbia Hist. Soc.* (Washington, D.C.), vol. II (1899). There are also useful references in W. B. Bryan's *Hist. of the National Capital* (1914–16); *Am. State Papers: For. Rel.*, vol. II (1832); and Jas. Wilkinson, *Memoirs of My Own Times* (1816). More valuable for the Washington period is the manuscript material in the Washington, Jefferson, and Digges-Morgan-L'Enfant Papers, in Dist. of Col., Letters and Papers (all at the Lib. of Congress), and in the records of the original Commissioners (among the archives of the Commission on Public Buildings and Grounds, now housed in the Navy Department). A miniature of Ellicott, painted at New Orleans in 1799, is owned by Mr. I. D. Curtis of Litchfield, Conn.] H. G. D.

**ELLICOTT, JOSEPH** (Nov. 1, 1760–Aug. 19, 1826), engineer, land agent, was born in Bucks County, Pa., the third son of Joseph and Judith (Bleaker) Ellicott, and brother of Andrew Ellicott [*q.v.*]. His mother was of Dutch stock, his father English. Like his father and brothers he early showed a marked aptitude for science and mechanics. His formal education was limited to the common school of a backwoods county; his native talent was developed in congenial surroundings in Maryland whither his family moved in December 1774. Near Baltimore his father and uncles erected flour mills where new and ingenious mechanical devices were introduced. Here Joseph remained until 1780. After teaching for a time, in 1785 he joined his brother Andrew, from whom he learned surveying, in locating the western boundary of Pennsylvania. During the next fifteen years he took part in one survey after another, first as assistant to his brother in locating the southwestern boundary of New York State (1789) and in the survey of Washington City, later working independently. In 1791 he was employed by the federal government to run the line between Georgia and the territory of the Creek Indians.

The turning point in his career came in 1794 with his entry into the service of the Holland Land Company, a group of Dutch bankers who had invested largely in wild lands in Pennsylvania and New York. Employed at first as an explorer in northern Pennsylvania, he began in the fall of 1797 the survey of the Holland Purchase, a tract of over three million acres in western New York. This survey, which necessitated the subdivision of the lands into townships six miles square, grouped in a series of ranges, required two years for completion. When in the autumn of 1800 the Holland Company was ready to open its lands for settlement, Ellicott was appointed agent under the supervision of the Company's general agent in Philadelphia. For twenty-one years he was the "patroon" of western New York. From his office at Batavia he directed the multifarious details incident to a great land agency. He arranged for the opening of roads through the new country, for internal surveys of the townships into small lots, for the making of contracts for land sales, for the collection of instalments, and for the granting of deeds and mortgages. The leniency of the Holland Company toward its indebted settlers was in large part the result of Ellicott's advice. He founded the city of Buffalo. From the first he appreciated the importance of its site and was responsible for preventing its inclusion within the Indian reservation nearby. In 1803 he had the village laid out on plans similar to those used for the city of Washington. He was a strong advocate of the Erie Canal, a project which promised great benefits to the Holland Company and to Ellicott himself, who had become a large landholder in western

New York. Though he held the position of canal commissioner for a time and directed some of the preliminary surveys, his duties as land agent forced his resignation before the work was well begun.

Ellicott was an impressive person physically, over six feet tall and powerfully built, with a tendency in later life to corpulence. There was something paradoxical in his character. Raised in a Quaker family, he was by nature a fighter; hot-tempered and domineering, he was extremely lenient with the debtors under his control; a wealthy man and something of an aristocrat in his backwoods community, in politics he was a Democrat; no public speaker and in later life averse to all social intercourse, yet for a score of years he was the "boss" of his party in western New York, controlling nominations and appointments. His enemies declared, but quite erroneously, that he used his position as land agent to build up his political power. He never married. At his home in Batavia he surrounded himself with relatives to whom he showed much generosity. About 1818 he fell victim to melancholia and became almost a recluse. This condition and increasing opposition to him because of his political activities unfitted him for his duties as land agent. He resigned by request in 1821 and devoted himself to his private business until his disease forced him into an asylum. He died in 1826.

[Ellicott Evans, "Reminiscences of Jos. Ellicott," *Buffalo Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. II (1880); G. H. Bartlett, "Andrew and Joseph Ellicott," *Ibid.*, vol. XXVI (1922); P. D. Evans, "The Holland Land Co.," *Ibid.*, vol. XXVIII (1924); C. W. Evans, *Biog. and Hist. Accounts of the Fox, Ellicott, and Evans Families* (1882); C. V. Mathews, *Andrew Ellicott* (1908); O. Turner, *Pioneer Hist. of the Holland Purchase of Western N. Y.* (1849).] P. D. E.

**ELLIOT, DANIEL GIRAUD** (Mar. 7, 1835–Dec. 22, 1915), zoölogist, was born in New York City, the fourth son of George T. and Rebecca Giraud (Foster) Elliot. His father's ancestors were early settlers of New London, Conn.; his mother's were of French origin, settling at New Rochelle, N. Y. Delicate health prevented his entering college, and instead he traveled extensively in Europe, Egypt, Turkey, the West Indies, and Brazil, gaining a wide knowledge of the birds, a subject in which he had always been interested. An artist of no mean attainments, his ambitions led him to the publication of large folios, like those of John Gould, monographing various families of birds with life-size illustrations from his own brush, and from those of Wolf and Keulemans. These included birds of paradise, pheasants, ant thrushes, horn



bills, and other species. His own collection of birds, consisting of some one thousand specimens, and covering most of the described species in North America, was the best private collection extant, and was secured by the American Museum of Natural History in 1869. In that same year Elliot removed to London where he remained for some ten years, taking an active part in the affairs of the British Ornithologists' Union and the Zoological Society, and associating intimately with the notable coterie of ornithologists then at the height of their fame—Sclater, Salvin, Seebohm, Newton. During his years abroad he also bought specimens for the American Museum and on his return brought with him a large collection of humming birds, which at that time was probably the most complete in the world. He became one of the founders of the American Ornithologists' Union, and was its second president (1890–91).

In 1894 Elliot left New York to become curator of zoölogy at the recently established Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago, a post which he held for the next twelve years. He turned his attention mainly to the mammals, and published several monographic volumes on the mammals of North and Middle America and the West Indies. Finally, at the age of sixty-one, he personally headed an expedition to Africa for the purpose of enriching the remarkable collection of mammals which he had already brought together at the museum. Returning to New York, he established himself at the American Museum, to the development of which he had given much time and thought. Here, with untiring energy, he began the preparation of his *Review of the Primates* (3 vols., 1912), which involved an immense amount of research, and which took him to all of the principal zoölogical museums of the world.

Personally, Elliot was a notable figure of a man. He was tall and dignified, with full beard, piercing eyes, and a refined modulated voice. He possessed a remarkable memory and a splendid command of language, and his memorial addresses on Coues and Sclater were striking examples of oratory. He was the recipient of many foreign orders and medals given in recognition of his beautiful monographs. After his death the Elliot Medal was established in his honor by the National Academy of Science, for meritorious publications in zoölogy. His long career of activity linked, as it were, the ornithologies of Wilson and Audubon, with their large folio plates, with the meticulous handbooks and synopses of later days, and the transition is clearly seen in his own publications.

In 1858 Elliot married Anne Eliza Henderson, by whom he had two daughters.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; *The Auk*, Jan. 1917; *Science*, Feb. 4, 1916; *Am. Museum Jour.*, Mar. 1915; personal acquaintance.] W. S—e.

**ELLIOT, JAMES** (Aug. 18, 1775–Nov. 10, 1839), politician, was born in Gloucester, Mass., the son of James and Martha (Day) Elliot. His father, a sailor, enlisted in the Revolution and died at sea of smallpox, leaving his family destitute. His mother moved to New Salem, in the Berkshires, where as a seamstress, with some aid from relatives, she was able to support her three boys. At the age of seven he went to work for a Captain Sanderson, a farmer and storekeeper of Petersham, who used him kindly. His mother taught him to read the Bible devotedly and also put him through *The Pilgrim's Progress, Dilworth's Speller,* and the *Catechism.* Later a tattered volume of *Josephus* and Rollin's *Ancient History* made him ambitious of an education and of military experience. In 1790 he moved to Guilford, Vt., where he enjoyed the friendship of Royall Tyler [*q.v.*]. On July 12, 1793, he enlisted as the first non-commissioned officer in a company of the second United States Sub-Legion commanded by Capt. Cornelius Lyman, saw service in the Whiskey Insurrection and in the Indian warfare waged in the Northwest Territory, and was discharged at Fort St. Clair on July 1, 1796. Extracts from his journal kept during this period are the most interesting part of *The Poetical and Miscellaneous Works of James Elliot, Citizen of Guilford, Vermont, and late a Non-commissioned Officer in the Legion of the United States* (1798), which was printed for the author in an edition of 300 copies by Thomas Dickman in Greenfield, Mass. This book was his only venture into literature. It attests a culture that, however imitative and undiscriminating, was remarkable in a self-taught, poverty-pinched young soldier and law student. It also exhibits winning qualities of mind: the author's patriotism is noble and generous, he is just and rational in his observations on the Indians, he pleads for the better education of women. In 1803 Elliot was admitted to the bar, began practise in Brattleboro, and in the same year was elected to Congress. He served from Mar. 4, 1803, till Mar. 3, 1809, as a member of the House of Representatives in the Eighth, Ninth, and Tenth Congresses. Officially he was a Federalist, which is the one mystery in his life. He was a democrat in his principles, used "citizen" as a title of address, revered Samuel Adams, George Clinton, Thomas Jefferson, and



James Madison, and named his first-born after Madison. For a while he edited the *Freeman's Journal* in Philadelphia, served as captain for a short time in the War of 1812, and then returned to Brattleboro. He was representative in the state legislature for Newfane 1818–19 and 1837–38, was clerk of Windham County 1819 and 1820 and continuously from 1826 to 1836, was register of the probate court Dec. 26, 1822–Nov. 30, 1834, was state attorney of the county 1837–38, was a justice of the peace for twenty-one years, and was always a respected and useful citizen. His wife, Lucy Dow, survived him for thirty years. His brother Samuel was also a distinguished citizen of Vermont.

[*Biog. Directory of the Am. Cong.* (1928); W. G. Eliot, *A Sketch of the Eliot Family* (1887); M. R. Cabot, ed., *Annals of Brattleboro* (2 vols., 1921–22); T. H. Benton, *Abridgment of the Debates of Cong. 1789–1856* (1857–61), vol. III.] G. H. G.

**ELLIOT, JONATHAN** (1784–Mar. 12, 1846), editor and publicist, was born near Carlisle, England. Coming to New York City at the age of eighteen, he began work as a printer. In 1810 he went to South America, to serve as a volunteer in the revolutionary army under Bolivar; after suffering the hardships of a wound and imprisonment, he returned to the United States in 1813. He is supposed to have served in the American army during the War of 1812, but between the date of his return to this country, and the commencement of his newspaper work, there was little time for fighting, except possibly in the latter part of 1814. His real career began that year. In December 1813, he entered a partnership with two associates, to produce the first daily evening newspaper ever published in Washington, the *Washington City Gazette;* the first number appeared in January 1814. Elliot was the printer. Soon after the capture of Washington, in the following summer, the paper suspended publication. In November 1815 it was revived, as the *Washington City Weekly Gazette,* with Elliot as publisher and editor. In 1817 the journal, now *City of Washington Gazette,* became a daily; this evidence of increasing prosperity may have been due to increased patronage, or—more probably—to lucrative public printing contracts received from the secretary of the treasury, William H. Crawford. In 1826 Elliot sold the *Gazette* and abandoned the newspaper field, except for a brief return in 1828. In that year some of Jackson's opponents started a campaign paper, *We the People,* with Elliot as editor.

As a newspaper man, he took an active part in national politics. In 1816 he advocated the

nomination of William H. Crawford, Monroe's chief rival; the rewards for this support have already been mentioned. In 1822 he was still supporting Crawford, although at the same time he made overtures to John Quincy Adams, offering his services in return for a consideration. It seems that Adams, as secretary of state, had formerly given Elliot considerable printing in connection with the census, but Elliot's charges for the work were so extortionate that Adams gave him no more. Thereupon Elliot hinted that he had already ruined Calhoun's chances of getting the presidency, and he threatened to ruin Adams's, too. When Adams remained unmoved by these advances, Elliot redoubled his efforts in behalf of Crawford. Adams's opinion of Elliot was not high; he described him as "an Englishman, having no character of his own—pelnurious and venal—metal to receive any stamp" (*Memoirs*, VI, 47).

After withdrawing from the newspaper field, Elliot began the work for which he is still well known to-day, the publication of historical material. In 1827 he published the first volume of *Debates, Resolutions, and Other Proceedings in Convention on the Adoption of the Federal Constitution.* This, as he intimated in the preface, was something of a gamble; "the pecuniary risk" was so heavy, he wrote, that he felt impelled to ask for the help of Congress and of the bar. If the venture should prove profitable, other volumes would follow. His wishes were gratified, and between 1827 and 1830 he published three more volumes. The extensive demand for the work warranted a second edition, "much enlarged and improved," published in 1836. Nine years later he added a fifth volume, including Madison's notes of debates in the Federal Convention. Described by Justice Story as "an invaluable repository of facts and arguments," the *Debates* still stand as one of the most valuable collections relating to the Constitution.

In 1827 Elliot also published the first edition of another compilation known as the *Diplomatic Code of the United States of America.* This included the treaties and conventions between the United States and foreign governments, together with abstracts of judicial decisions bearing upon foreign affairs, and a summary of the principles of international law. In a second edition, published in 1834, *The American Diplomatic Code,* the collection was brought down to that date. In the Jackson administration, Secretary of State McLane adopted the "code" for the use of his department. Although the collection of treaties has been superseded by later



collections, Elliot's summaries of judicial decisions are still valuable. In 1830 he published a large volume, compiled by J. A. Brereton, entitled *Florae Columbianae,* and in the same year a much better known work of his own: *Historical Sketches of the Ten Miles Square Forming the District of Columbia.* This is the source from which numerous guide books have been drawn. His last work, published in 1845, was the *Funding System of the United States and of Great Britain,* including a mass of statistical extracts from treasury reports, and other material dealing with the public debt.

Though Elliot's *Debates* are known to every student of American history, Elliot himself, the man, is something of a phantom, a mere bibliographical abstraction. One journalist wrote that in "private life he was frank, generous, warmhearted, an affectionate father, and a kind husband." He was twice married and left four children, one son being Jonathan, Jr., and another, Henry, a member of the bar of New Orleans.

[Obituaries in the Washington *Daily National Intelligencer,* Mar. 13, 1846, and *Daily Union,* Mar. 14, 1846. There are cursory notices of him in the *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams* (1874–77); in W. B. Bryan, *A Hist. of the National Capital* (1914–16); and in a paper by A. R. Spofford, "Washington in Literature," in the *Records of the Columbia Hist. Soc.,* VI (1903), 53–55.] R.V.H.

**ELLIOTT, AARON MARSHALL** (Jan. 24, 1844–Nov. 9, 1910), philologist, son of Aaron and Rhoda (Mendenhall) Elliott, was born in Wilmington, N. C., and received there his early schooling. Sent in 1862 by his Quaker parents past the military lines to co-religionists in the North, he was graduated from Haverford College in 1866 and again from Harvard in 1868. He then spent eight years in Europe, following Oriental and Indo-European philological courses in the great university centers, studying at first hand the languages and the peoples of France, Germany, Italy, Spain, and Portugal, and supporting himself the while by tutoring and writing travel sketches. After his return he still spent his summers in study abroad, and in addition to his command of the languages of western Europe, he learned Roumanian, Arabic, Russian and modern Greek, as well as Canadian French. In 1876 Elliott was appointed associate in languages in the first faculty of the Johns Hopkins, and in 1892 professor of the Romance languages. He was the American pioneer in organizing the scientific study of the modern languages and literatures. In 1883 he brought about the establishment of the Modern Language Association, was for nine years its

secretary and the editor of its publications, and was in 1894 its president. In 1886 he founded the first American technical journal in his field, *Modern Language Notes,* with at the beginning but one subscriber; he employed his own typesetter and during the first seventeen years issued this periodical from his own small press. Contributions from his pen to the literature of his subject appeared in numerous journals and ranged from the most general themes to the most technical.

It was, however, as a trainer of scholars and teachers that Elliott made his deepest impression. The graduate school of Romance languages, which he built up at Johns Hopkins' sent out the majority of the leaders in that domain for a generation, and in addition he frequently, through correspondence, guided for years the studies of promising men whom he had not so much as seen. As a token of the appreciation in which he was held by his fellows, several of his friends published a two-volume memorial, which appeared shortly after his death under the title, *Studies in Honor of A. Marshall Elliott.* His was a moral as well as an intellectual leadership. To a wide range of knowledge and a keen appreciation of scholarship and of the severe discipline which underlies it, he combined inexhaustible patience and geniality. These qualities, along with his sympathetic understanding, faith in men, tenacity in building with the material at hand, and his enduring optimism, secured for him the unquestioned leadership throughout the country in the development not alone of the Romance languages, but of all modern-language work, and he fortunately lived long enough to see this discipline assume in some measure the place he firmly believed that it merited in the intellectual activities of the nation. He married, on June 14, 1905, Lily Tyson Manly, daughter of James E. Tyson of Ellicott City, Md.

[*Modern Language Notes,* Dec. 1910; *Pubs. of the Modern Language Asso.,* Mar. 1911; *Johns Hopkins Univ. Circular,* Jan. 1911; *Harvard Grads. Mag.,* Mar. 1911; *Romanic Rev.,* vol. VIII, July–Sept., 1917, pp. 328–40; E. C. Armstrong, *A. Marshall Elliott: A Retrospect* (1923), Elliott Monographs, no. 15; George C. Keidel, *The Early Life of Professor Elliott* (1917); the *Sun* (Baltimore), Nov. 10, 1910.] E. C. A.

**ELLIOTT, BENJAMIN** (March 1787–September 1836), lawyer, author, was born in Charleston, S. C., with which city he was closely associated throughout his life. His father was Thomas Odingsell Elliott who married Mary, sister of Charles Pinckney [*q.v.*], and through both parents he traced his ancestry to prominent South Carolina families. The exact



date of his birth is not known, but he was baptized Mar. 25, 1787. His primary education was obtained at home and in the public schools, whence he proceeded to the College of New Jersey (Princeton), graduating in 1806, with high honors. Distinguished throughout his academic course for intense application and capacity for research, he carried these characteristics into his law studies which he prosecuted in the office of Thomas Parker of Charleston. On his admission to the bar in 1810 he became a partner of Robert Y. Hayne [*q.v.*], with whom he remained associated till the latter abandoned law for politics. He was early drawn into the nullification controversy, and though as a member of the state legislature for several terms he was not prominent in its proceedings, his profound and exact learning was placed unreservedly at the service of the state-rights party, whose actions received his unqualified support throughout the controversy with the federal government. In his pioneer pamphlet *A Refutation of the Calumnies circulated against the Southern and Western States, respecting the Institution and Existence of Slavery,* published in 1822—the first of its kind—he made one of the ablest expositions and defenses of the attitude of the South in regard to the peculiar institution. In the force of his logic and wealth of constitutional doctrine and illustration he was not surpassed in polemical vigor and learning by any subsequent writer on the subject. He was for some years a member of the Charleston City Council, but his character, training, and inclinations did not contribute to make him successful in public life; he was happiest when immersed in literary composition or research. His work as commissioner in equity and subsequently as master in the equity court of Charleston County, which later position he held at the time of his death, was competently performed, but did not offer any special opportunity for the exercise of his intellectual powers. In addition to the pamphlet before mentioned, he was the author of an *Oration on the Inauguration of the Federal Constitution* (1813); *A Sketch of the Means and Benefits of prosecuting this war against Britain* (1814), a vitriolic pamphlet in support of the war policy of the federal government; and an *Oration delivered in St. Philip's Church, Charleston, S. C., 4 July 1817* (1817)—eloquent but turgid in style. He also made a digest of the acts of Congress and the state referring to the militia, which was published under the title *The Militia System of South Carolina* (1835), and compiled the proceedings in South Carolina preceding the adop-

tion of the Federal Constitution. Elliott died in September 1836, and was buried on the twelfth. His wife was Catharine O. Savage.

[J. B. O'Neall, *Biog. Sketches of the Bench and Bar of S. C.* (1859), II, 402; *Cyc. of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas of the Nineteenth Century* (1892), I, 183; *The South in the Building of the Nation* (1909), XI, 317; *Charleston Courier*, Sept. 12, 1836; certain information supplied by Mabel L. Webber of the S. C. Hist. Soc.] H.W.H.K.

**ELLIOTT, CHARLES** (May 16, 1792–Jan. 8, 1869), Methodist clergyman, editor, historian, was born in County Donegal, Ireland, and died in Mt. Pleasant, Iowa. He came to America in 1814, with two years' experience as a preacher, soon afterwards affiliated with the Ohio Methodist Conference, and in 1819 was appointed to the Zanesville circuit. In 1822 he was made a missionary to the Wyandot Indians, and with his wife proceeded into their reservations, under the patronage of a Christianized chief named Between-the-Logs. His experience during this time taught him, he said, that Christianity was "suited to every nation of every description, whether barbarous or civil" (*Reminiscences*, p. 186), and convinced him that it was wise to convert first and civilize later. After his assignment as a missionary he was made presiding elder of the Ohio District, 1824–25, and later, 1833–34, of the Pittsburgh District. From 1827 to 1831 he taught languages in Madison College, operated under Methodist control at Uniontown, Pa., and toward the beginning of 1834 he was made editor of the Pittsburgh Conference *Journal*. In 1836 he was appointed editor of the *Western Christian Advocate*, but returned to the ministry in 1849 and in 1850–51 was presiding elder of the Dayton District. During the long debate within his church as to whether or not slavery was scripturally defensible, he was an ardent contender for the negative, and in 1848 he was appointed by the General Conference of the Northern group of Methodists to write a history of their organization since the withdrawal of the Southern group four years earlier. This appointment resulted in the publication of three works: *The Sinfulness of American Slavery, Proved from its Evil Sources, its Injustice, its Wrongs; . . . Together with Observations on Emancipation and the Duties of American Citizens in Regard to Slavery* (1850); *A History of the Great Secession from the Methodist Episcopal Church in the Year 1845, Eventuating in the Organization of the New Church Entitled the "Methodist Episcopal Church, South"* (1885); *The Bible and Slavery: in which the Abrahamic and Mosaic Discipline is Considered in Connection with the Most Ancient Forms of Slavery, and the Pauline Code on Slavery as Related to Roman Slavery and the Discipline of the Apostolic Churches* (1857). His *Indian Missionary Reminiscences . . . in which is Exhibited the Efficacy of the Gospel in Elevating Ignorant and Savage Men* (1850) is a work calculated not so much for secular inquiries as for theologians. The *Delineation of Roman Catholicism* (1841) sets forth in two volumes what he believed to be the iniquitousness of Rome. He yearned to go to Italy as a missionary, and he is indeed, it is said, more than anyone else, responsible for the Methodist activities inaugurated in Rome shortly after his death. In 1852 he again became editor of the *Western Christian Advocate*. Five years later he was made president of Iowa Wesleyan University, and remained in that position until 1861. There, in 1859, by countenancing the graduation of a woman, he opened the way for coeducation. In 1860 he was requisitioned from Iowa by the Methodist Conference to displace the editor of the *Central Christian Advocate* in St. Louis, who in his pronouncements at that moment was not quite definitely enough anti-southern. There was no trouble on that score with Elliott, but when in 1863 he was summoned back to his college he determined to go. He was president there again 1863–66. He has been spoken of as "a man of genial character and tireless energy" (Barker, *Ohio Methodism*, p. 160), but in much of his writing he appears to be the fanatic rather than the philosopher.

[J. M. Barker, *Hist. of Ohio Methodism* (1898); *Hist. Sketch and Alumni Record of Iowa Wesleyan* (1917); W. W. Sweet, *M. E. Ch. and Civil War* (1912); J. D. Wade, *Augustus Baldwin Longstreet* (1924); J. P. Wickenden, *Hist. of Education in Pa.* (1886); *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), Jan. 14, 1869; H. C. Jennings, *The Meth. Book Concern* (1924); *Minutes of Ann. Conferences of the M. E. Ch.*, 1819–69.] J.D.W.

**ELLIOTT, CHARLES LORING** (Oct. 12, 1812–Aug. 25, 1868), painter, was the son of Daniel and Mehitable (Booth) Elliott. He was born at Scipio, Cayuga County, N. Y., and about 1827 moved with his parents to Syracuse, Onondaga County. His father, an architect, did not encourage the boy's artistic ambitions and placed him as a clerk in a store, but in 1834 yielded to his son's desires and permitted him to go to New York City to study painting. Young Elliott had done some successful architectural drawing for his father and was urged by John Trumbull, in whose studio he worked for a time, to give up all thought of an artist's career and devote himself to architecture. The youth per-

sisted, however, studying under John Quidor and by himself, and at length won even Trumbull's commendation by an illustration from Irving's *Knickerbocker* and a scene from Paulding's *Dutchman's Fireside*. After a decade as an itinerant portrait-painter in central and western New York, during which he painted the portraits of the faculty of Hamilton College, he opened a studio in New York City, which became his permanent home. In 1845 his portrait of Ericsson excited general admiration, being called the best American portrait since the time of Stuart. In this year Elliott was elected an associate of the National Academy and soon afterward he was made an Academician. In 1846 a number of his portraits were sent to the Academy exhibit, including those of Horatio Stone, the sculptor; T. B. Thorpe; Lewis Gaylord Clark; and Sanford Thayer. These were regarded by the ablest judges as the finest work he had yet done; his reputation was established, and thenceforth he was one of the most popular portrait-painters of his time.

His well-known work includes: portraits of Fitz-Greene Halleck; James E. Freeman (belonging to the National Academy); Matthew Vassar (in Vassar College); W. W. Corcoran; James Fenimore Cooper; Governors Bouck, Seymour, and Hunt (in the New York City Hall); Erastus Corning (in the State Library, Albany, N. Y.); and the two artists, Church and Durand. Among his ideal works exhibited at the National Academy in 1866 were "Don Quixote" and "Falstaff." His portrait of Fletcher Harper was considered a masterpiece and was unanimously chosen for the Paris Exhibition as a typical American portrait. He is said to have painted only one landscape, "The Head of Skaneateles Lake." His painting shows an even excellence and a fixed method. He used a brush dipped in freely flowing paint and did not work over any of his detail. He had a delicate sense of art in the management of drapery and in the delineation of a tender expression of the mouth, and a freedom and originality in painting hair. Firm drawing, clean, clear color, and a natural likeness were the characteristics of his portraits, of which he is said to have painted seven hundred. While he did not have the opportunity of study abroad, his work reflects the qualities usually resulting from foreign contacts. Inman warmly praised it for its fidelity, genial quality of expression, and rich, harmonious tones.

Elliott was married to Mary Elizabeth Shire (or Stine), by whom he had one son. His sunny nature and kindliness won him many friends. His only serious fault seems to have been a habit of intemperance, which he eventually overcame by taking a formal pledge witnessed by a friend and signed on the bar after his last drink. He died in Albany, N. Y., in his fifty-sixth year and was buried in Greenwood Cemetery, Brooklyn.

[Samuel Isham, *Hist. of Am. Painting* (1927), pp. 272–76, 529; *N. Y. Evening Post*, Sept. 30, Oct. 1, 1868; Mich. State Lib., *Biog. Sketches of Am. Artists* 5th ed., rev. and enl., 1924), pp. 106–07; L. G. Clarke in *Lippincott's Mag.*, Dec. 1868; C. E. Lester in *Harper's Monthly*, Dec. 1868; C. H. Caffin, *The Story of Am. Painting* (1907), pp. 83, 93–95; H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); Ulrich Thieme and Felix Becker, *Allgemeines Lexikon der Bildenden Künstler*, vol. X (1914); family data.] J. M. H.

**ELLIOTT, JESSE DUNCAN** (July 14, 1782–Dec. 10, 1845), naval officer, was born in Hagerstown, Md., the son of Robert and Ann Elliott, who were Pennsylvanians. The father, who was descended from the Elliotts of Fincastle, County Donegal, Ireland, was killed in 1794 by the Indians, while serving as a commissary in Gen. Wayne's army. The early schooling of the son was received at Carlisle, Pa., from which place in 1804 he was appointed by President Jefferson a midshipman in the navy. His first cruise was in the Mediterranean on the *Essex* under Commodore James Barron [*q.v.*], and he was with that unfortunate officer when he surrendered the *Chesapeake*. Made a lieutenant in 1810, he was sent to London as a bearer of dispatches to the American minister there. In that city he was "insulted" by an Englishman, who however declined to receive his overtures for a duel. On Apr. 7, 1812, he was married in Norfolk, Va., to Frances C. Vaughan and established an additional bond of sympathy with the South. Early in the War of 1812, accepting a command on the Lakes, he, aided by Capt. Nathan Towson [*q.v.*] of the army, surprised and captured on Lake Erie the two vessels *Detroit* and *Caledonia*. For this well conceived and gallant exploit he was voted a sword by Congress and was, July 1813, promoted master commandant over thirty lieutenants. Twenty years after the war, Towson, then a general, entered into a correspondence with Elliott, claiming that the official report of the capture of the two vessels did not do justice to the army's share therein, but he failed in his object, the provoking of Elliott to a duel.

Placed in command of the naval forces on Lake Erie, Elliott, in the fall of 1812, collected a small fleet of vessels and began the construction of the brigs *Lawrence* and *Niagara*. In the spring he was succeeded by Commodore O. H. Perry [*q.v.*]. After a brief tour of duty on

Lake Ontario, he returned to Lake Erie in August and took command of the *Niagara* as the ranking officer under Perry, and in this capacity had an important part in the battle of Lake Erie, Sept. 10, 1813. Soon thereafter Elliott's precise conduct during the battle was disputed and a controversy arose which raged in and out of the navy for more than thirty years and is without a parallel in American naval history. For upwards of three hours during the battle the *Niagara* was not brought into close action. She rendered Perry relatively little assistance while his flagship was being shot to pieces and made to suffer more than two-thirds of the entire American loss. Elliott's defenders were under the necessity of explaining and justifying his lack of action. Congress did not hesitate to award equal honor to the first and second in command, matching the gold medal given to Perry with a similar one presented to Elliott. The state legislature of Pennsylvania voted Elliott a medal for his gallantry. In 1818 the controversy resulted in Elliott's challenging Perry to a duel and in Perry's preferring charges against Elliott, requesting that he be court-martialed. These were pigeon-holed by President Monroe. On the publication in 1839 of James Fenimore Cooper's *History of the Navy* containing an account of the battle of Lake Erie which was regarded as favorable to Elliott by Perry's friends, the controversy broke out anew and each side presented its case in books, pamphlets, and newspapers. In 1843 Cooper published a reply to Perry's protagonists, which is quite the ablest defence of Elliott, who, greatly pleased, caused a silver medal, bearing an image of his defender, to be made and widely distributed. The Rhode Island Historical Society declined to receive one of the medals and the Rhode Island legislature also showed its partiality for Perry, a native of that state. With the death of the chief participants in the battle the controversy subsided—an appeal was taken to history. Admiral Mahan, who considered the circumstances of the battle at length, reached conclusions favorable to Perry, holding that when that officer brought his ship into close action "he was entitled to expect prompt imitation by the *Niagara*" (*post*, p. 98).

In 1815–16 Elliott commanded the sloop *Ontario* and participated in the war with Algiers. In 1818 he was promoted to a captaincy and from that year until 1822 was a member of a commission appointed to select permanent sites for navy-yards and fortifications. While on the coast of Brazil in command of the *Cyane*, 1825–27, he was offered the post of admiral in the

Elliott

Brazilian navy. From 1829 to 1832 he commanded the West-Indian Squadron. He assisted in suppressing the slave insurrection in Southampton County, Va., and represented the navy at Charleston, S. C., during the nullification troubles in that state. From 1833 to 1835 he was commandant of the Boston navy-yard. His last cruise, made in 1835–38 as commander-in-chief of the Mediterranean Squadron, was marked by many exhibitions of good will to the numerous potentates whom he visited in Europe, Asia, and Africa. Within the squadron, however, there was much discord and he arrived home with several disgruntled subalterns. They preferred charges against him—thirteen in all—some of which now seem ludicrous. Jackson's administration had been succeeded by one much less friendly to the commodore and he was found guilty and sentenced to suspension from the navy for four years, two of which were to be without pay. President Van Buren remitted the penalty respecting pay. In the meantime he had been challenged to a duel by Commodore David Porter, but some of his friends prevailed upon him to settle his differences peacefully. During his suspension he engaged in farming and the raising of fine sheep and hogs, but continued to fight his enemies. A change in the federal administration placed his friends once more in power and on Oct. 19, 1843, President Tyler remitted the remaining period of his suspension. In December 1844 he was given command of the Philadelphia navy-yard and a year later he died.

[Record of Officers, Bureau of Navigation, 1804–45; A. T. Mahan, *Sea Power in Its Relations to the War of 1812* (1919), II, 76–99; *Port Folio*, Dec. 1814, pp. 529–39; C. O. Paullin, *The Battle of Lake Erie* (1918), see pp. 27 and 206–10 for the literature of the Perry-Elliott controversy; *Speech of Com. Jesse Duncan Elliott, U. S. N., Delivered in Hagerstown, Md., on 14th Nov., 1843* (1844); "Commodore Jesse D. Elliott: A Stormy Petrel of the Navy," in *U. S. Naval Inst. Proc.*, Sept. 1928, pp. 773–78.] C. O. P.

**ELLIOTT, JOHN** (Apr. 22, 1858–May 26, 1925), Scotch painter, was born in Lincolnshire, England, of a noted Border family with which Robert Louis Stevenson was connected. He gave early promise of artistic talent. After drawing from marbles at the British Museum he did cast drawing at the Beaux Arts in Paris. Then at Julien's Academy he spent a profitable year with Carolus Duran, followed by further study in Rome at the San Lucca Academy and in the studio of Don José di Villegas, whom he greatly admired. The Italian atmosphere inspired "The Vintage," one of Elliott's most beautiful works, exuberant with the spirit of youth, brilliant and richly decorative. This mu-

ral, ordered by Mrs. Potter Palmer for the dining-room at her home on Lake Shore Drive, in Chicago, was the forerunner of other examples of Elliott's work prized in some of the best houses there. Chief among Elliott's portraits are those of Victor Chapman, Rose Farwell, and one of His Royal Highness, the Duke of Cambridge. Others of note include Lord Ava, son of Lord Dufferin, Marquis of Winchester; General Wauchope; Lady Katherine Thynne, afterwards Lady Cromer; Samuel Ward; Samuel Gridley Howe; and Julia Ward Howe. His so-called "War Portraits," of which there are sixteen, are red chalk drawings of the members of the Lafayette Escadrille and other young Americans killed in the World War. They are preserved at the National Museum in Washington. The silver point drawing of the late King Humbert was treasured by Queen Margaret as the king's best likeness. This process, in which Elliott showed a fine technique, is one dear to the old Italian painters but few modern artists have the skill and patience to employ it.

In 1894 Elliott returned to Rome, commissioned to execute a mural, "The Triumph of Time," to be placed in the Boston Public Library. His "Diana of the Tides," which ranks among the unusual murals chosen for monumental buildings in the United States, was undertaken by Elliott for the National Museum at the request of Mr. and Mrs. Larz Anderson as a tribute to the city of Washington. It is notable as the first gift, by private citizens, of mural art for a public building in the nation's capital. A modernist's conception of the scientific spirit of the age, it expresses in harmonious imagery the heritage of classic times, and portrays with much imaginative treatment natural forces, emotions, and primal passions as conceived by the ancients.

On Feb. 7, 1887, John Elliott married Maud Howe, daughter of the distinguished Julia Ward Howe and Samuel Gridley Howe. They resided for many years in Boston, then moved to Newport, R. I., where Elliott became one of the founders of the Newport Art Association. Declining health, in the months previous to his death, took him, with his wife, to Charleston, S. C., where he died May 26, 1925. He was buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; *Art and Progress*, May 1910; *Am. Mag. of Art*, Jan. 1926; *New England Mag.*, 1913–14, pp. 26–34; *N. Y. Times*, May 27 and 28, 1925; information as to certain facts from members of the family.] J. M. H.

**ELLIOTT, SARAH BARNWELL** (1848–Aug. 30, 1928), author, playwright, suffragist



leader, had the Book of Common Prayer bred in her bones. Grand-daughter of Stephen Elliott [*q.v.*], she was the daughter of Stephen Elliott, first Protestant Episcopal bishop of Georgia, sister of Robert W. B. Elliott, first Protestant Episcopal bishop of Western Texas, and had for mother Charlotte Bull Barnwell of a Beaufort (S. C.) family that has given an unending line of bishops and ministers to the Episcopal Church. In the early seventies her father, one of the founders of the University of the South, removed his family from Georgia, where Sarah was born, to Sewanee, Tenn., site of that institution. There on the Cumberland Plateau, except for a year abroad and seven in New York, she lived and died. To home education were added lessons from Sewanee professors and a course, in 1886, at Johns Hopkins.

Her first novel, *The Felmeres,* a protest against a narrow conception of God, was published in 1879. It took its inspiration from the church life into which she was born, as did *A Simple Heart* (1889), and *John Paget* (1893). Fame, however, was to come from other sources, the life of the Tennessee soil. In 1890–91, her "Jerry," a serial in *Scribner's Magazine,* was a literary sensation. The story of a Tennessee Mountain boy, it proceeds toward its end with the inevitability of tragedy. Published in England and Australia, translated into German, not only did it make the fame of its author, but, with the novels of Charles Egbert Craddock, it turned the eyes of America toward the Southern mountaineers, the ultimate outcome being the mountain schools and industries of to-day. It led the Southern novel away from ante-bellum sentimentality. From her log-cabin study among the trees behind her house short stories, later collected in *An Incident and other Happenings* (1899), went to leading magazines. Two novels, *The Durket Sperret* (1898) and *The Making of Jane* (1901), followed, but did not rival "Jerry," on which rests her fame. She wrote also a biography, *Sam Houston* (1900).

From residence in New York (1895–1902) she returned to Sewanee a member of the Woman's Political League and an ardent suffragist. She became president of the Tennessee State Equal Suffrage Association, vice-president of the Southern States Woman Suffrage Conference and of the Civic League of Sewanee. By ancestry she was a Colonial Dame, a Daughter of the Confederacy, and a member of the Historical Society of South Carolina. She was also vice-president of the Association of Southern Writers. It is said of her that everybody liked her. To a gracious personality were added

charm, good looks, devotion to all things of good report. Small in stature, attractive in face, she was at her best in evening dress because of the remarkable beauty of her neck and arms. In her last years, with white hair bobbed, she suggested rather a beautiful little boy than a septuagenarian. In her early years she assisted at her mother's "Sundays," when, in high-backed chair and Victorian cap, the Bishop's widow received Sewanee. Her own "Mondays" became famous throughout the state and, according to the *Sewanee Purple,* as a hostess, dispensing hospitality seasoned with humor, wit, and charm, she was an influence "in developing the Sewanee gentleman . . . that cannot be overestimated."

[See *Lib. of Southern Lit.,* vol. IV (1909); *Who's Who in America,* 1914–15; *N. Y. Times,* Aug. 31, 1928; *Sewanee Purple,* Oct. 21, 1928. Information has been received from Miss Louise Finley, librarian, Univ. of the South; Mrs. Margaret Elliott Morris, and Miss Norah Barnwell, and from family records. Rt. Rev. F. F. Reese and Rev. R. Maynard Marshall have made fruitless search in Georgia and South Carolina for a record of Sarah Barnwell Elliott's birth or baptism.]

E. A. M.

**ELLIOTT, STEPHEN** (Nov. 11, 1771–Mar. 28, 1830), botanist, was born in Beaufort, S. C., the third son of William and Mary (Barnwell) Elliott. He was educated at home until his sixteenth year, then sent to New Haven, where he entered Yale College in February 1788. After his graduation in 1791 he returned to Beaufort and engaged in farming and other pursuits. In 1796 he married Esther Habersham of Georgia. Two years earlier he had been sent from the parish of St. Helena to the State House, where he served for several terms. In 1808 he was elected to the Senate and remained an influential member of that body through the sessions of 1812. His name appears on almost every page of the journals in committee assignments and as the author of bills, two of which were the free school act of 1811 and the bill in 1812 establishing the Bank of the State of South Carolina. He was elected the first president of this bank and served in that capacity until his death. That he was an able executive is indicated by the assertion that "the state bank of South Carolina, owned entirely by the state, was one of the few that made a satisfactory showing during this period" (Hepburn, *post,* p. 103). When Elliott moved to Charleston in 1812 to assume his bank duties he also became identified with the literary life of the city. He was one of the founders of the Literary and Philosophical Society of South Carolina, and served as its president from 1814 to 1830. In 1815 the society received from the Charleston Library Society its scientific collections, which became the nucleus of the Charleston Museum. The latter was further indebted to Elliott for personal collections and for advice and assistance in the arrangement of specimens. In 1816 he was made president of the Library Society and compiled a catalogue of the books belonging to the society. In 1820 he was elected to the presidency of the South Carolina College, but resigned before taking office. He was, however, influential in the establishment of the Medical College of South Carolina, and in April 1824 was elected its first professor of botany and natural history. With Hugh Swinton Legaré he began in 1828 the publication of the *Southern Review,* a quarterly copied after the English reviews of the day. In the next two years he contributed many articles to its pages, all of which are remarkable for their variety of subject matter, their clear, easy style, and their fine discrimination.

Elliott is now known not as a banker, statesman, editor, or planter, but rather as a naturalist. Between 1800 and 1808 he lived in comparative retirement on his plantation at Beaufort, and during this period collected, examined, and prepared the material for his *Sketch of the Botany of South Carolina and Georgia* (2 vols., 1821–24). It is said to have contained 180 genera and 1,000 species more than the *Flora Caroliniana* (1788) of Thomas Walter. His article in the *Southern Review* for November 1829 giving a historical summary of the study of botany showed his familiarity with the work of French, German, and Spanish botanists. Elliott died of apoplexy in 1830. A man of varied talents and extensive information, he was mild and unassuming in character and deportment.

[James Moultrie, *Eulogium on Stephen Elliott* (1830); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll.,* IV (1907), 704–07; Wilson Gee, *S. C. Botanists: Biog. and Bibliog.,* Bull. of the Univ. of S. C., no. 72, Sept. 1918; J. G. B. Bulloch, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Habersham Family* (1901); W. A. Clark, *The Hist. of the Banking Institutions Organized in S. C. Prior to 1860* (1922); A. B. Hepburn, *Hist. of Currency in the U. S.* (1915); J. L. E. W. Shecut, *Shecut's Medic. and Philos. Essays* (1819), p. 49; W. G. Mazÿck, *Charleston Museum* (1908).]

A. R. C.

**ELLIOTT, WALTER HACKETT ROBERT** (Jan 6, 1842–Apr. 18, 1928), Catholic priest, missionary, author, the seventh son of Judge Robert T. Elliott and Frances O'Shea, was born in Detroit, Mich. He was educated in the Catholic schools of that city, and at the age of twelve entered the College of Notre Dame, in Indiana. He did not graduate but went to Cincinnati to take up the study of law in the office of United States District Attorney Warner M. Bateman and was admitted to the bar

in 1861. When the Civil War broke out, he enlisted, though under age, in the 5th Ohio Volunteers, at Cincinnati, and served until the close of the war. In 1867 he attended a lecture for non-Catholics given by Rev. Isaac Hecker, one of the five founders of the Missionary Society of Saint Paul the Apostle, more commonly known as the Paulist Fathers. This lecture was the turning point in his life. He went to New York, called on Father Hecker, and was accepted as a postulant for the Paulist Community. On May 25, 1872, he was ordained to the priesthood, together with Adrian Aloysius Rosecrans, son of General Rosecrans, and Thomas Verney Robinson, a Confederate soldier, whose battery had actually fired on Elliott's position at Chancellorsville. His missionary career began a few months after his ordination and covered a period of twenty-seven years. In 1896 he founded *The Missionary,* the official organ of the Catholic Missionary Union. In 1902, in collaboration with Rev. Alexander P. Doyle [*q.v.*], he founded the Apostolic Mission House, at the Catholic University of America, Washington, D. C., for the training of diocesan priests as missionaries. He served the Apostolic Mission House as rector, professor, and rector emeritus until his death there, at the age of eighty-six. He was a man of prayer, austere in his own life, but his austerity was tempered by sympathy, and directed by understanding. He has been called "the Grand Old Man of the American Missions," and a "cornerstone of contemporary Catholic history." Probably no priest has wielded a more far-reaching influence in the United States.

His *Life of Father Hecker,* published in 1891, was followed in 1903 by his *Life of Jesus Christ,* a catena of the four gospels. Other works were: *Jesus Crucified* (1906); *The Sermons and Conferences of John Tauler* (1910); *Parish Sermons* (1913); *The Spiritual Life* (1914); *Manual for Missions* (1922); *Retreat for Priests* (1924); *Retreat for Nuns* (1925); and *Mission Sermons* (1926), this last being a collection of his sermons.

[Archives of the Paulist Fathers; "In Memoriam, Rev. Walter Elliott, Paulist," *The Catholic World,* May 1928, p. 222; Joseph McSorley, C. S. P., "Father Elliott, C. S. P.," *The Catholic World,* June 1928, pp. 296–305; *The Missionary,* June 1928; *N. Y. Times, Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Apr. 19, 1928.]

R. S. C—t.

**ELLIOTT, WASHINGTON LAFAYETTE** (Mar. 31, 1825–June 29, 1888), soldier, was born at Carlisle, Cumberland County, Pa., the son of Jesse Duncan [*q.v.*] and Frances C. (Vaughn) Elliott. His grandfather fought in the Revolution and his father won distinction in the navy in the War of 1812. Elliott accompanied his father on a cruise to the West Indies (1831–32), and on a second cruise (1835) to France on board the frigate *Constitution.* After his return to the United States he entered the preparatory school of Dickinson College, and subsequently the college, leaving the sophomore class to enter the United States Military Academy, July 1, 1841. He resigned from the academy in 1844, and began the study of medicine, but owing to the death of his father, was unable to continue his medical education, and he entered the army as a second lieutenant in the regiment of Mounted Riflemen, May 1846. In December of the same year he was ordered to Mexico with his regiment and took part in the siege of Vera Cruz. During the operations he was taken ill, and shortly after the surrender of the city was returned to the United States and assigned to recruiting duty. He was promoted first lieutenant in 1847, captain in 1854, and served on frontier duty in Dakota, Texas, and New Mexico until the beginning of the Civil War. At the call of the president for volunteers in 1861 he was ordered to Elmira, N. Y., as mustering officer, after which he was assigned to duty in the West and was engaged in the actions at Springfield and Wilson's Creek, Mo. He was commissioned colonel, 2nd Iowa Cavalry, in September 1861, and promoted major in the regular army in November of the same year. He was assigned to General Pope's command, Army of the Tennessee, and participated in the operations at New Madrid, Island No. 10 on the Mississippi, and in the siege of Corinth, where he commanded a cavalry brigade. He executed the raid on the Mobile & Ohio Railroad for which he received the brevet of colonel, United States Army. This was the first cavalry raid of the war, and he was soon after promoted brigadier-general, United States Volunteers (1862), and transferred to the Army of Virginia, in which he was appointed chief of cavalry. He was wounded in the second battle of Bull Run. From November to February 1863 he was in command of the Department of the Northwest, and from February to October commanded the 3rd Division, III Corps, Army of the Potomac. General Rosecrans in asking for the assignment of a cavalry general to his command said: "General Elliott would add 2,000 to our cavalry force. I once more beg he will be sent to me. Honor to him and benefit to the service will result" (*Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., XXIII, pt. II, p. 288). He was transferred to the Army of the Cumberland where he

commanded the first cavalry division and engaged in reinforcing General Burnside in East Tennessee. He commanded the troops in the brilliant action of Mossy Creek, Tenn., in which he defeated the Confederate General Martin, was appointed chief of cavalry, Army of the Cumberland, engaged in the Atlanta campaign and in the pursuit of the Confederate General Hood. In December 1864, he was assigned to the command of the 2nd Division, IV Corps, and participated in the battles around Nashville. He was in command of the District of Kansas from August 1865 to Mar. 1, 1866, when he was mustered out of the volunteer service. He was promoted lieutenant-colonel, 1st Cavalry, Aug. 31, 1866; colonel 3rd Cavalry, Apr. 4, 1878; and retired from active service Mar. 20, 1879. During the war, General Elliott won five brevets for distinguished conduct, the last of which was major-general, United States Army. After his retirement from the army he became vice-president of the California Safe Deposit & Trust Company, and while attending to his duties in the offices of the company, was suddenly stricken with heart disease, from which he died. He was a soldier of ability, affable, respected and esteemed by his associates, and very popular with his men. He gave much of his time to helping others, and was a director of a number of charitable institutions in San Francisco.

[*Official Register of the Officers and Cadets of the U. S. Mil. Acad.*, June 1843; G. V. Henry, *Mil. Record of Civilian Appointments in the U. S. Army*, vol. I (1869); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. of the U. S. Army*, vol. I (1903); A. A. Stuart, *Iowa Colonels and Regiments* (1865); *Biog. Album of Prominent Pennsylvanians*, vol. I (1888); *Official Records (Army)*, 2 ser. vols. I, VIII, X; *San Francisco Chronicle*, June 30, 1888.] C. F. C.

**ELLIOTT, WILLIAM** (Apr. 27, 1788–Feb. 3, 1863), writer on sports, the son of William and Phœbe (Waight) Elliott, was born in Beaufort and died in Charleston, S. C. He grew up in surroundings of social and intellectual distinction, mostly in Beaufort, around which lay the vast plantations of his family. From 1806 to 1809 he was at Harvard, in bad health for the most part, but well enough to be considerably above the average in scholarship, and to graduate in the normal time. Returning home, he occupied himself with all that went to make up the life of a gentleman farmer, and in 1817 he was married to Anne Hutchinson Smith. For a number of years he was in politics, a member successively of both branches of the state legislature, but in 1832 he resigned from the Senate rather than carry out the wishes of



his constituents to vote for nullification. Scorning "policy," he stood by his convictions, and capped his immolation by administering a formal if somewhat patronizing rebuke to all who disagreed with him (Address to the People of St. Helena Parish, 1832). This rather definitely put an end to his official public career, but he continued by means of open letters and pamphlets to express himself from time to time on questions of general moment. He was particularly interested in the large social and economic implications of farming, and conducted over many years a campaign to show the evils of one-crop system. In June 1851 he published in a newspaper a series of letters which were in 1852 collected into a pamphlet called *The Letters of Agricola*. Agricola was in the main an orthodox Southerner—about slavery and about Northern meddling he was quite clear. Slavery, he declared, was "sanctioned by religion, conducive to good morals, and useful, nay indispensable"; Northern interference was "wicked, unprovoked, and fanatical" (*Ibid.*, p. 7); but for all his orthodoxy he believed it essential that the South introduce manufactures and steer as far away as possible from the folly of secession. In 1846 he published in book form, under his own name, some sketches which had already appeared serially in a Charleston newspaper under the names Piscator and Venator. This book, *Carolina Sports by Land and Water* (republished in South Carolina 1859, 1918, and in England 1867) is dedicated to the principle that man without recreation is like a bow kept always taut. It defends in passing even dancing and the theatre, and with autobiographical verve praises as almost beyond comparison, the delights of fishing and gaming. Altogether, Poeta was a rôle to which this patrician was as much entitled as he was to those of Agricola, Piscator, and Venator; for upon occasion, when mood demanded, he knew how to turn out his verses, and even, in 1850, it is said, published in Charleston a complete tragical drama, *Fiesco*.

[*Southern Quart. Rev.*, July 1847, pp. 67–90; G. A. Wauchope, "William Elliott" in *Lib. of Southern Lit.*, vol. IV (1907); letter, Emma Elliott Johnstone, Apr. 30, 1928; *Harvard Univ. Quin. Cat.* (1910); *Charleston Courier*, Feb. 4, 1863.] J. D. W.

**ELLIS, CALVIN** (Aug. 15, 1826–Dec. 14, 1883), physician, was born in Boston, the son of Luther Ellis, a prominent iron merchant, who married his cousin, Betsey Ellis. The Ellis family of which he was a member originally came from Essex, England, and settled in Dedham, Mass., in 1634. Calvin Ellis was brought up in an atmosphere of liberality and independence of thought; his family were cultured and well-to-do.

While at Harvard College, he became interested in rowing and was a member of the first Harvard Boat Club. Graduating from college in 1846, he entered the Harvard Medical School and, after a term as resident pupil in the Massachusetts General Hospital, he received his M.D. degree in 1849. He then traveled in Europe for two years, working especially in French and German hospitals on anatomy and pathology. When he returned to Boston, he became assistant in pathology at the Harvard Medical School to Dr. J. B. S. Jackson, an eminent pathologist of that day, and at the same time held the position of admitting physician and pathologist to the Massachusetts General Hospital. In 1863 he was appointed assistant professor of medicine and in 1867, full professor, at the Harvard Medical School, holding the latter position until his death. He was appointed dean in 1869, at the beginning of the reformation period inaugurated by the newly elected president of the university, Charles W. Eliot [*q.v.*], whose ideas he proceeded to carry out in the face of strong opposition on the part of other members of the Medical School faculty. In addition, he was one of the most valuable teachers of his day in the School. His clinical medicine had a sound basis in his long study of pathology; he taught men how to diagnose disease scientifically. Diagnosis by elimination was his method, a procedure which gave to the Harvard Medical School a distinctive stamp. He wrote forty or more medical articles on a variety of subjects, the most important of which was his Boylston prize essay, in 1860, on "Tubercle," which was considered one of the best papers on that subject prior to Koch's discovery of the bacillus. Ellis was a member of many medical and scientific societies, including the American Academy of Arts and Sciences (1859).

He was of a cheerful, sunny disposition, unassuming in manner, scholarly, and with a certain slowness and deliberation about coming to a decision. Once the decision was made, however, and he felt that a certain course of action was the best, no opposition could turn him. His practise was large. His lifelong friend, Bartol, wrote, at the time of his death, "No man living in this community has ever better answered to the image of a true and good physician. . . . He was constitutionally sincere, and had the truth in his race and blood." In his report for the year 1883–84 President Eliot characterized Ellis as, "cautious, exact, conscientious, earnest and cheerful . . . one of the best teachers of medicine the University has ever had."

During the Civil War he was twice sent by the governor of Massachusetts on special commissions to the battle-front. On both occasions he became ill with fever and had to return to Boston. Some nine years before his death he began to have severe stomach symptoms caused by an ulcer, a disease which after long suffering resulted in his death. In the latter days of his life he worked upon the manuscript of a book to be entitled "Symptomatology." This was to have been an encyclopedia of all known symptoms which have been actually proved to occur in connection with various diseases, arranged alphabetically—a colossal work which Ellis was well qualified to write. He died before its completion, however, and the book was never published. Ellis gave freely of his time and money to help educational undertakings and at his death left $150,000 to the Harvard Medical School (*Boston Medical & Surgical Journal,* CX, 1884, p. 186). He never married.

[Henry I. Bowditch in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sciences,* n.s. XI (1884), 492–501 (with bibliography); T. F. Harrington, *The Harvard Medical School* (3 vols., 1905), II, 902–10; C. A. Bartol, *The Beloved Physician: A Sermon in West Church after the Decease of Dr. Calvin Ellis* (1884); Geo. B. Shattuck, H. I. Bowditch, C. D. Homans, Oliver Wendell Holmes, and others, in the *Boston Medic. & Surgic. Jour.,* CX (1884), 151–56, 166.]

H. R. V.

**ELLIS, EDWARD SYLVESTER** (Apr. 11, 1840–June 20, 1916), author, son of Sylvester and Mary (Alberty) Ellis, was born in Geneva, Ohio. He was educated at the state normal school of New Jersey, and while little more than a boy he began teaching. At nineteen he was already a writer, at twenty-two he was married, in his early thirties he was superintendent of the Trenton public schools, and after thirty-six he devoted himself exclusively to writing. His first notable book, *Seth Jones, or the Captive of the Frontier* (1860), probably as successful as any of the fiction which he wrote later (around 600,000 copies were sold), was among the earliest of the "dime novels" which glutted America in the second half of the nineteenth century. In Ellis's own case as an author, it was the beginning of a torrent of similar works. Till the middle eighties he held chiefly to fiction, but afterward turned in general in the direction of history, writing books beyond any patient counting. Where his next work would come from, whom it would proclaim as its author, or what it would discuss, remained always a mystery; he had at least eight publishers, in St. Paul, Akron, and Cincinnati, as well as in more customary centers, and he wrote under at least six names other than his own. His themes were developed most often as adventure and hero stories for boys, for whom he wrote also much inspirational biography, and much history. He penned versions of Plutarch and even Thomas

à Kempis ,not to mention text-books in grammar, arithmetic, physiology, and mythology. During 1891 in New York he edited *Holiday,* an illustrated juvenile weekly. He wrote for adults a great deal of American history and a number of extended statements about whatever was at the moment uppermost in the public mind, as for instance, *Great Leaders and National issues of 1896* (1896); *The Story of South Africa* (1899); and *Voters' Guide for the Campaign of 1900.* In his histories, he was extremely fair in his judgments on disagreements actually within the nation, but internationally he adhered to the doctrine of American preëminence. "The record of no people," he said, "can approach it in magnificence of achievement as regards art, science, education, literature, invention, and all that makes for true progress" (*From Tent to White House,* 1899, p. 7). He believed that the normal expectancy of human life is a hundred years, that a teacher should excel in athletic prowess any of his students, and that "the vices of cigarette smoking, of tobacco chewing, of beer and alcoholic drinking, threaten the very existence of the rising generation" (*Continental Primary Physiology,* 1885, p. 9). He was married twice: first in 1862 to Annie M. Deane, and in 1900 to Clara Spalding Brown of Los Angeles. His home was at Upper Montclair, N. J., but he died at Cliff Island, Me.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1916–17; C. M. Harvey, "The Dime Novel in Am. Life," *Atlantic Monthly,* July 1907; *N. Y. Times,* June 22, 1916.] J. D. W.

**ELLIS, GEORGE EDWARD** (Aug. 8, 1814–Dec. 20, 1894), Unitarian clergyman, historian, was born in Boston, Mass., the fourth son of David and Sarah (Rogers) Ellis. His father was a prosperous merchant and his mother a daughter of a Loyalist exile. Ellis attended several preparatory schools, including the Boston Latin School and the Round Hill School at Northampton, and graduated from Harvard in 1833. He then went to the Divinity School, and after graduation in 1836 remained in Boston for two years, sailing on May 8, 1838, for an extended European trip from which he returned in the following year. On Mar. 11, 1840, he was ordained and became pastor of the Harvard Unitarian Church in Charlestown, where he remained for twenty-nine years. On Apr. 15, 1840, he married Elizabeth Bruce Eager, daughter of William Eager of Boston. She bore him one son and died in 1842. From September 1842 to February 1845 Ellis was co-editor of the *Christian Register,* with Rev. Samuel K. Lothrop, and from 1849 to 1855 he was an editor of the *Christian Examiner,* at first with Rev. George Putnam and subsequently alone. To this latter periodical he was a constant contributor, writing most of the book reviews. His connection with Harvard College was always close. From 1850 to 1879 he was an Overseer and in 1853–54 he was secretary of the Overseers. He was the first to hold the new chair of systematic theology in the Divinity School, delivering his inaugural address July 14, 1857, and serving until 1863. In 1869 he resigned his pastorate and moved from Charlestown to Boston, where he lived a quiet, bookish life until his death. On Oct. 22, 1859, he married, as his second wife, Lucretia Goddard Gould, who died July 6, 1869.

Ellis was always an omnivorous reader and engaged in incessant intellectual work. He compiled a hymn-book in 1845, and in 1844, 1845, and 1847 respectively, he wrote the lives of John Mason, Anne Hutchinson, and William Penn for Sparks's *Library of American Biography.* In 1857 he published *A Half Century of the Unitarian Controversy* and in 1864 delivered a course of lectures on "The Evidences of Christianity" at the Lowell Institute. In January 1869 he delivered two lectures before the Lowell Institute subsequently published under the title: *I. The Aims and Purposes of the Founders of Massachusetts. II. Their Treatment of Intruders and Dissentients* (1869). In these lectures he upheld the Puritans in their intolerance. His interest in history increased; his Lowell Lectures for 1871 were on the provincial history of Massachusetts, and those for 1879 on "The Red Man and the White Man in North America." This last series appeared in book form in 1882. In 1888 he published *The Puritan Age and Rule in the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay, 1629–1685.* He contributed several chapters to Winsor's *Memorial History of Boston* (1880–01) and to the *Narrative and Critical History of America* (1884–89); and several articles to the ninth edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica;* wrote a *History of the Massachusetts General Hospital* (1872), continuing the work of Nathaniel Ingersoll Bowditch; the *History of the Battle of Bunker's Hill* (1875); memoirs, among others, of Luther V. Bell, Jared Sparks, Jacob Bigelow, and Nathaniel Thayer. He was a constant contributor to the *New York Review,* the *North American Review,* and the *Atlantic Monthly,* in the last of which he published (October 1894) his "Retrospect of an Octogenarian." Perhaps the main interest of his somewhat secluded life was the Massachusetts Historical Society, of which he was vice-president from 1877 to 1885 and president from that date until his death. In his will he left his house and $30,000 to the Society and $10,000 to the American Antiquarian Society.

As an historian of New England he belonged to the old filio-pietistic school and his writings, redeemed by no charm of style, are now out of date and negligible.

[Memoir by O. B. Frothingham in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. X (1896), 207–55; *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, n.s. IX (1895), 461–69; Waldo Higginson, *Memorials of the Class of 1833 of Harvard Coll.* (1883); A. B. Ellis, "Geo. Edward Ellis," *New Eng. Mag.*, May 1896; *Hist. of the Harvard Church in Charlestown, 1815–79* (1879), pp. 208–35, with bibliography of his publications to 1879; *Christian Reg.*, Dec. 27, 1894.]

J.T.A.

**ELLIS, GEORGE WASHINGTON** (May 4, 1875–Nov. 26, 1919), colored lawyer, sociologist, and author, the son of George and Amanda Jane (Drace) Ellis, was born in Weston, Platte County, Mo. His early education was received in the public schools at Weston, after which he attended the high school at Atchison, Kan. He then studied for two years in the law department of the University of Kansas, graduating LL.B. in 1893, and was admitted to the Kansas bar. The next four years he spent in the collegiate department of the university, at the same time practising law in Lawrence, Kan., in order to defray his expenses. In 1897 he proceeded to New York City, where he took a two years' course in the Gunton Institute of Economics and Sociology. In 1899 he passed the examination of the United States Census Board, following which he received an appointment in the census division of the Department of the Interior at Washington, D. C., where he remained two years. Here his spare moments were spent in postgraduate work in philosophy and psychology at Howard University. In the routine of his departmental duties he attracted the attention of President Roosevelt, upon whose nomination, confirmed by the Senate, he was in 1902 appointed secretary of the United States legation to the Republic of Liberia. He was induced to accept this position chiefly because of the opportunity it afforded him of studying the social conditions of the colored race in its native habitat, a subject in which he had become intensely interested. The next eight years he spent in Liberia, with Monrovia as his headquarters, but under instructions from Washington he undertook numerous expeditions into the hinterland for the purpose of investigating and reporting upon the various tribes of the interior. He studied the West African from every angle—ethnological, linguistic, sociological, and economic—and made an extensive collection of West-African ethnological specimens illustrating all phases of social life and industrial art, which on his return he lent to the National Museum, Washington, for exhibition. He resigned in 1910 and on his return to the United States opened a law office in Chicago, where he quickly acquired a large and lucrative general practise. He was a good lawyer and excellent speaker, and held briefs not only in all the Illinois courts but also in the Supreme Court of the United States. In 1917 he was elected assistant corporation counsel to the City of Chicago, a position which he held until his death. A strong Republican, a good campaign speaker, with a thorough knowledge of political issues both national and state, he was frequently heard on the public platform, and wielded much influence in the party counsels. In spite of his legal and political activities he continued to maintain his interest in sociological work, and in a series of books, pamphlets, and articles which attracted wide attention he gave to the world the results of his West-African studies. His earliest—and perhaps most scholarly work—was *Negro Culture in West Africa* (1914), a social study of a negro group, selected as typical of the African Black Belt. It received high praise from competent critics for its original research and keen insight. Then followed *The Leopard's Claw* (1917), a novel of adventure in the West-African jungle, and *Negro Achievements in Social Progress* (1915). He was a prolific contributor to scientific and literary periodicals, his articles dealing mainly with social institutions and economic problems of the West-African negro. He was a contributing editor of *The Journal of Race Development*, Clark University, Worcester, Mass., in which publication some of his best studies appeared.

On the nomination of Sir Harry H. Johnston and Dr. J. Scott Keltie he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society of Great Britain. He was also the recipient of honors from many other learned societies in Great Britain and the United States. He married, Jan. 27, 1906, Clavender L. Sherman, daughter of Robert Sherman, a member of the Liberian government.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1918-19; *Chicago Tribune*, *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 28, 1919. The article in *The Nat. Cyc. of the Colored Race* (1919), I, 144, is unpretentious and uncritical.]

H.W.H.K.

**ELLIS, HENRY** (Aug. 29, 1721–Jan. 21, 1806), hydrographer, colonial governor, was the son of Francis Ellis, of County Monaghan, and his wife Joan Maxwell. He studied law in the Temple, but later devoted attention to scientific and geographical research. In 1746 he was appointed by Parliament to search for a northwest passage to the Pacific. Although he failed in this attempt, his *Voyage to Hudson's-Bay, . . . for Discovering a North West Passage* (1748), published in four languages, was well received and resulted in his election as a fellow of the Royal

Society. Within a few years he was appointed governor of Georgia. He assumed his duties Feb. 16, 1757, and was cordially received officially and by the colonists in general. With five hundred muskets from the home government, and presents for the Indians, he entered upon his administration with the confidence and support of the colonists assured, despite the fact that upon his arrival he had found "an almost universal discontent arising from the late proceedings and persons in power" (first letter to the Board of Trade). From the beginning of his administration his relations with the Council and with the Assembly were usually harmonious. He showed tact in dealing with the Assembly, especially in the delicate matter of restoring to the governor and Council the right of issuing money and of auditing the accounts. To the bill limiting the duration of the Assembly to three years, and the bill for issuing paper money, however, he refused to give his assent, but referred them to the British government. He convinced the home government that the irregular and unusual proceedings of the courts of the colony made necessary the appointment of the chief justice. He saw the need of guaranteeing the titles to land and provided for this by law, and it was during his administration that the long-standing claim of Thomas Bosomworth and his wife was adjusted. He aided in the establishment of the Episcopal Church in the colony, supporting the law which provided for the division of the districts of the province into parishes and empowering church officials to assess rates for parochial activities. He also made earnest efforts to conciliate the Indians and was especially successful with the Creeks. The difficulties of his administration were increased by the French and Indian War, especially since the colony was not financially able to prepare adequately for defense. Ellis assumed responsibility for the support of some of the militia, and on his own initiative fitted out an armed vessel to protect the colony from French and Spanish attacks along the coast.

There were expressions of general regret when, on account of ill health, Ellis left Georgia on Nov. 2, 1760. Soon after his return to England, he was appointed governor of Nova Scotia, but remained in England for the two and a half years (1761–63) during which his deputy personally performed the duties of the office. He then went to Naples, Italy, where he was interested in maritime researches, and died there.

[A. D. Candler, ed., *Colonial Records of Ga.* (26 vols., 1904–16), vols. VII, VIII, XIII, XVI, XVIII; Colonial Records of Ga. in the Dept. of Archives and Hist., State Capitol, Atlanta, vols. XXVII, pt. 1, XXVIII, pt. 1, XXXIV, XXXIX; P. S. Flippin, "The Royal Government in Ga., 1752–1776," in *Ga. Hist Quart.*, Mar. 1924; W. B. Stevens, *Hist. of Ga.* (1847), I, 427–59; C. C. Jones, *Hist. of Ga.* (1883), I, 515–44; manuscript material in the Lib. of Cong.] P. S. F.



**ELLIS, JOB BICKNELL** (Jan. 21, 1829–Dec. 30, 1905), botanist, mycologist, was born on a farm near Potsdam, N. Y., the son of Freeman and Sarah Ellis. The duties of a farm lad in the early part of the nineteenth century did not leave much leisure for study, but young Ellis attended the schools which were available when he could be spared from the farm and neglected no opportunity to read such books as were accessible to him. He apparently inherited an unusual interest in nature and her secrets, which was perhaps encouraged rather than discouraged by his parents and teachers. That he succeeded in his efforts to acquire an education is shown by the fact that at the age of sixteen he taught a country school at Stockholm, N. Y. His salary was ten dollars a month, half of which was paid in cash and the balance in grain. Having worked his way through the local academy, he entered Union College at Schenectady at the age of twenty. In spite of having to teach school one winter in order to pay his expenses, he received the B.A. degree in June 1851. He took the courses in botany given at the college, and continued the study and collection of plants while teaching in Germantown, Pa., and at Albany, N. Y. Here he met George H. Cook, later state geologist of New Jersey, who stimulated his interest in science. He already had an interest in fungi, but had been unable to make much progress in their study for want of books. In 1857 he chanced to see a notice of H. W. Ravenel's *Fungi Caroliniani Exsiccati* and immediately began a correspondence with the author, who exchanged specimens with him and assisted him in his study. He continued teaching, but devoted all his spare time to the fungi. In 1856, after an unpleasant teaching experience in the South, due to antipathy to Northerners, he returned to his old home in New York and on April 19 married Arvilla J. Bacon, who proved a valuable assistant in his mycological work. In 1864 he left his teaching to enter the navy, and remained in the service until 1865. He then moved from Potsdam to Newfield, N. J., where he purchased a small place and spent the remainder of his life. Here he devoted more of his time to the collection and study of fungi, corresponding and exchanging specimens with M. C. Cooke, C. H. Peck, W. G. Farlow, and other leading mycologists of the day.

In 1878 he began the preparation and distribution of sets of North-American fungi and from that time until his death devoted all his time to

the collection and description of fungi. With the assistance of his wife he named, prepared, and distributed over two hundred thousand specimens. Hundreds of new species were described, and numerous papers written. In 1892 he published his *magnum opus, The North American Pyrenomycetes,* prepared with the assistance of B. M. Everhart. He accumulated one of the largest collections of fungi ever made in North America, now in the herbarium of the New York Botanical Garden, and did more than any other botanist during the period of his activity toward making known the fungi of this country. No student or collector ever appealed to him in vain for assistance or advice. Botanists throughout the world recognized the value of his contributions to mycology, and he was elected to membership in many scientific societies in this and other countries. He was modest and retiring, and imbued with the humility characteristic of the true scientist.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1906–07; *Jour. of Mycology,* Mar. 1906; *Botanical Gazette,* Nov. 1890.]

C. L. Sh—r.

**ELLIS, JOHN WASHINGTON** (July 15, 1817–Dec. 28, 1910), banker, was born in Williamsburg, Clermont County, Ohio, the son of Benjamin and Sallie (Tweed) Ellis. His paternal ancestors emigrated from Sandwich, England, to Sandwich, Mass., and then removed to what is now a part of Maine, where his father was born. In 1810 Benjamin Ellis started West, settling first in Williamsburg and later in Cincinnati. The son received his early education in Ohio and in New York City where his father resided from 1831 to 1835. For a year and a half he attended Kenyon College at Gambier, Ohio. On Mar. 1, 1835, he left New York for Cincinnati and for two years worked as an office boy. In 1837 he returned to New York, remained there three years, and in March 1840 again left for Cincinnati, where he resided for the next thirty years. On his return to Cincinnati Ellis engaged in trade with the frontiersmen and once accompanied his merchandise as far north as Prairie-du-Chien. After disposing of his wares, he floated down the Mississippi with a cargo of lead from Galena, Ill., destined for New York by way of New Orleans. At New Orleans he visited the slave market and the scenes he witnessed there made him a strong anti-slavery man. He was one of the founders of the Young Men's Mercantile Library Association of Cincinnati and in 1843 was chosen its president. Four years later he organized the wholesale dry-goods firm of Ellis & McAlpin which for many years was one of the leading mercantile houses of Cincinnati.



At one time he served as president of the Cincinnati, Hamilton & Dayton Railroad. His opposition to slavery led him to join the Republican party and during the Civil War he was a loyal supporter of Lincoln's administration. Early in 1863 Ellis with eight or ten prominent business men petitioned for a charter for the First National Bank of Cincinnati. In May 1863 the bank was chartered with a capital of one million dollars, which was larger than that of any other national bank in the country with the exception of the First National Bank of Baltimore. From 1863 to 1869 Ellis served as president of this institution. He was frequently consulted by the government on financial problems during the war, and took an active part in the sale of government bonds. Soon after the war Jay Cooke offered him an equal share in his firm but Ellis refused because he did not approve of its methods. From 1870 to 1883 he was the head of Winslow, Lanier & Company of New York, and in that position organized many syndicates for the purchase and sale of bonds for the building and extension of the great transcontinental lines and other railroads. Probably his most significant work was his negotiation in 1881 of a loan of $40,000,000 for the Northern Pacific Railroad, which he sold mostly in London. He also negotiated the operating agreement between the Erie, with Gould and Fisk, and the Atlantic & Great Western Railroad; and was instrumental in purchasing for the Panama Canal Company under the control of De Lesseps the Panama Railroad. For many years he was a member of the American committee of this company in the United States. In 1876 Ellis was president of the Third National Bank of New York City in which Samuel J. Tilden was a large depositor and director. He was called before the congressional committees investigating election returns of that year concerning Tilden's expenditures. He retired from active business in 1883 and continued to reside in New York until his death. In 1845 he married Caroline Satterlee Lindley.

[Correspondence, Letter-Books, and Reminiscences of John Washington Ellis, a manuscript collection belonging to Ralph N. Ellis of New York City; E. R. Ellis, *Biog. Sketches of Richard Ellis . . . and his Descendants* (1888); E. V. Smalley, *Hist. of the Northern Pacific Railroad* (1853), pp. 231–34; *N. Y. Herald,* Dec. 29, 1910.]

R. C. M.

**ELLIS, JOHN WILLIS** (Nov. 23, 1820–July 7, 1861), governor of North Carolina, was born in the "Jersey Settlement" of Rowan County, N. C., being the eldest son of Anderson and Judith (Bailey) Ellis. The Ellis and Willis families are of Welsh origin. Members were in Massachusetts in the seventeenth century and one

John Ellis married Joanna Willis, of Dorchester. Both families also appear in colonial Virginia, and the local records of Rowan County in 1750 and afterward disclose nine men named Ellis. One of these was Willis Ellis, the grandfather of the later governor, who was a justice of the peace and a colonel of militia in the French and Indian War. Judith Bailey Ellis belonged to one of the wealthiest families of the county. After preliminary schooling under a tutor at the home of a kinsman, Robert Allison, and some months at Randolph-Macon College, Va., John Willis entered the University of North Carolina in 1837 and graduated in 1841. He then read law under Richmond Pearson, preëminent legal instructor of ante bellum North Carolina, was admitted to the bar in 1842, and began the practise of his profession at Salisbury.

He early turned his mind to the public service and in 1843 was a member of the state Democratic convention. In 1844, 1846, and 1848 he represented Rowan County in the North Carolina House of Commons and in the latter year was the legislative leader of the Democratic program for railway construction without aid from the state, which, however, was defeated. In 1848, he was elected a judge of the superior court by the legislature. For service on the bench he had a certain natural fitness, and he received commendation from the Whig as well as Democratic press for the discharge of his duties. Ten years later (1858) he was nominated for the governorship over William W. Holden [*q.v.*], Ellis having the support of the slaveholders and gentry in the party, Holden that of the non-slaveholders and yeomanry. His only opponent in the campaign was Duncan K. McRae [*q.v.*], also a Democrat, who raised the issue of distribution of the proceeds of public land sales among the states as a means of financing internal improvements. Ellis's majority was more than sixteen thousand. As governor, Ellis urged the construction of canals and railroads, and through his effort the various railways of the state arranged a better interchange of freight, each road agreeing to haul the cars of the others. In 1860 he was renominated for office. It was a critical year politically, not only because of the issue in the national election but also because of a demand in the state for the taxation of slaves as property rather than as polls, an attack on the privilege of the slaveholders in the revenue system. The question was raised in the legislature in 1858 by Moses A. Bledsoe, a Democrat of Wake County, but was rejected by the party leaders. The Whigs proved receptive, however, and in 1860 adopted a platform committed to the ad valorem taxation

Ellis

of all kinds of property. The ensuing campaign was the most warmly contested in a decade. The result of the election, held in August 1860, was a Democratic victory, but with a majority approximately ten thousand less than in 1858.

The outstanding problem of Ellis's second administration was the course to be pursued as a result of the election of a Republican president. As early as 1854 Ellis was convinced that slavery interests were doomed so far as federal politics were concerned. In his first inaugural he intimated that the day might come when the South could not enjoy full constitutional rights in the Union, and in 1859, after the John Brown raid, he sought to increase the arms in the arsenal at Fayetteville. After Lincoln's election he approved the course of South Carolina and believed that a Southern Confederacy should be immediately organized. There was strong Union sentiment in North Carolina, however, and the state moved laggardly toward secession. In his message to the legislature in December 1860, Ellis declared that the South would not submit to the principles of the Republican party and recommended that North Carolina call a conference of the neighboring states, to be followed by a convention of the people of North Carolina. He also advised that the militia be reorganized and that a corps of 10,000 volunteers be raised. The suggestion of such measures made clear the existence of three political groups: the Whigs, who opposed them entirely; the radical Democrats, who supported Ellis; and the conservative Democrats, who were willing to have a conference but who opposed a state convention. In the legislature a coalition of Whigs and conservative Democrats delayed action regarding a convention until February 1861, when the matter was submitted to the people and was rejected by a majority of 651. In the meantime, early in January, the legislature appropriated $300,000 for arms and munitions.

Though favoring secession, Ellis's legal mind and temperament made him oppose violent action. Thus when secession sympathizers seized Forts Johnston and Caswell on the lower Cape Fear, he immediately caused their evacuation. The course of events showed, however, that he had been only a step in advance of the state's ultimate action. The firing on Fort Sumter was followed by the call of the Lincoln administration for two regiments of North Carolina militia. This Ellis denounced as a violation of the Constitution and a usurpation of power. He called for 30,000 volunteers to resist invasion, and convened the legislature in extra session. The legislature provided for a state convention, which adopted an ordinance of secession on May 20, 1861. Ellis died,

seven weeks later, in the midst of the war activities. He was twice married: first, on Aug. 25, 1844, to Mary, daughter of Philo White, sometime editor of the *North Carolina Star* and minister to Ecuador; second, to Mary Daves of New Bern. All his descendants come from the second marriage.

["John Willis Ellis" in S. A. Ashe and S. B. Weeks, *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, vol. VII (1908); Anne Garrard, "John Willis Ellis," manuscript thesis, Duke Univ. Lib.]

W. K. B.

**ELLIS, POWHATAN** (Jan. 17, 1790–Mar. 18, 1863), jurist, senator, diplomat, was born at "Red Hill," Amherst County, Va., the youngest son of Maj. Josiah and Jane (Shelton) Ellis, and was named for the father of Pocahontas, from whom he claimed descent. He was a student in Washington College (now Washington and Lee University) for three years, and graduated from Dickinson College, Pa., in 1810. Three years later he graduated in law from the College of William and Mary, and was admitted to the Virginia bar, practising for a short time in Lynchburg. During the War of 1812, he became lieutenant in a company of Virginia riflemen but saw no actual fighting. In 1815 he met Gen. Andrew Jackson, and a personal friendship grew up between them. A year later the General gave Ellis letters of introduction to some of his friends in the Southwest, including David Holmes, governor of Mississippi Territory. Accompanied by several young men, including two sons of Patrick Henry, his distant cousins, Ellis set out in April 1816 for Mississippi. He stopped for a time at Natchez, but soon removed to Winchester. Under the tutelage of Gen. James Patton, he entered upon his public career just as the territory of Mississippi was emerging into statehood (*Mississippi Historical Society Publications,* vol. VI, 1902, p. 271). In 1818 he was elevated to the supreme bench of the state. Some of his biographers say that Ellis was "extremely indolent," but the fact that he wrote the opinions in approximately two-thirds of the cases decided by the Mississippi supreme court from 1819 to 1824 seems to disprove the accuracy of the accusation. After seven years in this position he received from Gov. Leake an *ad interim* appointment to the seat in the United States Senate made vacant by the resignation of David Holmes. In the Mississippi legislature he was defeated for the honor of filling out the unexpired term, but a year later was elected senator for the full period of six years. Perhaps his most conspicuous action in the Senate was his vote against ratification of the treaty of 1828 with Mexico, which would have restricted the spread of slavery beyond the Mississippi River. He resigned in 1832 to become federal judge of the Mississippi district, upon appointment of President Jackson.

Four years later the President requested him to become United States chargé d'affaires in Mexico City. Edward Livingston pronounced this mission to Mexico the most important of all missions of the United States at that day. Ellis filled his position well throughout most of the year 1836. Within less than a week after the inauguration of President Van Buren, Ellis was appointed envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary to Mexico, but he did not proceed to his post until March 1839, remaining in Mexico for three years after that date. Despite the difficulties of his position, he strove successfully in Mexico to secure the good will of that country, as well as to deserve the approval of his own. When his career as a diplomat closed he returned to Mississippi. In 1847 he was chosen a delegate from Adams County to the state Democratic convention, over which in June he was elected to preside. Here he "especially defended the administration in regard to the war forced upon us by Mexico" (*Mississippi Free Trader,* Natchez, June 23, 1847). Late in life he left Mississippi and returned to Virginia, where he hoped to purchase the old family homestead. This pleasure was denied him. He was married on Feb. 28, 1831, to Eliza Rebecca Winn of Washington, D. C., the beautiful daughter of Timothy Winn, a naval officer (*Daily National Intelligencer,* Mar. 2, 1831). They had two children, a son and a daughter. Ellis spent his last days in Richmond, Va. He was not brilliant, but was a man of unusual tact, dignity, uprightness, and common sense. Ellisville, Miss., is named for him.

[Article, dated Mar. 25, 1863, in *Sou. Lit. Messenger,* April 1863; Thos. H. Ellis, "A Memorandum of the Ellis Family," prepared in 1849, typewritten copy in Lib. of Cong.; J. F. H. Claiborne, *Mississippi, as a Province, Territory and State* (1880), pp. 358, 426; J. D. Lynch, *Bench and Bar of Miss.* (1881), pp. 87–88; Dunbar Rowland, *Mississippi* (1907), vol. I, and *Mississippi the Heart of the South* (1925); *Biog. and Hist. Memoirs of Miss.* (1891); *Daily Richmond Enquirer,* Mar. 19, 1863; Richmond *Daily Dispatch,* Mar. 20, 1863.]

L. T. L.

**ELLIS, SETH HOCKETT** (Jan. 3, 1830–June 23, 1904), Ohio granger, politician, was born at Martinsville, Ohio. He was the son of Robert and Anna Hockett (Moon) Ellis and was educated in the common schools of Clinton and Warren counties. He was married to Rebecca J. Tressler near Springboro, Aug. 21, 1851. From 1864 to 1872 there developed in the central and northwestern states a great number of farmers' clubs and various organizations known as the "Patrons of Husbandry," or more popu-

larly as "granges." Ellis became interested in the movement in September 1872, when with fifty of his acquaintances he organized the first grange in the state. He has himself described the early history of the grange in the *Ohio Farmer*, published at Cleveland. His articles, printed from 1900 to 1904, made use of the published proceedings and of other documentary material. He was master of the state grange from its organization, on Apr. 9, 1873, to 1879, again from 1888 to 1892, and from 1896 to 1900. During the intervals when he was not master he was chairman of the executive committee, holding this position from 1879 to 1888, from 1892 to 1896, and from 1900 to the time of his death in 1904. He was chaplain of the national grange for four years and member of the executive committee of the national organization for two years. Besides his activity in the granger movement he was a trustee of Ohio State University from 1879 to 1887, when he was transferred to the board of control of the Ohio Agricultural Experiment Station at Wooster.

Ellis was also the candidate of the Union Reform party for governor of Ohio in 1899. The platform made the initiative and referendum the only plank. Samuel M. Jones was elected mayor of Toledo on the Republican ticket in 1897, but was rejected by his own party in the spring of 1899. He then ran as an independent candidate and received an overwhelming vote. It was understood that he would be a candidate for governor and it was planned for the Union Reform convention to leave the head of that ticket blank that members of the party might vote for Jones. When Ellis was nominated for governor, Jones published a manifesto announcing himself a candidate on a platform declaring for the right of self-government by means of direct nomination of candidates and direct making of laws by the people. Jones received 106,721 votes and Ellis 7,799 out of a total of 908,159. In January 1900, the national committee of the Union Reform party sent out ballots to members of the party for votes for candidates for president and vice-president. The balloting continued through February and March. In April it was announced that Ellis and Samuel T. Richardson of Pennsylvania had been nominated. The platform favored "direct legislation under the system known as the initiative and referendum." It declared that there was "no need or benefit from party except to secure direct legislation." Ellis has been described as the "first candidate ever placed in nomination for president by direct vote of [the] people" (*Who's Who in America*, 1903–05).

Soon after his marriage he settled on a farm



near Springboro, living here until 1899 when he moved into Waynesville, where he died five years later as the result of a fall. He was a Quaker, an active church worker, and a leader in the prohibition movement. He was a ready and effective public speaker and had a remarkable memory for names, faces, and the personal interests of others. His large farm was well kept up, with a commodious brick house and good out-buildings. While not a wealthy man, he gave freely of his time, and often of his means, to the improvement of agriculture.

[L. H. Bailey, *Cyc. of Am. Agric.*, IV (1909), 568–69; *Appletons' Ann. Cyc.* (1899), p. 680, (1900), p. 710; Solon J. Buck, "The Granger Movement," *Harvard Hist. Studies*, XIX (1913), 54, 340; J. D. McCabe, *Hist. of the Grange Movement* (1873), pp. 537–38; *Twenty-Third Annual Report of Ohio Agric. Experiment Station* (1904), containing obituary with portrait; S. H. Ellis, "The Union Reform Party," the *Independent*, Oct. 11, 1900; *Cincinnati Enquirer*, June 24, 1904.]

F. E. H.

**ELLSWORTH, ELMER EPHRAIM** (Apr. 11, 1837–May 24, 1861), soldier, was born at Malta, N. Y., the son of Ephraim D. and Phœbe (Denton) Ellsworth. He attended the public schools at Mechanicsville, N. Y., hoping to enter West Point and follow a military career, but Mechanicsville was a small town and offered no educational advantages by which he could be prepared for the West Point examination, and the family could not afford to send him to a private academy. After leaving school he was employed as a dry-goods clerk. Later he went to New York and from there to Chicago where he was employed as a lawyer's clerk, studied law, and soon became a partner in a patent-soliciting business. Deeply interested in military matters, he secured command of a volunteer military company of cadets which was about to disband through lack of interest, and neglect, introduced the "Zouave" drill, and through his enthusiasm and energy brought the company to a high state of discipline and efficiency. The company was known as the "National Guard Cadets" of Chicago, later the "U. S. Zouave Cadets," and the members were bound to abstain from liquor, tobacco, profanity, and all excesses. The picturesque uniforms and excellent performances of the company soon attracted attention in Chicago, and immense crowds came to their drills. Ellsworth made a tour of the East with his company, giving exhibition drills which were largely attended, and the Zouaves and their commander became well known. He was appointed a major on the staff of Gen. Swift of the Illinois National Guard, and later colonel and assistant-general, and his company was appointed the governor's guards. Returning to Illinois from a tour of the East in

1860, he entered the law office of Abraham Lincoln in Springfield, as a law student, but devoted himself principally to the presidential campaign of that year. After the election, Ellsworth accompanied the President-Elect to Washington, and proposed the formation of a militia bureau, with himself as its chief. While he was awaiting the outcome of his proposals the Civil War broke out, and he hastened to New York and there recruited a regiment from the New York volunteer firemen, dressed them after the fashion of the French Zouaves, and drilled them in the manual of his original Zouave company. The regiment came to Washington, was mustered into the United States service, and was one of the first "three years" regiments of the war. On the occupation of Alexandria, May 24, 1861, Ellsworth saw the Confederate flag flying over the Marshall House and determined to remove it. Going to the roof, he tore down the flag with his own hands. As he descended the stairs with the flag in his arms, he was shot dead by the proprietor of the hotel, one James W. Jackson, who was in turn immediately shot by one of Ellsworth's escort. Ellsworth was young, handsome, and well-known, and his death, being the first of note to occur in the war, produced a profound sensation throughout the country. His body lay in state in the White House, was taken to New York City by special train, and from there escorted to Albany and Mechanicsville, where he was buried.

[See Chas. A. Ingraham, *Elmer E. Ellsworth and the Zouaves of '61* (1925); J. G. Nicolay, *The Outbreak of Rebellion* (1881); John Hay, in *Sunday Morning Chronicle* (Washington, D. C.), May 26, 1861, in the *Atlantic Monthly*, July 1861, and in *McClure's Mag.*, Mar. 1896; *N. Y. Herald*, May 25, 26, 27, 1861; *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, May 25, 26, 1861; N. Y. *World*, May 25, 27, 1861; H. H. Miller, *Reminiscences of Chicago During the Civil War* (1914). Ellsworth's name frequently appears as Ephraim Elmer, but is given as Elmer Ephraim in a manuscript account by his mother, in the N. Y. State Lib., Albany.] C. F. C.

**ELLSWORTH, HENRY LEAVITT** (Nov. 10, 1791–Dec. 27, 1858), agriculturist, first United States commissioner of patents, was born in Windsor, Conn., son of Chief Justice Oliver Ellsworth [*q.v.*] and Abigail (Wolcott) Ellsworth. He was a twin brother of William Wolcott Ellsworth [*q.v.*], later governor of Connecticut. After graduation from Yale in 1810 he studied law at the Litchfield Law School. In 1813 he married Nancy Allen Goodrich, daughter of Elizur Goodrich [*q.v.*] of New Haven, and settled in Windsor. He practised law and engaged also in agriculture, in which he early showed a special interest, serving as secretary of the Hartford County Agricultural Society in 1818. He moved to Hartford in June 1819, and from August 1819 to March 1821 was president of the Ætna Insurance Company. He became prominent in business and civic affairs, and in the improvement of real estate did much for the prosperity of Hartford. In 1832 he was appointed by President Jackson as commissioner to superintend the settlement of the Indian tribes transplanted to the south and west of Arkansas (for this report, see *House Report No. 474*, 23 Cong., 1 Sess., May 1834, pp. 78–103). On his way West in the same year he accidentally met Washington Irving, Charles Joseph Latrobe, and Count Pourtales, who were traveling together. All three decided to accompany Commissioner Ellsworth. It was thus that Irving obtained his material for *A Tour on the Prairies* (1835). The impressions of Latrobe are recorded in *The Rambler in North America* (1835), and those of Ellsworth in a manuscript letter to his wife, containing 116 pages, which letter is now in Yale University Library.

In April 1835 he was elected mayor of Hartford. He resigned, however, on June 15, having been appointed by President Jackson as United States commissioner of patents. He developed the business of the office in a remarkable manner. From the first he took a special interest in agriculture, and, largely through his influence, Congress was induced in 1839 to make an appropriation for the purpose of collecting and distributing seeds, prosecuting agricultural investigations, and procuring agricultural statistics. This was the first government appropriation for agriculture. Similar appropriations were made in 1842 and subsequent years. Since the Commissioner's annual reports were filled with information for the farmers of the country, the Patent Office by 1845 had assumed in many respects the function of an agricultural bureau, and Ellsworth is now frequently referred to as the "father of the Department of Agriculture." While serving as commissioner of patents he aided his friend Samuel F. B. Morse [*q.v.*] in obtaining the congressional appropriation of $30,000 to test the practicability of the telegraph. On Apr. 30, 1845, he resigned from the Patent Office, and subsequently established himself in Lafayette, Ind., as an agent for the purchase and settlement of public lands, becoming one of the largest landowners in the West. He was one of the earliest to foretell the value of the prairie lands and gave a great impulse to the agricultural operation of that region. (See his "Letter on the Cultivation of the Prairies, Jan. 1, 1837," appended to *Illinois in 1837*, 1837.) He also advocated the use of machinery in agriculture—an idea at that time considered chimerical. He probably used the first mowing-

machine ever introduced upon the prairies. His principal writings were his official publications as commissioner of patents, particularly his annual reports, 1837–44, and *A Digest of Patents issued by the United States, 1790–1841* (2 vols., 1840–42).

His health failing, he returned to Connecticut in April 1858, and settled in Fair Haven, where he died a few months later. Of his three children by his first wife, the eldest was Henry William Ellsworth [*q.v.*]. Mrs. Ellsworth died, Jan. 14, 1847, and Ellsworth was married a second time, to Marietta Mariana Bartlett, who died Apr. 17, 1856. He next married Catherine Smith, who survived him. By his will his residuary estate in western lands was bequeathed to Yale University. He was a genial and affable man, of fine character, great public spirit, and vision, and with a deep love for humanity.

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. VI (1912); H. R. Stiles, *The History and Genealogies of Ancient Windsor* (2nd ed., 2 vols., 1891–92), II, 219, 225; J. H. Trumbull, *The Memorial Hist. of Hartford County* (1886), I, 128, 385, 661–62; J. M. Swank, *The Dept. of Agric., its Hist. and Objects* (1872); U. S. Dept. of Agric., *Monthly Reports* for 1871, pp. 267–68; H. B. Learned, *The President's Cabinet* (1912), pp. 309–12, 316; Elmore Barce, *Annals of Benton County* (1925), I, 44–73; Ind. State Board of Agric., *Ann. Report*, 1852, pp. 218–20.] C. R. B.

**ELLSWORTH, HENRY WILLIAM** (Apr. 7, 1814–Aug. 14, 1864), lawyer, diplomat, was a grandson of Chief Justice Oliver Ellsworth [*q.v.*], and a son of Henry Leavitt Ellsworth [*q.v.*] and his wife, Nancy Allen Goodrich. Born at Windsor, Conn., where his father was practising law, he received his early education at the Ellington School at Windsor and at Hartford, Conn. In 1830 he proceeded to Yale, where he graduated in 1834, subsequently studying for a short time in the law school there. In 1836 he went to Lafayette, Tippecanoe County, Ind., in which neighborhood his father had acquired large tracts of land from the government. Opening a law office in Lafayette, the younger Ellsworth also became a member of the firm of Curtiss & Ellsworth, general land agents, specializing in Wabash and Maumee Valley lands, and, on his father's removal to Washington, D. C., to become commissioner of patents, assumed charge of the latter's extensive Western interests. In 1838 he published *Valley of the Upper Wabash, Indiana, with Hints on its Agricultural Advantages*, etc., embodying much information obtained from his father's papers, and this work, combined with his influential Eastern connections, helped to stimulate active interest in northwestern lands on the part of both speculators and bona fide settlers. He also wrote *The American Swine Breeder, a Practical Treatise on the Selection, Rearing and Fattening of Swine* (1840), and was an occasional contributor to the *Knickerbocker Magazine*. At the same time he participated in the political struggles of the time, was prominent among the supporters of Polk in the election campaign of 1844, and was a presidential elector in that year. On Apr. 19, 1845, he was appointed by President Polk chargé d'affaires to Sweden and Norway. The duties of this position he performed with ability for over four years, but his diplomatic career was brought to a close by an episode the implications of which are even to-day doubtful. Early in 1849 charges were made in the European and home press that in December 1848 Ellsworth had connived at an attempt to smuggle British goods into Sweden, and the facts disclosed in an *ex parte* investigation *prima facie* supported the allegation. In consequence Secretary of State Clayton recalled him as of Apr. 23, 1849, the "President believing that the public service requires a change in the Swedish mission." Ellsworth protested and vigorously defended himself, and a rather pathetic appeal was made to President Taylor by influential public men on his behalf, but in vain; and following a stern letter from Clayton his appointment was terminated July 25, 1849. On returning to the United States he resumed law practise at Lafayette and later at Indianapolis. A large circle of acquaintances evinced their unimpaired belief in his integrity, and he was retained by his father's intimate friend, S. F. B. Morse [*q.v.*], in the actions which Morse took to protect his patent rights. His health, never good, broke down, and he was compelled to relinquish his practise, retiring to New Haven, Conn., where he died at the early age of fifty. He was married, on Jan. 11, 1844, to Mary E. West of Salem, Mass.

[H. R. Stiles, *History and Genealogies of Ancient Windsor*, II (1892), 208, 225, 229; *Hist. of the Class of 1834 in Yale Coll., with Biog. Sketches* (1875), p. 54, unreliable in some particulars; Files and Records, Dept. of State, Washington, D. C.; *Morning Jour. and Courier* (New Haven, Conn.), Aug. 15, 1864.] H. W. H. K.

**ELLSWORTH, OLIVER** (Apr. 29, 1745–Nov. 26, 1807), statesman, chief justice, the second son of Capt. David and Jemima (Leavitt) Ellsworth, was born in Windsor, Conn., to which town his great-grandfather Josiah Ellsworth had come from Yorkshire, England, about the middle of the seventeenth century. Of his childhood practically nothing of certainty is known. His father, who had set his heart upon Oliver's becoming a minister, gave him the best that the time had to offer in the way of an education. Prepared for college by the Rev. Joseph Bellamy of Bethlehem, he entered Yale in 1762, only to leave that

institution for Princeton at the end of his sophomore year. Tradition has perpetuated many stories to account for his leaving Yale, some of which would indicate that his departure was not altogether voluntary; the one sure bit of information concerning it is found in President Clap's journal (July 27, 1764), "Oliver Ellsworth and Waightstill Avery, at the desire of their respective parents, were dismissed from being members of this college" (Brown, *post*, p. 16). Whatever the cause of the episode, it apparently produced no permanent ill-feeling. All of Ellsworth's sons who grew up were graduated from Yale, he himself was afterwards a fellow of the corporation, and in 1790 the college conferred upon him the degree of LL.D.—as did Princeton and Dartmouth in 1797. After two years at Princeton, Oliver, now a B.A., returned home and took up the study of theology with the Rev. John Smalley of New Britain. This study did not long continue, however, for within a year he turned to law. For the next four years he studied that subject, doing some teaching in the interval, and being admitted to the bar in 1771. The following year he married Abigail Wolcott of East Windsor.

Legal business came to him so slowly at first that he found it necessary to support himself by farming and even wood-chopping, financial aid from his father apparently having ceased when he definitely gave up fitting himself for the ministry. Too poor to keep a horse, on days when the court was sitting he was forced to walk from his farm to Hartford and back, a round trip of twenty miles. During the first three years of his practise the returns from his profession, by his own admission, amounted to only three pounds Connecticut currency per annum (Henry Flanders, *The Lives and Times of the Chief Justices*, 1858, 2 ser., p. 62). In 1775, after having already represented Windsor in the General Assembly, he removed to Hartford. From this time his rise at the bar was exceptionally rapid. Noah Webster, who in 1779 came to Ellsworth's office to study law, said that he then had usually from one thousand to fifteen hundred cases on his list, and that there was hardly a case tried in which Ellsworth did not represent one side or the other. This large practise, coupled with the general success of his advocacy, brought him recognition as one of the leaders of the Connecticut bar, and enabled him to lay the foundation of what, by shrewd and careful management, became a large fortune. His position made it inevitable that he should be connected with the courts of his state in ways other than merely as a lawyer. He was appointed state's attorney for Hartford County in 1777, and

Ellsworth

three years later became a member of the Governor's Council. In 1784 this Council was constituted a supreme court of errors of which Ellsworth, by virtue of his office, became one of the judges. Shortly thereafter he was made a judge of the superior court, in which position he continued to serve for the next four years, his resignation from the Council and the office of state's attorney taking place in 1785. It is indicative of the high regard in which he continued to hold the judicial offices of his native state, that after his return from France, he should have been willing again to accept a place on the Governor's Council, and that in the last year of his life, after having already been chief justice of the United States, he should have consented to act as the first chief justice of the new state supreme court of appeals—a consent which ill health forced him to withdraw before he had ever actually entered upon the duties of the office.

Ellsworth was connected with the revolutionary activities of his state almost from the beginning. Shortly after the outbreak of open hostilities in Massachusetts, Connecticut had instituted her Committee of the Pay Table, a commission of five to supervise the expenditures rendered necessary by the state's war measures. Ellsworth was one of the five. Early in 1776 he was sent to Gen. Washington at Cambridge to seek repayment of the money Connecticut had advanced to her men in the Continental Army; later in the same year he was intrusted with a similar mission to Gen. Schuyler in an attempt to recover other moneys which the state had paid to troops employed in Canada. In 1779 he was chosen a member of the important Council of Safety which, with the governor, was in practical control of all military measures. As early as 1777 the General Assembly had appointed him one of the delegates to represent the state in the Continental Congress; chosen annually, he continued to serve in that capacity for six years, declining a further appointment in 1783. Long before he had even started for Philadelphia, Congress had made him one of a committee of five to investigate the failure of the Rhode Island expedition. The day after he took his seat in Congress (Oct. 8, 1778) he was named a member of the committee on marine affairs. Hardly more than two weeks later he was appointed to the committee on appeals, which listened to appeals brought from the Admiralty courts of the various states, and which "was always composed of the ablest lawyers in the House" (Van Santvoord, *post*, p. 202). Ellsworth became a member of the committee just in time to sit upon the hearing of the appeal in the noted case of Gideon Olmstead and the British

sloop *Active*. Details of his activity in the Congress are obscure. In a general way we know that he was a hard worker, able and conscientious, and that he continued to serve on one committee or another as long as his term lasted. Thus in 1780 he was on the committee appointed to consider the best method of carrying out Washington's plan of supplying the army by requisitions of specific articles laid on the different states. With Hamilton and Madison for colleagues he served on two committees, one of which was concerned with the matter of neutrality agreements, and the other of which was so broad in its scope that its work practically amounted to a consideration of a permanent system of administration. Towards the end of his last term, when the unpaid and mutinous soldiers surrounded the building in which the Congress was sitting, he served with Hamilton and Peters on the committee sent by that body to urge upon the executive council of Pennsylvania the calling out of the state militia.

When Connecticut finally decided to send delegates to the Constitutional Convention, Ellsworth, Roger Sherman, and William S. Johnson were selected to represent the state. The part played by this delegation as a whole in the business of the Convention, especially in the matter of the so-called "Connecticut compromise," is clear enough; the exact influence and importance of the individual members is not so clear. By one writer or another each of the three delegates has been given the credit for having brought about the compromise. Ellsworth's motion that "the rule of suffrage in the 2nd branch be the same with that established by the articles of confederation" (Farrand, *post*, I, 468), undoubtedly started the discussion that preceded the compromise, and during the debate he seems to have borne the brunt of the attack of the large-state men; but the accuracy of the statement that "to the resolute efforts and persevering energy of Oliver Ellsworth, more than to any other man in the Convention, is the country indebted for the final compromise of the Constitution which gave to each state an equality of representation in the Senate" (Van Santvoord, *post*, pp. 226–27), may well be questioned. Though it is extremely difficult to gauge the influence of Ellsworth or of any other one man in the Convention, he unquestionably took an active part. His amendment to substitute the words "United States" for the word "national" in a certain resolution then under consideration (G. Hunt and J. B. Scott, *The Debates in the Federal Convention of 1787*, 1920, 131–32) seems to have fixed the title which was thereafter used in the Convention to designate the government. He objected to the payment of representatives out of the federal treasury and proposed payment by the states. He favored the three-fifths ratio in counting slaves as a basis of both taxation and representation; strangely enough, also, he stood out against the abolition of the foreign slave-trade. He was one of the committee of five, of which Rutledge was the chairman, which prepared for the Convention the first official draft of a constitution. His work for the new Constitution did not end at Philadelphia. In the convention which met at Hartford in January 1788 to consider its acceptance or rejection by Connecticut, he spared no effort in explaining it and urging its adoption. His "Letters of a Landholder," printed in the *Connecticut Courant* and the *American Mercury* (November 1787–March 1788) and widely circulated, were written with the same object of ratification in view.

Chosen by Connecticut as one of its first two senators under the Constitution, he represented his state in the United States Senate for a period of seven years, resigning from that body in the spring of 1796 after he had been appointed chief justice. It was in the Senate that the capabilities of Ellsworth appeared to their best advantage. For the work of organization and of practical detail made necessary by the newness of the government, he seems to have been peculiarly fitted. There can be no question as to the predominant position he enjoyed in the Senate; meager as the details are, they are sufficient to show him as an outstanding figure. A hundred years later the memory of his prestige was still alive in Senate traditions—"If we may trust the traditions that have come down from the time of the Administrations of Washington and Adams, when the Senate sat with closed doors, none of them [Webster, Clay, Calhoun] ever acquired the authority wielded by the profound sagacity of Ellsworth" (G. F. Hoar, *Autobiography of Seventy Years*, 1903, vol. II, p. 45). Among other things he reported the first set of Senate rules and considered a plan for printing the journals; he reported back from conference the first twelve amendments to the Constitution which Congress submitted to the states; he framed the measure which admitted North Carolina, and devised the non-intercourse act that forced Rhode Island into the Union; he reported a bill for the government of the territory of the United States south of the Ohio; he drew up the first bill regulating the consular service; he was on the committees to which were referred Hamilton's plans for funding the national debt and for the incorporation of a bank of the United States, both of which he vigorously seconded. Undoubtedly his

most important single piece of work was done in connection with his chairmanship of the committee appointed to bring in a bill organizing the federal judiciary. "That the Judiciary Bill which came from this Committee was, to a large extent, drafted by Ellsworth is now well established" (Warren, *post*, p. 59). Sections 10 to 23 of the original draft bill are in his handwriting; Maclay of Pennsylvania, himself one of the committee, records that "this vile bill is a child of his, and he defends it with the care of a parent" (E. S. Maclay, *The Journal of William Maclay*, 1890, pp. 91–92); Madison also, in two different letters, assigns it to Ellsworth (*Letters and Other Writings of James Madison*, vol. IV, 1865, pp. 220–21, 428). All in all, his work in the Senate made him, as John Adams later said, "the firmest pillar of his [Washington's] whole administration" (C. F. Adams, *The Works of John Adams*, vol. X, 1856, p. 112).

Ellsworth was commissioned chief justice of the United States (Mar. 4, 1796) after the Senate had refused to confirm the previous appointment of Rutledge, and after Cushing, the senior associate judge, had declined the honor. For about three years and a half he was actively engaged in the duties of his office, which at that time included the arduous task of riding the federal circuits. His short term of office, coupled with the fact that he was immediately followed by the great Marshall, has been advanced by some of his biographers as the reason for his failure to take a higher rank among the chief justices. The real reason would seem to lie elsewhere. Our available sources of information unite in presenting him as a great lawyer; but neither his reported opinions nor the weight of other evidence justify us in calling him a great judge. His decisions, neither many nor long as they have come down to us, are marked by strong common sense, but hardly by great legal learning. He himself seems to have been conscious of his lack of this latter quality, as also of the inadequacy of his previous training and preparation for his new position, and "he accordingly took a severe course of study and reading" (Brown, *post*, p. 242). He was primarily the advocate rather than the jurist, a champion of the cause he happened to be supporting. This characteristic, which undoubtedly contributed much to his success at the bar, and which showed to very great advantage in his work in the Congress, in the Convention, and in the Senate, could hardly be brought to bear in purely judicial business.

The last notable public service that Ellsworth performed was as commissioner to France in 1799–1800. The mission began inauspiciously, and resulted in no more than partial success. There was decided opposition to it at home because of the harsh treatment which France had recently accorded Pinckney and his associates. Ellsworth, even if he did not share the popular resentment, at least manifested no enthusiasm towards President Adams's new attempt to come to an understanding with France. Reluctantly, and merely "from the necessity of preventing a greater evil," he accepted his commission (February 1799); yet he dreaded the mission and did what he could to postpone it. Consequently it was not until Nov. 3 that he and his colleague William R. Davie [*q.v.*] left Newport on the frigate *United States*, to join William Vans Murray [*q.v.*] in France. After a boisterous passage of more than three weeks they put into Lisbon, rested there a fortnight, and then again set sail, only to be driven off their course by storms and obliged to land near Corunna in Spain. Thence they proceeded overland to Paris, which they did not reach until Mar. 2, 1800. The hardships suffered by Ellsworth during these four months permanently affected his health (Geo. Gibbs, *Memoirs of the Administrations of Washington and John Adams*, 1846, II, 434). It was thought by some of his friends in America that his mind also had been impaired by his physical breakdown, and that this was the reason why no better terms were secured in the French convention (*Ibid.*, pp. 460, 461, 463). After protracted negotiations with Napoleon which lasted into October, the American ministers were obliged to accept an agreement which conformed to neither their earlier hopes nor their instructions. Ellsworth himself was far from satisfied with it, though he regarded it as sufficient in that it kept the United States out of a not improbable war with France (*Ibid.*, p. 463). When Davie and Oliver Ellsworth, Jr., who had been his father's secretary at Paris, and who now bore the latter's resignation of his office of chief justice, left England for America toward the end of October, Ellsworth himself was unable to accompany them. Through the winter he remained in England, traveling by easy stages from place to place, and making an ineffectual effort to regain his health. He left England in March, landed at Boston, where he rested for a few days, and then proceeded to his home in Windsor and, as far as national affairs were concerned, into retirement.

Timothy Dwight describes Ellsworth as "tall, dignified, and commanding" (*Travels; in New-England and New York*, vol. I, 1821, p. 302). "He was particular as to his personal appearance, and never hurried at his toilet" (H. R. Stiles, *History and Genealogies of Ancient Windsor*, vol.

II, 1892, p. 217). By the judgment of his fellows he was a good, and at times a brilliant, conversationalist; yet unlike almost all of his contemporaries in similar stations he was not given to voluminous correspondence. He had an insistent habit of talking to himself, even in the presence of others. His one vice was the taking of snuff, a practise to which he was greatly addicted. It is related by his daughter that "when he was more than ordinarily engaged in thinking, or in writing, he would take out his box at frequent intervals and go through the form of taking a pinch, and would then drop most of the snuff in little piles on the carpet near him. His family sometimes judged of the intensity and depth of his meditations by the number of these piles of snuff around his chair" (*Ibid.*, p. 218). Naturally moderate and conservative, he nevertheless at times manifested a tenacity of purpose that bordered on obstinacy. Aaron Burr said of him, "If Ellsworth had happened to spell the name of the Deity with two d's, it would have taken the Senate three weeks to expunge the superfluous letter" (Brown, *post*, p. 225). Deeply religious, he was throughout his life not only active in the work of his own (Congregational) church, but he also kept up a lively intellectual interest in religious and theological questions, to the study of which he turned more and more after his retirement. He had always been free from the bigotry of Puritan New England; his sufferings and illness did not make him an ascetic. In his very last years, after he had "begun to die" as he wrote one of his friends, agriculture as well as theology occupied his mind, and he published regularly in the *Connecticut Courant* the "Farmer's Repository," a very practical column on agricultural topics. He was a politician as well as a statesman, and at times was not averse to using the methods of politicians to accomplish his purposes. It is on this basis that his seeming connection with an alleged plot to break up the Union can be explained (G. Hunt, *Disunion Sentiment in Congress in 1794*, 1905; Brown, *post*, pp. 228–30).

[In addition to the works already named, see Wm. G. Brown, *The Life of Oliver Ellsworth* (1905); G. Van Santvoord, *Sketches of the Lives and Judicial Services of the Chief-Justices* (1845); Max Farrand, ed., *The Records of the Federal Convention of 1787* (3 vols., 1911); Charles Warren, "New Light on the History of the Federal Judiciary Act of 1789," in *Harvard Law Rev.*, Nov. 1923. In the letters, diaries, autobiographies and other writings of many of the contemporary statesmen there is much scattered material on Ellsworth. A number of his own unpublished letters and papers are in existence, some in the N. Y. Pub. Lib., and others in the possession of several of his descendants. A list of these descendants with their addresses will be found in *A Memorial of the Opening of the Ellsworth Homestead*, a booklet issued by the Connecticut D. A. R. in 1907. The printed decisions of Ellsworth are in Kirby, *Conn. Reports*, and in Dallas, *U. S. Reports*.] G. E. W.



**ELLSWORTH, WILLIAM WOLCOTT** (Nov. 10, 1791–Jan. 15, 1868), lawyer, congressman, governor, was the son of Oliver Ellsworth [*q.v.*], the second chief justice of the United States, and the twin brother of Henry Leavitt Ellsworth [*q.v.*]. He attended Yale College, graduating with honors in 1810. He then entered the Litchfield Law School conducted by Judges Reeve and Gould. Completing his studies there, he moved to Hartford, where he entered the law office of Judge Thomas Scott Williams. He applied himself industriously to his work, and is reported to have kept himself well informed on the most recent decisions of American and English law. In 1813 he was admitted to the Hartford bar. Four years later, when Judge Williams was sent to Congress, Ellsworth was given charge of his superior's law office. From 1829 to 1834 Ellsworth himself was a membe- of Congress from Connecticut. He might have enjoyed a longer term in Washington, but he resigned the legislative position of his own accord, it is said, in order to return to law practise. While in Congress he served on the judiciary committee, and as a member of that body was active in preparing measures to carry into effect Jackson's plan for resisting South Carolina nullification. In political sentiments, Ellsworth was an enthusiastic Whig. He favored a protective tariff, and government aid for internal improvements. Reëntering active politics as governor of Connecticut in 1838, he served four successive years. His administration coincided with the beginning of railroad transportation in the state, and in his messages to the legislature, he strove to encourage the further development of railroads and manufactures. He also favored the extension of banks, and state aid for the improvement of schools. Although advocating numerous progressive measures, he was essentially a conservative politician. "The time has come," he declared in 1838, "when experiments upon our dearest interests are no longer to be tolerated; and when experience, that great and unerring teacher in human affairs, is to resume her influence, and put to silence visionary politicians" (*Hartford Courant*, May 5, 1838). After his period of service as governor, Ellsworth again resumed his law practise. In 1847 he was made an associate judge of the state supreme court, which position he held until obliged, because of old age, to retire in 1861. In personal appearance Ellsworth was tall and graceful, and dignified in manner. His portrait, in the state library at Hartford, suggests to the observer an embodiment of a typical

Connecticut Yankee, equally able to trade horses, make a political speech, and offer prayer. Throughout his public career, Ellsworth was in much demand as a speaker. To innumerable political rallies in the forties he poured forth that type of blustering oratory so dear to middle nineteenth-century audiences. He was for forty-seven years deacon in the Hartford Centre Church, and an intimate friend of the popular preacher of the time, Joel Hawes. He was also active in aiding philanthropic institutions, especially the American Asylum for the Deaf and Dumb, and the Hartford Retreat for the Insane. By no means a great man, Ellsworth was successful in a moderate way. He always enjoyed general confidence and respect. He was married on Sept. 14, 1813, to Emily, eldest daughter of the lexicographer Noah Webster.

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll., 1805–1815*, VI (1912), 312–15; F. C. Norton, *The Governors of Conn.* (1905); Dwight Loomis and J. G. Calhoun, *Judicial and Civil Hist. of Conn.* (1895); J. H. Trumbull, ed., *Memorial Hist. of Hartford County, Conn.* (1886), vol. II; 34 *Conn.*, App. (1868).]

J. M. M.

**ELMER, EBENEZER** (Aug. 23, 1752–Oct. 18, 1843), doctor, soldier, legislator, younger brother of Jonathan [*q.v.*] and father of Lucius Quintius Cincinnatus Elmer [*q.v.*], was the fifth son of Daniel and Abigail (Lawrence) Elmer, of Cedarville, Cumberland County, N. J. His Puritan ancestor, Edward Elmer, came to Cambridge, Mass., in 1632, with Rev. Thomas Hooker's party, and moved in 1636 to Hartford, Conn. There his grandson was born, the Rev. Daniel Elmer, who with his son Daniel came to New Jersey in 1727. After his father's death, Ebenezer helped his mother on the farm, worked aboard shallops in the river trade, had a quarter's schooling in arithmetic under the celebrated teacher, Norbury, and studied seamanship with John Westcott at "Bridge-Town." When he was twenty-one his brother Jonathan began tutoring him in medicine. In two years he had gone through "all the branches usually taught at any medical school" (Elmer, *post*, p. 49). Meanwhile he gave medical aid during the smallpox and dysentery epidemics of 1775. On Feb. 8, 1776, as ensign under Capt. Joseph Bloomfield [*q.v.*], 3rd New Jersey Regiment, he helped recruit the company, and went with the expedition to salvage the attack on Canada. The diary which he kept from Mar. 22, 1776, to May 25, 1777, and thereafter at intervals through the Revolution, gives evidence of his endurance, devotion to duty, shrewd observation, and sincere religious feeling. He was promoted lieutenant Apr. 9, 1776; surgeon's mate Apr. 1, 1777; and surgeon of the

Elmer

2nd New Jersey Regiment July 5, 1778, acting as such to Nov. 3, 1783. He served at Chadd's Ford, Germantown, Valley Forge, Monmouth, on Sullivan's Indian expedition, at Morristown, Peekskill, and Yorktown. He was one of the founders of the Society of the Cincinnati, and for many years the president of the New Jersey organization.

In 1784 he married Hannah Seeley, a younger sister of his brother Jonathan's wife, and settled down to the practise of medicine at Bridgeton. He was a member of the New Jersey Assembly during the years of 1789–91, 1793–95, 1817 and 1819, serving as speaker in 1791, 1795, and 1817. In the interval between his earlier and later services he sat in the House of Representatives, from 1801 to 1807, as a Jefferson man. His *Address to the Citizens of New Jersey* (1807) is an interesting summary of current politics.

He was a member and vice-president of the state Council in 1807; collector of the port at Bridgeton 1808–17, 1822–32; and in 1814 commanded the brigade stationed at Billingsport to defend the Philadelphia district. Though he did not join the Presbyterian Church until 1825, he founded the first local Sunday-school and was for many years president of the Bible society. He lost his sight about 1840, and died of old age some three years later.

[L. Q. C. Elmer, *Geneal. and Biog. of the Elmer Family* (1860); J. W. Barber and H. Howe, *Hist. Colls. of N. J.* (1868); R. S. Field, *Provincial Courts of N. J.* (N. J. Hist. Soc., 1849); F. B. Lee, *N. J. as a Colony and as a State*, vols. II and III (1902); S. Wickes, *Hist. of Medicine in N. J.* (1879); L. Q. C. Elmer, *The Constitution and Government of the Province and State of N. J., with . . . Reminiscences of the Bench and Bar* (N. J. Hist. Soc., 1872); *Chronicle* (Bridgeton, N. J.), Oct. 21, 1843.]

W. L. W—y.

**ELMER, JONATHAN** (Nov. 29, 1745–Sept. 3, 1817), physician, legislator, jurist, was the elder brother of Ebenezer Elmer [*q.v.*], and third son of Daniel and Abigail (Lawrence) Elmer of Cedarville, N. J. Because of his frail constitution, his parents decided to give him a good education. He was privately taught, learned Latin and French, and by 1766 began studying medicine at the University of Pennsylvania. He received his Bachelor of Medicine degree in 1768 on a printed thesis "De sitis in Febribus, Causis et Remediis," dedicated to the two Franklins. This, with papers on the theory of the eye, the motion of the heart, and the relations of the air to disease, brought him membership in the American Philosophical Society by 1772. Dr. Benjamin Rush is quoted as saying that in medical knowledge he was exceeded by no physician in the United States (Trenton *Federalist*, Sept. 1817). He was a member of the New Jersey

Medical Society in 1772, and president in 1787. He practised in Roadstown, then at Bridgeton, but preferring "political and judicial business," he became sheriff of Cumberland County in 1772. Two years later he was a member of a local vigilance committee when his brother Ebenezer and others were held for having burned tea taken from the brig *Greyhound*. He drew a Whig grand jury, in May 1775, with their elder brother Daniel Elmer as foreman, and the case was dropped.

He attended the Provincial Congress of New Jersey in the sessions from May to October 1775, and was succeeded by his uncle Theophilus. He was actively interested in organizing local militia and in December 1775, became the head of a Bridgeton association which published a patriotic news-letter, the *Plain Dealer*, of which eight numbers are preserved. Incidentally, he was successively captain and major of a light-infantry company, but was not in active service. He was clerk of Cumberland County for the years 1776–79, 1781, and 1786–89. Appointed a delegate to the Continental Congress on Nov. 30, 1776, he attended the sessions in Baltimore, Philadelphia, Lancaster, and York. He was a member of the Board of Treasury and of the medical committee, and in the latter capacity inspected hospitals in New Jersey and Pennsylvania. His patriotic speeches were widely circulated. He was reappointed to Congress, but complained that the delegates could not exist on their pay. Resigning in September 1778, he returned to his family affairs. He resumed public office, however, serving in the New Jersey council in 1780, in the Congress of the Confederation from 1781 to 1784, and again in the council in 1784. He was surrogate of Cumberland County from 1784 to 1802. As a member of the Congress of the Confederation in 1787–88 he worked zealously for the federal Constitution. He was a warm supporter of Washington and Federalism, and on his election to the first Congress under the Constitution, voted steadily for Hamilton's financial measures. As a representative of the State of New Jersey, he supported the interests of the smaller states under federal union. Maclay wrote, Sept. 3, 1789, "I know not in the Senate a man, if I were to choose a friend, on whom I would cast the eye of confidence as soon as on this little doctor" (*Journal, post*, p. 144). Later, on differing with him as to the location of the capital he amended his former impression with the entry, "I had a good opinion of Elmer once, it is with pain I retract it" (*Ibid.*, p. 389). By voting for the measure to establish the capital on the Potomac, Elmer lost the support of his constituents, and in 1791 was succeeded by John Rutherford; he had drawn a two-year term. In addition to his other activities, he mastered real estate law and prepared himself to revise the New Jersey statutes, a work done by William Paterson [*q.v.*]. He was a member of the 1812 convention which nominated DeWitt Clinton against Madison, and opposed war with Great Britain. Reëlected surrogate in the Federalist revival of 1813 he bade farewell to the court in February 1814, after forty-two years' participation in public life. He held a seat in the Presbyterian church from the time of his marriage to Mary Seeley in 1769, became a member in 1798, served as ruling elder, and finally as delegate to the Presbytery and to the General Assembly. As a student Elmer was diligent and laborious; in person he was formal and stately. He accumulated a very handsome fortune.

[L. Q. C. Elmer, *Geneal. and Biog. of the Elmer Family* (1860); Stephen Wickes, *Hist. of Medicine in N. J.* (1879); F. B. Lee, *N. J. as a Colony and as a State*, III (1902), 52; *Jour. of William Maclay* (1927); *N. J. Medic. Reporter*, I (1884), 133–36; *Gen. Cat. of the Univ. of Pa.* (1922); *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser*, Sept. 12, 1817.] W. L. W—y.

**ELMER, LUCIUS QUINTIUS CINCINNATUS** (Feb. 3, 1793–Mar. 11, 1883), jurist and legislator, was the only son of Ebenezer [*q.v.*] and Hannah (Seeley) Elmer. After "a good academic education" and one term at the University of Pennsylvania, he studied law for five years with his cousin, Daniel Elmer. He was licensed as an attorney in 1815 and as counsellor in 1818. He married on Oct. 6, 1818, Catharine Hay of Philadelphia. Elected to the Assembly as an independent Democrat in 1820, he served four sessions, was speaker in 1823, and acted also as chairman of the commission delegated to locate a route, and estimate costs and revenues for the Delaware-Raritan canal project. Their report, written by him, favored either state construction or participation, but the project was privately carried out later by Commodore R. F. Stockton [*q.v.*]. In 1824 President Monroe appointed him United States District Attorney for New Jersey. He served with great credit and won the especial confidence of Judge Bushrod Washington [*q.v.*]. As an Adams Democrat, he was superseded in 1829 by Garret Dorset Wall, whose life he later sketched. Simultaneously, from 1824 to 1834, he was prosecutor of the pleas for Cape May and Cumberland counties, and served on the two commissions, in 1824 and 1833, which ended the Hudson River boundary dispute with New York state.

Maintaining his private practise, he published in 1838 a digest of state laws, with notes of re-

lated judicial decisions, followed the next year by a volume of legal forms. In the latter year he also served on the joint legislative committee which studied the care of idiotic and insane persons and recommended the asylum system in which New Jersey has since been a leading state (Lee, *post,* III, 292–93). As Democratic congressional candidate in 1842 he upset a previous Whig majority of 1,200 in his district. In the House he became chairman of the committee on elections and submitted their report regarding members elected by general district (see *Congressional Globe,* 28 Cong., 1 Sess., App., pp. 126–30). He also took a stand against the Dorr constitution in Rhode Island (*Ibid.,* 28 Cong., 2 Sess., App., pp. 260–63) which was later advocated by Webster and sustained by the Supreme Court in *Luther* vs. *Borden* (*7 Howard,* 1). On the tariff question he yielded, against his own belief, to the convictions of his constituents and helped defeat the amendments proposed in 1844. Failing of reëlection, he declined to take further part in politics. He served as attorney-general of New Jersey, 1850–52, resigning to become justice of the state supreme court. In this capacity he served for two seven-year periods, 1852–59 and 1862–69, with an *ad interim* appointment in 1861. He then retired from public office—save for his membership on the local board of education—having served almost continuously for forty years.

Elmer was a member of various societies and made numerous addresses before educational and other bodies. He was tireless in charitable, temperance, and church matters, though never able to accept Presbyterian standards in their entirety. He kept abreast of his times in history, government, theology, and science, and was deeply learned in the origins and principles of the law, especially as to land tenures. His opinions were models of terse, vigorous reasoning, strictly limited to the case in hand. His writings include a genealogy of the Elmer family, a history of Cumberland County, N. J., and his *magnum opus, The Constitution and Government of the Province and State of New Jersey, with Biographical Sketches of the Governors . . . and Reminiscences of the Bench and Bar,* published by the New Jersey Historical Society in 1872. Elmer was a calm, dignified man, sometimes cold and severe, but always admired for his integrity. He was happy alike in his family life, his public service, and the mastery of his profession.

[L. Q. C. Elmer, *Geneal. and Biog. of the Elmer Family* (1860); *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.,* 2 ser., VIII (1885), 25–45; F. B. Lee, *N. J. as a Colony and as a State,* III (1902).]

W.L.W—y.



**ELMORE, FRANKLIN HARPER** (Oct. 15, 1799–May 29, 1850), banker, senator, was born in Laurens District, S. C. His father was John Archer Elmore, a native of Virginia, who came to South Carolina in General Greene's army and remained there. His mother was Sarah Saxon. Franklin entered South Carolina College in 1817, and was graduated in 1819. Studying law under Andrew P. Butler, he was admitted to the bar in 1821 and began practise at Walterboro. Becoming solicitor the following year, he served until 1836. During this period he was a member of the governor's staff, a colonel of militia, and a trustee of South Carolina College. While not particularly active in the nullification controversy, he was a supporter of the movement and was a member of the nullification convention, being then and thereafter a devoted disciple of Calhoun. In 1836 he was elected to Congress to succeed James H. Hammond who had resigned. He took his seat December 19, and served to Mar. 4, 1839. In the House he was a consistent defender of slavery and during the time of his service, as a representative of the South Carolina delegation, he wrote to James G. Birney a series of letters of inquiry concerning the abolition movement which with Birney's replies were published in 1838 in *The Anti-Slavery Examiner* (No. 8). He favored the annexation of Texas and advocated federal aid to Southern railroads, in the development of which he was greatly interested.

In 1839 he was elected president of the bank of the state and thereafter made his home in Charleston. Under his management the bank was greatly strengthened and enlarged, and Elmore's skilful defense of it both in his personal contacts and in a series of letters addressed to the people of the state probably saved it from destruction by the group of its opponents led by C. G. Memminger. In his appeal to the people appears his deep interest in the development of the state through the building of railroads, the improvement of agriculture, and the establishment of industries. He himself was not only active in the construction of railroads, but he also developed the iron mines at Cherokee Ford and Limestone Springs.

He never lost interest in politics. In 1844 he was elected a delegate to the Baltimore convention of the Democratic party as a supporter of Calhoun, but discovering the hopelessness of his cause, did not take his seat. He supported Polk, however, who had been a close personal and political friend since their service in the House together, and was by him offered the post of minister to Great Britain which he declined. In 1850 he was appointed to the United States Sen-

ate to succeed Calhoun. He took his seat and made one brief speech, but died twenty-eight days from his admission. He is buried in Columbia, S. C.

Elmore was successful as a lawyer, in politics, and in business. He was a good judge of men, and a tactful and adroit manager of them. He loved politics but cared nothing for public office, finding his pleasure in playing and influencing the course of the game. He married Harriet Chesnut, the daughter of Gov. John Taylor of South Carolina.

[Elmore Papers in Lib. of Cong.; J. B. O'Neall, *Biog. Sketches of the Bench and Bar of S. C.* (1859), vol. II; *Diary of James K. Polk* (3 vols., 1910); *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams* (1874–77).] J.G.deR.H.

**ELSBERG, LOUIS** (Apr. 2, 1836–Feb. 19, 1885), laryngologist, was born at Iserlohn, Prussia, the son of Nathan and Adelaide Elsberg. Brought to Philadelphia by his parents in 1849, he graduated with honor at the high school in 1852; and after two years' experience as teacher in an academy at Winchester, Va., began the study of medicine at Jefferson Medical College, from which he received his degree in 1857. Moving to New York City, he held for a time the position of resident physician at the Mt. Sinai Hospital, in 1859 was one of the editors of the *North American Medical Reporter,* and then went to Europe for postgraduate study. He was fortunate in being a member of the first instruction class of Professor Czermak of Vienna in the then new art of laryngoscopy upon which is based the practise of laryngology. His fellow members, Störck, Türck, Lewin, and Semeleder, all, like himself, became eminent as pioneers. Upon his return to the United States he settled in New York and joined the faculty of the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York, holding the first course of lectures on diseases of the throat in 1861 and conducting the first public clinic for the same in the year following. In 1865 his essay, *Laryngoscopal Surgery Illustrated in the Treatment of Morbid Growths within the Larynx,* published the following year, was awarded a gold medal by the American Medical Association as an epoch-making contribution to a new subject. His other writings include two booklets and numerous reprints of magazine contributions. The first-named are: *Laryngoscopical Medication,* etc. (1864); and *The Throat and Its Functions,* etc. (1880; 2nd ed., 1882). Of reprinted articles the most compendious are: *Neuroses of Sensation,* etc. (1882); *Structure of Hyaline Cartilage* (1881–82); *On Angioma of the Larynx* (1884); *Pneumatometry,* etc. (1875); *Connection of Throat with*



*Other Diseases* (1870). His most important contribution to general science was *Regeneration, or the Preservation of the Organic Molecules,* etc. (1874, reprinted from the *Proceedings of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, 23rd Meeting,* 1874, pt. B, pp. 88–103). His death prevented the completion of a textbook on laryngology.

Elsberg's technical knowledge of music naturally made him the pioneer medical attendant and consultant of opera singers and other high-salaried voice-users; thus he developed a specialty within a specialty. He was equally prominent as a teacher and inspirer of laryngologists. His avocations were biology and microscopy and he read several papers before general scientific bodies; even late in his career he found time to work enthusiastically in the elder Heitzmann's pathological laboratory collaborating in the composition of the latter's *Microscopical Morphology in Health and Disease.* In June 1878 he founded the American Laryngological Association and was elected its first president, but in the following year, as the result of his first breakdown in health, was obliged to forward his presidential address from Aix-la-Chapelle. In 1880 he founded a quarterly, the *Archives of Laryngology,* which he conducted during 1880–82. He applied himself so unremittingly to his manifold activities that his health again suffered, and, although for a time he continued to work on, he succumbed to pneumonia in the forty-ninth year of his age. His wife, whom he married in 1876, was Mary Van Hagen Scoville.

[M. H. Henry, *Life of Louis Elsberg* (1890), written and circulated for the N. Y. Academy of Medicine; obituary notices in *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.,* Feb. 26, 1885; *N. Y. Medic. Jour.,* Feb. 28, 1885; *New Eng. Medic. Monthly,* V (1885–86), 150; *Trans. Medic. Soc. State of N. Y.* (1886), pp. 601–08; *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Tribune,* Feb. 20, 1885.] E.P.

**ELSON, LOUIS CHARLES** (Apr. 17, 1848–Feb. 14, 1920), music critic, lecturer, author, and teacher, was born in Boston, the son of Julius and Rosalie (Schnell) Elson. He was educated in the public schools of Boston and received his first lessons (in piano) from his mother, studying later with August Kreissmann and Carl Gloggner-Castelli of Leipzig. His first professional activity was in the field of music criticism. Beginning with the editorship of *Vox Humana,* then writing as music critic on the *Boston Courier,* he joined the staff of the *Boston Advertiser* in 1886, retaining that position until his death. In this field he led the way to a more detailed and thorough estimate of musical works and performances than had been customary in the United States, and incidentally treated all artists under

his review with courtesy, even when adverse comment proved necessary. His many lectures on music helped to make him known throughout the United States and Canada. These were principally devoted to the various national schools of music and folk-songs, and partly to analyses of works given at symphonic and other concerts. His Boston municipal lectures deserve more than passing mention for their value in educating the musical taste of the public. These were given at public halls and school-houses in connection with concerts by a small but excellent orchestra and occasional soloists. No admission was charged, so large audiences attended, and showed marked attention and desire to learn. The programs, arranged in part by the lecturer, began with the simpler and more melodious classics of Mozart, Schubert, and others which were duly analyzed before the performance, and progressed through the music of Beethoven, the romanticists, the operatic composers, the Liszt-Wagner period, to some modernists.

As a teacher Elson joined the New England Conservatory of Music in 1880. There he soon took charge of the Theory Department, which he developed from meager dimensions to a full and thorough course, equal to that given by the best European conservatories. It included a careful study of musical form and analysis which opened up to the students a wider view in the wonderland of musical appreciation and understanding, supplemented by two sets of lectures, one treating the orchestral instruments and their use and the other dealing with musical history and the lives of great composers. This course, given for forty years, made Elson known and appreciated by thousands of students in all parts of the country, who have carried on his educational work in this field and aimed for his high standard. His popularity as a lecturer was due to his genial personality, commanding presence, ingratiating voice and style of delivery, added to his thorough mastery of the subject in hand. He was able to hold the close attention of his audience, occasionally relieving the serious side of his lecture by a touch of humor or light, appropriate comment or anecdote. As an after-dinner speaker he was noted for his wit and felicity of expression. In addition to his educational works he wrote some music and libretti for operettas and a number of poems of no mean order.

His many books are a notable testimony to his scholarly erudition. They include: *Curiosities of Music* (1880), an earlier work, of popular interest; *German Songs and Song Writers* (1882); *The Theory of Music* (1890), a concise textbook; *The Realm of Music* (1894), a series of



essays; *Great Composers and Their Work* (1898), a volume of general appeal; *The National Music of America* (1899), a valuable and original work which treats its subject in detailed and authoritative fashion; *Shakespeare in Music* (1901), explaining the playwright's many musical allusions, some of which had puzzled commentators hitherto; *History of German Song* (1903); *Elson's Music Dictionary* (1905); *Mistakes and Disputed Points in Music and Music Teaching* (1910); *Women in Music* (1918); and *Children in Music* (1918). Perhaps the most generally valuable of all his volumes is *The History of American Music* (1904), which gives a thorough view of the earlier phases as well as the present status of its subject, treating of the interesting debates and acts of the Pilgrims and Puritans with reference to the art; the early composers; the national folk and war songs; the rise of choral and orchestral societies; and the advent of native American musicians in the last few generations. He also edited and contributed to large musical publications such as the *University Musical Encyclopedia* (1912), *The Musician's Guide* (1913), and a supplementary volume to *Famous Composers and Their Works* (1902). In addition to his objective writings in the field of music, he published in 1891, *European Reminiscences Musical and Otherwise,* an account of foreign vacations, written with the delightful humor and geniality that were characteristic of the author. In 1873 he married Bertha Lissner, who survived him with their son, Arthur Elson. A memorial tablet was placed in the New England Conservatory of Music, where he served so long and faithfully, teaching up to the very day of his death.

[Information from Mr. Arthur Elson, and from the Antiquarian Soc., Worcester, Mass.; brief sketch by Arthur Elson on pp. 325–26 of *The Hist. of Am. Music* (rev. ed., 1925); W. S. B. Mathews, *A Hundred Years of Music in America* (1889); *Who's Who in America,* 1920–21; and Elson's catalogued works in the Boston Pub. Lib.] C.A.W.

**ELWELL, FRANK EDWIN** (June 15, 1858–Jan. 23, 1922), sculptor, son of John Wesley and Clara (Farrar) Elwell, was born at Concord, Mass., and when growing up, had the cultural advantage of contact with many of the fine minds of that town. Left an orphan at four years, he was placed in the care of his grandfather, Elisha Farrar, the village blacksmith, a poor man but a "great character" and a friend of Thoreau. The boy often accompanied these two men in their Sunday morning rambles. He revered Emerson; he was befriended by the Alcotts. Poverty was his lot. At eight years of age he rose early to do the chores for neighboring farmers, in or-

der to help pay for his clothes. Saturdays, he worked with his grandfather at the forge. His forebears on both sides were fighters. His great-grandfather Farrar fought at Concord Bridge, his great-uncle Col. Timothy Bruce at Bunker Hill. Members of the Elwell family served in the Mexican War, and in the Civil War. The sculptor himself belonged for years to the Massachusetts militia; during the Spanish-American War he joined the Engineer Corps as volunteer, but was not actively engaged.

When he was scarcely through high school, his grandfather died. Louisa Alcott continued to prove herself a true friend; May Alcott, noting the boy's talent and love of beauty, had already taught him something of line drawing and later gave him hints as to the modeling of form. His experience at the forge was of value; through an aunt, Miss Louisa Brooks, he found employment with Messrs. Codman and Shurtleff, a Boston firm of instrument-makers. "Whatever executive ability I have," said Elwell, "I owe to Mr. Shurtleff." Even after deciding to become a sculptor, the young man gave much time to the perfecting of surgical instruments, work which trained both eye and hand, and enabled him to note operations in hospitals. Taking a studio in Boston, he showed, among various early attempts, a bust of the painter Gaugengigl, which attracted much attention on account of the lifelike effect of the eyes. Study abroad became his immediate ambition. Aided by loans from Louisa Alcott and from his fellow townsman, the young sculptor Daniel C. French, whose advice and experience were for years of great value to him, he went to Paris in 1878, and entered the Beaux-Arts, later becoming a private pupil of Falguière. In 1881, he exhibited in the Paris Salon a portrait of the Belgian sculptor, Hippolyte le Roy, and in 1883, the realistic bronze figure, "Aqua Viva," a work shown also in Brussels and in London, and now owned by the Metropolitan Museum, New York. In the following year, he broadened his studies by a period at the Royal School of Arts, Ghent, Belgium, there receiving a silver medal for his progress in architecture. He married Molina Mary Hildreth, daughter of a prosperous and cultivated Massachusetts family, and on their return to the United States in 1885 they made their home in New York City. For a time Elwell taught in the National Academy School, and in the Art Students' League. His first commission was for a monument to be placed in Edam, Holland, to commemorate F. H. Pont. He selected an imaginative rather than a realistic treatment, taking as his theme, "The Death of Strength." The group, an angel with a branch of laurel

Elwell

standing over a prostrate lion, is said to be the first ever modeled in the United States to be set up abroad. His next work of importance was the immensely popular "Dickens and Little Nell," given a place of honor at the Columbian Exposition of 1893, and now in Clarence H. Clark Park, West Philadelphia. The group is heroic in size, but hardly monumental in conception; it charms the public through its sympathetic and picturesque qualities. Together with the "Diana and the Lion," now in the Art Institute, Chicago, this work won for the sculptor a gold medal.

Elwell had long felt a deep love for Egyptian art, and he labored for years on his seated statue of "Egypt Awaking," shown in the Salon of 1896, and promptly bought by a French gentleman, M. Gabriel Goupillat. From the knees down, the figure is treated in the hieratic Egyptian manner; above, it gradually emerges into a vivid life finding ultimate expression in the uplifted arms and animated countenance:—a difficult sculptural problem skilfully solved. The striking variety of gifts shown in these and other works denote Elwell's versatility. His equestrian group of Gen. Winfield Scott Hancock at Gettysburg, Pa. (1896), has the necessary monumental qualities, while his "Orchid Dancer" of two years later is all lightness and elegance. The "New Life," a large memorial relief of a draped female figure (placed in the cemetery at Lowell, Mass., in 1899), shows the sculptor in a deeply religious, even mystical mood. Again, his novel and imposing decorative fountain for the Pan-American Exposition, with its crowning figures of "Kronos" and "Ceres," designed somewhat in the Egyptian spirit, revealed his unfettered imagination, and won for him the silver medal (1901). "One was conscious," wrote Taft (*post,* p. 417), "of a strong artistic personality behind prodigious apparitions."

Elwell himself placed a high value on the "artistic personality" and artistic integrity, stressing them in his writings and lectures on art. In 1903, he became curator of statuary in the Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York City. He was admirably energetic and resourceful in this office though nervous instability occasionally obscured his judgment and he was at times overearnest, even quarrelsome. After two years he returned to his studio-work in Weehawken, giving himself entirely to creative endeavor. His "Dispatch Rider of the Revolution," erected in 1907 at Orange, N. J., is a virile bronze of heroic size, representing a booted and spurred horseman, who has evidently just dismounted; his cloak is still outspread, and gives a good silhouette. Among his other works are figures of

"Greece" and "Rome," New York Custom House; "Admiral Davis," "Gen. Frederick Steele," "The Flag," at Vicksburg, Miss.; "Lincoln Monument," Orange, N. J.; "Amzi Dodd Memorial," Newark, N. J.; "Edwin Booth Memorial," Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass., and portrait busts of Sir Peter Esselmont (Aberdeen, Scotland); Henry D. Thoreau (Public Library, Concord, Mass.); Levi P. Morton and Garret A. Hobart (United States Capitol, Washington). The Fogg Museum at Harvard University has the bronze statuette "Kronos," presented by the sculptor's son, Bruce Elwell. In his art, he was a lover of nature, a thinker, a worker, a fighter. Whatever he did was done thoroughly, and in a workmanlike way. After many years, Elwell's first marriage was ended by a divorce, and he was married again, to Annie Marion Benjamin. He died suddenly at Darien, Conn., leaving two sons by his first marriage, and one by his second.

[Lorado Taft, *The Hist. of Am. Sculpture* (rev. ed., 1924); C. H. Caffin, *Am. Masters of Sculpture* (1903); *Arena*, Nov. 1905 and Mar. 1908; *Rev. of Revs.* (N.Y.), Feb. 1901; *Overland Monthly*, Aug. 1898; U. Thieme and F. Becker, *Allgemeines Lexikon der Bildenden Künstler*, vol. X (1914); *Who's Who in America*, 1899–1917; obituaries in *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 24, 1922; information from Mr. Daniel C. French.]

A. A.

**ELWELL, JOHN JOHNSON** (June 22, 1820–Mar. 13, 1900), physician, lawyer, authority in medical jurisprudence, editor, was born near Warren, Ohio. His boyhood was spent on a farm and after a common-school education he entered Western Reserve College and later its medical department, the Cleveland Medical College, from which he received his medical degree in 1846. After practising medicine for several years he studied law, was admitted to the bar in 1854, and began legal practise, particularly in the medico-legal field. He lectured on medical jurisprudence in Ohio University (Athens), the Union Law College, and the medical department of Western Reserve. He was a member of the Ohio legislature from Ashtabula County in 1853–54, and in 1859 wrote *A Medico-Legal Treatise on Malpractice and Medical Evidence, Comprising the Elements of Medical Jurisprudence*, published in 1860. Previous to the issue of this book there had been no treatise on the subject of malpractise, a matter at that time of great importance to the medical profession, for whom any such suit whether lost or won was disastrous and expensive. The book was accurate, concise, and timely, and went through four editions, being the standard work in the United States, Canada, and Great Britain on the part of the field of medical



jurisprudence which it covered. In 1857 Elwell established the *Western Law Monthly* and was for years its editor. After the outbreak of the Civil War, on Aug. 3, 1861, he entered the army as captain and assistant quartermaster, and eventually became chief quartermaster of the X Army Corps. After the war he was mustered out of the service with the brevet rank of brigadier-general of volunteers, returned to Cleveland, and continued the practise of law till his death. He wrote for various journals—among other articles one upon the sanity of Guiteau, the assassin of President Garfield—and he was a contributor to and editor of John Bouvier's *Law Dictionary*.

In person he was tall and vigorous, his manners were courtly, his cheeks ruddy, he wore his hair rather long, and he was fond of children. His wife, Nancy Chittenden, bore him four children, none of whom survived him, and on her death he adopted the children of his brother, leaving them his fortune.

[Sketch written by Thomas Hall Shastid from private and other sources and published in H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920), and also in *Am. Medicine* (Burlington, Vt.), Feb. 1909, n.s. IV, pp. 94–96, where his portrait is reproduced; J. H. Kennedy and W. M. Day, *Bench and Bar of Cleveland* (1889), p. 256; *Mil. Order of the Loyal Legion, Commandery of Ohio*, Circular No. 13, ser. of 1900; *Ohio in the War* (1868), ed. by Whitelaw Reid; *Hist. of the Cuyahoga County Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument* (1894); catalogues of Western Reserve College, 1846 and following years; *Cleveland Plain Dealer*, Mar. 15, 1900.]

A. P. M.

**ELWYN, ALFRED LANGDON** (July 9, 1804–Mar. 15, 1884), physician by training, but never a practitioner, who made literary and philanthropic pursuits his chief occupation, was born in Portsmouth, N. H., and died in Philadelphia. He was the son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Langdon) Elwyn. His maternal grandfather was John Langdon, governor of New Hampshire and presiding officer of the first United States Senate. Alfred grew up amid surroundings of wealth and social distinction, attended Phillips Exeter Academy (1816), and afterward went to Harvard, from which in 1823—calling himself Langdon-Elwyn—he was graduated. After this, he spent several years in Europe attending the lectures of celebrated physicians, but returned to America in time to be graduated in medicine from the University of Pennsylvania in 1831. He was married in 1832 to Mary Middleton Mease, by whom he had two children, one becoming a clergyman and another the wife of S. Weir Mitchell [*q.v.*]. He did not actively engage in his profession, but having means for the indulgence of his whims delved into various topics, especially history, philology, and botany. He ac-

quired a valuable library of sources for American history, and from it made repeated gifts to historical societies in New England. He was president of the Pennsylvania Institute for the Blind, the School for Feeble Minded Children, the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and the state agricultural society. His *Papers Relating to Public Events in Massachusetts Preceding the American Revolution*, a series of original documents which he had collected, appeared in 1856. In 1859 he published *A Glossary of Supposed Americanisms*. Convinced that New England was almost purely English in origin, in this work he chides British critics of America for their failure to recognize in American speech a language often more historically correct than their own. The chief cause of provincialisms on the western side of the Atlantic, he said, is the lack of a standard. "The people of England have Parliament filled with men of the best education to be their standard; the people of this Country will hardly look to their National Legislature for an example in the use of language or of national refinement" (*Glossary*, p. 11). He wrote, for private circulation among his friends, a religious poem said to give a vivid impression of his faith and piety. Two volumes sometimes ascribed to him, *Letters by Washington, Adams, Jefferson, and Others, Written During and After the Revolution, to John Langdon, New Hampshire* (1880), and *Letters by Josiah Bartlett, William Whipple, and Others, Written Before and During the Revolution* (1889), were in fact compiled by his son, of the same name (letter to this effect written by the son to the Librarian of Congress, July 21, 1916).

[*Phillips Exeter Acad. Catalogue, 1783–1903* (1903); H. G. Ashmead, *Hist. of Delaware County, Pa.* (1884); *Harvard Univ. Quin. Cat. 1635–1915* (1915); *Univ. of Pa. General Alumni Cat.* (1917); *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.* 1884; *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 1884–85; letter from T. L. Montgomery, June 11, 1928; *The Record* (Phila.), Mar. 18, 1884.] J. D. W.

**ELZEY, ARNOLD** (Dec. 18, 1816–Feb. 21, 1871), Confederate soldier, was a member of one of the older families of Maryland. His father, Arnold Elzey Jones, had twice represented Somerset County in the Maryland legislature. His mother, Anne Wilson (Jackson), was of a wealthy and prominent family. Their son, born at "Elmwood," the residence of his parents on the Manokin River in Somerset County, was educated for a military career. He graduated from West Point in 1837 in his twentieth year, and was commissioned as second-lieutenant of artillery. At this time he dropped his last name, Jones, and adopted his second Christian name, the more distinctive Elzey, which was that of his paternal grandmother. He served with credit as lieutenant in the Seminole War, and at the opening of the Mexican War was in command of a battery of artillery at Brownsville on the Texas frontier. He had the honor of firing the first gun in that war, through which he served with distinction, and was twice brevetted for gallant conduct in the battles of Contreras and Churubusco. In 1861 he was serving as captain of artillery with a small number of men in command of the United States arsenal at Augusta, Ga. He surrendered this post to superior forces of the Confederate States immediately after the fall of Fort Sumter, and brought his command back to Washington. He resigned his commission, made his way back to Richmond, and was commissioned lieutenant-colonel in the Confederate army, in command of the 1st Maryland Infantry then in process of organization. At the first battle of Manassas he was ranking as senior colonel—in Gen. Kirby Smith's brigade, and after Kirby Smith was wounded and borne from the field he led the successful charge on the afternoon of that day which turned the tide of battle and routed the almost successful army of McDowell. For this he was complimented by Gen. Beauregard, who called him the "Blucher of the Field," and was promoted brigadier-general on the field of battle by President Davis.

Early in the war his brigade was attached to Stonewall Jackson's forces, and he fought with this division through the Valley campaign and up to the Seven Days' fighting around Richmond. At the battle of Port Republic he had a horse shot under him and was slightly wounded, and at Cold Harbor he was desperately wounded by a ball through his face and head. This wound prevented further active command, but after his recovery he was promoted major-general and placed in command of the Department of Richmond, where he continued till the fall of 1864. While in this position he organized the "Local Defence Brigade" composed of government clerks and workmen. This force did service in the capture of Dahlgren, the repulse of Stoneman's, Kilpatrick's, and Sheridan's attempts on Richmond, and won the praise of Gen. Lee for its fine appearance and quick movements. After a brief service in organization at Staunton he joined Gen. Hood as chief of artillery in the Army of Tennessee, and took part in the operations against Sherman's lines of communications. After the dissolution of Hood's army, he remained in Georgia without definite command till the capture of Jefferson Davis, when he was allowed to return to Maryland. He then retired to a small farm in Anne Arundel County, where

he lived for five years with his only son and his wife, Ellen Irwin of Baltimore, to whom he was married in 1845. He died of pneumonia, while on a visit to Dr. Frank Donaldson of Baltimore. Elzey was of modest unassuming manners, known for his intrepid courage, genuinely loved by friends, and thoroughly respected by his fellow officers in both the Federal and Confederate armies.

[Published sources include: *Confed. Mil. Hist.*, vol. II (1899); E. A. Pollard, *Lee and his Lieutenants* (1867); E. Boyle, *Distinguished Marylanders* (1877), pp. 309–18; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891). There is a manuscript sketch written by Levin L. Waters, Elzey's brother-in-law, and now in the possession of his nephew, A. Elzey Waters of Baltimore; and there are some biographical notes in the library of R. D. Steuart, of the *Baltimore News*; F. Moore's *Rebellion Record* contains reports of Elzey's activities at Manassas, Cold Harbor, and in the bread riot in Richmond. An obituary appeared in the *Baltimore Am. and Commercial Advertiser*, Feb. 23, 1871.] J. E. W.

**EMBREE, ELIHU** (Nov. 11, 1782–Dec. 4, 1820), Abolitionist, was the son of Thomas and Esther Embree, who removed from Pennsylvania about 1790 to Washington County in the territory that soon became the state of Tennessee. He and his brother, Elijah, were among the earliest iron-manufacturers of this region, but unlike his brother, Elihu achieved no notable success in the business world. There was much of the idealist in him, and he became one of the early leaders of the anti-slavery movement. In eastern Tennessee, where he lived, as well as in neighboring communities of the southern Appalachian region, hostility to the institution of slavery was strong. Thomas Embree, a Quaker minister, had addressed the people of Tennessee as early as 1797 in advocacy of gradual Abolition (*Knoxville Gazette*, Jan. 23, 1797). In 1815, under the leadership of Charles Osborn and John Rankin, the Manumission Society of Tennessee was organized. A short time before this, Elihu Embree, who for some years had been a deist and a slave-owner, had embraced the Christian religion, freed his slaves, and joined the Society of Friends. He became a member of this Manumission Society. When Osborn and Rankin with other anti-slavery men left the slave-states, Embree regretted their going and the consequent "loss of so much virtue from these slave states, which held too little before." He determined to carry on the work in Tennessee and he succeeded to their leadership. In March 1819 he began the publication at Jonesboro of the *Manumission Intelligencer*. This weekly paper, a complete file of which seems not to be in existence, was probably the first periodical in the United States devoted wholly to the anti-slavery cause. In April 1820, Embree changed his publication to a monthly and



its name to the *Emancipator*. Within a few months it had a subscription list of about two thousand; it was being "extensively circulated in the United States"; and its first two issues had to be reprinted for late subscribers (*Knoxville Register*, Nov. 28, 1820). In its columns Embree took the position "that freedom is the inalienable right of *all men*." He replied to those who feared that racial equality would follow Abolition that he had "never been able to discover that the author of nature intended that one complexion of the human skin should stand higher in the scale of being, than another." In vigorous terms he condemned slavery and the slave-owner. He called upon the enlightened master voluntarily to set free his slaves. He memorialized the Tennessee legislature to abolish the institution of slavery, "a shame to any people." He denounced those states that sought to exclude free negroes from within their boundaries. When Missouri sought admission into the Union as a slave-state, "Not another foot of slave territory," was his reply. Although the *Emancipator* died with its young and militant editor, Benjamin Lundy's *Genius of Universal Emancipation* was in a sense its successor, and hostility to slavery continued in eastern Tennessee.

[The quotations above, except as otherwise indicated, are from the *Emancipator* as given in E. E. Hoss, "Elihu Embree, Abolitionist," in *Am. Hist. Mag.* (Nashville), Jan. 1897, and also in *Vanderbilt Southern Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, no. 2 (1897). See, in addition, Asa E. Martin's "The Anti-Slavery Societies of Tenn.," in *Tenn. Hist. Mag.*, Dec. 1915, and his "Pioneer Anti-Slavery Press," in *Miss. Valley Hist. Rev.*, Mar. 1916; Caleb P. Patterson, *The Negro in Tenn., 1790–1865* (Univ. of Texas Bull., no. 2205, 1922), *passim*; and obituary in *Knoxville Register*, Dec. 12, 1820. A silhouette of Embree is in the Univ. of Tenn. Lib.] P. M. H.

**EMBURY, EMMA CATHERINE** (*c.* 1806–Feb. 10, 1863), author, was born in New York, the eldest of the three children of Dr. James R. and Elizabeth (Post) Manley. The family was of English stock, with an admixture of Dutch. Her father, who attended Thomas Paine in his last illness, was a graduate in arts and medicine of Columbia College. From him Emma acquired her powers as a conversationalist and her enthusiasm for books. In conformity with the genteel tradition of the time, she covered reams with her juvenile verse and stories, and when the *New York Mirror* was established she soon became one of its valued, but unremunerated, contributors. Her literary reputation was already in bud when, on May 10, 1828, she married Daniel Embury, president of the Atlantic Bank of Brooklyn, a man of courtly manners and cultivated tastes. They were both fond of hospitality, and Mrs. Embury became the leader of a salon. Though she never

claimed authorship as her profession, she produced a large quantity of poems, tales, and essays and was sought by editors as a contributor to their magazines. Several periodicals printed her name in the mast as a member of the editorial staff, although her actual connection appears to have been only that of a well-wisher. Her books include *Guido, a Tale; Sketches from History, and Other Poems* (1828); *Constance Latimer, or The Blind Girl, with Other Tales* (1838); *Pictures of Early Life, or Sketches of Youth* (1830); *American Wild Flowers in their Native Haunts* (1845); *Love's Token Flowers* (1845); *Glimpses of Home Life, or Causes and Consequences* (1848); and *The Waldorf Family, or Grandfather's Legend* (1848). Since her death *The Poems of Emma C. Embury* (1869) and *Selected Prose Writings of Mrs. Emma C. Embury* (1893) have been published, and an address on "Female Education," delivered before the Brooklyn Collegiate Institute for Young Ladies, was included in Anna C. Brackett's *Woman and Higher Education* (1893). Book reviewers habitually confused Mrs. Embury's literary achievements with her virtues as a wife and mother and her charm as a hostess. Even Edgar Allan Poe, whose Southern chivalry was the weak spot in his critical armor, capitulated to her. In her verse, which has the vagueness of imagery, conventionality of theme, and unimpassioned fluency of all bad verse, he managed to detect "poetic capacity of no common order." With better judgment, perhaps, he praised her tales for their freshness and style. "I make a point of *reading* all tales to which I see the name of Mrs. Embury appended. . . . She is not so vigorous as Mrs. Stephens, nor so vivacious as Miss Chubbuck, nor so caustic as Miss Leslie, nor so dignified as Miss Sedgwick, nor so graceful, fanciful, and *spirituelle* as Mrs. Osgood, but is *deficient* in none of the qualities for which these ladies are noted, and in certain particulars surpasses them all." Mrs. Embury is indeed an almost perfect representative of the golden age of the American "female poet." In 1848 a serious illness ended her career as an author and friend of authors. She lived almost fifteen years longer and for the last two years of her life was a complete invalid.

[E. A. Poe, article in *Godey's Mag. and Lady's Book*, Aug. 1846, 76–77; R. W. Griswold, *The Female Poets of America* (1848, 6th ed., 1874); Caroline May, *Female Poets* (1848); T. B. Read, *Female Poets of America* (1848, 7th ed., 1857); E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (rev. ed., 1875); *Appletons' Ann. Cyc.* 1863; death notice in *N. Y. Times*, Feb. 14, 1863; C. S. J. Goodrich, "Biog. Sketch of Dr. Jas. R. Manley," *Trans. Medic. Soc. of the State of N. Y.* (Albany, 1852).]

G. H. G.



**EMBURY, PHILIP** (1728–1773), reputed to have been the first Methodist preacher in America, a descendant of German Protestants who fled from the Palatinate under the persecutions of Louis XIV, was probably born in Ballingrane, County of Limerick, Ireland. The date of his birth is approximately fixed by a family record which states that he was baptized on Sept. 29, 1728 (Crook, *post*, p. 79). He received some education under Philip Guier, the German village schoolmaster of Ballingrane, and in an English school, possibly at Rathkeale. Later he was apprenticed to a carpenter. Methodist preaching began in Limerick in 1749, and received a warm response from the Palatines. On Christmas 1752, Embury states, "the Lord shone into my soul by a glimpse of his redeeming love, being an earnest of my redemption in Christ Jesus" (*Ibid.*; Wakeley, *post*, p. 33). Soon he became a class leader and local preacher. He was recommended for the itinerancy at the conference in Limerick in 1758, and put on Wesley's reserve list. On Nov. 27, 1758, he was married in Rathkeale church to Margaret Switzer of Court Matrix, where the first Methodist church among the Palatines had been erected in part through his exertions. In June 1760 he joined a party of emigrants who sailed from Limerick on the ship *Perry* and arrived in New York on Aug. 11.

Embury worked at his trade and also apparently taught school, for an announcement in Weyman's *New York Gazette* in March and April 1761 states that "Phil. Embury, School Master gives notice that on the first day of May next he intends to teach Reading, Writing, and Arithmetic, in English, in the New School House now building in Little Queen Street, next door to the Lutheran Minister's," etc. (Atkinson, *post*, p. 224). He joined the Lutheran Church but seems not to have been active in religious matters for some years. A card game and the righteous wrath of a woman awakened Embury and started the Methodist movement in America. Mrs. Barbara Heck [*q.v.*], in 1766, burst in upon a card party of her countrymen, broke up the game, and then went to Embury's home and said: "Philip, you must preach to us, or we shall all go to Hell, and God will require our blood at your hands." He preached his first sermon in New York in his own house to a company of five. The congregation grew, and as a result, Wesley Chapel, the first John Street Church, was built in 1768, Embury working on it as a carpenter, and preaching the dedicatory sermon. In 1770 he migrated to what is now Washington County, N. Y., then a part of Albany County, where some of his countrymen from New York City had preceded him.

Here he lived on the farm of his brother-in-law, Peter Switzer, near East Salem, working at his trade, preaching, and acting as civil magistrate. At Ashgrove he established a Methodist society, the first north of New York City. His death is said to have been caused by over-exertion while mowing under a burning sun. A memorandum by Samuel Embury states, "My father, Philip Embury, died in August 1773, aged forty-five years" (*Ibid.*, p. 449). He was buried on a near-by farm, but in 1832 his remains were removed to the cemetery at Ashgrove, and in 1866 to Woodland Cemetery, Cambridge, N. Y., where a monument has been erected.

[See J. B. Wakeley, *Lost Chapters Recovered from the Early Hist. of Am. Methodism* (1858); Wm. Crook, *Ireland and the Centenary of Am. Methodism* (1866); Samuel A. Seaman, *Annals of N. Y. Methodism* (1892); John Atkinson, *Hist. of the Origin of the Wesleyan Movement in America* (1896); Jas. M. Buckley, *A Hist. of Methodism in the U. S.* (1897); and other denominational histories. *Memorial of Philip Embury* (1888) contains a eulogy delivered on the occasion of the removal of his remains to Ashgrove, and others delivered at the unveiling of the monument at Cambridge.]

H. E. S.

**EMERSON, EDWARD WALDO** (July 10, 1844–Jan. 27, 1930), author, the fourth and youngest child of Ralph Waldo Emerson and his second wife, Lydia Jackson, was born, lived, and died in Concord, Mass. In boyhood he accompanied Henry Thoreau on many an excursion and learned to observe nature with something of his friend's exactness, though never with his passionate absorption. Frail health and an undersized body prevented him from enlisting in the Union army. After his graduation from Harvard College in 1866 and from the Medical School in 1874, he married Annie Shepard Keyes of Concord, Sept. 19, 1874, and began the practise of medicine. Even in his young manhood he was persuaded that his was the generation of the Epigoni, and after his father's death in 1882 he gave up his work as a country doctor and turned to literary pursuits, chiefly of a family and commemorative nature. Gentleness, his major trait, carries over into his writing and constitutes his charm, and perhaps occasionally his defect, as a memoirist. *Emerson in Concord* (1889; first printed in *Memoirs of the Members of the Social Circle in Concord, 2* ser., 1888), was his first book and is the most delightful and the most intimate of all books on Emerson. He edited the *Correspondence between John Sterling and Ralph Waldo Emerson* (1897), the definitive, well annotated Centenary Edition of his father's writings (1903–04), and, with Waldo Emerson Forbes, the *Journals of Ralph Waldo Emerson* (1909–14), from which, with characteristic self-effacement, he excised all reference to himself. These laborious tasks he performed with admirable fidelity and tact. He published several poems privately, did some magazine work, and issued the *Life and Letters of Charles Russell Lowell* (1907) and, in collaboration with Moorfield Storey, *Ebenezer Rockwood Hoar* (1911). Two memorable volumes, *Henry Thoreau as Remembered by a Young Friend* (1917) and the *Early Years of the Saturday Club* (1918), brought his literary career to a close. He was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society and a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He also enjoyed local fame as a painter and for several years was an instructor at the Boston Museum of Fine Arts. He was fond of horses and frequently depicted them. By 1919 he began to be troubled by lapses of memory, and his last years were clouded, as his father's had been, by the slow decline of body and mind together. His wife predeceased him by two years; and of their six children only a son, Raymond, outlived him.

[B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons, A. D. 1636–1900* (privately printed, 1900); *The Writings of Henry David Thoreau* (MS. ed., 1906); *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 27, 29, Feb. 1 (article signed "A.F."), 1930; funeral address by Bliss Perry in *Concord Journal*, Feb. 6, 1930; information from Raymond Emerson and M. A. DeWolfe Howe.]

G. H. G.

**EMERSON, ELLEN RUSSELL** (Jan. 16, 1837–June 12, 1907), ethnologist, author, received her early education in the schools of the period at her birthplace, New Sharon, Me. In due time her parents, Dr. Leonard White and Fanny (Fisk) Russell, sent her to Mount Vernon Seminary at Boston, Mass., where she received the especial instruction of the president, Dr. Robert Cushman. In 1862 she married Edwin R. Emerson. Becoming interested in the subject of the ethnology of the American Indians and seeking to broaden her field, she traveled extensively during four years' stay in Europe, from 1886 to 1889. At this time exploration in Egypt was being actively prosecuted, and she engaged in the study of Egyptology at Paris with the distinguished professor, M. Gaston Maspero. Her first work, *Indian Myths; or Legends, Traditions, and Symbols of the Aborigines of America Compared with Those of Other Countries, including Hindostan, Egypt, Persia, Assyria and China* (1884), is not merely a compilation, but a rational arrangement for which she supplied the ideas and often brilliant deductions. She did not seek to prove too much or wander into impossible situations, propensities too common in writers on the subject. This first work, of 700

pages, represents a great labor and remains valuable to the students of folk-lore, but like all such assemblages of material, is to be read with proper discrimination. After a number of years of study and collection of material, Mrs. Emerson produced *Masks, Heads, and Faces with Some Considerations Respecting the Rise and Development of Art* (1891), which was conceived and executed in the true scientific spirit. The author's indefatigable pursuit of information from the most difficult sources, the arrangement of the abundant data, and the sane presentation in excellent English show her to have been a student of exceptional ability. Incidentally, the preface is a model of clear thinking and felicitous expression. The magnitude of the subject and the preparation required to obtain results is explanation of the fact that Mrs. Emerson published only a few books in her lifetime. *Nature and Human Nature* (1902) completes the list of her larger works. During her long stay in Europe she was made an honorary member of the Société Américaine of Paris, and for her assistance with the exposition held in Madrid, Spain (1892), in celebration of the four-hundredth anniversary of the discovery of America, she received official recognition.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; Frances E. Willard and Mary A. Livermore, *A Woman of the Century* (1893); *Boston Transcript*, June 12, 1907.] W. H.

**EMERSON, GEORGE BARRELL** (Sept. 12, 1797–Mar. 4, 1881), educator, was born in Wells, Me., then a part of Massachusetts, one of the nine children of Samuel and Sarah (Barrell) Emerson. His father—a descendant of Thomas Emerson who settled at Ipswich, Mass., about 1636—graduated at Harvard in 1785, served in the Revolutionary War, and was for sixty years an able and scholarly physician and a zealous and observant student of nature. George attended school in the winter and worked on the farm in summer. He prepared for college partly at the Dummer School in Byfield, Mass., and partly under his father's tuition at home, entered Harvard College, and while an undergraduate gave much attention to mathematics and to rather extensive reading of the Greek authors. His vacations were usually spent in teaching in public schools. After graduating in 1817 he was appointed principal of an excellent private school in Lancaster, Mass. Here he showed great skill and efficiency and a natural talent for giving instruction. His health became impaired, and two years later he resigned to become a tutor in mathematics in Harvard. His special gift as a teacher, however, soon led to a call, in 1821, to be principal of the newly established English Classical School, now called the English High School, of Boston. Though his term of service was short he made a lasting impression on the ideals and policy of this school. In 1823, after repeated solicitation, he opened in Boston a private school for young ladies which had a long record of excellence and popularity. In 1855 he retired and ended this phase of his career.

Throughout his life, however, he was an educational leader. He was instrumental in organizing the Boston Mechanics' Institute for mutual instruction in the sciences connected with industrial arts and delivered an address at its opening. In 1830, largely through his efforts, the American Institute of Instruction was founded to study the conditions of schools and promote their improvement. This led to the appointment of a State Board of Education of which Horace Mann was the secretary and to the establishment of state normal schools in Massachusetts. During and after the Civil War Emerson was prominently engaged in efforts for the education of the freedmen in the South. His important published works include: *Houses for Working Men and Women*, an address delivered at the opening of the Boston Mechanics' Institute, Feb. 7, 1827; *The Massachusetts Common School System* (1841); *A Lecture on the Education of Females* (1831), delivered before the American Institute of Instruction; *Moral Education*, a lecture delivered at New Bedford, Aug. 6, 1842; Part II of *The School and Schoolmaster, a Manual for the Use of Teachers, Employers, Trustees, Inspectors . . . of Common Schools* (1842), a copy of which, by act of the Massachusetts legislature, was placed in every school in the state, similar action being taken by the General Assembly of New York; *History and Design of the American Institution of Instruction* (1849); *Manual of Agriculture for the School, the Farm and the Fireside* (1862), with Chas. L. Flint; *Education in Massachusetts: Early Legislation and History* (1869); *The Study of Latin and English Grammar* (1871), a presidential address at a meeting of the Boston Social Science Association, Feb. 21, 1867; *What we owe to Louis Agassiz as a Teacher* (1874), an address before the Boston Society of Natural History; *Reminiscences of an Old Teacher* (1878).

His interest and influence were not confined to educational matters. In his youth he had been a lover and student of field and forest and while engaged in his work as a teacher he found time for studies in natural history, partly as a change and rest from other work. In 1830 the Boston Society of Natural History was formed and in 1837 he was chosen its president. He held this

office for six years, during which time a commission was appointed of which he was chairman, to make a zoölogical and botanical survey of Massachusetts. He chose to make a study of the trees and shrubs and devoted ten or twelve weeks of nine successive summers to an exploration of the state. The result of his work was a *Report on the Trees and Shrubs Growing Naturally in the Forests of Massachusetts* (1846), published by the Commissioners of the Zoölogical and Botanical Survey of the state. The second edition, in two volumes, was printed in 1875, and the fifth and last edition in 1903. Some forty years after he began to teach, Emerson visited England, France, Italy, and Germany, observing plants and trees and in the last named country studying the educational system. In 1870 he made a trip to the Pacific Coast.

On June 11, 1823, he married Olivia Buckminster who died in 1832, leaving two sons and a daughter. On Nov. 12, 1834, he married Mrs. Mary (Rotch) Fleming. He was early elected a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He was a member of King's Chapel from early manhood and became a vestryman and warden. He died in Newton, Mass., in his eighty-fourth year.

[Robt. C. Waterston, *Memoir of Geo. Barrell Emerson* (1884), reprinted from *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. XX (1882–83); J. H. Morison, in *Unitarian Review*, July 1881; Thos. T. Bouvé, in *Anniversary Memoirs of the Boston Soc. of Natural Hist.* (1880); Asa Gray, in *Proc. of the Am. Acad. of Arts and Sci.*, n.s. VIII (1880–81); H. K. Oliver and Chas. Northend, in *Lectures and Jour. of Proc. of the Am. Inst. of Instruction, July 5–8, 1881* (1882); *Am. Jour. of Educ.*, Sept. 1858; *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Mar. 5, 1881; *Education* (Boston), Nov. 1881; *Jour. of Educ.* (Boston), Mar. 10, 1881; B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons, A. D. 1636–1900* (1900).] E. H. J.

**EMERSON, GOUVERNEUR** (Aug. 4, 1795–July 2, 1874), physician and agriculturist, was born upon a farm near Dover, Kent County, Del., the eldest of the seven children of Jonathan Emerson and his wife, Ann Beel. The Emersons of Delaware were of English Quaker stock, early settlers in Penn's province. At an early age Gouverneur was sent to Westtown School, in Chester County, Pa., conducted by the Society of Friends. Later he attended a boarding school at Smyrna, Del., and then a classical school at Dover conducted by the Rev. Stephen Sykes. He began the study of medicine at the age of sixteen under Dr. James Sykes, a cousin of his mother, and in 1813 went to Philadelphia, where after three years in the University of Pennsylvania and the presentation of an inaugural thesis on "Hereditary Diseases" he was given his degree of M.D. in 1816. He began practise at Silver Lake, Susquehanna County, Pa., but after two years was appointed surgeon of a merchant ship, the *Superior* of Philadelphia, bound for China. The trip to Canton and return occupied sixteen months; in the Indian Ocean the ship was held up and robbed by pirates. Emerson wrote a detailed account of the voyage.

He settled in Philadelphia for practise in 1820. A yellow-fever epidemic had struck the city and he was appointed attending physician to the city dispensary, a position he held for two years. In 1823 he was elected a member of the Board of Health and at the same time appointed its secretary; in this position he was instrumental in drafting the legislation for the control of smallpox in the city. With Dr. Isaac Hays, he recognized the first case of "spasmodic cholera," which ushered in the cholera epidemic of 1832. During the epidemic, which cost over a thousand lives, Emerson had charge of the Hospital for Orphans. For over thirty-five years he was one of the busiest and most successful Philadelphia physicians. In May 1847 he represented the Philadelphia Medical Society at the convention in that city which resulted in the organization of the American Medical Association. He claimed joint authorship, with Dr. Isaac Hays, of the *Code of Medical Ethics* adopted by that society. He was a member of the American Philosophical Society and contributed many brief communications to its published Proceedings. He was a lecturer at the Franklin Institute of Philadelphia on mineralogy, and he had a working knowledge also of botany, geology, and physics.

His chief interest outside of medicine was agriculture. He possessed several farms, which were the scenes of his numerous experiments, particularly on the comparative value of fertilizers. He edited for the United States, Cuthbert W. Johnson's *Farmers' Encyclopedia and Dictionary of Rural Affairs* (1844) and also wrote a pamphlet on *Cotton in the Middle States* (1862). In 1857 the pressure of other interests, however, caused him to relinquish medical practise. During the Civil War he was prominent in the organization of the Union League Club of Philadelphia and in its subsequent activities. He was always interested in social science, and the last work of his pen was a translation from the French of Le Play's *Organization of Labor*. Emerson was tall and slight, with a handsome aristocratic face. He was dignified and courteous, with a gift for conversation and for public speaking. He remained a bachelor all his life and shared a house for years with a bachelor friend. He died suddenly in his office in Philadelphia near the end of his seventy-ninth year.

[W. S. W. Ruschenberger, "A Sketch of the Life of

Dr. Gouverneur Emerson" containing portrait and bibliography, in *Proc. Am. Phil. Soc.*, vol. XXIX (1891); *Phila. Inquirer*, July 3, 1874.] J.M.P.

**EMERSON, JAMES EZEKIEL** (Nov. 2, 1823–Feb. 17, 1900), machinist, inventor, was born in Norridgewock, Me., where his great-grandfather had originally settled as a Congregational minister. The fourth child of Ezekiel and Amanda (Leeman) Emerson, he was sixth in descent from Joseph and Elizabeth (Bulkeley) Emerson, and seventh from Thomas Emerson who settled at Ipswich, Mass., about 1636. When he was three years old his parents moved to a farm at Bangor, Me., and here he received such education as the schools afforded and assisted in the farm labors as soon as his strength permitted. In the course of the succeeding years until he came of age, he helped his father and at the same time took up carpentry, in which trade he became most proficient. Then for six years he worked as a journeyman at his trade in many towns in Maine, finally settling with his family in Lewiston in 1850. He moved there primarily to build houses for the Lewiston Falls Water Power Company and constructed in the course of two years the first three blocks of houses in Lewiston Falls. During this time, too, he invented an automatic machine to bore, turn, and cut the heads on wood spools and bobbins and organized a manufactory to make this machine. Shortly thereafter, however, he emigrated to California where he engaged in building and lumbering enterprises around Oroville and Sacramento. It was while thus engaged that he turned his attention to the improvement of power-driven circular saws and invented the removable-tooth saw. This he immediately put into successful operation and after organizing a company to manufacture the saw, engaged for six years in traveling about selling and repairing it. Disposing of all of his interests in California in 1859, he returned to the East, settled in Trenton, N. J., and there organized a company to manufacture edge tools. During the Civil War large quantities of cavalry sabres, officer's swords and bayonets were made by his company for the federal government. After the war he became superintendent of the American Saw Company of Trenton, organized to manufacture his circular saw, in which capacity he served until 1871, when after an extensive European trip he settled in Beaver Falls, Pa., and established the firm of Emerson, Ford & Company to manufacture saws. Six years later the firm name was changed to Emerson, Smith & Company. Emerson continued the direction of this organization until about 1890, when he retired from active business. He spent the balance of his life in travel, maintaining, however, a residence in Columbus, Ohio, where he died. To what extent he was interested in public life is not known other than that he ran for Congress on the "Greenback" ticket while a resident of Beaver Falls. Besides his inserted-tooth saw, Emerson's patents included a steel-making process; a combined anvil, shears, and punching machine; a swage for spreading saw teeth and cutting the edges at a single operation; and a steel scabbard for bayonets. He was married twice: first in 1849 to Mary Patee Shepherd of New London, N. H., and second, in 1878, to Mary Belle Woods of New Brighton, Pa.

[*Hist. of Beaver County* (1888), pub. by A. Warner & Co., Phila.; J. H. Bausman, *Hist. of Beaver County, Pa.*, vol. II (1904); *Biog. Encyc. of Pa.* (1874); B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons* (1900); *Who's Who in America*, 1899–1900; Patent Office Records; U. S. Nat. Museum Records; date of death from Dept. of Health, Columbus, Ohio.] C.W.M.

**EMERSON, JOSEPH** (Oct. 13, 1777–May 14, 1833), clergyman and educator, born in Hollis, N. H., the son of Daniel and Ama (Fletcher) Emerson, was a second cousin of Ralph Waldo Emerson and a descendant of Thomas Emerson, who, coming to America in 1635 and settling in Ipswich, Mass., founded a long line of New England clergymen. Joseph, having been in part prepared for college in New Ipswich, N. H., entered Harvard in 1794. Immediately after his graduation in 1798 he taught for a brief term in Framingham, Mass., then returned to Cambridge to study for the ministry, for which he had been destined from his youth. In 1801 he was licensed to preach and at the same time made a college tutor in mathematics, geography, and natural philosophy. Two years later he was called to the newly organized Congregational Church of Beverly, Mass., where he remained until increasing ill health forced his resignation in 1816. During his pastorate in Beverly he was three times married. His first wife, Nancy Eaton, a pupil of his at the Framingham Academy, lived but a short time after their marriage in October 1803. In July 1805 he married Eleanor Reed, who died in November 1808, and on Jan. 16, 1810, he married Rebecca Hasseltine, sister of Mrs. Judson, the missionary. This wife outlived him and carried on his school for several years after his death. To these unions eleven children were born, six of whom lived to maturity.

As early as 1801, certain comments in Emerson's letters, relative to Hannah More's writings on female education, betrayed an interest in the training of women. In 1816, on his return from a short stay in the South, he followed this early bent by opening a seminary for young women.

This school, first conducted at Byfield, Mass., received fifty pupils immediately. In 1821 it was transferred to Saugus, Mass., where Emerson had charge of a parish also. Three years later it was established at Wethersfield, Conn. Its distinguishing feature was the surprising range of its curriculum in a day when few subjects were thought suitable for the feminine mind.

During the Anti-Masonic agitation, Emerson, who was a Mason, wrote a *Letter to the Members of the Genesee Consociation, N. Y.* (1828), which was published in Rochester, protesting against an Anti-Masonic resolution of that body. Despite ill health, which after 1816 frequently caused him to go South, and the insistent demands of church and school, he found time for much writing in the field of education. Among other works he produced a manual, pronounced one of the best of its day (this was probably the *Prospectus of the Female Seminary at Wethersfield, Ct. Comprising a General Prospectus, Course of Instruction, Maxims of Education and Regulations of the Seminary,* 1826), as well as texts in the subjects of history, literature, and theology, some of which went through many editions. He was a devoted reader of Isaac Watts and revised (1832) Watts's *The Improvement of the Mind* for the edification of young women. He was one of the original members of the American Institute of Instruction, founded in 1830. His most enduring work, however, was accomplished through his teaching, two of his students being Zilpah Grant [*q.v.*], who later founded Ipswich Academy, and Mary Lyon [*q.v.*], the founder of Mount Holyoke Seminary, afterward to become the college of that name. He died in Wethersfield.

[Ralph Emerson, *Life of the Rev. Jos. Emerson* (1834); J. L. Ewell, *The Story of Byfield: a New England Parish* (1904); H. R. Stiles, *The Hist. of Ancient Wethersfield, Conn.* (1904), which contains a list of Emerson's published works; B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons* (1900); *Am. Annals of Educ. and Instruction,* Aug. 1834.]

E. D.

**EMERSON, MARY MOODY** (Aug. 25, 1774–May 1, 1863), aunt of Ralph Waldo Emerson, was born in Concord, Mass., the fourth of the five children of the Rev. William and Phebe (Bliss) Emerson. Her father's death in 1776 and her mother's marriage in 1780 to the Rev. Ezra Ripley left her to be reared by an aunt and uncle on a lonely farm in Malden. The old couple were desperately poor, and Mary, with a legacy of ten dollars a year for clothes and charity, grew up in poverty and solitude, nourishing her intellect on the Bible, odd volumes of sermons, and a battered *Paradise Lost,* minus covers and title-page, which she conned for years without discovering its author's name. From childhood she was imbued with the bleak grandeurs of High Calvinism, beside which the Unitarianism, Transcendentalism, and humanitarianism that she encountered in later years seemed stunted and unimaginative. Ultimately she inherited the Malden farm, and the proceeds from its sale enabled her to live in penurious independence. For years she made her home with her sister's family at "Elm Vale" in South Waterford, Me., where the beauties of the countryside were to her a source of continuous delight. She ministered to her relatives in sickness, bereavement, and other distress; declined, probably for religious reasons, an offer of marriage from a man whom she esteemed; met many of the notables of the day; migrated from town to town in search of cheap boarding places; became learned in the poets, the theologians, and the philosophers, reading with sharply critical eyes and an inerrant taste for superior writing; kept a voluminous journal; and supervised with inexorable zeal the education and intellectual growth of her nephews, the sons of her deceased brother William [*q.v.*]. Holding that "they were born to be educated," she saw to it that in spite of every obstacle they were educated. Over Ralph Waldo in particular she exercised an influence that dominated much of his early work and that remained strong until the end. To a great extent he formed his style on hers, copying her unpredictable metaphors, her flinty native words, her soaring eloquence. Her intimate knowledge of family history made her the living bond between him and his ancestors. He begged her to bequeath him her journals; he read and reread her papers as late as 1870; in fitting together his essays he borrowed from her as freely as from Plutarch and Montaigne. His love and veneration for her is recorded in his journals and was never stronger than when she broke with him over his theological radicalism and refused to live in the same town with him. Reconciliation did come eventually, for in secret she was proud of him and his fame. With Henry David Thoreau, who also appreciated her, she enjoyed a notable friendship. Emerson and Thoreau saw that she was a religious genius and reverenced her accordingly. Ordinary folk, however, were appalled by her eccentricities, macabre humors, and brutal, sardonic candor. One of them may speak for all: "She was bookish, rather strong-minded, not nice in her habits; would do for these days better than in the time when women were retired and modest in manners, and had great reverence for the stronger sex" (Mrs. A. E. Porter, *apud* B. K. Emerson, *post,* pp. 173–74). She was four feet three inches tall;

until late in life her complexion remained rosy and unwrinkled. The last four years of her long life were spent in the home of her niece, Hannah Upham Haskins (Mrs. Augustus Parsons), in Williamsburgh, Brooklyn, N. Y., where she died. She was buried in Sleepy Hollow Cemetery in Concord.

[R. W. Emerson, *Journals* (1909–14), with silhouette in Vol. IV opp. p. 480, and "Mary Moody Emerson," *Atlantic Monthly*, Dec. 1883, repub. in *Lectures and Biog. Sketches* (1883); F. B. Sanborn, "A Concord Notebook; The Women of Concord—I," *Critic*, Feb. 1906; H. D. Thoreau, *Journals* (1906); J. E. Cabot, *A Memoir of R. W. Emerson* (1887); E. W. Emerson, *Emerson in Concord* (1889); B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons 1636–1900* (1900); *Hist. of Waterford, Oxford County, Me.* (1879), pp. 255–56; *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, May 4, 1863; R. F. Dibble, "She Lived to Give Pain," *Century Mag.*, July 1926; Van Wyck Brooks, "The Cassandra of New England," *Scribner's Mag.*, Feb. 1927.] G. H. G.

**EMERSON, OLIVER FARRAR** (May 24, 1860–Mar. 13, 1927), philologist, was born near Wolf Creek (now Traer), Iowa, the son of the Rev. Oliver Emerson and his second wife, Maria Farrar, and the seventh in descent from Thomas Emerson of Bishop's Stortford, Hertfordshire, who settled in Ipswich, Mass., about 1636. His father, a graduate of Waterville (now Colby) College and of Lane Theological Seminary, was for more than forty years a home missionary in Iowa. Emerson graduated in 1882 from Iowa (now Grinnell) College, of which his father was a trustee, was superintendent of schools in Grinnell 1882–84 and in Muscatine 1884–85, and was principal of the academy of Iowa College 1885–88. During these years he read assiduously in the literature of several languages and finally concluded that English philology was to be his work. He experimented with the writing of verse, producing among other things a Latin version of "Onward, Christian Soldiers," and for the year 1887 kept a journal in French. In 1888 he won the Goldwin Smith fellowship in English at Cornell, the renewal of which the next year allowed him to complete his work for the doctor's degree under Hiram Corson and James Morgan Hart. Though burdened with too much detail about the early history of English sounds, his dissertation on *The Ithaca Dialect: A Study of Present English* (1891) remained for forty years the most scientific study of the phonology of an American regional dialect. On Sept. 24, 1891, he married Annie Laurie, daughter of Benjamin and Victoria (Nicholson) Logan, by whom he had a son and a daughter. He taught English at Cornell as an instructor 1889–91 and as an assistant professor 1892–96, when he was called to a full professorship at Western Reserve University, where he remained for the rest of his life. His publications are: a *History of the English Language* (1894), *Brief History of the English Language* (1896), *Middle English Reader* (1905), an *Outline History of the English Language* (1906), and carefully edited editions of Johnson's *Rasselas* (1895), *Memoirs of the Life and Writings of Edward Gibbon* (1898), and *Poems of Chaucer* (1911). His several books on the English language, though marred by some minor inaccuracies resulting from hasty preparation, have been widely used, but his best and most characteristic work appeared in his contributions to philological journals. His bibliography, numbering 156 items, includes enduringly significant articles on the author of the "Pearl," Chaucer, Spenser, Shakespeare, Milton, Dryden, Johnson, Gibbon, and Scott. He was equally devoted to the study of language and the study of literature and knew, as few American scholars do, how each may serve the other. In 1923 he was president of the Modern Language Association. His summers were usually spent in his country home on the shore of Lake Erie; he was fond of gardening, tennis, baseball, and cycling. His sense of humor was exiguous; he did not smoke, drink, or play cards, and had few close friends. During the winter of 1926–27 his health broke down, and on his doctor's advice he repaired to Florida. He appeared to be gaining ground when he died unexpectedly at Ocala, Fla. Among Anglists throughout the world his work was known and respected; in the more restricted circle that knew him personally he was held in both respect and affection.

[The posthumously published *Chaucer Essays and Studies* (Cleveland, 1929), contains a biographical introduction by W. H. Hulme and a bibliography by C. S. Northup. See also *Who's Who in America*, 1901–27, and B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons 1636–1900* (1900).] G. H. G.

**EMERSON, RALPH** (May 8, 1831–Aug. 19, 1914), inventor, manufacturer, the son of the Rev. Ralph and Eliza (Rockwell) Emerson and a distant cousin of Ralph Waldo Emerson, was born in Andover, Mass., where his father was professor of ecclesiastical history at the Andover Theological Seminary. After going through Phillips Academy at Andover, Emerson began teaching school, first in New England but subsequently in Bloomington, Ill., and Beloit, Wis. He also undertook to study law but soon gave that up upon the advice of Abraham Lincoln with whom he had made a lasting friendship. In 1852, the year he was twenty-one, he went from Beloit to Rockford, Ill., and became a partner in a hardware store. Part of his business was furnishing metal stock and supplies to John H. Manny [*q.v.*], pioneer inventor and manufacturer of

reaper. Payment for the supplies thus furnished was made in shares of stock in Manny's business. In 1854 Emerson and his partner became members of Manny's company, and in 1857, after the death of Manny, Emerson acquired control of the reaper business. He was only twenty-six years old at the time but took hold of the enterprise vigorously and successfully. On May 26, 1857, he obtained a patent for an improvement on the tongue and castor wheel of the reaper, and on Jan. 14, 1862, a second one, relating to the lever board and attachment of guards on the improved machine. The company's business under his direction was gradually enlarged to include the manufacture of mowers, binders, and harvesters, as well as reapers. As early as 1861, twelve hundred binders were manufactured after the Burson patents, and in 1867 the first successful Marsh harvester was built. Furthermore, had twine been cheap enough, Emerson would have introduced the Behel twine binder in 1870. As the business enlarged and other people were taken into the firm, its name was changed to Emerson, Talcott & Company in 1876; Emerson Manufacturing Company in 1895; and the Emerson-Brantingham Company in 1909, when Emerson retired from the presidency, retaining the chairmanship of the board of directors. During this development he found time to engage in other business activities, and built up the great Burson Knitting Company of Rockford, Ill., and other knitting concerns in that city. Through his influence Abraham Lincoln was retained in 1855 to defend Manny & Company in the suit brought by C. H. McCormick [*q.v.*] for alleged infringement of certain reaper patents. Manny & Company won the suit (see A. J. Beveridge, *Abraham Lincoln,* 1928, I, 576–83). Emerson's philanthropies were numerous, the greatest, possibly, being the founding of Emerson Institute for the education of negro children at Mobile, Ala., shortly after the Civil War. On Sept. 7, 1858, he married Adaline Elizabeth Talcott of Rockford. In 1909, with her, he published *Mr. and Mrs. Ralph Emerson's Personal Recollections of Abraham Lincoln.* He died in his eighty-fourth year, survived by his widow and five children.

[Robt. L. Ardrey, *Am. Agric. Implements* (1894); *Farm Implement News* (Chicago), Aug. 27, 1914; *Weekly Implement Trade Jour.* (Kansas City), Aug. 22, 29, 1914; *Farm Machinery* (St. Louis), Aug. 25, 1914; *Implement Age* (Springfield, Ohio), Aug. 29, 1914; *Who's Who in America,* 1914–15; B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons, A. D. 1636–1900* (1900); *Mobile Register* and *Rockford Republic,* both Aug. 20, 1914.]

C.W.M.

**EMERSON, RALPH WALDO** (May 25, 1803–Apr. 27, 1882), essayist, poet, was born in Boston of a line which on his mother's side ran back to the early eighteenth century through mercantile men—coopers, distillers—and holders of real estate, but which on his father's side can be traced through preachers to the first colonial generation. His father, William Emerson [*q.v.*], was descended from the Rev. Peter Bulkeley [*q.v.*], first minister of Concord, Mass., who came from England in 1634. Bulkeley's granddaughter married Joseph Emerson whose father, Thomas, came from England in the ship *Elizabeth Ann* in 1635, and settled at Ipswich, Mass. Edward, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Bulkeley) Emerson, married Rebecca Waldo, and from this union came the Rev. Joseph Emerson of Malden, an industrious scholar who "prayed every night that none of his descendants might ever be rich." His wife was Mary Moody, daughter of the Rev. Samuel Moody, a man of heroic zeal, who went by the name of Father Moody of Agamenticus (Me.). Their son, the Rev. William Emerson of Concord, was a conspicuous patriot at the outbreak of the Revolution, dying as a chaplain near Rutland, Vt., in 1777; he built the Old Manse at Concord. His son, William Emerson [*q.v.*], father of the poet, preached first at Harvard, Mass., but went to Boston in 1799 as minister of the First Church. He had never been especially moved to preach, being possessed of literary ambitions and a certain "levity" which he said wove itself into the web of his whole life; but his son remembered him as a stern if kindly man, and his sermons seem not to have been especially latitudinarian. He loved letters; he polished his sermons for style; in Boston he edited a literary review of some pretensions and of no little distinction. His wife, the poet's mother, was Ruth Haskins of Boston, daughter of the merchant John Haskins, and a woman of pronounced piety —a trait which expressed itself at the same time in a lovely serenity and in an unrelieved severity.

Emerson in his boyhood was serious and somewhat withdrawn from the world of play. Disliked by many neighbor boys for his "lofty carriage of the head," he found sufficient entertainment in books and in the society of his family, where indeed he was often set down as frivolous. From the time he was eight the household maintained itself with difficulty, for in 1811 his mother was left a widow with six children under ten, and the problem of rearing this brood was one of which both she and they were kept acutely conscious. Emerson was particularly attached to his brothers William, Edward Bliss, and Charles Chauncy, the two latter of whom were considered by relations of the family to be quite his equals in intellectual promise; and all four of them were deeply indebted not only to their mother but to

their aunt, Mary Moody Emerson [*q.v.*]. "Aunt Mary," a very frequent visitor at the Emersons', was fanatically devoted to the cause of her nephews' education. They were "born to be educated," she said; and her contribution to this process was one to which Ralph, at least, never tired of paying tribute. She combined with a formidable piety which savored of the old dogmatic days a penetrating critical and skeptical talent; positively overbearing when she expressed an opinion, she yet was eager that her nephews should be scholars, orators, and poets, and she knew how to stimulate their intelligences in those directions. She was a writer whose pungent style Emerson always admired. She was a person almost without a rival in her generation for force and picturesqueness. It is probably not fantastic to say that in her struggles to meet the old thought with the new she prepared her famous nephew for the part he was to play as creator and illuminator of a modern faith.

Emerson's education began before he was three, when he was sent to a dame school or nursery conducted by Mrs. Whitwell. A little later he became a pupil at Lawson Lyon's grammar school, and in 1813 he entered the Boston Latin School under Benjamin Apthorp Gould [*q.v.*], spending a part of each day at a private school where he was taught writing. In 1814, when the family was forced by high prices in Boston to take refuge under Dr. Ezra Ripley's roof in Concord, the boy had a taste of village teaching; but the next year he was taken back to Boston, where he spent two years in preparing himself for college. He entered Harvard in August 1817 as "president's freshman," or messenger, being paid for this service with free lodgings in the president's house. He also waited on table at the Commons and tutored in his spare time, and during the winter vacations acted as usher at his uncle Samuel Ripley's school in Waltham. As a student, during the four years he spent at Cambridge, he was by no means docile or regular. His reading was often independent of the requirements; he made no especial impression upon his contemporaries; and afterwards he was to go on record as believing that college had done little for him on the whole. Yet he did draw a good deal from three of his professors, George Ticknor in modern languages, Edward Everett in Greek, and Edward Tyrrel Channing [*qq.v.*] in English composition. He was an enthusiastic member of a literary society, the Pythologian Club; from the year 1820, his third at Harvard, dates the earliest extant volume of those journals which were to be his constant companions for more than fifty years and into which was to go all the literary material of his lectures, essays, and published books. The *Journals*, his best biography whether at this period or in the period of his prime, show him now as a youth of several minds: still very much under the influence of his Aunt Mary, whose letters he copies carefully as if they contained a kind of gospel, yet excited also by new ideas and phrases met in a wide variety of books, and already mortified by religious doubt. If Harvard did little for Emerson, it was at least there that his mind commenced its characteristic and beautiful activity.

Graduating as class poet in 1821, he saw before him a future of school-teaching and at last, in view of what his ancestors had been, of preaching. But his literary ambitions were very strong; he had been seized with a passion for eloquence, and it seemed to him not impossible that he might one day be a professor of rhetoric and elocution. He began, however, merely as an assistant to his older brother William, who, at his mother's house, conducted a finishing school for the young ladies of Boston. After two years he took sole charge, maintaining the school for another year and a half. It was an unhappy time for him. He did not consider himself a success at teaching, though some of his pupils did; his journals are filled with expressions of discouragement and self-doubt; and he seems already to have had misgivings on the score of his call—whenever it should come—as a leader of the faithful. When his family moved in 1823 to Canterbury, four miles from Boston, he experienced relief in the neighborhood of nature and wrote the poem which begins, "Goodbye, proud world! I'm going home." There in 1825 he closed his school, having earned a considerable sum of money and come to a resolution to attempt the ministry, and went to Cambridge to enter the Divinity School.

He had indulged in enough introspection to know that he would never write "a Butler's 'Analogy' or an 'Essay' of Hume." "My reasoning faculty," he told himself in his journal, "is weak." What he did see in himself was a certain strength of "moral imagination." This, combined with such oratorical powers as he could develop, would make his life, he hoped, an effective instrument. As for the dogmas he would be expected to defend, he had more doubts than ever now, but went ahead—to be an orator if nothing else. It is perhaps significant that his studies at the Divinity School were desultory. He had been there only a month when poor health forced him to leave and do work on a farm in Newton; and during the next year and a half the necessity of teaching school, joined with attacks

of rheumatism and lung trouble, prevented him from being more than a listener at the lectures. Nevertheless he was "approbated to preach" by the Middlesex Association of Ministers on Oct. 10, 1826, and delivered his first sermon five days after at Waltham. His health then grew worse again, so that he was forced to spend the ensuing winter in Georgia and Florida. Home in the spring, he settled himself for a year in Divinity Hall, whence he issued occasionally to preach in various churches of Boston and the towns of New England. While so employed at Concord, N. H., in December 1827, he met Ellen Louisa Tucker. She was the daughter of Beza Tucker, a Boston merchant, and seventeen years old; "beautiful by universal consent," Emerson told one of his brothers, but already touched with consumption. A year later he was engaged to marry her.

In March 1829 he was elected by the Second Church of Boston to serve as colleague of the Rev. Henry Ware. Within a few weeks he assumed full charge, and on Sept. 30 he married Ellen Tucker, whose death from consumption seventeen months later (Feb. 8, 1831) closed what had been his tenderest and most loving relationship to date, the relationships with his brothers only excepted. Meanwhile he was making a success of his ministry, so soon nevertheless to end. His sermons were distinguished by the sincerity and directness of their language and by a content, more ethical than theological, which charmed the younger members of the congregation. Many of the ideas which in the *Essays* were destined to stir and shock the world were latent here, though as yet not radically presented. He remained on excellent terms with the church until the summer of 1832, when he broke with it, and with the ministry in general, over the Lord's Supper, which he had decided he could administer only if the bread and wine were left out. When the church could not agree, he retired from Boston to think the matter over, returned to preach a sermon in which he made his position once more clear, and offered his resignation. After much debate and with great reluctance it was accepted; and Emerson was free again to indulge in dreams of literary greatness. As for the ministry, he would undoubtedly have abandoned it before long on general principles, though general principles did not enter into the discussion he had carried on so gently with his church. He had been uncomfortable over prayer; and he had recently remarked in his journals: "I have sometimes thought that in order to be a good minister it was necessary to leave the ministry. The profession is antiquated."

Emerson was now in his thirtieth year, and still far from mature. But the decade which followed saw him come to his full powers and into an appreciable measure of the fame which he was to enjoy in his prime. His first move, and one which was to be of incalculable advantage to his mind, was in the direction of Europe. Later on he was to make a great deal of Concord, insisting that it was a sufficient universe in itself; and indeed much of his force he owes to his proud provincialism; but the taste which he now got of an older continent was always vivid upon his tongue. His health threatening to give way once more, he sailed in December 1832 for the Mediterranean, landing at Malta and making soon for Italy, where at Rome he met a friend of Carlyle and secured a letter of introduction to him. He had recently been struck by some unsigned articles in the British reviews, and had taken the pains to discover the name of their author; the destination of all his wanderings, then, was Scotland, and his fondest hope was that he might have conversation with this new mystic who drew so much wisdom from German sources. In Florence he saw Walter Savage Landor; in London, which he reached through Paris, he saw Coleridge and John Stuart Mill; in Scotland, whither he hurried in the summer of 1833, he found Carlyle at last, and spent an afternoon and night at Craigenputtock. "Next morning," said Carlyle, "I saw him go up the hill; I didn't go with him to see him descend. I preferred to watch him mount and vanish like an angel." Carlyle was neither the first man nor the last to feel something angelic in the nature of Emerson and to hit upon such language for describing him; but he yielded to no one in the quality of his devotion. A correspondence lasting almost forty years sprang out of this encounter between men so different in most respects that they filled hundreds of pages in explaining themselves to each other, yet so much alike in their passionate search for new truths that each could always rest secure in the consciousness of an audience at least of one across the Atlantic. When Emerson returned to Boston after a visit to Wordsworth in the Lake Country he had seen the three persons in Europe he most wanted to see. Through Coleridge, Carlyle, and Wordsworth, and ultimately therefore through German idealism, he had arrived in his reading at the set of ideas he would promulgate if the opportunity ever occurred. Plato, the Neo-Platonists, the Sacred Books of the East, and his own native culture had made their several contributions also; but it was these contemporaries who had awakened him. Now he had seen them with his own eyes, had discovered them to be after all not hopelessly beyond the

reach of his emulation, and had gained from them the confidence to go ahead on local ground.

His education was now in one sense complete. He had only to absorb and apply the ideas with which he had become acquainted; he had only to live henceforth in constant companionship with the authors whom he had found to be his affinities. In Goethe and the German idealists, and in the English poets and essayists through whom the transcendental point of view was achieving its expression, Emerson like the rest of his generation discovered a refreshing, an apparently inexhaustible source of ideas stimulating both to the reason and to the imagination. Unitarianism had merely opened the New England mind and removed from it some of its more rigorous dogmas; the republicanism of the last century, stemming from French roots, had merely swept clear the social ground for future speculation and experiment; the line of British philosophers which ran back through Hume, Berkeley, and Locke had merely made skepticism possible. Emerson grew up in the Unitarian fold, breathed republicanism as his native air, and admired both Hume and Berkeley; but an essential thing remained to be done, and that was to affirm in new accents the beauty, the dignity, and the infinite importance of the human soul, to announce under what sign man should conquer the great world that had been emptied for him to enter.

His equipment for this task came to him from his reading and from the relationship he began now quite deliberately to cultivate with nature. He had expressed his indebtedness to many authors, and the *Journals* by themselves attest the breadth of his literary experience; but there were certain books to which he was always to return. Montaigne, whom he read in Cotton's translation, he loved both early and late, valuing him for his candor, his calm, and for that aspect of his skepticism which made him not so much a believer in nothing as a believer in all things—an insatiable seeker after life in each of its innumerable forms. For Emerson too was an eager observer of the world; if he was to deny the ultimate importance of appearances, he was to insist also upon the value of knowing appearances in themselves. Only upon the clear-sighted vision of such a skeptic as Montaigne could any significant idealism be reared. So with Plato, whom Emerson appreciated, as Pater did later, for the accuracy and sanity with which he had described the very world he seemed to deny. The dualism of Plato and the doctrine of ideas exercised of course an incalculable influence on Emerson's idealism; but Emerson put an equal estimate upon Plato's understanding of men, and he never tired

Emerson

of praising his master for the realism of his style, a quality which had also endeared Montaigne to him. A third writer, Swedenborg, he read with a certain caution because of the theology there, but with continued excitement because in Swedenborg he found a vocabulary and a procedure which fitted the direction of his own exploring thought. From Swedenborg he learned to speak naturally of "forms" and "correspondences," to see man always at the center of nature, and to work at the problem of relating man's mind to the bewildering pageant of nature's phenomena. From Swedenborg and others, incidentally, he seems to have got the notion of forms ascending spirally through degrees which some have taken as anticipating the theory of evolution.

His reading of Swedenborg had given him a metaphysical approach to nature. His visit to Wordsworth, whose poetry he had known long before, confirmed him in his feeling that he should establish an original relationship with the visible universe. The bookish mystic who returned from Europe was ever afterward to spend an allotted portion of each day in the woods or along the rivers of his native province; and he was by slow degrees, opening his eyes upon beauties strange and new, to effect a marriage between his thoughts and his sensations, between his reading and his experience, which would issue at last in an exciting doctrine communicable—since the soul is identical in all men—to his contemporaries. In the meantime, however, there was the problem of a profession.

He resumed his preaching for a while. Every Sunday during the next four years he occupied some pulpit or other, and as late as 1847 he still preached occasionally. But now also he commenced his lifework as a lecturer, speaking on natural history before the Mechanics' Institute of Boston, where he proceeded to declare the moral and psychological correspondences between Nature and the mind of man. In 1835 he gave six lectures on biography in Boston, following them up in the winter with a series of ten on English literature. This was the first of five annual series which he delivered in the metropolis before audiences that grew more enthusiastic with every hearing. The next year the subject was "The Philosophy of History"; then "Human Culture"; then "Human Life"; and then "The Present Age." The material for these addresses came out of the *Journals,* which now reach the highest point of their interest; and the addresses in turn furnished the basis for the text of the *Essays,* to be published a few years later. Emerson followed the most capricious side of his genius when he came to the act of composition. The *Journals*

would receive his thoughts as they occurred to him; the lectures would consist of these thoughts collected in any order that seemed to him most effective at the moment; the *Essays* were often very little altered from the lectures, though paragraphs and pages might be transferred at will from one context to another. It was never, indeed, the order that counted with his audience. The sentences by themselves were "thunderbolts," each one striking in its proper place as if no other sentence had ever been spoken. Emerson's auditors, like his readers later, grew accustomed to a succession of thrills.

His private life was receiving its permanent outline during these years. The deaths of his brothers Edward and Charles in 1834 and 1836 removed his two most intimate relations; but in 1834 he went with his mother to live in Concord, the seat of his forefathers and thereafter always to be his home; and here in September 1835 he brought a second wife, Lydia Jackson of Plymouth—renamed by him, for purposes of euphony, Lidian Emerson. The house he bought for her on the edge of the village was his until he died; here he quickly settled into the daily routine—writing in the morning, walking alone in the afternoon, and talking with friends or with the family in the evening—which nothing but lecture tours could interrupt. Here he made new friends: Margaret Fuller, Amos Bronson Alcott ("He excites me, and I think freely"), Henry David Thoreau, Jones Very, and Nathaniel Hawthorne. Here Thoreau lived as a kind of housekeeper from 1841 to 1843, and again in 1847 while Emerson traveled in Europe. Here Emerson did the better part of his reading—often a random exercise, "for the lustres" of style and apothegm rather than for systems of thought—and here he learned the secret of his writing: strict attention to every fancy or speculation as it came along, and quick determination to set it down on a page of his journal, where an index would enable him to find it as soon as he needed it. In this house was born in 1836 the first of his four children, Waldo, the beloved boy whose death five years later he was to mourn in one of his best poems, "Threnody." Emerson loved children, as he was loved by them, and gave much time to his own; he recorded their sayings, and he did not at all object to their presence in his study while he worked.

The year 1836 was notable for a number of reasons. In this year Emerson saw Carlyle's *Sartor Resartus* through an American edition and published his own first book, *Nature*, on which he had been at work for at least three years. It was far from a popular success, but it

Emerson

was effective where it should have been, in the minds of those who were beginning to think as Emerson did. It was both welcomed and damned as the first clear blast on New England's Transcendental horn. The time had come, said Emerson, to begin life over. "Why should not we enjoy an original relation to the universe? . . . There are new lands, new men, new thoughts. Let us demand our own works and laws and worship." The soul of man, prime as it is in the universe and possessed of powers through which God may immediately be known, still depends upon nature for its nourishment. Nature, being the dress God wears, or the shadow He casts upon the senses, is indispensable for several reasons: it has commodity, or use; it has beauty, which is the cause of delight and the origin of art; it has language, since facts as symbols speak more eloquently to man than his own words do; and it has discipline, because nature is always moral—and so, in the course of man's efforts to understand and conform, teaches and improves him. All this in explanation of Emerson's preliminary announcement that a new world was possible to man, and of his demand that it be created out of man's awakened instincts. The demand, indeed, had already been made by a group of persons, including Orestes Brownson, Theodore Parker, Bronson Alcott, Margaret Fuller, and James Freeman Clarke, which Emerson had helped to form earlier in 1836, and which continued to meet for discussion until 1843. Its members were called Transcendentalists, and though Emerson never accepted the term as adequately descriptive of himself, he defended those who deserved it and was always ready to associate the word with all that was fruitful and forward in contemporary speculation.

In August of the following year he had an opportunity to apply the ideas of *Nature* in a strategic place. Asked to deliver the Phi Beta Kappa oration at Harvard, he responded with *The American Scholar*, delivered in Cambridge Aug. 31, 1837, which James Russell Lowell considered "an event without any former parallel in our literary annals," and which Oliver Wendell Holmes called "our intellectual Declaration of Independence." It was nothing more than a translation of *Nature* into specific terms; let us, he said, as scholars establish an original relation to the universe of philosophy and the arts; let us have done with Europe and all dead cultures, let us explore the possibilities of our own new world. This closing injunction was preceded by an analysis of the scholar's function. The scholar is Man Thinking; his duty is first to know nature, whence all power and wisdom come, then to make

himself one with the mind of the past through books, and at last to express himself in action. He should trust himself, for the world is to be asked to trust him. "He is the world's eye. He is the world's heart." And performing as he does the "highest function of human nature," he is to sustain himself at an altitude, never deferring to "the popular cry" but remaining both an aristocrat of the soul and a servant to good men. Hardly had the stir over this address died down when Emerson delivered a heavier shot in his discourse before the graduating class of Divinity College, Cambridge, July 15, 1838. For now it was as if he had decided to clear his mind once for all of any remaining conviction that the Church as constituted was the place for scholars and prophets. He declared it dead and helpless, and called upon the future ministers who sat before him to consider what kind of awakening they must undergo before they could hope to touch the living world. He granted the supreme importance of the religious sentiment; he even granted the importance of the Church, with its precious institutions of Sabbath and pulpit; and he admitted that among the clergy of the day there were exceptions to the generalization he had been forced to make. But, he said, it remained in general true that modern Christianity, by neglecting the soul, by attempting merely to communicate an old revelation, by refraining from exploration of the spiritual resources now as always existing in the moral constitution of man, had ceased to do its proper work. He counseled the graduating class to seek a new revelation proper to the times, to cultivate solitude and self-reliance, and to understand that only in the soul was redemption ever to be sought. The general ideas which underlay the speech, together with its indictment of the ministerial profession, produced naturally a shock. Emerson was attacked in the press, and though liberal Christians did not definitely attack him they agreed that they could never go with him so far. Emerson, unhappy at being the center of a storm, feared for a time that his career both in the church and in the lyceum was finished. It was not, however, as the attendance at his next series of Boston lectures demonstrated. People came tc hear him even when they did not expect to agree. At Harvard, however, he was *persona non grata* for almost thirty years.

The group of thinkers and talkers which Emerson had helped to bring together in 1836 had planned a magazine, to be called, perhaps, *The Transcendentalist.* This plan was never realized; but in July 1840, partly as a result of the first effort, *The Dial* commenced publication with Margaret Fuller as literary editor and Emerson

Emerson

as one of the star contributors. *The Dial* continued for two years to express the "highest" thought of New England, running sometimes into extravagances of utterance which earned the ridicule of those untouched by Transcendentalism and the passion for reform. It was a day of reforms, as Emerson himself has humorously recorded, and *The Dial* was an open forum for their promulgation. Emerson's own interest was in the poetry and metaphysics which found their way into its pages rather than in the "practical" aspects of its program; and when at the end of its second year he somewhat reluctantly assumed the editorship he threw his weight upon the philosophical side of the balance. *The Dial,* however, had only two more years to live. When it died in 1844 it was set down as a failure, if a magnificent one. Emerson was perhaps more intimately concerned with a new group he was organizing at about this time for the purposes of conversation, a group which anticipated the Concord School of Philosophy in its aims and conduct.

Around the year 1840 Emerson was engaged in a struggle to define his position with reference to the reforms which had sprung up on all sides. His instinct was to place himself above them, in a region where the principle of compensation would render all such discussion premature and futile; but in spite of himself he was drawn into the arena from time to time. The largest question, of course, was slavery. At first he reminded his friends that this reform like all others must come from within the individuals affected; the negro must elevate himself, and Emerson doubted his capacity to do so. Before long, however, he was addressing meetings of Abolitionists—not always with enough passion, the zealots said. In 1838 he wrote a letter of protest to President Van Buren on the occasion of the removal of the Cherokee Indians from Georgia. Reforms nearer home he was never quite able to take seriously. He attended meetings at which Margaret Fuller, Bronson Alcott, and others laid the plans for Brook Farm in 1840, but failed to catch fire. So did he keep hands off of "Fruitlands," projected by Alcott and some English friends a little later. He did attempt a few reforms within his own household; he ennobled himself with manual labor for a while; he invited the maids to eat with the family, and was perhaps not sorry when they refused; he took up vegetarianism until he found it of little use. In general it may be said that his attitude towards the schemes so abundant in his day for making over the visible world was the attitude of a poet and philosopher; his game was the intellect, and his

goal the triumph of invisible—though none the less potent—ideas.

His fame as a lecturer grew as he widened his operations year by year. This was the only way he could make money, and expenses were always increasing. His trips extended now into the West, and the physical effort of traveling was more and more felt. He complained of the "long, weary absences" from his house, his books, his children. What was worse, he suspected the profession. "I live in a balcony or on the street," he wrote; and there were days when he dismissed the whole business as a form of vulgarization. "Are not lectures a kind of Peter Parley's story of Uncle Plato, and a puppet show of the Eleusinian mysteries?" Yet there were few among his listeners to complain that he talked down to them. The sentences came forth in the same order and with the same emphasis that soon were to distinguish the printed *Essays*. The tall, slender man with the brown hair, the intensely blue eyes, the aquiline, angelic features and the abstracted, impersonal smile stood almost motionless as he spoke; and he spoke a doctrine which, however flattering to mankind, it took the closest attention to understand.

This now familiar doctrine, amplified from *Nature* and applied to the concerns of the individual soul, received its final form in the first volume of *Essays*, published in the spring of 1841. The second volume, appearing three years later, combined with the first to consolidate a reputation which, until then local or personal, soon spread through Europe and America. Matthew Arnold has testified to the effect of the *Essays* at Oxford in the forties; and there is no end of testimony that in mid-century America Emerson was felt to be the bringer of a new religion which somehow squared with the times even while it supplied a method for criticizing them. The young especially were his devoted readers, and from this period on his house in Concord was to be the destination of ardent pilgrims. He himself did not rest. In 1845 he delivered a course of lectures on "Representative Men." In 1846, after persistent requests by his publisher, he issued a volume of *Poems* (published in time for Christmas, but dated 1847), to be followed twenty-one years later by a second volume, *May-Day and Other Pieces*. He had always thought verse to be the most perfect mode of utterance, and he had always referred to himself as a poet. Now he offered evidence whereby he might be judged. The judgment has taken some time to become mature, but it is no longer to be doubted that in a few of his pieces he reached a mark which only Whitman, Poe, and Emily Dickinson reached in America during the nineteenth century. Many of his poems are bad; all but two or three are imperfect; but at his happiest he managed a high, rapturous, piercing, and melodious note the only parallel to which is the note of his best prose. It is intellectual poetry that he writes; he moves most naturally in the gnomic rhythm, being all but unsurpassed in the shining force which he can give to an aphoristic couplet, a prophetic quatrain. At its best, however, it is intellectual poetry burning with what he called "aromatic fire." It is the work of a passionate intellect saturated in Wordsworth, Shakespeare, and the lyric masters of the seventeenth century. "Threnody" is one of the most moving elegies in the English language; "Brahma" is perfect in the metaphysical mode; "The Problem," "The Rhodora," "Woodnotes," "Give All to Love," "Bacchus," "Concord Hymn," "Terminus," and the "mottoes" prefixed to the *Essays* are all in their various ways adequate to express the extraordinary, the demonic energy of the man.

In 1847 he went to lecture in England and found himself famous there. His addresses were particularly successful; but he valued more than this success the opportunity to talk once more with the Carlyles, whom he visited in Chelsea. After a round of social events which made him the acquaintance of Sir William Hamilton, De Quincey, Harriet Martineau, Macaulay, Lyell, Thackeray, Dickens, Clough, Tennyson, Froude, and many other notables, he went on to Paris in 1848, returning thence to America with a better opinion of the French than he had had before but with an especial admiration for most things English. His lectures on England the ensuing season were the basis of *English Traits*, published eight years later (1856). The book is full of praise for an old, a rich, and an essentially liberal, humane people. We could not do without English achievements, says Emerson, in letters, religion, government, and trade. Yet he is not sparing in his criticism of a certain contemporary inertia—something he had learned about from Carlyle—which expressed itself in spiritual sluggishness and in a pervasive materialism. He is subtle, sensitive, and often accurate in his appraisal of the national mind; and always in the book he is easily readable. He now extended the circuit of his lectures as far west as the Mississippi; for twenty years he was to make a western tour every winter, speaking oftentimes for as little as ten dollars an evening, and facing audiences in Illinois, for instance, which walked out of the hall after ten minutes of talk which they did not find funny enough. Humor was everywhere in his discourse, but not in the form of

jokes. On the whole he was respected wherever he went, and always there was a devoted band of listeners; but the work was wearing. Even this early he talked of growing old, though the full confession still waited to be made. Meanwhile he was giving lectures, on "The Conduct of Life," which were among the most popular and effective he ever gave, and which when published under the same title in 1860 were declared by Carlyle to be the best of all his works.

In 1849 he reprinted *Nature* together with a collection of *Addresses and Lectures.* In 1850 appeared *Representative Men,* and the next year he made a contribution to some *Memoirs* of Margaret Fuller Ossoli, recently dead by drowning off Fire Island. In 1855 he was sent a copy of *Leaves of Grass,* by Walt Whitman of New York. His letter to Whitman acknowledging the volume and greeting this strange, new poet "at the beginning of a great career" has been cited as proof of his extraordinary receptiveness to talent wherever he found it. Certainly the poems of Whitman were different from his own, and poles away from his chaste if radical temperament; certainly it was a sign of his own genius that he could recognize that of the younger man, and a sign too of his character that he could be so generous. The most interesting thing about the incident, however, is the fact that Whitman sent Emerson the book; it might have been expected that the Homer of Manhattan would look askance at the Plato of Concord. Whitman, as a matter of fact, was one of those numerous men of the mid-century who fell under Emerson's influence and remained under it while they lived. It was through reading the *Essays* that he came into possession of his own secret, that he grew confident of his own powers. Emerson's disciples, Thoreau among them, were like that—not disciples at all. Emerson indeed rejected the word, saying that he would bring men not to him but to themselves.

*Society and Solitude,* published in 1870, had all been written before 1860, but the chief occupation of Emerson's mind during the fifties was politics. He had protested with other men of Massachusetts against the annexation of Texas and the Fugitive-Slave Law; now his *Journals* were filled with comment upon the great issue which was dividing the country. In 1856 he spoke at Concord concerning Brooks's assault on Sumner in the Senate. As the war in Kansas took on ominous proportions he was one of those who advocated sending arms in support of the anti-slavery faction, and when John Brown arrived at Concord in 1857 Emerson became one of his champions. He made a number of anti-slavery speeches

Emerson

which drew hisses from the crowd, and once he was roared down, but his blood for once was up, and he did not care. When the Civil War began he remarked: "Sometimes gunpowder smells good." When he went to lecture at Washington in 1862 he was pleased to be able to discuss the progress of the war with Lincoln, Seward, and the rest.

In the years immediately preceding the war Emerson had formed about him a new group of men, or rather a group with a new name. The Saturday Club, which grew out of a habit he had of meeting certain friends in Boston for occasional dinners, soon flourished as a literary association; at its monthly gatherings he was to take comfort as he got older in the companionship of Longfellow, Hawthorne, Motley, Dana, Agassiz, Holmes, Lowell, and others. He was also to derive a peculiar pleasure from the Adirondack Club, whose members went on outings with him among the mountains he so loved to praise. The impression would be justified that he was a particularly social man. Such, however, was not the case; or at any rate he was social with a difference. All who knew him agreed that he was charming, but his charm still expressed itself at a certain distance. In his *Journals* are many complaints of his own "coldness." The term seems to have been an exaggeration; yet for him it did well enough as a description of his serenely self-reliant temper, a temper nourished in solitude and disciplined by contemplation. Eager as he was for conversation, he himself often supplied less of it than did his hearers; he talked slowly and sometimes with difficulty, and he disliked to laugh.

In 1866 he read to his son Edward Waldo a poem he had written called "Terminus":

> It is time to be old,
> To take in sail.
> The god of bounds,
> Who sets to seas a shore,
> Came to me in his fatal rounds
> And said: "No more!
> No farther shoot
> Thy broad ambitious branches, and thy root.
> Fancy departs: no more invent;
> Contract thy firmament
> To compass of a tent."

He had become aware that his original effort was over and his instinct, as usual, was right. After 1866 he did nothing that was strictly or even partly new, though he kept on with his lecturing and in some measure with his writing. Harvard at this late date signified her reconciliation with him by giving him the honorary degree of LL.D. (1866); in 1867 he was invited to deliver the Phi Beta Kappa oration there; and in 1870, being asked to offer a course of academic lectures, he

eagerly responded with a series on "Natural History of Intellect," a subject which had long interested him and which, since it concerned the problem of connecting thoughts with things, was only another form of the one subject he had dealt with from the beginning.

Tired from this and other exertions, Emerson was taken in 1871 for a six weeks' outing in California, a band of friends ushering him there in a private Pullman. He was delighted and overawed; yet young John Muir the naturalist, living in a cabin in the mountains, saw Emerson and decided that he must be only the ghost of his former self. He was imperturbably silent, and at times seemed scarcely to know where he was. From this time on the decline in his powers was regular if not rapid. Outwardly calm and smiling, inwardly he grew blank; it became more and more difficult for him to find the words he needed; in conversation he would forget the names not only of persons but of things, so that he had to paraphrase and pantomime—a fork would be asked for with a gesture of the hand, and an umbrella would be called "the thing that strangers take away." He still lectured or read from old manuscripts but one of his young worshippers, John Burroughs, going with Walt Whitman to hear the great man speak at Baltimore in 1872, wrote afterwards to a friend: "Nothing can be more irrelevant or pitiful than those lectures he is now delivering." His literary work henceforth was of less than the first importance. In 1870 he had written the introduction for a new edition of Plutarch's *Morals;* in 1874 he published an anthology, called *Parnassus,* of the poems in English to which he was most attached; and in 1876 came out one more collection of essays, *Letters and Social Aims,* but only after James Elliot Cabot had been called in to solve the muddle of the manuscripts.

In July 1872 he suffered a blow in the burning of his house at Concord. James Russell Lowell and other friends contributed $17,000 to a fund that would make good the loss and give the old poet a long-needed vacation from lecturing. He sailed soon for Europe, where now for the last time he saw Carlyle and where he met Hermann Grimm, Taine, Turgenev, Browning, Max Müller, Jowett, and Ruskin. After he had satisfied an old desire to see the Valley of the Nile he returned in 1873 to Concord, where as the bells of the village rang welcome he was met at the station by townspeople and schoolchildren who escorted him under a triumphal arch of flowers to his house; in his absence it had been completely restored. The rest of his life passed tranquilly at home. He read occasional addresses to audiences

Emerson

which remembered the former man rather than attended to this one; with the assistance of Cabot he prepared two further volumes for the press; but in general he slid into a serene and dignified senility. At the grave of Longfellow in March 1882, he could not remember the name of the man who was being buried. A few weeks later he himself was stricken with pneumonia, and when he died in April he was buried near Thoreau, his brilliant and independent pupil, who had preceded him in death by twenty years.

A series of posthumous volumes completed the publication of Emerson's writings. His correspondence with Carlyle was edited a year after his death by Charles Eliot Norton. *Lectures and Biographical Sketches* appeared in 1884, *Miscellanies* in the same year, and *Natural History of Intellect* in 1893. His correspondence with John Sterling, Carlyle's friend, came out in 1897; *Letters from Ralph Waldo Emerson to a Friend* (Samuel Gray Ward), in 1899; *Correspondence between Ralph Waldo Emerson and Hermann Grimm,* in 1903; and *Records of a Lifelong Friendship,* his correspondence with William Henry Furness, in 1910. *The Complete Works of Ralph Waldo Emerson* (Centenary Edition, 1903–04), based upon the Riverside Edition of 1883–93, left nothing to be desired except the *Journals;* these appeared in ten volumes between 1909 and 1914.

Emerson's fame both at home and abroad rests securely upon the fact that he had something of permanent importance to say, and that he said it with a beautiful freshness which does not permit his best pages to grow old. His Transcendental excesses are easily forgotten, but it is not possible to forget his manner of announcing that men are exalted creatures, that instinct is to be obeyed, and that the soul is a sensible reality. Let men but stand erect and "go alone," he said, and they can possess the universe. With all his idealism, he emerges from the cloud of serious thinkers who surrounded him in New England by virtue of a durable style, a gift of observation, and a sense of humor. His style is at its best not alone in the *Essays, Representative Men,* and certain chapters of *Nature;* it rises to perhaps its finest height in the concluding paragraph of the chapter on "Illusions" in *The Conduct of Life,* and it makes its sudden appearance in many other places. His ability to understand and describe people is seen in such pieces of contemporary history as *Historic Notes of Life and Letters in New England,* in *English Traits,* and in the biographical sketches he left of Thoreau and his Aunt Mary. His sense of humor is almost everywhere present, informing, refining, and enlight-

ening his utterance and revealing itself if in no other way through an inspired choice of homely words. He is not accepted as a philosopher by the more rigorous members of the profession; yet no one denies him power and permanence as an author of some sort, though Matthew Arnold, lecturing on him in America after his death, sought to prove that he had missed being among the greatest men of letters. Arnold's strictures passed over the fact of Emerson's peculiar effectiveness in prose; and he did the poems also an injustice. The best of them are among the best, the most electrical, in modern English. It remains to be said that the impact of his shining, energizing personality is still strong. Few Americans have been more picturesque; none holds a solider position in the history of American life.

[*A Bibliography of Ralph Waldo Emerson*, by Geo. Willis Cooke, is comprehensive as far down as it comes (1908); for later publications see the bibliography by H. R. Steeves in the *Cambridge Hist. of Am. Lit.*, vol. I (1917), and the several annual bibliographies of American literature. The fullest and best biography is the *Memoir* in two volumes by Emerson's literary executor, Jas. Elliot Cabot (1887). This should be supplemented by Edward Waldo Emerson's *Emerson in Concord* (1889), the most intimate of all the accounts. Biographies by other contemporaries and acquaintances are: Geo. Willis Cooke, *Ralph Waldo Emerson* (1881); Alexander Ireland, *Ralph Waldo Emerson* (1882), dealing principally with Emerson in England; Moncure D. Conway, *Emerson at Home and Abroad* (1882); Oliver Wendell Holmes, *Ralph Waldo Emerson* (Am. Men of Letters Series, 1884); and *The Genius and Character of Emerson; Lectures at the Concord School of Philosophy* (1885), ed. by F. B. Sanborn. David Greene Haskins, *Ralph Waldo Emerson: His Maternal Ancestors* (1887), throws light upon an often neglected aspect of Emerson's origins. The *Journals* (10 vols., 1909–14) are indispensable as autobiography; the best biography based upon full knowledge of them is by O. W. Firkins (1915). The most adequate treatments by European authors are: M. Dugard, *Ralph Waldo Emerson: Sa Vie et son Œuvre* (Paris, 1907) and Paul Sakmann, *Emerson's Geisteswelt* (Stuttgart, 1927). His books have been translated into French, German, Italian, Spanish, Dutch, Russian, and the Scandinavian languages.] M. V–D.

**EMERSON, WILLIAM** (May 6, 1769–May 12, 1811), Unitarian clergyman, father of Ralph Waldo Emerson, was born in Concord, Mass., son of Rev. William and Phebe (Bliss) Emerson. His father, minister of the Concord church, was a zealous patriot and was present at the fight at Concord. The son, thrown early on his own resources by the death of his father and the remarriage of his mother, prepared for college at Concord, was graduated from Harvard in 1789, taught school for two years, and after a brief study of divinity at Cambridge was ordained minister of the Unitarian church at Harvard, Mass. His tastes were social, literary, and musical, and he interested himself in the educational as well as the religious features of his work. On Oct. 25, 1796, he married Ruth Haskins of Boston.



To eke out his meager salary he taught school and did manual labor on his farm, while his wife kept boarders. "We are poor and cold," he wrote, "and have little meal, and little wood, and little meat, but, thank God, courage enough." He was already attracting attention as a preacher and in 1799 accepted a call to the First Church of Boston, being chosen as one especially fitted to resist "the alarming attacks on our holy religion, by the Learned, the Witty, and the Wicked."

William Emerson was a man of striking personal appearance, tall, handsome, of fair complexion, with courtly manners and a particularly pleasing voice. He commanded in the pulpit a fluent but slightly formal eloquence, the unimpassioned correctness of which was characteristic of an already dying culture. His views were liberal. Indeed he at one time cherished the hope of planting a church in Washington on strictly congregational principles, with no confession of faith, the communion to be administered freely to all who wished to receive it. In Boston he mingled so much in society as to draw a rebuke from his sister, Mary Moody Emerson [*q.v.*], for his "tributes to fashion and parade" and for finding "the present world" too real. His civic and literary interests were multifarious. He was chaplain of the state Senate, Overseer of Harvard College, active member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, editor of the *Monthly Anthology*, and founder of the Anthology Club from whose collection of books grew the Boston Athenæum Library. He was author of *An Historical Sketch of the First Church in Boston* (1812), edited a volume of psalms and hymns, and published various sermons and orations. When he died, at the age of forty-two, he had left a distinct mark on the literary, charitable, and educational life of Boston.

Of his eight children, Ralph Waldo was the fourth. Like this famous son, who strongly resembled him, William Emerson entered the church in deference to family tradition. The suppression of natural inclination is doubtless responsible for the part that the sense of orderliness played in his life. He was, probably, what Ralph Waldo Emerson would have been, had he remained in the church. Father and son together illustrate almost perfectly the relation of the Unitarian and Transcendental movements in New England. The former was a compromise, the latter a spontaneous outburst.

[J. E. Cabot, *A Memoir of Ralph Waldo Emerson* (1887); E. W. Emerson, *Emerson in Concord* (1889); H. S. Nourse, *Hist. of the Town of Harvard, Mass., 1732–1893* (1894); B. K. Emerson, *The Ipswich Emersons* (1900), in which see especially a memoir of Wm. Emerson read before the Mass. Hist. Soc., p. 177; W.

B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. VIII (1865); Eliza Buckminster Lee, *Memoirs of Rev. Jos. Buckminster, D.D., and of his son, Rev. Jos. Stevens Buckminster* (1894); Geo. Ticknor in the *Christian Examiner*, Sept. 1849.]

H. C. G.

**EMERY, ALBERT HAMILTON** (June 21, 1834–Dec. 2, 1926), engineer, inventor, was born in Mexico, N. Y., the son of Samuel and Catherine Shepard Emery. He was descended from John Emery who came to Boston from England in 1635. After attending public school he entered Mexico Academy and prepared for Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute at Troy, N. Y. Following his graduation as a civil engineer in 1858 he returned to his home and began applying himself to mechanical invention. Within a year he had obtained two patents, one on a cheese press and another on a window-sash fastener. Three years later he went to New York to engage in similar work, and during the Civil War concentrated on ordnance. Between 1862 and 1865 he invented five improvements in projectiles, cannon founding, and percussion fuses. He remained in New York in his chosen profession for twenty years, perfecting annually from one to ten inventions of various sorts, including a wood distillation process and plant, hydraulic presses for various purposes, a device for towing canal boats, a weighing machine, and occasional ordnance inventions. In 1883 he organized the Emery Scale Company in Stamford, Conn., and assigned to it a group of approximately twenty new patents on weighing machinery, pressure gages, dynamometers, and testing machines. The company did not manufacture these, but sublet the construction to others, while Emery employed four or five men in a small shop to make the delicate parts. Competition was too keen, however, with established manufacturers of weighing machinery, and in a short time the company dropped out of the field. Emery then designed a testing machine for the Watertown Arsenal at Watertown, Mass. It was most ingenious, and did much to establish his reputation. It also opened a field for experimental work which has since led to important developments in the realm of mechanics. Emery thereafter continued as a consultant and designer of testing machinery until his death. Two unusual machines of his design are used at this writing at the United States Bureau of Standards, one of 230,000 pounds capacity for tension and compression, and the other of 1,150,000 pounds capacity for tension and 2,300,000 pounds for compression. Although his consulting work consumed the greater part of his time he still continued his inventive work in many lines, but principally in ordnance and hydraulic pressure measuring devices. Based on an invention of the latter type, a railway track scale for weighing cars in motion, which Emery developed, is performing important service for the major railroads of the country as well as for large industrial organizations. Emery was a fellow of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, a member of the American Society of Mechanical Engineers, and of the American Society for Testing Materials. He married Mrs. Fannie B. Myers of Westmoreland, N. Y., on Mar. 3, 1875, who died thirty years before him. Emery's death occurred at Glenbrook, near Stamford, Conn., where he had resided for forty years. He was survived by his only son and a step-daughter.

[Sources of information are *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; Rufus Emery, *Geneal. Records of Descendants of John and Anthony Emery* (1890); *Trans. Am. Soc. of Mech. Engineers, 1926* (1927); Patent Office Records; communication with U. S. Bureau of Standards; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 3, 1926.]

C. W. M.

**EMERY, CHARLES EDWARD** (Mar. 29, 1838–June 1, 1898), engineer, was born at Aurora, N. Y., the son of Moses Little and Minerva (Prentiss) Emery and a descendant of John Emery who landed at Boston with his brother Anthony in 1635 and soon moved to Newbury, Mass. Moses Little Emery, an architect and builder, died when his son Charles was two years old. The boy was educated at Canandaigua Academy, and after some experience as draftsman for railroads and manufactories he decided to study law and become a patent attorney. For two years he pursued these studies, but gave them up at the outbreak of the Civil War in order to organize a company of volunteers. His company was not wanted, however, so he enlisted in the navy and received an appointment as third assistant engineer. At the close of hostilities some suggestions which he made regarding experimental steam apparatus, led the chief engineer of the navy to detail him to take part in steam-expansion experiments in New York. He resigned from the navy in 1868 but served as a consulting engineer and on a special advisory committee for years afterward.

At the Novelty Iron Works in New York City he conducted a series of experiments on stationary engines, the records of which were subsequently published by Prof. W. P. Trowbridge in *Tables and Diagrams Relating to Non-Condensing Engines and Boilers* (1872). In 1869–70, as a member of a joint board of engineers representing the Treasury Department, Emery conducted an extended series of experiments to determine the relative value of compound and non-compound engines, the reports of which were published in scientific literature in the

United States and abroad and were the only reliable data extant.

As consulting engineer to the Coast Survey and Revenue Marine, Emery fitted out nearly twenty revenue cutters, being in some cases responsible for the construction of the hulls as well as of the machinery. In 1874 he made an experiment before a board of engineers, comparing a long-stroke, high-pressure condensing engine, a short-stroke, low-pressure condensing engine; a fore-and-aft compound condensing engine, and a high-pressure condensing engine with the cylinder jacketed. The results of this trial, with Emery's analysis, were published in *Transactions of the American Society of Civil Engineers* (vol. III, 1875) and soon after, the University of the City of New York conferred upon him the degree of Ph.D.

As chief engineer and manager of the New York Steam Company (from 1879) "he performed the most remarkable work of his time in the distribution of heat and power from a central steam plant; and his construction was not only the largest, but almost the only one attempted on a large scale which has proved a successful piece of engineering" (*New York Commandery, Military Order of the Loyal Legion, Circular No. 579*, Aug. 20, 1898). For a paper describing this work, read in 1889, the Institution of Civil Engineers (Great Britain) awarded him a Watt Medal and a Telford Premium.

Through private investigations, Emery became an authority on the isochronism of timepieces. He made successful experiments in electricity and built several dynamos and motors that operated by direct current without the use of a commutator. As consulting engineer for the city of Fall River, Mass., he was instrumental in bringing about a novel compromise between the city and the mills, by which the mills agreed to furnish to the city water-power from the Watuppa ponds in consideration of the abatement of taxes on water-power. He was a member of the commission on the purchase of the Long Island Water Supply Company's plant by the City of Brooklyn, and served as a member of a board of experts appointed to give an opinion as to the best method of increasing the number and size of trains on the New York and Brooklyn bridge by changes in the New York terminal. He acted as judge on engines, pumps, and mechanical appliances at the Centennial Exposition in 1876; served as general superintendent of the Fair of the American Institute in New York City in 1869; and was one of the judges at the World's Fair in Chicago. He was a frequent contributor to the technical press.



Emery was married in 1863 to Susan S. Livingston, a great-grand-daughter of Gen. William Livingston, colonial governor of New Jersey

[Rufus Emery, *Geneal. Records of Descendants of John and Anthony Emery* (1890); *New-England Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1900; *Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers*, vol. XLII (1899); *Trans. Am. Soc. Mech. Engineers*, vol. XIX (1898); and *Trans. Am. Institute Mining Engineers*, vol. XXIX (1899).] E. Y.

**EMERY, HENRY CROSBY** (Dec. 21, 1872–Feb. 6, 1924), economist, teacher and business man, was the son of Lucilius Alonzo Emery [*q.v.*], judge and later chief justice of the supreme court of Maine. He was a fortunate youth, and his home life in Ellsworth, a small seaport town, was one of singular beauty, rich in intellectual interests. His mother, Anne Stetson Crosby, combined deep religious feeling with broadly Christian tolerance. This spirit she seems to have transmitted to her son. In his wide range of personal relations, in Europe and in the Orient, as well as in American university and political life, he was ever free from petty jealousies, and was always quick to appreciate in others their special accomplishments and to recognize germinating talents. As a boy his devotion to his family was particularly strong and he charmed everyone with his sunny good-nature. Sailing was his favorite amusement, and all the long holidays of school and college years were spent in his boat on the Maine coast. Entering Bowdoin College at sixteen, he easily mastered studies in which his comrades floundered. Literature, especially poetry, interested him particularly at first; later, ethics and philosophy. After his graduation in 1892 he took up graduate studies in economics, first at Harvard (M.A., 1893), and then at Columbia where he attained his doctorate in 1896. A year of travel and study in Germany followed and then he returned to take up teaching at Bowdoin.

As professor of political economy at Yale in 1900 at the age of twenty-eight, he was probably the youngest teacher holding this rank at any large university. Then, he seemed on the threshold of a brilliant and fruitful career. His doctoral dissertation, *Speculation on the Stock and Produce Exchanges of the United States* (1896, published also in the Columbia *Studies in History, Economics and Public Law*), was recognized as the best American work on the subject. It was also a timely work. Popular discussion of the functions of speculation and of its effects was rife. Under the pressure of Populist propaganda, bills had been introduced into Congress to control exchanges. The book which Emery launched on these troubled waters was characterized by thorough comprehension of the mech-

anism of speculative dealings and by sound analysis of their economic function. It remains a leading authority. But apart from a few periodical articles and a collection of lectures, *Politician, Party and People* (1913), this was his only publication. As a teacher of economics, Henry Emery could hardly fail of success. His magnetic personality infused every subject with a lively interest. His broad humanity enabled him to set forth impartially the opposing points of view of social classes, while his keen intelligence warned against soft-headed reform schemes. Although conservative, his judgments were not dogmatic. In his advocacy of a mild Protectionism, following the nationalistic doctrines of Alexander Hamilton and Friedrich List, he was at variance with most of his colleagues.

Although he remained a member of the Yale faculty until 1915, Emery's academic career practically came to an end in 1909 when President Taft summoned him to Washington to become chairman of the newly created Tariff Board. This position gave scope to a variety of talents which had been latent in New Haven. Aided by a capable technical staff, he planned and carried through pioneer studies in costs of production of dutiable commodities, particularly those in "Schedule K." He had the confidence not only of his associates but of business men, members of Congress, and of the President. In 1913 the Tariff Board passed out of existence through the failure of Congress to appropriate funds, and Emery returned to Yale. But after four years of contacts with men and affairs, he found it difficult to settle down to the academic routine and in 1915 he resigned his professorship. The remaining nine years of his life were spent principally abroad, in Russia and in China, in the employ of the Guaranty Trust Company. These were years full of colorful and unusual experiences, not devoid of useful work. In St. Petersburg, July 14, 1917, he married Suzanne Cary Allinson. Attempting to escape from Russia after the Bolshevik revolution, he was captured by German forces and taken to a prison camp at Danzig. Later he was removed to Berlin, where he enjoyed considerable freedom and watched with lively interest the collapse of the monarchy, opening the way to his escape.

In China, as manager of the Peking branch of the Asia Banking Corporation, he displayed an intelligent grasp of business problems, and, at a time when our diplomatic relations were particularly complicated, his advice in financial matters was often sought by the American minister. In 1920 and 1921 he served on the United International Famine Relief Committee. Early in 1924, on his way home, he was taken ill on shipboard, died, and was buried at sea.

Emery

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *Gen. Cat. of Bowdoin Coll. 1794–1912* (1912); *N. Y. Times*, Feb. 7 and 8, 1924; personal information.]

P.W.B.

**EMERY, LUCILIUS ALONZO** (July 27, 1840–Aug. 26, 1920), jurist, the only son of James S. and Eliza Ann (Wing) Emery, was born at Carmel, Penobscot County, Me., where his father was a merchant. He attended the academy at Hampden, to which town the family moved in 1850, and then entered Bowdoin College, where he graduated in 1861. He studied law at Bangor, Me., and having been admitted to the Penobscot bar in August 1863, commenced practise at Ellsworth, Hancock County, which was his place of residence for the remainder of his life. Interesting himself actively in local politics, he was in 1866 elected county attorney of Hancock County, and two years later entered into partnership with Eugene Hale, United States senator from Maine. In 1874 he became state senator and in 1876 was elected by the legislature state attorney-general, occupying that position for three years. During his tenure of this office he was in charge of much important litigation and displayed a profound knowledge of constitutional law. He was senior counsel for the state in its action against the Maine Central Railroad Company to recover the amount of the tax imposed on that company in respect of its franchise, and sustained the constitutionality of the legislation involved in the state courts, and in the Supreme Court of the United States. The point was a new one, and the decision was regarded as establishing an important precedent (66 *Maine*, 488; 96 *U. S.*, 499). In 1880 he was for the second time elected to the state Senate and acted as chairman of the joint committee on the judiciary. As a member of this body he was responsible for the introduction and enactment of much legislation of permanent importance, the ultimate object of which was the simplification of the law. His great achievement, however, was the introduction of a coördinated system of equity pleading accompanied by appropriate chancery rules, and the extension to the court of full equity powers. In 1883 he was appointed associate justice of the state supreme court, becoming chief justice Dec. 14, 1906, and retaining that position till his retirement June 28, 1911. On the bench he was competent, prompt, resolute, and always master of his court. His jury charges were notable for their clarity and impartiality, and his decisions were always reached after an exhaustive consideration of the law and the facts. His opinions were distinguished by their brevity,

and although he was a strong supporter of the doctrine of *stare decisis,* he abstained as a rule from quoting precedents.

In 1889 he had been elected professor of medical jurisprudence in the Maine Medical School, and on the establishment of a law school at Bangor in 1898 by the University of Maine, he took a strong interest therein and joined its staff of lecturers. For a number of years he delivered lectures on Roman law, dealing principally with legal development, on probate law covering the principles and practise, and on "What to do in court and how," embodying the results of his long experience as counsel and judge. After his retirement from the bench he continued to lecture on Roman law at the law school, and his opinion was constantly sought on constitutional questions by the bar and the state government.

He was all his life an insatiable student on philosophical and historical lines, devoting particular attention to the historical development of law. In daily intercourse he was dignified, and slow to realize the humorous side of life. His opinions on public matters were strong, and often expressed in vigorous language. On the divorce problem he was especially emphatic. He considered divorce no evil, but on the contrary, a remedy for evil, and held remarriage of divorced parties necessary to mitigate the social calamity which would result from the existence of a large number of divorced persons who could never marry again. Emery married Anne Stetson Crosby on Nov. 9, 1864. Henry Crosby Emery [*q.v.*], an economist of distinction, was their son.

[Rufus Emery, *Geneal. Records of Descendants of John and Anthony Emery* (1890); *The Green Bag,* Dec. 1895, and Oct. 1911; *Law Notes,* Mar. 1909; *Report of the Maine State Bar Asso.,* 1920–21; *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19.] H.W.H.K.

**EMERY, STEPHEN ALBERT** (Oct. 4, 1841–Apr. 15, 1891), teacher, composer, was the son of the famous lawyer and judge, Stephen Emery, of Paris, Me., and his wife Jennett Loring. As a boy, Emery was gifted with such acute musical understanding that he composed little pieces before being able to read notes; later, with the aid of an elder sister, he learned how to write out his musical thoughts. On finishing the usual school work in his home town, he entered Colby College in 1859, but a year there impaired his sight and left him unwell. After a rest, he turned to music as a career. Following his first instruction under Henry S. Edwards, in Portland, he went abroad in 1862. This gave the young man a chance for more serious study at Leipzig, under Plaidy, Papperitz, Richter, and Hauptmann, supplemented by a season at Dresden, under Spindler. Returning to Maine in 1864, Emery gave lessons at Portland until the "great fire" caused such serious financial damage to his pupils' families that he left for a career of larger usefulness in Boston. There he became professor of harmony and piano at the opening of the New England Conservatory, founded by Eben Tourjée [*q.v.*]. His teaching at that institution made him famous, and he numbered among his pupils many musicians of later prominence. It was in connection with this work that he published his well-known *Elements of Harmony* (1879), and his *Foundation Studies in Pianoforte Playing* (1882), written primarily for his own children. He also began a course in theory, though this subject was treated in a rather elementary fashion at the time, with the emphasis on somewhat simple esthetics instead of the detailed analysis of later days. He introduced also into his teaching the enlivening device of a weekly question-and-answer hour, in which the speaker answered all relevant questions that the students had dropped into the box used for that purpose. He was so well liked personally that when he was ill, no less a man than Chadwick took over his lessons, so that the invalid might lose no salary. Emery also became professor of composition and theory at Boston University, which was one of the earliest colleges to create a music department. As one of the assistant editors of the *Musical Herald,* he wrote many interesting articles. His numerous lectures were another factor in extending his influence. His compositions, of which there were about 150, were sometimes rather simple in style, but very popular in their appeal. They included sonatinas of some merit; string quartets which illustrated the composer's classical learning; smaller piano pictures, such as the "Kinderspiel," and "Die Schwester spielt"; and songs and choruses, both sacred and secular. Emery died in Boston.

[Rufus Emery, *Geneal. Records of Descendants of John and Anthony Emery* (1890); G. L. Howe and W. S. B. Mathews, *A Hundred Years of Music in America* (1889); Louis C. Elson, *The Hist. of Am. Music* (ed. 1925); *Musical Herald,* May and June 1891; *Boston Advertiser, Boston Globe,* Apr. 17, 1891; information as to certain facts from Moritz H. Emery and George W. Chadwick.] A.E.

**EMMET, THOMAS ADDIS** (Apr. 24, 1764–Nov. 14, 1827), Irish patriot, lawyer, was born in Cork, Ireland. His parents were Robert Emmet (1729–1802), a physician of Dublin, and Elizabeth Mason. Of their large family, three sons grew to manhood. The eldest, Christopher Temple, died in 1789, and the youngest, Robert, was executed on Sept. 20, 1803, for participating in an uprising in Dublin. Thomas Ad-

dis entered Trinity College, Dublin, in 1778, graduating four years later; received the Doctorate of Medicine from the University of Edinburgh in 1784; was resident physician at Guy's Hospital, London; practised medicine in Dublin; and became state physician in conjunction with his father. On the death of his brother Christopher, who was a brilliant young lawyer, he abandoned medicine at the request of his father and turned to the bar. After studying in the Temple, London, he was admitted to the Irish bar in 1790, and began practise in Dublin, where he attained immediate success, especially as an advocate. On Jan. 11, 1791, he married Jane Patten, daughter of the Rev. John Patten, a Presbyterian clergyman.

Emmet's gift for oratory and his nationalist sympathies made him prominent, and brought him cases involving political questions. Having allied himself with the Society of United Irishmen, he became the Irish national idol because of his defense of a member charged with treason for having taken the Society's oath. The defendant having been convicted, Emmet moved in arrest of judgment, made an impassioned address, and ended by himself taking the oath in the presence of the court. The prisoner was punished only by the imposition of a fine. In January 1797, Emmet became a director of the Society, and on Mar. 12, 1798, he was, with others, arrested and imprisoned in Newgate Prison, Dublin. The next year they were removed to Fort George, Scotland, where Emmet's wife and children were eventually allowed to join him. He was released on condition that he leave the Empire, was put on board the ship *Ariadne,* and with his family landed in Holland on July 4, 1802. They spent the winter of 1802–03 in Brussels, and that of 1803–04 in Paris, where he represented the United Irishmen. On Oct. 4, 1804, he and his family sailed from Bordeaux, and landed in New York on Nov. 11. Within three days, he made application for naturalization papers.

At first he thought of returning to the practise of medicine, but persons to whom he had letters of introduction, among them Gov. George Clinton, persuaded him not to forsake the law. When he petitioned for permission to practise, much opposition was shown by Federalist lawyers and judges. Eventually a special act of the legislature, waiving the required three years of study within the state, admitted him to the bar of all state courts. Thereafter he quickly won the respect of his colleagues and drew to himself a clientele, financially very profitable according to the standards of his time. In 1812, he was appointed attorney-general of the state, the only

Emmet

office that he ever held, but resigned within a year to return to private practise. His romantic history, the victory over opposition from the bar, and his brilliant talents, made him observed of all; and, according to Judge Story, he became "the favorite counsellor of New York."

Two incidents well illustrate both his character and his professional career. When, as attorney-general, he was prosecuting a criminal case, the defendant's counsel insinuated that the prosecution was actuated by political motives and that Emmet was paying the price of his appointment by conducting it. Emmet's response was that the accusation was false, as the counsellor well knew. "The office which I have the honor to hold," he said, "is the reward of useful days and sleepless nights, devoted to the acquisition and exercise of my profession, and a life of unspotted integrity—claims and qualifications which that gentleman can never put forth for any office, humble or exalted" (Haines, *post,* pp. 113–14). In the year 1815, he argued four prize cases before the United States Supreme Court. In the first of these, the *Mary,* 9 *Cranch,* 126, he and William Pinkney were on opposite sides. While Emmet was speaking, Pinkney showed great impatience, and at the close of Emmet's address, leaped to his feet and said that on the morrow, on which the case was to be continued, he would show that his predecessor was mistaken in every statement of fact and every conclusion of law which he had enunciated. The next day, after Pinkney had spoken, Emmet, in a voice tense with emotion, said, "Of his success to-day the court alone have a right to judge; but I must be permitted to say that, in my estimation, the manner of announcing his threat of yesterday, and of attempting to fulfill it to-day, was not very courteous to a stranger, an equal, and one who is so truly inclined to honor his talents and learning. It is a manner which I am persuaded he did not learn in the polite circles in Europe, to which he referred, and which I sincerely wish he had forgotten there, wherever he may have learnt it" (*Life, Letters, and Journals of George Ticknor,* 1876, I, 40–41). Pinkney then replied only with a few words of "cold and inefficient explanation" but later in the case of the *Nereide,* 9 *Cranch,* 388, he offered a "gratuitous and cheerful atonement, —cheerful because," he said, "it puts me to rights with myself, and because it is tendered not to ignorance and presumption but to the highest worth in intellect and morals, enhanced by such eloquence as few may hope to equal—to an interesting stranger whom adversity has tried and affliction struck severely to the heart—to an exile whom any country might be proud to receive,

and every man of a generous temper would be ashamed to offend" (Henry Wheaton, *Some Account of the Life, Writings, and Speeches of William Pinkney*, 1826, p. 500).

The most famous case in which Emmet appeared was that of *Gibbons* vs. *Ogden*, 9 *Wheaton*, 1, in which he and Thomas J. Oakley were pitted against Daniel Webster and William Wirt. Although Emmet's contentions were not sustained by the court, "not even Pinkney at his best," says Beveridge, "ever was more thorough than was Emmet in his superb argument" in this case (*Life of John Marshall*, IV, 1919, p. 427). Webster said after the trial that the erudition, talents, and eloquence of the Irish bar had made their appearance in America in the person of Emmet. Judge Story described him as a man quick, vigorous, searching, and buoyant, who kindled as he spoke, with a voice toned to suit his meaning, and who while easily moved himself had an instantaneous and sympathetic command over the passions of others. While engaged in the trial of the Sailors' Snug Harbor case, in the United States circuit court, he was stricken with apoplexy, and died a few hours later, in his sixty-third year. He was buried in Saint Paul's churchyard, New York, where his grave is marked by a tall shaft.

[Thos. A. Emmet, *The Emmet Family* (1898) and *Memoir of Thos. Addis and Robt. Emmet* (1915); Wm. J. Macneven, *Pieces of Irish Hist.* (1807); Chas. G. Haines, *Memoir of Thos. Addis Emmet* (1829); R. R. Madden, *The United Irishmen, Their Lives and Times*, 2 Ser., vol. II (London, 1843); S. L. Mitchell, *A Discourse on the Life and Character of Thos. Addis Emmet* (1828); Wm. M. Story, *Life and Letters of Jos. Story* (1851); Wm. Cullen Bryant, in the N. Y. *Evening Post*, Nov. 21, 1827; *N. Y. American*, N. Y. *Commercial Advertiser* and N. Y. *Evening Post*, all Nov. 15, 1827; A. O. Hall, in *Green Bag*, July 1896; N. H. Hagan, in *Case and Comment*, Nov. 1917.] F. C. H.

**EMMET, THOMAS ADDIS** (May 29, 1828–Mar. 1, 1919), physician, was born near Charlottesville, Va. He was the grandson of Thomas Addis Emmet [*q.v.*], the Irish-American lawyer, and the son of Dr. John Patten Emmet, who was born in Ireland but educated in America, and who was one of Thomas Jefferson's original appointees to a professorship in the University of Virginia. His mother was Mary Byrd Farley Tucker, of an old Bermuda family. His early education was far from formal. His grandmother taught him to read at an early age and he had free range of his father's library which was well stocked, mainly with books of travel, history, or science. Among these books he browsed industriously though probably rather discursively. His father taught him to observe and think from an early age and in his wanderings through the fields and woods he had abundant opportunity to exercise his powers of observation. During this period he saw or came into contact with many national celebrities, including John Marshall and the eccentric John Randolph. During 1845–46 he was a student at the University of Virginia but failed to fit into the academic groove, and after a while he entered Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, found medicine to his taste, and graduated in 1850.

He then served several years as visiting physician to the Emigrants' Refuge Hospital on Ward's Island, N. Y. The work was both strenuous and hazardous as virulent typhus fever was common in those days and Emmet contracted it. In this work he gained wide experience both with disease and human nature. In 1855, through a change in New York politics, he lost his position at the Emigrants' Hospital. During the same year he met J. Marion Sims, the pioneer gynecologist, who, recognizing his executive ability, appointed him his assistant at the Woman's Hospital, which position he filled until 1861, when he became surgeon-in-chief, continuing until 1872, when he was made visiting surgeon. During this period he developed into a skilful and original surgeon, devising new operations for the repair of injuries received during childbirth based on his own studies. He was the first to show clearly that what were formerly regarded as ulcerations of the womb were really tears, and he devised an operation for their repair which still bears his name. He contributed freely to literature, and his book, *The Principles and Practise of Gynæcology* (1879), went through three editions, was republished in London, and translated into French and German. He freely and generously demonstrated his methods to visiting physicians from all parts of the world. He was recognized both in the United States and in Europe as an outstanding surgeon and received many professional honors both at home and abroad.

His antiquarian activities are said by him to have dated from a period in his boyhood when he was shown the Declaration of Independence. As a result he became interested in the signers and he secured during his life authentic duplicates of every signature in this historic document. He was also one of the best known and foremost collectors of American prints and autographs and during his lifetime he extra-illustrated 150 books. He was always an ardent advocate of home rule for Ireland, especially after his visit to Ireland in 1871, and espoused it with tongue and pen, writing among other things *Ireland Under English Rule* (2 vols., 1903), a vitriolic work on the blunders of England in handling the Irish situation. He is described by one biographer as "a

world figure in the fight for Home Rule." He was president of the Irish National Federation of America as long as it lasted, from 1891 until 1901. He was also honorary president of the Robert Emmet Branch of the Irish National Federation in Ireland in Clondalkin, County Dublin. He was awarded the Laetare Medal by the University of Notre Dame in 1898 and in 1906 was made a Knight Commander of the Order of Gregory the Great by Pope Pius X. On Feb. 14, 1854, he married Catherine R. Duncan of Autauga County, near Montgomery, Ala., who died Nov. 14, 1905. By her he had six children including Dr. Robert and Dr. John Duncan Emmet.

[T. A. Emmet, *Incidents of My Life* (1911); *Birthday Dinner to Thos. Addis Emmet . . . With an Autobiog. Narrative* (1905); A. H. Buckmaster, in *N. Y. Jour. of Gynæcol. and Obstetrics*, May, 1892; J. R. Goffe, in *Am. Jour. of Obstetrics* (N. Y.), Apr. 1919, in *Trans. of the Am. Gynecol. Soc.*, XLIV (1919), and in *Surgery, Gynecol. and Obstetrics* (Chicago), Dec. 1919; John Cavanaugh and E. J. McGuire, in *Jour. of the Am. Irish Hist. Soc.*, XVIII (1919); *Album of the Fellows of the Am. Gynecol. Soc.* (1918); *N. Y. Medic. Jour.*, and *Medic. Rec.* (N. Y.), both Mar. 8, 1919; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 2, 1919.] G. B.

**EMMETT, DANIEL DECATUR** (Oct. 29, 1815–June 28, 1904), one of the originators of the "negro minstrel" troupe, author of "Dixie," was of Irish descent. His ancestors, Virginia pioneers, had migrated westward beyond the Blue Ridge, and again beyond the Alleghanies, and finally settled in Ohio. His grandfather fought under Morgan at the Cowpens. During the War of 1812, his father, Abraham Emmett, a blacksmith's apprentice, enlisted in the regiment of Col. Lewis Cass. He aided in the defense of Fort Meigs and was present at Hull's surrender. On his return from the war, he took up his interrupted trade at Mount Vernon, Ohio, and married Sarah Zerick in Clinton, Ohio. Daniel was the first of their four children. He had little schooling and at a very early age went to work in his father's blacksmith shop, but after learning to read and write he was apprenticed to a printer and his real education began. At thirteen he worked in the office of the *Huron Reflector* at Norwalk, Ohio, and later in the office of the *Western Aurora* at Mount Vernon, remaining until he was seventeen, when he became a fifer in the army. His first military service was at Newport, Ky.; later he was stationed at Jefferson Barracks, near St. Louis, where in his leisure moments he studied music. He had learned familiar tunes from his mother, who was very musical, and he had composed "Old Dan Tucker" in 1830 or 1831. Discharged from the army July 8, 1835, "on account of minority," in



that year he traveled with a circus troupe. In the winter of 1842–43 he organized the "Virginia Minstrels," and designed their ludicrous costumes (white trousers, striped calico shirt, long blue calico swallow-tail coat). His associates in the first troupe were Brower, Whitlock, and Pelham; their instruments were violin, banjo, bones, and tambourine. They made their first appearance in New York at the Bowery Amphitheatre, Feb. 9, 1843, and between that date and Mar. 1, their last New York appearance for that season, they "firmly fixed themselves as among the inaugurators of a half-century institution" (Odell, *post*, IV, 615). The overwhelming success which their performance attained in New York and other American cities led them to undertake a tour of the British Isles, but they were received with little interest and were obliged to return home. In their absence several other successful companies, notably that organized by E. P. Christy [*q.v.*], had become popular. In 1857 Emmett joined the Bryant Minstrels and began to compose negro melodies. One day in 1859 Bryant requested him to write within two days a "walk-around" or "hooray" song of plantation type, with a tune so catchy as to be sung and whistled on the street. Emmett undertook the task, but at first without success. His wife encouraged him, however, and offered to be audience. He had traveled much in the South and, since the day was dark and chill, as he took up his violin he repeated a popular showman's phrase, "I wish I was in Dixie-land." These words suggested the tune that developed into "Dixie," which at once attained immense popularity. Two years later, after the outbreak of the Civil War, at a spectacular performance in New Orleans "Dixie" was sung as a closing number and so stirred the blood of the Southern audience that it was adopted as the war-song of the Confederacy. Emmett composed other songs during the Civil War period, including "The Road to Richmond," "Walk Along, John," and "Here We Are, or Cross Ober Jordan" (1864). From 1865 to 1878 he traveled with his own company, and until 1888 he made Chicago his home. In that year he returned to a little farm just outside Mount Vernon, where he died. His first wife, Catherine Rives, died May 3, 1875, and in 1879 he married Mary Louise (Brower) Bird, who survived him.

[C. B. Galbreath, *Daniel Decatur Emmett, Author of Dixie* (1904); Lawrence Hutton, "The Negro on the Stage," *Harper's*, June 1889; G. H. Odell, *Annals of the N. Y. Stage*, vol. IV (1929); *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Ohio State Jour.* (Columbus), June 29, 1904; information secured through the courtesy of the Rev. Wm. E. Hull, formerly of Mount Vernon and now at Mechanicsburg, Ohio, who was a close friend of Em-

mett, was with him in the last years of his life, and read his burial service.] F. L. G. C.

**EMMONS, EBENEZER** (May 16, 1799–Oct. 1, 1863), geologist, physician, teacher, the son of Ebenezer and Mary (Mack) Emmons, was born and received his rudimentary education in Middlefield, Mass. The family were of English descent, the first American ancestor settling in Haddam, on the Connecticut River. As a boy, Emmons showed a fondness for the natural sciences. He was fitted for college at Plainfield and entered Williams at the age of sixteen, graduating with the class of 1818. Coming under the influence of Amos Eaton, and being already predisposed in that direction, it was natural that he should turn to geology as a career. Unfortunately, though perhaps for financial reasons, he does not seem to have entered upon it with the singlemindedness necessary to success. Moreover, a certain obstinacy and inability to see things as others saw them led to his failure in accomplishing the work he might otherwise have done. Completing his course at Williams College, he entered the Rensselaer Institute at Troy, graduating in 1826. Then, after a course in the Berkshire Medical School, he entered upon the practise of medicine in Chester, Mass., later moving to Williamstown. In 1828 he was appointed lecturer in chemistry at Williams College. In 1830 he was appointed junior professor in the Rensselaer Institute, and became a lecturer in the Medical School at Castleton. In 1838, having received an appointment as geologist on the newly organized survey of New York, and also that of professor of chemistry in the Albany Medical School, he took up his residence in Albany, though continuing his lectures, as needed, at Williamstown, and remaining on the medical faculty as professor of obstetrics till 1852. He continued with the New York survey until 1842, when he was appointed custodian of the state collections at Albany, and became engaged in investigations relating to the agricultural resources of the state in which connection he compiled quarto volumes on horticulture and entomology. In 1851 he was appointed state geologist of North Carolina, shortly after which he moved South, and died at his home in Brunswick County in 1863. In 1818, at the age of nineteen he had married Maria Cone, of Middletown.

As a teacher Emmons is said to have been moderately successful and of a kindly disposition, though stern and forbidding in appearance. As a physician he was considered reliable; as a geologist he was an industrious and faithful worker with a keen eye for stratigraphic problems. Through his discovery and persistent advocacy of a formation, or the presence of a system of formations underlying the Potsdam, which he named Taconic, he stirred up a controversy which lasted all of half a century and which undoubtedly embittered the rest of his days. He compiled a geological map of the state which failed to meet with the approval of James Hall and conveniently disappeared. Emmons claimed that it was destroyed. As early as 1826 he had prepared a *Manual of Mineralogy and Geology* for the use of his classes, and in 1854 began the publication of a more pretentious work: *American Geology* (1854–57) in three volumes. It was subjected to severe, and in many cases just, criticism. Much of his North Carolina work was, however, of a high order and well worthy of commendation.

[Sketch by Jules Marcou in the *Am. Geologist*, Jan. 1891; W. J. Youmans, *Pioneers of Sci. in America* (1890); Calvin Durfee, *Hist. of Williams Coll.* (1860). For full bibliography of Emmons's publications see *Bull. 746, U. S. Geol. Survey.*] G. P. M.

**EMMONS, GEORGE FOSTER** (Aug. 23, 1811–July 23, 1884), naval officer, the son of Horatio and Abigail (Foster) Emmons, was born at Clarendon, Vt. The Emmons family emigrated from England in 1718 and settled in Connecticut. Horatio served throughout the War of 1812 as an officer in the army. George Foster was appointed a midshipman on Apr. 1, 1828, and learned the rudiments of his profession at the New York Naval School. His second extensive cruise was in the Mediterranean on the frigate *Brandywine* in 1830–33. He was warranted passed midshipman in 1834 and two years later was ordered to the bark *Consort*, a surveying vessel. Joining the Wilkes Exploring Expedition in 1838 as acting lieutenant of the *Peacock*, the second ship of the squadron, he remained with that vessel until it was wrecked at the mouth of the Columbia River. In the fall of 1841 he conducted an exploring party overland from the Columbia to San Francisco, obtaining much scientific information and adding not a few objects to the collection of the expedition. In the same year he was commissioned lieutenant. In 1843–46 Emmons served on the *Boston* of the Brazil Squadron. During the Mexican War he was with the *Ohio* of the Pacific Squadron and was employed on shore expeditions in California, including a journey to the Sierra Nevada Mountains as a bearer of dispatches to Gen. Mason. From 1850 to 1853 he was with the Bureau of Construction and Repair in Washington, and it was during this tour of duty that he compiled an exceedingly useful book, *The Navy of the United States from the Commencement, 1775 to 1853, with a Brief History of Each Vessel's Service*

*and Fate* (1853). From 1853 (June) to 1856 he was attached to the *Savannah,* the flagship of the Brazil Squadron, part of the time as commander, a grade that he reached in the last-named year.

In May 1861, Emmons was appointed a member of the Light House Board, but in the fall of that year was sent to the Gulf of Mexico on blockade duty. For about two years he served in the Gulf and on the Mississippi River, commanding the *Hatteras, R. R. Cuyler,* and other vessels, and taking several prizes. In January 1862, he captured Cedar Keys, Fla. In 1863 he was promoted captain, taking rank from February 7. In the fall of that year he was fleet captain under Rear-Admiral Dahlgren of the South Atlantic blockading squadron. A year later he returned to the Gulf where he commanded one of the divisions of the West Gulf blockading squadron, with the *Lackawanna* as his flagship. Off the coast of Texas he captured several Confederate blockade-runners, laden with cotton and other supplies. In 1867 Emmons, while in command of the *Ossipee,* conveyed to Alaska the American and Russian commissioners appointed to consummate the purchase of that country by the United States. Commissioned commodore in 1868, he spent the rest of his active duty at shore stations, chiefly as head of the Hydrographic Office in Washington and as commandant of the Philadelphia navy-yard. On Aug. 23, 1873, he was retired as rear-admiral, a grade to which he had been promoted in the previous November. He long resided at Princeton, N. J., where he died. His wife, Frances Antonia Thornton, of Virginia descent, whom he married on Jan. 10, 1843, was the daughter of a purser in the navy.

[Record of Officers, Bureau of Navigation, 1825–1888; *Official Records* (*Navy*), vols. XVII, XVIII, XXI, XXII; Lewis R. Hamersly, *Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (3rd ed., 1878); *Army and Navy Jour.*, July 26, 1884; information furnished by Lieut. G. T. Emmons, Princeton, N. J.]

C.O.P.

**EMMONS, NATHANAEL** (Apr. 20, 1745–o.s.–Sept. 23, 1840), Congregational minister, and theologian, the most entertaining of the teachers of the New England theology, representing the "exercisers" as against the "tasters," like most of his school came from a Connecticut country township. He was the twelfth and youngest child of Deacon Samuel Emmons and his wife Ruth (Cone) Emmons of East Haddam, Conn., both of New England Puritan descent. His father was a miller as well as farmer. Nathanael graduated from Yale in 1767 with little learning, for the college was in an unsettled state and his preparation had been poor. After graduation, he studied for two years with neighboring ministers, though he did not make public profession of his religious faith until near the end of that preparation, indicating that his interest in theology was primarily intellectual, an indication confirmed by his later career. For four years thereafter he preached here and there without obtaining a pastorate, doubtless because of his weak voice and unimposing appearance. At last he was called to the church in what soon became the town of Franklin, Mass., on the border of Rhode Island. After considerable hesitation he accepted, and on Apr. 21, 1773, became its pastor, maintaining that relation until he was eighty-two, and continuing to live in the town till his death some thirteen years later. On Apr. 6, 1775, he was married to Deliverance French who died three years later; on Nov. 4, 1779, he married again, his second wife being Martha Williams, who died (Aug. 2, 1829) after nearly fifty years of married life; and, in his old age, on Sept. 28, 1831, he married Mrs. Abigail (Moore) Mills.

He had surprising success as a preacher because of the pungent quality of his sermons. Students came to him in greater numbers than to any other man of his time for instruction in theology and the art of preaching. The principle of that art he expressed in the words, "Have something to say; say it." He had an analytic and critical mind, and keen mother wit, but little creative ability. The peculiarity of his theology was that mental life is merely a series of "exercises," the result of divine action, a theory which would reduce men to puppets, were it not that Emmons imputed to them freedom and moral responsibility. They act of necessity, not from compunction. Although presenting his own views he insisted that his pupils should think for themselves, and think hard, and placed the writings of his opponents before them, so that their training stood them in good stead, while his doctrinal peculiarities gained no permanent hold. Many of his pupils rose to distinction. In person Emmons was a plump little man, with a squeaky voice and a sharp tongue. He chewed tobacco, a practise more usual when he was young than later. He stuck to the customs of his youth, and in his later years "his old three-cornered hat, and his breeches and all that" did look queer. He was a thorough-going patriot during the Revolution, and an equally zealous Federalist thereafter. At the beginning of Jefferson's administration he preached his noted "Jeroboam" sermon, in which he compared the Democrat now become president to the man "who made Israel to sin." His publications, which consist entirely of sermons or parts of sermons, were collected in *Works of*

*Nathanael Emmons, D.D.* (6 vols., 1842), and republished, with additions, in 1861–63.

[Autobiog. memoir by Emmons, and memoirs by Jacob Ide and E. A. Park, in *Works of Nathanael Emmons, D.D.* (1842), vol. I; E. A. Park, *Memoir of Nathanael Emmons* (1861), also printed as vol. I (1861) of the revised edition of Emmons's *Works;* Thos. Williams, *The Official Character of the Rev. Nathanael Emmons* (1840); M. Blake, *A Centennial Hist. of the Mendon Asso. of Congreg. Ministers* (1853); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. I (1857); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.,* vol. III (1903); A. R. Baker, in *Am. Quart. Reg.,* Nov. 1842; A. Bullard, in *Am. Biblical Repository,* Oct. 1843; E. Smalley, in *Bibliotheca Sacra and Theol. Rev.,* Apr., July 1850; E. T. Fitch, in *New Englander,* Jan. 1843; G. P. Fisher, *Ibid.,* July 1861; J. W. Harding, in *Congreg. Quart.,* July 1861; *Christian Examiner,* Nov. 1842; F. H. Foster, *A Genetic Hist. of the New England Theol.* (1907).]

B. W. B.

**EMMONS, SAMUEL FRANKLIN** (Mar. 29, 1841–Mar. 28, 1911), geologist, mining engineer, was born in Boston, Mass., the son of Nathaniel H. and Elizabeth (Wales) Emmons. His earliest known ancestor on his father's side was Thomas Emmons, one of the founders of Rhode Island Colony, who later became a resident of Boston. His oldest known ancestor on his mother's side was Nathaniel Wales of Yorkshire, England, who came to Boston in 1635 on the ship *James,* sailing from the port of Bristol. His paternal great-grandfather, Samuel Franklin, for whom he was named, was a cousin of Benjamin Franklin. As a boy, Emmons attended a select private school held in the basement of the old Park Street Church, and in his twelfth year entered the then newly established Dixwell Latin School. He was fitted for Harvard, which he entered in his seventeenth year, and graduated with the degree of B.A. in 1861. It is written of him that he applied himself to his studies with great fidelity and could always be depended upon to be fully prepared. In fact, he was one of the most diligent students of his class, but nevertheless took active part in college affairs and was fond of athletics.

Although at the outbreak of the Civil War Emmons had desired to enlist, he yielded to the wishes of his parents and passed the summer of 1861 in Europe with his invalid mother. In the autumn of this same year, while in Paris, he made the acquaintance of a later well-known mining engineer, Eckley B. Coxe [*q.v.*], through whose influence he was induced to fit himself for a course in the École des Mines. He entered the school in 1862 and remained until the summer of 1864. Though the faculty of the school contained men of the stamp of Élie de Beaumont, and A. Daubrée, Emmons thought it best to pass the last year of study in Germany, and in the fall of 1864 registered in the Bergakademie, at Freiberg, Saxony, where he remained until the summer of 1865. While here he was joined by another American, Arnold Hague [*q.v.*], with whom he formed a lasting friendship and laid the foundation for future collaboration. He returned to America in June 1866. Early in 1867, he found that Hague, who had followed him, had received an appointment on the newly organized geological exploration of the 40th Parallel, and through his influence secured an appointment for himself. The work of this survey involved the exploration of an area extending from the eastern ranges of Colorado to the Sierra Nevada in California, with an average width of about 100 miles. The results, so far as Emmons is concerned, appeared mainly in Volume II of the reports entitled *Descriptive Geology* (1877), with which Hague assisted.

Emmons remained with the 40th Parallel survey until the completion of the work, and on the consolidation of all the existing surveys under the direction of Clarence King [*q.v.*], received an appointment as geologist in charge of the Rocky Mountain Division with headquarters at Denver, Colo. Among his first duties was that of undertaking the collection of statistics of the precious metals in collaboration with G. F. Becker. The results of this work were published as a part of Volume XIII of the reports of the Tenth Census. At the same time, he was engaged in an exhaustive study of the mining district of Leadville, Colo., the results of which appeared in 1886 as the *Geology and Mining Industry of Leadville, Colo.* This was the most pretentious work of his career. "Since its organization probably no single publication of the geological survey has exerted a more beneficial influence and stimulated more discussion" (Hague, *post,* p. 324). His bibliography, aside from the titles mentioned, though not large, contains its full share of valuable material. His interest lay largely in the question of the origin of ore deposits.

Emmons was of a quiet and kindly disposition. He had dark hair and complexion, and wore a full, carefully trimmed beard and moustache. "Tall, erect and slender, his carriage was graceful and unstudied" (*Ibid.,* p. 328). Though he was ever ready to discuss problems of a professional nature, and able to express himself clearly and forcibly, when called upon to speak at social gatherings he was found singularly diffident. He became a member of the Geological Society of London in 1874; of the American Institute of Mining Engineers in 1877; was a founder of the Geological Society of America, and its president in 1903. In 1892 he was elected to membership in the National Academy of Sciences. He was

also a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, the American Philosophical Society, the Washington Academy of Sciences, and the Geological Society of Washington, and an honorary member of the Société Helvétique des Sciences Naturelles.

Emmons was married three times: first, on Aug. 5, 1876, to Waltha Anita Steeves of New York (divorced); second, on Feb. 14, 1889, to Sophie Dallas Markoe of Washington, D. C., who died June 19, 1896; and third, on Aug. 4, 1903, to Suzanne Earle Ogden-Jones of Dinard, France. He died unexpectedly on Mar. 28, 1911, leaving no children.

[Arnold Hague, "Samuel Franklin Emmons," in *Nat. Acad. Sci. Biog. Memoirs,* VII (1913), 309–34; George F. Becker, sketch in *Trans. Am. Inst. of Mining Engineers,* XLII (1912), 643–61; *Engineering and Mining Jour.,* XCI (1911), 701; personal knowledge and recollection.]

G. P. M.

**EMORY, JOHN** (Apr. 11, 1789–Dec. 16, 1835), bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, was born in Spaniard's Neck, Queen Annes County, Md., the son of Robert Emory, and the grandson of John Register Emory. His mother was Frances, daughter of Tristam and Ann Thomas of Wye Neck, Md. Both his parents were ardent Methodists, and their home was a rendezvous for preachers. Although not a lawyer by profession, Robert Emory was associate to Judge James Tilghman of the county bench, and later judge of the orphans' court. He determined that John should be a lawyer, when the latter was but ten years old, and proceeded to educate him for that calling. The boy received a good classical education chiefly under Robert Elliott of Easton, Md., and later of Strasburg, Pa., whither Emory followed him, and at Washington College, Md. He then studied law in the office of Richard Tilghman Earle of Centerville, Md. An earnest, industrious youth, never relaxing or taking exercise, he undermined his health and thereafter always suffered more or less from physical debility. He was admitted to the bar at the age of nineteen, and opened an office in Centerville. Having been converted, and being of intensely religious nature, he acted as class leader and local preacher. Finally, Oct. 9, 1809, he decided to devote his life to the Christian ministry, a decision which caused an estrangement between himself and his father, not healed till just before the latter's death. He was admitted to the Philadelphia Conference on trial in 1810, and the Conference minutes for 1812 list him as having been received into full connection and ordained deacon within the year; and the minutes of 1814, as among those "elected and ordained elders during this year." After serving on several circuits, he was appointed to Academy charge (Union), Philadelphia. On Oct. 12, 1813, he married Caroline Sellers of Hillsboro, Md., who died in 1815, and on May 12, 1818, Ann Wright of Queen Annes County, Md. He was pastor of important churches in the Philadelphia and Baltimore Conferences until 1824, when he was elected assistant agent of the Methodist Book Concern, and in 1828 he succeeded Nathan Bangs as agent. At the General Conference of 1832 he was elected bishop.

A man of sincere devotion, dignity, and discretion, with a clear, well-trained mind, and superior in scholarship to most Methodist ministers of the day, he soon became a highly respected leader of his denomination. A member of the General Conference of 1816, when he was but twenty-seven years old, he was elected to each succeeding session of that body until he was made a bishop, except that of 1824, and at this he acted as secretary. He was a natural controversialist and skilful debater. In 1817 he championed the doctrines of his church in two pamphlets, *A Reply,* and *A Further Reply,* answering an essay in the *Christian Register* (January 1817) by William White, Episcopal bishop, entitled "Some Objections Against the Position of a Personal Assurance of the Pardon of Sin by a Direct Communication of the Holy Spirit." The next year, articles in the *National Messenger* of Georgetown, D. C., by John Wright, a Unitarian minister, called forth rebuttals from Emory in the same paper, which later appeared in pamphlet form under the title *The Divinity of Christ Vindicated from the Cavils and Objections of Mr. John Wright.* At the General Conference of 1820, he was appointed delegate to the British Conference, to further closer relations between the two bodies, and to adjust difficulties which had arisen in Canada, owing to the existence of both British and American Methodist activities there. He spent some weeks in England and performed his mission with tact and success. In the controversy which led to the establishment of the Methodist Protestant Church, while supporting the election of presiding elders by the annual Conference in preference to their appointment by the bishops, he opposed the "reformers" in their effort to secure lay representation in the Conferences, and published his classic work, a *Defence of "Our Fathers," and of the Original Organization of the Methodist Episcopal Church Against the Rev. Alexander M'Caine and Others* (1827). As agent of the Book Concern he displayed originality and administrative ability. He converted the *Methodist Magazine* into the *Methodist Magazine and Quarterly Re-*

*view,* and conducted it from 1830 to 1832, writing its principal original articles. He also edited a number of volumes, including the "First American Complete and Standard Edition" of *The Works of the Reverend John Wesley, A.M.* (7 vols, 1833). A stanch advocate of education, he had a hand in the organization of Wesleyan University and New York University, and was for a time president of the trustees of Dickinson College. As bishop he served but three years, his death resulting from a fractured skull, caused by his being thrown from his carriage about two miles from his home near Reisterstown, Md. He was buried by the side of Bishop Asbury under the pulpit of the Eutaw Street Church, Baltimore, both bodies later being removed to Mount Olivet Cemetery. A manuscript left at his death was published by his son, Robert, in 1838 under the title, *The Episcopal Controversy Reviewed.*

[The appendix of Robt. Emory's *Life of the Rev. John Emory, D.D.* (1841), contains a sermon preached before the British Conference, and extracts from Bishop Emory's contributions to the *Meth. Mag. and Quart. Rev.* See also Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. VII (1859); *Meth. Quart. Rev.,* Jan. 1842; Wm. Larrabee, "John Emory," in T. L. Flood and J. W. Hamilton, *Lives of Methodist Bishops* (1882); and denominational histories.] H. E. S.

**EMORY, WILLIAM HEMSLEY** (Sept. 7, 1811–Dec. 1, 1887), soldier, was born in Queen Annes County, Md., son of Thomas and Anna Maria (Hemsley) Emory. His grandfather came to this country from England in the eighteenth century, and acquired an estate under a patent from the Lord Proprietor of Maryland. He served in the Revolution and his son served in the War of 1812. The estate was originally called "Brampton," but its owner considered it unpatriotic to retain the English name, and changed it to "Poplar Grove." Emory was graduated from the United States Military Academy in 1831, where he was familiarly known as "Bold Emory," and promoted brevet second lieutenant, 4th Artillery. He resigned from the service in 1836, and two years later, on the reorganization of the army, was commissioned first lieutenant in the Topographical Engineers. He served as principal assistant on the Northeastern boundary survey between the United States and Canada (1844–46), and at the outbreak of the Mexican War was assigned as chief engineer officer and acting assistant adjutant-general, Army of the West, and subsequently as a lieutenant-colonel of volunteers, in Mexico. While with the Army of the West he distinguished himself at the battles of San Pasquale, San Gabriel, and the Plains of Mesa, and won two brevets. After the war he was assigned as chief astronomer for running the boundary line between California and Mexico (1848–53), and in 1854 was appointed by the president, both commissioner and astronomer, with full powers, under the Gadsden Treaty. This work was completed in 1857 and he was brevetted lieutenant-colonel for his services. While on these duties he was promoted captain (1851), and on the reorganization of the army in 1855, was promoted major, 2nd Cavalry, one of the new regiments. During his service in the Topographical Engineers he was very active and conspicuous in making surveys, and in compiling and reducing to form such maps as existed of the country west of the Mississippi River. His works appeared as "Notes of a Military Reconnaissance from Fort Leavenworth in Missouri, to San Diego in California," *Senate Ex. Doc. No. 7,* 30 Cong., 1 Sess.; *Observations, Astronomical, Magnetic, and Meteorological, made at Chagres and Gorgona, Isthmus of Darien and at the City of Panama, New Granada* (1850); and "Report on the United States and Mexican Boundary Survey," *House Ex. Doc. No. 135,* 34 Cong., 1 Sess. In 1861 he was assigned to command the troops in Indian Territory, including Forts Cobb, Smith, Washita, and Arbuckle. Finding the country in a state of insurrection, and convinced that he could not hold the forts, he withdrew to Fort Leavenworth, and was the only officer on the frontier who brought his entire command out of the insurrectionary country without the loss of a man. The troops thus saved from capture were of great importance beyond the consideration of numbers, as their timely arrival restored the confidence of the friends of the government in that section, formed the nucleus of General Lyon's army, and probably prevented the secessionists from forcing Missouri into rebellion. Emory was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers in 1862, and served with distinction as brigade, division, and corps commander. He received four brevets, and was twice thanked on the field by the general commanding for the success of his brilliant operations—at Hanover Court House, where he separated the wings of the Confederate army, capturing many prisoners, and again for destroying the railway bridges between Hanover Junction and the Chickahominy, and driving the enemy out of Ashland. He was commissioned major-general of volunteers in 1865, and commanded the Department of West Virginia until mustered out of the volunteer service in January 1866. He commanded successively the Department of Washington, District of the Republican (1869–71), Department of the Gulf (1871–75), and was retired with the rank of brigadier-general, July 1, 1876, after a period

of forty-five years of service. Emory was a talented and skilful soldier, always calm and dignified in bearing, courageous and firm. Though apparently stern in character he was really warm-hearted, sympathetic, and generous. In May 1838 he married Matilda Wilkins Bache, a great-granddaughter of Benjamin Franklin.

[Geo. F. Price, *Across the Continent with the 5th U. S. Cavalry* (1883); Albert Gleaves, *Life of an Am. Sailor* (1922); Geo. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg., Officers and Grads. of the U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891), vol. I; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1888), vol. III; *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser. vol. XI; obituary in *Ann. Reunion, Asso. of Grads. of the U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1888).] C.F.C.

**EMOTT, JAMES** (Mar. 14, 1771–Apr. 7, 1850), jurist, was born at Poughkeepsie, N. Y., a son of William Emott and his wife Celia (or Celiatie) Polmantere. He was a descendant in the fourth degree of James Emmott (*sic*), a grantee under the Nine Partners Patent (Great or Lower), issued May 27, 1697, in respect to a large tract of land in New York, now embraced in Dutchess County. This ancestor was an attorney to the King's Bench, and the family was well-to-do, continuing to hold considerable landed property in and around Poughkeepsie. James never entered college, being largely self-educated. Taking up the study of law, he was admitted to the New York bar and commenced practise at Ballston Center, N. Y. From the first he gave indications of great legal ability, and in 1797 was appointed a member of the board of commissioners to hear and determine the vexatious disputes regarding the title to the military bounty lands, known as the "Military Tract," in the then county of Tryon, N. Y., which had been set aside under resolutions of Congress, Sept. 16, 1776, making provision for granting land to officers and soldiers who enlisted for the Revolutionary War. He took an active part in the prolonged investigation which resulted in the adjustment and quieting of all the titles in question (see *Report of the Commissioners for Settling the Titles to Land in the County of Onondaga*, Feb. 17, 1800). In 1800 he moved his office to Albany, and rapidly acquired a leading position at the bar in that city. He was a member of the state Assembly from Albany County in 1804, and was chosen speaker. From 1809 to 1813, as a Federalist, he was representative of Dutchess County in Congress, and in 1814 was again elected to the New York Assembly, becoming speaker of the House in the same year. He continued in the Assembly until the court of common pleas for Dutchess County was organized, when he was chosen as its first judge, April 8, 1817, with Poughkeepsie as headquarters. On the summoning of the constitutional convention in 1821, he was candidate of the conservative element in Dutchess County, but was defeated after a bitter struggle. He was appointed judge of the 2nd New York Judicial District, Feb. 21, 1827, but only retained the position four years, resigning in 1831. After his retirement from the bench, he resumed practise in Poughkeepsie, and devoted much of his time to commercial and financial business. He was one of the incorporators of the Dutchess Mutual Insurance Company, serving on the first board of directors and becoming president. He was also instrumental in founding the Poughkeepsie Savings Bank. Though in his later years he abstained from active participation in public affairs his advice was constantly sought in matters of importance to the community and even in retirement he continued to exercise a preponderant influence in the councils of his native town. He was married twice: on Sept. 20, 1818, to Malissa White; and on Jan. 27, 1821, to Esther (or Hester) Crary. His son by his second wife, James Emott the younger [*q.v.*], became judge of the New York supreme court, and the court of appeals.

[*The Records of Christ Church, Poughkeepsie, N. Y., 1766–1916* (n.d.), vol. II; D. McAdam and others, *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.* (1897), I, 321; P. H. Smith, *Gen. Hist. of Dutchess County* (1877); Edmund Platt, *The Eagle's Hist. of Poughkeepsie* (1905), p. 280; Frank Hasbrouck, *Hist. of Dutchess County, N. Y.* (1909); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928).] H.W.H.K.

**EMOTT, JAMES** (Apr. 23, 1823–Sept. 11, 1884), jurist, was the son of James Emott [*q.v.*], by his second wife, Esther (or Hester) Crary. He was born at Poughkeepsie, N. Y., received his early education at College Hill School in his native town, proceeding thence to Columbia College, New York City, where he graduated at the head of his class in 1841. He then studied law in his father's office at Poughkeepsie, and was admitted to the bar of the supreme court of New York at Poughkeepsie in 1844, immediately afterward commencing practise in that town. In the early period of his professional career he was undoubtedly assisted by his influential family connections and his father's prominent position, but he possessed great natural ability and in a short period became a leading member of the district bar, acquiring a wide practise in all the courts. In 1849 he was appointed district attorney of Dutchess County. In addition to his legal practise he was interested in much business enterprise, and in 1852 became president of the Merchant's Bank of Poughkeepsie, a position which he held till his death—a period of thirty-two years. In 1854, when Poughkeepsie received its city charter, he was, on the nomination of the

Whig party, elected its first mayor by a substantial majority. The following year the Republican party induced him to become its candidate for the position of justice of the supreme court of the state for the 2nd Judicial District. The district was predominantly Democratic, but on this occasion the Democratic party was badly split, and as a consequence Emott was elected. He remained on the bench from Jan. 1, 1856, to Jan. 1, 1864, becoming presiding judge in 1863, and serving *ex-officio* as a judge of the court of appeals during the last year of his term. On the conclusion of his term of office he did not offer himself for reëlection, his party affiliations precluding any chance of success. He brought to the bench a wide experience in all classes of litigation and a knowledge of business methods and financial affairs, which, combined with a clear intellect, capacity for infinite research, and rigorous logic, gave him an enviable standing as a jurist. His opinions were distinguished by lucidity of expression and felicity of form and have been deemed models of judicial composition. On leaving the bench he resumed his legal practise at Poughkeepsie, but shortly afterward opened an office in New York City, where he was retained in much heavy litigation, especially such as involved the law applicable to corporations. In 1869 he was one of the founders of the Association of the Bar of the City of New York and he acted as chairman of its library committee for twelve years. A fervent adherent of the reform party in municipal affairs, he threw himself with great vigor into the campaign against the "Tweed Ring." Appointed a member of the Committee of Seventy, he was indefatigable in his efforts to bring the guilty parties to justice. Recognized now as one of the leaders of the New York bar, "his tall and slender but commanding figure was one of the most familiar sights in the courts" (*Annual Cyclopædia and Register, 1884,* p. 604), but during the last two years of his life he was prevented by ill health from personally acting as counsel. His opinion was, however, frequently sought and he prepared many admirable briefs. Though for twenty years his professional labors centered in New York City he continued to retain a close connection with Poughkeepsie, where he died. On June 16, 1846, he married Mary Helen Crooke, daughter of Robert and Mary Crooke of Poughkeepsie.

A man of few intimate friendships, his sturdy independence of thought, consistency of conduct, and undeviating integrity procured for him unusual respect and confidence in the community. An incessant reader, and a prominent and influential member of the Protestant Episcopal Church, he steeped himself in ecclesiastical and theological literature and lore, particularly relating to the controversies, doctrine, and ritual of the Christian church. His favorite recreation was playing the organ, of which instrument he became a master and to which he devoted a short time every day for years.

["Memorial of James Emott," in *Asso. of the Bar of the City of N. Y. Report,* 1885, p. 81; D. McAdam and others, *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.* (1897); Edmund Platt, *The Eagle's Hist. of Poughkeepsie* (1905); Frank Hasbrouck, *Hist. of Dutchess County, N. Y.* (1909); *The Records of Christ Church, Poughkeepsie, N. Y., 1766–1916* (n.d.), vol. II; *Columbia Coll. Gen. Cat., 1754–1888; N. Y. Times,* Sept. 12, 1884.]

H. W. H. K.



**ENDECOTT, JOHN** (*c.* 1589–Mar. 15, 1665), governor of Massachusetts, was the son of Thomas Endecott of Chagford, Devonshire, and Alice (Westlake?) Endecott, a woman of considerable landed possessions in the parish of Stoke-in-Teignhead. His grandfather, John Endecott, held large tin-mining interests in the county, and was a man of some wealth. He survived his son Thomas, who died in 1621, and on his own death some fourteen years later practically disinherited the younger John, whose religious convictions had doubtless run counter to his own. This may serve to explain the fact that in his records and correspondence, the Governor made almost no references to his connections in England. Little is known of Endecott's youth, though it is fairly certain that at an early age he was brought under the influence of the Puritan divine, Rev. John White of Dorchester, and of the Rev. Samuel Skelton, later pastor of the First Church in Salem. He is said also to have seen service against the Spaniards in the Low Countries; certainly he bore the title of "captain" even after he emigrated to Massachusetts. Before he left England, he married Anne Gower, a cousin of Matthew Cradock, the governor of the Massachusetts Bay Company in England.

As a Puritan, Endecott came into close contact with the group interested in colonizing New England. By 1628 the colony at Plymouth had become well established and there were also scattered settlers about the shores of Massachusetts Bay, including the remnant of a fishing settlement at Cape Ann. On March 19 of that year, Endecott was one of six "religious persons" who bought a patent for territory on the Bay from the Plymouth Council in England, and in the royal charter, granted Mar. 4, 1629, he was named among the incorporators. Meanwhile the associators had determined to proceed to the settlement without delay, and on June 20, 1628, Endecott sailed for Massachusetts in the *Abigail* with a small band of colonists, to prepare the way for the larger numbers to follow. There has been

much discussion by antiquarians as to the exact official rôle and title which should be accorded to Endecott during the next two years. It is not a matter of the slightest historical or biographical importance whether we call him "the first governor of Massachusetts," and, technically, the problem is practically insoluble. The pertinent facts are that it was evidently intended that he was to be in charge of the colony until the main company should arrive; that he should do everything needful on the spot to pave the way for them; and that he did so. At a meeting of the company in England, Apr. 30, 1629, it was recorded that Endecott had been chosen governor of the Plantation in Massachusetts for one year, or until another had been selected in his place. On Oct. 20 Winthrop was chosen governor under the charter, though he did not reach Massachusetts until the next year.

Endecott landed with his band on Sept. 6, 1628, and settled at Naumkeag, now Salem. He found he had to clear the ground both literally and metaphorically and proceeded to do both. The remnant of the fishing company was under the "governorship" of Roger Conant [*q.v.*], whose tact mitigated difficulties on that score. More vigorous measures were called for against Thomas Morton and his riotous gang at Merry Mount, whither Endecott soon marched and dramatically cut down their celebrated May-pole, admonishing them that "ther should be better walking" (Bradford, *post,* II, 501). By the end of June 1629, the Rev. Samuel Skelton and Rev. Francis Higginson had arrived. It is impossible to determine exactly what Endecott's ideas of church government and Separatism had been when he left England. After his arrival in America he came into touch with the Pilgrims at Plymouth, and when he and the two clergymen organized a church in July it followed the Plymouth model, and was independent of the church in England (Adams, *post,* p. 130). Two members of the Massachusetts colony, John and Samuel Browne, declined to accept Separatism and were finally deported to England by Endecott who, with a complete absence of humor, described them as "schismatical." Little else is known of his rule at this period. It appears to have been eminently successful and to have given the company in England entire satisfaction, though, *pro forma,* he had to be mildly censured for his handling of the recalcitrant Brownes.

In the early summer of 1630 the great migration set in. About a thousand colonists arrived, including John Winthrop [*q.v.*]. Endecott quietly turned over his authority to the new governor and became an assistant. The remainder of his life, however, was spent in the service of the colony. He was assistant in the years 1630–34, 1636–40, 1645-48; deputy-governor 1641–43, 1650, 1654; and governor 1644, 1649, 1651–53, 1655–64. He also frequently held military office and in 1645 was named sergeant-major-general. His importance in the eyes of the leaders cannot be better shown than by the fact that he was one of the three men chosen to the unconstitutional Council for Life, initiated in 1636. The scheme proved abortive, but it is evident that Endecott's life was interwoven at every point with the public life of the colony.

Although frequently holding military office, he possessed none of the qualifications of a military leader. Following the murder of Oldham [*q.v.*] by the Indians in 1636, Endecott was placed at the head of a punitive expedition of a hundred men, which not only proved a complete failure but in its ill-judged operations did much to bring on the Pequot War. His actions brought well-deserved protests from both Saybrook and Plymouth. In 1643 he opposed the unfortunate and uncalled-for policy toward the French indulged in by Winthrop, for which Winthrop was condemned by the United Colonies, and the following year, when Endecott was governor, he did what he could to settle matters on a better foundation. Much has been made of the episode in which Endecott ordered the cross to be cut out of the English ensign as savoring of popery (1634). He was probably no more narrow-minded than many others, however, and aside from the passing criticism in England, the incident is without importance save as it indicates his lack of judgment. Far more essential for a study of the man's character is the part he played in the persecution of the Quakers a few years before his death. Making all allowance both for the political aspects of the problem as it presented itself to the rulers of the colony, and for the harshness of the times, Endecott showed himself blood-thirsty and brutal in his handling of the Quaker cases. He appeared at his worst in this, in many ways, supreme episode of his life. Although not of scholarly tastes, he took an interest in education in the colony, and in 1641 agitated the question of establishing a free school at Salem. Earlier, in 1637, the General Court had appointed a committee to consider the establishment of a college and apparently the following year Endecott took his place on this committee, filling a vacancy caused by the death of one of its members. By the time of the first Commencement of Harvard he was one of the Overseers.

Endecott's first wife died soon after their arrival in Massachusetts, and on Aug. 18, 1630, he

married Elizabeth Gibson, by whom he had two sons. He appears never to have been a wealthy man, although he received his various official salaries and several grants of land, including one of a thousand acres and one of a quarter of Block Island. The inventory of his estate shows a value of only slightly over £224. He was always fond of Salem, which he had hoped might be the capital of the colony, and it was only under official pressure that he was induced to move to Boston about 1655, where he died a decade later. He was a thorough-going Puritan in his religious beliefs and in the social legislation which, according to the times, proceeded from them. He was stern and irascible, a man of iron will and of little human sympathy. He was capable, honest, and devoted to the public good as he saw it, but was incapable of conceiving of any good other than as he saw it. He performed useful service in his first two years, before he was supplanted by the coming of the other leading members of the colony, and his strength was always useful to it, but he never measured up to the stature of several of the colony's other leading men.

[Roper Lethbridge, *The Devonshire Ancestry and the Early Homes of the Family of John Endecott* (n.d.); W. D. Chapple, "The Pub. Service of John Endecott in the Mass. Bay Col.," *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*, vol. LXV (1929); "Memoir of Gov. Endecott," *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1847; S. Salisbury, "Memorial of Gov. Endecott," *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, Oct. 1873; W. H. Whitmore, *The Mass. Civil List* (1870); *The Hutchinson Papers* (2 vols., 1865); J. W. Thornton, *The Landing at Cape Anne* (1854); W. Bradford, *Hist. of Plymouth Plantation* (2 vols., 1912); James Savage, *Geneal. Dict. of the First Settlers of New Eng.*, II (1860), 120–23; J. K. Hosmer, ed., *Winthrop's Jour.* (2 vols., 1908); Alex. Young, *Chronicles of the First Planters . . . of Mass. Bay* (1864); *Records of the Gov. and Co. of the Mass. Bay*, vols. I–IV (1853–54); *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.* V (1863), 73–84, XXV (1888), 137–48; J. T. Adams, *Founding of New Eng.* (1921).]

J.T.A.

**ENDICOTT, CHARLES MOSES** (Dec. 6, 1793–Dec. 14, 1863), sea-captain, antiquarian, was born in Danvers, Mass., on land which had originally belonged to Gov. John Endecott, from whom he was directly descended in the eighth generation. He was the son of Moses Endicott and Anna (Towne) Endicott and was christened Moses, but his name was legally changed, Mar. 4, 1829, to Charles Moses. He went to school in Salem and Andover and was preparing to go on to college. His father's unexpected death in 1807, however, left the family poor, and he entered the counting-room of his uncle, Samuel Endicott. He was then only fourteen years old. He later moved to Boston to join the firm of William Ropes, but left there in 1812 to go as a supercargo for Pickering Dodge of Salem, on a long voyage to St. Petersburg. At the close of the War of 1812 he took a similar voyage to the Far East, stopping at Calcutta and Sumatra. He was married, June 18, 1818, to Sarah Rolland Blythe, by whom he had two sons. For fifteen years Endicott traded along the Sumatra coast, being engaged chiefly in the importation of pepper. During the delays incidental to the loading of his vessels, he made a careful and reliable survey of the coast and published *Sailing Directions for the Pepper Ports on the West Coast of Sumatra* (1833), intended to accompany his chart of the coast, which was of great service to American mariners and went through many editions. His books are still preserved at the Essex Institute in Salem. In 1830–31, while he was master of the *Friendship*, with a crew of seventeen men, his vessel was attacked by Malays at Qualah Battoo, on the west coast of Sumatra, and, while he was absent on shore, many of his sailors were brutally massacred and his ship was looted. Endicott managed to escape and reach Muckie, where he found three American vessels. With their aid he was enabled to recapture the *Friendship*, which he eventually piloted back to Salem. An effective punishment for this outrage was administered on Feb. 7, 1832, when the United States frigate *Potomac* bombarded the town of Qualah Battoo.

In 1835 Endicott left the sea and settled down as cashier of the Salem Bank. He became interested in antiquarian research and, under the pen name of "Junius Americanus," contributed many papers to the *New-England Historical and Genealogical Register* and to the *Boston Gazette*. He published genealogies of the Endicott, Peabody, and Jacobs families, *Memoir of John Endecott* (1847), as well as other miscellaneous writings.

Endicott was a courtly but rather fussy and peculiar man who became notorious for his eccentric conduct. He once as cashier refused to accept the deposits of one large firm because the bank-notes presented were dirty, and he did not wish to soil his hands. Eventually his idiosyncracies became so marked that he was placed in an asylum, where he died just after reaching his seventieth year.

[There is an excellent life of Endicott by Eben Putnam in the *Memorial Biogs. of the New-England Hist. and Geneal. Soc.*, vol. V (1894). Ralph D. Paine's *Ships and Sailors of Old Salem* (1909), ch. XXV, deals with the tragedy of the *Friendship*. Endicott's own story is told in the *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*, vol. I (1859). See also W. C. Endicott, *Memoir of Samuel Endicott with a Geneal. of his Descendants* (1924).] C.M.F.

**ENDICOTT, JOHN** [See Endecott, John, *c.* 1589–1665.]

**ENDICOTT, MORDECAI THOMAS** (Nov. 26, 1844–Mar. 5, 1926), naval engineer, was born at Mays Landing, N. J., the son of Thomas

Doughty and Ann (Pennington) Endicott. He was descended from John Endecott, the first governor of the Massachusetts Bay colony. After an elementary education under Presbyterian auspices in his native town, he entered Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute in February 1865, and was graduated in 1868. For the next few years he worked in Wilkes-Barre, Pa., with a civil and mining engineer; in Middletown, Conn., in building the approaches for a bridge; and in Ohio, on the Zanesville-Dresden railroad extension. On May 29, 1872, he married Elizabeth Adams, daughter of George W. Adams of Dresden.

On Feb. 1, 1872, Endicott was appointed an assistant civil engineer at the new League Island naval station at Philadelphia, but he was transferred to the Philadelphia navy-yard itself before receiving his commission in the navy in 1874 as a civil engineer. For the next few years he was at the New London naval station; then followed two years at Portsmouth, five years at Philadelphia, three years at Norfolk, and one year at New York. In 1890 he was brought to Washington as a consulting engineer and given virtual control of all civil-engineering projects. As it was during this period that the navy-yards were undergoing extensive modernization, he had exceptional opportunities to show his professional skill and insight. Thus he had much to do with the introduction of electrical appliances and the adoption of steel and concrete dry docks instead of the old timbered structures. Immediately before the Spanish-American War, when even more important work was in prospect, President McKinley broke precedents, and on Apr. 7, 1898, appointed Endicott as chief of the Bureau of Yards and Docks, a post always before held by an officer of the line. Later Endicott was given the rank of rear-admiral by virtue of his position, and continued in office till 1907. Though he had been retired in the previous November as a rear-admiral, he remained on duty in various capacities till June 1909. Perhaps his most noteworthy achievement was the completion of the floating dry dock *Dewey*, the largest of its type which had then been built.

Endicott also served on the Nicaragua Canal Commission in 1895, as a member of the Armor Factory Board in 1897, as the navy member of the Panama Canal Commission, 1905–07, and even returned to active duty on various boards during the World War. After 1890 he made his home in Washington, D. C. He was a member of the American Society of Civil Engineers, serving as its president in 1911. While his career had been almost wholly devoted to the navy, he was also interested in collecting paintings and rare books. He died of pneumonia, and was buried at Arlington.

[The best sketch of Endicott's life is the memoir published in the *Trans. Am. Soc. of Civil Engineers*, Dec. 1926. His yearly reports as chief of the Bureau of Yards and Docks are included with the reports of the secretary of the navy. The record of his various duties and promotions is on file in the Bureau of Navigation, Navy Dept. See also *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; *Biog. Record of the Officers and Grads. of Rensselaer Polytechnic Inst., 1824–1886* (1887); *Evening Star* (Washington), Mar. 6, 1926.] W. B. N.

**ENDICOTT, WILLIAM CROWNINSHIELD** (Nov. 19, 1826–May 6, 1900), jurist, secretary of war, was born in Salem, Mass., a direct descendant in the eighth generation of Gov. John Endecott, and a grandson of Jacob Crowninshield [*q.v.*], a distinguished member of Congress. Endicott was the eldest of the four children of William Putnam Endicott and his first wife, Mary Crowninshield. He was baptized as William Gardner Endicott, but his name was changed, Apr. 19, 1837, by special act of the legislature. He received his early education at Salem Latin School, going from there to Harvard, where he graduated in the class of 1847. After spending some two years in the office of Nathaniel J. Lord, one of the leading attorneys in Salem, he continued his studies at the Harvard Law School (1849–50), and was admitted to the bar of Essex County in November 1850. Three years later he entered into partnership with Jairus W. Perry, under the firm name of Perry and Endicott. He was chosen a member of the Salem Common Council in 1852, 1853, and 1857, and was made its president during his third term. He became city solicitor in 1858, but retired from this position in 1863. He married, Dec. 13, 1859, Ellen Peabody, daughter of George and Clara (Endicott) Peabody, of Salem. He had two children, William Crowninshield Endicott, Jr., born in 1860, and Mary Crowninshield Endicott, born in 1864, who became the wife of the Right Honorable Joseph Chamberlain, the British statesman, and after his death married William Hartley Carnegie, dean of Westminster and chaplain of the House of Commons.

Endicott had originally been a member of the Whig party, but when it disintegrated in 1856, he, like Rufus Choate and many others, joined the Democrats. In 1866, 1867, and 1868 he was an unsuccessful candidate for the office of attorney-general in Massachusetts on the Democratic ticket, and in 1870 he was defeated for Congress by Benjamin F. Butler. In 1873, when the supreme judicial court was enlarged, Endicott, despite his party affiliations, was appointed to that bench by the Republican governor, William B. Washburn, and was after that known in the state

as Judge Endicott. Withdrawing in 1882 because of ill health, he spent eighteen months in Europe. On his return he accepted a nomination for governor, but was defeated in November 1884, by George D. Robinson. In February 1885, Grover Cleveland requested Endicott to meet him at Albany and there offered him a place in his cabinet as secretary of war. In this position, which he retained throughout Cleveland's first administration, Endicott distinguished himself "by strict attention to duty and a keen interest in the army and its requirements" (Elihu Root, May 7, 1900). Congress created, Mar. 3, 1885, a Board on Fortifications and Other Defenses, which came to be known as the Endicott Board of Fortifications. The work of this board in carrying out plans for the defense of cities on the Atlantic seaboard was long and laborious, and aroused very favorable comment. During his incumbency, the Apache Indians under Geronimo surrendered; many public buildings and monuments were erected; and the record and pension division of the surgeon general's office was reorganized. He was severely but unjustly criticised because of his approval, May 26, 1887, of a proposal to return captured Confederate flags to the Southern states to whom they had originally belonged.

Endicott, who had himself inherited money and whose wife had a large fortune, did not practise law after leaving the cabinet in 1889, but settled down in his fine old house on Essex Street, in Salem, where he had lived since 1864. Later he moved to Boston, where he maintained a residence on Marlboro St. He usually spent his summers in travel or on his estate in Danvers. He died in Boston, in his seventy-fifth year, of pneumonia, and was buried in Harmony Grove Cemetery, at Salem. Many honors came to him in the course of his career. He was a loyal friend and supporter of Harvard College, serving as Overseer (1875–85) and fellow of the corporation (1884–95). He was president of the Harvard Alumni Association from 1888 to 1890, president of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem, as well as trustee of the Peabody Education Fund. He was one of the original trustees of Groton School and was elected, Apr. 4, 1864, as a resident member of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He was a member of the famous Saturday Club, in Boston, and often attended meetings.

A patrician by birth and temperament, Endicott had a contempt for anything mean or degrading. Rhodes has rightly characterized him as "an able, liberal, and high-minded man." He was an eloquent speaker, and delivered a brilliant oration in 1878 on the 250th anniversary of



the landing of his ancestor on American soil. In appearance he was tall and striking, and his manners were invariably courtly. As a judge, he was impartial, dignified, and just. He represented in his character and career the best of the old New England traditions.

[The best account of Endicott is the memoir by his son, Wm. C. Endicott, in the *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. XV (1902), 523–34. See also J. H. Choate, "Memoir of Wm. Crowninshield Endicott, LL.D.," *Pubs. Col. Soc. Mass.*, VII (1906), 30–49; "Wm. Crowninshield Endicott," *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, n.s., XIV (1902), 20–23; *Boston Transcript*, May 7, 1900. Certain information has been supplied by members of the family.] C. M. F.

**ENGELMANN, GEORGE** (Feb. 2, 1809–Feb. 4, 1884), pioneer meteorologist, physician, botanist, was the eldest of the thirteen children of George Engelmann, a doctor of philosophy from the University of Halle, and Julia May, a teacher who came from an artistic family. He was born at Frankfurt-am-Main, where the Engelmanns had established a school for girls. Here he lived until a scholarship from the "Reformed Congregation" enabled him to enter the University of Heidelberg in 1827, where he was befriended by Alexander Braun and Karl Schimper. His interest in botany cannot be credited to these men, however, for he later wrote, "I began in my fifteenth year to become greatly interested in plants." In the fall of 1828 in consequence of an uprising of students Engelmann was obliged to leave Heidelberg. The affair was harmless, but his "democratic tendencies" made it difficult for him at the University of Berlin where he remained but two years. Consequently he moved to the University of Würzburg from which he received his M.D., July 19, 1831. His inaugural dissertation, "De Antholysi Prodomus," was illustrated by a lithograph drawn by the author, and the original sketches, still in existence, give evidence of his skill with the pencil. In 1832 Engelmann went to Paris where he found congenial friends in Braun, Agassiz, Constadt, and others. In September of the same year he sailed for America, for the purpose of investing in the new country some money which had been entrusted to him by his uncle. He reached St. Louis on Feb. 20, 1833. For the next two years he lived on a farm in Illinois, twenty miles east of St. Louis, where he prospected, botanized, and scoured the country studying its plants, minerals, and rocks. After a journey through the Southwest he returned to St. Louis where he settled down in the practise of medicine in December 1835. He became probably the busiest practitioner in the city, with a host of devoted patients not only among the Germans, but among Americans and French as well. He was the first to use

obstetrical forceps in this new region, and was among the very first to use quinine in malaria, especially in giving it in large doses "in the interval." In 1840 he was able to return to Kreuznach, where his parents now lived, and where he married, on June 11, a cousin, Dorothea Horstmann, who had lived in the Engelmann family since she was eleven years old. George J. Engelmann [*q.v.*] was their son.

While in his earlier years Engelmann was forced by necessity to give the major portion of his time to medicine, his herbarium and botanical library always adjoined his office. After a third trip to Europe in 1869, he returned to a new house, in which he had no office, kept no office hours, and saw only a few patients in his study. Thus he was allowed to indulge his various interests. His meteorological observations begun in 1836 were continued till the day before his death. He made studies on *Taenia,* the anatomy of the opossum, melanism in squirrels, and on *Menobranchus.* He also deserves credit for first calling attention to the adaptation of the Pronuba moth for accomplishing pollination of the Yuccas, as well as the valuable discovery of the immunity of the American grape to the *Phylloxera.* The study of plants was his greatest delight, however, and it is upon his monographic work on a series of difficult and little understood genera that his reputation must chiefly rest. In addition to the memorial volume of *Botanical Works of the late George Engelmann Collected for Henry Shaw* (1887), Engelmann left a mass of notes, drawings, and observations on plants of all kinds which constitute some sixty large volumes.

Engelmann organized the St. Louis Academy of Science in 1856—the first of its kind to be established west of the Alleghanies. He was an earnest worker in the organization of a paper, called *The Westland,* the main purpose of which was to unite the pioneer settlers and to give information to those in Germany who contemplated emigrating. When it was discontinued a few years later, Engelmann lent his aid to a German daily. He was a member of thirty-three scientific societies at home and abroad. His long time associate Dr. Parry named a mountain peak for him, and many plant species as well as three plant genera commemorate his name.

["Sketch of the Life and Work of the late George Engelmann," a manuscript translation of an autobiographical account left with Engelmann's son; manuscript copy of an address by Wm. Trelease, Engelmann Centenary, St. Louis Acad. of Sci., Feb. 1, 1909; *Biog. Memoirs Nat. Acad. Sci.*, vol. IV (1902); *Proc. Am. Soc. Arts and Sci.*, XIX (1884), 516; *Trans. Acad. Sci. of St. Louis*, IV (1886), 1; *Berichte der Deutschen Botanischen Gesellschaft*, II (1884), xii; *Science*, Apr. 4, 1884; *Mo. Hist. Rev.*, Jan., Apr. 1929.]

G.T.M.



**ENGELMANN, GEORGE JULIUS** (July 2, 1847–Nov. 16, 1903), gynecologist, obstetrician, was born in St. Louis, Mo. His father, George Engelmann [*q.v.*], a native of Frankfurt-am-Main, was a botanist of international reputation as well as an accomplished physician. He came to America in 1832, settled in St. Louis for practise, and in 1840 returned to Germany to marry Dorothea Horstmann of Bacharach-am-Rhein. The son received his education from his mother until 1856, when for two years he received instruction in various European cities, where his father was engaged in botanical research. Returning to St. Louis with his parents in 1858, he entered Washington University where he was graduated in 1867. His medical education was received abroad, at the University of Berlin (1867–69), at Tübingen (1869–70), and again at Berlin where he received the degree of M.D. in 1871. In the meantime he had served as a volunteer Red Cross surgeon in the Franco-Prussian War. Following graduation he pursued postgraduate study in gynecology and pathology in Vienna where the university gave him the degree of Master in Obstetrics in 1872. After a winter spent in the clinics of Paris and London, Engelmann returned to St. Louis in the spring of 1873. He was given the position of lecturer on pathologic anatomy in the St. Louis Medical College and shortly afterward organized the St. Louis School for Midwives, and the Maternity Hospital. He was engaged in general practise until 1878, when he suffered from a nearly fatal sepsis. Following his recovery he limited his practise to the diseases of women. He moved to Boston in 1895 and died in that city in 1903.

Engelmann was a keen participant in all medical society affairs. His chief interests were, however, the local and national societies of gynecology and obstetrics. He was a member and one time president of the American Gynecological Society, of the Southern Surgical and Gynecological Society, and honorary president of the International Congress of Gynecology and Obstetrics. He also held membership in a number of foreign medical societies. For years he was professor of diseases of women and operative midwifery at the Missouri Medical College and at the St. Louis Post-Graduate School of Medicine. He was an original investigator along the lines of his specialty. Among the most noteworthy of his writings was *Labor among Primitive Peoples, Ancient and Modern,* published in 1882, which appeared in German in 1884 and in French in 1886. Other notable articles were: *Posture of Women in Labor* (1881), *Early History of Vaginal Hysterectomy* (1895), *Menstrual*

*Function as Influenced by Modern Methods of Training, Mental and Physical* (1900), and "Age of First Menstruation on the North American Continent" (in *Transactions of the American Gynecological Society*, vol. XXVI, 1901, p. 77).

Archæology was Engelmann's diversion. He made extensive researches of the Indian mounds of southeastern Missouri, and accumulated a private museum of flints and pottery. This collection was later given to the Peabody Museum of Archæology at Cambridge, Mass. He donated his father's botanical library and herbarium of one hundred thousand specimens to the Missouri Botanical Garden. Physically he was tall and powerfully built. He had a round ruddy face, large dark expressive eyes, and a dimpled chin. In later life he was quite bald. He was genial, a good talker, with a gift for deep and lasting friendships. He was married twice. His first wife was Emily Engelmann, whom he married in 1879 and who died after a long illness in 1890. In 1893 he married Mrs. Loula Clark.

[L. S. McMurtry in *Trans. Southern Surgic. and Gynecol. Asso., 1903*, XVI (1904), 473–75; Joseph T. Johnson, in *Trans. Am. Gynecol. Soc.*, XXIX (1904), 485–88; *Annals of Gynecol. and Pædiatry*, XVII (1904), 76–80.] J. M. P.

**ENGLAND, JOHN** (Sept. 23, 1786–Apr. 11, 1842), Roman Catholic bishop of Charleston, S. C., was one of ten children born to Thomas and Honora (Lordan) England. The former was a refugee hedge-schoolmaster, who prospered as a tobacconist in Cork. John attended (1792–1800) a Church of Ireland institution, where as the only "Papist" he was subjected to insults from master and pupils which made him combative. After reading law with the idea of entering this profession, for which Catholics had become eligible, he studied for the priesthood in the College of St. Patrick, Carlow, the first seminary opened with English approval to replace the Continental colleges closed by the French Revolution. On completion of the theological course, he was ordained by Bishop Moylan in North Chapel, Cork, Oct. 10, 1808.

England was assigned as chaplain to the North Presentation Convent (Cork), and in this capacity aided in building an enlarged school. Recognized as a forceful preacher, he was named lecturer in the cathedral. As chaplain at the Magdalen Asylum and for the prisoners in Cork, he became acquainted with the conditions under which men convicted of political and minor criminal offenses were transported to Australia. Writing impassioned articles for the Irish press, he aided in so arousing public opinion that the government undertook the reform of prison ships and ultimately permitted non-Anglican clergymen in the penal settlements (*Orthodox Journal*, 1819; *Dublin Evening Post*, June 7, 1816). So important was his work that an Australian authority speaks of him as "the founder of the Catholic Church in Australia" (E. M. O'Brien, "John England," *The Australian Catholic Record*, April 1928). England, who was also Inspector of Poor Schools, established *The Religious Repository* (or *Repertory*) and a circulating library. For a time he was president of the new St. Mary's Seminary, where he taught philosophy and probably compiled a nationalist *School Primer of Irish History* (1815). In 1813, he was named a trustee of the *Cork Mercantile Chronicle*, for which he wrote extensively. As the responsible trustee, he was fined £100 for his refusal to name the writer of "Commiseration of a Landlord" (Apr. 1, 1816), but the money was soon subscribed by Daniel O'Connell and his friends. For several years England was outstanding in the patriotic fight against the "Veto," a scheme sanctioned by a number of English and Irish bishops by which the government through a concordat with Rome would have a voice in the selection of bishops. The agitation was successful, but the agitator won the hostility of Dublin Castle without gaining episcopal approbation. Refused an exeat which would enable him to enter the foreign missions, England was transferred to a harmless pastorate in the Protestant village of Bandon (1817). This failed to silence the irreconcilable democrat, whom Archbishop Curtis of Armagh later described as a man of intellect and ability who "lacks sacerdotal meekness, and prudence" and who in political matters "does not act with equanimity and sufficient caution." England was not rendered mute; he even won Protestant respect by infusing spirit into a peasant congregation. In 1820 he received apostolic briefs of his appointment to the newly created diocese of Charleston (Carolinas and Georgia), and on Sept. 21 was consecrated by Bishop Murphy in St. Finnbar's Cathedral, Cork. His elevation was popularly considered the "transportation" of a heroic rebel who protested against aristocratic rule in Church and country.

Bishop England landed at Charleston Dec. 30, 1820. He found that his diocese had only five missionaries, a few wretched churches, a disordered treasury, and about 5,000 known Catholics of whom a fifth were negroes. Immediately he made an extended visitation, appointing priests to established congregations, gathering isolated Catholics into groups, and preaching in town halls and in churches the facilities of which were granted by Presbyterian and Episcopalian divines. He proved an indefatigable preacher with

a characteristic vehemence of expression, an ardent democrat, who immediately applied for citizenship, and a man of determined principles. Before the year had passed, he visited his brother bishops in the North and called upon President Monroe and John Quincy Adams. This northern trip resulted in England's well-intentioned attempt to settle the Hogan schism in St. Mary's parish, Philadelphia, which was resented by Bishop Henry Conwell as factious interference on behalf of a worthless priest whose conduct and pamphlets were bringing disgrace upon the Church. England's criticism soon aroused the attack of the Hoganites whom he in turn condemned when reviewing the controversy in his *Miscellany*. While he was preaching at St. Peter's in New York (1822), some Irish malcontents unsuccessfully appealed to him against their bishop. This did not improve his relations with Bishop Connolly of New York nor with Archbishop Maréchal of Baltimore who resented England's peacemaking activity as unwarranted meddling in other dioceses.

Oppressed by these controversies, England instituted a democratic constitution for his own diocese which provided for frequent conventions of priests and lay delegates and defined the status of the Church under such captions as doctrine, government, property, membership, and conventions. The pew system and parochial trusteeism were abolished, and all property was held by a diocesan board incorporated by the legislature. Though this innovation was frowned upon by the other bishops and was discarded by England's successor, it worked well under him. In 1822, he opened The Philosophical and Classical Seminary of Charleston, thus winning Chancellor Kent's encomium as the "restorer of classical learning in South Carolina." This academy proved popular among Protestants until it was realized that the income derived from it financed an ecclesiastical seminary, which incidentally annoyed the Jesuits and Sulpicians because it competed with Georgetown College, and St. Mary's, Baltimore. England was determined to train his own seminarians rather than accept foreign priests or men educated by the Sulpicians, with whose rule he was not in sympathy. Although non-Catholics reopened the College of Charleston, England maintained his schools in a fair way. In 1829 he induced the Sisters of Mercy to establish a girls' academy in Charleston. In 1834 he brought in the Irish Ursulines, silencing nativist opposition by playing on Southern feeling against Massachusetts, where an Ursuline convent at Charlestown had been destroyed by a mob. He welcomed negroes at his weather-boarded

England

Cathedral of Saint Finnbar, where he himself instructed them in religion. He accepted slavery, however, maintaining that slaves were better cared for than Irish peasants. In 1835 he opened a school in Charleston for free negroes, arousing an attack upon church property which was frustrated by the arrival of Irish militiamen. To satisfy public opinion, the school was closed. In 1840 he replied to a speech of Secretary Forsyth in Georgia, in which the latter identified Rome with abolitionism because of Gregory XVI's condemnation of the slave-trade. England declared that the Pope had not condemned slavery as practised in America and that the Church accepted the institution, counselling obedience on the part of slaves while encouraging their just treatment. For practical reasons, England, who could hardly have sympathized with slave-owners, was not fearless in his stand (S. L. Theobald, "Catholic Missionary Work among the Colored People of the United States," *Records of the American Catholic Historical Society of Philadelphia,* December 1924).

He was in demand as a preacher in Irish centers and as a lecturer before Catholic lyceums. Among outstanding lectures were: "Classical Education" (1832); "The Nature of Religious Orders" (1835), at a time when native Americans honestly feared the arrival of religious communities; "The Pleasures of The Scholar" (1840), before Franklin College, Ga.; and "American Citizenship," in the Boston cathedral on the occasion of President Harrison's death. He gloried in being the first priest to address the House of Representatives, as he did on Jan. 8, 1826, in the presence of the president, senators, and a crowded gallery. The foundation of the *United States Catholic Miscellany* (1822–61), the first distinctly Catholic paper, was England's greatest achievement. He hoped to make it a national organ, but was unable to win the support of the hierarchy. England believed that he was thwarted at every turn by French ecclesiastics who distrusted his democratic proclivities and whom he considered a menace to Catholic advance because of their aristocratic leanings. The *Miscellany* challenged national attention, for the bishop was an aggressive controversialist who forced the issue with an antagonist at a time when there were plenty of nativist charges. Catholic happenings were emphasized; the struggle for Catholic emancipation was closely followed; and lengthy articles explained Catholic teachings. Catholic writers appear to accept uncritically the statement that England assured the secretary of the Catholic Association in 1828 that he had personally organized 40,000 men in America under

the command of Gen. Montgomery to invade Ireland in case emancipation was denied (W. J. Fitz-Patrick, *The Life, Times, and Correspondence of the Right Rev. Dr. Doyle*, 1880; Guilday, *post*, I, 122; Denis Gwynn, *The Struggle for Catholic Emancipation*, 1928, p. 257). The *Miscellany* made England a national figure, yet hardly "the most striking ecclesiastical personality of his day in the United States," and "the foremost intellectual representative of the Irish element in the American Church" (Guilday, I, 43, 475).

England's prolific pen was never idle, although many of his writings were hastily composed and padded with quotations. He was always forceful and logical, though his essays were marred by bitterness as well as an impatience with the American attitude toward his creed and race and by a touch of Celtic exaggeration. Among the best known of his lengthy brochures are: a reprint of the translated *Roman Missal* as used in Ireland with a prefatory explanation of the Mass compiled from French theologians (1822); an *Explanation of the Construction, Furniture, and Ornaments of a Church*, etc., which was written in Rome and published in three tongues at papal expense (1833), republished in Baltimore (1834); *Explanation of the Ceremonies of Holy Week in the Chapels of the Vatican and of those at Easter Sunday in the Church of St. Peter* (1832); *Letters Concerning the Roman Chancery* (1840); *Letters to the Honorable John Forsyth on the Subject of Domestic Slavery* (1844); and *The Garden of the Soul* (1845). England's works were published by his successor, Ignatius A. Reynolds (5 vols., 1849); in abridged form by H. F. McElrone (2 vols., 1900); and in a critical edition under the direction of Archbishop Sebastian G. Messmer (7 vols., 1908).

The insistence of England at home and at Rome upon a national synod which so annoyed Archbishops Maréchal and Whitfield, had much to do with the calling of the Provincial Councils of Baltimore. This did not increase England's popularity any more than his reiterated advice that native priests be raised to the hierarchy rather than Frenchmen, though his own preferential votes for vacant sees went to priests of Irish birth. Named apostolic delegate to Haiti (1833–37) with instructions to draft a concordat, he failed, even accentuating the Gallican stand of the Haitian government. The agreement which he negotiated was so sweeping in concessions that it was not accepted by Gregory XVI. Meanwhile, his own diocese suffered because of his extended absences. Nevertheless, England was true to his inconspicuous diocese, refusing to allow his name in nomination for an Irish see, even



that of the archdiocese of Cashel (1833). Though aided by the Leopoldine Society and the Propagation of the Faith, the bishop was always in debt. As there was no immigration, numbers increased slowly; in 1842, there were in his diocese only about 7,000 Catholics, who because of their scattered location required sixty-five churches and chapels with twenty-one priests, entailing a heavy expense. To-day he is chiefly remembered for his long letter to the Society of the Propagation of the Faith (Lyons, France) in which he estimated Catholic leakage in the United States at 3,250,000 souls on the basis of 8,000,000 immigrants from 1786 to 1836, of whom he guessed one half would be Catholics, when official immigration figures indicate only 750,000 immigrants and their descendants. England's figures, accepted as an accurate statement, were (and are) extensively quoted to the discredit of the Church and to the satisfaction of unfriendly critics (Gerald Shaughnessy, *Has the Immigrant Kept the Faith?* (1925) ch. XIV). Saddened by burdens and fatigued by a European trip followed by extensive preaching in Philadelphia and Baltimore, England took to his bed in the last days of 1841 though he lingered for four months.

[Peter Guilday, *The Life and Times of John England* (2 vols., 1927); *Metropolitan Cath. Almanac* (1844); W. G. Read, *The Religious Cabinet*, May 1842; R. H. Clarke, *Lives of the Deceased Bishops of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.* (1872), I, 271–309; memoirs in the various editions of England's works; J. J. O'Connell, *Catholicity in the Carolinas and Ga.* (1879), J. G. Shea, *Cath. Church in the U. S.* (vols. III, IV, 1890–92); *Cath. Encyc.*; E. M. O'Brien, *The Dawn of Catholicity in Australia* (2 vols., 1928); Thos. O'Gorman, *A Hist. of the Roman Cath. Church in the U. S.* (1895); T. Corcoran, "John England" in *Studies* (Dublin), Mar. 1928.]

R. J. P.

**ENGLIS, JOHN** (Nov. 27, 1808–Oct. 25, 1888), ship-builder, was born in New York City, the son of John Englis, who had migrated from Scotland in 1795. His formal schooling must have been slight. At seventeen he was apprenticed to the ship-building firm of Smith & Dimon. In the articles of indenture (as reproduced by Sheldon, *post*) George Bell's name appears as step-father of young Englis. It is not known when John Englis the elder died.

After his term of apprenticeship expired, Englis was made foreman in the shipyard of Bishop & Simonson, where he remained eight years, on duty from sunrise to sunset, summer and winter. In 1832 he married Mary Quackenbush, a member of a colonial Dutch family. His work had been chiefly, if not altogether, on sailing ships turned out from the New York yards; but in 1837, when he made a start for himself as a master ship-builder, he decided to center his efforts on steam vessels. There was a demand for these

on the inland waters of the country. Englis went to Buffalo, N. Y., then in the period of its first rapid growth after the completion of the Erie Canal, and there built the *Milwaukie, Red Jacket,* and *Empire City,* for service on the Great Lakes. These steamboats were from 210 to 230 feet in length, with a beam of 38 or 39 feet, and 12 feet depth of hold. For speed and grace of line they were a great advance on any of the earlier lake craft. Their wide repute brought their builder orders from New York. He returned to that city and produced from his yards the most famous of the Hudson River and Long Island Sound steamers of that period—the *Albany, Hendrik Hudson, Troy, Knickerbocker, Charter Oak,* and others. The largest of these was the *Hendrik Hudson,* 300 feet long, built in 1845. In 1853 Englis built at Buffalo the *Western World* (348 feet by 45 feet) and the *Plymouth Rock,* a smaller vessel for Great Lakes traffic. Up to the outbreak of the Civil War he continued to build steamboats for New York and New England waters at his yards, located first at the foot of East Tenth St., New York City, and later removed to Greenpoint, on the Long Island side of the East River. The Hudson River boat *Isaac Newton* (1855) was the largest of the series, being 405 feet in length. In 1857–58 his yards launched three Spanish gunboats for service in Cuban waters. Englis was not merely a builder of vessels; he was a self-taught naval architect and designer. He did not, however, make a practise of designing ships; those built in his yards were usually planned by others. In 1861, when the government at Washington was unable to build at its own navy yards the gunboats needed to maintain the blockade of Southern ports, Englis completed the *Unadilla* and delivered it to the Navy Department within eighty-two days. During the war years (1861–65), he built for the government a revenue cutter and for private corporations a number of vessels to be used in Chinese waters. In 1863 he sent out the largest boat in his Hudson River fleet, the *St. John* (417 feet over all). At the time of its launching, this vessel was described as the longest steamship in the world, with the sole exception of the *Great Eastern.* After the war Englis took into partnership his only son, John Englis, and in 1882 two grandsons, William F. and Charles M. Englis, became members of the firm. They continued the building of a variety of steam craft, including ferryboats. The average burden of their ships was 1500 tons, and, with the exception of a few iron ships, wood was the material used throughout the lifetime of the elder Englis. Steel was introduced later, however, and long after the death of the founder, the Englis yards went forward with the construction of steamers for river and lake navigation. It was the only one of the great New York ship-building firms of the early nineteenth century that kept at work through the first decade of the twentieth.

["The Famous Englis Ship Yard," with tabulation of ships built at the Englis yards, 1837–1911, in *Master, Mate, and Pilot* (N. Y.), July 1911 (data supplied by members of the firm); G. W. Sheldon, "The Old Shipbuilders of New York," *Harper's Monthly,* July 1882; *N. Y. Tribune,* Oct. 26, 1888; letter from John Englis, great-grandson of the ship-builder, dated Jan. 18, 1928.]

W. B. S—w.



**ENGLISH, ELBERT HARTWELL** (Mar. 6, 1816–Sept. 1, 1884), Arkansas jurist, was born in Madison County, Ala., the son of James and Nancy (McCracken) English. His forebears came from England to Virginia about the middle of the eighteenth century. His father was born in Virginia but was taken to Kentucky in early life and later moved to Alabama, where he engaged in cotton culture in the "flush times." Elbert entered the academy at Athens at the age of fourteen and finished the course as then given. For several years he was undecided about a vocation. He taught, learned to be a silversmith and opened a shop in Athens, began the study of medicine, but finally turned to the law, reading under the direction of George S. Houston, afterwards United States senator and governor of Alabama. English was admitted to the bar at Athens in 1839 and practised there several years. He served two terms in the Alabama legislature. In 1844 he moved to Little Rock, Ark., where two years later he was appointed reporter to the supreme court; elected by the legislature to compile the state laws. In his seven years as reporter he issued eight volumes of reports, and *A Digest of the Statutes of Arkansas* was published in 1848. While engaged in these tasks he continued his practise, traveling extensively over the state to attend the courts. In 1854 he was elected chief justice in the place of Judge Watkins, resigned. He was reëlected in 1860 for a term of eight years and continued to serve until the Confederate state government, with which he had cast his lot, was displaced by the loyal Murphy government under the constitution of 1864. He then resumed the practise of his profession. While not a member of the convention of 1874 he was a constant attendant at the sessions of the committee which drew up the articles dealing with the judiciary. At the election (1874) following the adoption of the constitution, he was chosen chief justice and held the position until his death in 1884. He was considered by his associates and the bar an ultraconservative man. According to his successor, Chief Justice S. R. Cockrill, he never undertook to fashion the law

according to what he thought it ought to be, but only to find out what it was and to stand rigidly by it. Technicalities counted much with him, and perhaps this fact explains his concurrence in the decision repudiating the state debt. In twenty-three volumes of State Reports, said Mr. Cockrill, "he has placed the indelible impress of his learning, and has therein builded for himself an honorable monument, more enduring . . . than any we can raise to his memory" (43 *Arkansas*, 14). English was a member of the Methodist church and of the Democratic party. He was a Royal Arch Mason and a Knight Templar, held high office in the order, and his Masonic decisions were translated into several languages. On Sept. 30, 1840, he married Julia Agnes Fisher in Athens, Ala. She died in 1871, and in July of the next year he married Mrs. Susan A. Wheless.

[John Hallum, *Biog. and Pictorial Hist. of Ark.* (1887); *Biog. and Hist. Memoirs of Pulaski, Jefferson . . . and Hot Spring Counties, Ark.* (1889); *Encyc. of the New West* (1881); obituary in *Daily Ark. Gazette* (Little Rock), Sept. 2, 1884; information regarding the family from a grand-daughter, Mrs. Julia English Bennett.] D.Y.T.

**ENGLISH, GEORGE BETHUNE** (Mar. 7, 1787–Sept. 20, 1828), writer, soldier, and diplomat, was born in Cambridge, Mass., son of Thomas English, an immigrant from England, who married Penelope Bethune of Boston. He graduated from Harvard in 1807, "a smart, active, handsome, young man," known already for his linguistic ability. After studying law for a few months, he vainly applied for a commission in the army. Turning to theology, he acquired an M.A. from the Harvard Divinity School and was licensed to preach. Study of Hebrew, combined perhaps with failure as a minister, convinced him that the New Testament was valueless. His conclusions were published in *The Grounds of Christianity Examined by Comparing the New Testament with the Old* (1813). This brochure created a furore and was condemned by eminent churchmen, notably W. E. Channing and Edward Everett. The latter wrote *A Defense of Christianity against the Work of G. B. English* (1814) which convicts English of wholesale plagiarism. From inhospitable New England he moved to the West, where he was at one time editor of a country newspaper and at another, member of the New Harmony Community. Through the influence of John Quincy Adams, he was appointed lieutenant of marines and went on a cruise to the Mediterranean. Resigning his commission at Alexandria, he embraced Mohammedanism and became an officer in the Egyptian army. After attempting unsuccessfully to revive the use of scythe-bearing chariots, he went in 1820 and 1821 with Ismail, son of Mehemet Ali, the Pasha of Egypt, on an expedition to the eastern Sudan. During a campaign which almost reached Abyssinia, he utilized camels for artillery transport. Expected rewards were not forthcoming, so he left the Egyptian service and returned home. He now published *A Narrative of the Expedition to Dongola and Senaar* (London, 1822; Boston, 1823) which deserves credit as one of the first descriptions of that country by a white man; and a counterblast to Everett entitled *Five Pebbles from the Brook* (1824), written some years earlier. Adams now appointed him secret agent of the United States to sound the Turkish government regarding a commercial treaty and the opening of the Black Sea to American trade. Making his way to Constantinople disguised as a Mohammedan and relying for security on his knowledge of Oriental languages and customs, he spent the winter of 1823–24 conferring secretly with Husrev, the wily Capudan Pasha or Grand Admiral, who had long favored American interests. Persuaded to advise a meeting between this Pasha and the commander of the American Mediterranean Squadron, and suspected of being a Greek spy, he departed hurriedly for Washington. His plan adopted, he went to the Levant again in 1825 as interpreter for Commodore John Rodgers [*q.v.*]. The interview took place in 1826 on one of the Ægean Islands, but was fruitful only of presents to the Turk. Distrusted by Rodgers and the United States consul at Smyrna, he returned to America in 1827. Chronically penniless, he importuned Adams for further employment and was about to receive it, when the discovery of obscure but damning facts precluded further aid to one who had been befriended repeatedly, "notwithstanding his eccentricities, approaching to insanity." Less than two months later he died in Washington. English had marvelous ability as a linguist. He is said to have passed as a native Turk with an ambassador of the Porte and to have amazed a Cherokee delegation in Washington by addressing them in their own tongue. Versatile but erratic, he was intellectually shallow and dishonest.

[Samuel Lorenzo Knapp, a friend of English, included a chapter on him in his *Am. Biog.* (1833). Correspondence from his Turkish mission is found in *House Ex. Doc. No. 250, 22* Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 12–20. See also the *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams*, VIII (1876), 62; H. M. Wriston, *Executive Agents in Am. Foreign Relations* (1929); *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. VIII (1864–65); *Daily Nat. Intelligencer* (Washington, D. C.), Sept. 22, 1828.] W. L. W—t., Jr.

**ENGLISH, JAMES EDWARD** (Mar. 13, 1812–Mar. 2, 1890), manufacturer, representa-

tive, and senator, governor of Connecticut, was born in New Haven, one of a family of nine children. His father, James English, was a shipowner, and had been a customs officer under President Jefferson. His mother, Nancy Griswold, came of a family prominent in Connecticut local history. At the age of eleven, James Edward was bound out to a farmer in Bethlehem, Conn., where he worked two and a half years. After this experience he was sent for two years to a private school, and then was apprenticed to Atwater Treat, a carpenter in New Haven. Under the latter's guidance, he became a designer and contractor. On reaching the age of twenty-three, with Harmonious M. Welch, he established a lumber company, English & Welch, in New Haven. He proved to be a successful business man and made money rapidly. With his growing capital he bought the Jerome Clock Company, originally of Bristol, Conn. The company was later merged with the New Haven Clock Company. English also became interested in real estate and banking. His affairs prospered so consistently that by middle life he was one of the richest men in the state. On Jan. 25, 1837, he married Caroline Augusta Fowler of New Haven. She died in 1874, and some years later, Oct. 7, 1885, he took as his second wife, Anna R. Morris of New York. He was chosen representative to the Connecticut Assembly in 1855, and state senator in 1856 and 1858. In 1861 he was elected to Congress, where he entered the group of "War Democrats" supporting the Lincoln Administration. He spoke but few times in the House, and his remarks upon those occasions were quite brief. In 1862 he opposed the issue of legal tender notes, preferring to have the government raise money by taxation (*Congressional Globe*, 37 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 887). During 1863 he spoke occasionally on tariff matters, to secure terms favorable to Connecticut brass and clock manufacturing interests (*Ibid.*, 37 Cong., 3 Sess., pp. 1317, 1320). In 1864–65 he was one of the few Democrats to support the passage of the Thirteenth Amendment. He became governor of Connecticut in 1867, was reelected in 1868, and again in 1870. Perhaps his most outstanding policy as governor was a plan for local option, to give individual towns in the state the right to decide the liquor question for themselves. In the National Democratic Convention of 1868 English received some consideration as a candidate for the presidency. In 1875 he was appointed by Gov. Ingersoll to fill a vacancy in the Senate caused by the death of Orris S. Ferry. Though in politics he professed to be a Democrat of the Jeffersonian type, in reality he was an independent, voting as circumstances seemed to direct, and striving neither for office nor private advancement. He was, however, more business man than politician. Leaving the Senate in the spring of 1876, he devoted the latter part of his life to his private business in and about New Haven. He was a large stockholder in several important companies, such as the New Haven Clock Company, and the Bristol Brass Company. He owned several business blocks in New Haven, including the building occupied by the First National Bank. From his large fortune he gave liberally to deserving institutions, donating at one time a large sum for the improvement of East Rock Park. He died in New Haven at the age of seventy-eight, being survived by his widow, and one son, Henry F. English, who in memory of his parents made a gift of a building for the use of the New Haven Colony Historical Society.

[E. E. Atwater, *Hist. of the City of New Haven* (1887); F. C. Norton, *The Governors of Conn.* (1905); *Proc. New Haven Colony Hist. Soc.*, 1893; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Geneal. and Family Hist., State of Conn.* (1911); *New Haven Evening Reg.*, Mar. 3, 1890.]

J. M. M.

**ENGLISH, THOMAS DUNN** (June 29, 1819–Apr. 1, 1902), editor, politician, playwright, was born in or near Philadelphia, of Quaker stock, descended from an ancestor who settled in New Jersey about 1683. His father was probably Robert English. He attended Wilson's Academy in Philadelphia, the Friends' Academy, Burlington, N. J., and the Medical School of the University of Pennsylvania, where he presented a thesis on phrenology, defending the theories of Gall and Spurzheim, and was granted the degree of M.D. in 1839. During the three years following he read law and in 1842 was admitted to the bar, but, as he wrote later, "I . . . never was lawyer enough to hurt me." His energies were turned more to writing for magazines than to practising his professions. As early as 1839 he had begun to write for *Burton's Gentleman's Magazine*, through which connection he met Edgar Allan Poe, one of the editors, of whom he became an intimate and then an adversary. In 1844, he states in his autobiography, "I was President of a political club, and did a good deal of stumping. I dare say that I was unnecessarily offensive in my remarks at times, and provoked a deal of ill-will." In that year he edited a Tyler daily, the *Aurora*, which failed; and held a political appointment as weigher of the port of New York. About this time he published a poem, "The Gallows-Goers," coarse but vigorous, which was widely circulated in the campaign against capital punishment. In 1845 he tried his hand at editing the *Aristidean, A Maga-*

*zine of Reviews, Politics and Light Literature,* to which both Poe and Whitman were contributors but which failed after six issues. The following year Poe held English up to ridicule in a sketch in his series, "The Literati," published in *Godey's Magazine* in 1846. English retaliated with a card, reprinted in the *Evening Mirror,* charging Poe with forgery. Poe sued Hiram Fuller [*q.v.*], editor of the *Mirror,* and won, but the stir created by this suit did much to becloud the poet's fame for half a century. During the trial English changed his residence to Washington. In 1848, with George Dexter of New York and George Zieber of Philadelphia, publishers, the illustrator F. O. C. Darley, and G. G. Foster, he undertook to bring out a weekly humorous sheet at Philadelphia, the *John Donkey.* "*John-Donkey* was the best humorous periodical that had yet been attempted, labored though some of its wit appears. . . . Its satire was often scurrilous; it attacked Greeley, Poe, and many others. It is said to have attained a circulation at one time of twelve thousand, but libel suits ruined it after it had brayed valiantly from January to July, 1848" (Mott, *post,* p. 426).

From 1852 to 1856 English practised law and medicine at Lawnsville, Va. (now Logan, W. Va.), of which place he was the first mayor. Returning North he settled in Bergen County, N. J. A "Copperhead" in politics during the Civil War, he was elected to the New Jersey legislature from Bergen County and served 1863–64. In 1870 he bought a political magazine, *The Old Guard* (anti-Lincoln), from Chauncey Burr, who had successfully nursed it through seven years, but like his other ventures, it died on Dr. English's hands after a twelve-month. In 1878 he removed to Newark where he lived until his death. For a time he was on the literary staff of the *Newark Sunday Call.* He was elected to Congress as a Democrat in 1890 and served 1891–95, being defeated for a third term. In his last years he was nearly blind. He had married in 1849 Annie Maxwell Meade of Philadelphia, who died June 17, 1899, survived by four children. English died at his home in Newark in 1902.

During his career he published many books—most of which he did not care to acknowledge—began work on a metrical history of America which was never completed but which may have been drawn upon for *American Ballads* (1880), and the *Boy's Book of Battle Lyrics* (1885), wrote more than twenty plays, and was constantly contributing prose and verse to periodicals. "I write poetry," he said toward the close of his life, "because publishers pay me well; publishers pay me well because the public seems to like my themes . . . and so long as I am paid, and no longer, I shall continue to write." As a poet English belonged to "the gnomes and elves of Parnassus" of whose literary by-products George Edward Woodberry remarked: "No quotation could do sufficient injustice to them—they must be read to be properly damned." As a playwright English was notoriously facile and verbose. For Burton he wrote a play in which journeymen printers figured as the main characters. It was written in forty-eight hours, and took eight hours to rehearse. For Oxley, English said, "I wrote a rhyming extravaganza, in which the actors were all to be gigantic frogs." Of his dramas, however, only one, *The Mormons, or Life at Salt Lake,* produced at Burton's Theatre in 1858, was published.

His only bid for lasting literary fame was made on Sept. 2, 1843, when he published in the *New Mirror,* edited by G. P. Morris and N. P. Willis, the engaging poem "Ben Bolt," addressed to a real person of that name. Its charming simplicity attracted composers: the Library of Congress lists twenty-six different compositions to this song; English himself wrote one "entirely for the black keys." In 1848, Nelson Kneass in Pittsburgh adapted a German air and sang the song in the drama, *The Battle of Buena Vista.* In 1894 Du Maurier introduced it into his popular novel, *Trilby.* It was said that the attention paid to English in the House of Representatives was due as much to his authorship of "Ben Bolt" as to any other cause. His daughter Alice collected all his poems except the *Battle Lyrics* in a volume, *The Select Poems of Dr. Thomas Dunn English* (1894), published by subscription. Three years later, another daughter, Florence English Noll, edited his *Fairy Stories and Wonder Tales* (1897), and in 1904 his son-in-law, Arthur H. Noll, brought out a similar volume, collected from periodicals.

[Autobiographical sketch (MS.), in N. Y. Pub. Lib.; autobiographical material in "Down Among the Dead Men," sketches running in *The Old Guard,* 1869–70; Papers of the Superior Court (1846) in the Hall of Records, N. Y.; "Close-up of Poe" in *Saturday Review of Literature,* Oct. 9, 1926; A. H. Noll, "The Truth About 'Ben Bolt' and its Author" in *Midland Monthly,* Jan. 1897; Mary E. Phillips, *Edgar Allan Poe: The Man* (2 vols., 1926), see Index; Hervey Allen, *Israfel* (2 vols., 1926), see Index; *Alumni Register* (Univ. of Pa.), May 1902; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); A. H. Smyth, *Phila. Mags. and their Contributors, 1741–1850* (1892); F. L. Mott, *A Hist. of Am. Magazines, 1741–1850* (1930); *N. Y. Times,* Apr. 2, 1902; G. T. Swain, *Hist. of Logan County, W. Va.* (1927); information from the English MSS. in the N. J. Hist. Soc. obtained through the courtesy of William S. Hunt, Esq., of Newark.]

C.F.S.

**ENGLISH, WILLIAM HAYDEN** (Aug. 27, 1822–Feb. 7, 1896), congressman, Democratic

candidate for the vice-presidency, historian, was born at Lexington, Scott County, Ind., the son of Elisha G. and Mahala (Eastin) English. On his mother's side he was descended from Jost Hite, one of the first white settlers of the Shenandoah Valley. His parents removed from Kentucky to Indiana in 1818, and there Elisha English, a Democrat, took a prominent part in politics, being at different times sheriff of Scott County, a representative and also a senator in the Indiana legislature, and United States marshal.

Young English attended Hanover College for three years, studied law, and was admitted to the bar at the early age of eighteen. The same year, 1840, he was a delegate to the Democratic state convention at Indianapolis. When Tyler succeeded to the presidency after the death of Harrison, he appointed the young Democrat postmaster of Lexington. In 1843 English was elected clerk of the Indiana House of Representatives, and a year later he received an appointment in the Treasury Department at Washington, a position he held until shortly before the end of Polk's presidency, becoming, soon after, clerk of the United States Senate committee on claims during the historic session of 1850. He next became secretary of the convention that framed the Indiana constitution of 1851, and as speaker, during part of the session of the next House of Representatives, played a leading part in readjusting the laws and machinery of government to the conditions created by the new constitution.

In 1852 he was elected to represent the second Indiana district in the Thirty-third Congress. As a member of that body he voted for the Kansas-Nebraska Bill and was one of the few Northern Democrats so voting who survived the next congressional election. He was reëlected for a third term in 1856 and again in 1858. In the latter year he stood with Douglas in opposing the effort of Buchanan and the South to bring Kansas into the Union under the Lecompton constitution, which had been ratified in an election in which the voters of the Territory had not been given a fair chance to express their views. A conference committee became necessary, and as a member of this committee English played a leading part in framing the compromise known as the English Bill. This measure, which ultimately became a law, in effect offered the people of Kansas a bribe of public land if they would ratify the pro-slavery constitution, a thing which, as English had foreseen, they refused to do.

In 1860 he declined to stand for reëlection and in March 1861 retired to private life. He opposed secession, and denied that the election of



a Republican president justified an attempt to break up the Union. In a speech in the House, he warned his Southern associates that his constituents would only "march under the flag and keep step to the music of the Union." Upon the outbreak of war, Gov. Morton offered him command of a regiment, but he declined it. He supported the Union cause, however, and opposed the Knights of the Golden Circle in Indiana.

In 1863 he removed to Indianapolis, and there helped to organize the First National Bank, of which he became president, holding that position until 1877. He played a prominent part in the business life of the city and ultimately became a millionaire. In 1880 geographical and other reasons led the National Democratic Convention to nominate him for the vice-presidency as the running mate of Gen. Hancock. Throughout his life he was interested in scientific and literary matters. While a congressman he was a regent of the Smithsonian Institution, and in later life he was long president of the Indiana Historical Society. For many years he collected material bearing upon the early history of the old Northwest, and ultimately wrote *Conquest of the Country Northwest of the River Ohio, 1778–1783, and Life of Gen. George Rogers Clark* (2 vols., 1896), a book containing much that had never before been published. In 1847, while a clerk at Washington, English married Emma Mardulia Jackson of Virginia. A son and a daughter were born of this union.

[J. P. Dunn, *Commemorative Biog. Record of Prominent and Representative Men of Indianapolis and Vicinity* (1908), pp. 8–18; *Biog. Hist. of Eminent and Self-Made Men of Ind.* (2 vols., 1880), vol. II, 7th Dist., pp. 209–27; J. W. Forney, *Life and Military Career of Winfield Scott Hancock; Sketch of Hon. Wm. H. English* (1880), a campaign biography; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Indianapolis Sentinel*, Feb. 8, 10, 1896.]

P.L.H.

**ENNEKING, JOHN JOSEPH** (Oct. 4, 1841–Nov. 17, 1916), painter, was born in Minster, Auglaize County, Ohio, the son of Joseph and Margaretha (Bramlage) Enneking. His father, a farmer of German descent, disapproved of his son's artistic inclinations and once thrashed him for an ambitious sketch on the freshly painted barn of the homestead. Enneking received his early education at Mount St. Mary's College, Cincinnati, and later studied art in New York and Boston. Owing to eye-strain, he abandoned art for a time, securing an interest in a large tinware manufactory, but business reverses eventually induced his return to painting as his career. During the Civil War, it is said, he enlisted with a Western regiment and served for over a year, being wounded several times. On Oct. 14, 1864, he was married to Mary E. Elliott of Corinna,

Me. In 1873 he began three years of European art study, chiefly at Paris, under D'Aubigny and at the school of Maitre Bonnât where he mastered the grammar of art. Returning to America, he established his home in Hyde Park, but revisited Europe in 1878 for another year of sketching and study in Paris and Holland. He finally opened a studio in Boston, devoting himself thenceforth, for the rest of his life, to landscape and figure painting. He died from pneumonia, at his home in the Hyde Park district, Boston.

Enneking has been called the interpreter of New England in painting as was Edward MacDowell in music. He was a romanticist, intolerant of academic restrictions, an impressionist, luminist, and tonalist whose work expressed emotional freedom and idealism. Remarkable coordination of light, color, mass, and line produced a harmony of result and an elusive manner of portrayal, suggesting what Coleridge called "something between a thought and a thing." His art, despite its varied range, was never obscure or involved, but charmed by its simple descriptive quality, admirably shown in *The Brook,* and his landscapes reflected nature's own quiet poise and strength. Although most prominent as a landscapist, he could paint a masterly portrait, one of his best examples being that of F. B. Sanborn of Concord. He was a medalist at the Paris Exposition, the exhibit of the Charitable Mechanics' Association, and the Pan-American Exposition.

[*World To-Day,* May 1909; Ralph Davol, in *Am. Mag. of Art,* June 1917; W. B. Closson, in *Internat. Studio,* Oct. 1922; *New Eng. Mag.,* Feb. 1909; Jessie B. Rittenhouse, in *Brush and Pencil,* Sept. 1902; *Who's Who in America,* 1899–1900, 1912–13; *N. Y. Times,* Nov. 18, 1916.] J.M.H.

**ENSLEY, ENOCH** (Nov. 8, 1836–Nov. 18, 1891), planter, manufacturer, economist, was born near Nashville, Tenn., the son of Enoch and Mary (Rains) Ensley. His mother was the daughter of Capt. John Rains, prominent in the affairs of middle Tennessee. Ensley was educated at Hardeman's Academy, Williamstown County, and at Cumberland University, Lebanon, and was licensed to practise law, but at the age of twenty he moved to Shelby County and engaged in planting cotton, making his home at first on his plantation, about ten miles south of Memphis, and later in the city of Memphis. In 1872 he became president of the Memphis Gas Light Company, continued as president for fourteen years, and during the same time was one of the organizers of the Union and Planters Bank of which he was a director. He also organized the Tennessee Coal, Iron & Railway Company

Ensley

and was later president of the Lady Ensley Coal, Iron & Railway Company. He was regarded as a pioneer in the industrial development of the South. It is notable that no strike took place in any industrial company of which he was a director.

During his life as a planter, Ensley began thinking deeply on economic questions and formulated ideas of taxation which were far in advance of his time. On Sept. 1, 1873, he published in the form of a letter to the governor of the State of Tennessee a pamphlet entitled *What Should Be Taxed and How it Should Be Taxed.* David A. Wells (*post,* p. 556) says that this pamphlet "set forth certain fundamental propositions in respect to local taxation, and supported them with such homely and clear illustrations as to entitle the essay to a permanent place in economic and legal literature." Ensley commenced by proposing the following rule as the basis for a state, city, or county system of taxation: "Never tax anything that would be of value to your state, that could and would run away, or that could and would come to you." He divided property into two classes, movable and immovable, and he said, "I hold it to be true that immovable property has no value till it is occupied or located upon, or brought to subsist or employ movable property, and, as a rule, the more it employs or subsists, the more valuable it becomes, and the greater the inducements or attractions it offers movable property, the more it will have to locate upon it. . . . To undertake to enforce a very oppressive tax on money is ridiculous nonsense. It is impossible. The Maker of all things has forbidden it, in giving to all things their peculiar nature. He has forbidden an oppressive tax on money, by giving it that easy mobility that it can go in a fortnight from Tennessee almost to the uttermost parts of the world." With the exception of a few advanced thinkers in the State of New York no one in the United States had advocated the exemption of personal property from taxation. That a man not yet forty years of age, who had lived all his life in the country or in what was then a small city, should have had these ideas at all and have presented them so ably indicates a grasp of mind that is rare in any age and in any place.

Ensley was twice married: in 1860 he married Laura Martin, daughter of Judge Abram Martin of Montgomery County, Tenn., who died in 1887, and in 1889 he married Mary Leavenworth Beecher. Two children of his first and two of his second marriage lived to grow up.

[*The Politico-Economic Writings of Enoch Ensley* (1892), printed for private distribution; D. A. Wells,

*The Theory and Practice of Taxation* (1900); Ensley's letter to the Governor reprinted (1900) in an abridged form, under the title *The Tax Question*, with an introduction by Lawson Purdy; *Memphis Appeal-Avalanche, Nashville Daily American*, Nov. 19, 1891; certain information from Mrs. Enoch Ensley.]

L. P.

**ENTWISTLE, JAMES** (July 8, 1837–Mar. 23, 1910), naval engineer, was born in Paterson, N. J., the son of Thomas E. and Fanny (Holt) Entwistle. Educated in the public schools of Paterson and New York City, he joined the 8th New York Regiment in 1861 for three months, but on Oct. 29 entered the navy as a third assistant engineer. He was assigned to the gunboat *Aroostook*, which in May 1862 participated with the *Galena*, *Monitor*, and other vessels in attacking Drewry's Bluff and Fort Darling on the James River, was then sent to the Mobile blockade, where it made several captures of vessels, and later, in 1864, cruised off the Texas coast, shelled Confederate batteries, captured a few prizes, and performed the routine of a blockader. In 1866 Entwistle became a first assistant engineer while on the *Mohongo* of the Pacific Squadron. He was then sent on the trial trips of the *Wampanoag*. performed similar duty on the *Ammonoosuc*, and after a year on the *Nipsic*, was ordered to the Great Lakes to the twenty-five-year-old paddle wheel relic, the *Michigan*. This assignment was followed by duty on the monitor *Canonicus* and by a European cruise under Admiral Worden in the *Franklin*.

In 1877 Entwistle began more important engineering work, acting as assistant inspector of machinery at the Morgan Iron Works, New York, and in a similar capacity at Mare Island. In 1881 he was sent to the Far East and became chief engineering officer of the wooden gunboat *Ashuelot* on the China Station. In 1883 that ship, so rotten from years of service that the naval authorities did not dare to order her across the Pacific for repairs, struck a rock off Lamock Island, between Amoy and Swatow, and sank in twelve minutes. Ten of the crew were lost, and Entwistle, though in no way responsible for the accident, was, with the other engineer officer, suspended for one year for neglect of duty in not seeing his men up from below before leaving the ship.

In July 1887, however, he was promoted to chief engineer and sent to the *Enterprise*, in which he spent a disagreeable two and a half years. The crew was unruly, the ship constantly on the go from one European or African port to another, and the captain—temperamentally unable to cope with the situation—resorted to straitjackets, irons, and other extreme measures. He also reported several of his officers, among them Entwistle, for disobedience. On the return to



New York, the commanding officer was court-martialed and suspended for three years. Entwistle was a witness against him. Following this episode came five years of duty as inspector of machinery, most of it spent at Bath, Me., during the construction of the harbor defense ram *Katahdin* and of the gunboats *Machias* and *Castine*. He then sailed to the Orient on the *Boston*, and on Mar. 24, 1897, reported to Commodore Dewey on the *Olympia* as fleet engineer. In this capacity he served at the battle of Manila Bay, was given the Dewey Medal, and in 1901 advanced two numbers for "eminent and conspicuous conduct in battle." He had already been retired, however, in 1899, and as a participant in the Civil War given promotion of one grade on the retired list. Thus he returned to Paterson with the title, rank, and retired pay of a rear admiral. He had never married, and at his death in Paterson his property was left by will to his sister and cousin but with bequests to his housekeeper, to the Paterson Eye and Ear Infirmary, and to the Memorial Day Nursery.

[Accounts of the wreck of the *Ashuelot* in the *Army and Navy Jour.*, Feb. 28, 1883, and subsequent issues, accounts of the McCalla court martial in the *Journal* of 1890, and obituary, Mar. 26, 1910, in the same publication; *Military Order of the Loyal Legion of the U. S., Commandery of the State of N. Y., Circular No. 27, Series of 1910*; Lewis R. Hamersly, *Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (7th ed., 1902), pp. 62–63; *Army and Navy Reg.*, Apr. 2, 1910.]

W.B.N.

**EPPES, JOHN WAYLES** (Apr. 7, 1773–Sept. 15, 1823), congressman and senator from Virginia, was born at "Appomattox Manor," in the present City Point, near Petersburg, Va. His father, Francis Eppes of "Eppington," the son of Richard Eppes of Bermuda Hundred, married Elizabeth Wayles, half-sister of Martha Wayles Jefferson. The early education of "Jack" Eppes was pursued at home under the direction of his father. In 1791 he went to Philadelphia, under the care of his uncle, Thomas Jefferson, to complete his college course, especially in the sciences, and to study law. He was admitted to the bar in 1794 and attained prominence in his profession in Richmond. On Oct. 13, 1797, he married his cousin, Mary or Maria Jefferson. Only one of their three children, Francis, survived infancy. Several years after her untimely death at "Monticello" on Apr. 17, 1804, he married Martha, daughter of Col. Willie Jones, Revolutionary statesman of North Carolina, but maintained friendly personal relations with Jefferson, whom he consistently supported in politics. His second wife, who bore him several children, survived till the second year of the Civil War and was a pronounced opponent of Southern secession.

Elected to the Virginia House of Delegates in 1801, Eppes served in that body until he was elected as a Jeffersonian Republican to the Eighth Congress (1803). He served in four successive congresses to Mar. 3, 1811. The Virginia delegation included Thomas Mann Randolph, Jefferson's other son-in-law, and John Randolph of Roanoke, the only man who ever defeated Eppes for public office. After the opposition to Jefferson's foreign policy became organized around John Randolph and his group of friends, Eppes was one of the stanch defenders of the administration both on this question and on the Yazoo Compromise. He served on the ways and means committee, and in the second session of his first Congress narrowly escaped a duel with Randolph (Bruce, *post*, I, 365). Some time previous to 1811 he left the ancestral home at "Eppington," where he had lived from childhood till the death of his father, and bought an estate at "Saratoga" in Buckingham County. He soon built a home at "Millbrook" a few miles from "Saratoga" and thus domiciled himself in Randolph's district. This was a part of Jefferson's strategy, and, urged by the latter and his friends, Eppes opposed Randolph in 1811, but failed of election to the Twelfth Congress. In 1813 he was elected to the Thirteenth Congress, defeating Randolph on the issue of the war with England, which the latter had violently opposed. In 1815 he was again defeated by Randolph for the House of Representatives but in the next year was elected to the United States Senate. He served in this body from Mar. 4, 1817, till April 1819, when he resigned on account of failing health and was succeeded by James Pleasants. Despite the insistence of his friends and of the *Richmond Enquirer* he refused to return to public life. He spent the remainder of his days in the care of his estate at "Millbrook" in Buckingham County, where he died and was buried in the family cemetery.

Eppes was a man of polished manners, well-read, and pleasing in address, though a scholar rather than an orator. He was a successful farmer on a large scale, an active citizen in his own county, and a man without enemies, except those of the Randolph connection.

[There is a brief sketch in the *Biog. Directory of The American Congress* (1928). Frequent passing references are found in S. N. Randolph, *Domestic Life of Thomas Jefferson* (1871); W. C. Bruce, *John Randolph of Roanoke* (1922), and in the files of the *Richmond Enquirer*. For genealogical details, see *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, April 1826, pp. 396–97. The Jefferson Manuscripts in the Lib. of Cong. and other repositories contain many of his letters.] J. E. W.

**ERICSSON, JOHN** (July 31, 1803–Mar. 8, 1889), engineer and inventor, was born in the



province of Vermland, Sweden, the youngest of the three children of Olof and Brita Sophia (Yngström) Ericsson. His father was a mine-owner and inspector, a graduate of the college in Karlstad, the principal town of the province, and well educated, according to the standards of his times. From his mother, who was of Flemish-Scotch descent, John seems to have derived many of his stronger traits. As a boy he is said to have busied himself day after day with the machinery of the mines, making drawings upon paper with rude instruments or constructing models with bits of cord or wood, and thus endeavoring to work out and understand the principles of their operation. In 1811 war with Russia greatly disturbed business conditions in Sweden, and after various reverses, Olof Ericsson was financially ruined. Soon, however, he secured a position as inspector on the Göta Canal, a project which was then again occupying the serious attention of the government. He was able to obtain for his two sons appointment as cadets in a corps of mechanical engineers to be employed in connection with the plans of the government regarding the canal. During the winter of 1816–17, at the age of thirteen, John received from some of the officers of the corps instruction in algebra, chemistry, field drafting, geometry, and the English language. His previous education seems to have been acquired primarily by means of tutors or home lessons, after the manner of the times, and there is evidence that he had thus received instruction in the usual branches and to some extent in drawing and chemistry. Under the instruction of the officers, his training in drawing seems to have been unusually thorough and this, together with a natural aptitude for such work, laid the foundation for the remarkable skill at the drafting-board which he showed in later years.

He remained in the work of this corps, with duties of a rapidly increasing responsibility and importance, until he was seventeen, when he seems to have become stirred with military ambition. Leaving his engineering appointment with its future prospects, he entered the Swedish army as ensign in a regiment of chasseurs. He was detailed to do topographical surveying on a "piece rate" basis of pay, and so rapid and effective was his work that he was carried on the rolls and paid as two men in order that his remuneration might not seem excessive. Even this activity was not sufficient to exhaust his energy, and he set about the preparation of a book of plates intended to be descriptive of the mining machinery employed in his day. He devised means and engraved a considerable number of large copper plates, but there were various de-

lays, and he abandoned the project when it became apparent that because of the rapid advance in mining methods the work would be out of date before the printing could be completed. About this time he became interested in the "flame engine." He seems to have been strongly attracted by the possibility of developing an engine which would use heat in some more direct form than the steam-engine, and with superior economy. Absorbed in this new idea, which never left him, he ceased to be attracted to military life and in 1826, obtaining leave of absence, he went to London, strong in the belief that his path toward success was straight and sure.

In London his first efforts were directed toward the development and introduction of his new engine, but many unexpected difficulties arose, among others those connected with the use of coal as fuel. Driven to other activities by the need of making a living, he engaged during the twelve years of his life in London in a series of remarkable pieces of engineering work, which covered a wide field of practise, and in which his genius clearly showed itself, either by way of original invention or by timely improvements and adaptations in the practise of the day. Among the more important of these interests were: the transmission of power by compressed air; the use of centrifugal blowers for boiler forced draft; the development of new types of steam boilers and of surface condensers for marine engines; the placing of warship engines below the water line for protection against shell fire; the steam fire-engine; the design and construction of a steam-locomotive, the *Novelty,* entered in the Rainhill contest in 1829 (in which Stephenson's *Rocket* was awarded the prize, though Ericsson, handicapped by lack of time and suitable track on which to adjust and perfect the *Novelty,* seems to have achieved a result in some ways superior to that of the *Rocket*); various designs for rotary engines; an apparatus for making salt from brine; superheated steam, and engines for its use; a deep-sea-sounding apparatus embodying the same principle as that later developed by Lord Kelvin in his well-known type; a machine for cutting files automatically; the "flame" or "caloric" engine; and finally the screw propeller as a means of propulsion for steam vessels. His various undertakings brought Ericsson prominently before the engineering world in England and he became known for his wealth of invention, his versatility, and the daring and originality which characterized all his work. While he was occupied with these many enterprises, his leave from his regiment expired. He seems to have neglected the taking of steps for its renewal and was placed technically in the position of a deserter. Through friendly intervention, however, the matter was adjusted by restoration, followed by a promotion to the grade of captain, after which he resigned, thus leaving his military record clear of reproach.

Ericsson

To an increasing degree, especially during the second half of his stay in London, he became absorbed in his work connected with the screw propeller as a means of marine propulsion. He did not invent the screw propeller. Like most great inventions, it was a matter of slow growth through the years, to which many contributed. As early as the seventeenth century and again during the eighteenth, the possibility of developing a propulsive thrust in a fluid medium from a helicoidal surface suitably mounted on a shaft was more or less clearly realized. During the first third of the nineteenth century, experiments were conducted by Stevens, Ressel, Deslisle, and others, but none of these seems to have had any lasting result. In 1833, the helicoidal screw was certainly known to the engineering profession as a possibility for marine propulsion, but just as certainly the paddle-wheel was the accepted agent for marine propulsion, and a bold vision was needed to bring forward a substitute differing so profoundly in form and character of operation and seeming so inadequate in size. In this later stage of development and application, preëminence must be given to Ericsson. From his studies of the steam-engine, he had come to recognize the fact that the slow revolutions possible with the paddle-wheel did not favor the improvement of the engine along indicated lines of progress. Likewise his interest in the problem of placing the motive machinery of warships below the water line led him to appreciate the difficulty of achieving any such purpose with the paddle-wheel as the means of propulsion. In 1833–34 he was engaged by a company in London to carry on experiments with submerged propellers. This work was followed by further study and trial, and finally, in 1837, the *Francis B. Ogden* was built for the special purpose of putting the screw propeller to the test. About this time or shortly after, Capt. Robert F. Stockton and Francis B. Ogden, American consul at Liverpool, led Ericsson to consider a visit to the United States for the purpose of building, under Stockton's auspices, a vessel for the United States navy. During this period he built and named for Stockton a screw steamer, the trials of which attracted much attention at the time. At the same period, his propeller was also fitted to a canal boat, the *Novelty,* plying between Manchester and London. It is claimed, seemingly with reason, that

this was the first application of the screw propeller to a vessel actually employed in commercial service.

At length, on Nov. 1, 1839, in pursuance of his plans with Capt. Stockton, he left England for New York, where he arrived on Nov. 23 after a stormy passage. In this visit to the United States he seems to have had two primary objectives, the introduction of his propeller on the canals and inland waters of the country, and the initiation of work on his "big frigate" for the navy, for which he had prepared extended plans in London. When these ends had been accomplished, he expected to return to England. During the remaining fifty years of his life, however, he lived and wrought in the New World and as a citizen of the United States. In 1840, soon after his arrival, a prize was offered by the Mechanics' Institute of New York for the best design of a steam fire-engine. This competition Ericsson easily won, thanks to his own genius and his previous experience in London. In the introduction of his propellers he made excellent progress, especially for boats on the Great Lakes and inland waters, so that by 1844 there were in use some twenty-five vessels with screw propellers. His plans with Capt. Stockton, after some delay, developed to the point where authority was given to proceed with the construction of a steam frigate of about 1,000 tons. Placed in commission in 1844, the U. S. S. *Princeton,* as the first screw-propelled vessel of war, marked a distinct epoch in marine construction. Her principal armament comprised two twelve-inch wrought-iron guns, one brought by Ericsson from England and one designed and built under the direction of Capt. Stockton. At the trials of the ship in 1844 the latter gun exploded, killing the secretaries of state and the navy and some prominent visitors, and wounding many others. This disaster cast a cloud over the name of the *Princeton* and threw an undeserved stigma on Ericsson and all concerned with the ship. It was not until many years afterward that his name was cleared of any kind of reproach or responsibility for this deplorable accident.

In the meantime he was occupied with many projects, chief among them being his renewed work on some form of "caloric" engine, which in 1851 developed into definite design and plans for the *Ericsson,* a ship to be propelled by hot-air or "caloric" engines, as he chose to call them. The vessel was built, but was not a commercial success. The engines were too large and heavy in proportion to the power developed, and the speed was not up to commercial requirements. He also developed designs for "caloric" engines in small

Ericsson

sizes, for ordinary stationary service. During succeeding years several thousand of these were sold for a wide variety of industrial uses.

With the outbreak of the Civil War came the great opportunity of Ericsson's life. In both England and France some beginnings had been made looking toward the development of armored ships. In the South these ideas had perhaps taken stronger hold than in the North. Early in 1861 Stephen R. Mallory, Confederate secretary of the navy, began taking active steps to raise the *Merrimac,* which lay submerged at the Norfolk navy-yard, and convert her into an armorclad. This purpose became known in general terms to Federal authorities and occasioned President Lincoln and his cabinet much anxiety. A board was appointed to examine the situation and to recommend the type of vessel best fitted to meet it. During this period Ericsson had forwarded to the President a memorandum in which he offered to construct for the government a vessel "for the destruction of the Rebel fleet at Norfolk and for scouring the Southern rivers and inlets of all craft protected by Rebel batteries." This communication met with no immediate response, but when the board made its report, Sept. 16, 1861, it recommended the construction of three vessels, among them Ericsson's floating battery. C. S. Bushnell was largely instrumental in bringing Ericsson's plans before the board and later he, with other gentlemen of means, John A. Griswold and John F. Winslow, became associated with Ericsson in this project and supplied the capital needed. The keel was laid on Oct. 25, 1861, and the vessel, named the *Monitor* by Ericsson, was launched on Jan. 30, 1862, and turned over to the government on Feb. 19. The completion of this ship in 100 working days from the date of laying the keel seems now almost an impossible undertaking. It was only by a ceaseless struggle against time and through splendid organization and careful subdivision of the work that any such result was possible. This astonishing speed in design and construction was facilitated, furthermore, by the fact that Ericsson was treading on familiar ground. As early as 1854 he had developed a design for an iron-clad warship which embodied all the essential features of the *Monitor.* This was shown in model to Napoleon III, who was then at war with Russia, the hereditary enemy of the inventor's native Sweden, but it was not adopted. Ericsson therefore needed only to bring to the light again this long-matured plan and to proceed rapidly with the details of its realization.

The battle between the *Monitor* and the *Merrimac,* at Hampton Roads, Va., Mar. 9, 1862

marked a definite epoch not only in the naval operations of the Civil War, but more broadly in the world aspects of warship design and construction. A distinctive feature of the *Monitor* was the circular revolving turret, a heavily armored and protected "gun position." Ericsson made no claim to originality in the concept of an armored revolving turret for his big gun position, but rather claimed, and apparently with justice, that the idea of a revolving armored fort long antedates the nineteenth century. Its possibilities, however, were demonstrated by the victory of the *Monitor*, and the principle of the turret was adopted then by naval designers, and has never been abandoned. In improved form it still appears in the armored and protected big gun position in the battleships and cruisers of modern navies. The *Monitor* was far more than a revolving fort, however. Her guns were few and large instead of numerous and of moderate weight and power; she was built of iron rather than of wood; her freeboard was very low rather than high; she depended solely on steam power for propulsion rather than on sails, or sails with steam auxiliary power; and finally, this power was applied through the screw propeller rather than the paddle-wheel. The break with the past was complete. The warship had been transformed from the traditional ideals as represented by the American frigate *Constitution* or the English *Victory*, into an engineering construction, the forerunner of the great armor-clad battleships of the present day.

The result of the battle brought a significant change in the public standing of Ericsson, whose engineering plans and projects had not always met with a full measure of success, and who was by many considered a dreamer. During the preceding years his relations with the officials of the Navy Department had been often strained, and rarely cordial and satisfactory. The deplorable accident on the *Princeton*, and the commercial failure of the "caloric" engines of the *Ericsson*, had combined with other causes to affect adversely Ericsson's standing before the public and with the government authorities. Now, however, he was hailed on every hand as a public benefactor. He received the thanks of Congress on Mar. 28, 1862, and of the legislature of New York a little later. He was likewise the recipient of numerous testimonials and honors and of such praise as might well have disturbed the equilibrium of a less balanced mind. A considerable fleet of vessels of the *Monitor* type, but larger and with such changes as experience had indicated, was ordered, and during the remainder of the war, Ericsson and his associates were busily

Ericsson

engaged in designing and constructing them. Notwithstanding the enormous burden which this work entailed, with one design after another called for in quick succession, Ericsson found time in which to carry on negotiations with other maritime nations regarding the construction for them of war-ships of the *Monitor* type. For some time after the war, these projects occupied much of his attention, but in most cases they did not meet with the degree of success for which he had hoped. The leading maritime nations preferred to apply his ideas in their own way, rather than to order vessels directly from him. In several cases, however, more or less faithful copies of the *Monitor* appeared in foreign navies, particularly in the navy of Sweden. Turning to a somewhat different type, in 1869 Ericsson designed and superintended the construction of a fleet of small gunboats for Spain, to be used in Cuban waters.

He next gave his thought to the development of a system of submarine attack by the use of torpedoes, which had made their appearance in crude form during the Civil War and began in the seventies to command increased attention. This was indeed only a return to an idea which had attracted his notice as early as 1826. In 1878, however, the time seemed ripe for pushing the project, and he applied himself with is accustomed vigor to the development of designs for a torpedo and of a method of discharging it under water from a gun located in the bow and opening so as to permit the discharge of the projectile. This constituted his so-called *Destroyer* system and was embodied in a boat of that name built in company with C. H. Delamater [*q.v.*], with whom he had been associated in many experiments. The idea was in essence that of the modern torpedo boat or "destroyer," though the means employed were different in detail. There was, however, no supreme test of war, to permit of its demonstration under service conditions, and in the end the *Destroyer* was left on her builders' hands.

Ericsson's work as an ordnance engineer was generally in advance of his day. Following his experimentation with the one gun of the *Princeton* which stood all tests, he gave, in connection with all his naval designs, much study to problems relating to heavy guns and their mounting. Thus the friction recoil mechanism of the *Monitor's* guns was daring and original and was a great improvement over other methods then in use. Again in 1863 he designed and built for the acceptance of the government a thirteen-inch wrought-iron gun. The design was a distinct advance on the practise of the day, but it placed de-

mands on the makers of forgings which they were unable successfully to meet, and in test the gun developed some slight cracks. This failure led to a controversy between Ericsson and the naval bureau of ordnance which prevented further consideration of his design.

His interest in an entirely different field of engineering practise, that of the steam-engine and its improvement, was always keen and at times the subject occupied much of his attention and study. He did important and pioneer work in compounding and the use of superheated steam. From the engines of the *Princeton* in 1844, themselves a bold and striking departure from conventional practise, to the *Destroyer* in 1878, there proceeded from his fertile mind a long series of types and forms often widely differing in character, but, in his opinion, each design being that which was best adapted to the requirements of the particular case. This work brought him into competition with other able engineers, especially in the field of naval construction. Perhaps the most notable instance of such competition was that of the design of machinery for the two naval ships *Madawaska* and *Wampanoag*. These were two wooden frigates, the largest of their day, built just at the close of the war. Ericsson was commissioned to design the engines for the former and Benjamin Isherwood [*q.v.*], chief engineer of the navy, for the latter. A battle royal ensued between two engineers, both of remarkable genius and wide experience. The types of engine selected and the modes of application of the power differed widely in the two designs. The result was a definite victory for Isherwood. Though the *Madawaska* with the Ericsson machinery showed, on trial, a speed superior to that of any warship at that time afloat, the *Wampanoag* with Isherwood's engine, tested a little later, gave a result definitely superior in sustained sea speed. Neither design, however, was of an enduring type and neither perceptibly influenced subsequent practise.

Keen as was Ericsson's interest in the steam-engine and its improvement, he never lost his preference for a form of engine using heat in what he regarded as a more direct manner, which he believed should be able to displace the steam-engine by reason of its superior efficiency. During his early professional life in Sweden he began a long series of efforts to develop the "caloric" engine, or some other form of flame, hot-air, or gas engine, and almost to the last days of his life he continued the further improvement of his hot-air engine in small sizes for commercial and industrial uses. In his later years he gave much thought and study to the development of an engine which would utilize directly the heat of the sun instead of that derived from the combustion of coal or other hydro-carbon compounds.

In addition, during these later years, he investigated a number of widely diversified scientific problems, more especially those connected with solar energy, the nature of heat, gravitation, and tides and tidal energy as possible sources of power. With the advent of electricity, he also gave some attention to improvements in high-speed engines for electric-lighting purposes. In marine practise he did important pioneer work in the development of the surface condenser, the distiller or evaporator for fresh water, the use of fans for forced draft and for ventilation, together with a vast number of elements and details worked out in connection with his designs for the *Princeton*, the *Monitor*, and other vessels of war. Although the design of the *Monitor* as a type of warship and the introduction of the screw propeller were the outstanding achievements of his career, he made many other contributions to the art and practise of the engineering of his day. In all, they make up a most impressive total, and from them has come, in more or less direct degree, a large and significant content of present approved practise.

Vigorous in body and mind, Ericsson was capable of prodigious industry and endowed with persistence, courage, capacity for the deepest concentration, and unlimited confidence in himself. He was little disposed to care for the help or to heed the criticism of others, was at no pains to keep himself informed of the work of other engineers, and not infrequently would reject a device or idea which had been in previous use in favor of something different and original, even though it might involve only some trivial detail of his work. He was distinctly a light shining alone. He could not and would not work with others. He must lead, he could not follow. His general strategy of approach to his problems was to disregard the past and all precedent and then, having in view only the laws of mechanics, the materials of construction, and the special conditions to be met, to proceed to evolve, by mental process, a fundamental solution for his problem. With passing years the art and practise of engineering made many advances of which he took little or no heed and of which he might often with advantage have availed himself. He was a designing rather than a construction engineer, and his special genius lay in new combinations of the elements of engineering practise in such manner as to further the ends in view. His work was all done in his office at his house, and his natural

mode of expression was by way of the drawing-board. Those who have been associated with him have borne witness to the astonishing speed and skill which he exhibited in work of this character. Furthermore, these drawings, when they left his office, were so minute in detail and so carefully checked and verified in dimension and arrangement that as a rule they needed no further attention or correction. A curious and interesting feature of his character was his lack of interest in the work after the design had once left his hands. It is said that he even declined an invitation of the secretary of the navy to inspect the *Monitor* immediately after her fight in Hampton Roads. With this general make-up of character went naturally a quick, imperious temper and a keen sensitiveness to opposition or criticism. In consequence his relations with government officials, with his business associates, and with his friends were not infrequently strained almost to the point of rupture. He had, however, a deep, innate sense of justice and a kindness of heart which led him to forget a cause of offense as quickly as he showed displeasure on what he deemed just occasion. Notwithstanding these asperities of character, he was the recipient of medals, decorations, and honors, and of recognition by learned and technical societies, by governments and organizations of the most varied character, to a degree perhaps which has fallen to the lot of no other who has wrought in the same field of effort. Toward intimate friends and relatives he was kind and generous. For his means, his private gifts were numerous and large and they were made with a whole-hearted generosity. During his later years, his public benefactions were also notable and amounted to no inconsiderable part of his income. Though prudent and careful in many matters, he had little interest in business as such and no capacity for merely "making money." Once he had acquired, through his inventions and business interests, a modest competence, he devoted himself largely to projects remote from the prospect of immediate financial return and lived comfortably on the savings which his work had provided.

On Oct. 15, 1836, in England, he married Amelia Byam, a young woman of fine blood and breeding, the half-sister of the wife of one of his earliest acquaintances in that country. She did not accompany him to the United States but joined him there soon afterward. She was a woman of grace and beauty and Ericsson was proud of her, as she was of his talents. He was too much absorbed in his work, however, to admit the claims of domestic life, and since his wife disliked New York and tired of the isolation in



which she was left, it was agreed that it was best for her to return to her family in England until Ericsson should be able to rejoin her there. In the final event, this opportunity never came and they did not meet again, though he made allowance for her support and continued to correspond with her until her death some years later. Ericsson was active to the last. He died one day before the twenty-seventh anniversary of the naval battle at Hampton Roads, the one event with which in the public mind his name will always be associated. His remains were first interred in New York and then in 1890, following a request of the Swedish government, they were returned with impressive ceremonies to his native land, being conveyed by the U. S. S. *Baltimore,* one of the ships of the new steel navy. Both in the United States and in Sweden the event was marked with every honor and dignity which might serve to indicate the significance and value of his life and services to his adopted land and to the world at large.

[John Ericsson, *Contributions to the Centennial Exhibition* (1876); W. C. Church, *The Life of John Ericsson* (2 vols., 1890); Chas. B. Stuart, *The Naval and Mail Steamers of the U. S.* (1853); John Bourne, *A Treatise on the Screw Propeller, Screw Vessels, and Screw Engines as adapted for purposes of Peace and War* (1867); Geo. H. Preble, *A Chronological Hist. of the Origin and Development of Steam Navigation* (1883); R. H. Thurston, *A Hist. of the Growth of the Steam-Engine* (1896); Frank M. Bennett, *The Steam Navy of the U. S.* (1896); Jas. Nicol, *Who Invented the Screw Propeller?* (1858); *N. Y. Times,* Mar. 9, 1889.]

W. F. D.

**ERLANGER, ABRAHAM LINCOLN** (May 4, 1860–Mar. 7, 1930), theatrical booking agent, manager, and producer, was born in Buffalo of Jewish parents, Leopold and Regina Erlanger, but most of his early life was spent in Cleveland. With practically no education he began his theatrical apprenticeship as cloak-room attendant and call boy at the Academy of Music, and subsequently rose to a position of some influence in the financial management of the Euclid Opera House. For a number of years after leaving Cleveland he traveled as advance agent, and later as manager, for theatrical companies sent out from New York, and came to realize the inefficiency of the existing system of "booking." In theory, operating managers of local theatres were anxious to keep their "time" filled throughout a season; while producing managers in New York were anxious to "book time" so as to provide an uninterrupted succession of performances for their road companies and reduce to the minimum haulage and traveling expenses. In practise, the machinery required to preserve such a delicate balance was lacking; individual agreements between local theatre owners and New

York managers were arrived at haphazardly, and often broken without compunction. The development of a modern booking system with centralized administration was the work in large part of Erlanger and of his partner, Marc Klaw. These two men, who had been thrown together while serving as advance agents on the road, purchased in 1886 one of the small booking agencies in New York and two years later drew up formal articles of partnership. Although during the next few years they made a number of independent theatrical productions and were busy extending their control over a chain of theatres in the South, they owed their increasingly assured position primarily to their activities as booking agents. In August 1896, in association with four other leading managers, Charles Frohman, A. I. Hayman, S. F. Nixon, and J. F. Zimmerman, they organized the Theatrical Syndicate, professedly to bring about certain sorely needed reforms in the booking of shows. The execution of these reforms was entrusted to the firm of Klaw & Erlanger, which was made the booking agency for all attractions presented in theatres controlled by the syndicate. Erlanger, as the more active executive in the firm, came more and more to exercise almost autocratic prerogatives. His office became the clearinghouse for actor, producer and manager. Relishing the endless details of problems involved in the routing of shows over an entire continent, he worked incessantly. Backed by a monopolistic organization, he brooked no opposition from actors or producers. Moreover it has been stated that he was able to give preferential booking to his own productions even over those of Charles Frohman, who was the syndicate member commonly credited with having final jurisdiction over the mass production of shows for syndicate consumption. Erlanger's power rested on the solid economic basis of mounting financial returns to the syndicate and increased financial security to the various elements in the theatrical profession. The scattered idealists who had denounced the syndicate as a commercial monopoly destructive of the art of the theatre, and its members as "adventurers of inferior origin," tried on various occasions to rally, but with little success. The breakdown of the monopoly, when it finally came, was partly the result of a weakening inside the syndicate caused by its inability to furnish satisfactory attractions in sufficient numbers to meet the demands of such a vast chain of theatres, and more particularly the result of the inroads of the Shuberts, a group of rival theatrical managers formerly associated with the syndicate and operating along somewhat similar lines. In spite of the return to a competitive basis, the firm of Klaw & Erlanger continued for many years to hold a dominating position among New York booking agencies. In addition they made a number of productions of their own, and were for several years successfully engaged in the vaudeville business. After the dissolution of partnership with Klaw in 1920, Erlanger continued, as producer and manager, to be one of the outstanding financial powers in the American theatre. Extensive plans for expanding his activities to keep pace with the new era of the talking pictures were interrupted by his death.

[For biographical details see: *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 8, 1930, and Mar. 16, 1930, sec. IX; *Who's Who in the Theatre* (London, 1930), ed. by John Parker; Wm. Danforth, "Abraham Lincoln Erlanger" in *The Green Book Album*, Mar. 1909, p. 541. For the activities of Erlanger and his associates in connection with the Theatrical Syndicate, see: Wm. Winter, *The Life of David Belasco* (2 vols., 1918), vol. II; "The Great Theatrical Syndicate," in *Leslie's Monthly Mag.*, Oct., Nov., Dec., 1904, Jan. 1905; W. P. Eaton, "The Rise and Fall of the Theatrical Syndicate," in *American Mag.*, Oct. 1910; *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror*, supplements to issues of Dec. 18 and Dec. 25, 1897, and Mar. 26 and Apr. 2, 1898; *Washington Post*, Mar. 4, 1906; and scattered material in the volumes of clippings on Charles Frohman, David Belasco, and Minnie Maddern Fiske, in "The Robinson Locke Collection of Dramatic Scrapbooks" in the New York Pub. Lib.] E. M., Jr.



**ERNST, HAROLD CLARENCE** (July 31, 1856–Sept. 7, 1922), bacteriologist, was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, the son of Andrew Henry Ernst, a successful business man and one of the founders of the Horticultural Society of Ohio, and Sarah H. Otis, an Abolitionist and a pioneer advocate of woman suffrage. One of his brothers was Maj.-Gen. Oswald H. Ernst [*q.v.*]. The family had originally come from Germany during the Napoleonic wars, Ernst's grandfather having left his home on account of his strong opinions on what he regarded as unjust taxation.

After preliminary education in Boston schools, Harold C. Ernst went to Harvard College, where he was graduated in 1876. While in college he became a noted baseball pitcher, one of the first to use a curve ball. He subsequently went to the Harvard Medical School, graduated in 1880, and began the practise of medicine in Jamaica Plain, Mass. When Koch's discovery of the tubercle bacillus was announced in 1882, Ernst went to study in his laboratory, where he learned the rudiments of bacteriology. When he returned to America, he associated himself with the Boston City Hospital and the Massachusetts General Hospital. As early as 1885 he began to lecture on bacteriology in the Harvard Medical School, giving six talks and demonstrations to fourth-year students as a voluntary course. This was probably the first course of lectures in bacteriol-

ogy given in a medical school in the United States; his laboratory, at first, consisted of a sort of closet in the medical museum. He met with considerable opposition, but by hard work he convinced his opponents of the value of bacteriology to medicine, surgery, and hygiene. He developed the early sterilizing apparatus at the Massachusetts General Hospital, established an antitoxin laboratory for diphtheria in connection with the city of Boston, and for many years supplied from his own laboratory all the vaccine and antitoxin used by the city, as well as tuberculin for testing cattle.

He took an active part in public affairs, appearing frequently before various committees at the Massachusetts State House in regard to better registration laws for physicians, improved vaccination laws, regulations for the testing of cows and the protection of milk, animal experimentation, and similar public health measures. His commanding presence and obvious knowledge made him an ideal spokesman for the medical profession before the legislators. He served successively as instructor, assistant professor, and professor of bacteriology at the Harvard Medical School, holding the latter appointment from 1895 until his death. He assisted in the planning of the new buildings for the Harvard Medical School, opened in 1900, and wrote a brief history of the School for the dedication exercises. He was one of the founders of the American Association of Pathologists and Bacteriologists, and served it for fifteen years as secretary. He was also a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, the Society of American Naturalists, and many medical associations. He wrote numerous papers and books, especially in relation to his specialty. From its foundation in 1896 he edited the *Journal of the Boston Society of Medical Sciences,* which in 1901 became the *Journal of Medical Research,* Ernst continuing as editor until his death. During the World War he served as head of the Northeastern Division Laboratory, with the rank of major.

Ernst was a tall, large man, with powerful shoulders, of rather stern military appearance and at times distinctly austere. His knowledge, especially of details, made him often impatient, but with it all there was a kindly attitude toward people and life. On Sept. 20, 1883, he married Ellen Lunt Frothingham, a member of a distinguished Boston family. They had no children.

[The best account of Ernst is by Dr. John W. Farlow, in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* vol. LVI (1923). See also S. B. Wolbach, in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.,* LX, 1924–25; *Boston Medic. & Surgic. Jour.,* Sept. 14, 1922; T. F. Harrington, *The Harvard Medical School* (1905); *Jour. of Medic. Research,* Sept. 1923; *Harvard College, Class of 1876, Tenth Report* (1926). For the beginnings of the Harvard bacteriological laboratory, see the article by Ernst in *Harvard Grads. Mag.,* Mar. 1895; also J. C. Warren, in *Boston Transcript,* Mar. 13, 1912. A note in regard to his career in baseball will be found in the *Boston Sunday Post,* Sept. 10, 1922.]

H. R. V.

**ERNST, OSWALD HERBERT** (June 27, 1842–Mar. 21, 1926), soldier, engineer, was the son of Andrew Henry Ernst, who, with his father, John C. Ernst, a government official, emigrated from Hanover, Germany, after the Napoleonic occupation, and settled in Ohio. On a country place near Cincinnati, where his well-to-do father indulged in horticulture, Oswald Herbert was born, his mother being Sarah H. Otis of Boston, whom Andrew Henry married there in 1841. After attending private schools, young Ernst entered Harvard in 1858, and two years later, the United States Military Academy, from which he graduated in 1864 near the head of his class. Commissioned first lieutenant of engineers, he saw immediate service as assistant engineer, Army of the Tennessee, and took part in the battle and siege of Atlanta (July 22), and the battle of Ezra Church (July 28, 1864), receiving the brevet of captain for faithful and meritorious services. He was on fortification duty at San Francisco until 1868, and commanded a company at Willet's Point, N. Y., until 1871. Meanwhile, as an astronomer, he accompanied the scientific expedition of 1870 to Spain, to observe the solar eclipse. From 1871 to 1878 he was an instructor at the Military Academy; from 1878 to 1886 he was in charge of river and harbor improvements in the West; and from 1886 to 1889, he was on similar duty in Texas, where he supervised the important work of digging a deep-sea channel to the harbor of Galveston. He was superintendent of public buildings and grounds at Washington, 1889–93, and superintendent of the Military Academy, 1893–98, having meanwhile reached the grade of lieutenant-colonel of engineers.

In the war with Spain which followed, he was commissioned a brigadier-general of volunteers, commanded a brigade in the Porto Rican campaign, and participated in the engagements at Coamo and Asamante, receiving commendation from his superiors (J. H. Wilson, *Under the Old Flag,* II, 1912, pp. 427–48). Following the cessation of hostilities, he served, 1898–99, as inspector-general in Cuba. He then became a member of the original Isthmian Canal Commission, visiting Europe and Central America in connection with the study of a proposed route; and in 1905–06 was a member of the commission which determined that the Panama Canal should

have locks. He was in charge of river and harbor improvements at Baltimore, 1900–01, and on similar duty at Chicago, 1901–05, submitting an important report on a project to connect Lake Michigan with the Mississippi River. He was promoted colonel in 1903 and was retired from active service by operation of law, June 27, 1906, with the rank of brigadier-general. He was subsequently given the rank of major-general, Nov. 2, 1916. Ernst served as president of the Mississippi River Commission, and continued as such after retirement. He also served as a member of the International Waterways Commission, and as a director of the Panama Railroad. He published a *Manual of Practical Military Engineering* (1873), as well as numerous professional reports, among which were: *Report Respecting Tunnels under the Chicago River* (1904), *Report Upon Survey with Plans and Estimates of Cost, for a Navigable Waterway . . . from Lockport, Ill., to St. Louis* (1905), and *The Preservation of Niagara Falls* (1906). His death from a heart-attack took place in Washington, as he was nearing his eighty-fourth birthday. Interment with military honors was at Arlington (*Army & Navy Journal,* Mar. 27, 1926). He was survived by his widow, Mrs. Elizabeth Amory (Lee) Ernst, whom he had married in Boston in 1866, by two daughters, and two grandchildren.

[An excellent biographical sketch will be found in the *Ann. Report, Asso. of Grads., U. S. Mil. Acad.,* 1926. See also G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.,* vol. III (1891), supp. vols. IV (1901), V (1910); *Who's Who in America,* 1928–29.] C. D. R.

**ERRETT, ISAAC** (Jan. 2, 1820–Dec. 19, 1888), minister of the Disciples of Christ and for many years editor of one of their leading periodicals, was the son of Henry Errett, a native of Arklow, County Wicklow, Ireland. The latter was a student in the University of Dublin when the assassination of his father, William, a stanch Orangeman in a Roman Catholic stronghold, put an end to his schooling. A few years later he emigrated to New York City where he engaged in business and married Sophia Kemmish. Isaac was the fifth of their seven children. When he was about five years old his father died, and his mother soon married Robert Souter, a parsimonious Scotchman, not inclined to do much for his step-children. In 1832 the family moved westward and settled near Pittsburgh. Isaac's early education was obtained chiefly in a bookstore where he was employed, and in the printing office of A. A. Anderson, Pittsburgh, where he worked as apprentice and journeyman. Here for a time he edited a weekly paper, *The Intelligencer.* His father had been active in the Disciples' movement, and Isaac, having been converted and displaying an aptitude for public speaking, was more and more drawn into preaching. On June 18, 1840, he was formally set apart as an evangelist, and in October took charge of a newly formed church in Pittsburgh. The following year, Oct. 18, he married Harriet, daughter of James and Hannah Reeder. Leaving Pittsburgh in 1844, he was subsequently pastor in three Ohio towns, New Lisbon (1844–49), North Bloomfield (1849–51), and Warren (1851–56). In the latter year he joined a company formed to establish a colony in Michigan, engage in the lumber business, and promote religion in that portion of the frontier. The company founded the town of Muir. Errett ministered here and carried on evangelistic work in the country round about. In 1862 he took charge of a new church enterprise on Jefferson Avenue, Detroit, but after two years returned to Muir. From 1857 to 1860 he was corresponding secretary of the American Christian Missionary Society, his duties necessitating numerous trips through the West and South. In December 1860, as agent for Bethany College, he made a tour with Alexander Campbell [*q.v.*], and in 1861 he became co-editor of the *Millennial Harbinger.* He was an active supporter of the Union during the Civil War, visiting camps, making speeches, and even applying for a colonel's commission that he might raise a regiment. From 1866 to 1867 he served as principal of the department of Biblical literature in the Western Reserve Eclectic Institute (Hiram College) and professor of evangelical and pastoral training.

By this time the qualities he had displayed as preacher, organizer, and writer had given him a position of leadership among the Disciples. Accordingly, when early in 1866 the Christian Publishing Association was formed to issue a weekly paper which should honestly and kindly set forth the views of the Disciples, with James A. Garfield [*q.v.*] heading the Board of Directors, Errett was chosen to be its editor. This paper, *The Christian Standard,* was first published in Cleveland; for a short time in Alliance, Ohio, where Errett was president of Alliance College (1868–69); and thereafter in Cincinnati. Editing it with great ability and wisdom until his death, he did much to give direction to the progressive movement in his Church. In 1874 he aided in the organization of the Christian Woman's Board of Missions; in the following year he was one of the founders of the Foreign Christian Missionary Society, and was its president as long as he lived. He delivered the principal address at the funeral service for President Garfield at Cleve-

land in September 1881. During 1884–85 he was one of the editors of *The Disciple of Christ*, a monthly "devoted to Christian living, learning and literature." His publications were numerous. Among them are: *A Brief View of Missions: Ancient and Modern* (1857); a sermon, *The Claims of Civil Government* (1863); *Walks About Jerusalem: a Search After the Landmarks of Primitive Christianity* (1871); *Talks to Bereans* (1872); *Letters to a Young Christian* (1877); *Our Position: A Brief Statement of the Distinctive Features of the Plea for Reformation Urged by the People Known as Disciples of Christ* (1872?); *Evenings with the Bible, Old Testament Studies* (3 vols., 1884–89); *Why Am I a Christian?* (1889); *Life and Writings of George Edward Flower* (1885). After his death, *Linsey-Woolsey and Other Addresses* (1893) was issued.

[J. S. Lamar, *Memoirs of Isaac Errett* (2 vols., 1893); John T. Brown, *Churches of Christ* (1904); Wm. T. Moore, *A Comprehensive Hist. of the Disciples of Christ* (1909); Alanson Wilcox, *A Hist. of the Disciples of Christ in Ohio* (1918); obituary notice in the *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Dec. 20, 1888.] H. E. S.

**ERSKINE, JOHN** (Sept. 13, 1813–Jan. 27, 1895), jurist, was born at Strabane, County Tyrone, Ireland. At an early age he was taken by his parents to St. John, New Brunswick, where his father soon died. The family then moved to New York City and John lived there until he was about fourteen years old, when he returned to Ireland to be educated by relatives. In his eighteenth or nineteenth year he went to sea. He had an inquiring mind and a retentive memory, and from his many voyages he acquired an unusual amount of information concerning the various countries and peoples of the world. This, coupled with extensive reading throughout his life, contributed no doubt to the breadth and tolerance of his character. He loved the sea, but when he was twenty-five lung trouble forced him to abandon so rigorous a life, and, seeking a mild climate, he went to Florida. There he taught school for a number of years and later studied law. He was admitted to the bar at the age of thirty-three, and his success as a lawyer was almost immediate. In 1851 he married Rebecca Smith, a daughter of Gen. Gabriel Smith of Alabama. In 1855 he moved to Georgia where he lived, first in Newnan, then in Atlanta, for the rest of his life.

He strongly opposed secession, but because of his tact and moderation he did not lose the friendship of those about him. To free him of the necessity of engaging in the conflict, Gov. Brown of Georgia gave him a civil appointment under the state government. Immediately after the war President Johnson named him federal judge for the district of Georgia and his appointment was confirmed by the Senate in January 1866. He held this position until 1882 when the state was divided into two federal judicial districts and Erskine was assigned to the southern district. He served there a year when, having reached the age of seventy, he retired.

Erskine served through the Reconstruction period, and in the discharge of his judicial functions he had to declare void the Confederate statutes under which debts due Northern citizens had been confiscated, and to make other unpopular rulings, yet so great was public confidence in his integrity and fairness that he entirely escaped the obloquy then attached to federal office-holding in the South. Moreover, many of his decisions were of practical helpfulness, as, for example, his ruling that the act of Congress forbidding ex-Confederate soldiers to practise law was unconstitutional (*ex parte William Law*, 35 *Ga.*, 286); and he aided in preserving racial purity in the South by upholding the right of the state to forbid miscegenation (Hobbs alias Johnson). None of these decisions of his was reversed. In a case of first impression he decided that the federal legal tender acts were constitutional. The Supreme Court of the United States in another case later held to the contrary (*Hepburn* vs. *Griswold*, 8 *Wallace*, 603), but they finally reached Erskine's conclusion, and reversed themselves (see Legal Tender Cases, *Knox* vs. *Lee* and *Parker* vs. *Davis*, 12 *Wallace*, 457). In 1869 Erskine was urged by the leading members of the bar of Georgia, Alabama, and Florida for appointment to the Supreme Court of the United States to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Justice Wayne. He was a kindly man, with a keen sense of humor, and was widely beloved. There can be little question that because of his fair and sympathetic attitude toward a conquered people he aided in making Reconstruction less irksome in Georgia than it was in some of the other Southern states.

[W. J. Northen, *Men of Mark in Ga.* (1911), III, 169; L. L. Knight, *A Standard Hist. of Ga. and Georgians* (1917), V, 2305; *Memoirs of Ga., Hist. and Biog.* (Southern Hist. Asso., 1895), I, 769 ff.; *Testimonials to the Hon. John Erskine, U. S. Judge for Ga., on his Retirement from the Bench* (1885); "A Beautiful Life," in the *Green Bag*, Apr. 1895, vol. VII. Most of Erskine's decisions were delivered prior to the publication of the *Federal Reporter*, and only four of them are to be found there, IX, 753, 920; X, 451; XII, 207. A number of his opinions are printed as an appendix to vol. XXXV, *Ga. Reports*, pp. 286–365. For obituary, see *Atlanta Constitution*, Jan. 28, 1895.] B. F.

**ERSKINE, ROBERT** (Sept. 7, 1735–Oct. 2, 1780), geographer, was born in Dunfermline, Scotland, the son of Rev. Ralph and Margaret (Simson) Erskine. He received his elementary

education at the Dunfermline Grammar School and was a student at the University of Edinburgh in 1748. Because of the necessity of earning his own living, however, he was soon obliged to interrupt his college course, and it was not until 1752 that his name reappeared on the university rolls. Shortly afterward he left college again and went to London where he engaged in business. Through the treachery of his partner, Erskine became heavily involved financially and was declared insolvent, but because of his excellent character and sincerity of purpose he escaped a jail sentence. Supplementing his meager education by further study, he entered the hydraulic engineering field, invented a centrifugal hydraulic engine and other appliances, and as a result of his success was elected a fellow of the Royal Society on Jan. 31, 1771. Gradually he payed off his indebtedness. In 1770, he was asked to go to America as the representative of a group of British capitalists who had invested money in the American Iron Company, whose extensive mines were located in the region which is now the upper part of Passaic County, N. J. To prepare himself for this mission, he spent several months in making a survey of iron mining and manufacturing operations in Great Britain.

Erskine and his wife Elizabeth, whom he had married during the years of his struggle for success, arrived in New York June 5, 1771. He at once entered upon his duties and proved himself to be a man of excellent capacity and thoroughly devoted to the interests of his employers. As early as 1774, however, he was in active sympathy with the colonists, and in the summer of 1775 organized the men in his employ into a military company. Their services were offered to the Provincial Congress, which commissioned Erskine a captain in the Bergen County militia and exempted his men from compulsory military service in any other company. A little later, when Washington passed through northern New Jersey on his way from the Hudson River, he made the acquaintance of Erskine, and upon learning that the latter was an able civil engineer, well acquainted with the region west of the Hudson, offered him the position of geographer and surveyor-general to the Continental Army. Duly commissioned on July 27, 1777, Erskine began work at once upon a series of maps, depicting the physical features of the country from the Hudson River westerly to Ringwood and from Jersey City to Cornwall. For over three years, Erskine worked zealously for the colonial cause, and his maps, which are still preserved, were important factors in the ultimate



victory. His death, which occurred on Oct. 2, 1780, was the result of an illness contracted while in the field.

[Albert H. Heusser, *The Forgotten General* (1928); *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser., vol. I (1869); *N. J. Archives*, 2 ser., vol. I (1901); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. of the Officers of the Continental Army* (ed., 1914); W. S. Stryker, *Official Reg. of the Officers and Men of N. J. in the Revolutionary War* (1872); Erskine Papers, N. J. Hist. Soc. Numerous references to Erskine and his work are found in the Quartermaster-General's records and also in the pension records on file in the office of the Adjutant-General of N. J.] G. H. B.

**ERVING, GEORGE WILLIAM** (July 15, 1769–July 22, 1850), diplomat, was born in Boston, Mass., the only child of George and Lucy (Winslow) Erving. When Washington captured Boston, the father, a moderate Loyalist, left with his family for Halifax and later for England. The son was educated at Oriel College, Oxford. At twenty-one he followed his father's injunction and returned to the United States.

Samuel Adams furnished him with a letter of introduction to Thomas Jefferson, whose ardent supporter Erving became. On becoming President, Jefferson offered him the post of chargé d'affaires to Portugal, which Erving declined. Jefferson urged upon him the then rather delicate position of consul at Tunis. Instead, Erving accepted the position of agent in London to look after the claims and appeals of American seamen. In 1804, Jefferson transferred him to the legation at Madrid. In the absence of his cousin, James Bowdoin, the minister, Erving became chargé d'affaires. He learned Spanish. He observed and reported in his dispatches the discord in the royal family, the disgrace of Godoy, the arrival of Murat, the crowning of Joseph Bonaparte and the work of the migratory junta. Under the circumstances he could do little to promote American interests. He left Spain for home on Nov. 1, 1809. He reported to Jefferson at Monticello and brought him samples of merino wool.

Madison appointed Erving a special minister to Copenhagen to adjust claims for spoliations. He succeeded beyond expectations. Madison stated that he had never had a more capable and faithful minister. The critical relations with Spain in regard to Florida, the western boundary of Louisiana, and the claims caused Madison to designate Erving as minister to Madrid in 1814. Nearly two years passed before he was received. He then initiated the negotiations which after various shifts between Madrid and Washington culminated in the Treaty of 1819. Erving did not enjoy fully the confidence of John Quincy Adams as secretary of state, yet Adams might have profited by a closer examination of the vigi-

lant and careful dispatches from Madrid, notably that of Feb. 10, 1818, warning Adams of the Royal grants of land in Florida to the King's favorites. For reasons of health and business Erving resigned from the diplomatic service in 1819.

He became a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society in 1822 and presented to it a cabinet of medals struck in Europe in commemoration of leading men and events in America. He translated from the Spanish a part of a treatise by Juan Bautista de Erro, which, with the title, *The Alphabet of the Primitive Language of Spain and a Philosophical Investigation of the Antiquity and Civilization of the Basque People,* was published in 1829. Erving traveled extensively in Europe. He never married. Under the belief that a holograph, a will written in the testator's own hand and without witnesses, was everywhere valid, he left copies of such a will in various places. He died in New York and his considerable wealth was distributed according to the laws of that state governing the property of those who die intestate.

[J. L. M. Curry, *Diplomatic Services of George William Erving* (1890), with an introduction by Robert C. Winthrop, contains a sketch of his official career and also a letter from Erving telling about his ancestry and boyhood. Walter Lowrie and W. S. Franklin, *American State Papers, Foreign Relations,* especially vol. IV (1834), contains many of his dispatches. Several of his letters are found in the MSS. Division of the Lib. of Cong.] C. E. H.

**ESBJÖRN, LARS PAUL** (Oct. 16, 1808–July 2, 1870), Swedish Lutheran clergyman and educator, was born in Delsbo, Hälsingland, Sweden, the son of Esbjörn and Karin (Lindström) Paulson. Orphaned at the age of seven, he was taught to read by his foster-mother, who encouraged him to enter a school at Hudiksvall. Here and in the gymnasium at Gävle he eked out a meager living by singing in the homes of farmers, who rewarded him with gifts of money, candles, grain, food, and clothing. On June 11, 1832, he was ordained to the ministry of the Church of Sweden. His work as curate at Österväla and chaplain on an estate at Oslättfors was marked by a strong strain of pietism and interest in the cause of temperance, which brought him into intimate relations with Sweden's great apostles of temperance and pietism—George Scott, an English Wesleyan missionary stationed at Stockholm, and Peter Wieselgren, a pastor in the State Church—a circumstance that blocked his promotion and gained him enemies who even threatened his life. The spontaneity of Scott's "free church" activity magnified by contrast the formalism and spiritual deadness of the Established Church and caused Esbjörn to long for a field of labor among his countrymen in a land where all creeds had equal opportunity. This longing was finally realized on June 29, 1849, when the *Cobden* put out to sea from Gävle with a party of emigrants, of which Esbjörn was the leader.

Although he left Sweden "on leave" from the Established Church in order to minister to its sons and daughters in the Western Republic, he became the founder of an ecclesiastical organization that bore little resemblance to it except in doctrine. At New York he met Olof Gustaf Hedström, a Swedish Methodist pastor, who urged him to affiliate with his denomination. Esbjörn might have accepted this invitation but for his wife's loyalty to Lutheranism and his own aversion to a church that admitted slaveholders to membership. It was not long after the inception of his work as pastor at Andover, Ill., however, that his experience with Eric-Jansonist, Methodist, Baptist, and Episcopal proselyters hardened him into an uncompromising adherent to the symbolical books of the Lutheran Church.

The Swedish pastor's application for financial assistance from the American Home Missionary Society was granted on condition that the congregations he might organize should affiliate with some American church body. This condition was satisfied when he applied for membership in the Lutheran Synod of Northern Illinois at its first meeting in September 1851, notwithstanding the doctrinal laxity of this organization, which caused him to safeguard his own doctrinal position by a reservation. His untiring missionary zeal, efforts to solicit money, and interest in educating pastors caused his election to the Scandinavian professorship at Illinois State University at Springfield, an institution supported by his synod, in September 1858. Dissatisfaction with the administration of the institution and the doctrinal laxity of the "American" element in the synod led to his "sudden and utterly unlooked for resignation" on Mar. 31, 1860, an act that occasioned the secession of the Scandinavians from the synod and the organization of the independent Augustana Synod at Jefferson Prairie, Wis., on June 5, 1860. Upon the opening of Augustana Seminary at Chicago in the fall, Esbjörn became its first president, a position he held until 1863, when he returned to assume the rectorship of Österväla parish.

He was thrice married: to Amalia Maria Lovisa Planting-Gyllenbåga, who died in 1852; to Helena Magnusson, who died in 1853; and to Gustafva Magnusson, who survived him. Of a kindly disposition, warm-hearted, generous to a fault, and without ostentation and conceit, Esbjörn was impulsive, given to rash statements,

and lacking in sagacity and diplomacy. His pioneer labor, personal influence, and important positions won for him the distinction of being the founder of the Swedish Lutheran Church in the United States.

[Printed and manuscript material in the Augustana College library and in the archives of the Augustana Book Concern at Rock Island, Ill.; Erik Norelius, *De svenska luterska församlingarnas och svenskarnes historia i Amerika* (2 vols., 1890–1916), is a comprehensive history of the Swedish Lutheran Church in America and contains a biographical sketch of the founder. The author was a close friend and admirer of Esbjörn. Both sides of this controversial subject are presented by G. M. Stephenson in *The Founding of the Augustana Synod, 1850–1860* (1927), which cites principal sources, and in "The Founding of the Augustana Synod: Illustrative Documents," *Swedish-Am. Hist. Bull.*, Mar. 1928, pp. 1–52. Important letters from Esbjörn are found in the Wieselgren MSS. in the Gothenburg City Library and in the following periodicals and newspapers: *Helsi* (Söderhamn), Jan. 18, 1850, Oct. 8, 1852; *Missions-tidning* (Stockholm), June 1850; *Lunds Missions-tidning* (Lund), Feb. 1852; and *Bibelwännen* (Lund), Sept. 1852. See also, for a brief sketch, J. L. Jensson, *Am. Lutheran Biogs.* (1890).]

G. M. S.

**ESCALANTE, SILVESTRE VELEZ DE** (fl. 1768–1779), Spanish Franciscan, is known chiefly as a missionary-explorer in New Mexico and adjoining regions about the beginning of the last quarter of the eighteenth century. Concerning his early life, little information is available. It appears that he was born in Spain and that he left there for New Spain in 1768. In the convent of San Francisco in Mexico City, on Feb. 5, 1769, he professed as a Franciscan. For brief periods he served as a missionary in the province of Sonora and at the pueblo of Laguna, in New Mexico. Later he was in charge of the Mission of Our Lady of Guadalupe at the pueblo of Zuñi, where he came to be greatly respected and venerated by the natives. In 1775 he was requested by the governor of New Mexico to make a report concerning the establishment of communication between New Mexico and the provinces of Sonora and California, a land route to Monterey, and the reduction of the Moqui Indians. Accordingly, in company with Alcalde Mayor Cisneros and seventeen mission Indians, Escalante left Zuñi on June 22, 1775, and was gone thirteen days, eight of which were spent among the seven Moqui pueblos and in trying, vainly, to go beyond to the Grand Canyon of the Colorado. A preliminary report of the expedition was sent by Escalante to the Franciscan Provincial, Fray Ysidro Murillo, on Aug. 18, 1775, and a clearer and more extended one on Apr. 30, 1776. In his reports Escalante gave interesting and valuable data concerning the seven Moqui pueblos. Also he recommended that force be used to subjugate and convert the Moquis and that a presidio and

Escalante

a mission be established among them. In letters addressed to Fray Murillo on May 6 and July 29, 1776, respectively, Escalante summarized earlier Christian activities among the Moquis and expressed a favorable opinion upon a proposed reconnaissance of the country between New Mexico and California. After his letter of May 6, he was called to Santa Fé by Gov. Mendinueta, and while there he drew a map of his journey to Moqui.

His second expedition of note had as its objectives the opening up of direct communication between Santa Fé and Monterey, California, and a reconnaissance, with an eye to their conversion, of the Indian tribes living north and west of the Colorado River. In company with eight soldiers and his superior, Fray Francisco Atanasio Domínguez, Escalante left Santa Fé on July 29, 1776. The route followed was in a northwesterly direction from Santa Fé to Utah Lake, near the present Provo, thence southwest for some two hundred miles to Black Rock Springs where it was proposed to strike due west to Monterey. A fall of snow on Oct. 5, however, caused the party to abandon plans to cross the sierras and to return by way of the Colorado River, the Moqui pueblos, and Zuñi to Sante Fé, which was reached on Jan. 2, 1777. "The journey," says Bolton, "covered some 2,000 miles, and lasted five months of almost continuous horseback travel. Its memory is one of the historical treasures of four states—New Mexico, Colorado, Utah, and Arizona" (*post*). Also an excellent diary of the expedition was kept by Escalante and was signed jointly by himself and Fray Domínguez. A map of curious interest accompanying the diary was drafted by a member of the expedition, Capt. Bernardo Miera y Pacheco. Two years later, Escalante, in a notable letter addressed to his superior, Fray Agustín Morfi, gave a summary, based upon extracts of documents then in the Santa Fé archives, of the Pueblo Indian rebellion of 1680 and of events prior to the reconquest of the province by Vargas in 1692. Soon after writing this letter, Escalante left New Mexico and went to the Franciscan College at Queretaro, and his career thenceforth is obscure.

[An English translation of Escalante's letter to Father Morfi is published in *The Land of Sunshine*, Mar. and Apr. 1900; other of the above-mentioned writings are printed in P. O. Maas's, *Viajes de Misioneros Franciscanos á la Conquista del Nuevo Mexico* (Sevilla, 1915), pp. 64–90, 98–133, and in *Documentos para la Historia de Mexico*, Segunda Série, vol. I (Mexico, 1854), pp. 375–558. The following works are useful: H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Utah, 1540–1887* (1889); H. E. Bolton, "Escalante in Dixie and the Arizona Strip," in *The New Mex. Hist. Rev.*, Jan. 1928, pp. 41–72; C. F. Coan, *A Hist. of New Mex.*, vol. I

(1925); Elliot Coues, *On the Trail of a Spanish Pioneer: the Diary and Itinerary of Francisco Garcés*, vol. II (1900); Francisco Antonio López de Figueroa, "Promptuario General . . . de todos los religiosos que han aviado en esta Sta. Prova. del Sto. Evago." (MS., in García Collection, Univ. of Texas).] C. W. H.

**ESHER, JOHN JACOB** (Dec. 11, 1823–Apr. 16, 1901), bishop of the Evangelical Church (formerly Evangelical Association), the son of John and Ursula (Schmidt) Esher, was born in the Alsatian village of Baldenheim. The Esher family originally came from Switzerland. In the spring of 1832 John and Ursula Esher emigrated to the United States with their children and settled near Warren, Pa. After a few years they moved to Des Plaines, Ill., a settlement near Chicago, where John Jacob grew to manhood. In his tenth year he experienced conversion, and very early in life felt the call to preach the Gospel. In 1845 he was licensed to preach by the newly organized Illinois Conference of the Evangelical Association at its first session. He served his apprenticeship as circuit rider in the frontier missions of the Church, crossing the Mississippi River and looking up new preaching places, with Dubuque as a center. He was ordained deacon in 1847 and elder in 1849. On Aug. 8 of the last-named year he was married to Barbara Schneider. In 1851 he was elected presiding elder, and served in this capacity amid great hardships and privations, and with undaunted courage until he was chosen financial secretary of the Plainfield College of the Evangelical Association of North America (later North Western College and now North Central College, Naperville, Ill.), founded in 1861 at Plainfield, Ill. From this position he was called to Cleveland in January 1862 to serve as editor of the German literature of the denomination.

The General Conference, at its session in Buffalo, N. Y., in October 1863 elected him bishop, and he was reëlected to this office by every subsequent General Conference during his lifetime. He was the only bishop of the church between the death of Joseph Long in 1869 and the election of Reuben Yeakel in 1871. He was the first bishop to visit the churches in Europe and he organized the first European conference of the denomination in 1865. He was also the first bishop of the Church to visit the mission in Japan. Accompanied by Mrs. Esher he toured around the world in 1884–85 and presided at the sessions of the European conferences on the way home. In 1886 he published the story of this tour in a German volume entitled *Ueber Laender und Meere: Meine Reise um die Welt.* From the beginning of Esher's administration there had been considerable opposition to his principles and policies. During the decade of the eighties this opposition increased, and in 1891 resulted in a division, the anti-Esher minority withdrawing to form three years later the United Evangelical Church—a separation terminated in 1922 when the two bodies merged in the Evangelical Church.

In 1893 Esher again visited Japan, and organized the Japan Annual Conference. During the quadrennium following 1895, at the special request of the General Conference, he wrote his work on systematic theology, entitled *Christliche Theologie* (Evangelical Publishing House, Cleveland, 1898). This task he performed while at the same time attending his quota of Conference sessions and meeting his administrative duties with fidelity despite his advancing years. He was orthodox in his theology and firm in his convictions. His sermons were carefully prepared and fervently delivered, making a remarkable impression upon his audiences. Many hundreds were converted and added to the Church through his ministry. He was a man of unusual executive ability and administrative skill and during his episcopacy stamped his own peculiar genius and personality upon his denomination.

[Sources for Esher's life are: his manuscript Journals; Wm. Horn, *Life and Labors of Bishop Esher* (1907); S. P. Spreng, "Hist. of the Evangelical Asso.," in vol. XII of the Am. Church Hist. Series; R. Yeakel, *Hist. of the Evangelical Asso.* (1895); and files of the denominational periodicals, *Der Christliche Botschafter* and the *Evangelical Messenger*. A. Stapleton, *Annals of the Evangelical Asso. of North America and Hist. of the United Evangelical Church* (1900), gives an account of the schism from the minority's point of view.] S. P. S.

**ESPEJO, ANTONIO DE** (fl. 1581–1583), Spanish merchant in Mexico, has a place in United States history because of his discoveries in New Mexico. In the forty years following the famous exploration by Francisco Vázquez de Coronado in that region, 1540–42, the mining frontier progressed northward, and in 1581, from the mining center of the San Bartolomé Valley, Friar Agustín Rodríguez, a Franciscan lay brother, went forth to make conversions. He was escorted by Francisco Chamuscado and eight other soldiers; two other Franciscans, Francisco López, and Juan de Santa María, went also. The latter was killed by Tanos Indians while attempting to return alone to the south. When the soldiers returned on Jan. 31, 1582, they left López and Rodríguez at Puaray (in Tiguex) to found a mission. The Franciscan Order, disturbed for the safety of the two zealots, sent a relief expedition to bring them back, and Antonio de Espejo —who was visiting at the time in the Valley of San Bartolomé—turned prospector, invested of his wealth in the investigations, which had been

approved by a local alcalde, and became leader of the relief party. With him went Fray Bernardino Beltrán and fifteen soldiers. They left San Bartolomé on Nov. 10, 1582, taking 115 horses and mules. Going down the Conchos River to its affluence with the Rio Grande, Espejo passed through the Jumanos territory into the region of the Pueblo Indians. At Puaray they learned that the friars they had come to rescue had already been killed; hence the leader, with the friar conforming, turned to prospecting. They visited first the buffalo plains to the east, and then several of the pueblos on the Rio Grande and its tributaries. Going then westward to Ácoma and Zuñi, they encountered four Christian Mexican Indians left behind by Coronado. Thence Espejo went westward in quest of a reputed lake of gold, which eluded him, though the Moquis gave him four thousand cotton blankets, and rich ores were found farther west in the vicinity of the present Bill Williams Fork.

In the meantime Beltrán, waiting at Zuñi, decided to return to San Bartolomé while Espejo continued prospecting. The latter visited again to the eastward among the Queres, Ubates, and Tanos, finding ores. From the Tanos he turned homeward down the Pecos, being escorted to the Conchos by Jumanos Indians, and reached San Bartolomé on Sept. 20, 1583. The explorations of Rodríguez and Espejo were actually more important than Coronado's in extending the area of Spain. The reports of mineral wealth in the north brought back by these parties of prospectors fanned frontier interest into excitement, and served as the basis of several attempts at occupation, culminating in the real conquest of New Mexico under Juan de Oñate.

[Accounts by Espejo himself are printed in two places in *Colección de documentos inéditos relativos al descubrimiento, conquista y organización de las antiguas posesiones Españolas de America y Oceania*, XV (Madrid, 1871), 102–26 and 163–89. They were compared and edited, with accompanying letters by Espejo, in an English translation by H. E. Bolton, *Spanish Exploration in the Southwest, 1542–1706* (1916), pp. 161–95; see also Bolton's *Spanish Borderlands* (1921). The exploit was carefully studied in H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Arizona and New Mexico* (1889), pp. 80–91, with copious annotation from the sources; there are summaries in G. P. Hammond, *Don Juan de Oñate and the Founding of New Mexico* (1927), and G. P. Hammond and A. Rey, *Expedition into New Mexico made by Antonio de Espejo 1582–83*, etc. (1929). A brief relation of the journeys of Rodríguez and Espejo was printed in Richard Hakluyt, *The Principal Navigations . . .*, III (1600), 383–96, in Spanish and English. See also the MacLehose edition of Hakluyt (1915), IX, 169–204. The only known copy of this voyage in the first edition of 1587 is in the Huntington Library. A verbatim reprint was privately issued with preface by F. W. Hodge, London, 1928.] H. I. P.

**ESPY, JAMES POLLARD** (May 9, 1785–Jan. 24, 1860), educator and meteorologist, was born in Pennsylvania, the son of Josiah and Elizabeth (Patterson) Espy. Many of his relatives during colonial times and later lived in Bedford. The family was of Huguenot origin and the original spelling of the name was Espie. While James, the youngest son, was still an infant his father moved to the Blue-Grass region of Kentucky, and thence, a few years later, to the Miami Valley, Ohio. James remained with his oldest sister who had married and was living at Mount Sterling, Ky. When about eighteen, he entered Transylvania University at Lexington, Ky., from which he graduated in 1808. He then went to Xenia, Ohio, where he taught school and studied law. During the years 1812–17 he was principal of the Academy at Cumberland, Md. He next taught mathematics and the classics in Philadelphia, part of the time at the Franklin Institute. About 1835 he began to devote his whole time to lecturing on and studying meteorological problems, especially his theory of storms. This theory, erroneous in respect to the mechanism of the storm, is sound in that part which attributes precipitation to the upward movement and consequent expansion and cooling of moist air. It was a great contribution to our knowledge of the physical processes of the atmosphere and deservedly brought much renown, and the pleasing title "Storm King," to its author. In 1836 it won the Magellanic Prize of the American Philosophical Society, and it brought an invitation to explain it in person, which he did in 1840, before the British Association for the Advancement of Science, and the French Academy of Sciences. However, there was stress, too, for it involved him in many discussions, some of which, owing to his positive opinions, were not strictly impersonal. In 1841 he published his *Philosophy of Storms*. In 1842 the United States Congress appointed him meteorologist to the War Department, and later, 1848, also meteorologist to the Navy Department. In this capacity he established a series of daily weather observations, compiled weather maps, traced the progress of storms, and submitted in 1843 the first annual weather report. In 1852 Congress directed him to continue his work in connection with the Smithsonian Institution, which had already undertaken the collection of meteorological data.

Espy's chief contribution to the science of meteorology was his convectional theory of precipitation, and his greatest addition to practical meteorology the institution of telegraphic bulletins giving knowledge at one place of the current state of the weather at various and widely different localities, thus laying the foundation of weather forecasting.

While teaching at Cumberland, Md., he was married in 1812, to Margaret Pollard who shared to the fullest his enthusiasm and encouraged him on all occasions in his scientific work. She was delicate, however, and died in 1850. They had no children. At the time of his marriage he took "Pollard" as his middle name. In his earlier life, Espy was an orthodox Calvinist, but later abandoned the doctrine of eternal punishment as inconsonant with the concept of an infinitely loving and merciful God. Possibly his eminently sociable disposition urged his philosophy to this happier conclusion. He died in Cincinnati, in his seventy-fifth year.

[Mrs. L. M. Morehead, *A Few Incidents in the Life of Prof. James P. Espy* (1888); *Report, Internat. Meteorological Cong.*, 1893, Pt. II, pp. 305–16, printed also in *U. S. Dept. of Agric., Weather Bureau Bull.*, No. 11, p. 305 (1894); *Ann. Report of the Board of Regents of the Smithsonian Institution . . . for the Year 1859* (1860), pp. 108–11; F. M. Espy, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Espy Family in America* (1905).] W.J.H.

**ESTABROOK, JOSEPH** (Dec. 7, 1793–May 18, 1855), teacher, college president, son of Hobart and Anna (Hyde) Estabrook, was born in Lebanon, N. H., and died in Anderson County, Tenn. He was the grandson of Joseph Estabrook, a Revolutionary soldier, and the great-grandson of Nehemiah Estabrook, who moved to Lebanon from Mansfield, Conn. Destined, he thought, for the ministry, he completed his course at Dartmouth College in 1815 and began the study of theology at Princeton. An affection of the voice caused him to change to pedagogy, and from 1817 to 1824 he lived at Amherst, four years as president of the academy and four years as professor of Latin and Greek in the college. Here in 1823 he was married to Nancy Dickinson. As a teacher he was more successful with young boys than with college students, and when at last he went away he left with the citizens of the little town a memory which, it would seem, made up in color for anything it lacked in probity. He was given to elegant ruffles and fine boots, to the prodigious use of snuff, to shooting even on Fast-day, and, capping all, to dreams which told him faithfully how to win $5,000 by lottery. Probably because of his bronchial trouble, in 1824 he went South. For a while he conducted a school for young ladies in Staunton, Va., and afterward a similar school in Knoxville, Tenn. Then he was president of the school in Knoxville—East Tennessee College, 1834–40, and East Tennessee University, 1840–50—which later became the University of Tennessee. During the period from 1826 to 1857 this school was almost entirely under the direction of New Englanders. Neither its other executives imported from Estabrook's section of the country, however, nor the indigenous ones who were at times wedged into the administration, brought it to the pitch of attainment that—with its all-Dartmouth faculty—it maintained throughout the forties. In spite of this success, for some reason he determined to withdraw from public life, and to retire to a place in Anderson County about twenty-five miles distant from Knoxville. There he set out to produce salt by boring into the earth till he could obtain salt water. All his time and much of the money he had accumulated were devoted to this end and it was generally believed throughout the spring before his death that the undertaking was just short of success.



[W. S. Tyler, *Hist. of Amherst Coll.* (1873); Hamilton Child, *Gazetteer of Grafton County, N. H.* (1886); L. S. Merriam, *Higher Education in Tenn.* (1893); E. T. Sanford, *Blount Coll. and the Univ. of Tenn.* (1894), which refers to Moses White, *Early Hist. of the Univ. of Tenn.* (1879); M. D. Bisbee, *Gen. Cat. of Dartmouth Coll. 1769–1900* (1900); C. A. Downs, *Hist. of Lebanon, N. H.* (1908); Thomas Hills, *Three Ancient Cemeteries in N. H.* (1910).] J.D.W.

**ESTAUGH, ELIZABETH HADDON** (*c.* 1680–Mar. 30, 1762), founder of Haddonfield, N. J., was the elder of the two daughters of John Haddon, a well-to-do anchorsmith of Southwark, England, and Elizabeth Clark, his wife. Her parents were loyal members of the Society of Friends; her father had more than once been fined for his stubborn persistence in attending meeting. In 1698 John Haddon bought from a Quaker neighbor a tract of 500 acres in western New Jersey, intending to emigrate with his family; but circumstances prevented, and in 1701 Elizabeth herself, then in her twenty-first year, was moved to emigrate, "in order to provide a home in the wilderness for travelling Ministers" (*Journal of the Friends Historical Society of London,* vol. XIII, 1916, p. 46). With sturdy faith in the inner light she set out, accompanied by a housekeeper and several men-servants—all Friends—for "Haddonfield," where the original proprietor, John Willis, had erected one or two simple buildings. During the first winter her house became, as she had purposed, a regular stopping-place for Friends traveling from one meeting to another. Before the commencement of her second winter in America she had married, on "the first of Tenth Month" 1702, John Estaugh of Kelvedon, Essex, a young preacher some four years her senior, who had been in America for two years. "In the forepart of his time," Elizabeth wrote many years later, "he traveled pretty much; but in the latter . . . his Good Master, that requires not Impossibilities of his Servants, favored him with being very easy

at home; where, through Mercy, we lived very comfortably; . . . few, if any, in a married state ever lived in sweeter Harmony than we did." While John was traveling in the interest of religion, acting as agent for the Pennsylvania Land Company of London, and caring for the American affairs of his increasingly wealthy father-in-law, Elizabeth managed the plantation, ministered to the sick in the vicinity, and fulfilled her vocation of hospitable hostess. In 1713 she built a new house of native brick, "Haddon Hall of Haddonfield," which stood till 1842. It was furnished with fine pieces sent from London by John Haddon, and stood in a garden which was planted with yew and box, and whose walks were paved with English brick. At Haddonfield a village grew up and a Monthly Meeting was established; Elizabeth served as clerk of the Women's Meeting for over fifty years. In 1742, while making a religious visit to Tortola, John Estaugh died. A blank page between entries in the minute-book of Haddonfield Women's Meeting commemorates the time when Elizabeth received the news of his death. She wrote a "Testimony" to his memory, which appeared in the little volume *A Call to the Unfaithful Professors of Truth: Written by John Estaugh in his Lifetime; and now Published for General Service* (1744), printed by Benjamin Franklin in Philadelphia.

For twenty years after her husband's death Elizabeth lived on at Haddonfield. "Her heart and house were open to her friends . . . well knowing the value of friendship, [she] was careful not to wound it herself, nor encourage persons in whispering and publishing the failings, or supposed weaknesses of others" (*Piety Promoted,* IV, 419). She had no children of her own, but had adopted Ebenezer Hopkins, the son of her sister Sarah, and in her old age was surrounded by grandnieces and grandnephews. In 1762, after three months of illness bravely borne, she died "as one falling asleep, full of days, like a shock of corn fully ripe" (Testimony of Haddonfield Monthly Meeting).

[Hannah J. Sturge, *Fragmentary Memorials of John and Elizabeth Estaugh* (1881), contains the Testimony of Haddonfield Meeting, which is also the basis for the sketch in *Piety Promoted . . . A New and Complete Ed.*, vol. IV (1854). See also S. N. Rhoads, in *Bull. Friends' Hist. Soc. of Phila.*, June 1909, and in *Notes on Old Gloucester County, N. J.*, ed. by F. H. Stewart, I (1917), 293; *The Two Hundredth Anniversary of the Settlement of Haddonfield, N. J.* (1913); *Am. Hist. Record* (Phila.), Aug. 1873; *Garden Mag.*, July 1912; *New Era Mag.*, Nov. 1920; *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 3 ser., VI (1909–10), 149; VII (1912–13), 103. The basis for the accounts of Elizabeth's early life and courtship given by Mary Agnes Best in her *Rebel Saints* (1925) and by Longfellow in ser. 3 of the "Tales of a Wayside Inn" (*Aftermath,* 1873) is "The Youthful Emigrant," by Lydia Maria Child, in her *Fact and Fiction* (1846); but Mrs. Child's sources for much picturesque detail are unknown.]

E. R. D.



**ESTERBROOK, RICHARD** (Feb. 21, 1813–Oct. 11, 1895), manufacturer, was born in Liskeard, county of Cornwall, England, of Flemish ancestry, the son of Richard and Anna (Olver) Esterbrook. His father was financially interested in tin-mining. He provided his son with a liberal education and immediately upon the completion of his course launched him in a business career by purchasing a shop in Liskeard where young Richard established a stationery business. The enterprise prospered, and he invested his profits in the local tin-mining industry, which, in turn, in the course of a few years yielded him a considerable fortune. He thereupon gave up the stationery business, purchased a home and two farms in the neighborhood of Liskeard, and for upwards of twenty years lived the life of a gentleman farmer. Meanwhile his son, Richard Esterbrook third, had emigrated to Canada and with an uncle begun the manufacture of steel pens. They were unsuccessful, however, and went to Philadelphia where they undertook the enterprise a second time. Their efforts there were unfruitful also, and in 1858 young Esterbrook prevailed upon his father to come to Philadelphia and invest his fortune with them. Bringing with him a corps of skilled workmen whom he had selected in Birmingham, Esterbrook successfully organized the pen company which now bears his name. A few years after his arrival he bought the old water-pumping plant of the city of Camden and it thereupon became the nucleus of the pen factory which has since grown on this site. In his organization, Esterbrook made the wise selection of his own son for general sales manager, and the latter by his genial personality and extraordinary salesmanship succeeded in establishing with the trade a wide distribution of the pens. As is often the case with infant industries —and especially those without an overabundant supply of capital—Esterbrook's company ran into financial difficulties about 1875. Esterbrook, however, had already gained the reputation of a man who always kept his promises, and his largest creditor, who supplied the steel, volunteered to continue to furnish on credit that much-needed raw material as long as necessary. This offer prevented the complete collapse of the business; Esterbrook secured whatever credit he required; and the Esterbrook factory has continued to grow ever since and is to-day (1930) the largest and most modern establishment in the United States for the manufacture of steel pens. From the day of its founding until his death, Esterbrook

continued actively as president of the company. He had the faculty in the selection of his employees that resulted in the creation of an organization in which each individual felt himself part of a large family gathered under one roof. Like all of his ancestors, Esterbrook was an orthodox Friend and was a minister of that society both in Philadelphia and Camden. He married Mary Date of Tavistock, England, in 1835, who with a son and a daughter survived him at the time of his death in Camden.

[Wm. B. Estabrook, *Geneal. of the Estabrook Family* . . . (1891); C. S. Boyer, *The Span of a Century: A Chronological Hist. of the City of Camden 1828–1928* (n.d.); obituary in *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Oct. 12, 1895; U. S. Nat. Museum Records, which include information from Mr. J. H. Longmaid, president of the Esterbrook Steel Pen Mfg. Co., and a grandnephew of Richard Esterbrook.] C. W. M.

**ESTERLY, GEORGE** (Oct. 17, 1809–June 7, 1893), inventor, manufacturer, was born and brought up on his father's farm in Plattekill, Ulster County, N. Y. He sprang from English and German ancestry and was the son of Peter and Rachel (Griffith) Esterly. After receiving a common-school education in Plattekill, he continued with his father both at his birthplace and at Rochester, N. Y., until 1832. During that year he married and moved to Detroit, Mich., where for five years he was engaged in the dairy and provision business, extending his territory by personal peddling as far as Heart Prairie and Janesville, Wis., and in 1843 settled there and began farming. His first harvest of 200 acres of wheat was without any profit to himself because of the fact that farm help was scarce and all operations had to be executed by hand. This was his stimulant for invention, and after a year of experimentation, on Oct. 2, 1844, he patented a horse-pushed harvester or "header," which proved to be the first successful American harvesting machine. It had a wide reel revolving on a horizontal axis, mounted on a box on wheels, which swept the heads of grain against a knife blade, also placed horizontally. The heads fell into the box back of the knife and just in front of the horses, which were hitched to the rear. At the second annual fair of the Chicago Mechanics Institute, held in 1848, Esterly exhibited this machine, with C. H. McCormick [*q.v.*] as his only competitor, and won a gold medal "for the best harvester." Shortly thereafter he contracted with several manufacturers to make his machine and was thus definitely launched in the agricultural-machinery business. He continued to ply his inventive talents, patenting a mowing machine, a plow, a hand-rake reaper, and the first sulky cultivator between



1854 and 1856; a seeder in 1865; and a self-rake reaper in 1870. In 1858 he erected his own manufacturing plant at Whitewater, Wis., taking in his son as partner in 1872, and incorporating the business in 1884. It continued to thrive, concentrating its effort on twine binders and mowers and building up a large export trade, until in 1892 the plant was moved to Minneapolis, Minn., and the enterprise was ruined in the great panic of that time. Outside of his business Esterly was particularly interested in the national currency question. He published a pamphlet in 1874, entitled *A Consideration of the Currency and Finance Question,* and the following year a second one, *A Plan for Funding the Public Debt, and a Safe Return to Specie Payment.* He was married three times: first, on Mar. 4, 1832, to Jane Lewis, who was the mother of his seven children; second, after her death, to Mrs. Amelia Shaff Hall in March 1855; and third, in May 1884, to Caroline Esterly, who with his son and four daughters survived him. His death occurred at Hot Springs, S. Dak.

[L. H. Bailey, *Cyc. of Am. Agric.* (1909), vol. IV; "Evolution of Reaping Machines," *U. S. Dept. of Agric., Office of Experiment Stations, Bull. No. 103* (1902); Prosper Cravath and Spencer S. Steele, *Early Annals of Whitewater, 1836–1867* (1906); R. L. Ardrey, *Am. Agric. Implements* (1894); Patent Office Records; U. S. Nat. Museum correspondence.] C. W. M.

**ESTES, DANA** (Mar. 4, 1840–June 16, 1909), publisher and traveler, was the son of Joseph and Maria (Edwards) Estes, and a descendant on the paternal side of one of the early English settlers of Maine. His mother was of Scotch-Irish ancestry. He was born in Gorham, Me. In 1855 he went to Augusta, where he became a clerk in a general wholesale and retail country store. Going to Boston in 1859, and making his home there for the rest of his life, he entered the book business, for which he had had so great a liking since early childhood that he had made it the goal of his ambition, and thenceforward it became his life-work. At the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted in the 4th Battalion Rifles, which became the nucleus of the 13th Massachusetts Infantry, and during the second battle of Bull Run he was disabled by wounds that incapacitated him for further service. Association with various bookselling and publishing houses in Boston followed his recovery, and in partnership with Charles E. Lauriat he eventually established the firm of Estes & Lauriat, devoting himself to the wholesale and manufacturing part of the business, while Lauriat was in active charge of the retail trade of the firm. Their bookstore stood for many years on Washington St., opposite the Old South Meeting House. They were among

the earliest booksellers and publishers in the United States to bring to American readers the works of standard European writers, especially of historians and novelists. Among their other specialties, due largely to Estes's energy, was the publication of travel and adventure stories for young readers, notably the Zigzag Journey Series by Hezekiah Butterworth, the Vassar Girl Series by Elizabeth Williams Champney, and the Knockabout Club Series by C. A. Stephens. While he did practically no writing for publication, he edited a series of volumes entitled *Half-Hour Recreations in Popular Science* (1871–79), and he compiled several volumes of juvenile and standard poetry. He had many diversified interests, being an enthusiastic yachtsman and the owner of both a sailing and a steam vessel. He was also an active member of the Browning Society, and a leader in the movement of international copyright. Some years after the publishing part of the business had been removed to the Estes Press Buildings, erected through his enterprise on Summer Street Extension, the partners separated, and he established the new firm of Dana Estes & Company. His business brought him not only the acquaintance but the personal friendship of many eminent men of letters both in America and in Europe. For years he was a great traveler, making extended tours of Europe, Asia, and Africa, becoming a member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and during his tours collecting valuable archeological antiquities, some of which were presented by him to the Peabody Museum at Cambridge and to Bowdoin College. He was first married on Apr. 11, 1867, to Louisa S. Reid, by whom he had three sons, and second, on Nov. 10, 1884, to Grace D. Coues Page.

[Chas. Estes, *Estes Genealogies* (1894); Richard Herndon, *Men of Progress . . . State of Me.* (1897); *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; *Boston Transcript*, June 16, 1909; personal information from members of the family.] E. F. E.

**ESTEY, JACOB** (Sept. 30, 1814–Apr. 15, 1890), pioneer American organ manufacturer, was the son of Isaac Estey and Patty Forbes. His father, offspring of an English family which had settled in Sutton, Mass., early in the nineteenth century removed to Hinsdale, N. H., where Jacob was born. He had accumulated money, but soon lost it all as a contractor for public roads. As a result, at the age of four, Jacob was adopted by a neighbor farmer named Shattuck. Frequent beatings and chores so surfeited him that, deaf to the call of the soil, he ran off at the age of thirteen, made his way to Worcester, Mass., and managed to secure a common-school education and two years of study at an academy

Estey

while learning the plumbing trade. In 1834 he walked (to save coach-hire) from Worcester to Brattleboro, Vt., where he established himself as a plumber and, in 1837, married Desdemona Wood, a farmer's daughter. In 1850, when the excitement incident to the discovery of gold in California swept the country, Estey saw better opportunities at home. He invested his savings in a small melodeon-manufacturing shop in Brattleboro. Thenceforward his story is one of the gradual development of a great American industry through Yankee grit and intelligence. The original American reed-organ, known as the melodeon or melodium, had been a development of the *orgue expressif* invented by the Frenchman Brenié, in 1810; yet by 1850 American makers were already using Debaine's improved *harmonium* (invented 1840) as a "melodeon" model. The melodeon had become a popular family instrument, and with increasing population came an increasing demand for it. Jacob Estey hawked his instruments in person, driving his pedler's wagon loaded with melodeons across the country to New York, as well as through the New England states and over the boundary into Canada. With him went a boy who could play the hymn-tunes whose simple harmonies sold his wares. Since currency was scarce in the country districts through which he passed, he took his payment in kind—cheese, butter, farm produce, cattle, and, in Canada especially, horses.

Undaunted by the burning of his little shop in 1857, he secured capital, took in Levi Knight Fuller as a partner, and resumed melodeon building the following year. In 1860 the new firm took the name of The Estey Organ Company. Estey's organ business grew with great rapidity after 1870, and by 1890 was reputed the largest of its kind in the world, with branch agencies in leading European cities, and in South America, Asia, Australia, and Africa. In 1852 the shop employed six workmen and its total value was estimated at $2,700; before the end of the century the firm's output was 1,800 organs a month, and Estey "Cottage Organs" were exported to every part of the globe. In 1885 the Estey Piano Company was organized; and in 1901, eleven years after the death of its founder, the Estey Organ Company initiated the building of large church pipe-organs, in a special factory with modern equipment.

Jacob Estey, influenced, perhaps, by his own hard struggles in early life, was a kindly, sympathetic employer. He was interested in religious and educational movements, helped found Shaw University (Raleigh, N. C.) for colored students, and gave much money to other philan-

thropic causes and missionary work. In his own special field he is credited with the invention of the *Vox humana* tremolo stop on the reed-organ, though it seems probable this was an adaptation rather than an invention. More plausible is the contention that he was one of the first to employ the "easy payment" plan to further the sale of his organs.

[Alfred Dolge, *Pianos and Their Makers* (1911), vol. I; Daniel Spillane, *Hist. of the Am. Pianoforte* (1890); M. R. Cabot, *Annals of Brattleboro, 1681–1895* (1922), II, 631–33; H. C. Williams, *Biog. Encyc. of Vt. of the 19th Century* (1885); *N. Y. Tribune* and *Burlington* (Vt.) *Daily Free Press* of Apr. 16, 1890; Freund's *Daily Music and Drama*, Apr. 19, 1890.] F. H. M.

**ETTWEIN, JOHN** (June 29, 1721–Jan. 2, 1802), Moravian bishop, was born at Freudenstadt in Würtemberg, Germany, of religious refugee stock. His great-grandfather, Jean Edwin, lost both parents in the religious persecutions in Savoy in the seventeenth century and escaped into Würtemberg where he found a home at St. George in the Black Forest, and it was here that the grandfather and father of the future bishop were born. His mother's parents had fled from Carinthia into Würtemberg, and settled at Freudenstadt where many of the persecuted from the Austrian dominions were allowed to establish themselves. His parents were in humble circumstances, and John Ettwein secured only the elements of an education, becoming a shoemaker by trade. He was an attendant at the meetings of the Pietists, and in 1738, having fallen under the influence of Moravian missionaries, left his native town and joined the Moravian group at Marienborn. There he prepared himself for missionary work, and he was subsequently appointed to various offices within the Church in Germany, Holland, and England. In the last-named country, he learned the English language. In 1746 he was married to Johanna Maria Kymbel; that same year saw his ordination as a deacon of a church; and in 1754 he sailed to America with his wife in the company of Bishop Spangenberg [*q.v.*] and some fifty Moravians, under the appointment of spiritual adviser to the children of the members of the Church in North America. He also undertook various missions among the Indians of the middle colonies and even as far south as Georgia. In 1763, he was placed in general charge of the Moravian work in North Carolina; at this period, he conducted preaching tours into South Carolina and Georgia, and was also responsible for the property of the Church in these parts. While engaged in these activities, he made the acquaintance of Henry Laurens [*q.v.*], which developed into a lifelong friendship. In 1766, he was appointed assistant to



Bishop Nathanael Seidel [*q.v.*] at Bethlehem, Pa., and, in that capacity, continued his journeyings into the back country; he also traveled into New England. When it was necessary to find a new home for the Christian Indians of the Susquehanna, he led a party of them in 1772 across the Alleghanies to the settlement established by the advance party under David Zeisberger [*q.v.*] in the Tuscarawas Valley in Ohio—a pilgrimage that occupied eight weeks.

At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, having received only kindness at the hands of the British government and not being able to fathom the justification of the bitter hostility that arose against it, Ettwein was a pronounced Loyalist who did not hesitate to thank God in the public services on the occasion of news of a British victory. As a result, he was arrested by the Revolutionary group of Northampton County and was temporarily imprisoned at Easton. As the struggle between the mother country and the colonies progressed, he finally was able to reconcile himself to accept "the independence of the Colonies as a fact against which the Moravian Church ought not to protest" (De Schweinitz, *post*, p. 258). In the course of the war, he acted as the accredited representative of the Moravians in their negotiations with the Continental Congress and the Pennsylvania Assembly over the issues that arose in connection with their refusal to accept enrolment in the armed forces and to subscribe to the Test Act of the year 1777, as well as the issues arising out of their relations with the Indians and losses sustained by the Church in the progress of the war. Largely through the influence of Henry Laurens, the Moravians were freed from the necessity of taking the Test Oath. When the general hospital for the Continental Army was situated at Bethlehem, in the years 1776–77, Ettwein acted as the chaplain.

In the course of the war, most of the Christian Indians whom he had led into the Ohio country were massacred at Gnadenhütten. It was a terrible blow to the Moravian mission work, but, undaunted, Ettwein prevailed upon Congress in the year 1785 to set aside 12,000 acres in the Tuscarawas Valley as a reservation for converted natives, and in the year 1787, he was instrumental in resuscitating the "Society of the United Brethren for Propagating the Gospel among the Heathen"—which had been organized in 1745—and became its president. He also prevailed upon the Pennsylvania Assembly to grant 5,000 acres for a Christian Indian reservation on Lake Erie. In the year 1784, he was elevated to the episcopacy and from that time until 1801, the year preceding his death, he presided over the destinies of

the Moravian Church of North America. He died on Jan. 2, 1802, in Bethlehem, Pa. Bishop Ettwein was a man of great force of character, tremendously devoted to the work of the Moravian ministry, at all times outspoken in his language, but winning the respect of supporters and opponents alike by reason of his genuine qualities of manhood. He may be ranked as one of the greatest of the leaders that the Moravian Church has had in North America.

[Edmund de Schweinitz, "John Ettwein, Bishop of the Brethren's Church," in *Trans. Moravian Hist. Soc.*, vol. II (1886); J. T. Hamilton, *Hist. of the Church known as the Moravian Church or the Unitas Fratrum* (1900), also pub. as *Trans. Moravian Hist. Soc.*, vol. VI (1900); *Records of the Moravians in N. C.* (3 vols., 1922–26), ed. by Adelaide L. Fries, pub. by the N. C. Hist. Commission; "Fragments from the Papers of Bishop John Ettwein," in *Trans. Moravian Hist. Soc.*, vol. IV (1895); Reports of the Proceedings of the General Synods of the Moravian Church, 1746–1836 (MSS.); Original Minutes and Documents of the Provincial Synod of the American Moravian Church, 1748–1898 (MSS.).] L. H. G.

**EUSTIS, GEORGE** (Oct. 20, 1796–Dec. 22, 1858), jurist, eldest of four children of Jacob and Elizabeth Saunders (Gray) Eustis, was born in Boston, Mass. He was educated in the schools of his native city and at Harvard College, from which he graduated in the class of 1815. Soon after leaving college he went abroad as private secretary to his uncle, William Eustis [*q.v.*], who had just been appointed United States minister at The Hague by President Madison. While here he is said to have begun the study of law. Upon his return he went to Louisiana, settled in the city of New Orleans, and by 1822 had been admitted to the bar. An active interest in local politics resulted in his being several times elected to the lower house of the state legislature. From 1830 to 1832 he was state attorney-general, and in 1832 he was appointed secretary of the state of Louisiana, a position he held until 1834. In 1838 he became a justice of the state supreme court. This court had accumulated a very large docket, partly because of litigation resulting from the panic of 1837, partly because of the partial incapacity of two of the judges, but also because of the dilatory methods of the court itself. In derision it was called a "talking court." As a result of public criticism two members resigned, and Eustis and Pierre A. Rost, active leaders of the bar, were given their places. In their efforts to clear the docket, however, they soon found themselves hampered by the presiding judge. Rost, therefore, resigned in May 1839, and Eustis followed his example the next month (H. P. Dart, "The History of the Supreme Court of Louisiana," in *The Celebration of the Centenary of the Supreme Court of Louisiana*, 1913).

Eustis

Dissatisfaction with the court, as well as with political matters in general, continued; and in 1845 a convention was called to draw up a new state constitution. This constitution provided for a supreme court composed of a chief justice and three associate justices, who were to be appointed by the governor. The court was organized Mar. 19, 1846, with Eustis as chief justice and with associates who were bent upon putting an end to the costly delays of the old system. They adopted rules and methods to this end and eventually caught up with a congested docket. Before the commission of Chief Justice Eustis expired, a new state constitution brought about a change in the personnel of the court. He retired in 1852, and died at his New Orleans home six years later. He has been described as "a man of extensive and elegant acquirements, a good linguist, and a ripe scholar." As a speaker it is said that he could claim no distinction, being neither fluent nor eloquent. Concerning his judicial opinions, Chief Justice Merrick of Louisiana said, "They were, as it became them, more solid than brilliant, more massive than showy. They are like granite masonry, and will serve as guides and landmarks in years to come" (13 *Louisiana*, vii–viii).

The development of the Louisiana educational system was greatly influenced by George Eustis. In 1834, while secretary of state, he urged the establishment of a medical college, which, largely through his efforts, was chartered in 1835. Again, in 1845, he induced the state constitutional convention, of which he was a member, to make provision for the establishment of a university in the city of New Orleans. Two years later was organized the University of Louisiana, now the Tulane University of Louisiana. In 1825 Eustis was married to Clarisse Allain, who belonged to a prominent Louisiana Creole family. She outlived him eighteen years, and died at Pau, France, in 1876. They had six children.

[H. L. Eustis, *Geneal. of the Eustis Family* (1878) is useful but contains some errors. See also J. S. Whitaker, *Sketches of Life and Character in La., the Portraits Selected Principally from the Bench and Bar* (1847); *Law Reporter*, Mar. 1859; *Law Times*, Aug. 20, 1859; reports of the secretary of state of Louisiana; obituaries in the *Daily Picayune* (New Orleans), and the *New Orleans Crescent*, Dec. 23, 1858.] M. J. W.

**EUSTIS, GEORGE** (Sept. 29, 1828–Mar. 15, 1872), statesman, diplomat, the eldest son of George [*q.v.*], eminent Louisiana jurist, and Clarisse Allain Eustis, was born in the city of New Orleans. He was educated at Jefferson College, St. James Parish, La., and at Harvard College, where, according to the records of that institution, he attended during the session of

1844–45 but took no degree. For a time he followed in his father's footsteps and practised law in his native city, but soon forsook it for a political career. He was elected a representative from Louisiana to the Thirty-fourth Congress, and reelected to the following Congress. While in the House of Representatives he was a member of the committee on commerce, of which Elihu B. Washburne of Illinois was chairman, and was active in the support of measures for the improvement of the navigation of the Mississippi River and of other Southern waterways. At Washington, D.C., he met and married Louise Corcoran, daughter of W. W. Corcoran [*q.v.*], banker, and founder of the Corcoran Art Gallery of that city. They had three children.

When the Civil War broke out, Eustis entered the Confederate service, and was soon appointed secretary of the Confederate legation at Paris, where he served under John Slidell, Confederate minister to France. He was with Mason and Slidell on the famous voyage of the British mail steamer *Trent,* and with them he was held a prisoner at Fort Warren in Boston harbor, until the seizure was declared illegal and they were permitted to proceed on their way. After the war he remained abroad, spending most of his time with his family at "Villa Louisiana," his home at Cannes, France. Being a man of fine intelligence, great social charm, and thoroughly familiar with the French language, law, and literature, he was exceedingly popular in his adopted country, and on terms of intimacy with many of its most important public men. When the Franco-Prussian War broke out, and United States minister Washburne, overwhelmed by the pressure of work, was finding it almost impossible to get the necessary help in his legation, Eustis generously volunteered his services. His knowledge of the French language, his long acquaintance in Paris, and his familiarity with diplomatic usages, enabled him to render invaluable services to his former chief (E. B. Washburne, *Recollections of a Minister to France,* 1887, I, 112–13). It is said that Washburne also employed him to negotiate a postal treaty with the French government. Eustis was far from being a well man, and his work at the legation probably sapped his vitality and hastened his death. At all events, before the siege of Paris his health failed perceptibly, and he sought rest and recuperation at his Cannes home, where he died about a year later from Bright's disease. Mrs. Eustis had died at the same place three years earlier.

[H. L. Eustis, *Geneal. of the Eustis Family* (1878); *Public Life and Diplomatic Correspondence of James M. Mason* (1903), by his daughter, Virginia Mason; Louis Martin Sears, *John Slidell* (1925); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928). Obituary notices in the *Daily Picayune,* Mar. 17, 1872, and *L'Abeille de la Nouvelle-Orléans,* 16 mars, 1872.]

M. J. W.



**EUSTIS, HENRY LAWRENCE** (Feb. 1, 1819–Jan. 11, 1885), engineer, soldier, college professor, was born at Fort Independence, Boston, Mass., the seventh and youngest son of Brig.-Gen. Abraham Eustis and Rebecca (Sprague) Eustis. His grandfather, also Abraham Eustis, was a brother of William Eustis [*q.v.*]. There was an army tradition in the family, and Henry, after taking a degree from Harvard in 1838, accepted an appointment to the United States Military Academy at West Point, where he graduated in 1842 at the head of his class. Commissioned as second lieutenant and assigned by virtue of his high scholarship to the Engineer Corps, he was stationed for a brief period in Washington as assistant to the chief of engineers of the army. In 1843–45 he was placed in charge of the construction of Fort Warren and the Lovell's Island sea wall in Boston harbor; and he then spent two years in directing engineering operations at Newport. He was made assistant professor of engineering at West Point in 1847, but resigned on Nov. 30, 1849, in order to become professor of engineering at Harvard. There he organized the department of engineering in the Lawrence Scientific School, and was dean of the scientific faculty for 1862–63 and from 1871 until his death.

In 1862, although his health was far from good, Eustis secured leave of absence from Harvard in order to become colonel of the 10th Massachusetts Volunteers, and served with the VI Corps, Army of the Potomac, from August 1862 until June 1864. His regiment saw plenty of vigorous action, and he himself was under fire at Williamsport, Fredericksburg, Marye's Heights, Salem, Gettysburg, Rappahannock Station, Mine Run, the Wilderness, Spotsylvania, Cold Harbor, and other lesser engagements. Writing from the battle-field of the Wilderness on May 5, 1864, Eustis said, "Men fell like leaves in autumn; yet the regiment stood firm, never wavered." He was promoted brigadier-general of volunteers on Sept 12, 1863, but resigned from the army on June 27, 1864, because of impaired health. He returned to his college duties in the following autumn and held his Harvard professorship until the close of his life. During the two years before his death he suffered from a lung malady, and, although he courageously kept on with his work, was obliged slowly to reduce the amount of it which he could perform. His physicians sent him to Fernandina, Fla., but the trip did him no good, and he returned to Cambridge to die.

Eustis was an unusual combination of the scholar and the man of action. He published many articles on technical and scientific subjects, and won a well-deserved reputation as an engineering authority. He was a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and a member of several other learned societies. His interest in antiquarian researches led to the publication of his *Genealogy of the Eustis Family* (1878). On May 2, 1844, he married Sarah Augusta Eckley, by whom he had four children. She died on Jan. 10, 1853. He later married, July 10, 1856, Caroline Bartlett Hall, who bore him two children, and who survived him at his death.

[H. L. Eustis, *Genealogy* (1878); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891); J. L. Chamberlain, *Harvard Univ.* (1900), in Universities and Their Sons; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 12, 1885; other Boston newspapers; information from members of the Harvard faculty who knew Eustis personally.] C. M. F.

**EUSTIS, JAMES BIDDLE** (Aug. 21, 1834–Sept. 9, 1899), statesman, diplomat, was born in the city of New Orleans. He was the fifth child of Judge George Eustis [*q.v.*] and Clarisse Alain Eustis, and a brother of George Eustis [*q.v.*], secretary to the Confederate legation at Paris during the Civil War. His education was obtained in the schools of his native city and at Harvard College, where the degree of LL.B. was conferred upon him in 1854. Two years later he was admitted to the Louisiana bar, and began practise in New Orleans. On Sept. 3, 1857, he married Ellen Buckner, the daughter of a prominent Louisiana planter. There were seven children by the marriage, five of whom survived infancy.

At the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861, Eustis entered the Confederate service. He first served as judge-advocate on the staff of Gen. Magruder, commander of the Trans-Mississippi Department, but after a year was transferred to the staff of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, with whom he served to the end of the struggle. The war over, he returned to New Orleans and again practised law, but the chief interest of men of his section, during that transitional period from the old to the new régime in the South, was in state politics, and in these he soon became deeply involved. In 1866 he was elected to the state legislature, and was later appointed one of a commission to go to Washington to confer with President Johnson on conditions in Louisiana. During Reconstruction, he was an outstanding leader of the Louisiana Democrats. In 1872 he was nominated for Congress as a candidate-at-large, but was left off by a fusion of tickets. He was elected in this year, however, to the lower house of the state legislature, and in 1874 to the state Senate. While in the legislature he most vigorously opposed the repudiation of the state debts. In January 1876, the legislature elected him United States senator to fill an unexpired term, but in that day of factions and rival legislatures in Louisiana the election was contested, and it was not until Dec. 10, 1877, that he was declared duly elected and permitted to take his seat. His first term ended in the spring of 1879, but after the interval 1879–84, during which he was professor of civil law and lecturer on the land laws of the United States in the University of Louisiana, now the Tulane University of Louisiana, he was again elected to the Senate, taking his seat at the beginning of the special session, Mar. 4, 1885.

During his second term in the Senate, in opposing many of the official acts of President Cleveland, Eustis followed the example of many Southern Democrats. It is said that he carried his opposition to a point where he incurred the personal resentment of the President. When both were temporarily in political retirement, however, there was a reconciliation; and when Cleveland was again a presidential candidate, in 1892, Eustis gave him strong support in the North and East, where he was in great demand on account of his superior ability as an orator. His reward was an appointment as ambassador to France, where he represented his country with ability and distinction. At the end of his ambassadorship he practised law in New York City. He was a member of Tammany Hall, and, as long as health permitted, was active in the work of that organization. He died at his summer home at Newport, R. I.

[H. L. Eustis, *Geneal. of the Eustis Family* (1878); records of the Tulane University of La.; Alcée Fortier, *A Hist. of La.*, vol. IV (1904), and *Louisiana* (1914), vol. I; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); obituary notice in the *Times-Democrat* (New Orleans), for Sept. 10, 1899; information from Dr. Allan Eustis of New Orleans.] M. J. W.

**EUSTIS, WILLIAM** (June 10, 1753–Feb. 6, 1825), statesman, was born in Cambridge, Mass., the son of Benjamin Eustis, a well-known physician, and Elizabeth (Hill) Eustis. After preparing for college at the Boston Latin School, he entered Harvard, graduating with the class of 1772. He then studied medicine under Dr. Joseph Warren, later helping to care for the wounded after Bunker Hill and serving in the Revolutionary army, first as surgeon to the artillery regiment at Cambridge and finally as hospital surgeon. Following the war he carried on the practise of his profession in Boston, but he

abandoned it for a time in order to accompany the expedition against Shays (1786–87) as surgeon. He was gradually drawn into politics as an Anti-Federalist and sat for six years (1788–94) in the Massachusetts General Court.

An early adherent of Jefferson, Eustis ran for Congress in 1800 against the Federalist, Josiah Quincy, and was successful after a hotly contested campaign. Two years later he had as his Federalist opponent the young John Quincy Adams, whom he defeated by 1,899 votes to 1,840. Adams later wrote (*Writings,* ed. by W. C. Ford, III, 1914, p. 10), "I had a majority of votes in Boston; but two or three neighboring towns annexed to the Congressional district and a rainy day lost me the election by forty or fifty votes." In 1804 Quincy was again a candidate, and this time Eustis was beaten. During his two terms in the House of Representatives, Eustis cast his vote consistently for the administration policies. In 1807 he was named by President Jefferson as secretary of war to succeed Gen. Henry Dearborn, and he continued in the same position in President Madison's cabinet. He defended the Embargo and Non-Intercourse Acts, and, with George Blake, took part in a notable debate in a Boston town meeting (Jan. 24, 1808) against Harrison Gray Otis and Samuel Dexter [*qq.v.*]. Eustis was in charge of the military affairs of the United States during the critical period leading up to the War of 1812. The War Department was poorly equipped to meet an emergency, but the secretary and his eight clerks set to work at the task of increasing the army and reorganizing it for active duty. Their efforts accomplished little, however, and as soon as the declaration of war was passed (June 18, 1812), everybody joined in the denunciation of Eustis. Henry Clay, in a letter to James Monroe (Aug. 12, 1812), spoke of Eustis as an official "in whom there exists no sort of confidence." Gallatin stated that Eustis's incompetence was universally admitted. In later years the best that Madison could say of him was that he was "an acceptable member of the cabinet" (*Writings,* ed. by G. Hunt, IX, 1910, p. 279). The situation really demanded a forceful and far-sighted leader, with a talent for organization, and Eustis, who had been described as "an amiable man and an efficient politician" (Edward Channing, *A History of the United States,* IV, 1917, p. 459), was not qualified to conduct military campaigns. When he resigned on Dec. 3, 1812, in the face of criticism, the War Department was taken over temporarily by James Monroe, who was also acting as secretary of state.

In 1814 Eustis was appointed by Madison as minister to Holland. He spent four years abroad, returning in 1818 because of ill health. It was impossible for him to keep out of politics, and, having been elected to Congress to fill a vacancy, he held a seat in that body from 1820 to 1823. For three successive years—1820, 1821, and 1822—he ran for governor of Massachusetts against the Federalist, John Brooks, also a physician and a Revolutionary veteran, and was beaten each time by approximately the same small majority. In 1823, when Brooks declined to be a candidate, Eustis defeated the conservative Harrison Gray Otis by a vote of 34,402 to 30,171, carrying not only all the previously Democratic counties, but also Essex, and Hampden, which had never before been in the Democratic column. Eustis's inaugural address, devoted principally to a denunciation of the Hartford Conventionists, provoked a quarrel between him and Otis, whom Eustis never forgave for some of his remarks (Adams, *Memoirs,* Sept. 22, 1824). In 1824 Eustis ran against Lathrop, defeating him by 38,650 to 34,210, in the last gubernatorial campaign in Massachusetts in which a Federalist was a candidate. During Eustis's administration as governor, he entertained Lafayette on the latter's visit to Boston in August 1824. Early in 1825, not long after his second inauguration, he caught a severe cold, which developed into pneumonia. His heart, which had not been strong for some time, weakened rapidly, and he died in his seventy-third year, in the very midst of the excitement aroused by the presidential election which resulted in the victory of his old rival, John Quincy Adams. His body lay in state in the capitol in Boston, and he was interred in the Granary Burying Ground with full military honors. At his death, Lieut.-Gov. Marcus Morton became acting governor.

Eustis was married, on Sept. 24, 1810, to Caroline Langdon, of Portsmouth, N. H., who survived him until 1865. They had no children. He purchased in 1819 the historic Shirley Mansion, in Roxbury, where he entertained in lavish style. He was vice-president of the Society of the Cincinnati from 1786 to 1810 and again in 1820, and delivered an oration before the order on July 4, 1791. A genial, courteous man, he made friends easily and was versed in all the arts of the politician. He was praised after his death for his "frankness of disposition and decision of character," but it was his urbanity, not his ability, which placed him in positions of authority.

[*Memoirs of John Quincy Adams,* vols. I, IV, V, VI (1874–75); S. E. Morison, *The Life and Letters of Harrison Gray Otis, Federalist, 1765–1848* (1913); Thos. Gray, *A Sermon on the Death of His Excellency,*

*Wm. Eustis* (1825); Justin Winsor, *The Memorial Hist. of Boston*, vol. III (1881); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); H. L. Eustis, *Geneal. of the Eustis Family* (1878); *Boston Weekly Messenger*, Feb. 10, 1825; *Columbian Centinel*, Feb. 9, 1825.] C. M. F.

**EVANS, ANTHONY WALTON WHYTE** (Oct. 31, 1817–Nov. 28, 1886), civil engineer, was the eldest son of Thomas M. Evans of Virginia and his wife Eliza Whyte, daughter of Gen. Anthony Walton White of the Continental Army. Born in New Brunswick, N. J., Evans was educated at the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, graduating in 1836. After employment for some years on the enlargement of the Erie Canal, he became an assistant to Allan Campbell in the building of the New York & Harlem Railroad; and when, in 1849, Campbell was called to Chile to act as chief engineer of the Copiapo Railroad (from the Bay of Caldera to Copiapo, fifty miles inland), Evans accompanied him. Here he speedily laid the foundation of his fortune and professional fame. He supervised the completion of the Copiapo Railroad, after Campbell had left to undertake the building of another, and when its successfulness had been established, encouraging other states to venture into railroad building, he constructed the line from the seaport, Arica, to Tacna, the inland capital of the province which for years was in dispute between Peru and Chile.

After a visit to the United States, he took charge of the construction of a continuation of the Valparaiso-Santiago railroad extending from Santiago to the southern provinces of Chile; in this connection he made something of a reputation for the bridges he built across several torrential rivers. Upon the completion of this road Evans returned to the United States, opening an office in New York City as a consulting engineer. In this capacity, for the Peruvian railroads built by Henry Meiggs [*q.v.*], he designed the Varrugas viaduct on the Luna & Oroya Railroad. He also acted as agent for a number of foreign railroad companies operating in Australia and New Zealand as well as Central and South America. He purchased nearly all their rolling stock and other supplies and engaged their engineering staffs, disbursing in all several million dollars for his clients. He believed that American rolling stock was superior to that produced anywhere else, and was responsible for the introduction of American locomotives and cars into many foreign countries. His later work carried him over Europe, New Zealand, and Egypt, and while he was a champion of American ideas in railroad construction always, he did not close his eyes to merit elsewhere. He wrote an appreciative paper on the Abt system of railways for steep inclines and his last literary work, not published until after his death, was a letter comparing English and American railroads, which was included in vol. XV (1886) of the *Transactions of the American Society of Civil Engineers* and reprinted as a supplement to Edward Bates Dorsey's book, *English and American Railroads Compared* (1887). Another subject on which he expressed his views in writing, mainly in papers read before engineering societies, was the question of a route for the projected inter-oceanic canal. His preference was for the San Blas route, and he considered the suggestion of a sea-level canal at Panama "simply ridiculous."

Evans's house at New Rochelle was filled with rare books, pictures, and other works of art picked up on his travels, often as presents for his wife, Anna, who was the daughter of John C. Zimmerman, for many years consul-general of Holland in New York City. At his death, in his sixty-ninth year, Evans was survived only by a daughter.

[*Proc. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers*, vol. XIII (1887); H. B. Nason, *Biog. Record Grads. Rensselaer Polytechnic Inst.* (1887); *N. Y. Herald*, Nov. 29, 30, 1886; *Railroad Gazette*, Dec. 3, 1886.] E. Y.

**EVANS, AUGUSTA JANE** (May 8, 1835–May 9, 1909), author, was born in Columbus, Ga., the first of the eight children of Matthew Ryan and Sarah Skrine (Howard) Evans. The ancestors of both her father and mother were from South Carolina. She was educated almost entirely at home under the supervision of her mother. In the middle forties she went with her family to Texas, living successively in Galveston, Houston, and San Antonio. In 1849 they all returned East and soon took up residence in Mobile. When she was about fifteen or sixteen, she secretly wrote a novel, "Inez, a Tale of the Alamo," and when Christmas came round she presented the manuscript to her father. It was for the most part a jumble of love, war, and anti-Catholicism, set forth in sentences which sag with their own monstrous length, and teem with erudite mythological allusions and reverberating polysyllables. The book was published by the Harpers in 1855, anonymously, and without attracting wide notice. Her next novel was *Beulah* (1859). Like *Inez*, both pedantic and romantic, it attempted to deal with the problems of religious doubt then held so interesting. In little more than a year it ran through editions of 21,000 copies. During the Civil War, Augusta was fervent in the Southern cause. "The sole enthusiasm of my life," she said later, "was born, lived, and perished in the eventful four years of the Confederacy" (Manly, *post*). Some of this enthusiasm found expression in her *Macaria, or Altars of*

*Sacrifice,* published in Richmond in 1864. It was austere and pompous, but it accorded with popular taste in the North as well as in the South, and so disastrous was its effect on the morale of the Federal soldiery that certain officers ordered that copies of it be sought out and burned. Her next novel, *St. Elmo* (1866), does not touch upon the war. It is a story of how a simple maiden, Edna Earl, by force of her wisdom and virtue, reclaims for righteousness a sophisticated and sardonic lover. The parody which it seemed to invite was soon written by William Webb of the *New York Times.* It was called *St. Twel'mo,* and accounts for the turgidness of its original by the theory that Edna had as a child swallowed an unabridged dictionary. Nevertheless, *St. Elmo* achieved and maintained a wide popularity. In December 1868, Augusta Evans married Lorenzo Madison Wilson, a rich business man of Mobile. He was a widower with mature children, living at a pretentious country place several miles from town. Although as mistress of the house she was occupied with her domestic duties and family, she did not give up her writing; *Vashti,* a sad but moral story designed to warn young ladies against the sin of wilfulness, appeared in 1869. In 1875 she published *Infelice,* a chronicle of love in wedlock, and in 1887, *At the Mercy of Tiberius,* a mystery story. Her husband died in 1891, and she soon afterward moved into Mobile to live with her unmarried brother, John Howard Evans. In 1902 she published *A Speckled Bird,* dealing with events immediately following the Civil War. Her last book, *Devota* (1907), records her distrust of various social trends of that time, particularly the disposition of women to take part in public affairs. She died suddenly at her home.

[J. D. Freeman, "Mary Forrest," *Women of the South* (1861); J. W. Davidson, *Living Writers of the South* (1869); I. Raymond, *Southland Writers* (1870); J. C. Derby, *Fifty Years Among Authors* (1884); L. C. Holloway, *The Woman's Story* (1889); T. C. De-Leon, "Biog. Reminiscences of A. E. Wilson" in *Devota* (edition of 1913); L. Manly, "A. E. Wilson" in *Lib. of Southern Lit.,* vol. XIII (1910); T. McA. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921); *Mobile Register,* May 10, 1909.]

J. D.W.

**EVANS, CLEMENT ANSELM** (Feb. 25, 1833–July 2, 1911), Confederate general, and historian, was born in Stewart County, Ga., the son of Anselm Lynch and Sarah Hinton (Bryan) Evans. His father's family was of Welsh origin, established first in Virginia and later removing to Georgia. Members of it served in the two wars with Great Britain and against the Creeks in Georgia. His mother's family was of English descent. His education was obtained in the public schools of Lumpkin, Ga., and at William Tracy Gould's law school in Augusta. Licensed to practise in the superior court at Augusta on Jan. 30, 1852, before he was nineteen, he entered partnership with Bedford S. Worrill and practised at Lumpkin. On Feb. 8, 1854, he married Allie Walton of Stewart County. He became judge of the inferior court of Stewart County in 1855, and was a member of the state Senate in 1859–61. A presidential elector in 1860, he voted for Breckinridge, and immediately after the election, in the expectation of war, helped to organize a local military company. He did not serve in it, however, but enlisted the next spring in the 31st Georgia Infantry, of which he was appointed major, being commissioned Nov. 19, 1861. Practically all of his service during the war was with the Army of Northern Virginia. His regiment, of which he became colonel in April 1862, was at first in Stonewall Jackson's division and then successively under Early and Gordon. Evans led his regiment in the Peninsular campaign, acted as brigade commander at times in 1862, including the latter part of the battle of Fredericksburg, and commanded his regiment at Gettysburg. Appointed brigadier-general in May 1864, he was assigned to the command of Gordon's old brigade, which he led in Early's raid against Washington —he was wounded at the battle of the Monocacy —and in the subsequent campaign in the Shenandoah Valley. In November 1864 he succeeded Gordon in the command of the division. At Appomattox, it is said, his division won the last fight of Lee's army. Notice that negotiations for surrender were in progress had reached neither Evans nor the Union troops opposing him, and Evans had just secured a local success, taking several guns and seventy-eight prisoners, when he received news that the surrender had taken place.

At Fredericksburg, in December 1862, he had been very much impressed and depressed by the carnage and suffering which he saw, and he later said that he made up his mind then that if he were allowed to survive the war he would spend the rest of his life trying to teach men how to live together instead of murdering each other. On his thirtieth birthday, Feb. 25, 1863, he resolved to enter the ministry, and after the war, in December 1865, he applied for admission to the North Georgia Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. The following year, as a circuit rider on Manassas Circuit, Bartow County, he began a ministry of more than twenty-five years. While a resident of Augusta, Ga., he ventured into business, organizing the Augusta Real Estate & Improvement Company and the Augusta & Summerville Land Company, and was a di-

rector of the Augusta Exposition Company. His first wife having died in 1884, on Oct. 14, 1887, he married Mrs. Sarah Avary Howard, of Decatur, Ga., who died in 1902. In 1892 he retired from the ministry, feeling himself unfit for parochial duties because of disability resulting from the five wounds he had received in the war.

All the latter part of his life was spent in Atlanta. Upon the organization of the United Confederate Veterans in 1889, he had been chosen as its "Adjutant General and Chief of Staff," and he continued active in the work of the organization for the rest of his life. For twelve years he was commander of its Georgia division, for three years commander of a department (of seven states), and in 1908 was elected commander-in-chief. He published a *Military History of Georgia* in 1895, and then undertook the editorship of the *Confederate Military History,* a work in twelve volumes which appeared in 1899. It deals chiefly with military operations, as its name promises, but includes several articles on other matters, Evans himself contributing to the first volume an extensive "Civil History of the Confederate States." A notable feature is the series of biographical sketches, usually accompanied by portraits, of all the general officers of the Confederate army. After the completion of this historical work, he interested himself in the movement for the establishment at Richmond of the Confederate Memorial Institute, the museum of history and art popularly known as the "Confederate Battle Abbey." He served as president of the organization until his death. The building was completed and opened some years later. He was co-editor with Allen D. Candler of *Georgia,* a three-volume work in cyclopedic form, published in 1906. Educational matters always interested him. He was trustee of three colleges, and helped in the establishment of a loan fund association which has assisted many young men in securing an education. He was also in charge of the finances of the Preachers Aid Association and held public office once more, as a member of the State Prison Commission.

[*Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), VI, 415–17; W. J. Northen, *Men of Mark in Georgia,* III (1911), 442–45; *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vols. XXI, XLII (pt. 3), XLIII (pt. 1), LI (pt. 1); *Christian Advocate* (Nashville), July 7, 1911; *Atlanta Constitution* and *Sun* (Baltimore), July 3, 1911; information as to certain facts from a son, Lawton B. Evans, Esq., of Augusta, Ga.] T. M. S.

**EVANS, EDWARD PAYSON** (Dec. 8, 1831–Mar. 6, 1917), man of letters, was born in Remsen, Oneida County, N. Y., the son of Evan and Mary (Williams) Evans. His parents were natives of North Wales; his father was a Presbyterian minister. After his graduation in 1854 from the University of Michigan, Evans acted for one year as principal of an academy at Hernando, Miss., taught languages for another year in Carroll College at Waukesha, Wis., and then went to Europe. For three years he studied at the Universities of Göttingen, Berlin, and Munich, and in Germany he found his second mother country. Returning in 1862 to the United States, he was appointed instructor in modern languages in the University of Michigan and promoted the next year to a professorship. His literary career began inconspicuously with translations of Adolf Stahr's two-volume *Life and Works of Gotthold Ephraim Lessing* (1866) and Athanase Josué Coquerel's *First Historical Transformations of Christianity* (1867), and with two text-books, an *Abriss der Deutschen Literaturgeschichte* (1869) and a *Progressive German Reader* (1869, 1870). On May 23, 1868, he married Elizabeth Edson Gibson (Mar. 8, 1832–Sept. 14, 1911), daughter of Willard Putnam and Lucia Field (Williams) Gibson. She was born in Newport, N. H., and at the time of her marriage was living in Ann Arbor. In 1870 Evans resigned his professorship. A few months later he settled as a private scholar and free-lance journalist in his beloved Munich, and before long his high, broad forehead and flowing beard were a permanent feature of the Royal Library.

He devoted himself at first to the study of Sanskrit, Zend, and modern Persian, published articles on Oriental literature, and was offered in 1873 the professorship of Sanskrit in the University of Lahore. An incessant student, he became learned in a half dozen subjects and more than well informed in a score, but his taste ran to the devious and the abstruse. Few heads in his generation could have held more, or more diverse, information than his; and the yeast of thought kept all his knowledge in a genial ferment. He wrote regularly for several German periodicals, especially for the *Allgemeine Zeitung* of Munich, whose staff he joined in 1884, and with less frequency for English and American magazines, including the *Atlantic Monthly,* the *Unitarian Review,* and the *Popular Science Monthly.* His articles on American subjects were gathered into two volumes of *Beiträge zur Amerikanischen Literatur- und Kulturgeschichte* (Stuttgart, 1898, 1903), but his best and most characteristic work is preserved in three fascinating volumes on *Animal Symbolism in Ecclesiastical Architecture* (1896), *Evolutional Ethics and Animal Psychology* (1897), and *Criminal Prosecution and Capital Punishment of Animals* (1904). The first and third are erudite studies

in medieval art and law. The second is one of those freaks of scholarship which brilliant but self-taught men produce from time to time; incredible as zoölogy, its stories of sagacious birds and beasts are delightful as literature. All three are written lucidly and vivaciously and bear the stamp of a highly original mind. Mrs. Evans also engaged in authorship. Besides writing for various English and American magazines she published: *The Abuse of Maternity* (1875), *A History of Religions* (1892), *The Story of Kaspar Hauser* (1892), *The Story of Louis XVII of France* (1893)—in which she argued for the claim of Eleazer Williams—*Ferdinand Lassalle and Helene von Dönniges, a Modern Tragedy* (1897), *The Christ Myth, a Study* (1900), and three ephemeral novels. She possessed real ability, but her work is pale and savourless beside her husband's. In 1906 the Evanses moved to Bad Aibling, in the mountains, some forty miles southeast of Munich. Mrs. Evans died in 1911, and in 1914 the outbreak of the European War compelled the aged and lonely scholar to break his long expatriation and return to the United States. Making Cambridge, Mass., his headquarters, he continued to work on an extensive history of German literature, which he had begun soon after his wife's death. Later he moved to New York City, where, in the anxious month preceding the declaration of war with Germany, he died. He was survived by his nephew and adopted son, Lawrence Boyd Evans [*q.v.*].

[*Who's Who in America*, 1899–1917; *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 8, 1917; B. A. Hinsdale, *Hist. of the Univ. of Mich.* (1906), with portrait.] G. H. G.

**EVANS, EVAN** (1671–1721), Anglican clergyman, second rector of Christ Church, Philadelphia, and active during the first twenty years of the eighteenth century in building up the Anglican Church in the American colonies, was born in Carnoe, Montgomery County, Wales, son of Evan David Evans (Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses, Early Series*). His family must have been without property, for he matriculated on Mar. 12, 1692 (N.S.) at St. Alban Hall, Oxford, as a pauper scholar and a batteler, a rank between that of a commoner and a servitor. During his first year at Oxford he was fortunate in securing an Ogle scholarship which gave him some slight financial help. In 1695 he received the degree of B.A. from Brasenose College (*Brasenose College Register*, 1909, vol. I, 260), and he may have been rector of Gwaynysgor, Flints, in 1697 (Joseph Foster, *Alumni Oxonienses, 1500–1714*, 1891). In 1700 the Bishop of London sent him out to the colonies as rector of Christ Church, Philadelphia. For about seven-



teen years he served that church, receiving only the Royal bounty of £50 and whatever contributions the church members chose to make. At the same time he preached without compensation at Montgomery and Radnor, and introduced services in Chester, Chichester, Concord, Oxford, and Perkiomen. Before 1707, largely as a result of his effort and enthusiasm, churches were built at Oxford, Chester, and Newcastle. He preached so persuasively in his native tongue that he kept many Welsh communities from turning non-conformist; and under his influence large numbers of Quakers forsook their own faith and joined the Anglican Church. His interest extended to the other colonies. He conferred with fellow churchmen in New York, and constantly urged the authorities in England to send a bishop to the colonies. His letters are examples of scholarly English and forceful argument, but he was unable to secure a bishop for the American church.

The Bishop of London recognized Evans's ability as a preacher, and in 1707, when the Rector was in England, recommended him to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts as a missionary to Welshmen in America. At that time Queen Anne presented him with communion plate for his church in Philadelphia. The necessity of enlarging the Philadelphia church in 1711 is another evidence of his success in that community.

On returning to America from his last voyage to England, 1714, Evans accepted appointment from the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel to act as missionary at Radnor and Oxford. According to the vestry minutes of Christ Church, he continued to act as rector in Philadelphia until 1718 when he resigned from all his labors in Pennsylvania and accepted a presentment by the governor of Maryland to the church of Spesutia in St. George's Parish, near the present village of Perryman, Harford County. By his will, dated May 25, 1721, and proved on Nov. 10 of the same year, he left a small personal estate and fifteen hundred acres of land in Philadelphia. He was survived by his wife, Alice, and an only child, a daughter, who had married an English rector by the name of Lloyd.

[Wm. S. Perry, *Hist. Colls. Relating to the Am. Colonial Church*, vols. II (1871) and IV (1878); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. V (1859); Benj. Dorr, *A Hist. Account of Christ Church, Phila., from Its Foundation* (1841); L. C. Washburn, *Christ Church, Phila.* (1925).] D. M. C.

**EVANS, FREDERICK WILLIAM** (June 9, 1808–Mar. 6, 1893), reformer and Shaker elder, was born in Leominster, Worcestershire, England, the son of George and Sarah (White)

Evans. His father was of English middle-class stock and held a commission in the British army; his mother appears to have been of somewhat better family. When Frederick was four years of age his mother died, and the boy was cared for by her relatives who sent him to school at Stourbridge. Here he remained, with apparently little profit to himself, until he was eight years old, when his formal schooling came to an end and he joined his aunts and uncles at Chadwick Hall, a large, well-ordered, and successful farm near Worcester. Life could not have been very stimulating intellectually at Chadwick Hall, but it did develop in young Evans a vigorous and sturdy body, together with an understanding of farm management which he was able to put to use in after years. In 1820 with his father and his brother he sailed for the United States; they settled in Binghamton, N. Y., already the home of two of Frederick's uncles. The rugged, bright, but rather illiterate country boy felt sorely the need of a better education, and eventually removed to Ithaca, where the Episcopal minister became his friend and teacher. From Ithaca he went to Sherburne Four Corners, N. Y., and apprenticed himself to a hatter. Here he had access to more books, and the character of his reading inclined him to materialism. He was, therefore, a ready convert to Owenism, and in his enthusiasm actually walked eight hundred miles to join an Owenite community at Massillon, Ohio. The community failed, however, and in the spring of 1829 Evans went back to England where he remained for nearly a year. Returning to New York City in January 1830, he joined the little group of freethinkers and reformers gathered about Fanny Wright, Robert Dale Owen, Robert L. Jennings, and his brother George Henry Evans [*q.v.*], with whose views he heartily sympathized. Combining his means with those of his brother, he assisted him in editing and publishing successively the *Working Man's Advocate*, the *Daily Sentinel*, and *Young America*, as well as a great variety of other publications including the *Bible of Reason*. All of these publications were devoted to radical reform in one field or another, but the brothers put most emphasis upon labor, educational, and land reform. In the midst of this activity Evans visited the community of the United Society of Believers, the Shaker community, at Mount Lebanon, N. Y. So impressed was he with what he saw and learned of Shaker life and doctrine that, after a lengthy visit, to the utter astonishment of his fellow freethinkers in New York City, he joined the society. His final conversion was due, he says, to the spiritual manifestations made to

Evans

himself alone during several weeks. There was, in truth, no little of the mystic in Evans's character, and to this the element of spiritualism in Shakerism made a strong appeal. Evans's conversion proved thoroughgoing and permanent. For sixty-three years he remained with the North Family at Mount Lebanon and for fifty-seven years presided over the Family as elder. "A born leader and a natural orator," he became in time one of the most prominent of the Shaker leaders in the country, and, through his preaching and writing, did much to clarify and shape Shaker doctrine and practise. His publications in this field include: *Tests of Divine Inspiration* (1853); *A Short Treatise on the Second Appearing of Christ in and through the Order of the Female* (1853); *Ann Lee, a Biography, etc.* (1858), published later under the title, *Shakers. Compendium of the Origin, History, Principles* [etc.] *of the United Society of Believers; Celibacy from the Shaker Standpoint* (1866); *Shaker Communism* (1871); *The Universal Church* (1872). He also published, in 1869, the *Autobiography of a Shaker, and Revelation of the Apocalypse, With an Appendix.* In 1871 and again in 1887 he visited England in the rôle of Shaker missionary, on the last occasion also visiting Scotland. In person he was tall, strong, and vigorous, with "regular and systematic habits." He was a vegetarian for nearly sixty years. As might be expected from his interest in reform, his was "a nature susceptible to the weal or woe of mankind," while "indomitable will, perseverance, persistency, and a determination to carry out what he believed to be his duty to God and humanity, gave him great force of character and made effective his efforts for good" (*Immortalized,* p. 15). Elder Rayson added, however, in his remarks on the death of Elder Evans: "Though firm and uncompromising when principle was at stake, and firm in his adherence to right, yet he had a tender and loving nature, and his love was reciprocated by those who knew him best" (*Ibid.*, pp. 26–27). Evans died at Mount Lebanon in his eighty-fifth year.

[The principal sources of information are Evans's *Autobiography of a Shaker* and *Immortalized: Elder Frederic W. Evans. Affectionately inscribed to the memory of Elder Frederic W. Evans, by his Loving and Devoted Gospel Friends* (1893). See also *N. Y. Tribune, N. Y. Times,* Mar. 7, 1893. His writings not noted above are listed in J. P. MacLean, *Bibliography of Shaker Literature* (1905).] W.R.W.

**EVANS, GEORGE** (Jan. 12, 1797–Apr. 6, 1867), lawyer, politician, was the son of Daniel and Joanna (Hains) Evans and was born in Hallowell, Me. He graduated from Bowdoin College in 1815, was admitted to the bar three

years later, and began practise in Gardiner, where he lived for the greater part of his life. In October 1820 he married Ann Dearborn. In 1825 he was elected to the legislature as a National Republican, serving until 1829, the last year as speaker. In 1829 he began a period of twelve years' service in the national House of Representatives. During his first term he made a notable speech (May 18, 1830) opposing the Georgia land policy and the removal of the Indians, but his chief interests were, from the first, in the field of public finance. He was a strong supporter of the protective tariff, internal improvements, and the United States Bank. Among his great speeches in the House might be mentioned his reply to McDuffie on the tariff, June 11, 1832 (*Register of Debates in Congress,* 22 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 3421 ff.); on the removal of the deposits from the United States Bank, Feb. 3 and Apr. 21, 1834 (*Ibid.,* 23 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 2574 ff., and pp. 3715 ff.); and on the fortifications bill of the preceding session, Jan. 28, 1836, in which he had a memorable clash with John Quincy Adams (*Ibid.,* 24 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 2414 ff.). The latter described him (*Memoirs,* IX, 1876, p. 388) as "one of the ablest men and most eloquent orators in Congress. His powers of reasoning and of pathos, his command of language and his elocution, are not exceeded by any member of this Congress; much superior to the last." Adams, like other contemporaries, also commented on his remarkable knowledge of parliamentary law and his mastery of the rules, precedents, and floor tactics of the House.

In 1841 he entered the Senate, and, regardless of seniority rules, was made chairman of its committee on finance, a tribute to the reputation he had made as a minority member of the ways and means committee of the House. He held this position throughout the Twenty-seventh and Twenty-eighth Congresses and was responsible for much of their revenue legislation. Most of his speeches were on financial topics, and in the course of debate on July 25, 1846, Webster, referring to Evans's approaching retirement from the Senate, declared that his understanding of revenue and financial questions generally was equal to that of Gallatin or Crawford. James G. Blaine also described him as "a man of commanding power" and "entitled to rank next to Mr. Webster" among New England senators (*Twenty Years of Congress,* I, 1884, p. 70).

In 1847 the Maine legislature was Democratic and Evans accordingly was obliged to retire. His support of the Webster-Ashburton Treaty, very unpopular in his own state, is reported to have injured him politically and to have led to certain

Evans

intrigues in the following year which prevented his appointment to a position in President Taylor's cabinet. It had been hoped by his friends that he would become secretary of the treasury. He served for two years, however, as chairman of the commission on Mexican claims and in 1851, refusing the offer of several other federal posts, returned to Maine. He resumed the practise of law and in 1854 removed from Gardiner to Portland. He served as attorney-general of the state in 1853, 1854, and 1856, but the collapse of the Whig party and sundry personal feuds following the convention of 1852 had apparently left him without party affiliations and his conservative temperament made him suspicious of the new Republican organization. He is said to have voted the Democratic ticket in his later years, but his active political career had ended. His practise was large and he had a number of important business interests, serving for some years as president of the Portland & Kennebec Railroad Company. He was an active member of the Maine Historical Society for the greater part of his life, an Overseer for nineteen and a trustee of Bowdoin College for twenty-two years (1826–67). His career, however, shows how readily, under such conditions as prevailed in the fifties, a leader of first-rate ability may be sidetracked, and fail to attain the enduring fame which apparently he merited. To this failure his own inability to grasp the overwhelming importance of slavery as a moral and political issue undoubtedly contributed.

[Biographical notice by R. H. Gardiner, based in large part on newspaper obituaries, published in *Me. Hist. Soc. Colls.,* VII (1876), 457–71; L. C. Hatch, *Maine* (1919), I, 242; *Am. Review; A Whig Journal,* July 1847; N. Cleaveland and A. S. Packard, *Hist. of Bowdoin Coll. with Biog. Sketches of its Grads.* (1882), pp. 182–84; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); obituaries in *Bangor Daily Evening Times,* and *Bangor Daily Whig and Courier,* Apr. 9, 1867.] W. A. R.

**EVANS, GEORGE ALFRED** (Oct. 1, 1850–July 14, 1925), physician, a pioneer in the sanatorium and climatic treatment of pulmonary tuberculosis, was born in Brooklyn. His father, Norris Evans, a carriage manufacturer, was of Welsh, and his mother, Sarah Ann Decker, of Holland-Dutch extraction. He attended the local public schools and in 1866, after a course of study at the Hudson River Institute, Claverack, N. Y., entered the Pennsylvania State Agricultural College, from which he graduated in 1870. During the last two years at this institution he pursued studies which were preparatory to a medical training. In the fall of 1870 he registered as a pupil with Prof. James R. Wood [*q.v.*], a well-known surgeon of New York City and en-

tered Bellevue Hospital Medical College, then a new institution, in 1871. Before his graduation in 1873 he served as interne in the New York City Insane Asylum. He at once opened an office in the family residence in Bedford Ave., Brooklyn, but after a year of practise went to Germany to perfect himself in certain branches of the fundamentals of medicine. He confined his studies to the University of Würzburg, and the names of his teachers suggest that he gave especial attention to histology and pathology and probably also to obstetrics and diseases of women and children. Upon his return in 1875 he reëstablished himself in practise and in 1876 he secured an appointment as visiting physician to the Atlantic Avenue Dispensary. In the same year he read before the Kings County Medical Society his first paper on a medical subject, which dealt with the pathological histology of the heart. In 1878 he married Emma Wilmot of Bridgeport, Conn., and in 1879 he aided in founding the Bushwick and East Brooklyn Hospital and Dispensary of which he became visiting physician. Three years later his wife developed pulmonary consumption and he was obliged to take her to Texas, where for two years he practised medicine at San Antonio and at Boerne. In addition to an active general practise, which kept him much in the saddle, he served as head of an embryo sanitarium. The life was full of excitement through the proximity of hostile Indians and bad white men; and he had charge of the case of one Ben Thompson, known as the "last of the desperadoes." As his wife failed progressively Evans was obliged to return North in 1884, in which year Mrs. Evans died. He reëstablished himself at his former Brooklyn residence where he practised until his retirement in 1907. His attention, as a result of his personal experience, had now become focused on the treatment of pulmonary tuberculosis and he became known preëminently as a specialist in diseases of the chest. In 1887 he married as his second wife Zoa L. Macumber. He began to write articles on the treatment of respiratory diseases. He also went exhaustively into the climatological treatment of consumption and published several writings, during 1888–90, which are said to have created a sensation and to have inaugurated the movement which was to make of the lower Catskill region a climatological resort for consumptives. His principal publication was his *Handbook of Historical and Geographical Phthisiology* (1888). His retirement in 1907 was due to heart disease, to which he finally succumbed at the age of seventy-five. Consumption when Evans began to study it seriously was still regarded as practically incurable, and, although he was not as well known to the public as his contemporary, E. L. Trudeau [*q.v.*], he was, according to his colleagues, a force in showing the possibility of cure.

[Manuscript data supplied by Evans's son, Dr. John Norris Evans of 23 Schermerhorn St., Brooklyn; obituaries in *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, Aug. 1, 1925; *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*, *N. Y. Times*, July 15, 1925.] E. P.

**EVANS, GEORGE HENRY** (Mar. 25, 1805–Feb. 2, 1856), land reformer, editor of the first labor papers in America, was born at Bromyard, Herefordshire, England, of a lower middle-class family. His parents were George and Sarah (White) Evans. He came to the United States with his father and brother in 1820 and soon became apprenticed to a printer at Ithaca, N. Y. Together with his brother, Frederick William [*q.v.*], he studied the writings of Thomas Paine and the other atheists of the day, with the result that both became confirmed atheists. His brother, however, after a visit to the Shaker community at Mount Lebanon, N. Y., in 1830, abandoned atheism for the religious communism of the Shakers, and subsequently became the most prominent member of that body in America. George Henry, on the other hand, remained an atheist for the rest of his life. He edited *The Man* at Ithaca about 1822, the *Working Man's Advocate* in New York City at various times from 1829 to 1845, and the *Daily Sentinel* and *Young America* at intervals from 1837 to 1853. After 1837 he spent a good deal of his time on a farm in New Jersey where he formulated his principles of agrarianism. His views were similar to those of Henry George [*q.v.*]. From 1827 to 1837 a series of working men's parties developed in Philadelphia, New York, and New England. The first number of Evans's paper, the *Working Man's Advocate*, contained reports of the working men's meetings in New York City in October 1829, and editorials advocating the working men's ticket. Evans took a leading part in the activities of the working men and described his paper as "designed solely to protect and advance their interests."

In 1840 he published a *History of the Origin and Progress of the Working Men's Party* in New York as a warning against the mistakes of that movement and a preparation for a new agrarianism. His theories were produced in opposition to the doctrines of association, Fourierism, and Owenism which were importations from Europe. His land reform was the direct outgrowth of the individualism of Thomas Paine and Thomas Jefferson. It employed the same theories of natural rights to overthrow the power of landed

property that they had employed to bring to an end British rule in America. The line of argument was as follows: man's right to life is the source of all other rights. This implies a right to use the materials of nature such as light, air, water, and soil. All others, such as liberty, labor, capital, and education, are acquired or derived. He therefore advocated the right of every man to an inalienable homestead limited to 160 acres, the abolition of all laws for the collection of debts and of imprisonment for debt, the abolition of chattel slavery and wages slavery, and equal rights for women. He condemned monopolies, among which he classed the United States Bank. For more than a quarter of a century he devoted his energies to agitation for land reform. His program of "free homesteads" influenced the labor movement forty years before Henry George's "single tax." They had a common diagnosis and in general held the same theory of treatment, only differing in the method of applying the cure. Evans died at Granville, N. J., in his fifty-first year.

[John R. Commons, *Hist. of Labour in the U. S.* (1918), I, 5, 234, 237, 242–44, 461, 522–31, 537, 559, and *A Doc. Hist. of Am. Industrial Society* (1910), vols. V, VII, VIII, IX; W. D. P. Bliss, *The New Encyc. of Social Reform* (4th ed., 1908), p. 450; Selig Perlman, *A Theory of the Labor Movement* (1928), pp. 176–89; obituary in *N. Y. Tribune*, Feb. 11, 1856.]

F. E. H.

**EVANS, HENRY CLAY** (June 18, 1843–Dec. 12, 1921), industrialist, politician, was born in Juniata County, Pa., the son of Col. Jesse B. Evans and his wife, Anna Single, both natives of that state. The colonel, who acquired his title in the state militia, was a pioneer in the manufacture of railway cars. When Henry was three years of age, the family removed to Lafayette County, Wis., and here the boy was reared. His father followed the gold rush to California in 1849 and died in Montana in 1869; but the family did not follow him on his wanderings. Young Henry Clay went to school and worked on the farm, and later was employed as a clerk in the office of an older brother who was register of deeds for the county (Scrap-book, *post*).

In the spring of 1864 he joined the Union army and did some campaigning in the neighborhood of Chattanooga. In September of that year he was honorably discharged from the service and secured clerical work with the quartermaster department at Chattanooga. He remained in this position until 1867 when he was sent to the Mexican border in a similar capacity. Here he worked for two years, and then journeyed to Westfield, N. Y., where on Feb. 18, 1869, he married Adelaide Durand. The following year he returned to Chattanooga where he made his home



for the remainder of his life. On taking up his permanent residence, he at once became interested in the manufacture of railway cars and organized the Chattanooga Car & Foundry Company. After having controlled this business for two years, he became an official in the Roane Iron Company. He remained for a decade in this work, rising from the position of superintendent of the plant to that of vice-president and general manager. At the end of that time he went back to the Car Company and retained an important interest in it for many years. He was a leading stockholder in several other important local industries.

In 1872, shortly after coming to Chattanooga, he was made school commissioner for the town and took a leading part in the organization of its educational system. In 1873 he was elected alderman, and he served several years in that capacity. In 1881 and again in 1882 he was elected mayor; and in 1884 he made his first race for Congress. Since he was a Republican and his district was normally Democratic, he was defeated in this contest, but cut down the opposition majority to a fraction of its former strength. In 1888 he ran again and this time was successful. During his term in the House of Representatives, he supported the Lodge "force bill" as a matter of party loyalty and against his private convictions. As a result of this action, he failed of reëlection in 1890 (Moore and Foster, *post*, II, 15). Three years later, he was appointed first assistant postmaster-general by President Harrison. In 1894 he was the nominee of his party for the governorship of Tennessee, Judge Peter Turney, the incumbent, being the Democratic candidate. Evans received a plurality vote, but Turney contested the election and a Democratic legislature decided in favor of the plaintiff (*Contest for Governor: Peter Turney, Contestant, vs. H. Clay Evans, Contestee*, 1895). The decision was thoroughly partisan, and it made a national figure of the defeated candidate. In 1896 he ran next to Hobart in the balloting for the vice-presidential nominee of the Republican party, and the following year he was appointed commissioner of pensions by President McKinley, which position he held until 1902. In that year President Roosevelt sent him to London as consul-general, where he remained until 1905.

At the end of this service, he retired to private life at his home in Chattanooga. Gradually he disposed of his major business interests and began to live less strenuously. Once more, however, he was called upon to assume an active rôle. When Chattanooga adopted the commission form of government in 1911, he was elected, on a non-

partisan ticket, commissioner of education and health. In this capacity he served a full term of four years, giving all his time to the work. Thus his political career ended as it had begun—in connection with the school system of the city. When he died suddenly, on Dec. 12, 1921, the mayor closed the municipal offices for half a day to do honor to his memory.

[J. T. Moore and A. P. Foster, *Tennessee, the Volunteer State* (1923); Goodspeed Pub. Co., *Hist. of Tenn., Hamilton County Suppl.* (1887), pp. 938–39; *East Tennessee Hist. and Biog.* (1893), p. 228; Scrap-book, clippings on prominent men of Tennessee, sketch of H. Clay Evans, 1906, in Tenn. State Lib.; *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *Chattanooga Daily Times*, Dec. 13 and 14, 1921.] T. P. A.

**EVANS, HUGH DAVEY** (Apr. 26, 1792–July 16, 1868), lawyer, lay-theologian, and editor of church periodicals, was born in Baltimore, Md., and there spent practically his entire life. He was the son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Davey) Evans and was named after the latter's father, Hugh Davey, a native of Londonderry, Ireland. His own father, whom he never knew, "a merchant in a small way and unfortunate in business," was of Welsh and English descent, son of George Evans, a Baptist deacon, and Rachel Gilpin, a Quakeress. Hugh was brought up in straitened circumstances by his mother, a communicant of the Episcopal Church, of which he was to become a widely known layman. Largely because of his devotion to her—she lived to be eighty-eight—he never married. His schooling was limited, but being from childhood an omnivorous reader, especially of history, he acquired a large stock of information. Beginning the study of law at eighteen, he was admitted to practise on Apr. 19, 1815. Not being "an adroit man of business" or well versed in human nature, he was not a particularly successful practitioner. Nothing he ever did brought him much financial remuneration and he lived a life of simplicity and self-denial. He had the reputation, however, of being learned in the law and was often special judge for trials of causes. In 1817 he was appointed reading clerk to one of the branches of the city council and in 1825 was employed to revise the city ordinances. He began the publication of legal works in 1827, issuing that year *An Essay on Pleading with a View to an Improved System.* This was followed by *Modern Entries, or Approved Precedents, of Declarations, Pleadings, Entries, and Writs* (2 vols., 1831–32), a revision of Thomas Harris's work; and *Maryland Common Law Practice, a Treatise on the Course of Proceedings in the Common Law Courts of the State of Maryland* (1839), a revised edition of which appeared in 1867. He was also an active member of the Maryland State Colonization Society and prepared the legal code for the Colony of Maryland in Liberia.

As time went on his interest in the history, polity, and doctrines of the Protestant Episcopal Church grew more and more absorbing. He had adopted High Church principles and came to be regarded as an authoritative exponent of them. His first theological article appeared in the *Protestant Episcopalian*, May 1835, and was a discussion of the validity of lay baptism. In 1843 he assumed the editorship of *The True Catholic*, a newly established monthly published under the patronage of Bishop Whittingham [*q.v.*] of Maryland. This paper he conducted with ability, writing a majority of the leading articles himself, until it went out of existence at the close of 1856. He was also a regular contributor to *The Register* (1852–53), a newspaper published in Philadelphia in the interest of the Protestant Episcopal Church; to *The Churchman* (1854–56), and *The American Church Monthly* (1857–58), both issued in New York; and during 1857 and 1858 he was editor of *The Monitor*, a weekly paper published in Baltimore by Joseph Robinson. His writings include: *Essays to Prove the Validity of Anglican Ordinations* (1844); 2nd series, 2 vols. (1851); *Theophilus Americanus; or Instructions for the Young Student Concerning the Church and the American Branch of It. Chiefly from the Fifth Edition of Theophilus Anglicanus. By Chr. Wordsworth, D.D., Canon of Westminster . . .* (1851, 1852, 1870); *An Essay on the Episcopate of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States* (1855); and *A Treatise on the Christian Doctrine of Marriage* (1870). He was prominent in the conventions of the Diocese of Maryland, and a deputy to all the General Conventions from 1847 until the outbreak of the Civil War, his Union sympathies preventing his election to the Convention of 1862. From 1852 to 1864 he was lecturer on civil and ecclesiastical law in the College of St. James, Washington County, Md., the title and duties of the office finally being changed so as to include lectures on history. Those he delivered in this field were chiefly on the English Constitution. He died in Baltimore and as stipulated in his will he was buried in his mother's grave in St. Paul's Churchyard.

[Hall Harrison, *Hugh Davey Evans, LL.D., A Memoir Founded Upon Recollections Written by Himself* (1870), contains bibliography which lists over a hundred of his contributions to the *True Catholic* and *The American Church Monthly*. An abridgment of same, with bibliography, is prefixed to Evans's *A Treatise on the Christian Doctrine of Marriage* (1870). See also sketch by Hall Harrison in *Am. Church Review*, Feb. 1884; the *Sun* (Baltimore), July 18, 1868.] H. E. S.

Evans

**EVANS, JOHN** (fl. 1703–1731), deputy governor of Pennsylvania from 1703 to 1707, was of Welsh descent. His father, Thomas Evans, is said to have been a seafaring man, a friend of William Penn. Before coming to Pennsylvania in 1704, John Evans had apparently traveled; and he had a love of literature which led him to bring some books with him. He had been appointed deputy governor by William Penn the year before his arrival. The proprietor wrote of Evans to James Logan, secretary of the province: "He shows not much, but has a good deal to show, and will gain upon the esteem of the better sort. He has travelled and seen armies, but never been in them. Book learning as to men and government he inclines to . . ." (Neill, *post*). As governor of a sober Quaker colony, however, he was an unfortunate choice. His pleasure-loving disposition shocked the colonists. With his companion, the younger William Penn, he led a gay, and probably wild, life. Pennsylvanians reported stories of their delinquencies: tales of riots in taverns, of hand to hand combats with local authorities—a constable on one occasion, an alderman on another. His love affairs brought him further disrepute, until, 1709, he married Rebecca Moore, daughter of John Moore, advocate of the Admiralty court. Evans was a stanch Anglican, anxious to further the interests of the church in America, as he assured the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel (*Historical Collections Relating to the American Colonial Church*, 1878, II, 25; V, 8). That fact alone would have made him objectionable to the Quakers.

He came to America at a time when the proprietorship was in a precarious state, due to attacks of the Crown, disagreements between Pennsylvania and the Lower Counties, and general dissatisfaction of the inhabitants with the government. With the help of Secretary Logan [*q.v.*], Evans tried to uphold the authority of the absent proprietor against the opposition of David Lloyd [*q.v.*], deputy judge, later chief justice of the province, and his associates. He was handicapped by the fact that his powers were not clearly defined. He aroused the wrath of the Assembly by vetoing several bills, including a provision to establish courts, issuing instead an ordinance for the administration of justice. He prorogued the Assembly in spite of its claim to the privilege of adjournment. The Assembly refused to make the necessary appropriation for defending Pennsylvania in the second colonial war with France; and the colonists criticized Evans for the methods to which he resorted. In the spring of 1706 the Quakers were especially indignant because Evans and his friends circulated a rumor that a French naval force was coming up the bay—a ruse to frighten the Quakers into joining the volunteer militia. The merchants of Pennsylvania protested to the proprietor against the erection of a fort at Newcastle, for the commander of the fort was to charge with tonnage duty in powder all vessels passing up or down the river. Inhabitants of the colony seized the commander, and this project for securing means of defense ended in failure. Evans was now bitterly hated, especially by the Quakers. In 1707 the Pennsylvania Assembly sent to William Penn a list of charges against the governor, and after learning from Logan and others that Evans was unsatisfactory, the proprietor appointed a successor. Little is known of Evans's subsequent career. Upon leaving America he retired to Pentry Manor, Denbigh, Wales, where as late as 1731 he was still living.

[Herbert L. Osgood, *The American Colonies in the Eighteenth Century* (1924), II, 262–79; E. D. Neill, "Memoir of John Evans," in *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1872.]

D. M. C.

**EVANS, JOHN** (Mar. 9, 1814–July 3, 1897), physician, founder of universities, and railroad builder, attained to prominence in three states, Indiana, Illinois, and Colorado. His birthplace was Waynesville, Ohio. David and Rachel (Burnet) Evans, his parents, were Quakers; the former a successful farmer and storekeeper in a small town, the latter a very religious woman and for a time a crusader against the liquor traffic. From both John inherited qualities that manifested themselves in later life. After attending the schools of Waynesville, he was sent in succession to the Academy at Richmond, Ind., Gwynedd Boarding School for Boys, in Pennsylvania, and Clermont Academy, near Philadelphia. While at Clermont he decided to become a physician. His parents disapproving, he accepted aid from friends, entered Lynn Medical College, Cincinnati, in 1836, and graduated in 1838. He immediately began the practise of medicine, and in the same year was married.

After a year spent in seeking an abiding place, the young physician settled with his wife, Hannah Canby, in Attica, Ind. The characteristics that were to make him eminent appeared immediately. Successful and prominent in his profession, he was at the same time the builder and owner of a profitable business block. He fell under the spell of Matthew Simpson [*q.v.*], later a bishop of the Methodist Church, and left the church of his fathers to join that of the Methodists. He imbibed from Simpson a zeal for education. At the same time he was an ardent anti-

slavery man and a leader in the movement to establish the first hospital for the insane in Indiana. After the legislature had acted favorably on the latter proposal, he was selected as the first superintendent of the new institution and moved to Indianapolis in 1845 to keep in touch with its construction. He resigned this office in 1848 to accept the chair of obstetrics in Rush Medical College in Chicago.

Evans now lived in Chicago and later in its suburb which was named for him, Evanston. Again he quickly gained prominence. Professor in Rush, he was also one of the editors and proprietors of the *Northwestern Medical and Surgical Journal* and one of the promoters of the institution later known as the Mercy Hospital. His interests were always broader than his profession, however. An alderman in the city in 1853 and 1854, he was selected as chairman of the committee on schools; during his term of office the first superintendent of schools was chosen. He took a leading part, with Orrington Lunt [*q.v.*], in the foundation of Northwestern University. The generosity which characterized him whenever church or education was concerned was shown in his endowment of two chairs, those of Latin language and literature, and mental and moral philosophy. Behind these activities and supporting them was the capable man of business. He invested in real estate in Chicago and Evanston, and constructed a business block in the former city. The great railroad builder of Colorado was foreshadowed in the director and part builder of the Fort Wayne & Chicago Railroad. On Aug. 18, 1853, he married his second wife, Margaret Patten Gray.

A highly respected professional and business man, Evans was appointed territorial governor of Colorado on Mar. 26, 1862. Once more he moved westward and took up his residence in Denver. As governor he assembled troops and dealt with the Indians; the demands of wartime left little opportunity for more constructive work. After his resignation in 1865 he was elected United States senator by those who hoped to see Colorado become a state; because of the failure of the statehood plan he never sat in Congress. After 1866 he engaged in what were to him more congenial pursuits. A quiet man and an abhorrer of publicity, the Governor, as he was called, was nevertheless always a leader in Colorado. He had given up his profession in 1859, and now devoted his attention to church, education, and business. Always a strong Methodist and an outstanding figure in the affairs of his church, he was generous to all struggling congregations; it is said that for years he gave one hundred dollars to every church of any denomination started in Colorado. Closely connected with this interest was his foundation of Colorado Seminary, later and better known as the University of Denver. He was its founder, its sound rock in times of financial distress, and the president of its board of trustees from its inception until his death.

Behind his frock-coated exterior, great beard, and quiet face lay the ideals of a philanthropist and the spirit of an adventurer in business. It was this spirit that upheld John Evans, the railroad builder. In the late sixties, when it was certain that Denver was not to be on a transcontinental railroad, he led the movement that resulted in the incorporation of the Denver Pacific Railroad & Telegraph Company, which was to connect Denver with the Union Pacific at Cheyenne. When the contractors failed the company, he assumed the responsibility for completing the road that was to save his city from isolation. On the opening of the line in June 1870, he was the hero of the day. He also promoted the South Park Railroad, which afforded a way to the mining districts across the Continental Divide. His last project, the Denver & New Orleans Railroad, incorporated in 1881, was to give Denver an outlet to the South. While engaged in these activities, he invested in land in and near Denver and built an office building, the Evans Block. In the nineties the Governor withdrew from active life. Fame was already his, and wealth. In 1895, by act of the legislature, the great peak lying to the west of Denver was renamed Mount Evans. The people of Colorado honored his memory at the end of his life with what was virtually a state funeral.

[E. C. McMechen, *Life of Gov. Evans* (1924); H. D. Teetor, in *Mag. of Western Hist.*, Apr. 1889; J. W. Whicker, in *Indiana Mag. of Hist.*, Sept. 1923; F. Hall, *Hist. of the State of Colorado* (1889–95); A. H. Wilde, *Northwestern Univ., A Hist.* (1905); J. P. Dunn, *Indiana and Indianans* (1919); N. Trottman, *Hist. of the Union Pacific* (1923); *Senate Ex. Doc. No. 51, Pt. 4*, 50 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 1849–62; *Northwestern Christian Advocate* (Chicago), May 19, July 7, 1897; *Denver Republican* and *Rocky Mt. News* (Denver), both July 3–7, 1897.]

J. F. W.

**EVANS, LAWRENCE BOYD** (Feb. 3, 1870–Oct. 30, 1928), lawyer, born in Radnor, Ohio, was descended from Irish and Welsh ancestors. One reached western Pennsylvania just before the Revolution; another, Rev. Evan Evans, came from Wales in 1828; others were of the pioneers who found new homes beyond the Alleghanies. A year after the birth of Lawrence, his parents moved to Noblesville, Ind., where in due course he graduated from the high school. He took the degree of Ph.B. in 1894, at the University of

Michigan, then, going to the University of Chicago, he was quickly appointed a fellow in political science, and took the degree of Ph.D. in 1898. Next, after getting in Kansas a beginner's experience in teaching, he went East to create and head a department of history and public law in Tufts College, where he served as a professor from 1900 to 1912. In entering thus on the life of the scholar, he had doubtless been stimulated by the example of his uncle Edward Payson Evans [*q.v.*], who adopted him as his son. Naturally the mind of Lawrence Boyd Evans turned in the same direction. While at Tufts he made a start by editing several of the series known as Handbooks of American Government, and later two volumes of the Writings of American Statesmen, devoted to Washington and Hamilton. Concluding that he should better equip himself for work in the field that particularly attracted him, in 1911 he entered the Harvard Law School, where he passed three years. Going into a Boston law office, he took up the task that was to be his chief interest during the rest of his days—the study of public law. In 1916 he published *Leading Cases on American Constitutional Law* and in 1917 *Leading Cases on International Law,* both of which have had second editions. Made a member of the commission to compile information for the state constitutional convention which was about to assemble, he contributed much to the value of its *Bulletins,* which were in the nature of monographs in political science; and to his skill as a legal draftsman was due much of the excellent workmanship to be found in the many amendments that followed.

Incidentally, in 1916, he had written a biography of Gov. Samuel W. McCall. Their friendship led to the appointment of Evans in December 1917 as state librarian of Massachusetts. However agreeable to his bookish tastes, the routine employment of librarian left him no time for following his bent, and so in 1919 he accepted the opportunity to go to Washington as counselor of the Brazilian Embassy, the pleasant duties of which office he performed till his death. As they did not require all his time, he was able also to act as contract expert for the War Department, and then through some years to carry on the delicate task of codifying the navigation laws for the United States Shipping Board. It was while so engaged that he was offered appointment to a judgeship in Egypt as a member of the "Mixed Tribunal," but he preferred to stay in his own country.

Ready to work with others for the advancement of the scholarly interests he had at heart, he became, while professor at Tufts, the president of



the New England History Teachers Association, and he was a member of the American History and American Political Science associations, the American Society of International Law, and the International Law Association, as well as the Authors' Clubs of Boston and London. Also he served as a member of the Committee on Copyrights of the Section of Patents, Trade Marks and Copyrights of the American Bar Association. In temperament he was cautious, prudent, careful. Both as a scholar and in personal relations, he was conspicuously conscientious. He took life seriously. His chief satisfaction he found in helping others, and notably in the aid he quietly gave to youths in straitened circumstances who were seeking education. In Washington he made his home at the Cosmos Club, where his kindly qualities won him many friends. He never married.

[*Library Jour.*, Jan. 1918; *Who's Who in America,* 1926–27; *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Oct. 30, 1928; *Washington Post,* Oct. 31, 1928; personal acquaintance and information from a relative.] R. L.

**EVANS, LEWIS** (*c.* 1700–June 12, 1756), geographer, was born in Pennsylvania and spent a considerable portion of his life there. He was early trained as a surveyor and in the pursuit of this occupation traveled extensively throughout the Middle Colonies. During these travels he made many observations and collected much material for "A Map of Pennsylvania, New-Jersey, New-York, And the Three Delaware Counties" which was published in 1749. This map is especially important because it traced in considerable detail the roads centering in Lancaster, York, and Carlisle, over which the great migrations from Pennsylvania across Virginia to the Carolinas and Tennessee took place. In 1752 he published a revision of this map, incorporating several corrections and additions. His best-known map, however, is "A General Map of the Middle British Colonies in America," which included the country from the Falls of the Ohio to Narragansett Bay and from Virginia to Montreal. This was published in 1755 in connection with a pamphlet of *Geographical, Historical, Political, Philosophical and Mechanical Essays: The First, Containing an Analysis of a General Map of the Middle British Colonies in America . . . Printed by B. Franklin and D. Hall. MDCCLV.* In the "Analysis," Evans pointed out the advantages to the English colonies of the Ohio country and urged a general study of that region and the ways by which it might be reached so that the French might be more easily driven out. This map, which was used by Braddock in his campaign, soon came to be regarded as the best map of the

region; and because of the care and accuracy with which it was prepared was generally accepted as the standard authority in settling boundary disputes.

In dedicating his map to Governor Thos. Pownall [*q.v.*] with the encomium that he esteemed him the best judge of it in America, Evans, long the tool of the Pownall faction, aroused bitter feeling among the Shirley adherents who, through a letter published in the *New York Mercury* of Jan. 5, 1756, severely criticized the "Analysis" and its writer. Evans, undaunted, published five days later, *Geographical, Historical, Political, Philosophical and Mechanical Essays. Number II,* in which he replied to his opponents in a vigorous fashion. He contemplated continuing the series, but in the following June he died, in New York City, while under arrest for a slander against Gov. Robert Hunter Morris (Stevens, *post,* 1920, p. 13). Another project which he never carried out was that of publishing maps of the separate colonies in greater detail and upon a larger scale. Evans's influence upon maps of America did not terminate with his death, however, for the London publishers pirated his map as early as 1756 and within the next half century repeatedly reissued it. Some of these editions give credit to Evans, while others do not. Chief among the former is Gov. Pownall's map of 1776 which together with his *Topographical Description of North America* (1776) is practically a new and enlarged edition of both Evans's map and his "Analysis." Although Pownall denounced the pirated editions of Evans's work, others continued to issue from the press, and even as late as 1814 the old copper plate of Kitchin's piracy of 1756, after fifty-eight years of life, was reissued as a new and general map.

[Louis A. Holman, *Old Maps and Their Makers* (1925); three studies by Henry N. Stevens: *Lewis Evans: His Map of the Middle British Colonies in America* (1905), *Ibid.*, Second edition, with numerous corrections and additions, including an account of his earlier map of 1749 (1920), and *Lewis Evans, His Map of 1752 Recently Brought to Light* (1924); John F. Watson, *Annals of Phila.* (1857), II, 561; Justin Winsor, *Narr. and Crit. Hist. of America,* vol. V (1887); *Monthly Review, or Lit. Jour.,* Jan., Sept. 1756.]

G. H. B.

**EVANS, NATHAN GEORGE** (Feb. 6, 1824–Nov. 30, 1868), Confederate general, was born at Marion, S. C., the third son of Thomas and Jane Beverly (Daniel) Evans, and was educated at Randolph-Macon College, and the United States Military Academy, graduating from the latter in 1848. He served in the West with the 1st and 2nd Dragoons until 1855, when he was appointed first lieutenant in the newly organized 2nd (now 5th) Cavalry. He was promoted captain in 1856. He participated in numerous skirmishes with hostile Indians, in one of which, near Washita village, Indian Territory, Oct. 1, 1858, he killed two Comanches in hand-to-hand fight. In 1860 he was married to Ann Victoria Gary, sister of Gen. Martin W. Gary [*q.v.*]. Resigning his commission, Feb. 27, 1861, he was appointed a major and adjutant-general in the South Carolina army, and in that capacity served in the operations against Fort Sumter. In May he was appointed a captain of cavalry in the regular army of the Confederate States. At Bull Run, he commanded a small brigade, posted on the extreme left of Beauregard's corps, guarding the stone bridge. Here he detected the movement of McDowell's army to turn the Confederate flank, shifted his brigade to meet it, and for some time held back the advance, at first alone, and later in conjunction with Bee's command. Heavily outnumbered, Evans's brigade finally broke up, but its resistance had saved the Confederate army and made its final victory possible. He was given temporary rank as a colonel a few days later. In October 1861, he commanded at the battle of Ball's Bluff, an unimportant affair, but regarded at the time, both North and South, as a great and decisive battle. This brought him a vote of thanks from the Confederate Congress, a gold medal from his state, appointment as a brigadier-general, and assignment to the command of an independent brigade which normally served in the Carolinas but was sent so often to temporary duty elsewhere that it has been called the "tramp brigade." Thus it fought at the second battle of Bull Run, at South Mountain, and at Antietam, attached to the Army of Northern Virginia—Evans being in temporary command of a division at the last two of these battles; and in 1863, during the Vicksburg campaign, it was with Johnston's army in the West. Between these two expeditions, Evans commanded it in the little battle of Kinston, N. C., where he was defeated by Union forces greatly superior in numbers. Hitherto his military reputation had been good, though acquired to some extent by accident, but from early in 1863 he was in frequent difficulties. He was tried on charges of intoxication, and acquitted; and again tried and acquitted, a few months later, for alleged disobedience of orders. He was deprived of command for a long period, for Gen. Beauregard, the department commander, considered him incompetent. An inspector-general reported that the discipline and efficiency of his brigade were not satisfactory, and that its commander had lost the confidence of his men (*Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vol.

XXVIII, pt. 2, pp. 583–90). Soon after his return to duty, in the spring of 1864, he was seriously injured by a fall from his horse, and again relinquished command. He was on duty again during the spring of 1865, and accompanied Jefferson Davis for some time after the Confederate government was driven from Richmond. Following the war, he became principal of a high school at Midway, Bullock County, Ala., where he died. "A good type of the rip-roaring, scorn-all-care element," was Fitzhugh Lee's characterization of him. Personal courage he displayed often, and his action at Bull Run was prompt and soldierly, but otherwise he seems to have shown slight fitness for command.

[*Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), V, 392–94; G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), II, 365–66; R. M. Johnston, *Bull Run, Its Strategy and Tactics* (1913); *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vols. II, V, VI, XII (pt. 2), XIV, XVIII, XIX (pts. 1, 2), XXVII (pt. 2), XXXV (pts. 1, 2), LI (pts. 1, 2); J. D. Evans, *Hist. of Nathaniel Evans of Catfish Creek and his Descendants* (1905); unpublished Confederate records in the War Department.] T. M. S.

**EVANS, NATHANIEL** (June 8, 1742–Oct. 29, 1767), clergyman of the Church of England, but better known for his contribution to the beginnings of lyric poetry in America, was born in Philadelphia. His father, Edward Evans, was a merchant and looked forward to a mercantile career for his son. Wishing him to be well educated, however, he sent him to the Academy, recently established by citizens of Philadelphia under the leadership of Benjamin Franklin, and presided over by Rev. William Smith [*q.v.*]. Here he remained six years, winning the warm affection of its head and becoming imbued with his enthusiasm for literature. He was then put into a counting-house, but having little taste for business, at the expiration of his apprenticeship he returned to the Academy, which in 1754 had become a college with the power to grant degrees. In 1765, because of his exceptional gifts and promise, he was awarded an M.A. by special act of the trustees, although he had not previously received a bachelor's degree. Highly commended by prominent Philadelphians both for his prudence and religious zeal as well as for the "many specimens of genius" which he had shown, he went to England where, sponsored by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, he was ordained by Dr. Richard Terrick, Bishop of London. After several months abroad, he returned as missionary for Gloucester County, N. J., and chaplain to Lord Viscount Kilmorey of Ireland. In less than two years, however, he died of tuberculosis at his home in Haddonfield, N. J., and "thus hastily," as he had



written of his friend, the poet Thomas Godfrey, "was snatch'd off in the prime of manhood this very promising genius, beloved and lamented by all who knew him." His body was taken to Philadelphia and buried in Christ Church.

Evans was one of the Philadelphia group which included, among others, Francis Hopkinson and Thomas Godfrey [*qq.v.*], whose members had high literary ideals and sought to develop literature in America. When but sixteen years old he wrote a *Pastoral Eclogue* in which he asks if other lands shall resound with heavenly lays,

> "And this new world ne'er feel the muse's fire,
> No beauties charm us, or no deeds inspire?"

He was the author of *An Ode on the Late Glorious Successes of His Majesty's Arms, and the Present Greatness of the English Nation,* published in 1762, and in the following year wrote exercises performed at the Commencement of the College of Philadelphia and the college at Princeton. (See *Poems,* etc., and *A Dialogue on Peace, an Entertainment given by the Senior Class . . . at Nassau Hall,* 1763.) In 1765 he prepared an edition of Thomas Godfrey's works with a memoir, *Juvenile Poems on Various Subjects, with The Prince of Parthia, a Tragedy.* On his way home from England he had met Elizabeth Graeme, later Mrs. Ferguson [*q.v.*], with whom he carried on a versified correspondence. To her, just before his death, and to his old teacher and friend, Dr. Smith, he committed his papers. From these, in 1772, the latter, having secured 759 subscribers, published *Poems on Several Occasions, with Some Other Compositions.* In his introduction the editor includes what seems to have been intended as a preface, written by Evans, and revealing his high conception of the function of poetry. The volume also contains a sermon on "The Love of the World Incompatible with the Love of God" (published separately, 1766). The poems are the work of a youthful student of the English poets, and are imitative of Milton, Cowley, Prior, Gray, and Collins, but are not without beauty, grace, and spontaneity.

[In addition to Dr. Smith's introduction to Evans's *Poems,* see Ellis P. Oberholtzer, *The Lit. Hist. of Philadelphia* (1906); Horace W. Smith, *Life and Correspondence of the Rev. Wm. Smith, D.D.* (1880), vol. I; *N. J. Archives,* 1 ser. vols. XXV (1903) and XXVII (1905), p. 595, ed. by Wm. Nelson; M. Katherine Jackson, *Outlines of the Lit. Hist. of Colonial Pa.* (1906); and the introduction to Archibald Henderson's edition of Thos. Godfrey's *The Prince of Parthia* (1917).] H. E. S.

**EVANS, OLIVER** (1755–Apr. 15, 1819), inventor, America's first steam-engine builder, was born in New Castle County, near Newport, Del.,

where his father, Charles Evans, was a farmer of moderate means and of respectable standing. He was descended from Evan Evans [*q.v.*], second rector of Christ Church, Philadelphia. After attending the country school until he was fourteen, Oliver apprenticed himself to a wagon-maker. In this work his mechanical ingenuity came to light almost immediately, but, in addition, he took every leisure moment to gain information from books, particularly on mathematics and mechanics. He thus learned when about seventeen of the atmospheric steam-engine which with its separate condenser was perfected by James Watt in 1769, and the desire of his life thereafter was to devote himself to the development of the steam-engine and its utilization. Because of financial limitations, however, and public ridicule of his ideas, he was past forty before realizing his ambition.

About the time that he reached his majority he was engaged in making card teeth for carding wool, and two years later he perfected a machine which could turn out 1,500 cards a minute. He also projected about this time a plan for "pricking" leather in cards and at the same time cutting, bending, and setting the teeth. He applied to the Pennsylvania legislature for funds with which to introduce the machinery but the grant was refused. In 1780 he joined his brothers, who were millers in Wilmington, and immediately began work on a series of improvements in flour-mill machinery which he completed and put into successful operation five years later. The machines, operated by water-power, included elevators, conveyors, hopper boy, drill, and descenders. They performed every necessary movement of the grain and meal from one part of the mill to another or from one machine to another without the aid of manual labor. Opposition to the devices was universal on the part of millers, as Evans found subsequently in traveling throughout Pennsylvania, Delaware, and Virginia in a fruitless endeavor to introduce his machines.

During these years he had not forgotten the steam-engine, and in 1786 and 1787 he petitioned the legislatures of Pennsylvania and Maryland, respectively, for the exclusive rights to use his "improvements in flour mills and steam carriages" in those states. Pennsylvania granted the mill improvement part of the petition, while Maryland granted the whole of it on the ground that "it could injure no one." Evans thereupon set about in earnest making experiments in steam. He could do this only in a small way because he could find no one willing to contribute to the expense of his undertakings. After devoting thirteen years in Philadelphia, where he had

Evans

settled shortly after his marriage, to the development of a steam carriage, he laid it aside to concentrate his attention on a stationary steam-engine in the hope of obtaining additional funds through sales. By 1802 he had an engine running in his mill. It was a high-pressure steam-engine with a cylinder six inches in diameter and a piston of eighteen inches stroke. While its construction had used up all of his money, its success soon became known and the following year Evans started in business as a regular engine builder, specializing in high pressure engines, which were then looked upon as the height of folly. He was probably the first man in the United States to make a specialty of this work. In 1804 he constructed a steam dredge for use in the Schuylkill River and transported the scow, which he humorously named "Orukter Amphibole," and machinery under its own power from his mill to the river. He established the Mars Iron Works in 1807, and by 1819 fifty steam-engines which he had built were in use throughout the states of the Atlantic Coast. His last great work was completed in 1817, two years before his death, when he designed and constructed the engine and boilers for the Fairmount Waterworks in Philadelphia. The engine was of the high pressure type, having a twenty-inch cylinder and piston with a five-foot stroke, while the four boilers yielded steam at 200 pounds pressure.

Evans never built a steam carriage such as he advocated, but there is hardly any doubt that had he received the patronage and pecuniary assistance that others, such as Fulton, received, the steamboat and steam carriage might have been in operation in America much earlier. During the close of his life, when machinery began to come into general use in flour-milling, Evans's patents were brazenly infringed, but he succeeded eventually in having his rights sustained. He was the author of two small books on mechanics, *The Young Mill-Wright & Miller's Guide* (1795) and *The Abortion of the Young Engineer's Guide* (1805). In 1780 he was married to the daughter of John Tomlinson, a farmer of Delaware, who with two daughters survived him. In 1810 his two sons-in-law went into business with him, relieving him of some of his business cares.

[Coleman Sellers, Jr., "Oliver Evans and His Inventions," in *Jour. of the Franklin Inst.*, July 1886; Geo. A. Latimer, "A Sketch of the Life of Oliver Evans," in *Harkness' Mag.* (Wilmington, Del.), Mar. 1873; Henry Howe, *Memoirs of the Most Eminent Am. Mechanics* (1844); W. B. Kaempffert, *Popular Hist. of Am. Invention* (1924); J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884); N. Y. *Evening Post*, Apr. 16, 1819; U. S. Nat. Museum correspondence.]

C. W. M.

**EVANS, ROBLEY DUNGLISON** (Aug. 18, 1846–Jan. 3, 1912), "Fighting Bob Evans," naval officer, one of the four children of Samuel Andrew Jackson and Sally Ann (Jackson) Evans, was born at Floyd Court House, Va. His father, who was a country physician, died when young Evans was ten years of age, and the next year the boy was sent to live with an uncle in Washington, D. C. He received education in the public schools but was so interested in the sea and shipping that he spent much of his time by the Potomac watching the vessels in the harbor. He had about decided to run away to sea when William H. Hooper, a friend of his uncle and delegate to Congress from Utah, suggested that he establish a residence in Utah and then be appointed to the naval academy from that territory. The trip West to accomplish this legality involved perilous adventures with hostile Indians, and at the age of thirteen the boy was in his first fight and incidentally received his first wound. His career at Annapolis was duly begun but was cut short owing to the outbreak of the Civil War. In October 1863 at the age of seventeen, Evans was commissioned acting ensign in the United States navy in spite of family pressure that sought to have him join the Confederate forces.

In the second attack on Fort Fisher, N. C., in January 1864, Evans was ordered to command a company of marines about to engage in an assault by land. He received four wounds, but while lying wounded he managed to kill off a sniper who was trying to exterminate him. He was invalided out of the service but his fighting qualities were so dominant that he appealed to Congress and gained a reinstatement. In 1876 he perfected a long-distance signal lamp much used in the service. He was made commander on July 12, 1878. He was considered an expert on steel-making, especially steel plates. His influence at Washington was a considerable factor in the decision to build battleships of steel in the future. In 1886–87 he was chief inspector of steel, in which capacity he had charge of determining the quality of material about to be used in constructing the new cruisers.

In August 1891 Evans was placed in command of a steel gunboat, the *Yorktown,* and ordered to Chile, between which country and the United States relations were strained. Here he was called upon to manifest all the tact, diplomacy, and patience that was in him. At the same time, he had to uphold the prestige of his country while defying practically the entire Chilean navy with his little gunboat. The following year, in charge of a flotilla, he proceeded to the Bering Sea to stop abuses in the seal fisheries. Although this



assignment was also involved in international complications, it was so well performed that he was especially mentioned by the president in a message to Congress, a rare honor in peace times.

Evans attained his captaincy on June 27, 1893, and in 1895 took the *New York* to the Kiel Canal celebration. In 1898 his ship, the *Iowa,* fired the first gun at Cervera's fleet as it came out of Santiago. On Feb. 11, 1901, he was commissioned rear-admiral, and in 1902 he was made commanding officer of the entire Asiatic fleet. While in the Far East, he greatly improved the sub-caliber firing practise, and also invented a new loading machine used in the gunnery work. When, in 1907, President Roosevelt decided to send the fleet around the world, Evans was chosen its commander-in-chief. He conducted it through the Straits of Magellan and as far north as Magdalena Bay. Illness overtook him there, however, and he was obliged to retire. In a personal letter, Roosevelt paid him the compliment of stating that the fleet was in better shape when it reached San Francisco than it was when it left Hampton Roads.

In 1871, Evans had married Charlotte Taylor, a sister of his brother officer, Henry C. Taylor. To them three children were born. In spite of his manifold activities, he found time to write two books: *A Sailor's Log; Recollections of Forty Years of Naval Life* (1901), and *An Admiral's Log; being Continued Recollections of Naval Life* (1910).

[Navy Registers and Navy Department records; "Naval Operations of the War with Spain," *House Doc. No. 3,* 55 Cong., 3 Sess.; L. R. Hamersly, *The Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (7th ed., 1902); *Who's Who in America,* 1910–11; *Army and Navy Jour.,* Jan. 6, 1912; W. C. Tyler, in *U. S. Naval Inst. Proc.,* Nov. 1926.] A. R. B.

**EVANS, THOMAS** (Feb. 23, 1798–May 25, 1868), Quaker minister and editor, was a descendant in the third generation of the Gwynedd group of settlers in Pennsylvania. His parents, Jonathan Evans, Jr., and Hannah (Bacon) Evans were residents of the city of Philadelphia and their seven children, five sons and two daughters, were reared in the best traditions of the Society of Friends. The most substantial education of the city was at this time (1812–16) given in the Academy at Fourth and Chestnut Streets. It was one of the Penn Charter Schools. Solomon Roberts was head master and trained his boys in advanced mathematics as well as in ancient languages, including Hebrew. Under him young Thomas acquired a student habit that was lifelong. At the age of twenty-one he established himself as a druggist. The fifteen years (1820–35) embraced in his young manhood were stir-

ring times in the Society of Friends. For the first five years of this period, he was occupied with constructive work which included a journey (1821–22) on religious service with an English Friend, George Withy, into Ohio and into some of the Southern states. As a climax, a crowded public meeting of a deeply impressive character was held in the Hall of the House of Representatives in Washington (*Washington Gazette*, Jan. 14, 1822). Thomas Evans made this record in regard to it: "The floor was literally strewed with tears, and it was one of the most remarkable meetings I had ever attended."

In 1827 the schism in the Society of Friends culminated. From that date the two bodies were known as Hicksite and Orthodox. Ostensibly, Socinianism caused the break, but a hundred years after, the breach officially healed, one easily perceives that various unhappy circumstances were also responsible. Thomas Evans was associated with his father as an able defender of the orthodox faith but on reflection in later years he characterized the separation as the "most mournful controversy that ever divided a once united people." Ignorance of Quaker principles and history in Evans's opinion had been largely responsible for the whole sorry business, and he henceforth found his life-work, apart from his service as a minister, in an industrious effort to correct this condition. In 1828 he published *An Exposition of the Faith of the Religious Society of Friends*, quoting 181 Friends of the previous centuries in support of the orthodox position. The *Exposition* was followed many years later by *A Concise Account of the Religious Society of Friends* (1856), which under forty-five headings gives the doctrines and practises of the Society. In 1847 he issued a volume entitled *Examples of Youthful Piety*, to meet the needs of the religious training of children. With his brother William, in 1837 he entered upon the publication of *The Friends' Library* (1837–50). This includes fourteen quarto volumes of about five hundred pages each, containing 105 articles, mostly memoirs and journals but also Penn's well-known "No Cross, No Crown," and "The Institution of the Discipline," carefully edited. In 1854 William and Thomas Evans published four volumes under the title, *Piety Promoted, in a Collection of the Dying Sayings of Many of the People Called Quakers*. All this work was done with meticulous care and in the dignified style of the time. It represents a permanent contribution to the history and professed faith of the followers of George Fox. After 1844 Thomas Evans was widely known as a minister. It was said of him that "while he retained all the simplicity and

Evans

correctness of an apostle, he was eloquent in a high degree." He married Catharine Wistar of Germantown in 1834. After an accident, in 1847, when he was thrown from his carriage, and injured his spine, his health was precarious. In 1851 upon the advice of physicians he took an ocean voyage, and with his wife visited London and the Isle of Wight. He died in Philadelphia in his seventieth year, four of his five children surviving him.

[*Memorials Concerning Deceased Friends: Being a Selection from the Records of the Yearly Meeting of Pa. 1788–1878* (4th ed., 1879); *North American and United States Gazette* (Phila.), June 22, 1868. *Quaker Biographies*, 2 ser., vol. I (1927).] J. H. B.

**EVANS, THOMAS WILTBERGER** (Dec. 23, 1823–Nov. 14, 1897), dentist, and philanthropist, born in Philadelphia, Pa., was the son of William Milnor and Catherine Anne (Wiltberger) Evans and a descendant of a family of Welsh Quakers who had emigrated to Philadelphia in 1682. He received a common-school education and at the age of fourteen he became apprenticed to Joseph Warner, a silversmith of Philadelphia whose business included the manufacture of dental implements. Through this association he acquired an interest in dentistry and, in 1841, became a student of Dr. John De Haven White [*q.v.*] of Philadelphia. During the two years he remained with White he attended lectures at the Jefferson Medical College. Before leaving Philadelphia in 1843 he married Agnes Josephine Doyle. He practised a short time in Baltimore, Md., and then joined Dr. Philip Van Patten in his dental practise in Lancaster, Pa. It was during this period that Evans made a series of gold contour filling operations which, exhibited at the Franklin Institute in 1847, brought him his first public recognition. He soon after accepted an invitation to associate himself with Dr. C. Starr Brewster, an American dentist with a large and successful clientele in Paris; he remained with Brewster until 1850, when he opened his own office at 15 rue de la Paix. A friendship with Napoleon III, begun during professional services and assiduously cultivated, laid the foundations of a large private fortune and the most distinguished dental practise of the nineteenth century. A high degree of professional skill, an attractive personality, and a tactful wife enabled him not only to become the dentist to all the important Royal families of Europe, but also, to many of them, a personal friend. As his success grew, Evans's conceit, ever present, became boundless. He came to consider himself not only a successful dentist, but an author and a diplomat. Of his numerous diplomatic missions, which were usually undertaken on his own initiative, he con-

sidered the most brilliant to have been that to President Lincoln during the Civil War. This mission, performed during the fall of 1864 and related at length in his *Memoirs,* came at a time when Napoleon was considering the recognition of the Confederacy and, according to Evans, had begun negotiations to that end with the English government. The report of Evans, predicting victory for the North, decided Napoleon against recognition. However, the only evidence for this mission and its remarkable results is that supplied by Evans, who was ever generous in crediting his own exploits. Of greater authenticity are the important services he rendered the Empress Eugénie in escaping from Paris during the riots that followed the disaster at Sedan at the close of the Franco-Prussian War and in establishing her in the English exile. If Evans was naïve, ambitious, and vain, as his *Memoirs* and contemporary testimony both reveal him, he was also generous and charitable. Through his friendship with Napoleon he learned in advance of the improvements in Paris projected by Baron Haussmann; the resulting sagacious investments in real estate formed the basis of his fortune. During the Crimean and the Franco-Prussian wars he spent large sums providing ambulance corps and other measures of relief for the wounded. During the American Civil War he organized the United States Sanitary Commission at Philadelphia. These services have been fully recorded in three volumes by Evans: *La Commission Sanitaire des États-Unis* (Paris, 1865), *Les Institutions Sanitaires pendant le Conflit Austro-Prussien-Italien* (Paris, 1867), and *History of the American Ambulance established in Paris during the Siege of 1870–71* (London, 1873). His single, and unsuccessful, literary effort was a lengthy introduction to the *Memoirs of Heinrich Heine,* published in London in 1884. Evans established and supported the first American newspaper in Paris, the *American Register,* edited by his colleague, Dr. Edward A. Crane; this ceased publication shortly after his death. He was an infrequent contributor to dental journals, but his few publications demonstrate a fertility of resource and originality of thought. His rôle in the history of American dentistry is considerable. He was one of the first to experiment with vulcanite as a base for artificial dentures and in promoting the use of nitrous oxide as an anesthetic. His services in the improvement and use of dental amalgams were valuable, and he was active in the development of technique and mechanisms for the correction of irregularities of the teeth, now known as orthodontia. His own distinguished reputation established the prestige of American dentistry in Europe. It was appropriate that the bulk of his fortune was used in establishing the Thomas W. Evans Museum and Dental Institute, now the Dental School of the University of Pennsylvania.

[*Memoirs of Dr. Thomas W. Evans: The Second French Empire,* ed. by Edward A. Crane (N. Y., 1905; London, 2 vols., 1905; French translation by E. Philippi, Paris, 1910); *N. Y. Times,* Nov. 16, 24, 1897, and Jan. 23, 1898; *N. Y. Tribune,* Dec. 28, 1890; *Saturday Review* (London), Mar. 24, 1906; *Dental Cosmos,* Jan. 1898; letters and MSS. in T. W. Evans Museum and Dental Institute, Phila.; information from Edward C. Kirk and Henry Rainey of Philadelphia, and from Lester L. and Frank L. Evans of Washington, D. C.; private information.]

F. M—n.

**EVANS, WALTER** (Sept. 18, 1842–Dec. 30, 1923), jurist, congressman, was born in Barren County, Ky., the son of Joseph Warder and Matilda (Ritter) Evans. His only formal education was received in the country schools near his father's farm. At the opening of the Civil War he was working as a deputy in the office of the county clerk at Hopkinsville. He entered the Union army as a second lieutenant in the 25th Kentucky Infantry, saw service at Fort Donelson, and was promoted to a captaincy for his conduct in this battle. In 1863 he resigned his commission when his regiment was consolidated with another. After leaving the army he went back to Hopkinsville to resume his work in the office of the county clerk. Later he worked as a deputy in the office of the circuit clerk at the same place. He studied law at night and was admitted to the bar in 1864, practising for the next ten years in Hopkinsville. An increasing reputation is indicated by his election as a representative from Christian County in the lower house of the legislature, 1871–73, and as state senator for the 6th District, 1873–75 (*Journal of the House of Representatives,* 1871–72, p. 1; *Journal of the Senate,* 1873, p. 42). After two years he abandoned his political career for the time being and removed to Louisville where he resumed the practise of law.

Whatever his ability, there can, at least, be no doubt of his prominence in his party at this time. He was a delegate to the Republican National conventions of 1868, 1872, 1880, and 1884, and was one of the men who in 1880 stood firmly for Grant until the end. He had been the unsuccessful candidate of his party for governor of Kentucky in 1879, but in May 1883 he received the reward for his "Stalwart" activities when Arthur appointed him commissioner of internal revenue. After two years in this office a change in the national administration once more consigned him to private life and he resumed the practise of law in Louisville. In 1894 he was elected to Congress from his district, having the distinction of being

the first Republican to represent it. He served two terms in Congress. He was a member of the committee on ways and means and chairman of its sub-committee on internal revenue. His chief activities were in connection with the tariff and the passage of pension bills; he had a prominent part in formulating the Dingley Tariff law.

Retiring from Congress on Mar. 4, 1899, he was appointed the same day as federal judge for the district of Kentucky. The appointment was due more to his warm friendship with McKinley, perhaps, than to his merits or reputation as a jurist, but as a matter of fact in this position Evans showed more ability and won more honor than in any other office he held. As a legislator he had shown himself a strong partisan; as a judge he displayed such independence as to attract wide attention and wide criticism. His most widely discussed decisions were those in regard to the "night riders" in the tobacco disturbances in western Kentucky, and, particularly, his decision that the war-time prohibition act was invalid after the conclusion of the World War. He could not be numbered in the list of great jurists, but he possessed the esteem of his contemporaries, of both parties, while he was on the bench.

Evans was twice married: in 1868 to Louise Gowen, who died in 1905, and in 1915 to Sarah Louise Wood of Worcester, Mass. He had two children by his first marriage, neither of whom survived him.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Proc. Twenty-third Ann. Meeting Ky. State Bar Asso.* (1924); *Boston Transcript*, Nov. 19, 1919; *Courier-Journal* (Louisville), *Louisville Herald*, and *Louisville Post*, Dec. 31, 1923.] R. S. C—l.

**EVANS, WARREN FELT** (Dec. 23, 1817–Sept. 4, 1889), clergyman, author of books on Mental Cure, was born in Rockingham, Vt., sixth of the seven children of Eli and Sarah (Edson) Evans. He was descended from John Evans, one of the early settlers of Roxbury, Mass. His boyhood was that of a farmer's son, but he aspired to a college education and attended Chester Academy to prepare for Middlebury College, which he entered in 1837. In the following year he entered the sophomore class in Dartmouth College, where he remained until the middle of his junior year, when, eager to enter upon the Methodist ministry—and perhaps to wed—he left without a degree. On June 21, 1840, he married Charlotte Tinker, but he was not admitted to the New Hampshire Conference of the Methodist Church until 1844. He was first assigned to the Goffstown mission. He served in no less than eleven charges until 1864 when he withdrew from the Conference. He had been an assiduous reader of Swedenborg and now with a group of

Evans

followers united with the New Church. Subsequently he wrote three books on Swedenborgianism, none of which had any enduring significance.

Having developed "a nervous affection that was complicated with a chronic disorder" (Leonard, *post*), he visited Dr. Phineas P. Quimby [*q.v.*] of Portland, Me., for treatment in 1863, and became not merely a patient but a disciple of this well-known healer. This was a turning point in his career. He visited Dr. Quimby a second time and then himself began to practise "mental medicine" at Claremont, N. H. Here he wrote in 1869 *The Mental-Cure, Illustrating the Influence of the Mind on the Body, both in Health and Disease, and the Psychological Method of Treatment.* This was followed by *Mental Medicine: a Theoretical and Practical Treatise on Medical Psychology* (1872) and *Soul and Body; or the Spiritual Science of Health and Disease* (1876). These three volumes contain the essential features of his philosophy and therapy. A fourth volume, *The Divine Law of Cure* (1884), was the culmination, the author assures the reader, of a life-long study to which the previous volumes were introductory. His system of therapy is frankly derived from Quimby (*Mental Medicine*, p. 210) whose success was due, Evans believed, to the recognition of the power of suggestion—to reliance upon psychical remedies instead of drugs. "Disease," wrote Evans, "is not so much a mere physical derangement . . . as it is an abnormal mental condition . . . a wrong belief, a falsity" (*Ibid.*, p. 209). "If by any therapeutic device you remove the morbid idea . . . you cure the malady" (*The Divine Law*, p. 9). This, he believed, was the explanation of the cures wrought by Christ. The theoretical basis for mental cure he found in the idealistic philosophy of Berkeley and the German thinkers from Fichte to Hegel, and in the spiritual philosophy of Swedenborg. He has thus many points of contact with the New England Transcendentalists; and he anticipated by some years the doctrine laid down by Mary Morse Baker Eddy [*q.v.*] in *Science and Health.*

Sometime in the year 1870 Evans established a sort of sanitorium—the Evans Home—in Salisbury, Mass., where he is said to have effected all manner of cures by mental treatment and to have taught others to practise mental medicine. His fame was more than local, and, in order to reach those who could not come under his immediate instruction, he published *The Primitive Mind Cure* (1885) and *Esoteric Christianity and Mental Therapeutics* (1886). Those publications had a wide sale, but Evans was never interested in financial profit (Leonard, *post*). He seems to

have been a kindly man with "calm and reassuring eyes," "a firm, clear, sweetly modulated voice," and "a character of purity." He is said to have cured his own chronic disorder and he lived until his seventy-second year. He died in 1889, leaving a widow and three children.

[L. S. Hayes, *Hist. of the Town of Rockingham, Vt.* (1907), contains items of genealogical interest. O. Cole and O. S. Baketel, editors, *Hist. of the N. H. Conf. of the Meth. Episc. Church* (1929), give information about Evans's charges. His only biographer is W. J. Leonard, who printed in 1903 a small pamphlet with the title *The Pioneer Apostle of Mental Science: A Sketch of the Life and Work of the Reverend W. F. Evans, M.D.* This undated pamphlet is, however, rather an appreciation than a narrative. The inner life of Evans is best traced in his writings.] A. J.

**EVANS, WILLIAM THOMAS** (Nov. 13, 1843–Nov. 25, 1918), patron of American art, was born at Clough-Jordan, Ireland, and, as an infant, was brought to the United States by his parents William and Maria Jane (Williams) Evans, both descendants of Welsh officers in Cromwell's army. He was educated in the public schools of New York City, and because of excellent standing in his studies, was permitted to enter the College of the City of New York (then the New York Free Academy) before attaining the age commonly required. After two years at college he entered an architect's office where he studied for a year; and after a third year in college, accepted a position in the counting house of E. S. Jaffray & Company. This led him into a business career, for when two senior clerks, Philo L. Mills and John Gibb, left Jaffray's to form the firm of Mills & Gibb, wholesale dry-goods merchants, he went with them, first as an employee, later, and practically until his death, as a member of the firm.

Undoubtedly his study of architecture turned his attention to art but he himself dated his definite interest in American painting to a book, G. W. Sheldon's *American Painters,* which his wife (Mary Jane Hinman of New York, whom he had married in 1867) gave him on his birthday in 1879. They were living at that time in a house on Van Vorst Square, Jersey City, and there Evans began collecting paintings. So rapidly did acquisitions accumulate that he added a picture gallery to this house. When in 1890 this home was given up Evans sold all the paintings by foreign artists which he owned, retaining only those which were by American painters. In 1892 the family took possession of a new house at 5 West Seventy-sixth St., New York, to which a new gallery had been added, and therein were hung the American pictures. From that time on Evans bought only works by Americans. A large part of the collection which hung in the New York house was sent abroad, by invitation, for display in Austria and Bavaria. This was one of the first exhibitions of American paintings shown abroad, and the Bavarian government decorated Evans with the Order of St. Michael.

Evans, inherently a lover of art, was also a man of business acumen, essentially a friend of American artists, and one of the first to regard the works of American painters as profitable investment. In 1900, when he moved to a new house in Montclair, N. J., which had no picture gallery, Evans sold his entire collection of 270 American paintings, which he had bought in most instances, directly from the painters (see *Catalogue of American Paintings Belonging to W. T. Evans to be sold . . . Jan. 31 and Feb. 1 and 2 . . . on Exhibit at the American Art Galleries,* 1900), and by this sale, which brought him the sum of $159,340, established for the first time market values for the works of American artists. No sooner was this collection sold than he started another. In a comparatively short time the new purchases filled his house in Montclair to overflowing, and even the loft of his stable was turned into a gallery. In March 1907 he offered to the National Gallery of Art (lately legalized by a decree of the Supreme Court of the District of Columbia), a collection of paintings by contemporary American artists, and promptly upon acceptance turned over to the nation forty-three works, including masterpieces by Winslow Homer, LaFarge, Inness, and Wyant withdrawn from his private collection. They were temporarily installed as a loan in the Corcoran Gallery of Art, Washington. To this collection Evans made numerous additions until finally the gift comprised 150 paintings, a bust, and 115 examples of the work of the foremost American wood-engravers.

Through his purchases, made chiefly in the studios, Evans formed many close friendships among the artists. Especially significant was his friendship with Henry W. Ranger, who influenced Evans not only in his selections but in his gift to the National Gallery which, in turn, almost certainly led to the establishment of the Ranger Fund, providing for the yearly addition of works by American painters to the National collection. In Montclair he was active in creating interest in art. He became president of the Municipal Art Commission and by offering to present to Montclair a collection of thirty paintings by American artists of high standing, induced the establishment in 1909 of the Montclair Art Gallery and Museum. He held a third sale of paintings in 1913 and a fourth in May 1916, when the firm of Mills & Gibb went into receiver-

ship. This sale was for the benefit of the firm's creditors.

William T. Evans did more perhaps than any other collector to promote interest in American art, and to his liberal patronage many living American artists owe their first step toward success. It is a distressing fact that after giving so generously, his business failed, through no fault of his own, and when he died he was no longer a rich man. He had five daughters and two sons.

[A portrait of W. T. Evans, painted by Jongers and engraved on wood by Henry Wolf, is included in the Evans National Gallery collection. In addition to references above see obituaries in *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Herald,* Nov. 26, 1918. Information supplied by a daughter, Mrs. Luther E. Price, has been supplemented by personal recollections of the writer.] L. M.

**EVARTS, JEREMIAH** (Feb. 3, 1781–May 10, 1831), lawyer, philanthropist, was born at Sunderland, Vt., being the eldest son of James Evarts who married Sarah, daughter of Timothy Todd, of Guilford, Conn., of which latter place the Evarts family had been residents since 1650. His father moved to Georgia Township in 1787 and his early education was received at the country school there, but in January 1798 he went to East Guilford, Conn., where he was prepared for college by Rev. John Elliott. Entering Yale College in September of that year, he graduated in 1802 (M.A. 1805), and in April 1803 became principal of the Caledonia County Grammar School at Peacham, Vt., remaining there for a year. Deciding however to enter the legal profession he commenced the study of law in Judge Charles Chauncey's office at New Haven, and was admitted to the Connecticut bar in July 1806. He practised in New Haven for over three years but did not meet with success. He had early evinced that somewhat stern puritanical spirit which made him a deeply religious man throughout his life, and a contemporary alleged that he "ever had too much unbending integrity to be a popular lawyer." In January 1810 he was induced to assume the editorship of the *Panoplist,* an organ of the orthodox Congregationalists, published at Boston, and moved to Charlestown, Mass., where he made his permanent home. Abandoning the law, he devoted himself entirely to his editorial duties and missionary enterprise. As an editor, his articles, distinguished for their forcible though simple style, exhibited great powers of analysis, wide knowledge, and critical acumen. He did not confine himself to religious subjects but also discussed the various phases of social, civil, and political relations. Among other matters of general interest which he advocated were the discontinuance of Sunday mails and legislation to cope with intemperance. He was



one of the founders of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, becoming its treasurer in 1811, a member of its prudential committee in 1812, and corresponding secretary and treasurer in 1821. He also became a manager of the American Bible Society and vice-president of the American Education Society. In 1821 his missionary and other work of a religious and philanthropic nature absorbed so much of his time that the *Panoplist* discontinued publication, though he continued as editor of the *Missionary Herald,* the organ of the A. B. C. F. M. On several occasions when he visited the Southern states, he investigated the condition of the Indian tribes east of the Mississippi, particularly the Cherokees, and as a result strongly opposed the policy of transferring them to Western reservations. His *Essays on the Present Crisis in the Condition of the American Indians* (1829), first published in the *National Intelligencer* under the pseudonym William Penn, presented a powerful indictment of the state and federal governments for their treatment of the aborigines. His attack and charges were reinforced by articles in the *New York Observer* and the *North American Review,* and by the publication of a volume of speeches on the Indian Bill.

Evarts married Mrs. Mehitabel Barnes, daughter of Roger Sherman, in September 1804. Their son was the nationally known lawyer, William Maxwell Evarts [*q.v.*]. He died of consumption at Charleston, S. C., on his way home from Cuba where he had gone in quest of health.

[E. C. Tracy, *Memoir of the Life of Jeremiah Evarts* (1845), has an appendix containing a list of all the papers relative to the Indian question prepared by Evarts for publication; see also G. Spring, *A Tribute to the Memory of the Late Jeremiah Evarts* (1831); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.,* Vol. V (1911), with bibliography; *Boston Recorder,* June 1, 1831, quoting *Charleston* (S. C.) *Observer,* May 14, 1831.] H. W. H. K.

**EVARTS, WILLIAM MAXWELL** (Feb. 6, 1818–Feb. 28, 1901), lawyer, and statesman, was the son of Jeremiah [*q.v.*] and Mehitabel (Sherman) Barnes Evarts, who were married in 1804. His father was a graduate of Yale College, a lawyer, and editor of the *Panoplist,* an orthodox Congregational magazine. His mother was the daughter of Roger Sherman [*q.v.*], statesman of the American Revolution. Born at 22 Pinckney St., Boston, Evarts was prepared for college at the Boston Latin School, and entered Yale College in 1833. He was one of the founders of the *Yale Literary Magazine,* and was graduated with honors in the "famous class" of 1837, along with Edwards Pierrepont, Samuel J. Tilden, and Morrison R. Waite. The follow-

ing winter he read law in the office of Horace Everett, at Windsor, Vt., and then attended the Dane Law School of Harvard College. In the autumn of 1839 he entered the office of Daniel Lord, of New York City, as a law student and remained there until his admission to the bar of New York on July 16, 1841. On Aug. 30, 1843, he married Helen Minerva Wardner in Windsor, Vt. By her he had twelve children, nine of whom were living at his death.

For about one year from October 1841, he maintained his own law office at 60 Wall St., and then formed a partnership with Charles E. Butler, the beginning of a great law firm with which he was associated for sixty years, with Charles F. Southmayd, Joseph H. Choate, and Charles C. Beaman [*qq.v.*] as colleagues. In 1842, at the age of twenty-four, he was junior counsel under John J. Crittenden and Thomas F. Marshall in the defense in the New York courts of Monroe Edwards, a notorious Kentucky forger. He spoke an hour and a half in his opening for the defense and, although Edwards was convicted, Evarts's effort drew from Senator Crittenden the prediction that the highest honors of the profession were within his grasp. Political articles in *The New World* by Evarts, during this same period, caused Prof. Felton to describe his political pen as one of the most powerful in the country. His talents were publicly recognized by his appointment in 1849 to be assistant United States attorney for the southern district of New York, an office which he held until 1853. Two incidents led up to the turning point in his career. In 1850 he made a speech in Castle Garden which later was brought forward as evidence of a supposed deplorable leaning in favor of slavery. His speech was in support of the constitutionality of the Fugitive-Slave Law, and dealt with the dilemma presented by abhorrence of slavery and the constitutional recognition of it as an institution. Though called a "Hunker Whig," he nevertheless in 1855 gave $1,000, one-fourth of his whole fortune, to aid the Abolition cause through the Emigrant Aid Company. The opportunity had arrived, he said, "to contend successfully against slavery without violating the laws or sacrificing the Constitution and the Union." His position became clear to the public when, in January 1860, he was engaged to represent the State of New York in the Lemmon Slave Case (20 *N. Y.*, 562), in opposition to Charles O'Conor for the State of Virginia. He successfully maintained the principle that under the United States Constitution, a slave brought from a slave state (Virginia) into a non-slave state (New York) by sea, and there landed with the intention of embarking upon a new voyage to another slave state (Texas) was thereby made free.

The two careers of Evarts, professional and public, thus intertwined at their beginning, remained so until his retirement. His legal skill led him into cases of great public import, and many of his public employments were legal in their requirements. His public and political career, begun as assistant United States attorney, was continued when in May 1860 he went, in the interest of Seward, as chairman of the New York delegation to the Republican National Convention which nominated Lincoln. On the appointment of Seward as secretary of state in March 1861, Evarts was put before the New York legislature as a candidate for the United States Senate, but Ira Harris was elected. On the outbreak of the war he took part in the formation in New York of the Union Defense Committee, of which he was secretary. In April 1863, he was sent on a government mission to England to put an end, if possible, to the building and equipment of vessels for the Confederate navy. He returned to the United States in July, and went again on a similar errand in December, remaining in Europe this time until June 1864. In 1867 he was a delegate to the New York State constitutional convention, in which he served as a member of the judiciary committee. From July 15, 1868, to March 1869, he was attorney-general in President Johnson's cabinet. As president of the Association of the Bar of the City of New York at its organization in 1870, and for ten successive years thereafter, he led movements for law reform and against the political corruption of the "Tweed Ring," which made this private office a quasi-public one. Had it not been for the aggressive opposition of Senator Roscoe Conkling, he would probably have been appointed chief justice of the United States by President Grant on the death of Chief Justice Chase in 1873. His college classmate and colleague at the Geneva Arbitration, Morrison R. Waite, was appointed. This was the second time that the chief justiceship had been almost within his grasp, for, on the death of Taney, his appointment to that office had been strongly urged upon President Lincoln. Evarts was secretary of state for the whole period of President Hayes's term of office, 1877–81; and immediately thereafter he went as delegate of the United States to the Paris Monetary Conference. The New York legislature elected him United States senator on Jan. 20, 1885, for the term beginning in March.

Evarts's legal career ran parallel to and was interspersed between the events of his career as a statesman. In 1857 he won the case of *People*

vs. *Draper* (15 *N. Y.*, 532), which sustained the right of the legislature to create a new metropolitan police district including three counties. In 1861 he was of government counsel in the case of the Savannah privateers, charged with piracy; in February 1863, he made the chief argument for the government in a prize case (*2 Black*, 635) which originated in New York; and in 1867 he was employed by the government in the prosecution of Jefferson Davis for treason. In 1866, 1868, and 1870, he argued in the United States Supreme Court the Bank Tax Case (3 *Wallace*, 573), the Legal Tender Case (8 *Wallace*, 603) and the Cotton Tax Case (not reported). An argument of Evarts's that has received the highest praise was that before the Mixed Commission on British and American Claims, in August 1873, for the British claimants in the Springbok Case (J. B. Moore, *A Digest of International Law*, VII, 1906, pp. 728–29) involving the difficult questions of continuous voyage and ultimate destination of ships and cargoes in time of war. Wharton described it as one of the ablest expositions of international law which has ever appeared, and John Bassett Moore said that "no one but a great lawyer with a profound apprehension of the principles of international law could have made such an argument." It is a far cry from such an effort to the case of *Theodore Tilton* vs. *Henry Ward Beecher*, in which, in May 1875, Evarts made the chief summation for the defense. His address required eight court days. A case of great importance was that of *Story* vs. *the New York Elevated Railroad Company* (90 *N. Y.*, 122) in which Evarts in 1882 successfully maintained the position that the owners of property abutting on streets through which elevated roads were built, could compel remuneration for the injury to their property caused by those structures. In 1885, in the *Matter of Jacobs* (98 *N. Y.*, 98), Evarts successfully attacked the constitutional validity of the Tenement House Cigar Law. His last appearance in court was in June 1889, in the case of *Post* vs. *Weil* (115 *N. Y.*, 361). In spite of failing eyesight, he wrote with his own hand a brief of eighty-two pages on the abstruse questions of real property involved, and won the case.

To the above record must now be added the fact that, to use the phrase of the late Frederic R. Coudert, Evarts was "the hero of the three great cases of our generation—the Johnson impeachment, the Tilden election case of 1876, the Geneva arbitration case." On Feb. 24, 1868, President Johnson was impeached by the House of Representatives for high crimes and misdemeanors. Eleven articles of impeachment were presented at the bar of the Senate on Mar. 4, and the trial by Chief Justice Chase and the Senate, which began on Mar. 30, lasted until May 26. The leader of counsel for the managers was Benjamin F. Butler. Evarts was most active for the defense, owing to the illness of Attorney-General Stanbery during the trial. He also made the chief closing argument, beginning on Apr. 28 and ending on May 1, an address of one hundred eighty pages. "His eloquent and solemn appeal," says Sherman Evarts, "lifted the whole proceeding from the murky atmosphere in which it had had its origin, to a region of lofty and patriotic wisdom . . . it arrayed with great force and learning the arguments upon the only serious question of law in the case—that arising from the tenure of office act" ( Lewis, *post*, VII, 229). Largely through the efforts of Evarts, the two-thirds vote required by the Constitution for conviction was not obtained.

Evarts's participation in the case of the Savannah privateers and in the prize cases, and his two missions to England during the Civil War, together with his other wide experience in public and professional life, perfectly equipped him for service as counsel in the Geneva Arbitration of 1871–72. Under the Treaty of Washington, May 8, 1871, all claims against Great Britain by citizens of the United States who during the Civil War had suffered loss through activities of Confederate cruisers built, equipped, or manned in England, were referred to arbitration. The United States was represented by Charles Francis Adams (arbitrator), J. C. Bancroft Davis (agent), and Caleb Cushing, Morrison R. Waite, and William M. Evarts (counsel). The last made a notable oral argument, Aug. 5, 6, 1872, on the question of "due diligence," in reply to the printed argument of Sir Roundell Palmer (Lord Selborne). The latter had already formed a favorable opinion of Evarts as a result of an acquaintanceship begun in 1863; and in his memoirs he speaks of him in the highest terms, emphasizing his courtesy and conciliatory attitude. Evarts's name, he says, "was appended to the Case and other documents, of which we so much disliked the tone; but it did not stand alone; it was preceded by that of Mr. Cushing, and followed by that of Mr. Waite" (*Personal Memorials*, vol. I, 1898, p. 248). The meaning of this statement is brought out by a couplet in Selborne's alphabetical verses descriptive of the chief actors at Geneva, which reads:

> "E, keen but high-minded, would courteous have been,
> If his name were not written two others between"
> (*Ibid.*, I, 277).

In the third of the great triad of cases,

the Hayes-Tilden presidential election dispute, Evarts was chief counsel for the Republican party. In the presidential canvass of 1876, both parties made claim to the electoral vote in whole or in part in four states. There being no constitutional or legislative provision for such an emergency, Congress created a commission of fifteen to decide the questions in dispute. Arguments of counsel were made before this commission in February 1877, and Evarts made oral arguments on the Florida, Louisiana, and Oregon cases. Having been criticized for accepting employment in what was considered to be wholly a partisan cause, he took the high ground that it was his duty as a citizen to do so, and that, whatever the consequences, the decision must be in accordance with the Constitution, which gave to the states the exclusive power to regulate the casting and counting of votes and to declare the result of the canvass, leaving to the electoral college the power only of counting the electoral votes certified by the states. His view prevailed, and Hayes was declared elected.

As a statesman, Evarts was adequate to every test that was offered, but no large achievement can be placed to his credit. He came into the Senate when he was sixty-six years of age. If his health had held good, he could, with his long training and experience in affairs of public interest, have made for himself a distinguished place in that body. Soon after he took office, his sight began to be impaired. In 1889 he went to Karlsbad to consult a specialist, but no help was found, and his infirmity increased until he was totally blind. Thereafter he lived in retirement. On Aug. 30, 1893, he and his wife celebrated their golden wedding. In 1897 he suffered an attack of grippe, which left him so weakened that thereafter he was confined to his house; and on Feb. 28, 1901, at the age of eighty-three, he died at his home in New York City.

In personal appearance, Evarts somewhat resembled Rufus Choate. He was extremely spare, and "thin as a lath," but erect and dignified in bearing. He appeared to be exceedingly frail, but had great powers of endurance, as shown by his performance in the Tilton-Beecher trial from which he was not absent once during its course of nearly six months. In one of his pictures he looks like Lincoln. His prominent forehead and nose gave to his face the appearance of massive strength. His eyes were penetrating and severe at times, but his expressive mouth made his countenance refined. He should be likened to an eagle rather than to a hawk. Like Charles O'Conor he habitually wore a frock coat and a high hat tilted a little backward on his head.



He was noted as an orator, and could adapt his style to all occasions. His son compiled an impressive collection of his professional arguments, political and patriotic speeches, commemorative addresses, and after-dinner speeches. In the latter, Evarts showed a merry and spontaneous humor, debonair yet dry, and genial yet subtle. His speaking in this vein "rose to the level of the fine arts." He had the "dangerous gift of facility in speech," but his exalted character, both personal and professional, and his earnestness in dealing with serious matters, made him master of a solemn and forceful eloquence suggestive of the best efforts of Daniel Webster. His set speeches and professional arguments possessed one characteristic which is still a tradition. He clothed his thought "with sentences as long as the English language can supply," and with great involution and circumlocution of oratorical style drove on "a whole flock of several clauses, before he came to the close of a sentence." Withal, he was noted for remarkable clearness of statement. Choate said of him that he was the quickest witted man that he had ever met on either side of the water, and Southmayd, another law partner, emphasized his powers of apprehension, "which would mentally anticipate and complete the situation before the narration of facts was finished."

[*Arguments and Speeches of Wm. Maxwell Evarts* (3 vols., 1919), ed., with an introduction, by his son, Sherman Evarts; article by Sherman Evarts in Wm. D. Lewis, *Great American Lawyers*, VII (1909), 203–44; memorials in the *Report of the Twenty-Fourth Annual Meeting of the Am. Bar Asso.* (1901), pp. 624–28, and by Jas. C. Carter in *Annual Reports . . . of the Asso. of the Bar of the City of N. Y.*, 1902, pp. 101–02; Theron G. Strong, *Landmarks of a Lawyer's Lifetime* (1914), ch. 8; *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Univ. . . . 1900–10* (1910), p. 19; *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, Mar. 1, 1901.]

F. C. H.

**EVE, JOSEPH** (May 24, 1760–Nov. 14, 1835), inventor, scientist, and poet, youngest child of Oswald (or Oswell) Eve, merchant and sea-captain, and his wife Anne (Moore) Eve, was born in Philadelphia, where his father, originally from the low country of South Carolina, was engaged in the shipping trade. For business and perhaps for political reasons, his family removed to the West Indies and finally settled in the Bahamas about 1774. In his twenties, Eve invented a "machine for the separating of seed from cotton," which as early as 1787 was in use in the islands. Since many applications for the gin were coming from the Southern States, Senator Butler of South Carolina about 1794 presented to Congress a petition for a patent. About 1800 Eve came to live in Charleston County, S. C., at which time his gin was described as working "with two pair of rollers" and requiring "two young men or

lads to supply the machine with cotton, as it feeds itself, and will gin out thirty-five pounds of cotton to the hour." It was adapted to animal or water-power. Together with such modifications as the Pottle, Birnie, Simpson, Nicholson, Whitmore, Farris, and Logan gins, it sometimes sold for as much as $250. In 1810 Eve removed to Richmond County, Ga., where he continued to manufacture gins. He built "The Cottage" near Augusta, and here he engaged in such diverse occupations as manufacturing gunpowder, experimenting with steam, and writing poetry. The American army is said to have used some of his gunpowder in 1812, and he obtained patents for a cottonseed huller (1803), metallic bands for power transmission (1828), and two steam-engines (1818 and 1826). The British government failed to adopt for its navy the steam-engine which Eve brought before it in 1826.

From 1820 to 1824 he contributed to Augusta newspapers several short poems and numerous excerpts of two long poems, "Better to Be" and "Projector." After two prospectuses, *Better to Be* appeared in 1823 in book form. It is an answer in couplets to Hamlet's question, and is in six parts of three hundred to five hundred lines each. The work is thoughtful and earnest but not searching or brilliant. Eve's rueful postscript states that "none but himself and the Printer has expressed a wish that it should emanate from the press," his friends having "uniformly employed the refrigerating system" toward a poem with so unpopular a theme as "Let us all be unhappy together." A friend of Benjamin Franklin and Dr. Benjamin Rush, "he was a man of broad culture, untiring energy and kindly, benevolent heart." Shortly before his death, he summarized in an epitaph his own impression of his life:

> "Here rests one fortune never favored,
> He grew no wiser from the past;
> But e'er with perseverance labored
> And still contended to the last."

Eve was married about 1800 to Hannah Singeltary of Charleston County, S. C., who was buried near him at "The Cottage." Joseph Adams Eve, his son, and Paul Fitzsimons Eve [*q.v.*], his nephew, were distinguished physicians of the next generation.

[Sources include: "Extracts from the Journal of Miss Sarah Eve," in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, V (1881), 19, 191; W. A. Clark, "An Unremembered Poem," with material from Eve's letters, poems, epitaph, etc., in *Augusta Chronicle*, July 14, 1912; a letter from Joseph Eve to Dr. Benjamin Rush, dated Bahama Islands, Nassau, Nov. 24, 1794 (original among the Rush papers, Ridgway Lib., Phila.), printed in C. C. Jones, Jr., *Memorial Hist. of Augusta, Ga.* (1890); a notice in the *City Gazette and Daily Advertiser* (Charleston, S. C.), July 3, 1800; and Samuel DuBose,



*Address Delivered at the 17th Anniversary of the Black Oak Agric. Soc., Apr. 27, 1858* (1858), repr. in *A Contribution to the Hist. of the Huguenots of S. C.* (1887), have some account of the Eve gin. See also A. S. Salley, Jr., *Register of St. Philip's Parish, Charles Town, S. C., 1720–58* (1904), *1754–1810* (1927); *Penna. Gazette*, Nov. 1, 1764; *A List of Patents Granted by the U. S., 1790–1836* (1872); *Augusta Herald*, July 4, Nov. 10, 1820, Feb. 6, 1821; *Augusta Chronicle*, Apr. 14, May 29, July 3, 17, 1824; *Charleston Courier*, Nov. 23, 1835.]

L. T.

**EVE, PAUL FITZSIMONS** (June 27, 1806–Nov. 3, 1877), surgeon, was born at Forest Hall on the Savannah River near Augusta, Ga. His parents, Capt. Oswell and Aphra Anna (Pritchard) Eve, were of Anglo-Irish descent, his father a brother of Joseph Eve [*q.v.*]. He attended Franklin College (now the University of Georgia) at Athens, where he was given the degree of B.A. in 1826. Following graduation he went to Philadelphia, entering the office of Dr. Charles D. Meigs to study medicine and at the same time matriculating at the University of Pennsylvania. Here he obtained his degree of M.D. in 1828, then returned to Augusta, where he spent a year in practise. The next two years he spent in the clinics of the most famous surgeons of London and Paris. In the latter city, he "participated professionally" in the revolution of July 1831. Later, when the Russian army was reported marching upon Warsaw, he offered his services to the Polish government and served in a Warsaw hospital, and later with the Polish forces in the field. Following the fall of Warsaw he returned to Paris, and later in the same year to the United States. He settled for practise in Augusta, where, in 1832, he participated in the organization of the Medical College of Georgia. On the faculty of this school he was professor of surgery until 1850, when he resigned to take the same chair at the University of Louisville, made vacant by the resignation of Samuel D. Gross [*q.v.*]. He remained at the Louisville school through but one course, resigning on account of the illness of his wife. In 1851 he was appointed professor of surgery in the University of Nashville, a position he held for ten years. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he was appointed surgeon-general of Tennessee, later was chief surgeon of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston's army, and still later surgeon in the Gate City Hospital, in Atlanta. After the close of the war, he resumed the teaching of surgery, first at Missouri Medical College, St. Louis, later at the University of Nashville, and finally in 1877, at the newly organized Nashville Medical College. Shortly after this last change he died suddenly while calling upon a patient.

In the forty-five years of his active career, Eve became the leading surgeon and the leading

teacher of surgery of the South. He perfected an operation for vesical calculus which was highly successful. His experience with this operation was reported in "A Synopsis and Analysis of One Hundred Cases of Lithotomy" (*Transactions of the American Medical Association,* vol. XXII, 1871). He is credited with being the first American surgeon to perform the operation of hysterectomy. In addition to the teaching positions that he occupied, he was compelled to decline many flattering offers of similar positions. He was for a time co-editor of the *Southern Medical and Surgical Journal* and assistant editor of the *Nashville Journal of Medicine and Surgery.* He contributed nearly six hundred articles to periodical literature. His most notable writings were: *A Collection of Remarkable Cases in Surgery* (1857) and "A Contribution to the History of the Hip-joint Operations Performed during the Late Civil War" (1867), included in the *Medical and Surgical History of the War.* He was president of the American Medical Association in 1857–58. Eve had an unusual experience in military surgery. In addition to his service with the Polish army and in the Civil War, during his professorship at the Medical College of Georgia he served in the Mexican War and he was present as an observer at the battles of Magenta and Solferino in Italy in 1859.

Myopic from childhood and afflicted with tone deafness, he overcame these handicaps by methodical industry. He used neither alcohol nor tobacco at a time when their use was general. His portrait, taken in middle life, shows a serious face with full beard, large nose, and prominent eyes, looking out through thick lenses. He married Sarah Louisa Twiggs, grand-daughter of Gen. Twiggs of the Revolutionary War. She died in 1851, and in the following year he married Sarah Ann Duncan, daughter of a South Carolina clergyman. To this marriage, two sons and a daughter were born, the two sons taking up the profession of their father.

[See *Biog. of Eminent Am. Physicians and Surgeons* (1894), ed. by R. French Stone; D. J. Roberts in *Trans. Med. Soc. State of Tenn.,* 1878; R. Douglas in *Trans. Southern Surgic. and Gynecol. Asso.,* vol. IX (1897); T. C. Dow in *Trans. Am. Medic. Asso.,* vol. XXIX, 1878; sketch of Eve's son in *Southern Practitioner* (Nashville), XXXVII, 26 (1915); *Daily American* (Nashville), Nov. 4, 1877; additional references listed in *Index-Catalogue* of the Surgeon-General's Library. Eve's middle name is variously spelled. The spelling given above was adopted on the authority of a grandson, Duncan Eve, Jr., M.D., of Nashville.] J. M. P.

**EVERENDON, WALTER** (d. 1725), colonial gunpowder manufacturer, when he first appeared on the stage of American colonial history was described as "a Kentish man." On Aug. 22,



1673, the Rev. John Oxenbridge, the Rev. James Allen, and three laymen formed a partnership to build a powder-mill at Neponset in the township of Milton, across the river from Dorchester, Mass. They soon took in two more partners, and in 1675 appointed Everendon, who had manufactured powder in England, to be the overseer of the mill, which within three months after he took charge was running at full capacity in order to supply the settlers with powder for the prosecution of King Philip's War. The Massachusetts General Court considered the mill of so great importance as a source of supply that they arranged for guarding it and allowed the owners to impress men to build a watch-tower on the other side of the river. Everendon's sole claim to fame is having thus accidentally been instrumental in supplying the colonial forces with much-needed ammunition against the Indians. He was, however, the first man to make powder in America. It has been said that the Dorchester powder was of better quality than that which had been made previously, but the importance of the mill was due to the size of its output at a critical time, for which credit would seem to be due to the capitalists as much as to Everendon. In 1701 the latter bought out one of the partners and gradually acquired the interests of all but one of the others. In 1724 he sold out to his son, and died the following year. The family, which also spelled their name Everden and Everton, continued to manufacture powder until after the Revolution, although by 1775 they appear to have fallen into poverty.

[*Records of the Gov. and Co. of the Mass. Bay,* vol. V (1854); D. T. V. Huntoon, "The Powder Mill in Canton," *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* July 1877, and *Hist. of the Town of Canton, Mass.* (1893); A. P. Van Gelder and H. Schlatter, *Hist. of the Explosives Industry in America* (1927), pp. 32–36; A. K. Teele, *The Hist. of Milton, Mass.* (1887), pp. 368–70.] J. T. A.

**EVERETT, ALEXANDER HILL** (Mar. 19, 1790–June 29, 1847), editor, diplomat, son of the Rev. Oliver and Lucy (Hill) Everett and brother of Edward Everett [*q.v.*], was born in Boston, Mass., where his father was minister of the New South Church. After graduating from Harvard in 1806, being the youngest member of his class and also the one in highest standing, he taught for a time at Phillips Exeter Academy and studied law in the office of John Quincy Adams. He was a member of the Anthology Club, and during the last months of its existence, one of the editors of the *Monthly Anthology* (Mott, *post,* pp. 253 ff.). In 1809, when John Quincy Adams was appointed minister to Russia, Everett accompanied him as private secretary, remaining there for two years. In 1815–16 he was secretary of the Amer-

ican legation at The Hague; in September of the latter year he was married to Lucretia Orne Peabody. Returning to The Hague in 1818 as chargé d'affaires, he served there until 1824. When Adams became president in 1825, Everett was appointed minister to Spain, and held that position for four years. His instructions from Henry Clay, secretary of state, required him to urge upon the Spanish government the importance of recognizing the independence of her revolted colonies in the New World (*American State Papers, Foreign Relations,* V, 866 ff.); and he prepared an elaborate memorandum for this purpose, dated Jan. 20, 1826 (*Ibid.,* VI, 1006–14). The question of whether Spain would be able to hold Cuba and Porto Rico was one of considerable concern at that time. In a confidential communication to President Adams, Nov. 30, 1825, Everett proposed that the United States lend Spain a large sum of money, taking Cuba as security (*Cuba: The Everett Letters on Cuba,* 1897). Everett's extensive diplomatic experience bore fruit in two volumes: *Europe* (1822), and *America* (1827). Each is a general survey of the principal powers of the several continents, "with conjectures on their future prospects." They attracted considerable attention and were translated into several languages. During this period he also published *New Ideas on Population, with Remarks on the Theories of Malthus and Godwin* (1823).

Upon his return to America, he acquired (1830) a controlling interest in the *North American Review,* and succeeded Jared Sparks as its editor. During the five years in which he had charge of it he did much in improving its quality, but it was not a financial success, and at the end of this time he found himself heavily embarrassed. His standing in the community suffered further from the fact that, although he had served in the state legislature for several terms as a Whig, he left that party and joined the Democrats; and his activity in the state elections in 1839 was believed to have contributed to his brother's failure to be reëlected governor (P. R. Frothingham, *Life of Edward Everett,* 1925, pp. 154–55). From this time on, his ties with Massachusetts were severed. For a brief period he served as a confidential agent of the government in Cuba. Later he was president of Jefferson College, in Louisiana, but soon resigned on account of ill health. In 1845, at the beginning of Polk's administration, he was appointed commissioner to China, the first representative of the United States to be designated under the treaty with China which had just been negotiated by Caleb Cushing [*q.v.*]. Forced by illness to turn back from his journey thither, he started again as soon as he felt that his health permitted, but died in Canton not long after his arrival (*Chinese Repository,* July 1847).

Everett was a man of ability and industry, but unstable. The financial and political embarrassment that he caused his popular brother brought him disesteem in Massachusetts that has tended to obscure his creditable earlier career as a diplomat and an editor. His articles for the *North American Review* and other publications, collected in two volumes of *Critical and Miscellaneous Essays* (1845–46), treat of literary, philosophical, and political topics after the manner of the British quarterlies of the period. The *Poems* (1845) are almost entirely imitations and translations.

[In addition to references cited above see E. F. Everett, *Descendants of Richard Everett of Dedham, Mass.* (1902); E. E. Hale, *Sketches of the Lives of the Brothers Everett* (1878), and obituary of A. H. Everett in *Christian Examiner,* Jan. 1848; J. S. Loring, *The Hundred Boston Orators,* etc. (1852); "Letters of J. Q. Adams to A. H. Everett, 1817–37" in *Am. Hist. Rev.,* Oct. 1905–Jan. 1906; F. L. Mott, *A Hist. of Am. Magazines, 1741–1850* (1930). Everett's official correspondence as chargé d'affaires at The Hague and as minister to Spain, together with his private correspondence, 1809–34, is in the possession of the Mass. Hist. Soc. A portrait by Alexander, done while he was at The Hague, belongs to Arthur Hale of Washington, D. C.; and a miniature of about the same date to Philip L. Hale, of Dedham, Mass.] H. G. P.

**EVERETT, CHARLES CARROLL** (June 19, 1829–Oct. 16, 1900), theologian, was the son of Ebenezer Everett, a lawyer and a first cousin of Edward Everett [*q.v.*], and his wife, Joanna Bachelder Prince. On both sides he came of the purest New England stock. He was born in the family home in Brunswick, Me., there spent his youth, and was graduated at Bowdoin in 1850 at the head of his class. He spent a number of terms at the Bowdoin Medical College, and studied in Europe during the year 1851–52. From 1853 to 1857 he taught modern languages at Bowdoin; for three of these years he acted also as librarian of the college. He was elected to a full professorship by the trustees but the appointment was vetoed by the Overseers on the ground that he was a Unitarian. In 1857 he entered the Harvard Divinity School, graduating in 1859. He had a notable pastorate at the Independent Congregational (Unitarian) Church in Bangor, Me., from 1859 to 1869. During these years he wrote *The Science of Thought,* a treatise on the principles of human knowledge, published in 1869. The book attracted the attention of the Harvard Corporation, who that year called him to the Bussey Professorship of Theology. He became dean of the Divinity School in 1878, and held that office as well as his professorship for the remainder of his life. His was one of the earliest

of the important appointments of President Charles W. Eliot [*q.v.*]. The Divinity School was unorganized and there was a wide divergence of opinion as to its status and function. When Everett joined it, the faculty numbered three. At his death the number had grown to nine, the school had become closely coördinated with the university, and its material equipment had been much increased. All this was in no small degree due to the wisdom and practical management of the dean. As early as 1872 he began his course in East Asiatic Religions, perhaps the first course in comparative religions to be given in the United States. He gave both this and the general course in theology as long as he lived.

Although he had studied medicine and had taught modern languages, philosophy, as the vehicle for the study of theology, became his major interest. He solved the problem of the undenominational divinity school by confining his teaching to the realm that lies beneath all the divergent creeds. He taught the possibility of a faith that rested on no creed, and his teaching, although presenting no system of theology, lighted up the whole realm of religion, with Christianity in the supreme place. Men of all faiths were among his pupils, yet he antagonized none and was broad enough to sympathize with all. He was a consummate teacher and many thoughtful ministers of different denominations have looked back to him as the greatest intellectual and spiritual inspiration of their lives.

He was one of the founders of the *New World* —a quarterly review of religion and theology—a constant contributor to its pages, and its senior editor at the time of his death. He also contributed a great number of articles to magazines and reviews. Among his more important volumes were: *The Science of Thought,* previously mentioned; *Religions before Christianity* (1883), which was translated into Dutch for use in the schools of Holland; *Fichte's Science of Knowledge* (1884); *Essays on Poetry, Comedy and Duty* (1888); *Ethics for Young People* (1891); *The Gospel of Paul* (1893). As a writer he had a clear and beautifully simple style. As a preacher he presented wide and deep thought in simple language and with apt illustration. He was modest and unconventional, but dignified, inspiring others with a sense of his reserved power. One writer said: "That which made him great among his fellows was the elevation of his own thought, the purity of his sentiment, and his freedom from artificial limitations, . . . combined with a rare insight into the thoughts of other men, and into the meaning of creeds alien or inferior to his own" (*Christian Register,* Oct. 25, 1900). A good description of his personality is given by his colleague, Professor Emerton: "He moved among us, frail, delicate, feeble of sight and hearing, shy, reticent, never putting himself forward into any place he thought another could fill, yet with such reserves of courage, of strength, of eloquent speech, of fervid enthusiasm, that no person and no righteous cause ever appealed to him in vain for counsel or for help" (*Obituary Record of the Graduates of Bowdoin College, 1900–09,* 1911, p. 75). In August 1859, he married Sarah Octavia Dwinel of Lisbon, Me., who died on Feb. 16, 1895.

[In addition to sources cited above, see S. A. Eliot, *Heralds of a Liberal Faith,* vol. III (1910); E. F. Everett, *Descendants of Richard Everett of Dedham, Mass.* (1902); *New World,* Dec. 1900; *Boston Transcript,* Oct. 17, 1900; *Harvard Grads. Mag.,* Dec. 1900.]

F.T.P.

**EVERETT, DAVID** (Mar. 29, 1770–Dec. 21, 1813), lawyer, journalist, author, a second cousin of Edward Everett, was born at Princeton, Mass., the son of David Everett, who fought at Bunker Hill, and Susannah (Rolfe) Everett. After attending the academy at New Ipswich, N. H., he taught in the grammar school of that town and wrote for a seven-year-old pupil the famous lines:

> "You'd scarce expect one of my age
> To speak in public on the stage . . ."

Thereafter he entered Dartmouth and graduated in 1795, valedictorian of his class. He next read law with John M. Forbes, and after his admission to the bar, with Thomas O. Selfridge opened an office in Boston. Early becoming interested in politics, he wrote for the *Boston Gazette* over the signature "Junius Americanus" (Loring, *post,* p. 339). He practised from about 1802 to 1807 at Amherst, N. H., and then returned to Boston. In 1809 he founded a newspaper, the *Boston Patriot,* devoted to the Democratic party. Two years later he was made register of probate for Suffolk County, Mass., but a change of administration soon deprived him of this office. During Elbridge Gerry's governorship (1810–12), Everett was clerk of the Massachusetts House of Representatives. In 1812 he became editor of the *Pilot,* but the next year, the serious state of his health requiring a change of residence, he removed to Marietta, Ohio, where he established the *American Friend.* Eight months later he died of tuberculosis. He was survived by his wife, Dorothy Appleton, whom he had married on Dec. 29, 1799.

Everett first gained some prominence as a writer by a series of articles on economic and ethical subjects somewhat in the Poor Richard style, which appeared in the *Farmer's Museum* between May 17 and Dec. 26, 1797, under the title

"Common Sense in Dishabille." A five-act play which he wrote, *Daranzel; or, the Persian Patriot* (printed in 1800), was given a single performance at the Haymarket Theatre, Boston, Apr. 16, 1798, and was revived for two performances, perhaps with the recent death of Washington in mind, at the Federal Street Theatre, Jan. 29 and Feb. 5, 1800. This drama, written in fairly successful blank verse, presents a hero who opposes a tyrant and wins. The prologue exhibits the author's devotion to his country by stressing the absence of tyrants in America; while Daranzel's final speech counsels against factions, with their disregard for law and justice. Something of the same note was struck in Everett's introductory address to an oration delivered by William Charles White at Boston, July 4, 1809. He here inveighed against party rancor and insisted that harmony of sentiment was essential to the nation's welfare. Against the treatment of the United States merchant marine by the British navy Everett wrote a dignified protest, *An Essay on the Rights and Duties of Nations, Relative to Fugitives from Justice, Considered with Reference to the Affair of the Chesapeake* (1807). The outrages committed by the North African pirates called out *Slaves in Barbary*, a two-act play, published in *The Columbian Orator* (1810 and later editions). *The Columbian Orator* also contains a number of poems and dialogues by Everett, several of which reiterate his love of freedom and justice.

[E. F. Everett, *Descendants of Richard Everett of Dedham, Mass.* (1902); I. A. Jewett, *Memorial of Samuel Appleton of Ipswich, Mass.* (1850); J. S. Loring, *The Hundred Boston Orators* (1852); G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll.* (1867); *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.*, n.s., vol. VI (1890); contemporary Boston newspapers.] O. S. C.

**EVERETT, EDWARD** (Apr. 11, 1794–Jan. 15, 1865), Unitarian clergyman, teacher, statesman, and one of the most famous of American orators, was born in Dorchester, Mass. His parents were the Rev. Oliver and Lucy (Hill) Everett; he was the fourth child in a family of eight, one of his elder brothers being Alexander Hill Everett [*q.v.*]. After graduating from Harvard in 1811, with the highest honors although he was the youngest member of his class, he pursued studies in divinity, and in 1814 received the degree of M.A. His brilliant powers as a speaker promised a notable career. Invited almost immediately to become the minister of the Brattle Street Church (Unitarian), he was installed as pastor of the largest and most fashionable congregation in Boston on Feb. 9, 1814, before he was twenty years old. After a little over a year of service in this position, he accepted an invitation

Everett

to occupy the recently established chair of Greek literature at Harvard. In 1815 he sailed for Europe to enter upon what proved to be a four-years' period of preparation for his new duties. The degree of Ph.D. which was awarded him at Göttingen in 1817 was the first to be given to an American (*Harvard Graduates' Magazine*, September 1897, p. 14). After two years spent in travel, he began his work at Harvard in 1819. In addition to his academic duties, he was editor of the *North American Review*. In 1822 he joined himself even more closely with the socially élite by his marriage with Charlotte Gray Brooks, a daughter of Peter C. Brooks [*q.v.*], one of the leading business men of Boston, another daughter of whom became the wife of Charles Francis Adams. To Everett and his wife six children were born.

Everett's success as a teacher, bringing the fruits of German scholarship to American undergraduates, is attested by the eloquent words of Ralph Waldo Emerson, who was one of his pupils (*Complete Works*, X, 330–35). Everett was already noted as an orator and for "his radiant beauty of person, of a classic style." His brilliant Phi Beta Kappa oration at Harvard in August 1824 gave impetus to the career in national politics for which he had cherished an ambition. On the occasion of this address Lafayette was present; and the closing words of the speech, directed to the aged hero, were delivered with such fervor that for some moments the audience sat spellbound, and then burst into a tumult of applause. By virtue of Everett's intuitive dramatic sense, the grace of his language, the music of his voice, and above all the magnetism of his presence, he created an unforgettable impression. The oration had the immediate result of bringing him the nomination, made by a convention of independent voters, for representative to Congress for the Middlesex district. He was elected in November.

During his five terms in Congress, from 1825 to 1835, he represented the dominant conservatism of his state, showing great deference to Southern feeling on the slavery question (*Register of Debates*, 19 Cong., 1 Sess., Mar. 9, 1826, p. 1579), supporting the Bank of the United States, and opposing what he termed the "Levellers" (Darling, *post*, p. 132). His declination to run again in 1834 was due to no lack of political ambition. A year earlier his name had been cautiously advanced for the governorship of Massachusetts by his brother, Alexander H. Everett. Hoping to be nominated by a union of the National Republican and Anti-Masonic parties, he declared against Freemasonry, but finding he

had offended the Masonic element in the former group, declined to be considered (Darling, *post,* pp. 106–10). In 1835, however, he was elected governor by a combination of Whigs and Anti-Masons, effected in large part by Caleb Cushing [*q.v.*], to whom Everett revealed his ambitions in many letters (Fuess, *post,* I, 162–68). He served four terms as governor, from 1836 to 1839, inclusive, being at length defeated for reëlection by Marcus Morton [*q.v.*], who won by a single vote. The chief constructive measures of his administration were the creation of a state board of education and a system of normal schools, and the grant of a million dollars by the state to aid in the construction of a railroad to the Hudson River.

During a period of rest and travel which followed, he was appointed minister to the Court of St. James's, where he remained from November 1841 until August 1845. On account of his standing in the world of scholarship and letters, his social grace, and his charm as an orator, he was to the British a novel type of American, and their appreciation of him was constantly made manifest. Between the two countries at this time there were differences on such important matters as the settlement of the northeastern boundary and the suppression of the slave-trade on the coast of Africa; but these were adjusted in Washington by Lord Ashburton and Daniel Webster, secretary of state. He had been criticized by some of the Whigs, as by Emerson, who said he was "attracted by the vulgar prizes of politics" (*Journals, 1841–44,* VI, 255), for retaining his post after the accession of Tyler, and he shared the embarrassments of the conservative Whigs incident to the war with Mexico, so his election as president of Harvard in 1846 provided an opportune withdrawal from politics. Finding the duties of the position, disciplinary and otherwise, little to his liking, however, he resigned in 1849.

On two occasions it was his fortune to make a contribution of some importance in the field of the foreign relations of the United States. In 1850, at the request of Webster, he drafted a letter defending the action of President Taylor in sending a special agent to report on the revolution in Hungary. Addressed to Hülsemann, the Austrian chargé d'affaires in Washington, this letter, the ultra-patriotic tone of which was accentuated by alterations made by Webster, upheld the right of the United States to extend sympathy to another nation struggling to achieve popular government. It was meant for popular consumption at home, and as such was highly successful. In December 1852, while Everett himself was secretary of state, he prepared a reply to the proposal of France and England that the United States should unite with them in a tripartite convention guaranteeing to Spain the possession of Cuba and promising to abstain from attempts to acquire it. In rejecting the proposal, Everett argued, in clear-cut and vigorous language, that the United States had a special interest in Cuba on account of its proximity, that she had already purchased Louisiana and Florida, and that it was not "within the competence of the treaty-making power in 1852 effectually to bind the government in all its branches; and, for all coming time, not to make a similar purchase of Cuba." Similar in tone to the Hülsemann letter, the note drew sharp contrasts between the institutions and prosperity of the United States and the state of things in Europe. "What would have been her condition in these trying years but for the outlet we have furnished for her starving millions?" (*The Everett Letters on Cuba,* 1897). The letter received general commendation in the United States, both as a logical application of the Monroe Doctrine and on account of its effective form and popular appeal.

Everett's service of four months as secretary of state terminated with the close of Fillmore's administration in March 1853; but he at once entered the Senate, having been elected for a six-year term by the Massachusetts legislature. His political career, now at its height, was, however, to end ignominiously within fifteen months. Ambition had led him to a field of conflict upon which, because of the strain of timidity in his character, he was unfitted to play the fighting part that the times demanded. The struggle over the question of slavery, allayed somewhat by the compromise of 1850, broke out with fresh and alarming violence over the Kansas-Nebraska Bill. Everett, opposed to slavery, had uniformly deprecated agitation of the question of its abolition, fearing that such agitation would threaten the stability of the Union. Now that Webster was dead, Everett, his ardent disciple and intimate friend, was looked upon as his natural successor. By temperament and by social ties he was affiliated with the Boston Whigs, but their moderate and "Union-saving" attitude placed them at a constantly increasing disadvantage as the tide of anti-slavery sentiment rose in Massachusetts and throughout the North. Everett spoke earnestly against the Nebraska bill, though not with the denunciatory ardor of his colleague, Charles Sumner; unfortunately, however, when the final vote was taken he was absent from the Senate on account of illness. Though his stand was well known, his anti-slavery opponents made

much of this "defection," and he became so uncomfortable that he resigned before the end of the session. The remark of his brother-in-law, Charles Francis Adams, that Everett was "stuff not good enough to wear in rainy weather, though bright enough in sunshine" (E. L. Pierce, *Memoir and Letters of Charles Sumner,* III, 1893, pp. 369–70), suggests the trait in his character which made him out of place in political life when the period of compromise was yielding to one of conflict. Perhaps a truer judgment is that his passion for the Union as the greatest experiment of humanity in the art of government was so intense that he would make almost any concession rather than take a stand which might help to bring about its dissolution. As he himself said later in his Gettysburg address: "A sad foreboding of what would ensue, if war should break out between North and South, has haunted me through life, and led me, perhaps too long, to tread in the path of hopeless compromise, in the fond endeavor to conciliate those who were predetermined not to be conciliated" (*Orations and Speeches,* IV, 652). No longer holding office, Everett found opportunity to be of public service in many ways, but in particular by delivering a lecture on the character of Washington, the proceeds of which he contributed to the undertaking recently inaugurated by Ann Pamela Cunningham [*q.v.*] for the purchase and preservation of Mount Vernon as a national monument. A willing traveler, he journeyed the length and breadth of the country, addressing large audiences everywhere, and ultimately turned over to the Mount Vernon Ladies' Association of the Union a total of $69,064. Emphasizing Washington's transcendent accomplishment in establishing the Union, he had opportunity also to turn the thoughts of his listeners to the necessity of preserving it. In the pursuance of this patriotic task he continued till the very outbreak of the Civil War, delivering the lecture no less than 129 times.

In the campaign of 1860 Everett accepted the nomination as vice-president on the ticket of the Constitutional Union party, the candidate for president being John Bell of Tennessee [*q.v.*]. This party, the remnant of the old-line Whigs, deplored the sectional division which had resulted from the agitation of the question of slavery, and in its platform affirmed as the paramount issues of the day "the Constitution of the country, the Union of the States, and the enforcement of the laws." Everett had little wish for a place on the ticket, certainly not for second place; he accepted the nomination half-heartedly and was not surprised at the result of the election. The candidates of the Constitutional Union party

Everett

took the third place in the electoral vote; in the popular vote Bell and Everett stood at the bottom of the list.

With the formation of the Southern Confederacy following the election of Lincoln, Everett's course on the path of compromise was nearly ended; and when Sumter was fired upon and he saw his beloved Union attacked, he had no question as to his course. Without delay he gave his whole-hearted support to the government. Though he was sixty-seven years old, his powers as an orator had in no wise failed and his name could draw large audiences. He made it his war service to travel everywhere in the North, describing the issues of the conflict and exhorting his hearers to give their support to a cause in the righteousness of which he believed heart and soul. Hitherto his orations had been eloquent and finished lectures. Now they became calls to action in the presence of danger, all the stronger in their appeal because of his mastery of his art. In the first year of the war, for a period of several months, he spoke twice a week or oftener; as the contest wore on he was always ready to give of his best.

Of these addresses in war time—twenty-three in number, some of them frequently repeated—the best known, by name at least, is the oration delivered at the dedication of the national cemetery at Gettysburg on Nov. 19, 1863. The occasion furnished opportunity for a public address unequaled in American history. Part of Everett's duty was to depict, for the thousands who had thronged the little town, the course of the three days' battle which had made its name famous. He had studied thoroughly the official reports of the commanders, and had familiarized himself with the topography of the field. As he called the roll of its landmarks, Seminary Ridge, the Peach-Orchard, Cemetery Hill, Culp's Hill, and Wolf Hill, Round Top, Little Round Top, he could exclaim, "humble names, henceforward dear and famous!" Less commented on at the time, but more significant as a revelation of Everett's nationalism, was his prophecy of the day of reconciliation that would follow a restored Union. "The bonds that unite us as one People,—a substantial community of origin, language, belief, and law (the four great ties that hold the societies of men together); common national and political interests; a common history; a common pride in a glorious ancestry; a common interest in this great heritage of blessings; the very geographical features of the country; . . . these bonds of union are of perennial force and energy, while the causes of alienation are imaginary, factitious, and transient" (*Orations and Speeches,*

IV, 657). Everett's own effort did not blind him to the unexpected masterpiece of oratory that fell from Lincoln's lips when he himself had finished. "I should be glad," he wrote the President the next day, "if I could flatter myself that I came as near the central idea of the occasion in two hours as you did in two minutes" (Frothingham, *post*, p. 458). Lincoln, in reply, expressing his pleasure in knowing that the little he "did say was not entirely a failure," gave discriminating praise to Everett's performance.

The earnest, sustained, and brilliant contribution made by Everett to the Union cause naturally involved a break with friends and associates of a lifetime. When he consented to become the president of the newly formed Union Club of Boston, he was warned that it was an "Abolition concern" and a "Jacobin Association." On the other hand, he was drawn into fellowship with the "human rights statesmen," and their approbation has contributed in no small measure to his fame. The uncompromising Charles Francis Adams, who had complained that his brother-in-law's timidity was "almost like that of a woman," paid ungrudging tribute to the achievement of these years. "The progress of events had brought him to a point where his fears no longer checked him, for his interests . . . ran on all fours with his convictions. As a consequence he spoke forth at last with all his power what he really felt. To me his four last years appear worth more than all the rest of his life, including the whole series of his rhetorical triumphs" (C. F. Adams, *Dana*, II, 280).

Popular recognition of his war service reached a climax at the end of the presidential campaign of 1864, in which, though in failing health, he had urged the reëlection of Lincoln and the vigorous prosecution of the war. Summoned to Faneuil Hall on the evening of election day, he was greeted with enthusiasm tumultuous and prolonged. Used as he was to applause, the scene was such as he had never witnessed before, and he was "quite overcome." The tribute was not to his oratory, for he "attempted to utter only a few congratulatory sentences"; it was to the patriot and the man (Frothingham, *post*, p. 464). In his last speech, delivered at Faneuil Hall on behalf of the sufferers at Savannah, which had recently been occupied by Sherman's forces, he again sounded the note of reconciliation. "Savannah wants our pork and beef and flour; and I say, in Heaven's name, let us send it to them without money and without price. . . . Let us offer it to them freely, not in the spirit of almsgiving, but as a pledge of fraternal feeling, and an earnest of our disposition to resume all the kind offices of

Everett

fellow-citizenship with our returning brethren" (*Orations and Speeches*, IV, 755–56). The return itself he did not live to see. The fatigues of the day on which he spoke these words brought on an illness from which he died on Jan. 15, 1865.

Everett's *Orations and Speeches on Various Occasions* (4 vols., 1853–68), which exclude addresses on political topics except for the period of the Civil War, show his scholarly mind and his ardent Americanism. Though carefully finished, they are not excessively artificial, as has sometimes been charged; on occasion, notably in the eulogy on Thomas Dowse delivered before the Massachusetts Historical Society, they reveal a warm and rich humanity. Covering a wide range of subjects, these addresses, though they have no originality of thought, show Everett as a disseminator of enlightening information, and as a master in the art of investing it with the magic of literary form.

[P. R. Frothingham, *Edward Everett, Orator and Statesman* (1925), is sympathetic and judicial in tone. For characterizations of Everett by his contemporaries, see E. W. Emerson and W. E. Forbes, *Jours. of Ralph Waldo Emerson*, VI (1911), 255 ff., VII (1912), 166–70; "Historic Notes of Life and Letters in New Eng.," in *The Complete Works of Ralph Waldo Emerson*, X (1904), 325–70; C. F. Adams, *Richard Henry Dana, A Biography*, II (1890), 279–80; and R. H. Dana, *An Address upon the Life and Services of Edward Everett* (1865). For an admirable later estimate, see Barrett Wendell, *A Lit. Hist. of America* (1901), pp. 253–57. Letters between Everett and John McLean are in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 3 ser. I (1908), 359–93. The Everett papers, a large collection, are deposited with this society. See also Henry Wilson, *Hist. of the Rise and Fall of the Slave Power in America*, vol. I (1875); C. M. Fuess, *The Life of Caleb Cushing* (2 vols., 1923); Arthur B. Darling, *Political Changes in Mass., 1824–48* (1925); *Boston Daily Advertiser* and *N. Y. Daily News*, Jan. 16, 1865.]

H. G. P.

**EVERETT, ROBERT** (Jan. 2, 1791–Feb. 25, 1875), Congregational clergyman and publisher, was born at Gronant, North Wales, the oldest son of Lewis and Jane Everett. He was of mingled Welsh, Scotch, and English blood. His father supported the large family of eleven children by serving as manager of a lead mine; by preference, however, and on occasion, he preached for the Congregationalists. Raised in a strongly Calvinistic atmosphere, Robert early decided to enter the ministry. Soon after graduating from Wrexham Seminary in 1815 he became pastor of the large Congregational church at Denbigh. Though lacking the eloquence of some of his more famous contemporaries in the Welsh pulpit, he possessed such earnestness and learning that he soon gained great influence even outside his own denomination. For some years he was the assistant editor of the *Dysgedydd* (Inquirer), a Congregational periodical. In 1822 he published a catechism which ran through many editions

in both Wales and America. Having accepted a call to the Welsh Congregational Church of Utica, N. Y., he emigrated in 1823. For the next forty-five years he held this charge or others in Oneida County. For a time he preached in English, but in 1838 he moved to the township of Steuben where he served two Welsh churches until a few years before his death.

Meanwhile the Welsh Congregationalists had decided to establish a periodical to serve their members. Everett was chosen one of the three editors, and in January 1840 they published the first issue of *Y Cenhadwr Americanaidd* (The American Messenger), a monthly religious review destined during the sixty-one years of its life to hold the foremost place among Welsh-American publications and to exert its influence in Wales itself. Everett assumed active charge as editor at the beginning and in 1842 became its proprietor and sole editor. Until that time the *Cenhadwr* had been printed in Utica but, the frequent trips on horseback to that town proving too burdensome to a clergyman in active service, Everett set up a press first in Remsen, then in his parsonage on his hill farm in Steuben. Here his sons printed the review, the other members of his family assisting in typesetting, proofreading, and sewing of the sheets within the covers.

Everett was a zealous reformer though not an extreme radical. He had welcomed anti-slavery speakers to his pulpit at an early date and himself had long preached the virtue of total abstinence from alcoholic liquors. He now made the *Cenhadwr* the champion among the Welsh-Americans of Abolition and prohibition. Constantly he denounced the interstate slave-trade, the Fugitive-Slave Law, and slavery in the districts under federal control. Elimination of these abuses, he believed, would doom slavery in the South. At first he met stubborn resistance among the Welsh who, though nominally opponents of slavery, refused to abandon the Democratic and Whig ranks for the Liberty Party and who were scandalized by Everett's action in bringing politics into the pulpit and into a religious review. His opponents almost succeeded in ousting him from his pastorates. Fearing that desertion of disgruntled subscribers both North and South might force a suspension of the *Cenhadwr,* Everett in 1843 published most of his abolitionist articles in a new monthly called *Y Dyngarwr* (The Philanthropist). This he distributed free of charge to Welsh preachers whose aid was vital to the "cause." After its suspension at the end of one year he continued his propaganda in the *Cenhadwr.* His campaign in favor of Birney in 1844 showed slight results among the Welsh, though



Everett himself had a souvenir of the bitter contest in his carriage horse, "Bobtail Birney," whose tail and mane had been mutilated by his opponents. Slowly however his supporters increased. The *Cenhadwr* gained in quality and in prestige. When it advocated the moderate program of the Free-Soilers, it won many converts; after the Kansas-Nebraska Act it gained far more. Most of the Welsh went with Everett into the young Republican party where they have remained to this day. Though *Cenhadwr* may never have reached a circulation of 2,500, its influence was out of all proportion to its size. In 1853 Everett published in book form a Welsh translation of *Uncle Tom's Cabin.* He was also publisher of a popular Welsh hymnal and for two years, 1850–52, of a small literary monthly called *Y Detholydd* (The Eclectic). He received the degree of D.D. from Hamilton College in 1861. Before leaving Wales he had married (1816) Elizabeth Roberts by whom he had eleven children. Their daughter Mary was one of the earliest woman physicians in America.

[D. Davies, *Cofiant y diweddar Barch. Robt. Everett* (Utica, 1879), is a careful biography in Welsh. The most important source for Everett's life is the file of the *Cenhadwr* included in the Robert Everett collection of Welsh-American periodicals in the library of Harvard Univ. See also Samuel W. Durant, *Hist. of Oneida County, N. Y.* (1878).] P. D. E.

**EWBANK, THOMAS** (Mar. 11, 1792–Sept. 16, 1870), inventor, manufacturer, author, was born of humble parents in Durham, England. He attended school until he was thirteen years old, and then was apprenticed to the trade of sheet-metal working. He served an indenture of seven years as a tin- and coppersmith, shaped-iron and wire worker, plumber, brass founder, and shot caster. In 1812 he went to London and for seven years more was employed as a tinsmith. With the money he could save he bought books and utilized his leisure in study and reading. He was gradually led to the belief that monarchical institutions limit one's capabilities, and as a result of his conviction emigrated to the United States in 1819 and settled in New York. Shortly after his arrival he began the manufacture of copper, lead, and tin tubing, and for sixteen years continued in this business with marked success. He secured also his first patents, two in 1823 and one in 1832, for improved methods of tinning lead, both sheet and pipe, and two in 1830 and one in 1831 for improved steam safety valves. By 1836, since his business had yielded him a modest competency, he sold it to devote his whole time to study, travel, and writing. His first book, *A Descriptive Account of Hydraulic and other Machines for Raising Water, Ancient and Mod-*

*ern*, was published in 1842. This was the result of an exhaustive study of devices used for raising water, was profusely illustrated, and was one of the standard works on the subject. The sixteenth edition was published in 1870. From 1845 to 1848 he traveled in South America, studying both the natural phenomena and the industrial arts. Shortly after his return he was appointed commissioner of patents by President Taylor, which office he assumed May 4, 1849, and directed until 1852. His long study and interest in invention, particularly its historical aspects, is reflected in his annual reports which contain enthusiastic and delightful essays upon his favorite theme, and were prepared primarily to arouse popular interest in the industrial application of physical and chemical sciences. Ewbank did not entirely escape Congressional criticism while commissioner. He was accused of discriminating against some would-be patentees, a charge which was never proved, and for publishing his essays in the Patent Office reports. Senator Foote of Mississippi was especially opposed to the essays, which he described as being "more poetically grand, more brilliant, more fanciful, more Byronic than any of the most fanciful poems that Lord Byron ever produced." On the other hand, during his administration Ewbank succeeded in doubling the examining force and laid the foundation for the present rules of practise which greatly expedite the handling of claims. Upon his return to private life he again took up his writing in New York. *The World a Workshop; or, the Physical Relation of Man to the Earth* appeared in 1855; *Life in Brazil*, one of his most entertaining books, in 1856; *Thoughts on Matter and Force* in 1858; and *Reminiscences of the Patent Office* in 1859. Interspersed with these were many pamphlets on as many different subjects, such as "Inorganic Forces Ordained to Supersede Human Slavery," an essay read in 1860 before the American Ethnological Society of which he was one of the founders; and *North American Rock-Writing*, published in 1866. As a member of the commission to examine into the strength of the marble offered for the extension of the Capitol at Washington, Ewbank rendered valuable services by the determination of a method to increase the pressure resistance of building stones. He died, unmarried, in New York.

[*Sci. Am.*, Oct. 1, 1870; *Jour. of Patent Office Soc.*, Sept. 1919; Patent Office reports; *N. Y. Tribune*, Sept. 17, 1870.]

C. W. M.

**EWELL, BENJAMIN STODDERT** (June 10, 1810–June 19, 1894), Confederate soldier, educator, was born in Georgetown, D. C., son of Dr. Thomas Ewell [*q.v.*], of the United States navy, and Elizabeth Stoddert, daughter of the first secretary of the navy. After attending the preparatory department of Georgetown College, he entered the United States Military Academy from Virginia and graduated third in the class of 1832. He was commissioned second lieutenant in the 4th Artillery and detailed as assistant professor at West Point, where for three years he taught mathematics and for another year natural philosophy. He resigned from the army, Sept. 30, 1836, to become principal assistant engineer of the Baltimore & Susquehanna Railroad. Upon its completion in 1839, he accepted the professorship of mathematics and natural philosophy at Hampden-Sidney College, Va., and remained there seven years. During 1846–48 he was the first incumbent of the Cincinnati professorship of mathematics and military science in Washington College (now Washington and Lee University), Va. In 1848 he was elected professor of mathematics and acting president of William and Mary College, and in 1854 became the institution's sixteenth president.

In May 1861, the college suspended activities. Nearly all of the professors and students entered the Confederate army. Ewell, himself a strong Unionist, was convinced that secession was unwise and unconstitutional. Nevertheless he invested practically his entire fortune in Confederate bonds and, although beyond the age for active service, organized the 32nd Virginia Infantry and was appointed its colonel. After helping General Magruder to fortify the Virginia peninsula, he was made assistant adjutant-general to Joseph E. Johnston and served with ability as his chief-of-staff and closest friend, personal and official, until Mar. 20, 1865, when he resigned.

After the war, declining more lucrative professorships at Hampden-Sidney and Washington College, he returned to the presidency of William and Mary. He successfully opposed the projected removal of the institution to Richmond, restored the buildings which Federal troops had burned in 1862 (the main building had been burned in 1859 and rebuilt under Ewell's guidance), organized a faculty, and in 1869 reopened the college. During the next few years, supported by strong statements from Generals Grant and Meade, he sought governmental reimbursement for the restoration of the burned buildings, and, although he was not immediately successful, the Fifty-second Congress indemnified the college for its losses. Meanwhile the cost of repairs and increased operating expenses had diminished the endowment fund, efforts to raise money by subscription had failed, and in 1881 the

college was again compelled to close. For seven years Colonel Ewell, unaided, husbanded its scanty revenues. He spent on the college thousands of dollars of his own money, only a pittance of which was ever repaid, kept up inclosures and buildings as best he could, and guarded the institution's charter by driving in from his farm at stated intervals to ring the bell which announced that the college still lived. In 1888 the board of visitors requested the state legislature to combine the college with the educational system of the commonwealth—an idea which Ewell favored—and the application was successful. Ewell now declined any further active connection with the college, but was named president emeritus and held this office until his death.

He was principally responsible for the *Historical Catalogue* (1859) of the college, perhaps the first of its kind in this country. He was a distinguished figure, admired alike for his mental gifts and brilliant address and for his qualities of courage, truth, fidelity, perseverance. His broadmindedness is revealed in his efforts, after Appomattox, to foster harmony between North and South. His students, who affectionately termed him "Old Buck," loved him for what were perhaps his most noticeable characteristics: his love of his fellow man, his consideration for others, and his faculty of bringing out the best in those with whom he came in contact.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. of the Officers and Grads. of the U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1879), no. 664; Report of the *Twenty-Sixth Ann. Reunion of the Asso. of Grads. of the U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1895), pp. 11–14; obituaries in local newspapers and periodicals, especially the notice in the *Richmond Dispatch*, June 21, 1894; data in Col. Ewell's family Bible and other notes or letters in the possession of his grand-daughter, Mrs. Richard H. Crawford of Norfolk, Va. Col. Ewell's papers and many of his letters are now in the Lib. of the Coll. of William and Mary, Williamsburg, Va.] A. C. G., Jr.

**EWELL, JAMES** (Feb. 16, 1773–Nov. 2, 1832), physician, was the third son of Col. Jesse Ewell, who married his cousin, Charlotte Ewell. His father came of an old Virginia family, and he was born on the family estate "Bel Air," near Dumfries, Prince William County, Va. He studied medicine with his uncle, James Craik [*q.v.*] of Alexandria, the friend and physician of Washington, and with Dr. Stevenson of Baltimore. After his marriage, Dec. 2, 1794, to Margaret Robertson, daughter of a Virginia physician, he practised for seven years in Lancaster County and at Dumfries, and then, aided by his father's friend President Jefferson, established himself in Savannah, Ga. Here he introduced vaccination, and wrote *The Planter's and Mariner's Medical Companion*, dedicated to Jefferson. Published in Philadelphia, 1807, this was sold widely in the

Ewell

South and West, and ran to ten editions. With its pleasant mingling of poetical quotations, anecdotes, sentiment, and sound practical counsel, it was a valued possession on isolated plantations of the time. After 1809 Ewell lived in Washington, where he became a leading physician. His home was opposite the Capitol and when the British occupied Washington in 1814, his house was made their headquarters. Ewell remained, assuming care of wounded British soldiers, and exercising his influence to protect private property. Criticized later for his friendliness with British officers, he published in the third edition of the *Companion* (1816) an account of the invasion, justifying his conduct and presenting a valuable record of events. Characteristically, this was inserted in the midst of his discussion of fevers, and gave opportunity for a clever satire, *Eulogium on the Capture of Washington, or Bilious Fever,* by "Julius Scaliger" (Baltimore, 1816), which poked fun at the whole book in mock panegyric. About 1830, with a view to better supervision of book sales and to special study of diseases in warm climates, he moved to New Orleans, where he established a successful practise. He died of cholera at Covington, on Lake Pontchartrain. He was of medium height, stout and florid. Of genial, benevolent nature, fond of the best society, he was improvident and easy-going in practical affairs.

[A portrait and biographical sketch of Ewell appear in the tenth edition of his *Medical Companion* (1847). *The Invasion of Washington* is reprinted in the *Records of the Columbia Hist. Soc.*, vol. I, Dec. 1895.] A. W.

**EWELL, RICHARD STODDERT** (Feb. 8, 1817–Jan. 25, 1872), soldier, was born of Virginian stock in Georgetown, D. C., son of Dr. Thomas and Elizabeth (Stoddert) Ewell, and brother of Benjamin S. Ewell [*q.v.*]. Graduated from West Point in 1840, he was commissioned lieutenant of dragoons and assigned to frontier service. After fighting through the Mexican War and being brevetted for gallantry at Contreras and Churubusco, he resumed his duties on the frontier, was made captain in 1849, and won further distinction against the Apaches in New Mexico in 1857. Although a strong Union man, he resigned, May 7, 1861, to tender his sword to Virginia.

He was appointed colonel in the Confederate army and given charge of the camp of cavalry instruction at Ashland; on June 17 he was promoted brigadier-general. At first Manassas he commanded the 2nd Brigade of Beauregard's army, but had no part in the fighting. In October he was made major-general; led a division under "Stonewall" Jackson in the Shenandoah

Valley campaign, defeating Banks at Winchester and Frémont at Cross Keys; and was prominent in the Seven Days' battles before Richmond, at Cedar Mountain, and in the operations about Manassas Junction. He lost a leg at Groveton, but returned to duty, May 1863, with the rank of lieutenant-general, although to ride he had to be lifted into the saddle and strapped there. Upon the reorganization of the Confederate army into three corps, after Chancellorsville, at Jackson's request Ewell succeeded to the command of the II Corps. He was ordered to clear the Valley of Federals, and effected his purpose brilliantly, his victory at Brandy Station and his rout of Milroy at Winchester leading the newspapers to term him "a re-animate Jackson." He then led the Confederate advance into Pennsylvania, reaching Carlisle before being called back toward Gettysburg. He arrived there soon after the battle commenced, took his position on the Confederate left, and by nightfall occupied the town. He was afterwards criticized for failing to press on and storm Cemetery Hill that evening, but it is now conceded that he acted wisely under Lee's discretionary orders (A. Doubleday, *Chancellorsville and Gettysburg,* 1882, p. 153; Comte de Paris, *The Battle of Gettysburg,* 1886, 1907, pp. 124–26; H. J. Hunt, "The First Day at Gettysburg," in *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War,* 1888, vol. III, p. 284; J. B. Young, *The Battle of Gettysburg,* 1913, pp. 203–07). The second day he launched a spirited attack upon Culp's Hill, and renewed the fighting on July 3. Injured again in his defeat at Kelley's Ford, he resumed his command in time to confront Grant successfully in the first Wilderness engagement. His corps participated in the heavy fighting at or about Spotsylvania Court House, bore the brunt of conflict at the "Bloody Angle," and on May 19 effectively delayed the Federal turning movement. During this action, Ewell's horse was shot under him and he received a fall which incapacitated him for further field service. He was given command of the Department of Henrico, and subsequently of the entire defenses of Richmond. After the evacuation of the city, which he has been wrongfully blamed for firing unnecessarily (*Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vol. XLVI, 1894, pt. 1; E. A. Pollard, *Secret History of the Confederacy,* 1869, pp. 494–95), Ewell, with a decimated corps, was surrounded and captured at Sailor's Creek, and imprisoned for almost four months at Fort Warren. On his release, he removed to his farm near Spring Hill, Maury County, Tenn., where he died of pneumonia in 1872. He had married, about the close of the war, his cousin and childhood playmate, then a widow, Leczinska Campbell Brown, daughter of Judge Campbell of Tennessee, one time minister to Russia.

Ewell

Ewell was an able, enterprising, and energetic officer, given to fighting upon the smallest provocation—it was said that to him war meant fight and fight meant kill—and akin to Jackson in the quickness and ardor of his strokes. His tenderness and humanity were, to those who knew him, no less marked; and his many eccentricities of speech or conduct, his temper, his nervousness and absentmindedness but endeared him the more to his men, who knew at first hand his valor, gentle bearing, and high sense of honor. "Bright, prominent eyes, a bomb-shaped, bald head, and a nose like that of Francis of Valois gave him a striking resemblance to a woodcock" (Taylor, *post,* p. 37), which was increased by his habit of putting his head on one side before lisping his occasionally droll and witty, occasionally intolerant and profane, speeches. Under Jackson's influence, it is said, however, he changed remarkably the habits which he had acquired on the plains, and before the war ended revealed a spirit of genuine piety and religious devotion.

[W. P. Snow, *Southern Generals, Their Lives and Campaigns* (1866), and E. A. Pollard, *The Early Life, Campaigns and Public Services of Robert E. Lee with a Record of the Campaigns . . . of his Companions in Arms* (1870), each contains a chapter devoted to Ewell. There are sketches or references of value in C. A. Evans, ed., *Confed. Mil. Hist.,* esp. vol. III (1899); G. W. Cullum's *Biog. Reg. . . . of the U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891); *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (4 vols., copyright 1884, 1888); and in various biographies of Southern leaders, particularly Longstreet's and Early's. See also F. Marshall's *The Battle of Gettysburg* (1914); and J. B. Young, *Battle of Gettysburg* (1913), ch. 15; *Southern Hist. Soc. Papers,* X (1882), 255–61, 289–302. In *Personal Memoirs of U. S. Grant,* II (1886), 477–78, is related how a remark made by Ewell to a relative and transmitted to Grant first gave him the idea of demanding Lee's surrender. R. Taylor's *Destruction and Reconstruction* (1879) contains anecdotes illustrative of Ewell's character and individuality. His correspondence and papers are in the possession of the William and Mary College Library, Va.]

A. C. G., Jr.

**EWELL, THOMAS** (May 22, 1785–May 1, 1826), physician, brother of James Ewell [*q.v.*], was born on his father's estate near Dumfries, Va. He studied medicine under Dr. George Graham at Dumfries, Dr. John Weems in Washington, and Dr. Rush at the University of Pennsylvania, publishing at graduation a thesis entitled *Notes on the Stomach and Secretion* (Philadelphia, 1805). Through President Jefferson, his father's friend and classmate at William and Mary, he entered the naval hospital in New York, and from Jan. 16, 1808, to May 5, 1813, was a naval surgeon, assigned to duty in Washington. He was one of four surgeons who reported on the reorganization of the navy medical service

(*American State Papers, Naval Affairs,* vol. I, 1834, pp. 270–73). On Mar. 3, 1807, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin Stoddert, first secretary of the navy. Until 1819 he lived in the Stoddert home in Georgetown; later he built a house at 14 Jackson Place, Lafayette Square, in Washington. His resignation from the navy occurred soon after his father-in-law's death, and subsequently he administered the Stoddert property, which included the upper bridge across the Anacostia River, destroyed during the British invasion, and a gunpowder mill at Bladensburg. Ewell is said to have invented and used here a method of making gunpowder by rolling, instead of by the less safe method of pounding. As a writer, he edited the first American edition of Hume's *Essays* (1817), and published several medical works: *Plain Discourses on Modern Chemistry* (1806), used as a text-book at William and Mary; *Letters to Ladies* (1817), which included a project for establishing a large lying-in hospital in Washington by nation-wide subscription; *Statements of Improvements . . . in Medicine* (1819), a collection of various papers, dedicated to Jefferson; and *The American Family Physician* (1824), a well-written popular guide. Ewell was a man of distinguished professional attainments and marked talent for research and invention, with a turn for ridicule, however, and convivial habits which weakened his health. On this account he moved shortly before his death to his country property "Belleville," Prince William County, Va., and afterward to Centerville, Va., where he died. He had four daughters and five sons, two of whom, Benjamin Stoddert [*q.v.*], and Richard Stoddert [*q.v.*], were West Point graduates distinguished in the Civil War.

[H. E. Hayden, *Va. Geneal.* (1891); W. B. Bryan, *Hist. of the Nat. Capital* (1916); *Digested Summary and Alphabetical List of Private Claims . . . Presented to the House of Representatives . . .*, I (1853), 602; other material from family records, partly at the Coll. of William and Mary.] A. W.

**EWER, FERDINAND CARTWRIGHT** (May 22, 1826–Oct. 10, 1883), Episcopal clergyman, was the son of a well-to-do Nantucket Island ship-owner, Peter Folger Ewer, by his second wife, Mary Cartwright. When he was three years old the family moved to Providence, R. I., and in 1834 to New York. At the age of ten he was sent to the school of Charles G. Green at Jamaica Plain, Mass., and two years later, to one conducted by James B. Thompson in Nantucket. Here he remained, except for a winter in Providence, until he entered Harvard in 1844. From his earliest days the subject of religion was uppermost in his mind. His parents were Unitarian Quakers, but as a child the ritual of the

Ewer

Episcopal Church appealed to him, and convinced of the validity of that church's claims by a precocious study of theological literature, he became a communicant shortly before he entered college. There, however, his reading of German authors and the Unitarian influences of Boston destroyed his faith in the plenary inspiration of the Bible, and he became an infidel. In the meantime financial reverses had befallen his father, and to gain a livelihood Ferdinand took up civil engineering. He joined the California gold rush of 1849, not, he says, because he had the fever for gold, but because he desired not to starve. Finding little to do as an engineer, he drifted into journalism, and for ten years he was prominent as a pioneer editor, vigilante, member of the San Francisco board of education, and finally as a clergyman. For a short time he edited the *Pacific News,* said to have been the first Democratic newspaper on the coast, but he soon became part proprietor and editor of the Sacramento *Transcript,* the first tri-weekly in the interior. This failed because of a strike of the printers, who started a rival publication, and returning to San Francisco, he established a weekly paper, *The Sunday Dispatch,* which also failed. An appointment in 1853 as warehouse clerk in the custom-house, together with reportorial work, insured him a comfortable living, and in 1854, with William H. Brooks, he founded *The Pioneer,* the earliest California literary magazine, which he edited during its short lifetime. On Dec. 9, 1854, he was married to Sophia Mandell Congdon, daughter of Benjamin Congdon of New Bedford. He was among the first writers to recognize the ability and promise of Edwin Booth, then having indifferent success in California, an assistance which the latter in after years gratefully acknowledged. In 1854 he published in *The Pioneer,* "The Eventful Nights of August 20th and 21st," professing to be an account of the death of one John F. Lane, and of certain spiritual communications received from him by the writer. Although intended merely as a piece of imaginative literature, it turned out to be a grand hoax, since spiritualists all over the country, including Judge J. W. Edmonds [*q.v.*] of New York, accepted it as true and made much of it (see F. C. Ewer, *The Eventful Nights of August 20th and 21st; and how Judge Edmonds was Hocussed; or Fallibility of Spiritualism Exposed,* 1855).

Throughout this period his interest in the subject of religion continued, and though at first aggressively infidel, the reading of Cousin's *Psychology* finally started him on a course of thought which resulted in his reconversion to Christianity. On Jan. 17, 1858, he was ordained priest and

became rector of Grace Church, San Francisco. Returning East because of ill health in 1860, he was assistant to Dr. Gallaudet at St. Ann's Church for deaf mutes, New York, until 1862, when he became rector of Christ Church. His oratorical powers at once drew large congregations; his varied experiences gave him ability to deal with all classes; and his engaging personal qualities made him widely popular. He was zealously Anglo-Catholic, and wrote much in support of Anglo-Catholicism. A series of sermons preached in 1868 and published the following year under the title of *Sermons on the Failure of Protestantism and on Catholicity,* attracted much attention and aroused hostility. By "Protestantism" he meant the repudiation of the historic Church, the rejection of the divine polity and apostolic ministry, the substitution of the Bible as an authority, and the assertion of the unlimited right of private interpretation and judgment. The overthrow of Protestantism within the Episcopal Church and without he regarded as the great need of the hour, and he hoped for the ultimate reunion of the Roman, Greek, and Episcopal Churches, each purged of its errors. The *Sermons,* together with his introduction of certain ritualistic practises, made trouble for him in his church, and he resigned in 1871. Sympathizers then organized the Church of St. Ignatius of which he was rector until his death. In 1878 he delivered a series of discourses in Newark, N. J., in which his ability as a theologian and controversialist are well illustrated. They appeared in printed form the same year, *Catholicity in Its Relationship to Protestantism and Romanism.* In them he attempted to show the skeptic why he should be a Christian rather than an infidel or Unitarian; a Catholic rather than a Protestant; and an Anglo-Catholic rather than a Roman Catholic. In 1880 he published *The Operation of the Holy Spirit, Four Conferences Delivered at Newark, N. J.,* and *A Grammar of Theology;* in 1883, *What is the Anglican Church?* Ardently devoted to his work, he took little part in public affairs. While preaching in the Church of St. John the Evangelist, Montreal, Oct. 7, 1883, he suffered a cerebral hemorrhage from which he died a few days later.

[A bibliography of his numerous writings is appended to a Memoir by Chas. T. Congdon in a selection from Ewer's sermons, *Sanctity and Other Sermons* (1884). See also Ella S. Cummins, *The Story of the Files: a Review of California Writers and Literature* (1893); *A Hist. of Calif. Newspapers* (1927), repr. from the *Sacramento Daily Union,* Dec. 25, 1858; "The Rector of St. Ignatius's Church," *Frank Leslie's Sunday Magazine,* Oct. 1883; Morgan Dix, "Ferdinand C. Ewer, Priest and Doctor," *Am. Ch. Rev.,* Dec. 1883; *N. Y. Tribune* and *N. Y. Times,* Oct. 11, 1883.] H. E. S.



**EWING, CHARLES** (June 8, 1780–Aug. 5, 1832), jurist, was a grandson of Thomas Ewing of Londonderry, Ireland, who, emigrating to Southampton, L. I., moved in 1718 to the province of West Jersey and settled at Greenwich in what is now Cumberland County. His youngest child, James Ewing, an active participant in the Revolutionary War and member of the Jersey militia, married Martha Boyd, who was also of Irish extraction, and their only son, Charles, was born at Bridgeton, now in Cumberland County. In 1784 they moved to Trenton, and Charles's early education was obtained at the academy in that town. After spending a year in Philadelphia, where he made a particular study of the French language, he entered the College of New Jersey, at Princeton, in 1796, graduating there in 1798 with high honors, specially distinguishing himself in mathematics. He then studied law in the office of Samuel Leake at Trenton, was licensed to practise as an attorney in November 1802, admitted as a councillor in 1805, and seven years later called to the degree of sergeant-at-law. He married Eleanor Graeme Armstrong, daughter of the Rev. James F. Armstrong of Trenton. Ewing's father had attained a prominent position in Trenton, being mayor and holding other public offices, and no doubt materially assisted his son when the latter commenced practise in that town in 1802. He was for several years recorder of the City of Trenton, and in 1815, against his better judgment, he was Federalist candidate for the state legislature. In 1819 he was appointed commissioner to revise the laws of New Jersey. He enjoyed a wide practise in chancery matters, and for some years was a master and examiner in chancery, acting often in injunction matters for the chancellor in the latter's absence. In October 1824 he was appointed by the legislature chief justice of the supreme court, an office which he only reluctantly accepted, as it involved his relinquishing a lucrative practise. On the bench he quickly displayed remarkable aptitude for judicial work. He exercised extreme care in hearing cases, examining every argument of counsel and meticulously weighing evidence, and yet succeeded in being expeditious in his disposal of the dockets. Establishing himself in the confidence of the bar and the public, he was at the close of his term in 1831 reëlected by a legislature opposed to him in politics. The following year he was called upon to preside at the trial of a chancery suit which attracted wide-spread interest owing to its unusual character. The Society of Friends in 1827 had been split through differences of doctrine into two sections, the Orthodox, and the Hicksite,

the latter being in a majority, and the question arose as to which had a right to the endowments of the Quaker school at Crosswicks in Burlington County. The opinion of the chief justice, in favor of the Orthodox adherents, is a masterpiece of close reasoning and cold analysis and so convincing in its logic that the controversy, which in its various aspects might easily have led to prolonged litigation, was forthwith terminated (see 1 *N. J. Equity Reports,* 577 at pp. 594–635).

By instinct a lawyer, he was also a profound student of original sources and the learning of the black-letter era. Conservative by nature and perhaps also by reason of his research work, he disliked innovation in any sphere of life and was a consistent supporter of the common law, legislative changes in which he could never be induced to support. This trait did not, however, obtrude in his judicial work, which in the opinion of contemporaries, concurred in by later authorities, placed him in the front rank of New Jersey jurists. As an advocate he was distinguished by his fair and open attitude, and on the bench he carried this frankness to an extreme, never hesitating to tell a jury exactly what opinion he had formed on the case before them.

[W. W. Spooner, *Historic Families of America* (1908), III, 309–11; E. F. Cooley, *Geneal. of Early Settlers in Trenton and Ewing, "Old Hunterton County," N. J.* (1883), p. 64; S. L. Southard, *An Eulogium upon the Hon. Chas. Ewing, late Chief Justice of N. J.* (1832); E. Q. Keasbey, *The Courts and Lawyers of N. J.* (1912), II, 694; *Green Bag,* Sept. 1891; *Newark Daily Advertiser,* Aug. 6, 1832.] H. W. H. K.

**EWING, FINIS** (July 10, 1773–July 4, 1841), chief founder of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, received his unusual name because he was the last of the twelve children of Robert and Mary (Baker) Ewing. He was born in Bedford County, Va., whither his father had come from Ireland. From boyhood he lived on the frontier near Nashville, Tenn., becoming tall and hardy, a leader in sports and Indian warfare. He obtained some advanced schooling, and profited by the debates of a "literary society." In 1793 he married Peggy, daughter of Gen. William Davidson, and the next year settled in Kentucky, near Russellville, where he soon was a prosperous and influential farmer. Out of a formal religion, the preaching of James McGready [*q.v.*] brought Ewing to a vital Christian experience, and he showed gifts for the ministry. In the great Cumberland revival of 1800 the presbyteries of Transylvania and Cumberland, unable to answer the calls for preachers, licensed and ordained some men, Ewing among them, who did not satisfy Presbyterian educational requirements; they also adopted the Westminster Confession, making exceptions concerning predestinarianism, which did not suit revival work. Because of disapproval of this action by the Kentucky Synod and finally by the General Assembly, in 1810 Ewing and two other ministers formed an independent body, the Presbytery of Cumberland. He then was conspicuous for the power of his ministry. For nine years he had traveled and preached indefatigably in Kentucky and Tennessee, building up congregations in regions religiously destitute, holding camp-meetings, winning everywhere enthusiastic, grateful response. For his ministry he never received money, supporting his growing family by farming.

Courageous, resolute, ardent, in 1810 Ewing was the leader of what was practically a new church. He was principal author of the *Circular Letter* issued by Cumberland Presbytery to justify its founders. In three years the presbytery, because of its evangelistic zeal, grew to a synod. Ewing was one of the framers of a revised Westminster Confession, the adoption of which by the synod in 1814 marked the separate life of Cumberland Presbyterian Church. This revision sought a middle way between Calvinism and Arminianism. Ewing presided over many of the church's meetings, championed its doctrines in controversy, and fostered all its concerns. From about 1812 he was pastor on half-time of Lebanon Church in Christian County, Ky., working also in many other places. With Robert Donnell [*q.v.*] he wrote an account of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church for Woodward's edition of Charles Buck's *Theological Dictionary* (1814), which brought the sect to general notice. In 1820 he removed to central Missouri, following many Kentuckians. At New Lebanon in that state he soon formed a strong church, besides ministering generally to a wide-reaching frontier. In his own house he maintained a training-school for ministers. Of his teaching, his *Lectures on Theological Subjects* (1872), widely circulated among Cumberland Presbyterians, were the outcome. Long a slaveholder, now, in a slaveholding country, he agitated against slavery. He was a pioneer leader of the temperance movement in Missouri. After four years in a church near Lexington, Mo., in 1836 he became pastor in that town. There he was register of the Land Office, supporting himself thus while incessantly active in the ministry. He built up the Cumberland Church to much strength in Missouri. By correspondence and visits he maintained an influential connection with the church in the East. So long as he lived he was its revered "Father Ewing."

[See F. R. Cossitt, *Life and Times of Rev. Finis*

*Ewing* (1853), with portrait; Richard Beard, *Biog. Sketches of Some of the Early Ministers of the Cumberland Presbyt. Ch.* (1867); E. B. Crisman, *Origin and Doctrines of the Cumb. Presbyt. Ch.* (1856); Robt. Davidson, *Hist. Presbyt. Ch. in Ky.* (1847); his unfavorable view of the founding of the Cumb. Presbyt. Ch. is answered at length by Cossitt, *op. cit*; B. W. McDonnold, *Hist. Cumb. Presbyt.* (4th ed., 1899); E. H. Gillett, *Hist. Presbyt. Ch. U. S. A.* (1864); *Semicentennial General Assembly Cumb. Presbyt. Ch.* (1880), ed. by J. Frizell, containing important extracts from ecclesiastical records; *The Cumb. Presbyt. Digest* (1899), ed. by J. V. Stephens; *Extracts from the Minutes Gen. Assembly Presbyt. Ch. U. S. A.*, 1807–09. Philip Schaff, *Creeds of Christendom*, vol. III (1877), contains the Cumb. Presbyt. revision of the Westminster Confession.]

R. H. N.

**EWING, HUGH BOYLE** (Oct. 31, 1826–June 30, 1905), soldier, author, was born in Lancaster, Ohio, the fourth child of Thomas [*q.v.*] and Maria Wills (Boyle) Ewing. He received his education under private tutors and later at the United States Military Academy, from which, however, he did not graduate. In 1849 he was caught by the gold fever and made the journey to California by way of New Orleans and Texas, thence across Mexico to Mazatlan on the Pacific Coast, and across the Cordilleras on muleback. While in California he was ordered to join an expedition sent out by his father, then secretary of the interior, to rescue immigrants who were trapped in the high sierras by the heavy snows. In 1852 he returned by way of Panama to Washington as the bearer of government dispatches. He then completed his law studies and began to practise his profession in St. Louis, Mo. From 1854 to 1856 he resided in that city, and then removed to Leavenworth, Kan., where he was associated with his younger brother, Thomas, his foster-brother, W. T. Sherman [*qq.v.*], and Dan McCook, in the law firm of Ewing, Sherman & McCook. In 1858 he returned to Ohio in order to take charge of his father's salt works and lands in Athens County. On May 6, 1861, Gov. Dennison appointed him brigade-inspector of Ohio Volunteers and a month later he joined the forces under Gen. McClellan. He served under McClellan and Rosecrans in their West Virginia campaigns and in August 1861 was appointed colonel of the 30th Ohio Infantry. At the battle of South Mountain, Sept. 14, 1862, he led the charge which dislodged the enemy from the summit; and at midnight of that day he received an order assigning him to the command of a brigade. In the battle of Antietam his brigade was stationed upon the extreme left of the army where, according to Gen. Burnside's report, "by a change of front and rear on his right flank, [he] saved the left from being completely driven in" (Randall and Ryan, *post*, VI, 18). After this battle Ewing was favorably mentioned in Col. E. P. Scammon's report "for energy and skilful bravery" (*Official Records (Army)*, 1 ser., XIX, pt. 1); and on Nov. 29, 1862, he was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general. He commanded a brigade under Sherman during the Vicksburg campaign; and while his troops lay before that city seized and burned the disloyal papers which were sent to his camp; confiscated and arrested the dealers selling "bad whisky" to the soldiers; broke up the vending of cigars and groceries by the soldiers "which he considered a demoralizing custom"; but "acknowledged his inability to check the vice of gambling" (Reid, *post*, I, 854). He led the assaults made by Gen. Sherman on the enemy's works and upon the fall of Vicksburg was placed in command of a division. At Chickamauga his division formed the advance of Sherman's army and suffered great losses in carrying Missionary Ridge. In February 1865 he was ordered to North Carolina and was planning an expedition up the Roanoke River when the war came to an end. On Mar. 13, 1865, he was brevetted major-general "for meritorious services during the war" (*Ibid.*, I, 856) and a year later was mustered out of the service. President Johnson appointed him minister to Holland, in which capacity he served from 1866 to 1870. Upon his return from Europe he practised law in Washington, D. C., until 1874, when he returned to Ohio, buying a small estate near his birthplace where he resided until his death. Ewing traveled extensively in America and abroad and was the author of *A Castle in the Air* (1888); *The Black List; a Tale of Early California* (1893); and a number of magazine articles. In 1858 he married Henrietta Young, the daughter of George W. Young of the District of Columbia. As a soldier Ewing was capable, courageous, and efficient, though a severe disciplinarian. As a man he was respected for his literary attainments, honorable character, and genial disposition.

[E. O. Randall and D. J. Ryan, *Hist. of Ohio* (1912), esp. VI, 17–19; Whitelaw Reid, *Ohio in the War* (1868), I, 853–56, *Official Records (Army)*, esp. 1 ser., V, XIX, XXIV, XXXI; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05; E. W. R. Ewing, *Clan Ewing of Scotland* (1922); P. K. and M. E. (Williams) Ewing, *The Ewing Geneal. with Cognate Branches* (1919).]

R. C. M.

**EWING, JAMES** (Aug. 3, 1736–Mar. 1, 1806), Revolutionary soldier, was of Scotch-Irish descent, the son of Thomas Ewing, a member of the Pennsylvania Assembly in 1738–39, and his wife Susanna Howard, widow of James Patterson, the Indian trader. James Ewing was born in Lancaster County, Pa., and married Patience Wright. He served as a lieutenant in the French and Indian War in 1758, and sat in the Pennsylvania General Assembly 1771–75. He was a member

of the local committee of safety, and on July 4, 1776, was chosen brigadier-general of Pennsylvania militia, in command of the 2nd Brigade. He had a place in Washington's plan for the attack on Trenton in the winter of 1776–77, being ordered to cross at Trenton Ferry, with the "Flying Camp" and New Jersey militia. Ice and high winds prevented the passage by his detachment, however, and he did not share in the victory. The records are meager regarding his military services, in spite of the high position which he held from the beginning. Even his name is frequently misspelled, appearing as Eving, Erwing, Irwin, Irvin, and Irvine, the last version leading occasionally to his being confused with the contemporary Gen. William Irvine [*q.v.*]. After the war Ewing was vice-president of Pennsylvania 1782–84, a member of the Assembly, and in 1795–99 a member of the state Senate. He was one of the early trustees of Dickinson College at Carlisle, serving from 1783 until his death. He died at Hellam, York County, Pa.

[Samuel Evans, "The Ewing Family of Lancaster and York," *Hist. Reg.* (Harrisburg), Sept. 1844, and an article in *Notes and Queries* (Harrisburg), 3 ser. vol. II (1896); E. H. Bell and M. H. Colwell, *Jas. Patterson of Conestoga Manor and His Descendants* (Lancaster, 1925); Wm. S. Stryker, *The Battles of Trenton and Princeton* (1898); Jared Sparks, ed., *The Writings of Geo. Washington*, IV (1834), 247–49; *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser* (Phila.), Mar. 14, 1806.] E. K. A.

**EWING, JAMES CARUTHERS RHEA** (June 23, 1854–Aug. 20, 1925), Presbyterian missionary, the son of James Henry and Eleanor (Rhea) Ewing, was born in the prosperous and enlightened community of Rural Valley, Armstrong County, Pa. He was of Scotch-Irish stock, and one of a large family of children, of whom seven sons and one daughter reached maturity. In the spring of 1860 the family moved to a farm in the vicinity of Saltsburg, Pa., where Ewing attended the public school. He joined the Presbyterian Church in 1865. He graduated in 1869 from the Saltsburg Academy, and passed his examination for teaching. After three years spent in teaching in the common schools of Indiana and Armstrong counties, he entered in March 1873 the freshman class of Washington and Jefferson College, from which he received the B.A. degree in 1876, graduating with Phi Beta Kappa honors. His next three years were spent in Western Theological Seminary, from which he graduated in 1879. He was married, on June 24 of that year, at Prosperity, Pa., to Jane Sherrard, daughter of the Rev. J. H. Sherrard, and on Sept. 5, at Saltsburg, he was ordained to the Christian ministry. Having applied during his senior year in the seminary for missionary appointment, he received a commission under the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions for service in India. With Mrs. Ewing, he sailed from Philadelphia on Oct. 2, 1879, and arrived at Bombay, Dec. 1. They proceeded thence to the United Provinces, first to Mainpuri and soon thereafter to Fategarh. He learned the Urdu language quickly. During 1882–84 he was principal of the Jumna High School in Allahabad, was in charge of the asylum for lepers and the blind, and editor of the mission paper, *Makhzan i Masihi*. He spent the next three years in Saharanpur at the newly established Theological Seminary for the North India Presbyterian Mission. There he published various books, including a Greek-Hindustani dictionary of the New Testament and a Hindustani hymnal. In 1887–88 he and his family visited the United States on furlough but they returned in October 1888, and Ewing was then assigned to the Ludhiana Mission with a view to his working in Forman Christian College, Lahore. From 1888 to 1918 he was principal (president) of Forman College, during which time the institution attained front rank and he himself became one of the best-known and most trusted foreigners in the Panjab. The India government gave aid in the building of the first unit of the college in 1889. During that year Ewing was appointed to several offices in the Panjab University, namely, examiner in English, member of the Syndicate, fellow, and secretary of the faculty of arts. From 1890 to 1907 he was dean of the faculty of arts, and from 1910 to 1917, was vice-chancellor of the university. During the Second Decennial Missionary Conference at Bombay, December 1892 and January 1893, he was a conspicuous and influential figure. His health suffered from his many arduous activities.

During his second furlough, in 1897–98, he was offered the presidencies of Wooster College (Ohio) and Centre College (Ky.), but preferred to continue his service in India. In 1901 he was sent on a special mission to the Philippine Islands to aid in the inauguration of Presbyterian work there. For the part he took in the Panjab earthquake relief work in the fall of 1905, on Jan. 1, 1906, he was awarded by the British Crown the Kaisar-i-Hind Gold Medal, first class. In 1912 he paid a visit to England as a representative of the Panjab University in the Congress of Universities of the British Empire. The directorship of the American Board of Missionary Preparation was offered to him in 1914, but this he also declined. In 1915 the Government of India made him an honorary Commander of the Indian Empire—and later an honorary Knight Commander—and in 1917 on the eve of his retirement and re-

turn to America the Panjab University conferred upon him the honorary Litt.D. Having retired from the headship of Forman Christian College and having severed various other connections with India, he spent a year in America. During this time he published his only original volume, *A Prince of the Church in India, being a Record of the Life of the Rev. Kali Charan Chatterjee, D.D.* (1918). He found himself able to return to the East in October 1918 to take up the secretaryship of the Council of Presbyterian Missions in India, and to be the India representative of the Inter-Church World Movement. In January 1920 he suffered a stroke of paralysis, but improved sufficiently thereafter to be able to draft a plan of administration of the joint work of his India mission, and to act as chairman of the standing committee on Christian Education of the National Missionary Council of India.

In 1922 at the age of sixty-eight and after forty-three years of service in India, Ewing retired on a pension from his Board and returned to America where he took up residence in Princeton, N. J., and became a lecturer in the Princeton Theological Seminary. On June 4, 1923, he was elected a member of the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions. He died at Princeton two years later, and was buried in the family lot at Saltsburg, Pa.

[R. E. Speer, *Sir James Ewing* (1928); *89th Ann. Report Board of Foreign Missions of the Presbyt. Ch. in the U. S. A.* (1926); P. K. and M. E. (Williams) Ewing, *The Ewing Geneal. with Cognate Branches* (1919); *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; *State Gazette* (Trenton, N. J.), *N. Y. Times*, Aug. 22, 1925.]

J. C. A.

**EWING, JOHN** (July 22, 1732–Sept. 8, 1802), Presbyterian clergyman, provost of the University of Pennsylvania, was born in East Nottingham, Cecil County, Md. He was a younger son of Alexander Ewing, one of several sons of that Capt. Ewing who received a sword from William of Orange for his services at the battle of the Boyne. These Scotch-Irish brothers came to America from Londonderry, Ireland, early in the eighteenth century. Alexander Ewing provided his sons with a good education, but since the eldest son inherited the family property, in later life John had to rely upon his own resources. He early displayed an aptitude for learning, which took him from the rural school of his neighborhood to the school kept by Dr. Francis Alison [*q.v.*] at New London Cross Road, Pa. For the privilege of borrowing a book upon mathematics or natural philosophy John Ewing would ride, so it is said, thirty or forty miles. After completing his course and acting as tutor for three years in Dr. Alison's school, in 1754 he entered the senior class of the College of New Jersey, then situated at Newark, and graduated in the same year. He accepted appointment as tutor, serving 1756–58, during which time the college moved to Princeton, and then he returned to Dr. Alison, under whom he studied for the ministry.

Before accepting a pastorate, he filled a temporary post in philosophy, 1758–59, at the College of Philadelphia. About this time he married Hannah Sergeant of Newark, Del. In 1759 he became pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia, which he served for the rest of his life. His interest in education continued; and from 1773 to 1775 he was in England soliciting funds for an academy in Delaware. He corresponded with the Astronomer Royal of Greenwich, England, in an attempt to obtain an observatory for Philadelphia. The Boston Tea Party had prejudiced Englishmen against the colonies, and both of Ewing's endeavors were unsuccessful. While in England he met Dr. Robertson, the great Dr. Johnson, and Lord North, with whom he discussed colonial problems. The University of Edinburgh conferred upon him the degree of D.D. in recognition of his scholarship; and several Scottish towns presented him with their freedom.

In 1779 he was appointed provost of the University of the State of Pennsylvania, chartered in that year by the legislature. From that time until his death his busy career included lecturing in addition to preaching and his other church work. Besides being provost, he was professor of natural philosophy, and it was said of him that in the absence of any other professor, "the Provost could take his place, at an hour's warning, and conduct the instruction appropriate to that Professorship with more skill, taste, and advantage than the incumbent of the chair himself" (Miller, *post*, p. 218). In 1791 the University and the old College of Philadelphia were combined to form the University of Pennsylvania, Ewing continuing as provost. He served with David Rittenhouse [*q.v.*], on several boundary commissions (see, in this connection, his "Memorandum Book," 1784, in *Pennsylvania Archives*, 6 ser. XIV, 1–20). He was a vice-president of the American Philosophical Society, and contributed several articles on astronomy to its publications as well as to Thomas Dobson's *Encyclopædia* (1798), the third, and first American, edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*. His university lectures on natural philosophy and a collection of his sermons were published after his death under the titles: *A Plain Elementary and Practical System of Natural Experimental Philosophy* (1809), edited by Robert Patterson, and *Sermons by the*

*Rev. John Ewing, D.D.* (1812), edited by James P. Wilson. In 1796 Ewing had suffered from a severe illness and he never completely recovered, although he continued his work. He died at the home of his son in Norristown, Montgomery County, Pa.

Ewing was fortunate in possessing both scholarship and an unusual personality. He knew several languages, including Hebrew; and in scientific fields he was an original and critical thinker. In the pulpit or on the lecture platform he needed and used no flourishes of rhetoric; his tall, handsome figure, powdered hair brushed back from a high forehead, and keen eyes made a striking and impressive appearance. In private life he was a genial host and an easy conversationalist; but he was a poor judge of human nature, and suffered financial loss because of over-confidence in his acquaintances.

[Biographical sketch by Robt. Patterson in Ewing's *A Plain Elementary and Practical System of Natural Experimental Philosophy* (1809); Lucy E. L. Ewing, *Dr. John Ewing and Some of his Noted Connections* (1924); J. L. Chamberlain, *Universities and their Sons: Univ. of Pa.* (1901); *Gen. Cat. Princeton Univ.* (1908); John Blair Linn, *A Discourse Occasioned by the Death of the Rev. John Ewing* (1802); *Port Folio* (Phila.), Mar. 1813; Samuel Miller in W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, III (1858), 216–19; obituary in *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser* (Phila.), Sept. 13, 1802.]

D. M. C.

**EWING, THOMAS** (Dec. 28, 1789–Oct. 26, 1871), senator from Ohio, cabinet officer, was the second son of George and Rachel (Harris) Ewing. In his "Autobiography" he states that he attached "little importance to remote ancestry"; yet he could trace his lineage back to a Capt. Ewing of lower Loch Lomond, Scotland, who, serving under William of Orange at the battle of the Boyne (1690), was presented with a sword by his sovereign in recognition of conspicuous bravery. Thomas Ewing, a son of this ancestor, came to America from Londonderry, Ireland, and settled in Greenwich, N. J., about 1718. At the beginning of the Revolution, George Ewing enlisted in the 2nd New Jersey Regiment, in which he held the rank of first lieutenant. During the course of the war, he suffered financial reverses and at the termination of hostilities decided to migrate westward. His son Thomas was born near West Liberty, Ohio County, Va. About 1793 the Ewings moved to Waterford on the Muskingum and in the spring of 1798 removed to what is now Ames Township, Athens County, Ohio. Here, on the outskirts of civilization, young Thomas spent his boyhood. He was taught to read by an elder sister and by his own extraordinary efforts acquired a fair elementary education. Books were his delight, and, encouraged by his parents, the boy eagerly read everything he could lay his hands upon. Before he was eight years old he had read the entire Bible and in his autobiography he says that he once walked twenty miles to borrow a translation of Virgil's *Æneid*. The establishment of a circulating library in Ames Township stimulated his insatiable craving for knowledge, while his tenacious and ready memory enabled him to retain the information he acquired. In order to secure funds for a college education, he sought employment in the Kanawha salt works. In the course of two or three years he saved enough from his scanty earnings to free his father's farm of debt, and with the meager surplus enrolled in Ohio University at Athens. His funds were soon exhausted and he was compelled to return to the salt works. Once more he saved his earnings, returned to resume his studies at Ohio University, and in 1815 he and his classmate John Hunter, received the first B.A. degrees ever granted by that institution.

After graduation he studied law in the office of Gen. Philemon Beecher at Lancaster, Ohio, and in August 1816 was admitted to the bar. He rapidly acquired a reputation as one of the best equipped and most successful lawyers in the West. For several years he served as prosecuting attorney of Fairfield County and in that capacity was instrumental in freeing the district of counterfeiters. In 1823 he was defeated for the state legislature but in 1830 was elected to the United States Senate where his keen intellect earned for him the sobriquet of "Logician of the West" (Randall & Ryan, *post*, VI, 8). As a Whig senator he vigorously assailed the Democratic administration, supported the protective tariff policy of Clay, advocated the re-charter of the United States Bank, denounced President Jackson's removal of deposits and his "Specie Circular," opposed the confirmation of Martin Van Buren as minister to England, but voted for the revenue collection bill known as the "Force Bill." He also advocated reduced postal rates, brought about a revision of the land laws, a reorganization of the Post-Office Department, and a bill for the settlement of the Ohio-Michigan boundary. In January 1836 he was defeated for reëlection by William Allen and resumed his practise at Lancaster.

He was appointed secretary of the treasury by President Harrison in 1841, retained this office after the death of Harrison and the succession of Tyler, and as secretary of the treasury helped to draft bills for the re-charter of a national bank. After President Tyler had twice vetoed such measures, Ewing resigned along with the other members of the cabinet. He returned to the

practise of law; and it was following his resignation that his reputation as a lawyer was established. Among his more elaborate written professional arguments were those in the case of *Oliver* vs. *Pratt et al.*, involving the title to half the land now occupied by the municipality of Toledo, Ohio; the Methodist Episcopal Church division case; the *McIntire Poor School* vs. *Zanesville;* and the McMicken Will Case, which involved large bequests for education (*12 Wallace,* viii).

On the inauguration of Zachary Taylor as president, Ewing was appointed secretary of the recently created Department of the Interior, which was still unorganized. In his first report, he recommended the erection of a mint near the California gold mines and the building of a railroad to the Pacific. On the death of President Taylor, July 9, 1850, and the accession of Millard Fillmore, a division in the Whig party caused a change in the cabinet. Thomas Corwin was appointed secretary of the treasury and Ewing was appointed to complete the unexpired term of Corwin in the Senate. During this term in the Senate Ewing differed with Clay in his proposals to solve the problems arising as a result of the Mexican War. He opposed the Fugitive-Slave Law and was in favor of the unconditional admission of California as a state. In 1851 he retired from public life, although he never completely lost interest in public affairs.

In 1861 he was appointed a delegate to the Peace Convention and throughout the Civil War he rendered loyal assistance to Lincoln's administration. At the time of the *Trent* affair he wrote President Lincoln: "There is no such thing as contraband of war between neutral ports" and urged the release of Mason and Slidell. His conservatism caused him to oppose the reconstruction policy of Congress, and during his last years he acted with the Democratic party. He gave President Johnson much good advice and cautioned him against removing Stanton as secretary of war. When Stanton was removed in 1868, President Johnson submitted Ewing's name for the vacancy; but the Senate never acted upon the recommendation (J. F. Rhodes, *History of the United States,* vol. VI, 1928, pp. 210–22).

Ewing was a man of great physical strength, over six feet in height, with broad shoulders, a massive frame, and a head of unusual size. His keen, logical mind, his incisive style both in speaking and in writing, his wide range of reading, and his wealth of information made him a lawyer of the first rank and a forceful leader in his day. In public and private life he was a man of strong convictions and an inflexible will, powerful as a friend or as an antagonist, dignified yet sociable in his relations with men, and a stanch believer in the "good old days." In September 1871 Archbishop Purcell of Cincinnati received him into the Catholic Church. On Jan. 7, 1820, Ewing married Maria Wills Boyle by whom he had six children, among them Hugh Boyle Ewing and Thomas Ewing, Jr. [*qq.v.*]. He also adopted, in 1829, William T. Sherman [*q.v.*], the son of his friend, Judge Charles Sherman, and appointed him to West Point in 1836.

[See "The Autobiography of Thomas Ewing," ed. by C. L. Martzolff, in *Ohio Archæol. and Hist. Pubs.,* XXII (1913), 126 ff.; "Diary of Thomas Ewing, Aug. and Sept., 1841," in *Am. Hist. Rev.,* Oct. 1912; Ellen Ewing Sherman, *Memorial of Thos. Ewing of Ohio* (1873); P. K. and M. E. (Williams) Ewing, *The Ewing Geneal. with Cognate Branches* (1919); E. W. R. Ewing, *Clan Ewing of Scotland* (1922); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); G. I. Reed, *Bench and Bar of Ohio,* I (1897), 75 ff.; E. O. Randall and D. J. Ryan, *Hist. of Ohio* (1912), vols. III–V; *Cincinnati Enquirer,* Oct. 26, 27, 1871; *Cincinnati Commercial, Cincinnati Daily Times and Chronicle,* Oct. 27, 1871. At Ewing's death the U. S. Supreme Court paid him the unusual honor of publishing in their reports an account of his life (*12 Wallace,* vii–ix).]

R. C. M.

**EWING, THOMAS** (Aug. 7, 1829–Jan. 21, 1896), soldier, lawyer, congressman from Ohio, the fifth child of Thomas [*q.v.*] and Maria Wills (Boyle) Ewing, was born in Lancaster, Ohio. He received his early education in Ohio and at the age of nineteen became one of the private secretaries of President Taylor in whose cabinet his father was secretary of the interior. After a year spent in this position and two more as a claims clerk in Washington, he entered Brown University. In 1855 he attended the Cincinnati Law School and, after admission to the bar, began practising in that city. On Jan. 8, 1856, he married Ellen Ewing Cox, the daughter of Rev. William Cox, of Piqua, Ohio, and during the same year he and his wife moved to Leavenworth, Kan., where he became a member of the firm of Ewing, Sherman & McCook.

As an ardent anti-slavery man, Ewing was largely instrumental in revealing the fraudulent voting for state officers at the election held on Jan. 4, 1858, under the Lecompton constitution. The public indignation aroused by these disclosures prevented the admission of Kansas as a slave-state. (Ewing later wrote an article, "The Struggle for Freedom in Kansas," published in the *Cosmopolitan Magazine,* May 1894.) In 1861 he represented Kansas in the Peace Convention and in January of the same year was chosen the first chief justice of the supreme court of the new state. He resigned his judicial office in September 1862 and recruited the 11th Kansas Volunteers, of which he was appointed colonel. After participating in several severe engage-

ments in Arkansas he was promoted brigadier-general in March 1863. From June 1863 to February 1864 he was in command of the "District of the Border," which comprised Kansas and the western tier of counties in Missouri. In his efforts to exterminate the guerrilla bands which infested this area, Ewing issued his famous Order No. 11, depopulating the counties of Missouri. In March 1864 he was assigned to the command of the St. Louis District. When Gen. Sterling Price invaded Missouri the following September, Ewing was ordered to check and delay the progress of the Confederate forces in their march on St. Louis. He encountered their advance columns in a narrow defile and, disputing every inch of ground, slowly retired to Fort Davidson, a small earthwork adjacent to Pilot Knob. On Sept. 27 Price attacked him but was repulsed with great losses. Ewing soon found his position untenable, however, because the enemy placed batteries on the mountain sides and began to shell the fort. Under cover of darkness Ewing spiked all his guns but two, blew up the magazine and his valuable stores, and started to retreat toward St. Louis. During the next thirty-nine hours his forces marched sixty-six miles, hotly pursued by the foe. At Harrison he entrenched behind railroad ties and for three days held the enemy at bay until relieved by reinforcements from Rolla. "Thus closed a campaign of a week of stubborn fighting, on a comparatively small scale, but still rarely excelled during the war" (Reid, *post*, I, 835). In February 1865 Ewing resigned his commission and soon afterward was brevetted major-general for his services at Pilot Knob. During the next few years he resided in Washington, D. C., where he practised law. President Johnson offered him the positions of secretary of war and attorney-general but Ewing declined both.

In 1870 he returned to Lancaster, Ohio, and during the next twelve years was a conspicuous leader of the Greenback wing of the Democratic party. From 1877 to 1881 he represented the Lancaster district in Congress and as a member of that body was the leader in the movement for preservation of the Greenback currency; advocated the remonetization of the currency; and took a prominent part in the support of legislation to stop the employment of federal troops and supervisors at state elections. His candidacy for the governorship in 1879 on the Democratic ticket was the last of the Greenback movement in Ohio, and, although he was defeated, his brilliant campaign attracted the attention of the country. In 1881 he retired from Congress and politics and removed to New York City where he practised law during the remainder of his life. He was one of the founders of the Ohio Society of New York and was its first president. As a soldier he displayed marked military judgment, courage, and gallantry. His easy and gracious manner made a deep impression on every one he met; while his lofty ideals, his sincerity, his integrity, and his eloquence made him an effective popular leader.



[E. O. Randall and D. J. Ryan, *Hist. of Ohio* (1912), vol. IV; *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser. XXXII, XXXIV, XLI, XLVIII; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); G. I. Reed, *Bench and Bar of Ohio* (1897), I, 114 ff.; Whitelaw Reid, *Ohio in the War* (1868), I, 834 ff.; P. K. and M. E. (Williams) Ewing, *The Ewing Geneal. with Cognate Branches* (1919); E. W. R. Ewing, *Clan Ewing of Scotland* (1922); John Sherman, *Recollections of Forty Years* (2 vols., 1895); *Cincinnati Times-Star*, Jan. 21, *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Jan. 22, 1896.]

R. C. M.

**EYTINGE, ROSE** (Nov. 21, 1835–Dec. 20, 1911), actress, author, teacher, was born in Philadelphia. Evidence points to David Eytinge, professor of languages, and his wife Rebecca, as her parents. Educated at home, she early became an eager student of plays and players. In 1853, following amateur success, she went to Syracuse as juvenile leading lady in Geary Hough's stock company, making her début as Melanie in *The Old Guard* at a salary of seven dollars a week. Her second engagement was at the Green Street Theatre in Albany where she made her first appearance Sept. 10, 1855. This association resulted in her marriage to David Barnes, manager of the theatre. After the birth of a daughter she was divorced from him, some time before 1862. Then came several seasons in New York stock companies during which she supported Booth, as Fiordelisa in *The Fool's Revenge* at Niblo's Garden, and later, notably as Julie in *Richelieu*, at the Winter Garden. In August 1864 she joined the famous Davenport-Wallack combination, with whom one of her pronounced successes was Nancy Sykes in *Oliver Twist*, a part she played with convincing realism. Between seasons, 1866–67, she played Kate Peyton in Daly's dramatization of *Griffith Gaunt* and created for Daly the part of Laura Courtland in *Under the Gaslight*. In 1868 she left Wallack and Davenport for the place of leading lady in Lester Wallack's theatre. Her second marriage probably took place about this time, for in the fall of 1869 she went abroad as the wife of Col. George H. Butler, consul-general to Egypt, and lived for several years in the East. According to Trumble, Butler's violences and dissipations finally forced his wife, by whom he had two sons, to divorce him. She returned to the stage, joining in 1873–74 the brilliant company at Union Square Theatre, where she played Gabrielle in

*The Geneva Cross* and created the part of Armande in *Led Astray* and the title rôle of *Rose Michel.* With the latter play she began in 1876 a successful starring tour, thereafter appearing in the principal American cities at the head of her own company, supported by her third husband, the English actor, Cyril Searle.

Her most brilliant success as a star seems to have been in *Antony and Cleopatra,* which she produced in New York in 1877. She had studied atmosphere and setting in Egypt whence she brought rich costumes and properties. In temperament and physique, Rose was the passionate and beguiling Queen to the life. "A handsome brunette with brilliant dark eyes, an ample figure, a strong, melodious voice," Winter describes her, adding that no other actress in his remembrance gave a more acceptable performance of Cleopatra than she. She was one of the most temperamental and unmanageable of artists—wayward, capricious, defiant, prone to quarrel with managers and stars, and given to mischievous by-play on the stage which sometimes caused the untimely descent of the curtain. Her character, Winter says, was "formidable."

In 1880 she appeared successfully in London where she was lionized by literary and political notables, among them Dickens, Wilkie Collins, Gladstone, Lord Roseberry, and Charles Reade. After 1884 she rarely appeared, giving much time to training pupils for the stage. She established a school of acting in New York in 1890, and another, later, in Portland, Ore. She dramatized several novels, wrote a play, *Golden Chains,* and a romance, *It Happened This Way* (1890), as well as the racy *Memories of Rose Eytinge* (1905) wherein she describes her stage life, her years in Egypt, and her encounters with celebrities. When she retired from the stage in 1908 a benefit performance was given for her in Portland. She died at Brunswick Home, Amityville, L. I., in the care of the Actors' Fund.

[The *Memories of Rose Eytinge* omits mention of her marriages or parentage and gives almost no dates. See also Arthur Trumble, *Great Artists of the Am. Stage* (1882); Wm. Winter, *Shakespeare on the Stage,* 1, 2, 3 ser. (1911–16); J. B. Clapp and E. F. Edgett, *Players of the Present* (1899), pt. I, p. 96; *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror,* Dec. 27, 1911; *N. Y. Times, Boston Transcript,* Dec. 21, 1911. Most accounts give 1835 as the year of birth, but *Who's Who in America,* 1899–1909, states that she was born in 1838.] M. B. H.

**EZEKIEL, MOSES JACOB** (Oct. 28, 1844–Mar. 27, 1917), sculptor, known as Sir Moses Ezekiel after receiving knighthood honors from Emperor William I of Germany and King Humbert I and King Victor Emmanuel II of Italy, was born in Richmond, Va. He was the son of Jacob and Catherine (de Castro) Ezekiel, and



grandson of Jacob and Rebecca (Israel) Ezekiel, a couple who came from Amsterdam, Holland, and settled in Philadelphia, Pa., in 1808. As a child, his artistic nature showed itself; he wrote poetry, drew, painted; at ten, "he cut figures for little shadow pictures." Leaving school at fourteen, he attempted business life, but, dissatisfied with it, entered the Virginia Military Institute in 1861. After the burning of its buildings by Gen. Hunter's men, he joined the Confederate army with the other cadets, and fought in the battle of New Market. Returning to "V. M. I." after the war, he was graduated with honors in 1866. Again essaying business and again finding it unsatisfactory, he turned toward painting. At the Military Institute he had been a protégé of Gen. Robert E. Lee and his wife, to whose home in the neighborhood he was made welcome, and one of his early pictures is "The Prisoner's Wife," painted for Mrs. Lee. Then sculpture drew him; he made a bust of his father, and an ideal group, "Cain." He studied anatomy and dissections at the Virginia Medical College. After a brief period in Cincinnati, where he attended the Art School, worked in a sculptor's studio, and made a statuette called "Industry," he went to Berlin in 1869, and entered the Royal Art Academy. To eke out his scanty resources, he served for a time as war correspondent in the Franco-Prussian War. On the strength of a colossal bust of Washington, a copy of which is owned by the Cincinnati Museum of Fine Arts, he was admitted into the Society of Artists, Berlin. After three years' study at the Academy under Prof. Albert Wolff, he won the Michael-Beer Prize, never before given to a foreigner; this award ended his anxious poverty and granted him two care-free years of study in Rome. That city was thereafter to be his home, although he made many visits to the United States and at times kept a studio in Paris.

His course at the Virginia Military Institute, with its interlude of actual combat, his prestige from the Roman Prize, his genial nature, and his gift for forming desirable acquaintances, prepared the ground for a career remarkably successful from many points of view, yet lacking the highest artistic values. Partly for economy, partly with an eye to the picturesque, he set up a studio in the Baths of Diocletian (1874). By degrees he beautified it with antiquities and other objects of art. Here for more than thirty years he lived and worked, producing busts and other sculptures of European interest, and sending home many monuments, particularly to the South, proud of her gifted son. Gaining Italian facility without losing German thoroughness, he was a skilful and prolific executant. His studio, with

its romantic aspects and its practical products, became something halfway between a salon and a show-place. Concerts of a high order were given there, and in the season it was a weekly rendezvous for the cosmopolitan society of Rome, gentle and simple being received with equal courtesy. Among the sculptor's friends were Cardinal von Hohenlohe and Franz Liszt. Ezekiel made a portrait of the Cardinal and one of the composer, and the Grand-Duke of Saxe-Meiningen ordered a copy of each. Hence from Germany he received the Cross of Merit in Art. His bust of Prof. Alfonso Sella for the University of Rome and that of the Dowager Queen Margherita, together with such works as his "Neptune" fountain at Nettuno, Italy, and his figure of "Faith" in a Roman cemetery, won him Italian fame.

Beginning with his marble group, "Religious Liberty," much applauded at the Columbian Exposition (1893), and ending with his seated statue of Poe erected in Baltimore (1917), the list of his works in the United States is extensive. For the Virginia Military Institute at Lexington, Va., he made a colossal bronze group, "Virginia Mourning her Dead"; for the Confederate Cemetery, Johnson's Island, Ohio, a memorial bronze figure, "The Outlook"; for Charleston, West Va., a bronze statue of Stonewall Jackson; for the court house, Louisville, Ky., a bronze monument to Thomas Jefferson, perhaps his outstanding work, a replica of which belongs to the University of Virginia, Charlottesville. His monument to the Confederate dead was unveiled in Arlington National Cemetery in 1913, President Wilson making the chief address. Numerous other sculptures by Ezekiel are in American public buildings and in private ownership. He has a work in Westminster Abbey, and one in a Paris chapel.

After thirty years of residence in the Piazza delle Terme, he was naturally dismayed when the Italian government took over his quarters at the Baths of Diocletian as an adjunct to its National Museum there. Still active in his art, he took a studio not far from the Piazza del Popolo. As a residence he found a romantic haven in the Tower of Belisarius, given to him by the municipal authorities. There he died, beloved and mourned by many in Rome. He was the last of the American artist-expatriates of his generation; his art forms a link between mid-Victorian smugness and twentieth-century searching. America bore him, Germany trained him, Italy inspired him: all three countries had his love and possess his works.

[A sympathetic account of Ezekiel by a fellow sculptor is given in the address by H. K. Bush-Brown at the Memorial Service, Scottish Rite Temple, Washington, D. C., Mar. 30, 1921, published, with illustrations, in *Art and Archæology*, June 1921. There is a brief biography in *Fairmount Park Art Asso., an Account of its Origin and Activities . . . Issued on the Occasion of its Fiftieth Anniversary, 1921* (1922); other sources are: Lorado Taft, *Hist. of Am. Sculpture* (1903; rev. ed., 1924); a well-illustrated article in *World's Work*, Nov. 1909; *Art and Archæology*, May 1917; *Who's Who in Art*, 1912; obituaries in *N. Y. Times* and *N. Y. Tribune*, Mar. 28, 1917, in other American papers, and in Roman papers. U. Thieme and F. Becker, *Allgemeines Lexikon der Bildenden Künstler*, vol. XI (1915), give additional references.] A. A.



**FABER, JOHN EBERHARD** (Dec. 6, 1822–Mar. 2, 1879), pencil manufacturer, was born at Stein, near Nürnberg, Bavaria, the youngest son of George Leonard and Albertina Frederika (Kupfer) Faber. His family for three generations had been makers of writing pencils at Stein, the industry having been started by his great-grandfather, Caspar Faber, in 1761. George Faber was well-to-do and did not at first expect his youngest son to go into the pencil business. He intended him for the profession of law. With that in view young Eberhard, after completing his studies at the Gymnasium of Nürnberg, took lectures in jurisprudence at the Universities of Erlangen and Heidelberg. The subject did not appeal to him, however; he was far more interested in ancient history and literature. In those fields he read widely and became a cultivated scholar. That was hardly the conventional background for a commercial career, yet this young man, on his own initiative, extended his ancestral business over another continent and eventually made the family name as well known in the New World as in the Old. Migrating to America shortly after the Revolution of 1848, young Faber started himself in business in New York City, acting as agent in the United States for the pencil factory at Stein, which was then managed by his oldest brother, J. Lothar Faber. At the same time Eberhard Faber sold on commission various articles of stationery manufactured in Germany and England. In due time he became an American citizen and acquired control of large tracts of cedar-forest land in Florida. He began by exporting cedar wood in logs to pencil factories in Europe and later built a sawmill at Cedar Keys on the Gulf coast of Florida, which cut the cedar logs into slats suitable to be worked up into pencils, and shipped the wood in that form to the European factories. Meanwhile his pencil trade, which had grown from small beginnings, was dependent on the Bavarian factory for its finished product, although a good part of the raw material originated in America. There was also a tariff handicap. Faber believed that he could manufacture pencils advantageously in

New York, provided machinery could be made to offset the difference in labor costs between Europe and the United States. He was nearer the source of cedar-wood supply, but farther from the graphite mines. He was not ready to open his factory until 1861, the first year of the Civil War. This was an unfavorable time for launching such an industry, especially since cedar in quantity could be obtained only from Confederate territory. However, starting on a comparatively small scale, he was able to maintain an output which met the demands of the time. After the war the industry grew rapidly and became firmly established. The graphite was obtained mainly from Austrian mines while the clay, to be used with the graphite, came from Bohemia. When his New York factory on the East River was bnrned in 1872, a larger plant was set up in the Greenpoint section of Brooklyn, where the business went forward at an enhanced pace. Faber was the first pencil manufacturer to attach rubber tips and metallic point protectors to his pencils. He employed the nickel-plating process extensively and operated a factory at Newark, N. J., for the making of rubber bands and erasers. He also produced penholders.

Faber was married, in 1854, to Jenny, daughter of Ludwig Haag of Munich. He left two sons, who succeeded him in his business. For ten years before his death, in 1879, he lived at Port Richmond, Staten Island.

[*N. Y. Times*, Mar. 4, 1879; *The Story of the Oldest Pencil Factory in America* (1924); information as to certain facts supplied by Mr. Eberhard Faber.]

W. B. S—w.

**FACKLER, DAVID PARKS** (Apr. 4, 1841–Oct. 30, 1924), actuary, was born at Kempsville, Va., the son of David Morris Fackler and Susan Stith (Satchell) Fackler, and a great-grandson of an officer of the Continental Army. He was graduated B.A. in 1859 by the College of the City of New York, taking the gold medal in mathematics. Shortly after his graduation from college he entered the actuarial department of the Mutual Life Insurance Company of New York. In 1862, when only 21 years of age, he suggested the contribution plan for apportioning surplus to life insurance policyholders which in principle is in general use by life insurance companies today. He aided Sheppard Homans, then actuary of the company, in the application of the plan. Resigning in 1865 to become a consulting actuary, he continued as such until his death. In 1871 Fackler took an active part in the deliberations of the first meeting of the National Insurance Convention, having been appointed representative of the State of Tennessee. His chief

Fackler

contribution was his vigorous support of conservative valuation standards in the life insurance business. With Alexander Delmar and others, he opposed the views of a strong inflationist party in the convention. If the attitude of the more optimistic members had prevailed, the difficulties which life insurance companies actually encountered in the deflation period from 1873 to 1896 would have been aggravated. In the sixties and seventies, he was one of the outstanding supporters favoring the enactment of non-forfeiture laws affecting life insurance. In 1877, he was appointed actuary of a committee of policy-holders who were examining the affairs of one of the large life insurance companies. Throughout the eighties he distinguished himself in the fight against tontine life insurance.

Fackler was the guiding spirit in the organization of the Actuarial Society of America in 1889 and was its second president (1891–93). In 1891 he offered prizes for the best essays on the subject "Legislative Interference with Impaired Companies." After the grade of associate had been established by the Actuarial Society, he offered prizes for competitive essays by associates in the years 1900, 1904, and 1908. In 1892 he pointed out, in an address before the National Convention of Insurance Commissioners, the problems growing out of the then unrestrained competition between life insurance companies for new business, and predicted the upheaval in public opinion which gave rise in 1905 to the appointment of the Life Insurance Investigating Committee, by the New York legislature, known as the Armstrong Committee. In 1906 he served as consulting actuary to the New Jersey Senate committee investigating life insurance in that state. In 1900 he was employed by the Post Office Department of the United States government to analyze the affairs of certain "debenture companies," with the result that these companies were put out of business. He was consulted by many of the largest fraternal orders during the nineties, but the conventions of the fraternal orders did not put into effect the sound advice he gave them. About 1900 he was called in by the Knights of Columbus to recommend an adequate rating system. His recommendations were adopted and are still in successful effect. He was actuary of a joint committee of Congress in 1909–11. As late as 1923, he took an active part in the campaign to exempt life insurance premiums from income tax.

On Nov. 17, 1875, he married Elizabeth Leverett Davenport of Hartford, Conn., who died in 1918, leaving three children. He died in Richmond, Va., Oct. 30, 1924.

[*Trans. Actuarial Soc. of America*, vol. XXV, pt. 2 (1924), 371–72; *Hayden's Ann. Cyc. of Insurance, 1900–01* (1901); *Who's Who in America, 1922–23*; *Insurance Monitor*, Jan. 1870; *Proc. Nat. Convention of Insurance Commissioners* for the years 1871 to 1924; the *Spectator*, Nov. 6, 1924; *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 1, 1924. A manuscript bibliography of Fackler's writings, compiled by Edward Bathurst Fackler, Edwin W. Kopf, and Alice W. Smith, has been deposited in the Lib. of Cong., Washington, D. C. This list covers several hundred articles written for the most part during a critical period in life insurance history.] E.W.K.

**FAESCH, JOHN JACOB** (1729–May 26, 1799), ironmaster, government contractor, was born in the canton of Basle, Switzerland. He came from Hesse-Cassel to New Jersey in 1764 under a seven-years' contract by which the London company was to pay him "2500 guilders per annum Rhenish," as well as all travel expenses, furnish a house and meadow and put him in charge of all their forges, mines, and ironworks. Succeeding "Baron" Hasenclever [*q.v.*] at Ringwood, Charlotteburg and Long Pond, "the smart little Dutchman" was superseded in 1771 by Robert Erskine [*q.v.*], later Washington's surveyor-general, who sued him for unlawfully retaining company property (Erskine papers). It is thought that Faesch had planned to take the property at Mt. Hope. In 1772 with D. Wrisberg he leased a house and an extensive acreage there. He also bought several tracts of land. These and other similar transactions gave rise later to much litigation. He built the famous Mt. Hope furnace, enlarged his charcoal lands to over 10,000 acres, established a high repute for ability and integrity, became a leading citizen and the wealthiest ironmaster in Morris County. He was naturalized in June 1766 by a special legislative act, and on Mar. 24, 1773, he was commissioned one of the county judges. He held the honor during life, and became an ardent Whig.

With the outbreak of the Revolution, Faesch remained loyal, entered the war with zeal, and "cast a large amount of shot and shell for the Government." To carry on his enterprise he had been furnished with about three hundred war prisoners, mostly Hessians, nearly all of whom afterward remained in New Jersey, and an army guard to foil robbers. Occasionally he was honored by visits from Washington. In the post-war slump he moved to Morristown, thence to Old Boonton where he built a house now ninety feet under water in the Parsippany reservoir. He served as a delegate to the New Jersey convention in December 1787 and signed the ratification of the federal Constitution. He subscribed heavily to church and school enterprises, set up a ponderous coach known for long waits at the tavern, and died of dropsy. His business disintegrated in his sons' hands. He was a "generous and large-hearted man, but very aristocratic in his ideas." He married Elizabeth Brinckerhoff of Parsippany by whom he had two sons and two daughters. His second wife, Susan Lawrence Leonard, sister-in-law of Capt. Lawrence of the *Chesapeake*, had no children.



[*Hist. of Morris County, N. J.* (1882), pp. 53–55; A. H. Heusser, *The Forgotten General, Robert Erskine* (1928); *Archives of the State of N. J.*, 2 ser., vol. II (1903), p. 429, vol. III (1906), pp. 460, 479, vol. V (1917), p. 299; Erskine Papers in N. J. Hist. Soc., Newark.] W.L.W—y.

**FAGAN, JAMES FLEMING** (Mar. 1, 1828–Sept. 1, 1893), planter, soldier, public official, was born in Clark County, Ky., the son of Steven and Kittie (Stevens) Fagan. The first member of the family in America was James Fagan, who came from Ireland and settled in Virginia about the middle of the eighteenth century. The father of the subject of this sketch moved to Arkansas in 1838 and became one of the contractors on the new state capitol. He died two years later, leaving James, then twelve, the chief support of his mother and a younger brother. Under such circumstances his educational opportunities were very meager. His mother married Samuel Adams, former state treasurer and for a time acting governor, but he soon died and again James became the main support of the family. While engaged in farming on the family plantation on the Saline River he was elected to the legislature as a Whig, but served only one term. On the outbreak of the war with Mexico he volunteered, serving in Gen. Archibald Yell's regiment and returning with the rank of lieutenant. In 1856 he was appointed receiver for the State Bank and served two years trying to straighten out that wretched financial muddle. When Arkansas seceded he was among the first to raise military companies and became colonel of the 1st Arkansas Infantry. He was a man of quick and vigorous action. He sent out the call for volunteers before the state had actually seceded (May 6, 1861) and in twenty days after secession had his regiment, 900 strong, in Lynchburg, Va. But Fagan did not remain in the East. He distinguished himself at the battle of Shiloh and was made brigadier-general in September 1862. He was transferred to the Trans-Mississippi Department in time to take part in the battle of Prairie Grove and in 1863 was assigned to raise troops for the defense of Arkansas. He took a prominent part in the repulse of Steele's Camden Expedition, after which, on the recommendation of E. Kirby Smith, he was raised to the rank of major-general. He took part in the last Missouri Expedition of Gen. Sterling Price,

from whom he won high praise. Even after the surrender of Gen. Lee he declined Gen. J. J. Reynolds's invitation to surrender on the same terms. He was somewhat defiant about surrendering to "an invisible foe," but finally gave up on June 14 (Thomas, *post*, pp. 304–05, 315–16). After the war his time was divided between planting and politics. His first reappearance in the latter was in the so-called Brooks-Baxter war when he commanded the infantry for Brooks while another former Confederate, Gen. C. P. Newton, commanded for Baxter. He accepted office under President Grant, who appointed him in 1875 United States marshal for the western district at Fort Smith. Two years later he became receiver for the Land Office at Little Rock. These affiliations probably caused his defeat in 1890 when he was a candidate for railroad commissioner. Gen. Fagan was reputed to be a very handsome man and was listed among the figures to be carved on Stone Mountain. He was twice married, first to Mura Ellisiff Beal, sister of Gen. W. N. R. Beal, who bore him three daughters; and second to Lizzie Rapley, who bore him five children.

[*Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vols. XIII, XXII, XXXIV, XLI; *Confed. Mil. Hist.*, X (1899), 399, inaccurate in some details; *Reg. of Officers and Agents . . . in the Service of the U. S.*, 1875, 1877; D. Y. Thomas, *Ark. in War and Reconstruction, 1861–74* (1926); *Ark. Gazette*, Sept. 2, and *Southern Standard* (Arkadelphia), Sept. 8, 1893. Family history was furnished by Miss Beatrice Fagan Cockle, Fagan's grand-daughter.] D. Y. T.

**FAGES, PEDRO** (fl. 1767–1796), first *commandante* of Alta California and later governor, was a Catalan. He came to Mexico in 1767 as lieutenant, 1st battalion, 2nd regiment, Catalonia Volunteers. While fighting Sonora Indians he was ordered to lead twenty-five of his men under Gaspar de Portolá on the "Holy Expedition" the occupation of Alta California, and sailed from La Paz for San Diego on the *San Cárlos*, arriving after a terrible voyage of 110 days. He accompanied Portolá when the latter founded the mission and presidio at Monterey on June 3, 1770, and remained in command after Portolá returned to Mexico. In November 1770 he explored the east shore of San Francisco Bay northward to San Leandro, and in March 1772, again traversed the same region as far as Antioch. His party had been the first to sight the Golden Gate, and his discoveries determined the ultimate location of San Francisco. Strong-willed and practical, the most notable of the early governors, he clashed with Father Serra over the founding of the missions and over the control of the soldiers, whose low morals corrupted the



Indian women. There were also squabbles over his alleged opening of the missionaries' mail. Serra went to Mexico in 1773 and procured Fages's recall, on May 4, 1774. For a time the deposed officer served with his regiment at Pachuca, Mexico. In 1781 and 1782 he made two land journeys to the Colorado River to punish Indians who had destroyed two defenseless missions newly established near the present Yuma as way stations between Sonora and Alta California. Then, having recently been made lieutenant colonel (captain on May 4, 1771), he was appointed governor, and marched to San Diego and Monterey, arriving in November 1782.

Fages liked California and served it loyally. He saved it from famine in 1772 by hunting bears for meat near the present San Luis Obispo. The missionaries spoke kindly of him. He encouraged the fur-trade, urged erection of missions and presidios, and favored the importation of artisans to teach the Indians. He began grants of land, chose several mission sites, and bestowed numerous surviving place names. He got on with Father Lasuen even after disagreement over solitary mission service for the friars, and he was complimented as a worthy soldier by Lapérouse and George Vancouver. He became a colonel in 1789. But his wife, Eulalia Callis, whom he brought to Monterey in 1782, hated California and had a mind to leave it. Finally, in 1790, after he had been nagged for years, Fages asked to be relieved. His wife, taking the son Pedro and the daughter, sailed away that fall, and he followed a year later. His life at Monterey had been brightened by his pride in his orchard of six hundred fruit trees, shrubs, and vines.

[H. E. Bolton, ed., "Expedition to San Francisco Bay in 1770: Diary of Pedro Fages," *Acad. Pacific Coast Hist.*, July 1911; H. I. Priestley, ed., "The Colorado River Campaign, 1781–82; Diary of Pedro Fages," *Ibid.*, May 1913, and "An Hist., Pol. and Natural Description of Cal. by Don Pedro Fages," *Cath. Hist. Rev.*, Jan. and Apr. 1919 (the first white man's description of the Indians and their country between San Diego and San Francisco); I. B. Richman, *Cal. under Spain and Mexico* (1911); C. E. Chapman, *A Hist. of Cal.; The Spanish Period* (1921); Z. S. Eldredge, *The Beginnings of San Francisco* (1912). Various letters of Fages, as well as an unpublished diary, are preserved in the Bancroft Lib., Berkeley, Cal.] H. I. P.

**FAGET, JEAN CHARLES** (June 26, 1818–Dec. 7, 1884), physician, came of a family of French extraction which went to Cuba from Santo Domingo after the negro revolution in the latter place, and from Cuba moved to New Orleans in 1809. Here Jean Charles was born, the only child of Jean Babtiste Faget and his wife, a Miss Le Mormand. After a preliminary education under the Jesuit Fathers of his native city,

he was sent to Paris, where from 1830 to 1837 he attended the Collège Rolin. Following seven years of externe and interne service in Paris hospitals, he was given the degree of M.D. by the Faculté de Paris, in December 1844. His graduation thesis was a discourse on sub-pubic cystotomy in young children. He returned to New Orleans in 1845, and became a protagonist of the infectious theory of disease as opposed to the contagionist school. The medical profession of the city included a group of able men, mostly graduates of the Faculté de Paris. The proceedings of the city medical society, reported in *La Gazette Médicale,* show the bitter feud between the medical factions, in language always polite, even though charged with biting sarcasm. It was to this not altogether friendly audience that Faget announced, in 1859, his observation of a pathognomonic sign of yellow fever, by which it could be definitely differentiated from the pernicious malarial fevers which so closely simulated it. He noted that coincident with the rise of the patients' temperature, there was a fall in the pulse-rate, a phenomenon unusual in any fever and always absent in malarial attacks. Though the value of "Faget's sign" was at first disputed, it soon became the conclusive proof of yellow fever. Following the publication of *Mémoires et Lettres sur la Fièvre Jaune et la Fièvre Paludéenne,* in 1864 he was created Chevalier of the Legion of Honor by the French government. In 1856 he published *Études sur les Bases de la Science Médicale,* for which he received a gold medal from the Academy of Caen. He contributed numerous articles in English to the *New Orleans Medical Journal.* He was appointed to the Louisiana State Board of Health, and in 1864 was made a member of the sanitary commission appointed by the Federal Gen. Banks. In March 1865 he went to Paris, remaining two years. Returning to New Orleans, he resided there until his death in 1884. He was married in Paris to Glady Ligeret de Chazet, daughter of Dr. Ligeret de Chazet, and left a large family.

Tall and spare with a clean-cut face, a slightly hooked nose, a high receding forehead and long wavy hair, brushed straight back, Faget was a man of striking appearance. He was deeply religious and affected the dress and bearing of a priest, wearing the silk hat of low crown and broad brim in the winter, black straw hat in the summer, and in cold weather a long black coat fastened with a silver chain and hook. A soft, gentle voice added to the resemblance. He had a large practise among the French and particularly the Creole population of the city, a class he so honorably represented. He gave little thought



to the business side of his profession, was a poor charger and a worse collector. He died poor.

[Edmond Souchon, "Original Contributions of Louisiana to Medical Sciences," *La. Hist. Soc. Pubs. for 1914–15,* VIII (1916), 66–88; *New Orleans Medical and Surgical Jour.,* 1884; W. B. Atkinson, *The Physicians and Surgeons of the United States* (1878); L. G. Le Boeuf in H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *New Orleans Annual,* 1846; *Times-Democrat* (New Orleans), Dec. 8, 1884; information from a grandson, Dr. Edward B. Faget of New Orleans.]

J. M. P.

**FAHNESTOCK, HARRIS CHARLES** (Feb. 27, 1835–June 4, 1914), banker, philanthropist, came of German ancestry. His family had lived at Ephrata and Harrisburg, Pa., since the middle of the eighteenth century. He was born at Harrisburg, the son of Adam K. and Sybil (Holbrook) Fahnestock. At an early age he left school for a business career, being at first employed in a Harrisburg bank controlled by an uncle. In 1856 he married Margaret McKinley. At the beginning of the Civil War his ability and energy in pushing the sale of the Pennsylvania $3,000,000 bond issue attracted the attention of Jay Cooke [*q.v.*], the Philadelphia banker, and so favorably impressed him that he offered young Fahnestock an interest in the branch of his banking house which he was about to open in Washington. Without contributing capital, Fahnestock was given a one-sixth share and his expenses were guaranteed, and he and Henry D. Cooke [*q.v.*], Jay Cooke's brother, took charge of the Washington office. As the war wore on and brought increasing financial perplexities to the Lincoln administration, the firm, because of its relations with the Treasury Department, came to be regarded as one of the sheet anchors of the government. When Secretary Chase was unable to dispose of the 7.30 war bonds through the usual government agencies, he turned the business over to Jay Cooke & Company, paying a commission of ⅜ of one per cent. on sales, and thus the entire issue was disposed of. For Fahnestock, still in his twenties, such an experience—unparalleled up to that time in this country—was doubtless more valuable than a lifetime of ordinary banking routine. Ability to form independent judgments and to act on them was encouraged and developed in those years.

After the war it was decided to open a New York branch of Jay Cooke & Company, and the burden of this undertaking fell largely on Fahnestock. His interest was 14 per cent., and he retained a like share in the Philadelphia and Washington offices. His chief responsibility had to do with the handling of bonds. The New York business was successful from the start. The branch was opened on Mar. 1, 1866, and in the remaining

ten months of that calendar year Fahnestock's share of the profits was $63,000. During the ensuing seven years—an era of post-war speculation and inflation—the Cooke banks generally prospered. The head of the firm became intensely interested in the building of the Northern Pacific Railroad and took over the bonds of that enterprise. The road was projected through a region for the most part then unpeopled and could not hope, even when completed, to receive adequate local support. It became impossible to find a market for the bonds. For a long period the Philadelphia house of Cooke & Company drew on the New York branch for railroad funds until finally resources were exhausted and on Sept. 18, 1873, Fahnestock was compelled to close the doors of the New York office (interview in *New York Herald*, Sept. 19, 1873). He had personally opposed the part taken by the firm in the Northern Pacific bond deals (Oberholtzer, *post*, II, 150, 223, 380 ff., 397, 423). The assets of Cooke & Company, however, amounted to more than twice the liabilities, and within seven years the entire indebtedness was paid off, but the New York office never resumed business.

Fahnestock had not yet reached middle age and he began to build up a second fortune. In the organization of the First National Bank of New York, of which he became a vice-president, he quickly found a post where his abilities could be utilized and rewarded. In the forty years of life that remained to him he accumulated wealth, held directorates in various financial institutions, made large gifts for religious and charitable objects, and in his will disposed of more than $500,000 for public causes. The Charity Organization Society, the Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor, and three New York hospitals —the Presbyterian, St. Luke's, and the Post-Graduate—each received $100,000.

[A. K. and W. F. Fahnestock, *Family Memorial of the Fahnestocks in the U. S.* (1879); E. P. Oberholtzer, *Jay Cooke, Financier of the Civil War* (2 vols., 1907); *N. Y. Times*, June 5 and 14, 1914.] W. B. S—w.

**FAIR, JAMES GRAHAM** (Dec. 3, 1831–Dec. 28, 1894), forty-niner and financier, derived a fortune from the output of the Comstock lode, and became one of the more prominent of the bonanza senators of the eighties. He was born near Belfast in Ireland, the son of James Fair, who was himself an Irishman of Scotch descent. His mother, a Scot, was named Graham. Brought to Illinois at the age of twelve, he there acquired a respectable education, and at the age of eighteen he joined the great procession to California. Canny and acquisitive, he bothered little with the placer gold, but searched always for the quartz from which it came. Before he was thirty he had a mill on the Washoe in Nevada, and thereafter as he grew in financial stature he was identified with Nevada and California. The vast deposits of auriferous quartz known as the Comstock lode had been discovered before Fair reached Nevada, and for nearly fifteen years it yielded pocket after pocket, the grand but uncertain contents of which kept hysterical speculation alive. This was a sort of mining in which the individual miner, without capital or machinery, had no chance, whereas the mining company and the banking interests behind it might profit from both the output of ore and the greed of a speculative public. The San Francisco bankers controlled Nevada development until Fair and his associates (among whom John W. Mackay was most prominent) captured a group of their holdings, organized them around their own new Bank of Nevada, and stumbled upon the silver and gold pocket of the Consolidated Virginia Mine. This has been thought to be the most valuable single ore pocket ever found. It was Fair's persistent pursuit of a thin meandering vein which led to its discovery in a rock chamber of vast dimension. In March 1873 its yield began to unsettle the market for both metals, and it released so much silver bullion as to induce a great political controversy over the monetary use of that metal. In the next six years the owners took more than one hundred million dollars out of the mine before it was exhausted. Fair held on to most of his share, and converted it not only into luxurious living but into land, buildings, railroads, and other steady sources of income. Several of the Comstock millionaires (Jones, Sharon, Stewart) found their way to the United States Senate, and Fair's turn came when in 1881 a Democratic Nevada legislature elected him for a six-year term. He made no impression on the Senate save to advertise it as a haunt of millionaires, and he rarely took part in its debates. But the gaudiness and irregularity of his life and the social ambitions of his family, to which his wealth allowed full gratification, attracted much attention for two decades.

Fair was married in 1861, at Carson City, to Theresa Rooney, and they had four children before he was divorced by her in 1883. Of these the wife retained the custody of the girls, Theresa Alice and Virginia, while Fair himself retained his sons, James and Charles Lewis. He was ignored when in 1890 the older daughter was married to Hermann Oelrichs of New York, at a ceremony graced by high magnates of the Catholic church and advertised as one of San Francisco's most splendid social displays (*San Francisco Chronicle*, June 4, 1890). Virginia, after

his death, married William K. Vanderbilt, Jr. (*San Francisco Chronicle*, Apr. 5, 1899). His sons, like his marriage, gave him no permanent happiness. James committed suicide, and Charles Lewis made a youthful marriage which enraged the father (*New York Herald*, Oct. 24, 1893), and which ended in the death of both husband and wife in a motor accident near Paris (Aug. 14, 1902). Fair disinherited Charles, although he apparently relented shortly afterward.

In his last years, living alone in the Lick House, San Francisco, Fair sought what consolations he could find. His business affairs demanded attention, and in 1887 he was forced to take active charge of the Nevada Bank which had come close to shipwreck. He made several wills, some of which he destroyed. He had apprehensions concerning claimants upon his estate, having before him the litigation over the Sharon estate. He wrote into his will a denial that he was married, or that he had other heirs than the three surviving children by Theresa Rooney, but he left fifty dollars each to any widows or children who might after his death be successful in establishing a right. He died in 1894. The courts broke up the trust in which he had tried to vest his property, and for seven years his estate was involved in contest, litigation, and compromise (*New York Tribune*, Mar. 23, 1902).

[H. H. Bancroft has given Fair considerable desultory space in *Chronicles of the Builders of the Commonwealth*, IV (1892), 188–236; he is included in Henry Hall, *America's Successful Men of Affairs* (1896), II, 293–94; and there is an elaborate local obituary in the *San Francisco Chronicle*, Dec. 29, 1894.]

F. L. P—n.

**FAIRBANK, CALVIN** (Nov. 3, 1816–Oct. 12, 1898), Methodist clergyman, Abolitionist, the fourth of the ten children of Chester and Betsey (Abbott) Fairbank, was born in Pike Township, Allegany County (now Eagle Township, Wyoming County), N. Y., whither his parents had migrated in 1815 from Vermont. From his mother, a zealous Methodist, he early became imbued with backwoods Methodism; and from a pair of escaped slaves, to whose cabin he was assigned during a quarterly meeting, he learned to abhor slavery. His emotionalism unchecked by education or good judgment, he developed into a militant Abolitionist, eager to distinguish himself, and was one of the few who engaged in the actual abduction of slaves. He began this work in April 1837 while steering a lumber raft down the Ohio River; a negro on the Virginia bank, after a little coaxing, confessed a longing for freedom, was promptly taken aboard the raft, ferried to the Ohio side, and turned loose. Thereafter, as chance offered, Fairbank acted as passenger agent for the underground railway, smuggling runaway negroes from Virginia and Kentucky into Ohio, where he delivered them to Levi Coffin and other Abolitionists for transportation to Canada or to safer parts of the United States. At one time, with money supplied by Salmon P. Chase and others, he bought a young woman who otherwise would have been sold to a New Orleans procurer. He became an adept at disguising and concealing his charges in transit and was entirely without fear. Once he ventured as far as Little Rock, Ark., to find a young negro who had been deprived illegally of his freedom and conducted him safely from there to free soil. In all he effected the liberation of forty-seven slaves. In 1842 he was ordained as a Methodist elder. Gravitating to Oberlin, he enrolled in the preparatory department of the Collegiate Institute, but before the end of the year he was arrested in Lexington, Ky., for his part in the escape of Lewis Hayden and his family. He pleaded his own case, was convicted and sentenced to fifteen years in the Frankfort penitentiary, and served from Feb. 18, 1845, until Aug. 23, 1849, when he was pardoned by Gov. John J. Crittenden. Meanwhile his father had died of cholera at Lexington while working to secure his son's release. Fairbank soon resumed his operations along the Ohio. He was kidnapped at Jeffersonville, Ind., Nov. 4, 1851, spirited into Kentucky, and again sent to the penitentiary on a fifteen-year sentence. This time he was systematically overworked, kept in a filthy cell, and frequently and mercilessly flogged. He was incarcerated until Apr. 15, 1864, when he was pardoned by Lieut.-Gov. Richard T. Jacob. On June 9, 1864, at Oxford, Ohio, he married Mandana Tileston of Williamsburg, Mass., to whom he had been engaged for twelve years. She died Sept 29, 1876, in Williamsburg; and on June 5, 1879, Fairbank married Adeline Winegar. For some ten years he was an employee of missionary and benevolent societies in New York. Later he was superintendent and general agent of the Moore Street Industrial Institute of Richmond, Va. He lectured or preached from time to time, the cruelty and immorality of slaveholders and his own exploits being the staple of his discourses. In his old age he wrote an incoherent and untrustworthy but revealing autobiography. His last days were spent, close to poverty, in Angelica, Allegany County, N. Y.

[*Rev. Calvin Fairbank during Slavery Times: How He "Fought the Good Fight" to Prepare "The Way"* (Chicago, 1890); L. S. Fairbanks, *Geneal. of the Fairbanks Family* (privately printed, 1897); *Gen. Cat. of Oberlin Coll. 1833–1908* (1909); Laura S. Haviland, *A Woman's Life-Work* (Cincinnati, 1881), chap. vi; *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), May 12, Nov. 3, 1898.]

G. H. G.

Fairbanks

**FAIRBANKS, CHARLES WARREN** (May 11, 1852–June 4, 1918), senator, vice-president, and one of the last of America's "log cabin statesmen," was born in a single-room log farmhouse near Unionville Center, Union County, Ohio. His father, Loriston Monroe Fairbanks, a pioneer from New England, was of Puritan stock, tracing his ancestry directly to a certain Jonathan Fayerbanke (variously spelled), who had emigrated from England to Massachusetts in 1633. Charles's mother, Mary Adelaide (Smith) Fairbanks, was of a family of New Yorkers. Both parents were Methodists and Abolitionists —in its day a potent combination—who reared their numerous brood of children after the fashion of pioneers. Years later as a candidate for office, Charles Warren Fairbanks found it no disadvantage to have been born in a log cabin, to have worked barefoot in the fields, to have walked a mile and a half to the district school, to have observed his parents giving aid and comfort to runaway slaves. A strong taste for books and learning led young Charles in spite of his poverty to enter the Ohio Wesleyan University at Delaware, Ohio, where he "worked his way through" to graduation in 1872. Here he met his future wife, Cornelia Cole, the daughter of Judge P. B. Cole of Marysville, Ohio. Their marriage occurred in 1874. For his alma mater Fairbanks always retained a feeling of interest and affection. After he had achieved prominence he served for years as a member of its board of trustees, and he sent to it the eldest of his four sons and his only daughter.

Young Fairbanks aspired to be a lawyer, and after graduation he found work with the Associated Press, first at Pittsburgh and later at Cleveland, that would leave him free to attend law school at night. In 1874 he was admitted to the bar by the supreme court of Ohio, but, learning of an opening in Indianapolis, he removed thither to begin his practise. Railway litigation was just then beginning to offer an opportunity for the skilful lawyer, and it was as a railway attorney that Fairbanks made his mark. In his first case he was called upon to straighten out the legal affairs of a bankrupt road, and at this task he acquitted himself so creditably that, according to one admirer, "no railroad enterprise of any account has been undertaken in Indiana since then without his having a share in it" (*Independent*, July 7, 1904). Certain it is that clients came to him who could afford to pay well for his services, and in a comparatively short time he had achieved both wealth and fame. For twenty-three years continuously he maintained his Indianapolis office, but his practise extended not only throughout Indiana but also into the neighboring states of Ohio and Illinois.

In Indiana even more than elsewhere law and politics are apt to go hand in hand. Fairbanks was naturally a Republican, and he early began to take part in local political affairs. In 1888, when he was only thirty-six years old, he managed the unsuccessful campaign of Walter Q. Gresham for the Republican presidential nomination, and afterwards supported actively Gresham's rival, Benjamin Harrison. In the campaign of 1896 Fairbanks, who had long advocated the single gold standard, achieved national eminence as temporary chairman and "key-note" speaker of the convention that nominated McKinley. Thereafter the astute Indiana lawyer soon consolidated his control of the Republican party in his state, winning for himself at the same time a place in the national Republican organization hardly less important than that occupied by the celebrated Marcus A. Hanna.

Until he had acquired a satisfactory competence, Fairbanks did not choose to run for office. In 1897, however, he obtained the caucus nomination of the Republican majority in the Indiana legislature for United States senator, and was promptly elected. His wealth made it possible for him, on taking his seat, to leave off the practise of law altogether, and he is said never again to have accepted a retainer. In the Senate he became at once an influential member. He was the close friend and admirer of President McKinley, for whom he was soon recognized as the responsible spokesman in the Senate. He supported the President faithfully in his policies before and during the Spanish-American War; he served creditably on important committees, including ultimately the committee on foreign relations; he advocated persistently the adoption of comprehensive plans for internal improvements, especially waterways; and he was appointed American chairman of the Joint High Commission of 1898, which tried to adjust all outstanding differences between the United States and Canada, but failed because of the acuteness of the Alaskan boundary dispute (W. F. Johnson, *America's Foreign Relations*, 1916, vol. II, pp. 105–06). As the sole or the senior Republican senator from Indiana, he had the chief disposal of patronage in that state, and, when the Republicans captured the legislature in 1902, his reëlection the next year to the Senate followed as a matter of course.

A conservative and a representative of the doubtful state of Indiana, "the home of vice-presidents," Fairbanks was chosen to balance the ticket which Roosevelt headed in 1904. The vice-

presidential candidate, who had long since stumped every county in Indiana, now extended his activities to the nation at large, making speeches in thirty-three states and traveling no less than twenty-five thousand miles in the course of the campaign. He was elected, and served four years under Roosevelt. During this time the president and the vice-president, although representing opposite wings of the party, maintained cordial relations. On occasion Fairbanks even found it possible to speak well of the president in public.

After Mar. 4, 1909, Fairbanks did not again hold public office. He maintained his great influence in Indiana politics, however, and in 1916 was again nominated for the vice-presidency, only to lose to another Indianan, Thomas R. Marshall. In the years 1909 and 1910, when Roosevelt was in Africa, Fairbanks toured the world, gaining considerable notoriety from the fact that, when he proposed to address students of the Methodist schools at the American Church in Rome, he was denied an audience by the Pope (*Outlook,* Feb. 19, 1910). In 1912 Fairbanks was chairman of the platform committee in the convention that nominated Taft over Roosevelt, and with his customary regularity, when the split came, he supported the Republican ticket. Both in 1908 and in 1916 he was the "favorite son" candidate of his state for the presidential nomination.

To those who knew Fairbanks only from his public appearances, he seemed a cold and forbidding figure; but to his friends he seemed warm-hearted and genial. He was never known to lose his composure; he worked quietly to accomplish his purposes; and he took himself and his duties with extreme seriousness. As an orator he was content to state his case without rhetorical flights. Tall and slender to a marked degree, he was in no wise ungainly, but rather the suave and polished gentleman. While he was senator, and later also while he was vice-president, he and his wife entered freely into the social life of the Capital; and at one time Mrs. Fairbanks was President-General of the Daughters of the American Revolution. Her death preceded that of her husband by five years.

[F. E. Leupp, "Charles Warren Fairbanks," *Independent,* July 7, 1904; E. I. Lewis, "Senator Fairbanks —The Boy and Man," *Ibid.,* July 21, 1904; John W. Foster, "The Candidate of Indiana for the Presidency," *Ibid.,* Mar. 12, 1908; Thomas R. Shipp, "Charles Warren Fairbanks, Republican Candidate for Vice-President," *Rev. of Revs.* (N. Y.), August 1904; and Addison C. Harris, "Charles Warren Fairbanks," *North Am. Rev.,* May 1908. See also Fairbanks's article, "American Missionaries Abroad," *Outlook,* July 16, 1910.]

J. D. H.



**FAIRBANKS, ERASTUS** (Oct. 28, 1792–Nov. 20, 1864), governor of Vermont, was born at Brimfield, Mass. He was the eldest of the three sons of Maj. Joseph Fairbanks and Phebe (Paddock) Fairbanks, and was of the seventh generation of the descendants of Jonathan Fairebanke (variously spelled), who migrated from Yorkshire to Massachusetts in 1633 and settled in Dedham in 1636. In 1815 his father moved to St. Johnsbury, Vt., where he built a saw and grist mill. The three sons, Erastus, Thaddeus [*q.v.*], and Joseph, who were all of a practical and mechanical turn of mind, extended the business by developing a foundry and wheelwright shop which prospered and grew into a small manufactory of stoves, plows and agricultural implements. The firm also began to build some of the machinery required in connection with the hemp industry. The need of some method of weighing the wagon loads of the raw material brought into town led Thaddeus Fairbanks to devise a crude apparatus by which grappling chains suspended from a steelyard could lift a wagon from the ground and the approximate weight of the load be thus determined. Although this simple device was an improvement upon existing methods, its inventor was not satisfied with approximate accuracy and continued to study the problem. Later in the same year, 1830, he worked out the basic principle of the improved platform scale and was awarded a patent. In 1834 the brothers founded the firm of E. & T. Fairbanks & Company and devoted their energies chiefly to the manufacture of the new platform scale for which there was a wide-spread and growing demand. Erastus, the oldest of the three brothers, was the head of the firm and its chief executive. Under his energetic and capable management the business expanded rapidly and its products won world-wide renown. The business of the firm doubled in volume every three years from 1842 to 1857, when its growth was temporarily halted by the industrial depression prevailing throughout the country at that time, but it recovered and grew rapidly during the Civil War period and later. The firm continued as a family partnership till 1874 when it was incorporated as the Fairbanks Scale Company.

Despite his business interests, Fairbanks took an active interest in politics and public affairs. In 1836 he was elected as the representative of the town of St. Johnsbury in the lower house of the legislature. He was a presidential elector on the Whig ticket in 1844 and in 1848. In 1852 he was elected by the Whigs as governor of the state. His chief concern as governor was the promotion of education and social welfare. Dur-

ing his administration the legislature passed a state prohibition law, and Gov. Fairbanks, always a strong advocate of the cause of temperance, gave it his cordial approval. This act arrayed a powerful vested interest against his administration, and partially accounts for his failure to secure a reëlection. Although he received a plurality of the popular vote, he did not have a majority, and the election was thrown into the legislature, where his opponent was finally elected by a majority of one on the twenty-sixth ballot. In 1856 he affiliated himself with the rising Republican party and in 1860 was again elected to the office of governor on the Republican ticket, receiving about three times as many votes as his Democratic opponent. His election in this critical year places him in the ranks of the "war governors" of the North. On the same day that Lincoln issued his call for 75,000 volunteers to suppress the insurrection, Fairbanks issued a proclamation convening the legislature in special session "for the purpose of adopting measures for organizing, arming and equipping the Militia of the State, and for cooperating with the General Government in suppressing insurrection and executing the laws." In order that there might be no delay in the preparations for supporting the Union, he authorized the quartermaster-general to pledge the credit of E. & T. Fairbanks & Company for purchasing necessary equipment. When the legislature convened, it passed the necessary legislation for putting the state on a war basis, and in addition voted to place the sum of one million dollars in the hands of the governor to use according to his judgment and discretion. During his entire administration Fairbanks was untiring in his labors, and it is believed that he shortened his life by the intensity of his devotion. He never drew his salary as governor. At the end of his term he retired to private life and died shortly after. He was married on May 3, 1815, to Lois C. Crossman by whom he had eight children. In his private life as well as in business, Erastus Fairbanks was a fine example of the old-fashioned American virtues. He was deeply religious and was an active member of the Congregational Church. With other members of the family he made liberal benefactions to the town of St. Johnsbury.

[*The Vermonter*, June 1896; E. T. Fairbanks, *The Town of St. Johnsbury, Vt.* (1914); C. L. Goodell in *Congreg. Quart.*, Jan. 1867; L. S. Fairbanks, *Geneal. of the Fairbanks Family in America* (1897). Information as to certain facts from Mrs. Henry Fairbanks.]

A. M. K.

**FAIRBANKS, HENRY** (May 6, 1830–July 7, 1918), clergyman, inventor, manufacturer, was the son of Thaddeus [*q.v.*] and Lucy Peck (Barker) Fairbanks and was born in St. Johnsbury, Vt., where his father was engaged in the iron-foundry business and later in the manufacture of weighing-scales. Young Fairbanks inherited a frail physical constitution which prevented his enjoyment of the life of a normal youth and as a result, he was taught at home until he was ten years old. He spent his tenth year at Lyndon Academy, near his home, and the following year at Pinkerton Academy at Derry, N. H. When he was twelve his father established the St. Johnsbury Academy which young Fairbanks immediately entered and there prepared for college. In spite of his studious habits he had inherited the family interest in mechanics and by reason of his father's business had many opportunities for satisfying this bent. After six years in St. Johnsbury Academy and a year spent in travel in Europe seeking health, Fairbanks entered Dartmouth College in 1850 and graduated in 1853. Immediately thereafter he entered Andover Theological Seminary, but three years later the precarious state of his health again necessitated a European sojourn. After his return he completed his work at the seminary and graduated with the class of 1857. From 1857 to 1860 Fairbanks served in several Congregational pastorates in Vermont and did much missionary work in reviving many of the smaller churches which were dying out. Finding, however, that this work was entirely too strenuous he accepted the chair of natural philosophy and subsequently that of natural history in Dartmouth College where he continued teaching until 1869. In that year, upon the death of his mother, he removed with his family to St. Johnsbury and became associated with his father and uncle in the E. & T. Fairbanks Company. In 1868, while still on the faculty of Dartmouth, Fairbanks secured his first patent, jointly with his father, for scales which automatically weighed grain as it was charged into a hopper. After his connection with his father's company he continued to apply his inventive skill in the weighing field and obtained many patents, particularly for registering and printing scales. He was also interested in the local paper-pulp business and obtained a number of patents on pulp-manufacturing machines and other apparatus of value to this industry. In 1897 he patented still another interesting and valuable invention: namely, an alternating current electric generator. At the time of his death he was vice-president of the E. & T. Fairbanks Company; from 1870 to 1905 he was a trustee of Dartmouth College; and for many years he was president of the board of trustees of St. Johnsbury Academy. Fairbanks was twice married; first, in Hanover,

N. H., on Apr. 30, 1862, to Annie S. Noyes; and second, to Ruthy Page of Newport, Vt., on May 5, 1874. He was survived by his widow and six children.

[L. S. Fairbanks, *Geneal. of the Fairbanks Family in America* (1897); *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19; J. M. Cattell, *Am. Men of Sci.* (2nd ed., 1910); *Proc. Vt. Hist. Soc., 1919–20* (1921); M. T. Runnels, *Memorial Sketches and Hist. of the Class of 1853, Dartmouth Coll.* (1895); Patent Office Records.] C. W. M.

**FAIRBANKS, THADDEUS** (Jan. 17, 1796–Apr. 12, 1886), inventor, was born on his father's farm in Brimfield, Mass., the son of Joseph and Phebe (Paddock) Fairbanks, and brother of Erastus Fairbanks [*q.v.*]. Though he lived to be ninety years old, Fairbanks was never really well, and as a child was extremely delicate. For this reason most of his early education was obtained at home under the tutelage of his mother. As he grew older and when crops were good, he had the opportunity of augmenting this home study with attendance in the established public schools. It would seem that at an early age he gave evidence of having inherited the characteristic Fairbanks aptitude for mechanics, which he applied in various ways as a youth. When his father moved to Vermont in 1815 and undertook mill construction, Thaddeus assisted him. As a side line they also undertook wagon construction. In 1823, in partnership with his brother Erastus, Thaddeus established a small iron-foundry in St. Johnsbury, Vt., operating it under the name of E. & T. Fairbanks. For the succeeding seven years a variety of small foundry jobs were undertaken, with Thaddeus showing particular interest in the improvement of commodities adapted to manufacture in the foundry. Thus on Apr. 19, 1826, he secured a United States patent for a plow equipped with a cast-iron mold board which, as soon as it was produced by the brothers, met with wide demand. Shortly thereafter he devised a parlor stove as well as a cook stove, both of which were made in the foundry. Besides his inventive work and that of operating the foundry, Thaddeus was employed as manager in one of the hemp mills in St. Johnsbury, and for this enterprise he patented in 1830 a flax and hemp dressing machine. About this time, too, the existing crude method of weighing the hemp purchased from the growers, by suspending the cart and load from one end of a huge wooden steelyard, attracted Fairbanks's attention. For some time he had had in mind the adaptation of a platform upon which a cart with its load of hemp could be rolled and weighed. Accordingly he developed the idea and early in 1831 applied for a patent for a platform scale which was granted on June 13, 1831. This was the first scale of this sort, which has since



come into worldwide use and has been adapted in hundreds of forms. Thereafter the main business of the company was the manufacture of scales. Fairbanks continued to make improvements on the existing equipment and also to devise new applications of his basic patent, extending all the way from small apothecary to railroad scales. He also continued his early interest in improvements in heating apparatus and among his later inventions in this field were a draft mechanism for furnaces in 1843, a hot-water heater in 1881, and finally, a feed-water heater. For scales alone, Fairbanks obtained thirty-two patents. In addition to these and his miscellaneous inventions he devised many ingenious machines for facilitating the manufacture of scales. He always felt keenly his early lack of education and in his business career gave financial aid to deserving students. Also, with his brothers Erastus and Joseph, he established St. Johnsbury Academy in 1842, and for twenty years thereafter was its sole support, at his death bequeathing to it a large endowment fund. For his inventions he received many honors, both at home and abroad: the Knightly Cross of the Order of St. Joseph from the Emperor of Austria; the Golden Medal of Siam from the King of Siam; and the token of Commander of the Order of Iftikar from the Bey of Tunis. Scientific study of astronomy and heat constituted his major avocation. He was married on Jan. 17, 1820, to Lucy Peck Barker, a native of St. Johnsbury, and of this union two children were born, his son Henry [*q.v.*] alone surviving him at the time of his death in St. Johnsbury.

[L. S. Fairbanks, *Geneal. of the Fairbanks Family in America* (1897); E. T. Fairbanks, *The Town of St. Johnsbury, Vt.* (1914); J. G. Ullery, *Men of Vt.* (1894); Patent Office Records; obituaries in *Burlington Free Press* and *Boston Transcript*, Apr. 14, 1886.] C. W. M.

**FAIRCHILD, CHARLES STEBBINS** (Apr. 30, 1842–Nov. 24, 1924), financier and secretary of the treasury, was born in Cazenovia, Madison County, N. Y. His parents, Sidney Thompson and Helen (Childs) Fairchild, had come to Cazenovia from Stratford, Conn., and were both descended from English families that had been domiciled in New England since about 1660. Charles was educated at a local seminary, and at Harvard College, graduating from the latter in 1863. Two years later he graduated from the Harvard Law School and entered the Albany firm of his father, where much of the local business of the New York Central Railroad was transacted. He was married in 1871 to Helen Lincklaen, a distant relative and childhood friend, who was a relative of that Lincklaen who was an associate of Theophilus Cazenove, agent for the

Holland Land Company. Lincklaen had founded Cazenovia on one of the purchases of that company about 1793.

Sidney Thompson Fairchild, father of Charles, was an aggressive Democrat and his son inherited his point of view. "My first speech," the latter once declared, "was a eulogy upon that great Democrat, William L. Marcy. My teachings in Democracy were from the earliest childhood at the knee of Seymour, and later at the side of Tilden. The warmest friendship of my manhood was with Manning" (Cooper Union speech, in opposition to David B. Hill, *New York Tribune,* Feb. 12, 1892). When Samuel J. Tilden took office as governor of New York in 1875 he found Fairchild acting as a deputy attorney-general, and accredited with conscience and ability shown in securing the conviction of the New York police commissioners Charlick and Gardner. Under Governor Tilden's direction, Fairchild conducted the prosecutions in the canal ring frauds, and he was pushed by the Governor into the nomination for attorney-general at the Syracuse convention of the Democratic party in 1875 (*New York Herald,* Sept. 17, 1875). He was elected in November; but two years later Tilden was no longer governor, the canal ring was in a position of influence, and Tammany was in complete control (*New York Herald,* Oct. 4, 1877). Fairchild failed to get a renomination, retired in due time to private life, and returned to his practise of law. President Cleveland in 1885 selected Daniel Manning as secretary of the treasury, and Fairchild as assistant secretary; and when midway in the term Manning's health forced him to retire, Fairchild became secretary on Apr. 1, 1887. He remained in this post until the end of the administration, struggling to put the treasury surplus to use, and to maintain the standard of the currency. Out of office in 1889, he became a banker in New York City, and a philanthropist, with a large influence in the affairs of the Charity Organization Society. He emerged from private life in 1892 to fight Hill's "snap" convention (DeAlva Stanwood Alexander, *Four Famous New Yorkers,* 1923, p. 167); and in 1896 to oppose the Bryan ticket. He was permanent chairman of the Syracuse convention that chose a gold Democratic delegation to go to Indianapolis (*Rochester Herald,* Sept. 1, 1896), and a member of the monetary commission. In his old age he appeared at loyalty meetings; and he sought in 1920 to induce the Supreme Court to intervene to prevent the operation of the woman suffrage amendment to the Constitution. He and his wife, who survived him, continued association wtih "Lorenzo," the old home at Cazenovia, and here he died.

[C. C. Jackson and A. S. Pier, "Chas. Stebbins Fairchild," in the *Harvard Grads.' Mag.,* June 1925, is the best sketch of Fairchild's life.] F. L. P—n.

**FAIRCHILD, GEORGE THOMPSON** (Oct. 6, 1838–Mar. 16, 1901), educator, college president, was born at Brownhelm, Ohio, the youngest child of Grandison and Nancy (Harris) Fairchild, who with their older children had moved thither from Stockbridge, Mass., two decades earlier. George Fairchild was sent to Oberlin College where he graduated in arts in 1862 and in theology in 1865. On Nov. 25, 1863, he married Charlotte Pearl Halsted, also a graduate of Oberlin. Thenceforth the greater part of his life was devoted to the advancement of education in connection with agricultural institutions. In 1865 he was appointed professor of English literature in the Michigan Agricultural College, but he immediately took upon himself various other duties in order to advance the value and influence of that then rather feeble institution. Thus he was the teacher of moral philosophy and French, had charge of the student rhetoricals and arrangement of the curriculum, and was also active in building up the college library. After fourteen years of service here he was called to the presidency of the Kansas Agricultural College where he spent eighteen years in its development; his wide experience had made him a counsilor in matters of vocational education. He was at the same time a member of the State Board of Education. Early in his career he had become a member of the National Teachers Association, and in 1888 was president of the section of industrial education. Later he was one of the advisory committee of the Agricultural Congress at the World's Columbian Exposition. He was also at one time the president of the Association of American Agricultural Colleges and Experiment Stations, and made notable addresses on the proper scope and methods of agricultural education. In 1897, because the faculty did not agree with the ideas of the Populist party, then in control of the state, the Board of Regents severed the connection with the college of every one of the faculty. President Fairchild resigned. He then devoted a year to the preparation of his work, *Rural Wealth and Welfare,* published in 1900. In 1898 he undertook the work of organizing the industrial and agricultural departments in Berea College, having the title of vice-president. A few years later he died, in Columbus, Ohio. He was of a family of educators. His brother James Harris [*q.v.*] was for many years president of

Oberlin, his brother Edward Henry (1815–1889) served for twenty years as president of Berea (*Oberlin Review*, Oct. 15, 1889), and he himself was a man of wide knowledge in educational matters which he untiringly devoted to public service.

[W. J. Beal, *Hist. of the Mich. Agric. Coll.* (1915); L. H. Bailey, *Cyc. of Am. Agric.*, vol. IV (1909); *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Congreg. Year-Book*, 1902; *Nat. Educ. Asso. Jour. of Proc. and Addresses*, 1901.] E. H. J.

**FAIRCHILD, JAMES HARRIS** (Nov. 25, 1817–Mar. 19, 1902), educator, president of Oberlin College, with which he was intimately associated for sixty-eight years, was born in Stockbridge, Mass., a son of Grandison and Nancy (Harris) Fairchild. In his own words, he was "born a Yankee of the Yankees." Both of his grandfathers were farmers and Congregational deacons. His father, also a farmer, had been a teacher, as was his mother. When James was about a year old the family emigrated to the Western Reserve of northern Ohio. There was one log house in the forest township where they settled. James remembered running barefoot in the snow to school, and being carried home on the back of a larger boy. At twelve he began Latin in an academy which was opened near his home. At fourteen he went to the new high school in Elyria.

In 1833 Oberlin was founded and in 1834 Fairchild at the age of seventeen entered the first freshman class, supporting himself, at first working four hours a day in a sawmill at five cents an hour. He graduated from the college in 1838 and from the theological department in 1841. During his theological course he served as college tutor in the classics and on graduation was given the entire responsibility of the department of languages. In 1841 he made a journey of nearly 3,000 miles, chiefly by river steamboats and on horseback, to Minden in northwestern Louisiana, to claim in marriage Mary Fletcher Kellogg, who had in 1835 persuaded her father to bring her from their home in Jamestown, N. Y., two hundred miles through the woods in a one-horse wagon to Oberlin, because it was the only school in the country where a woman could study Greek.

In 1847 Fairchild was transferred to the professorship of mathematics, meeting a larger number of students and rapidly growing in influence. In 1849 he was given a few months for visiting eastern institutions; this was his only graduate study outside of Oberlin. In 1858 he was appointed associate professor of moral philosophy and began teaching theology in the seminary. He also served as faculty chairman for administration. In 1866 he was elected president. Identified with Oberlin from its foundation, in close touch with its various departments, a teacher of strength, simplicity, and sympathy, already widely honored and beloved, Fairchild gave service of highest value for twenty-three years, as a president dignified, benign, sagacious, and democratic. Especially distinctive was his influence in effecting the transition from the early to the modern Oberlin, and in dissipating the prejudice against the institution as reputed to be unbalanced and innovative. This admirably poised, serene personality, the embodiment of common sense in thought and action, this mind always expecting and welcoming new aspects of truth, yet singularly sane and conservative, this chivalrous friend and courteous gentleman won all hearts, inspired universal confidence, and set Oberlin upon a great career.

In 1871 President Fairchild traveled in Europe, Egypt, and Palestine. In 1884 he visited the West and Hawaii. In 1889 he insisted upon laying down the presidency, but retained his professorship nine years longer and then continued on the board of trustees the remaining four years of his life. Mrs. Fairchild, the mother of their six daughters and two sons, died in 1890.

President Fairchild published, in 1869, *Moral Philosophy or the Science of Obligation;* in 1883, *Oberlin, the Colony and the College;* in 1892, *Elements of Theology, Natural and Revealed;* and some fifty historical and religious monographs, sermons, and reviews either separately or in various periodicals. In ethics he held that obligation is an ultimate idea, and intuitive perception, grounded in the worth of sentient being. He emphasized the moral and religious unity of the universe, holding that the law of benevolence extends to God as well as to his creatures. His theological teaching was a well-balanced presentation of the New England or governmental system. Although regarding theology as a progressive science, he made little use of contemporary thought in other fields as affecting theological conceptions. A discriminating and vigorous rather than an original or a brilliant thinker, he exercised a vital and abiding influence upon his students.

[A. T. Swing, *James Harris Fairchild* (1907); C. F. Thwing, *Guides, Philosophers and Friends* (1927); autobiographical outline in D. L. Leonard, *Story of Oberlin* (1898), pp. 289–94; brief discussion of his theology in F. H. Foster, *A Genetic Hist. of the New England Theology* (1907), pp. 469–70.] E. D. E.

**FAIRCHILD, LUCIUS** (Dec. 27, 1831–May 23, 1896), Union soldier, governor, diplomat, was throughout his life identified with the public af-

fairs of the state of Wisconsin. Before the capital of the territory, Madison, had been incorporated as a city he was brought there by his parents, Jairus Cassius and Sally Blair Fairchild. They had come out of New York and New England by way of Ohio, where he was born, in Portage County, and in their mansion on Lake Monona the eastern influence remained strong for eighty years. Jairus was the first treasurer of Wisconsin, and the first mayor of Madison. He sent Lucius for a short time to Carroll College at Waukesha, but the gold fever caught the lad and drew him across the plains to California, where he remained six years with moderate success (*The California Letters of Lucius Fairchild,* edited by Joseph Schafer, now in press). By 1858 Lucius was home again. He was this year elected clerk of the circuit court of Dane County as a Democrat but the war made him a Republican, and he advanced rapidly in his party, helped by his reputation as a soldier. In 1861 he entered the service in the 1st Wisconsin Volunteer Regiment; he was transferred to the 2nd Wisconsin which he commanded as lieutenant-colonel at the second battle of Bull Run. Here its performance was so good that he was made colonel, dating from Aug. 30, 1862. His regiment was one of the five in the "Iron Brigade" (with the 6th and 7th Wisconsin, the 19th Indiana, and the 24th Michigan). He fought with his brigade in Reynolds's corps at Gettysburg, where on the first day his left arm was shattered by a musket ball and he was taken prisoner by the Confederates. This was the end of his active service. He was made a brigadier-general of volunteers, but his health was weakened and the Republican party had nominated him as secretary of state. Mustered out in October 1863, he took up his political duties at Madison the following winter. He was married, Apr. 27, 1864, to Frances Bull, who survived him until 1925, and was herself survived by two of their three daughters. Her social charm, coupled with his political prominence and military bearing, gave them great distinction in the life of their community (F. C. Dexheimer, *Sketches of Pioneer Women of Wisconsin,* 1925, p. 52).

In 1866 General Fairchild became governor of Wisconsin, holding the post through three terms until January 1872. At the expiration of this service President Grant sent him abroad as consul to Liverpool. In 1878 President Hayes transferred him, as consul-general, to Paris; and in 1880 when James Russell Lowell was shifted to London, Fairchild succeeded him as minister to Spain. Ten years of foreign residence was enough. He resigned his post in 1882, and on



Mar. 2 of that year was formally welcomed home at a notable reception in the state capitol. He expected to be welcomed to high office as well, but the decade which had elapsed had brought into the control of Wisconsin affairs Senator Philetus Sawyer of Oshkosh, and a group of railroad, land, and timber politicians skilfully managed by Henry C. Payne of Milwaukee and John C. Spooner of Hudson. Fairchild found himself on the outside, a sort of "Rip Van Winkle in politics" (*Madison Democrat,* Jan. 7, 1885). He received kind words and non-political distinctions, but no office. He was mentioned as a favorite son for the Republican presidential nomination in 1884 (F. B. Wilkie, *Chicago Tribune,* May 3, 1884). In January 1885 he was a serious and unsuccessful candidate for the United States senatorship against Spooner, who won the election.

His friends among the veterans were kinder to him. He became state commander of the Grand Army of the Republic, and in August 1886 the national encampment of that society, at San Francisco, made him national commander-in-chief. In this capacity his vigorous patriotism and sharp partisanship made him speak more violently than perhaps he meant when, before a Harlem, N. Y., meeting of the G. A. R., he denounced President Cleveland's order for the return of the Confederate battle flags: "May God palsy the hand that wrote that order. May God palsy the brain that conceived it, and may God palsy the tongue that dictated it" (*New York Herald,* June 16, 1887). Under President Harrison he became one of the federal commissioners to settle the affairs of the Cherokee Indians in Oklahoma. Later he rose to be commander-in-chief of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion. Always possessed of ample means, he lived with dignity in the mansion his father had built, and here he died in 1896.

[Fairchild's papers, letters, and voluminous scrapbooks are in the museums of the Wis. State Hist. Soc. The best sketch of his life, by Louise P. Kellogg, is in the *Wis. Mag. of Hist.,* Mar. 1927. There is a useful memoir in *Circular No. 271,* May 23, 1896, of the Wis. Commandery, Mil. Order of the Loyal Legion.]

F. L. P—n.

**FAIRCHILD, MARY SALOME CUTLER** (June 21, 1855–Dec. 20, 1921), librarian, was the daughter of Artemus Hubbard Cutler and Lydia Wakefield, and the wife of Edwin Milton Fairchild, whom she married July 1, 1897, at Troy, N. Y. She was born in Dalton, Mass. She seems to have sought the best education then offered to women. In 1875 she was graduated from Mount Holyoke Seminary, where she also taught until 1878. Just why she left teaching seems not to be recorded. but in 1884 she began work in the Co-

lumbia College Library at the moment that plans were being developed for the first library school. The school opened Jan. 5, 1887, and Miss Cutler, her interest challenged and her ambition stirred by the new project, was made instructor in cataloguing. In 1889, when the school was moved to the New York State Library in Albany she became its vice-director, and was not only its chief executive but its guiding spirit. For sixteen years she was truly a pioneer. From this parent school she sent out disciples trained in her own habits of accuracy, thoroughness, and broad thinking, who, filled with her ideals, carried into libraries and library schools the purposes and methods of the Albany school. In this way she did much to set the standards of a new calling, for the best years of her life were given to the new public-library movement and to training carefully chosen recruits for its service. The philosophy which her mind constantly sought for this social adjunct found expression in her "Function of the Library" (*Public Libraries,* November 1901). Her interest was particularly enlisted in book selection and evaluation, and in the origins, history, and development of American libraries (*Library Journal,* February 1908). These subjects she deemed fundamental, and to them she gave her best thought and work, developing a substance and a methodology which made them a permanent part of the equipment of the well-trained librarian. In 1889 she was induced to take over the librarianship for the blind in the New York State Library and to that work she applied herself with her usual thoroughness.

Her active and useful career was cut short in 1905 by an illness from which she never fully recovered. This prevented the perfection of her work, and the publication of the substantial results of it. In her retirement she lectured occasionally and indeed for four months in 1909–10 was in charge of the library school of Drexel Institute, but her work was done. She was chairman of the committee in charge of the library exhibit at the Columbian Exposition which assembled a model library of five thousand volumes with a model printed catalogue. Twice a vice-president of the American Library Association, a member of its council 1892–98 and 1909–14, its delegate to the British International Conference in 1903, she abundantly fulfilled her broader professional obligations.

[*Mt. Holyoke Alumnae Quart.*, Apr. 1922; N. Y. State Lib. School *Alumni News Letter*, Mar. 1922; *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *Library Jour.*, Oct. 15, 1921, Jan. 1, 1922.] J. I. W.

**FAIRFAX, DONALD McNEILL** (Mar. 10, 1821–Jan. 10, 1894), rear-admiral, was born in Virginia, the son of George William and Isabella (McNeill) Fairfax. His great-grandfather, the Rev. Bryan Fairfax, though he never assumed the title, was by regular inheritance the eighth baron of Cameron. Donald McNeill was appointed a midshipman from North Carolina in 1837 and promoted to passed midshipman in 1843. Soon afterward he was on the *Missouri* when it was destroyed by fire in Gibraltar harbor, and on the *Princeton* when at Washington in 1844 one of its guns burst and killed several notables. He took part in the capture of Lower California during the Mexican War, and in February 1851 was made lieutenant. In November 1861, as executive officer of the *San Jacinto,* under Capt. Charles Wilkes, he had personal charge of the capture of the Confederate agents, Mason and Slidell, from the English vessel *Trent.* Doubtful of the expediency of this seizure, he executed it—by design—with such artful tact as to prevent the captain of the *Trent* from turning the entire vessel over to him as a prize. During 1862, he commanded the *Cayuga* under Farragut at New Orleans, and during 1863, the *Nantucket* and the *Montauk* off Charleston. He was commandant of midshipmen at Annapolis 1864–65, and he had charge of the *Susquehanna* when it was attacked by a disastrous yellow-fever epidemic in 1867. Promoted to commodore in 1873, he was for five years thereafter commandant of the naval station at New London, and for the two years following governor of the Naval Asylum. He was made a rear-admiral in 1880, and was retired in 1881. He died at his home in Hagerstown, Md. He was married to Josephine, daughter of rear-admiral Andrew Hull Foote.

[D. McN. Fairfax, "Capt. Wilkes's Seizure of Mason and Slidell" in *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War,* II (1887), 135–42; J. A. Woodburn, *The Trent Affair* (1896); T. H. S. Hamersley, *Gen. Reg. U. S. Navy and Marine Corps* (1882); E. W. Callahan, *List of Officers of the Navy of the U. S. and of the Marine Corps* (1901); F. L. Brockett, *The Lodge of Washington* (1876), p. 119; E. D. Neill, *Descendants of Hon. Wm. Fairfax* (1868); Nathaniel Foote, *The Foote Family* (1849); Hagerstown directories; *Army and Navy Jour.*, Jan. 13, 1894; *N. Y. Tribune,* Jan. 11, 1894.] J. D. W.

**FAIRFAX, THOMAS** (Oct. 22, 1693–Dec. 9, 1781), sixth Lord Fairfax of Cameron and proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia, was born at Leeds Castle, County Kent, the eldest son and namesake of his predecessor in the peerage. His mother, Catherine, was the heiress of that Lord Culpeper who was sometime governor-general of Virginia under a patent of Charles II; and he was himself in physique and character a Culpeper, a true representative of the ancient Kentish family which had actively participated in the colonization of Virginia for four generations be-

fore Fairfax himself came to play a part on the American scene.

In January 1709/10, Fairfax succeeded to his peerage and began a three-year residence at Oriel College, Oxford (Shadwell, *Registrum Orielense*, II, 25). So far as the evidence goes, his university career was uneventful; even the pleasant tradition of his contribution of a paper to *The Spectator* at this time must be abandoned. After the death of his mother in 1719, he secured a commission in the Horse Guards Blue (Dalton, *George I's Army*, II, 196) and commenced courtier also; holding for a time the post of Treasurer of the Household under the Lord Chamberlain (*Calendar Treasury Papers, 1720–28*, p. 78). His ambition apparently was to arrange a marriage which might have untangled the complications in which an inherited litigation had involved his Fairfax estates in Yorkshire; but failing in that he abandoned a career, and with a quixotic gesture withdrew from the great world to Leeds Castle, there to practise hound-breeding and fox-hunting, as an anodyne to disappointment.

In such seclusion he lived until 1733, when he was roused by a formidable political attack upon the Northern Neck proprietary, launched at the moment when the western movement of the colonial frontier was beginning to give significance to an hitherto unremunerative property right. This vast wilderness manor, ultimately adjudged to include all the territory between the rivers Potomac and Rappahannock and so to make up an area of more than five million acres, had been created in 1649 by Charles II as an intended refuge for a little band of Cavaliers who had forfeited their English estates by support of his father. One of the patentees was Fairfax's great-grandfather Culpeper, whose son, the Virginia governor, later acquired by purchase the shares of the other original proprietors. Culpeper's resident representatives had, however, succeeded in generating such local jealousy and resentment in Virginia that several efforts were made by the colony to persuade the Crown to resume the grant; but Culpeper maintained his claims so stoutly that after his death Virginia's effort was to confine the proprietary boundaries to the straitest limits (H. R. McIlwaine, editor, *Journals of the House of Burgesses of Virginia, 1727–40*, p. 92).

To protect his inheritance from the last such attack, Fairfax first went out to Virginia in May 1735, and there remained until September 1737. His diplomacy was successful for he negotiated a treaty with the Assembly (Hening, *Statutes at Large*, IV, 1814, p. 514) and arranged for such a survey of the territory in dispute as might narrow the issues for consideration by the Privy Council. It was not, however, until 1745 that his cause was finally determined; but then, at long last, Fairfax's extreme claims were justified (*Acts Privy Council*, Colonial, III, 385 ff.; Hening, VI, 1819, p. 198).

Fairfax

Fairfax had never modified his purpose of retirement from the world, and he now decided to live out his life on his American estate. He emigrated definitely in 1747; and, after a sojourn on the Potomac for several years, during which he met and held out a friendly hand to the young George Washington, he established (in 1752) his final residence in the Shenandoah Valley, at a hunting lodge to which he gave the name of a Culpeper manor in Kent,—"Greenway Court." There he took up the traditional English duty of local magistracy. He was commissioned a justice of the peace in all the counties of the Northern Neck and, at Gov. Dinwiddie's request, assumed (in 1754) the active duty of county lieutenant, as commandant of the frontier militia.

Looking back at him across the gulf of the American Revolution, there has been an effort to see in Fairfax the arch Tory, the personification of what came to be the locally hated English government. There is no justification for this in anything he himself did or said, and it is significant that throughout the Revolution the Assembly treated him with marked consideration. The only resident peer in America, he was accorded all the privileges of a Virginia citizen and was never molested, even by the mob. This could only be because it was recognized that his political sentiments were practically inoffensive to the Revolution. Indeed, Fairfax had never been a Tory. On the contrary, he had grown up in the principles of the revolution of 1688, in which his father actively participated.

Fairfax lived in the utmost simplicity. His personal bearing was what would now be called democratic, though he never had the remotest appreciation of what that term has come to mean. The color of the picture painted in *Burke's Peerage*, of his "baronial hospitality," is mere mythology. There was many a contemporary tide-water planter who would have been ashamed of the rude plenty of his table, bereft of luxuries; at which, indeed, his younger brother sneered in 1768. He had no such cellar of Madeira wine as was in his time to be found in most, even moderately well-to-do, Virginia plantation houses. He had, indeed, sent him out every year new clothes of the latest fashion, but, unlike George Washington, he did not wear them. His plate was like his library, sufficient for decent comfort but inadequate for show; such as are used to-day in

East Africa by Englishmen, who, like Fairfax, have sought in the open a surcease of the pains engendered by civilization.

He died at "Greenway Court," Dec. 9, 1781, in his eighty-ninth year, and was buried under the altar of the Frederick parish church. His relics now rest in a crypt beneath the local Christ Church, Winchester. There survives a pleasant portrait of Fairfax, painted before he left England in 1747.

[The available material for the Culpepers and the Fairfaxes and for the development and liquidation of the Northern Neck proprietary, has been collected and critically examined in two privately printed books, *Virginia Land Grants* (1925) and *The Proprietors of the Northern Neck* (1926), which have been closely followed in this sketch.] F. H.

**FAIRFIELD, EDMUND BURKE** (Aug. 7, 1821–Nov. 17, 1904), educator, was born at Parkersburg, Va. (now W. Va.). His father, the Rev. Micaiah Fairfield, was graduated at Middlebury College and Andover Theological Seminary. He went to Virginia and there married Mrs. Hannah (Wynn) Neale, daughter of Capt. Minor Wynn. Their son Edmund studied at Denison, Marietta, and Oberlin colleges, receiving his Baccalaureate degree at the last-named in 1842. He continued his study at the Oberlin Theological Seminary and graduated there in 1845. After a short pastorate (1847) in Boston, he became, in 1849, president of Free Baptist College, at Spring Harbor, Mich. In 1853 this school was moved to Hillsdale, Mich., and became Hillsdale College. Fairfield retained the presidency until 1869, but during that period also served as state senator (1857) and lieutenant-governor of Michigan (1859). About this time he altered his views on baptism, left the Baptist fold and became the pastor of the First Congregational Church at Mansfield, Ohio. Some years later (1875) he was appointed president of the normal school, at Indiana, Pa. In 1876 he was elected the second chancellor of the University of Nebraska, then in the eighth year of its existence. Here he remained six years, the last portion of his administration being one of the most tempestuous periods in the entire history of the institution. He was a Fundamentalist, vigorously opposed to the teaching of Darwin, which was permeating even the then remote Middle West. On his faculty were three young instructors, George Edward Woodberry, Harrington Emerson, and George E. Church, all intellectually keen and imbued with the newer thought. As a result of their attempt to introduce the modernism of the day into the young university, all of the professors, as well as the chancellor, resigned from the faculty in 1882. Fairfield accepted the pastorate of the Congregational Church at Manistee, Mich., which he held until 1889 when he was appointed United States consul at Lyons, France, where he remained four years. He returned to settle at Grand Rapids, Mich., but in 1896 he resumed his former charge at Mansfield, Ohio. In 1900 he retired from active public life, and went to Oberlin, Ohio, where he died. He wrote extensively for educational and theological reviews and published separately three addresses: *True National Greatness* (1853), *Liberty and Slavery* (1856), *Christian Patriotism* (1863); and *Wickedness in High Places: A review of Henry Ward Beecher's Case* (1874). A Republican in politics, he took an active part in the political campaigns between 1855 and 1865. He was married three times: first, in 1845, to Lucia A. Denison; second, in 1859, to Mary A. Baldwin; and third, in 1883, to Mary A. Tibbets, who survived him. He was the father of eleven children.

[Albert Watkins, *Hist. of Nebr.* (1905–13), III, 701–02; Nebr. Univ., *Semi-Centennial Anniversary Book* (1919), pp. 120–21; files of Lincoln and Omaha newspapers of the period of Fairfield's administration at the Univ. of Neb.; obituary in *Omaha World-Herald*, Nov. 19, 1904.] G. H. D.

**FAIRFIELD, JOHN** (Jan. 20, 1797–Dec. 24, 1847), lawyer, politician, the son of Ichabod and Sarah (Nason) Scamman Fairfield, was born at Saco, Me. Little is known of his early life except that he served on a privateer during the War of 1812 and attended Thornton and Limerick Academies. He engaged in business, unsuccessfully it appears, studied law in a local office, and was admitted to the bar in 1826. He had on Sept. 25, 1825, married Anna Paine Thornton. Soon after his admission to the bar he formed a partnership with George Thacher and the firm soon acquired a considerable practise. Fairfield, being especially successful in jury cases, gave most of his time to court-room work. He had also been appointed reporter of supreme court decisions in 1832 and continued this work until 1835, when he entered the Twenty-fourth Congress as a Democrat. He was reëlected to the Twenty-fifth Congress, but resigned before the completion of his term to accept the governorship of Maine. He made a favorable impression in the House, although he was active in the attempt to force an investigation of the circumstances attending the death of his colleague, Jonathan Cilley, in the famous duel with Graves of Kentucky. On Mar. 8, 1838, he made a notable speech on the Northeastern boundary question (*Congressional Globe*, 25 Cong., 2 Sess., App., pp. 196–203), which undoubtedly contributed greatly to his election as governor in that year.

The boundary dispute was becoming acute

when he took office. On Jan. 23, 1839, he asked the legislature to authorize the land-agent to expel trespassers from New Brunswick and put a stop to illegal timber cutting. This resulted in a clash with the British authorities and a flare of excitement all along the northern frontiers. War was expected on both sides of the line. Governor Fairfield, backed by the legislature and the public opinion of the state, acted vigorously and ordered the militia to occupy the disputed territory. The trouble soon blew over; on Mar. 25 the Governor accepted the *modus vivendi* arranged by General Scott and Governor Harvey of New Brunswick, and the troops were recalled. His promptness and vigor, his readiness to challenge the power of Great Britain, contrasting with the somewhat complacent attitude of the Van Buren administration, had made him a national figure. He was returned to office in the same year. With the Whig landslide of 1840, however, he was defeated for the governorship, but was reëlected in 1841 and 1842, resigning in 1843 to enter the United States Senate for the unexpired term of Ruel Williams. He thus saw the close of the boundary trouble in the Webster-Ashburton Treaty, and shared in the wide-spread dissatisfaction which resulted. In his messages he had insisted that the British claims were flimsy in character and had demanded recognition of the rights of Maine. While in the Senate, in reply to Webster's assertion that the people of Maine were satisfied, he reviewed the whole transaction at great length, pointing out the disregard of Maine rights and interests, but declaring that the people of the state were willing to make the best of the treaty as a matter of necessity (*Globe*, 25 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 251–53). In 1845 he was reëlected for the full term of six years.

Due to the fact that Fairfield received strong support for the vice-presidency at the Democratic convention of 1844, there was considerable criticism at Polk's failure to give him a cabinet place. Apparently the Southern wing of the party had some doubts as to his orthodoxy on the slavery question. That he was decidedly conservative in his views, however, is shown by his letters, in which he expressed an unwillingness to do anything prejudicial to the institution in the states, and a dislike for the agitation conducted in the House by John Quincy Adams. He also supported the expansion policy of the Polk administration and was a vigorous proponent of a large navy. His sudden death following an operation on his knees, and due apparently to the bungling or quackery of the surgeon, caused great regret and apparently unanimous expressions of opinion that he had been on the way toward unusual

Fairfield

distinction in national affairs. His letters, which bespeak a keen analytic mind and a sense of humor, constitute a distinct contribution to our knowledge of Washington life in the days of Van Buren and Polk.

[Arthur G. Staples, ed., *The Letters of John Fairfield* (1922); H. F. Hamilton, "Gov. John Fairfield," *Me. Hist. and Geneal. Recorder*, Jan. 1887; L. C. Hatch, *Maine: A History* (1919); C. E. Hamlin, *The Life and Times of Hannibal Hamlin* (1899); *Daily Eastern Argus* (Portland), Dec. 29, 1847.] W. A. R.

**FAIRFIELD, SUMNER LINCOLN** (June 25, 1803–Mar. 6, 1844), poet, was born at Warwick, Mass., the son of Dr. Abner Fairfield and Lucy Lincoln. Upon the death of his father, Sumner went to live with his grandfather, Seth Lincoln, Jr., in Western (now Warren), Mass. Lincoln, who had opposed his daughter's marriage, subjected the sensitive boy to many indignities. Consequently, his mother left her paternal home, and placed Sumner in the grammar school at Hadley, Mass. During 1818–20 he was a student at Brown University, but left because he lacked money, and taught in Georgia (1821) and in South Carolina (1822). In December 1825 he sailed for Europe. After four months there, he returned to America and in September of that year, 1826, married Jane Frazee at New Brunswick, N. J. He proceeded with his bride to Elizabethtown, where all their household effects were seized for debt. Stalked by misfortune, he moved to New York, then to Boston, where he acted in Home's tragedy *Douglas*. Again lacking money, the poet in 1827 was forced to act on the New York stage, but soon secured a teaching position near Charlestown, Va. Dissatisfied with that he returned to Philadelphia for the years 1828–29, became head master at Newton Academy near Philadelphia, but left because of a tragic occurrence. He could never face disagreeable situations. In 1830 he was teaching in New York.

Fairfield finished his masterpiece, *The Last Night of Pompeii*, in 1831, and had it printed in New York in 1832, two years before Bulwer-Lytton's *The Last Days of Pompeii*. He claimed that he had sent Bulwer a copy of the poem which was never acknowledged, and when the novel appeared, charged him with plagiarism. Fairfield's assertions are partly true. Doubtless Bulwer made use of the poem, but merely as a "source." In November 1832, Fairfield began to publish in Philadelphia the *North American Magazine*. He continued to edit it until 1838, save for the suspension of publication in 1837 because of his failing health. Since he was unable to work after the sale of the magazine, his wife did everything possible to support the family,

and in 1841 brought out the first volume of his collected works. The second never appeared. In the fall of 1843, attended only by his mother, the poet left Philadelphia for New Orleans, La., where he died the following spring.

Fairfield was a Puritan poet in the Miltonic tradition. He believed that poetry should be written always with the *grand* and *ideal* in mind, but his verses are filled with his own bitterness and morbidity. He and his children all suffered from periodic attacks of insanity. His editorial policy was truth, no matter whom it affected. He had few friends, and his poetry, which strikes at times a high note in early American literature, is now little known. His published works include: *The Siege of Constantinople* (1822); *Poems* (1823); *Lays of Melpomene* (1824); *Mina* (1825); *The Passage of the Sea* (1826); *The Cities of the Plain* (1827); *The Heir of the World* (1829); *Abaddon* (1830); *The Last Night of Pompeii* (1832); and *The Poems and Prose Writings of Sumner Lincoln Fairfield* (1841).

[M. R. Patterson, "Sumner Lincoln Fairfield: His Life and Charge of Plagiarism Against Bulwer-Lytton," 1930, a manuscript thesis in the Brown Univ. Lib.; Jane Fairfield, *The Life of Sumner Lincoln Fairfield* (1874), and *The Autobiog. of Jane Fairfield* (1860). A complete set of the *North Am. Mag.*, containing most of Fairfield's prose and many of his poems, is in the N. Y. State Lib., Albany, N. Y. The Harris Coll. of Am. Poetry, Brown Univ., contains the most nearly complete collection of his poems.] M. R. P.

**FAIRLAMB, JAMES REMINGTON** (Jan. 23, 1838–Apr. 16, 1908), composer, and organist, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the son of Col. Jonas Preston Fairlamb and his wife, Hannah Kennedy. He was playing in church at the age of fourteen, and before he was twenty had held the position of organist and choirmaster in several Philadelphia churches. In 1858 he went to Europe, where, at the Paris Conservatory, he studied piano with Prudent and Marmontel, and voice with Masset. From Paris he passed to Florence and thence to Zürich with President Lincoln's appointment as United States consul to Switzerland. While in Stuttgart, King Karl of Würtemberg awarded him the "Gold Medal for Arts and Sciences" in recognition of his *Te Deum* for double chorus and orchestra, dedicated to that monarch. In 1865 Fairlamb returned to the United States, and established himself in Washington, D. C., where he was active until 1872, as teacher and composer, and with an amateur opera company he himself had organized, produced his grand opera *Valérie*. From 1872 to 1898, he held positions as organist in Philadelphia, Elizabeth, N. J., Jersey City, and New York; and in 1898 became instructor of music in



DeWitt Clinton High School in the last-named city. He was twice married: first, in 1866 to Marian Kerr Higgins, daughter of Judge David Higgins of Ohio, and second, to Melusina Therese, daughter of George F. Muller of Pittsburgh. He died at his home in Ingleside, L. I.

A prolific composer, Fairlamb published in all some two hundred compositions, including more than fifty choral works, sacred and secular, and over a hundred songs. Rupert Hughes has conveniently classified him among "The Colonists," *i.e.*, the musical writers belonging to the specific city ganglia or colonies which he regards as a vital phase of American musical development. Associated with the great advance in every phase of musical activity which the United States experienced in the period after the Civil War, Fairlamb cannot be reckoned with those composers who, like Gottschalk and Stephen Foster (the first consciously, the second following the line of least resistence), undertook to develop "nationalist," *i.e.*, folk-music elements in his original work. He was, however, an excellent example of the talented, foreign-trained American musician whose effort aided in establishing higher standards of taste and appreciation in his native land. There can be no question that his work as a composer was qualitative, and that many of his songs, in particular, have spontaneity and charm. He was one of the founders of the American Guild of Organists, and was identified with the first American productions of Sir Arthur Sullivan's *Pinafore* and *The Sorcerer*. Like so many composers, Fairlamb was not particularly successful in the field wherein he was most ambitious to gather laurels. Neither his lighter scores, *Love's Stratagem, Treasured Tokens,* and *The Interrupted Marriage,* nor his posthumous five-act grand opera *Leonello,* achieved public production.

[Rupert Hughes and Arthur Elson, *Am. Composers* (rev. ed., 1914); *Who's Who in America,* 1903–05; *The Art of Music . . . A Dictionary Index of Musicians,* vol. XI (1917); Janet M. Green, "Musical Biographies" (1908), in *The Am. Hist. & Encyc. of Music,* ed. by W. L. Hubbard; Ralph Dunstan, *A Cyclopædic Dictionary of Music* (1925); *Musical Courier,* Apr. 22, 1908; *N. Y. Tribune, N. Y. Times,* Apr. 18, 1908.] F. H. M.

**FALCKNER, DANIEL** (Nov. 25, 1666–*c.* 1741), Lutheran clergyman, was born in Langen-Reinsdorf, Saxony, the second son of the Lutheran pastor, Daniel Falckner. While a licentiate in theology at Erfurt, he was associated with Philip Jacob Spener and August Hermann Francke, the leaders of the Pietist movement. In 1693 he joined a group of eccentric millenarians who proposed to retire to the wilderness of Pennsylvania and there await the coming of the Lord.

Led by Henrich Bernhard Köster, Johannes Kelpius, and Johann Gottfried Seelig, the millenarians disembarked at Bohemia Landing, Md., June 19, 1694, and took up their quarters along Wissahickon Creek, near Germantown, Pa., where their society was soon known as *Das Weib in der Wüste*. Falckner was distinguished among them by a slight but unique aptitude for mundane affairs and so became the business head of the society. In 1698 or 1699 he went back to Germany to recruit their ranks up to the mystic number forty and to report on their activities. In answer to a series of questions put to him by Francke, he wrote an account of conditions in Pennsylvania, which was published as *Curieuse Nachricht von Pensylvania in Norden-America* (Frankfort and Leipzig, 1702). This book undoubtedly helped to stimulate German emigration to the colony.

On his return in 1700 he brought with him his brother Justus Falckner [*q.v.*] and a commission empowering Kelpius, Johann Jawert, and himself, acting jointly, to succeed Francis Daniel Pastorius [*q.v.*] as agents for the Frankfort Land Company, who were the proprietors of Germantown. Kelpius, disdaining the affairs of the world, declined to serve, leaving Falckner and Jawert to carry on, with doubtful legality, alone. Of the 25,000 acres that William Penn had promised the Company, only 2,975 had actually been deeded to it; Falckner obtained the remaining 22,025 acres, a tract of meadow land on the Manatawny River in New Hanover Township, Montgomery County. This region became known as Falckner's Swamp. There he organized the first German Lutheran congregation in the province, built a log church, and served as its minister. In 1701 he was elected bailiff of Germantown, but the next year he was turned out. His vigorous conduct of the Company's affairs ended, however, in disaster, the exact nature of which cannot be deduced from the fragmentary and ambiguous evidence now at hand. According to Pastorius, Falckner was a sot, a waster, and a rogue, and, acting in collusion with John Henry Sprögel, swindled the Frankfort Company out of its land. In this instance, however, Pastorius is not an unimpeachable witness; wherever Falckner emerges clearly from the obscure past he is a man of probity. Sprögel, with all four members of the Philadelphia bar in his pay, put Falckner in jail before he secured a deed to the Manatawny tract; on the whole it seems likely that instead of being in collusion with him Falckner was the most miserable of all Sprögel's victims. At any rate, Sprögel got the Manatawny land, and Falckner, impoverished and disgraced, left Pennsylvania in 1709 and never returned.

Falckner

For the rest of his life he served as a minister to the scattered Lutherans of the Raritan Valley in New Jersey, to whom he had been recommended by his brother Justus. He had a high sense of the duties of his office, as is shown by his refusal to ordain John Bernhard van Dieren and John Caspar Stoever [*q.v.*]. For a time after his brother's death he visited all the Dutch Lutheran congregations between Staten Island and Albany. He and Wilhelm Christoph Berkenmeyer [*q.v.*] worked together cordially, and the only but sufficient evidence for Falckner's ordination is that the truculently orthodox Berkenmeyer accepted him as a colleague. Failing memory—he complained that his head was no better than a pumpkin—finally compelled him to retire. He lived his last days in the home of one of his daughters and amused himself by gathering medicinal plants in the woods.

[J. F. Sachse, *The German Pietists of Provincial Pa.* (1895), *Justus Falckner* (1903), *Falckner's Curieuse Nachricht von Pa.* (1905), "Missives to Rev. A. H. Francke from D. Falckner and J. Falckner," *Pa. German Soc. Proc. and Addresses,* vol. XVIII (1909); A. L. Grābner, *Geschichte der Lutherischen Kirche in America* (1892); T. E. Schmauk, *Hist. of the Luth. Church in Pa.* (1903); Oswald Seidensticker, *Bilder aus der Deutsch-pennsylvanischen Geschichte* (1885); H. S. Dotterer, *Falkner Swamp* (Schwenksville, Pa., 1879) and *The Perkiomen Region,* I (1895), 5–6, 121–23; S. W. Pennypacker, *Pa. Colonial Cases* (1892) and *The Settlement of Germantown, Pa.* (1899); M. D. Learned, *The Life of F. D. Pastorius* (1908).] G. H. G.

**FALCKNER, JUSTUS** (Nov. 22, 1672–1723), Lutheran clergyman, was born in Saxony at Langen-Reinsdorf near Crimmitschau, the youngest of the four sons of the local pastor, Daniel Falckner. His father's library was sufficiently rich and extensive to gain a provincial reputation. Both his grandfathers had been Lutheran ministers. Falckner matriculated on Jan. 20, 1693, at the University of Halle, whither he seems to have followed his teacher, Christian Thomasius, from Leipzig. In Halle he came under the influence of August Hermann Francke and composed several hymns imbued with the spirit of Pietism, including the once well-known *"Auf! Ihr Christen, Christi Glieder"* ("Rise, ye children of Salvation") and *"O Herr der Herrlichkeit."* He resided in Rostock and Lübeck for the greater part of the next few years and accompanied his brother Daniel [*q.v.*] to Pennsylvania in 1700. During this period he was probably engaged in tutoring while awaiting a pastoral call; the story, first printed in Tobias E. Biörck's *Dissertatio Gradualis de Plantatione Ecclesiae Svecanae in America* (Upsala, 1731), that he fled to America to avoid the ministry is doubtless a pious legend. Far too much, also, has been made of his connection with the band of mystics on Wissahickon

Creek; he lived with them for only a few months and appears not to have shared in their fantastic beliefs. He was elected a burgess of Germantown in the autumn of 1700 and aided his brother in managing the affairs of Benjamin Furly and the Frankfort Land Company, but his chief concern was for the spiritual welfare of the German Lutheran settlers. A letter of his on this subject was published in Germany as an *Abdruck eines Schreibens an Tit. Herrn D. Henr. Muhlen . . . den Zustand der Kirchen in America betreffend* (1702). At the earnest insistence of the Swedish pastor, Andreas Rudman, he agreed to accept a call to the Dutch Lutheran congregations of New York and the Hudson Valley; and Rudman, Andreas Sandel, and Erick Tobias Biörck accordingly ordained him Nov. 24, 1703, in Gloria Dei Church at Wicacoa in Philadelphia, the Swedish church authorities having previously given them the proper authority. A full record of this ordination, one of the earliest on American soil, has been preserved. Eight days later Falckner began his work in New York and served his vast parish faithfully until his death twenty years later. In his ministrations he traversed the whole Hudson Valley as far North as Albany, going wherever there were German or Dutch Lutherans in need of him. East Jersey and the western end of Long Island also came within the sphere of his activities. He is known to have baptized at least one Indian and to have had several negro parishioners. The records of his ministerial acts are perhaps the best revelation of Falckner's character. After the entry of a baptism or other ceremony, at the close of the year, and on other occasions it was his custom to write a brief prayer, often in true collect form. The simplicity, tenderness, and devotion of these prayers has impressed probably every one who has seen them. To strengthen his people against the proselytizing of the Reformed he wrote his *Grondlycke Onderricht van Sekere Voorname Hoofd-stucken der Waren, Loutern, Saligmakenden Christelycken Leere* (N. Y., Wm. Bradford, 1708). On Rogate Sunday in 1717 he was married by the Rev. William Vesey to Gerritge Hardick of Albany, by whom he had two daughters and a son. After the death in 1719 of Josua von Kocherthal [*q.v.*] he assumed the additional burden of caring for Kocherthal's congregations. During his last years he made his headquarters at Claverack. His last recorded act was a baptism performed at Philipsburgh (Yonkers), Sept. 4, 1723. The day of his death and his place of burial are unknown. He was succeeded by the Rev. Wilhelm Christoph Berkenmeyer [*q.v.*]. Falckner is one of the



most winsome figures in the whole history of the Lutheran Church in America.

[B. M. Schmucker, "The Luth. Ch. in the City of N. Y. during the First Century of its Hist," in *Luth. Ch. Rev.*, III, 204–22 (1884); A. L. Gräbner, *Geschichte der Lutherischen Kirche in America* (St. Louis, 1892); J. F. Sachse, *The German Pietists of Provincial Pa.* (privately printed, 1895) and *Justus Falckner, Mystic and Scholar* (privately printed, 1903); H. E. Jacobs, "Justus Falckner" in *Luth. Ch. Rev.*, XXIII, 159–78 (1904); M. G. G. Scherer, "Ordination Certificate of Justus Falckner" in *Luth. World Almanac*, 1924–26, pp. 44–46.]

G. H. G.

**FALLOWS, SAMUEL** (Dec. 13, 1835–Sept. 5, 1922), bishop of the Reformed Episcopal Church, and nationally known as a religious and civic leader, was born in Pendleton, Lancashire, England, the tenth child of Thomas and Anne (Ashworth) Fallows. His father was a cotton-mill operator, and Samuel's early years were spent in Pendleton, Warrington, and Manchester. Financial disaster in 1848 drove the family to America, and the lure of cheap land and golden opportunities took them to the wilds of Wisconsin, where they settled near Bird's Ruins, later the town of Marshall. Here Thomas, a weaver but no farmer, forced to borrow money at usury, was beaten from the start; but the family struggled along. Samuel adapted himself happily to pioneer conditions, and tree-felling, root-digging, and rail-splitting fostered a naturally strong constitution which sustained a strenuous life of nearly eighty-seven years. In England he had had good schooling, but good schooling was not to be had at Bird's Ruins, nor money to send him elsewhere. Determined and persistent, he secured an education, nevertheless, studying by himself, attending school here and there, paying his way by storekeeping, farm labor, and teaching, and finally graduating from the University of Wisconsin in 1859.

He had already decided to enter the Methodist ministry, and in 1858 had been received into the West Wisconsin Conference on trial. From 1859 to 1861, however, he was vice-president and principal of the so-called Galesville University. In the fall of the latter year, accompanied by his wife, Lucy, daughter of William P. and Lucy (Edwards) Huntington, whom he had married Apr. 9, 1860, he went up into the lumber region to take charge of a church at Oshkosh; but the Civil War soon took him away and made him known throughout the state. On Sept. 25, 1862, he was appointed chaplain of the 32nd Wisconsin Infantry, which office he resigned in June 1863. The following year he helped recruit the 40th Wisconsin Infantry, and became its lieutenant-colonel. On Jan. 28, 1865, he was appointed colonel of the 49th Wisconsin Infantry, and on Oct.

24, was brevetted brigadier-general for meritorious service. He had proved himself a natural leader, and his enthusiastic devotion to public welfare and human interests was generally recognized.

The next ten years he was engaged in pastoral and educational work chiefly in Wisconsin. He served two Methodist churches in Milwaukee (1865–70); was a regent of the University of Wisconsin (1866–74); and from 1870 to 1874, state superintendent of public instruction. In this last capacity his great aim was "a college education, tuition free, for every Wisconsin boy or girl who wanted it," and he succeeded in bringing the university "into practical and vital relations with the public schools" (Fallows, *post*), as a step toward an organized educational system. For a brief period (1874–75) he was president of Illinois Wesleyan University, Bloomington, leaving it to enter the Reformed Episcopal Church, partly because he was naturally inclined to authority and ritual, and also because he believed this new church was peculiarly adapted to meet the needs of the growing West. In July 1875 he became rector of St. Paul's Church, Chicago, and on July 17 of the following year was elected bishop.

For the remainder of his long career, except for a brief residence in Brooklyn in 1878, he was identified with the rapidly expanding life of Chicago. His varied activities, however, took him all over the country. Presidents and convicts were his friends. His interests ranged from prison-reform to simplified spelling. Almost every major humanitarian movement drew from his seemingly inexhaustible vitality. From 1877 to 1879 he carried on a crusade in the interests of his church, traveling twenty-seven thousand miles, and visiting England and Bermuda. Except for this period he retained the rectorship of St. Paul's until his death. For several years he edited *The Appeal*, the official organ of the Reformed Episcopal Church. He early associated himself with the temperance movement, and in 1895 established the "Home Salon" in Chicago, modeled on the typical saloon, but serving drinks of low alcoholic strength, an experiment that had wide notoriety. He founded the People's Institute on the West Side, Chicago; was for twenty-one years president of the board of managers of the Illinois State Reformatory; had a hand, as the friend of labor, in settling serious industrial disputes; was active in the Grand Army of the Republic and all patriotic enterprises, founding in 1890 the American Society of Patriotic Knowledge. In 1908 he inaugurated in Chicago a religious-healing movement. His views on this



subject had been expressed in *Science and Health from the Viewpoint of the Newest Christian Thought* (1903). Some sixteen other books were issued by him, including dictionaries and compilations. He was also editor in chief of the *Human Interest Library* (1914–15). When he was seventy-eight years old he visited China, Japan, and the Philippines, with the indorsement of President Taft, to study sociological conditions there. The World War found him as eager to serve as had the Civil War. In the last years of his life he was chairman of the Commission for the Grant Memorial, Washington, and presided at its dedication Apr. 27, 1922. The following June he spoke on "The Value of Science," at the University of Wisconsin Commencement. His career ended in Chicago a few months later, and he was buried in the Forest Home Cemetery.

[Alice K. Fallows, *Everybody's Bishop* (1927); *The Univ. of Wis.* (1900), ed. by R. G. Thwaites; *Chicago Daily Tribune*, Sept. 6, 1922.] H. E. S.

**FANEUIL, PETER** (June 20, 1700–Mar. 3, 1743), merchant, was the eldest of the eleven children of Anne (Bureau) and Benjamin Faneuil. The father was one of three brothers who came to America by way of Holland after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. They were admitted members of the Massachusetts colony Feb. 1, 1691, and were among the small number of French Huguenot refugees who were able to bring considerable property with them to this country. One brother, Andrew, settled in Boston, but Benjamin went to New Rochelle, N. Y., where Peter was born. His father died when he was eighteen. Soon after, Peter went to Boston, where his uncle Andrew had become a prosperous merchant and had risen to considerable wealth by fortunate investments in Boston real estate. Peter engaged in business and is said to have acquired some property himself and, what was more important, had become a favorite with his widowed and childless uncle. The older man had lost his wife some years before and seems to have determined that none of his numerous nephews should marry. He first selected Benjamin, the second oldest, as his heir, but on his marriage transferred his affections and changed his will in favor of Peter, who was, and always continued to be, a bachelor. During the elder Faneuil's final illness, which lasted eighteen months, Peter managed his business as well as his own. When he died in February 1738 Peter became executor and residuary legatee. Benjamin was cut off with five shillings, whereas Peter inherited one of the largest fortunes of the day, though he always proved generous to his plentiful collateral relatives. He continued as a prosperous merchant,

rolled up money, and named one of his best ships the *Jolly Bachelor*. His main claim to fame, however, is derived from his gift to the town of the building ever since known as Faneuil Hall. He had long been interested in a public market place but for some reason the people were divided in their opinion as to its necessity. He finally offered to donate one, and even on those easy terms, the town was hesitant. When on July 14, 1740, a vote was taken as to its acceptance there were only 367 ayes against 360 noes. Almost before the building was completed, Peter died, and at the first annual town meeting held in it the chief business was a eulogy on the deceased donor. John Smibert was the architect, and it was he who planned the hall to be built over the arched market. The building, which alone has perpetuated Faneuil's name and which has been so noted in the history of the nation, was almost wholly destroyed by fire in 1761. It was then rebuilt and subsequently enlarged.

[There are accounts of Faneuil and his hall in Justin Winsor's *Memorial Hist. of Boston*, II (1882), 259–67, and other town histories, but the best for both is A. E. Brown, *Faneuil Hall and Faneuil Hall Market* (1900).]

J. T. A.

**FANNIN, JAMES WALKER** (*c.* Jan. 1, 1804–Mar. 27, 1836), colonel in the Texas revolutionary army and leader of the ill-fated expedition to Goliad, was probably born on Jan. 1, 1804. His father was Dr. Isham Fannin, a Georgia planter. The boy, under the shadow of illegitimacy, was adopted by his maternal grandfather, James W. Walker, and was brought up on a plantation near Marion, Ga. On July 1, 1819, at the age of fourteen years and six months, and under the name of James F. Walker, he was admitted to West Point. His cousin, Martha Fort, whom he visited in Philadelphia, described him as a gallant, handsome, sensitive lad. He was evidently not especially devoted to his books, for when, as the result of an unfortunate quarrel with a fellow student, he ran away from West Point in November 1821, he stood sixtieth in a class of eighty-six. Some years after his return to Georgia, he was married to Minerva Fort, by whom he had two daughters. In the autumn of 1834, when his children were two and four years old, and with the assistance of funds supplied by his friends, Fannin removed to Texas, where he settled at Velasco on the Brazos River

From hints in his own letters and from the charges of his enemies, it appears that Fannin was interested in the slave-trade in Cuba. He had made at least one trip to the island, of which he said: "My last voyage from the island of Cuba (with 153) succeeded admirably." At the outbreak of the Revolution his property, which he

Fannin

offered to devote to the cause, consisted of thirty-six negro slaves, whose "native lingo," according to an unfriendly critic, yet betrayed their recent importation (quoted by Smith, *post*, p. 81). He had time for other things, however. As early as the winter of 1834–35, he was back in Mobile, trying to persuade an old army friend to aid the expected revolution. He was evidently a man of influence among his neighbors, and during the next summer he was active in the work of revolutionary committees. On Oct. 2, 1835, at Gonzales, he participated in the first skirmish of the war, and on Oct. 28, at the mission of Concepción, he distinguished himself in a brilliant engagement. On Dec. 10, he was appointed to secure supplies and volunteers in the region west of the Trinity River, a mission which he performed with energy and skill.

During the lull which followed the capture of San Antonio, Fannin became one of the eager advocates of a plan to carry the war into the enemy's country by seizing the Mexican port of Matamoras. The idea was bitterly opposed by Gov. Smith and Gen. Sam Houston; but the Council on Jan. 7, 1836, appointed Fannin their agent, with dictatorial powers, to organize such an expedition. Smith, proving obdurate, was removed, and Houston withdrew for the time on a mission to the Indians, thus leaving Texas for several critical weeks without a responsible government. The chief reason for the calamities that followed, however, was the entirely unexpected energy of Santa Anna. On Feb. 8, Fannin had established himself with 420 American volunteers at Goliad, a strong defensive position on the south bank of the San Antonio River. Nine days later, while Fannin was writing eager letters for reinforcements and for definite orders, Urrea had secured Matamoras and was already marching north. When Fannin commenced his retreat on Mar. 19, he was already too late. In the afternoon, at an unfavorable place in the open prairie, Fannin's immediate force of 200 men was overtaken by Urrea's advance. The next day, after fighting in which twenty-seven Americans were killed and many, including the commander, were severely wounded, Fannin surrendered.

The terms of surrender contained the equivocal phrase: "All the detachment shall be treated as prisoners of war and placed at the disposal of the supreme government." Urrea probably intended to interpret the phrase humanely, but by direct orders from Santa Anna, on the morning of Mar. 27, 1836, the prisoners who had been gathered together at Goliad were led out and shot. Three hundred and thirty were thus killed. Eighty-eight were spared for various reasons,

and twenty-seven escaped. Fannin was the last to be executed. He had made serious mistakes as a commander, but in a grave emergency he had proved himself a brave and generous man. Fannin's wife survived him only one year. One of his daughters lived until 1847. The other died insane in 1893.

[For the early life of Fannin, see K. H. Fort, *Memoirs of the Fort and Fannin Families* (1903), pp. 26 and 206; W. F. Brooks, *Hist. of the Fanning Family* (1905), II, 806–07; Elizabeth Brooks, *Prominent Women of Texas* (1896), p. 24; and especially a letter of Fannin's in *Southwestern Hist. Quart.* (*Quart. Texas State Hist. Asso.*), VII, 318 (pr. 1904). The West Point record of James F. Walker has been examined for this sketch by Capt. H. C. Holdridge. For his career in Texas, see Ruby Cumby Smith, "James W. Fannin, Jr., in the Texas Revolution" in *Southwestern Hist. Quart.*, XXIII, 79–90, 171–203, 271–83 (Oct. 1919, Jan., Apr. 1920); H. S. Foote, *Texas and the Texans* (1841), II, 201–18, 224–60; and the letters of one of Fannin's officers in *Southwestern Hist. Quart.*, IX, 157–209 (Jan. 1906). Jose Urrea's account in his *Diario de las Operaciones Militares* (1838), translated by Carlos E. Castañeda in *The Mexican Side of the Texan Question* (1928), is, on the whole, reliable.]

R. G. C.

**FANNING, ALEXANDER CAMPBELL WILDER** (1788–Aug. 18, 1846), soldier, the son of Barclay and Caroline Henson Orne Fanning, and a descendant of Edmund Fanning who settled at Pequot (New London), Conn., in 1653, was born in Boston, Mass. He entered the Military Academy at West Point on Apr. 14, 1809, as a cadet from that state. He graduated fifteenth in his class on Mar. 12, 1812, and was commissioned first lieutenant, 3rd Artillery. Promoted to captain Mar. 13, 1813, he was severely wounded at the capture of York, Upper Canada, Apr. 27, 1813, and distinguished himself in the repulse of the British naval forces on the St. Lawrence, Nov. 2, 1813. For his gallant defense of Fort Erie he was appointed brevet major Aug. 15, 1814. Serving with Jackson in the Seminole campaign of 1818, he acted for a time as deputy quartermaster-general and made an important reconnaissance to establish contact with the naval force in the Gulf. With a detachment of 200 men he occupied the Spanish post of St. Mark's. He was a member of the court martial which tried Robert Ambrister and Alexander Arbuthnot, and on Apr. 29, 1818, acted as provost-marshal at their execution. While commanding at St. Mark's in November 1818, he gave information about the continuance of Spanish intrigues among the hostile Indians. This information was later used by Jackson in reply to criticisms of his order to Gaines. From St. Mark's he was transferred to Ft. Gadsden, and then served successively at various Northern posts (Detroit, 1822–23; Mackinaw, 1823; Columbus, 1824), and at the artillery school at Fortress Monroe, Va. He



was appointed brevet lieutenant-colonel Aug. 15, 1824, and was commissioned major of the 4th Artillery Nov. 3, 1832.

Fanning took an active part in the Seminole War in Florida. His gallant conduct in a battle with the Indians at the Withlacoochee on Dec. 31, 1835, led to his appointment as brevet colonel. His most notable service was the defense of Camp Monroe, later Ft. Mellon, on Lake Monroe, in the heart of the hostile Indian country, against a surprise attack by the Seminoles (Feb. 8, 1837). Though creditable to Fanning and his troops, this affair convinced the commanding general, T. S. Jesup, that the whole plan of campaign in Florida was defective. After further service in rounding up the Seminoles for deportation, Fanning was first transferred to the Canadian frontier, 1840–41, and then detached on recruiting service in the Western Department. He died at Cincinnati, Ohio, Aug. 18, 1846. His wife, a Miss Fowler, died shortly after their marriage.

[W. F. Brooks, *Hist. of the Fanning Family* (1905), I, 248, 354; *Am. State Papers, Mil. Affairs*, III (1860), 96, VII (1861), 800, 832, 870; *Annals of Cong.*, 15 Cong., 2 Sess., pt. II, pp. 2176, 2180, 2198, 2242, 2277, 2302–06, 2326; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. of the U. S. Army*, I (1903), 412–13; J. T. Sprague, *The Origin, Progress, and Conclusion of the Fla. War . . .* (1848), 168–70, 223–24, 255; G. R. Fairbanks, *Hist. of Fla.* (1871), pp. 294, 305; *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Aug. 20, 1846.]

A. P. W.

**FANNING, DAVID** (*c.* 1755–Mar. 14, 1825), North Carolina Loyalist, was born at Beech Swamp, Amelia County, Va., the son of David Fanning. Other details regarding his origin are obscure, and the date of his birth is uncertain. His tombstone states that he died at the age of seventy (1825), but he himself stated that he was in his nineteenth year when he went to war in 1775. He was apprenticed to a Mr. Bryan whose harsh treatment induced him to run away, and little further is known of his early days. He is said to have been a carpenter, but in the years immediately preceding the Revolution he was trading with the Catawba Indians, and claimed to own 1,100 acres of land in Virginia (Amelia County) and two slaves. He received his training in cruelty and courage under "Bloody Bill" Cunningham, and not, as has usually been stated, under McGirth. In the dispute with England he at first took the American side, but having been robbed in his Indian trade of a considerable quantity of goods by a gang who called themselves Whigs, he went over to the British in 1775, and began his notorious career.

He signed a paper in favor of the King in May of that year and at once engaged in marauding expeditions against the Whigs. According to

his own account he was several times taken prisoner in the course of the next few years, managing always, in one way or another, to be released or to escape. Once, in June 1776, taking advantage of a proclamation of amnesty, he returned to his home, but was soon off again. Captures and escapes continued, if we can believe him, and on July 5, 1781, he was commissioned as a militia colonel by Major Craig of the British forces. According to his own statement, in April 1782 when he was on one of his expeditions, he was married to a girl at Deep River, N. C. Various exploits are attributed to him, such as his sudden descent on Pittsboro when a judicial court or court martial (accounts differ) was sitting, and his capture of all the officials of the court, July 18, 1781. A few weeks later he is said to have taken Col. Alston and thirty men in Alston's own house, and on Sept. 13, 1781, he captured Gov. Burke with his whole suite at Hillsboro. He finally retreated across South Carolina to Charleston and then to Florida, and at the end of the war was one of three who were excluded from pardon in the general amnesty act passed by the State, together with persons guilty of murder, robbery, and rape. In his *Narrative,* written in 1790 (though it was not published until 1861), he denied that he had ever committed rape or any crime not specified by himself. His extreme cruelty may in part be accounted for by a serious physical defect. He had a scalled head, which was so offensive that, as a youth, he was not permitted to eat with other people and when he grew up he wore a silk cap, his most intimate friends never being allowed to see his head uncovered. After the war he moved to New Brunswick, where he became a member of the provincial Parliament, serving from 1791 until January 1801 when he was expelled for an unknown crime for which he was later sentenced to death. He was pardoned, however, and moved to Digby, Nova Scotia, where for a time he was a colonel of militia.

[L. Sabine, *Loyalists of the Am. Revolution* (1864); *Papers of Archibald D. Murphey* (1914), vols. I, II; S. A. Ashe in *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, V (1906), 90–97; *The Narrative of Col. David Fanning . . . 1775–1783* (by himself) was printed with an Introduction by J. H. Wheeler (Richmond, 1861), reprinted by J. Sabin (New York, 1865); in *The State Records of N. C.*, XXII (1907), 180–239; and by A. W. Savary (Toronto, 1908).]

J. T. A.

**FANNING, EDMUND** (Apr. 24, 1739–Feb. 28, 1818), North Carolina Loyalist, great-grandson of Edmund Fanning who settled at New London in 1653 and grandson of Thomas Fanning of Groton, Conn., was the son of Capt. James and Hannah (Smith) Fanning of Riverhead, Long Island, N. Y. He was born in Suffolk County, Long Island, graduated from Yale in 1757 and won a Berkeley Scholarship; moved to Hillsboro, Orange County, N. C., where he studied law and in 1762 was admitted to the bar. He at once made his way and within three years was holding such offices as colonel of the militia and register of deeds. He was a cultivated man and soon became a prime favorite with Gov. Tryon who was appointed in 1765, though Fanning did not become, as has often been stated, his son-in-law. In 1766 he was elected to the Assembly and appointed judge of the superior court for the Salisbury district, serving in both capacities for five years. His career, though notable, was a stormy one and his alleged extortions as register have been given as one of the causes of the Regulator movement in the colony. Some of the charges of extortion made against him break down completely on examination and it is not unlikely that they were used to cloak the real objections to him, which were his relations with the governor and his immoral private life. It is difficult to sift and appraise all the evidence but several facts emerge. One was that he was thoroughly hated by the common people and had an extremely bad reputation. On the other hand evidence against him at least partially breaks down on investigation, and after the war his career was distinguished and he received many honors not only from English but from American institutions of learning.

In connection with the Regulator insurrection, his house was fired into by the mob, in April 1768, and he lost the next election, but Tryon at once gave Hillsboro the right of representation and Fanning regained his seat in the Assembly. In September 1770 the Regulators broke up the session of the superior court at Hillsboro, physically maltreated Fanning, and burned his home with all its contents. Without the support of the Governor he would have been helpless, and when Tryon was transferred to the governorship of New York, Fanning went with him as private secretary. He appealed to the legislature of North Carolina for compensation for his losses but without success. He soon received, however, lucrative offices in his new colony. Among these may be mentioned that of surrogate of the City of New York, which he held from 1771, and that of surveyor-general of the Province, to which he was appointed in 1774. With the outbreak of hostilities he became an ardent Loyalist and raised and commanded a corps of troops known as the Associated Refugees or the King's American Regiment of Foot, which acquired a bad reputation for cruelty. He was in active service throughout the war and was twice wounded. In 1779 North Carolina confiscated all his property in that state and shortly before peace was

declared he moved to Nova Scotia where in September 1783 he was made councillor and lieutenant-governor. In 1786 he became lieutenant-governor of Prince Edward Island, where charges of tyranny were preferred against him by the people. These were investigated by the Privy Council in England and dismissed in August 1792. At Point Pleasant, near Halifax, Nov. 30, 1785, he married Phoebe Maria Burns, a woman much younger than himself, by whom he had a son and three daughters. He appears to have always had strong influence in England and in December 1782 was made colonel in the British army, becoming major-general in October 1793, lieutenant-general in June 1799, and general in April 1808. In May 1804 he resigned his post of lieutenant-governor, his resignation becoming effective in July 1805, and in 1813 he moved to England, to spend his last years in London, where he died.

[*The Colonial Records of North Carolina,* esp. vols. VII and VIII (1890); M. D. Haywood, *Gov. William Tryon* (1903); Lorenzo Sabine, *Loyalists of the Am. Revolution* (1864); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. II (1896); A. B. Warburton, *A Hist. of Prince Edward Island* (1923); W. F. Brooks, *Hist. of the Fanning Family* (2 vols., 1905); British Army List, 1810.] J. T. A.

**FANNING, EDMUND** (July 16, 1769–Apr. 23, 1841), sea-captain, explorer, promoter, was born at Stonington, Conn., the son of Gilbert and Huldah (Palmer) Fanning and younger brother of Nathaniel Fanning [*q.v.*]. The "Pathfinder of the Pacific" was the nephew and namesake of Gen. Edmund Fanning [*q.v.*] of the British army. After a brief schooling, at the age of fourteen, he shipped as cabin boy on a coaster. He had risen to mate when he married Sarah Sheffield of Stonington on June 14, 1790. His first experience with the South Seas came in 1792 when he was first mate on a sealing voyage to the South Shetlands. In 1793, a cargo of flour which he was taking to France was seized by the English. Later that year, he received his first command, a West Indian brig. As the nephew of a British general, he twice received special favors when overhauled, and he declined the offer of a commission in the British navy. Ten years later, he also declined the proffered command of a new American frigate. Fanning's real prominence dates from the cruise of the 93-ton ship *Betsey* under his command in 1797–98. Setting out from New York with no cargo except a few trinkets for trading he rounded Cape Horn, secured a full load of sealskins near Juan Fernandez, and rescued a missionary in the Marquesas. On June 11, 1798, he discovered the island which still bears his name. During the next four days, he



also discovered Washington (New York) and Palmyra islands to the northwest. These three, with others adjacent, have received the general name of Fanning's Islands. They are about 2,000 miles due south of Hawaii, just above the equator, and have importance as cable stations, Great Britain owning Fanning's Island and the United States, Palmyra. Proceeding to Canton, Fanning exchanged his sealskins for a cargo of teas, silks, etc., which sold for $120,467 after he had returned to New York around the Cape of Good Hope. The capital outlay for the voyage had been only $7,867; the owners' net profit was $53,-118 and Fanning himself received more than $15,000. This experience convinced him of the possibilities of the South Sea trade, and he devoted the remainder of his life to promoting it. He lived most of the time in New York, occasionally visiting Stonington where he had a shipyard. As agent for a group of New York capitalists, he promoted and acted as agent for more than seventy expeditions to the South Seas, occasionally taking part himself. He saw that valuable China cargoes could be secured in exchange for sealskins, which cost nothing but a few weeks' labor, or for sandalwood, pearls, tortoise shell, bêche-de-mer, etc., which could be secured from the natives of the islands for a few trinkets. His energetic promotion of exploration arose chiefly from the desire for new fields to exploit, since ruthless slaughter quickly cleaned out the seal rookeries. He studied the charts of early Dutch navigators, experimented with new types of naval architecture, and was a persistent propagandist for both private and official exploration. Some of his expeditions included "scientific gentlemen." His main argument was that increased returns in China imports would more than pay for the cost of the expeditions. This was not always the case. A captain and crew sent to the Fiji Islands for sandalwood in 1803 fell victims to the cannibals. In 1804, however, Edmund's brother, Henry Fanning, rediscovered the Crozet Islands with their extensive seal rookeries. A projected exploring expedition in 1812 was abandoned at the declaration of war. Fanning claims that the regular stationing of American warships on the west coast of South America resulted from his protests at his detention in the *Volunteer* by Chilean officials in 1816. He was agent for the ambitious expedition under Pendleton and Palmer in 1829, in the course of which Palmer Land (Palmer Archipelago) south of Cape Horn was discovered, but the owners lost more than $25,000. Fanning unsuccessfully petitioned Congress for reimbursement in 1830 and 1833, arguing that the expedition was for the general

good of the nation. The publication of his memoirs, *Voyages Around the World*, etc. (1833), was effective propaganda and doubtless helped to secure the authorization of the official naval South Seas exploration expedition (1838–42) led by Lieut. Charles Wilkes [*q.v.*]. Fanning, doubtless hurt at not having been called upon for advice or participation, petitioned Congress in 1840 for a loan of $150,000 to undertake a private expedition of his own, but nothing came of his petition. He died at New York the following year, of a broken heart, it is said, four days after the death of his wife. He was survived by a son and daughter, one son having died in infancy.

[The principal source is Fanning's autobiographical *Voyages*, etc. (1833). The second edition (1838) and subsequent editions bore the title: *Voyages to the South Seas, Indian and Pacific Oceans*, etc. A somewhat abbreviated edition was published in 1924 by the Marine Research Society with the title *Voyages and Discoveries in the South Seas*. Additional information is given in his three petitions, *House Ex. Doc. 61, 22* Cong., 1 Sess.; *Sen. Doc. 10, 23* Cong., 1 Sess.; *House Ex. Doc. 57, 26* Cong., 1 Sess. Genealogical data and a short biography are given in W. F. Brooks, *Hist. of the Fanning Family* (2 vols., 1905), I, 255, II, 739–57. There is a short sketch in D. C. Seitz, *Uncommon Americans* (1925), pp. 221–30, with a small portrait on fly-leaf.]
R. G. A.

**FANNING, JOHN THOMAS** (Dec. 31, 1837–Feb. 6, 1911), hydraulic engineer, was a direct descendant in the seventh generation of Edmund Fanning who settled at New London, Conn., in 1653, lived for some years on Fisher's Island, and then became one of the original proprietors of Stonington. The son of John Howard Fanning, a skilled mechanic and contractor for buildings, by his first wife, Elizabeth Pridde, John Thomas Fanning was born at Norwich, Conn., and resided in New England until 1886, after which time he made his home in Minneapolis. He studied architecture and engineering and began his practise in Norwich, where he acted for eight years as city engineer, planning the city's water supply and its cemetery. This work was interrupted by the Civil War, during which he served as a member of the 3rd Connecticut Volunteers and later as field officer in the 3rd Regiment, Connecticut Militia. At the close of the war he was retired with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. On June 11, 1865, he married Maria Louise Bensley of Rhode Island. After the war he resumed practise in New England, first at Norwich, and later at Manchester, N. H. He began to specialize in hydraulics and constructed the water-supply system at Manchester. He soon found his services were in demand all over New England and in New York State for the solution of hydraulic and water-supply problems. In 1881 he published a *Report on a Water Supply for New York and Other Cities of the Hudson Valley* (supplemented in 1884). In 1881, also, he made a report on Lake George as a source of water supply for New York City (see *Sanitary Engineer*, Apr. 6, 1882). In 1884 he published a pamphlet on *Homestead and Suburban Sewerage*. His best-known work, however, was *A Practical Treatise on Water Supply Engineering* (1877). This book was of such practical value that, in revised and enlarged form, it had run into sixteen editions by 1906. In 1885 Fanning went to Minneapolis to report on a power development of the St. Anthony Falls, and after that time, with his residence in Minneapolis, he acted as consulting engineer on many large water-power projects in the West, most notable of which were those on the Weenatahee River, the Missouri River at Great Falls, Mont., at Helena, Mont., at Spokane, Wash., and on the Mississippi River at Minneapolis. He continued, however, to go to all parts of the country to solve city water-supply problems. Some of the cities which employed him on the planning and construction of their water supply and purification systems, in addition to Minneapolis, were Des Moines, Omaha, and Birmingham, Ala. He also made a report on an additional water supply for Rockford, Ill.

Fanning had the reputation for being unusually generous with the help and time he was always ready to give to the younger members of his profession. He served for a year as president of the American Waterworks Association shortly after it came into existence, and was consulting engineer for a time for the Great Northern Railroad, the St. Paul, Minneapolis & Manitoba Railroad, and the Minneapolis Union Railways. In addition to his text-book on hydraulic and water-supply engineering, he contributed technical papers on the subject to the *Transactions* of the American Society of Civil Engineers.

[W. F. Brooks, *Hist. of the Fanning Family* (2 vols., 1905); *Encyc. of Biog. of Minn.* (1900), pp. 266–67; *Engineering News*, Feb. 16, Mar. 2, 1911; *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; Fanning's own writings.] E. Y.

**FANNING, NATHANIEL** (May 31, 1755–Sept. 30, 1805), privateersman, naval officer, was born in Stonington, Conn., the eldest of the eight sons of Gilbert and Huldah (Palmer) Fanning. He was descended in the fifth generation from Edmund Fanning, of Limerick, Ireland, who came to Pequot (New London) in 1653 after being "transplanted" in the Cromwellian confiscations. Like his seven brothers, including Edmund [*q.v.*], the explorer, Nathaniel went to sea at an early age, "never having had but barely a common education." Most of his life is obscure

except for the years 1778–83. He spent those five years in sea fighting, principally in privateering under Franco-American auspices, incidentally serving three terms in British prisons. In 1778, his third privateering voyage, in the *Angelica* of Boston, resulted in capture and thirteen months' detention in Forton Prison near Portsmouth. Finally exchanged, he reached L'Orient, where he accepted a position as midshipman and private secretary to John Paul Jones on the *Bonhomme Richard*. This was a private arrangement rather than a regular naval appointment. Fanning's only claim to fame came as a result of the fight with the *Serapis* on Sept. 22, 1779. He was captain of the maintop, from which one man crawled out on the yard-arm and dropped a well-aimed hand grenade through an open hatch of the enemy frigate. It exploded a large quantity of powder, killed some twenty men, and did much to bring about the American victory. Fanning admits that as he waded around in gore after the battle, he had intimations of immortal fame. His bravery made him a particular favorite with Jones, who recommended him to Congress for promotion. He served under Jones in the *Ariel* until December 1780, then, with most of the other officers, refused to continue under his command. He charges that Jones frequently kicked his officers and cites numerous instances of brutality, unfairness, and immorality. Fanning thereupon drifted into French service. During 1781, he cruised as second in command of a Morlaix privateer, spending six weeks in a British prison. Fanning invested his profits in a cargo for the West Indies but a shipwreck left him penniless. He became a naturalized French citizen and early in 1782 made two trips to London. He claims that on one of these, he was sounding out the sentiment for peace, while on the other, he carried informal peace proposals from the French Court to Shelburne and others. He made several further cruises, commanding French privateers, and on one occasion sailed straight through the British Channel Fleet pursued by a frigate. He was captured twice again by the British but speedily released. He finally accepted a commission as lieutenant in the French navy, but gave it up at the close of the war, when he returned to America. On Nov. 21, 1784, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Oliver Smith. They had six children, all but one of whom died in infancy. During the next twenty years, Fanning seems to have lived part of the time in New York and part in Stonington. His *Narrative* implies that he continued to follow the sea. On Dec. 5, 1804, he accepted a commission as lieutenant in the United States navy (E. W. Callahan, *List of Officers of the Navy of the United States*, 1901, p. 188), and ten months later, he died of yellow fever while in command of the naval station at Charleston, S. C. His *Narrative of the Adventures of an American Naval Officer*, evidently written in 1801, was published anonymously in 1806, probably by his brother Edmund. In an edition of 1808, the title was changed to *Memoirs of the Life of Captain Nathaniel Fanning*. The *Narrative* gives the best first-hand account of the fight with the *Serapis* and also shows how closely French and American interests were mixed in privateering. It reveals Jones in an unfavorable light and the tone is strongly anti-British throughout. Fanning, it is said, would boast of his exploits by the hour whenever he could find an audience. He had the reputation of being a great dandy in his dress. His picture shows a stocky figure with a round face, high cheekbones and a scowling expression.

[The best account of Fanning's fighting career is the *Narrative*, critically edited for the Naval Hist. Soc. (*Pubs.*, vol. II), in 1912 by John S. Barnes, who points out the false quotations in A. C. Buell, *Paul Jones* (2 vols., 1900), I, pp. 218–20, etc. The most complete secondary account of Fanning's life, with genealogical details, is W. F. Brooks, *Hist. of the Fanning Family* (2 vols., 1905), I, 249; II, 715–38, with portrait.]

R. G. A.

**FANNING, TOLBERT** (May 10, 1810–May 3, 1874), minister of the Disciples of Christ, educator, editor, was born in Cannon County, Tenn., the son of William and Nancy (Bromley) Fanning, Virginians of English descent. When he was about six years old his parents moved to Lauderdale County, Ala., and much of his youth was spent in the cotton fields. His educational advantages were limited, for the family was large and not well-to-do; but he was eager for knowledge and exerted himself in every possible way to obtain it. In 1832 he was able to enter the University of Nashville from which he graduated in 1835. He had begun evangelistic work some six years before, however, and during his summer vacation in 1833 he made an extensive preaching tour with Alexander Campbell [*q.v.*], and another in 1836, during which they visited Ohio, New York, Canada, and New England. On Dec. 25, 1836, he married Charlotte Fall of Nashville, a former wife, Sarah Shreeve of Nicholasville, Ky., having died shortly after their marriage.

The following year, with Mrs. Fanning, who was a teacher, he opened a boarding and day school for girls at Franklin, Tenn., which in January 1840 they moved to "Elm Crag," a farm about five miles from Nashville. Interested in the advancement of agriculture, he imported some of the best breeds of cattle, sheep, hogs, and

horses. He was also a prominent promoter of the Tennessee Agricultural Society, and from 1840 to June 1844 was one of the editors of the *Agriculturist and Journal of the State and County Societies*, "Devoted to the Improvement of the Soil and Mind." Due to his own early struggles, the desire to make education easier for impecunious young men became one of the chief motives of his life, and in January 1843 he opened on his own farm an agricultural school, called the first institution of its kind in the country (*Agriculturist*, January 1843) in which practical instruction in agriculture was combined with the regular academic subjects. The school's success exceeded the expectations of its founder and led to the establishment of Franklin College, which, chartered in 1844, was opened in January 1845 under his presidency. Within six months it had over one hundred and fifty students. Manual training and agriculture were given an important place in the curriculum. The students devoted from two to five hours a day to these branches, and the profits accruing went to them. The institution flourished until the Civil War, though after a period the manual training was curtailed because of difficulty in securing instructors. Young men expecting to enter the ministry were charged no tuition, and it became a leading school among the Disciples of the South. The burning of the main building as the College was reopening after the war brought its existence to a close. The Fannings then bought Minerva College, a nearby school for girls, and conducted it under the name of Hope Institute until Tolbert Fanning's death. He was keenly interested in the natural sciences, and was something of a chemist, botanist, geologist, and conchologist. His carefully classified collection of shells was said to be one of the best in the South. During 1846, assisted by the faculty of Franklin College, he published the *Naturalist and Journal of Natural History, Agriculture, Education and Literature*. In 1850, with Charles Foster, he started the *Naturalist*, which the following year was merged with the *Southern Agriculturist*.

In connection with his other activities, he preached regularly and was a successful editor of religious publications. In 1844 he began the *Christian Review* which some years later became the *Christian Magazine*. From 1854 until its suspension prior to the war, and from 1866 to 1868 he was associated with William and then David Lipscomb in the editorship of the *Gospel Advocate*, a widely circulated paper which had much influence among the Disciples. After 1872 he published the *Religious Historian*. With Benjamin Franklin [*q.v.*] he belonged to the conservative group of Disciples who opposed organized cooperation. Some years subsequent to his death, which occurred after a "violent illness" of four days, Mrs. Fanning deeded Hope Institute to trustees who, according to her wish, established the Fanning Orphan School, which has perpetuated her husband's interest in the training of the young down to the present time.

[W. W. Clayton, *Hist. of Davidson County, Tenn.* (1880); W. T. Moore, *The Living Pulpit of the Christian Church* (1869) and *A Comprehensive Hist. of the Disciples of Christ* (1909); John T. Brown, *Churches of Christ* (1904); Jas. E. Scobey, *Franklin College and Its Influence* (1906); Emma Page, *The Life Work of Mrs. Charlotte Fanning* (1907); Patrick H. Mell, "Industrial Education in the South," in *The South in the Building of the Nation*, vol. X (1909); John Wooldridge, *Hist. of Nashville, Tenn*, (1890), ch. xiv, *passim*; *Republican Banner* (Nashville), May 5, 1874; certain information from Miss Charlotte Fanning, Nashville, Tenn.] H. E. S.



**FARABEE, WILLIAM CURTIS** (Feb. 2, 1865–June 24, 1925), anthropologist, ethnologist, was born in Washington County, Pa., the son of Samuel H. and Susannah (Henkins) Farabee. He attended the state normal school, graduated from Waynesburg College in 1894, and after a period of teaching, during which (on Mar. 12, 1897) he was married to Sylvia Manilla Holdren of McArthur, Ohio, he entered the graduate school of Harvard University, where he received his doctor's degree from the division of anthropology in 1903. The same year he was appointed an instructor in anthropology at Harvard. Apart from two relatively minor studies undertaken in Coahoma County, Miss. (1901 and 1902), and an expedition to Iceland (1905) his first opportunity for field work came through the DeMilhau expedition organized under the auspices of the Peabody Museum for ethnological exploration in Peru. As the leader of this expedition (1906–09), Farabee worked in Peru east of the Andes and along the Andean plateau, mapping the region, recording and collecting among the Indians, and studying the archeological evidences of culture in the Andes and northwestern Bolivia. In 1913 the University of Pennsylvania appointed him curator of the section of American anthropology in the University Museum, and placed him in charge of an expedition organized to study the Indian tribes of the Amazon Basin. From March 1913 to June 1916, he explored that region. He traversed and mapped previously unknown country in southern British Guiana, and traced from source to mouth the hitherto indeterminate course of the Corentine River, the boundary between the Guianas. He recorded the cultural and somatic character of the Arawak and Carib tribes in northern Brazil, in British Guiana, and by the headwaters and main tribu-

taries of the Amazon. He collected the pottery, basketry, and feather work of thirty tribes, and made unique collections of ancient handiwork in the pottery and burial-urns excavated on Marajo, Fortelaza, Ilho do Paros, and the Comotins River. Two published studies, *The Central Arawaks* (1918) and *The Central Caribs* (1924), and the Amazon exhibits in the University Museum show the skill and thoroughness with which he amassed and analysed this material. His own narrative of a part of the exploration was published under the title, "A Pioneer in Amazonia" in the *Bulletin of the Geographical Society of Philadelphia*, April 1917. In the interval between the Amazon expedition and his final research in South America, he acted as the ethnologist of the American Peace Commission at Versailles and represented the United States at the centennial of Peruvian independence, held in Lima in 1921.

In 1922, he undertook further field work in South America to study the cultures of the Inca and Megalithic empires. The malignant fever of the Amazon had told on his health, however, and after three months of archeologic work in Peru, he became ill with inflammatory dysentery. Despite the nearly continuous need of rest and medical attention, however, he worked for more than a year in South America. He made detailed drawings of Inca and pre-Inca ruins in the Pisco and Ica valleys and at Lake Titicaca; secured magnificent collections of pottery and textiles through excavations in the Nazca Valley, at Sabania, Pisco, and Puntillo; and took notes for a comprehensive study of the Araucanian Indians of central Chile. In the fall of 1923, he returned to Pennsylvania, with pernicious anemia, and after an illness of two years he died.

Of Farabee's many writings, those issued by the University Museum are listed in the *Museum Journal* (June 1925). His other published papers include, *inter alia*, contributions to the *Papers of the Peabody Museum* (vols. III and X, 1905 and 1922); *Science* (January 1903); *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society* (vol. LVI, 1917); and the *American Journal of Physical Anthropology* (vol. I, 1918). By temperament as well as by training, he was fitted to deal with the delicate human situations involved in experimental ethnology. He possessed the gift of analysis and exact observation, and also a love of music and art; the precise and impulsive elements harmonized in him, forming a buoyant, sensitive, genial, and rigorously upright character which drew and held men everywhere. Through his personal contacts, in Peru and the Amazon country he developed the mutual goodwill of Indian and white man and exerted an influence toward strengthening the confidence between the United States and South American governments. Through writing and pioneer research, he defined the field of South American ethnology and brought new data to bear on the central problems of anthropology.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; *Museum Jour.* (Phila.), 1925; *Art and Archæology*, July 1925; *Am. Jour. Archæology*, July–Sept. 1925; *Nature*, Sept. 1925; *Geog. Review*, Oct. 1925; *Am. Jour. Phys. Anthropology*, Oct.–Dec. 1925; "The Farabee Expedition," *Bull. Pan Am. Union*, Mar. 1917; "Dr. Farabee's Last Journey," *Museum Jour.*, June 1926; Farabee's own writings, and certain information from Mrs. Farabee.] D. P. C.



**FARAN, JAMES JOHN** (Dec. 29, 1808–Dec. 12, 1892), politician, editor, was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, the son of Charles P. and Phœbe K. Faran. His early education was acquired in the public schools of his native city and later completed at Miami University. Upon his graduation in 1831 young Faran entered the law office of Judge O. M. Spencer under whose guidance he received his legal training. In 1833 he was admitted to the bar and began to practise law. His deep interest in public affairs soon made him a factor in the political life of his community and state. He was elected as a Democrat to the Ohio House of Representatives in 1835. In 1837 and again in 1838 he was re-elected and during the session of 1838 he served as speaker. His dignity, courtesy, and fairness made him an excellent presiding officer and gained for him an enviable reputation. In 1839 he was elected to the Ohio Senate and was re-elected in 1841 and 1842. From 1841 to 1843, as speaker, he again demonstrated his parliamentary ability. In 1844 he was elected to represent Hamilton County in Congress and was returned in 1846. While serving in this capacity he voted for the Wilmot Proviso restricting the limits of slavery. At the close of his second term he voluntarily retired from public life and devoted himself to editing the *Cincinnati Enquirer* which he, together with Washington McLean, had purchased in 1844. As early as 1834 Faran began to write editorials for the *Democratic Reporter* which were published during the heated congressional race between Robert T. Lytle and Bellamy Storer. Ten years later he became one of the proprietors of the *Cincinnati Enquirer* and retained his connection until 1881. Under his editorial supervision the paper became a powerful Democratic organ not only in Hamilton County but throughout the state. He was a vigorous and ready writer, and in his editorials he expounded the principles of Jeffersonian Democracy. In 1854 he was appointed by Gov. Medill

one of the commissioners to supervise the erection of the present State House. The following year he was the Democratic nominee for mayor of Cincinnati and after one of the most bitter and exciting campaigns ever known in the city he defeated the Know-Nothing candidate, James D. Taylor, proprietor of the *Cincinnati Times*. During the administration of President Buchanan he was appointed postmaster of Cincinnati but was removed before the expiration of his term because he conscientiously sympathized with Stephen A. Douglas on the Kansas-Nebraska question. This brought to a close his public life. Although he was frequently urged by his friends to allow his name to be suggested for the governorship and other high positions, he preferred to remain in retirement. In 1840 he married Angelina Russell, daughter of Robert Russell of Columbus, Ohio. For more than half a century Faran was a conspicuous figure in Ohio politics. His tall, erect form never failed to attract attention, while his integrity, frankness, firm convictions, and facile pen made him a man of influence in the affairs of his city and state.

[Charles T. Greve, *Centennial Hist. of Cincinnati* (1904), II, 291–92; W. A. Taylor, *Ohio in Congress* (1899), pp. 188–89; *Biog. Cyc. and Portrait Gallery of Ohio*, V (1895), 1194; *Cincinnati Enquirer, Cincinnati Commercial Gazette, Cincinnati Times-Star*, Dec. 13, 1892.] R. C. M.

**FARGO, WILLIAM GEORGE** (May 20, 1818–Aug. 3, 1881), expressman, was descended from Welsh ancestors who settled in Connecticut between 1670 and 1680, and lived there for five generations. William Fargo, of the fourth generation, fought in the battle of Yorktown. His son, William C., at sixteen (1807), went "west" to Pompey, N. Y., and was wounded at the battle of Queenstown in the war of 1812. He married Tacy Strong, and William George Fargo was the eldest of their twelve children. At thirteen, twice a week he rode a mail route of thirty miles. For the next eleven years he helped in a village inn, worked in a grocery store, failed as a grocery owner himself, and was the first freight agent at Auburn on the newly completed Auburn & Syracuse Railroad. Meantime, in January 1840, he married Anna H. Williams of Pompey. In 1842 he became messenger for Pomeroy & Company, the express firm between Albany and Buffalo, and the next year was their agent in Buffalo. In 1844 he became messenger for Wells & Company, of which he was one of the three owners, the first express concern west of Buffalo.

This western service joined, in 1850, with two firms operating between Albany and Buffalo to form the American Express Company, with Wells as president and Fargo as secretary. The service had already been extended to Chicago, Milwaukee, Cincinnati, St. Louis, Galena, and Dubuque. In 1852, to meet the demand for transportation to and from the gold diggings, Wells, Fargo & Company was organized for express business to California. Through its friendly relations with the American Express Company, the new firm could offer quick transportation to New York and Boston and to Europe. The Adams Company [see Adams, Alvin], which some years earlier had established service between California and the Gulf, succumbed to financial difficulties in 1855 and left Wells, Fargo & Company in control of the field. Their expresses carried gold-dust, mail, packages, and passengers and conducted the necessary banking business for the community.

The profit realized in the express business during the Civil War led to the organization of competing companies, and in the post-war period, several combinations resulted. In the West, in 1866, a general consolidation of mail stages and express companies from the Missouri to the Pacific was effected by the California legislature and incorporated as Wells, Fargo & Company, but the business showed no profits, and with the completion of the Union Pacific Railroad, the stage lines were dropped. In 1869 a merger of Wells, Fargo & Company with the newly organized Pacific Express Company, a relic of the Adams interest in California, led to over-capitalization at $15,000,000, later reduced to $5,000,000. Meanwhile, in the East, the Merchants Union Express Company, one of the new organizations, became so powerful that in 1868 the American Express Company was compelled to incorporate with it on equal terms in the American Merchants Union Express Company of which Fargo became the president. In 1873 the name was changed to the American Express Company again. The task of retrenchment in a period of post-war deflation and comparative stagnation of business was a challenge to Fargo, and its accomplishment was a tribute to his ability.

Fargo had some part in the local politics of Buffalo, which was his residence until his death. He was the Democratic war mayor of his city, serving two terms, 1862–66, but was defeated as candidate for the state Senate in 1871. He seems to have been a man of commanding presence, genial, popular, conciliatory, interested in his employees and evoking devotion from them. Had he lived in England he might well have won a title and a seat in Parliament. Six of his brothers and one brother-in-law were associated with him in the express business. Of the brothers, James Congdell Fargo (1829–1915) and Charles

Fargo (1831–1900) were the most extensively concerned.

[Alexander L. Stimson, *Hist. of the Express Companies* (1858); *Hist. of the Express Business* (1881); Henry Wells, *Sketch of Rise, Progress and Present Condition of the Express System* (1864); J. J. Giblin, *Record of the Fargo Family Compiled for James Francis Fargo* (1907); article on W. G. Fargo by Francis F. Fargo in *Mag. of Western Hist.*, Apr. 1886; *Encyc. of Contemporary Biog. of N. Y.*, vol. IV (1885); Buffalo Directory, 1844; obituaries in *Buffalo Commercial Advertiser* and *Buffalo Morning Express*, both of Aug. 4, 1881.]

E. H—n.

**FARIBAULT, JEAN BAPTISTE** (Oct. 29, 1775–Aug. 20, 1860), pioneer, was a typical son of the Northwest, coming thither from Canada in fur-trading days and living to see the founding of the states of Iowa, Wisconsin, and Minnesota, where at his advent only Indians had roamed. Faribault's father, Barthélemy, was Royal notary during the French régime; after marrying Catherine Amable Véronneau he settled at Berthier, Quebec province, where their son was born. Jean Baptiste had a good education in the village schools, was destined for a mercantile career, and spent several years at Quebec in the store of a prominent merchant. Adventure appealed to the youth and he desired to go to sea; since his family opposed this plan he was apprenticed (1796) to the North West Fur Company and sent out to its posts in Illinois where he first traded with Potawatomi tribesmen. About 1800 Faribault was assigned to a trading-station among the Sioux on the upper Des Moines River where he had numerous adventures and was once almost assassinated by a jealous half-breed. Later his post was at Little Rapids on the Minnesota River; here in 1805 he took as wife Pélagie, a Sioux daughter of Joseph Hanse or Ainse of Mackinac. Their son Alexander was born the next year, and not long afterwards Faribault withdrew from the North West Fur Company and built a home at Prairie du Chien, where he engaged in the lead trade with Julien Dubuque. He also opened a farm near the village. It was claimed that he favored the Americans during the War of 1812; documents prove, however, that he was in the British militia in the attack in 1814 on Prairie du Chien (*Wisconsin Historical Collections*, IX, 1882, p. 262). At the close of the war he prepared to remove to Lord Selkirk's colony on Red River of the North, but finally decided to become a naturalized American. This same year (1817) a priest visited Prairie du Chien and Faribault had his wife and children baptized (St. Gabriel parish register, 1817). Two years later, at the instance of American army officers he took his family to the vicinity of Fort Snelling at the mouth of the Minnesota River. There he opened a farm on an island, which was submerged by a flood in 1822. The same year he entered the Columbia Fur Company and continued to trade with the Sioux, with headquarters at Little Rapids. When he was wounded in 1836 his wife walked from her home at Mendota to the Little Rapids post in order to give him care.

Faribault was a patron of the church and aided Father Galtier, the first priest in Minnesota, to build a mission house. He was popular with all groups of pioneers and influential with the Indians, who called him Cha-pah-sin-tay (Beaver's Tail). By his influence with the Sioux he maintained peace for many years between them and the pioneers. The city of Faribault, Minn., was named for his son Alexander, but a county in the state obtained its name from the elder Faribault. He died at his daughter's home in St. Paul.

[Faribault's biography, written soon after his death by his friend H. H. Sibley and based in part on autobiographical notes left by Faribault, is in *Minn. Hist. Soc. Colls., III* (1880), 168–79. For a brief sketch, see *Ibid.*, XIV (1912), 216. His French biographer is Joseph Tassé, *Les Canadiens de l'Ouest* (1878), I, 308–35. See also, Pierre-Georges Roy, *La Famille Faribault* (1913); W. W. Folwell, *A Hist. of Minn.*, I (1921), 437; *Wis. Hist. Colls.*, IX (1882). Pike met him on the upper Mississippi in 1804, see Elliott Coues, *The Expedition of Zebulon Montgomery Pike* (1895), I, 76.]

L. P. K.



**FARLEY, HARRIET** (Feb. 18, 1817–Nov. 12, 1907), editor, author, for many years prominent in the factory life of Lowell, Mass., was of old New England stock, the daughter of Rev. Stephen and Lucy (Saunders) Farley, and was born in Claremont, N. H., where her father was pastor of the Congregational church. He moved to Atkinson, N. H., when Harriet was six years old, there joining to pastoral labors the principalship of an academy. She was well trained in the common-school subjects, French, drawing, and ornamental needle-work, and early displayed a lively interest in literature and composition. The family was large, one of the children was an epileptic, the mother was afflicted with a disease that affected both body and mind, and Harriet herself suffered severely from asthma and was thought to be consumptive. At the age of fourteen it was necessary for her to help support herself, and she stated later that at one time or another, she had "plaited palm-leaf and straw, bound shoes, taught school and worked at tailoring." The respectable profession of teaching she was expected to follow was repugnant to her, and being of independent, aggressive disposition, she went to Lowell, Mass., and as a mill-hand supported herself and contributed liberally to the needs of her family.

Many of her associates, like herself, were from country homes, ambitious, and eager for cultiva-

tion. Improvement Circles for their benefit were organized in the town, and out of one of these, conducted by a Universalist minister, Rev. Abel C. Thomas, came the *Lowell Offering,* a periodical destined to bring her into prominence both in this country and abroad. Its contents consisted exclusively of contributions from girl-workers in the Lowell mills. As a regular monthly it began in 1841 and was issued under the supervision of Mr. Thomas until October 1842, when it was taken over by Harriet Farley and Harriot Curtis. For a year they employed William Schouler to publish it, and then themselves became editors, publishers, and proprietors. It attracted much attention as indicative of the character and possibilities of American mill operatives; interested Harriet Martineau; was reviewed in the London *Athenæum;* and a compilation from its contents, entitled *Mind Amongst the Spindles,* with an introduction by Charles Knight, was published in England in 1844. Miss Farley issued a volume of her own contributions, *Shells from the Strand of the Sea of Genius,* three years later. At the end of 1845 the magazine was discontinued, but in September 1847 Miss Farley revived it under the title, *The New England Offering.* Only one copy was issued until April 1848, after which it appeared regularly until March 1850. In the latter year, remarks reflecting on New England mill conditions by Senator Jeremiah Clemens of Alabama incited her to publish a pamphlet, *Operatives' Reply to Hon. Jere. Clemens, being a Sketch of Factory Life and Factory Enterprise,* etc. She was also the editor of *Discourses and Essays on Theological and Speculative Topics* (1851), by her father, Stephen Farley, and author of *Happy Nights at Hazel Nook* (1852). In 1854 she married John Intaglio Donlevy (d. 1872), an inventor, and resided in New York. She herself lived to be ninety, dying in that city at the Home for Incurables. She is said to have lectured on "The Laws of Life, or Hints for the Determination of Sex," and in 1880 published *Fancy's Frolics; or Christmas Stories Told in a Happy Home (Hazelnook) in New England.*

[Autobiographical editorial appeared in the *Lowell Offering* for July and Aug. 1845; and the article in Sarah J. Hale's *Woman's Record; or, Sketches of all Distinguished Women* (1853) is largely autobiographical. See also Harriet H. Robinson, *Loom and Spindle, or Life Among the Early Mill Girls with a Sketch of "The Lowell Offering" and Some of its Contributors* (1898); F. W. Coburn, *Hist. of Lowell and Its People* (1920), II, ch. xiv; *Athenæum* (London), Aug. 28, 1841, and Aug. 17, 1844; Lucy Larcom, "Among Lowell Mill-Girls," *Atlantic Mo.,* Nov. 1881; Lucy Larcom, *A New Eng. Girlhood* (1889); *Who's Who in America,* 1906–07; *Rev. of Revs.* (N. Y.), Dec. 1907.] H. E. S.

**FARLEY, JOHN MURPHY** (Apr. 20, 1842–Sept. 17, 1918), Roman Catholic cardinal, archbishop of New York, was born at Newtown-Hamilton, County Armagh, Ireland, of plain, farming people in circumstances to afford their children a good education. He came to America in 1864 and in that year entered St. John's College, Fordham, N. Y., now Fordham University. He proved a brilliant student and after one year entered the theological seminary (Troy, N. Y.) of the Catholic province of New York. Here he so distinguished himself in his studies that at the end of a year he was chosen by Archbishop McCloskey, on the recommendation of the rector of the seminary, to continue his studies in theology and cognate subjects at the American College, Rome. Three years in Rome gave him the opportunity to secure a broad background of culture and knowledge of classical scenes and put him intimately in touch with the Church's relations to the Christian world. He was in Rome during the whole period of the Vatican Council and became familiar with the personalities of the great prelates of the Church. He was ordained priest in Rome, June 11, 1870, and then returned to New York. His first assignment was as assistant to the pastor at New Brighton, Staten Island. This was a quarter of a century before Staten Island was included within the boundaries of Greater New York, so the future cardinal had his opportunity to do country parish work. He came to know most of the parishioners personally, and the people of the town continued to remember him cordially and followed his rise in the ecclesiastical world with close attention and good wishes.

In 1872, when the Rev. Francis McNierney was appointed bishop of Albany, Father Farley succeeded him as secretary to Archbishop McCloskey. For this position he was eminently fitted. The wide acquaintance with the authorities at Rome which his years in the Eternal City had given him, his deep interest in the liturgy of the Church, his special proficiency in canon law, his methodical temperament, and his courteous manner, all proved valuable. Monsignor Lavelle, pastor of St. Patrick's Cathedral, New York, who was in intimate touch with him for nearly fifty years, says that "he won the hearts of the clergy and the people by his affability, sympathy and resource." After twelve years of service, he was made papal chamberlain—an honor which, it was said, would have come to him before but for his own modesty and unwillingness to be distinguished above other priests of the diocese.

In August 1884 he was appointed pastor of St. Gabriel's Church in East Thirty-seventh St., a populous parish of working people, loyally attached to the Church and eager for all the spir-

itual opportunities offered to them. Here he showed himself to be a very practical parish priest and his parish was a model of administration. He finished the spire and renovated the interior of the church, then proceeded to the building of a parish hall. He felt that it was extremely important to bring about social contacts among Catholic young folk in order that they might learn to know each other and thus marriages within the Church be more likely to occur. The parish hall was designed to furnish a place for such meetings, and where other friendly contacts among his parishioners might be formed.

In 1891 he became vicar-general of the diocese and president of the Catholic School Board, and later was promoted to the position of auxiliary Bishop of New York. After the death of Archbishop McCloskey, he was appointed archbishop of New York in September 1902. Feuds and ill-feeling were rife among the clergy of the archbishopric because of unfortunate differences of opinion on political and economic questions which had culminated in what is known as the McGlynn affair. Archbishop Farley soon appeased the trouble. How successful he was in this achievement may be gathered from Monsignor Lavelle's expression just after his death, "There was not a faction nor a clique in the diocese he left behind." During his term as archbishop he organized a series of celebrations which attracted wide attention and brought the Catholic Church into prominence before the country. The first of these was the centenary of the diocese of New York. There was a touch of internationalism in it because Cardinal Logue, Archbishop of Armagh, in whose archdiocese Cardinal Farley was born, was invited to come to New York to celebrate the Mass and be the honored guest of the occasion. Two years later in 1910, Archbishop Farley planned the celebration of the consecration of his cathedral, and this attracted even more attention than the celebration of the centenary. He was created cardinal in 1911 and the reverence in which he was held by his people was revealed by the enthusiastic celebration in his honor on his return to New York in January 1912.

One of the works in which he was most interested was the *Catholic Encyclopedia.* There had been no little opposition to it because of the feeling that it could not be made a commercial success, and it was not until after the Cardinal had called a meeting in his own house, himself pledged $5,000, and called for further subscriptions that it became clear that the work would surely go on. In spite of his many labors as archbishop he wrote *The History of St. Patrick's Cathedral* (1908) and ten years later, *The Life of John, Cardinal McCloskey* (1918).



Believing that the success of his archdiocese was dependent largely upon the spiritual progress of his priests, he encouraged their annual retreats and instituted monthly recollections at which a spiritual conference was given by someone who could be relied on to lift up the hearts of his hearers. These he always attended himself if he was in New York, and the gatherings proved a close link between the archbishop and his priests. He provided particularly for the spiritual care of the foreigners in the archdiocese. Mass was said in seven different languages—an index of the many rites which had found their way from eastern Europe; pastoral care was given to the various language groups represented in the population of New York; to see that no one should be neglected was no easy task. Throughout his life a man of prayer and of the spirit, his supreme care was to be the pastor of his flock.

[The principal source is the sketch written by Msgr. Michael J. Lavelle in *Eccl. Rev.* (Phila.), Feb. 1919. The article by Rev. Peter Guilday in *Cath. World,* Nov. 1918, comes from one who had been very intimately in touch with the Cardinal for several years. The life in Jas. J. Walsh, *Our Am. Cardinals* (1926), is the fullest biography to date. See also A. J. Shipman, *His Eminence, Cardinal Farley* (1912); John C. Reville in *America,* Sept. 28, 1918; John T. Smith in *Irish World,* Nov. 2, 1918.] J. J. W.

**FARLOW, WILLIAM GILSON** (Dec. 17, 1844–June 3, 1919), botanist, was born in Boston. His mother was Nancy Wight (Blanchard) Farlow, but it was probably from his father, John Smith Farlow, man of public affairs, and amateur gardener and musician, that he inherited his love of plants and music. Farlow's scholarship won awards in the Boston high schools which he attended, and in 1862 he matriculated at Harvard, graduating in 1866. Here he came at once under the inspiring and kindly influence of Asa Gray, and proved to be a gifted student. Upon Gray's advice he entered the Harvard Medical School in 1867, since botany was still largely impracticable as a sole profession. At the close of his third year he won a coveted appointment as surgical interne at the Massachusetts General Hospital, and so brilliant was his hospital service that in his final examination he was merely asked where he intended to practise.

Freed from the restrictions of medical training, however, he went at once into the service of Asa Gray as assistant, and after two years, during which he made especially fine studies in the marine *Algae* at Woods Hole, he traveled to Europe, there meeting the great botanists and studying algological herbaria. Most of his time was passed in the laboratory of the great cryp-

togamic botanist, De Bary of Strassburg, whose influence in the direction of physiology and cytology was a counterbalance to the systematic and philosophical training of Asa Gray. When Farlow returned to America in 1874, he had a distinguished reputation, and received the first special provision for instruction in cryptogamic botany ever offered in this country. For some years he was stationed at the Bussey Institute, and there, as Thaxter says, he may be said to have laid the foundation of American phytopathology, publishing papers on destructive parasites and algal water pollution. The carping regulations of Bussey Institute in that day proved too much for his patience, and in 1879 he was transferred to the main stem of Harvard, at Cambridge, where he built up an unrivalled cryptogamic herbarium and library. His *Contributions from the Cryptogamic Laboratory of Harvard University* were instituted as serial publications in 1883. They number forty titles, of important cryptogamic studies by himself and by his students under his direction. The most celebrated of these papers from his pen was his useful "Host Index of American Fungi" (1888), written with the collaboration of A. B. Seymour. Many of the most distinguished living botanists were trained in his laboratory—William Trelease, W. A. Setchell, K. Miyabe, B. D. Halstead, J. E. Humphreys, and others.

Farlow possessed a phenomenal memory; with the literature of his science he kept so completely *au courant* that, it is said, he often neglected the publication of his own works. Witty, even biting in speech, he was an entertaining talker and always esteemed as a delightful companion and a charming host. His well-known pessimism was but an affectation, as were his many pet aversions. As in systematic botany he was markedly of the conservative school, so in personality he was a typical New England gentleman of his generation. In 1900 he was married to Lillian Horsford.

[W. R. Setchell, "Wm. Gilson Farlow," with bibliography, in *Nat. Acad. Sci. Memoirs*, vol. XXI (1926); Roland Thaxter in *Bot. Gaz.*, Jan. 1920, and in *Harvard Grads. Mag.*, Dec. 1919, reprinted in *Am. Jour. Sci.*, Feb. 1920.] D. C. P.

**FARMAN, ELBERT ELI** (Apr. 23, 1831–Dec. 30, 1911), jurist, diplomat, was born at New Haven, Oswego County, N. Y., the third son of Zadok and Martha (Dix) Farman. On the paternal side, he was a descendant of William Foreman, a planter of Maryland, who came from London to Annapolis in 1675. On his mother's paternal side, he was descended from Leonard Dix, a settler of Wethersfield, Conn., and on the maternal side from Gov. Thomas Welles. He prepared for college at the Genesee Wesleyan Seminary at Lima, N. Y., attended Genesee College and in his junior year entered Amherst, from which he was graduated in 1855. Upon leaving college, he took an active part in politics, especially in support of John C. Frémont in 1856, delivering stump speeches in the presidential campaigns up to 1888 and serving as a delegate to the Republican National Convention in Philadelphia in 1872. Meanwhile he studied law at Warsaw, N. Y., and was admitted to the bar in 1858 and to the United States courts in 1862. Between these two dates he was one of the publishers of the *Western New Yorker*. From 1865 to 1867 he traveled in Europe and studied languages and international law at the Universities of Berlin and Heidelberg. On his return in January 1868 he was appointed by Gov. Fenton as district attorney of Wyoming County, to fill a vacancy, but was elected to two terms thereafter, serving until 1875. In March 1876 President Grant appointed him diplomatic agent and consul-general at Cairo, Egypt, in which position he was continued by President Hayes, who also appointed him (1880) one of the delegates for the United States on the international commission for the revision of the judicial codes to be applied in the international mixed tribunals in Egypt. His success in this work led on July 1, 1881, to his designation by President Garfield, on the recommendation of Secretary Blaine, as one of the judges of the mixed tribunals. His eight years in Egypt were eventful. In January 1878 former President Grant arrived in Egypt on his tour of the world, and it fell to Farman's lot to act as the General's interpreter, to present him to the Khedive, and to accompany him on the famous voyage of the Nile, which Farman described nearly thirty years later in his *Along the Nile with General Grant* (1904). At the same time he presented to the Khedive Henry M. Stanley, the African explorer, who at that time apparently considered himself an American citizen. Farman also witnessed the riots at Alexandria in June and July 1882, and in January 1883 was designated by President Arthur as a member of the international commission organized to determine the damages to be paid by the people of Alexandria as a result of them. The commission sat for eleven months, examined over 10,000 claims and awarded over $20,000,000. During this time, Farman continued to hold his position in the courts, generally sitting one day a week. His record as consul-general is one of many achievements. He sent to the state department voluminous reports on agriculture, commerce, politics, and finance, many of which were published. At his sugges-

tion, he was directed by the department to negotiate a treaty with Egypt concerning the abolition of the slave traffic in that country and its provinces. This he did, and although orally agreed to, the treaty ultimately failed because of a fall of the ministry. Farman was somewhat more successful in his negotiations for an increase in the number of American judges on the mixed tribunals, and also in securing in 1879 as a gift from the Khedive the granite obelisk known as Cleopatra's Needle in Central Park, New York City. He also made extensive collections of ancient coins, scarabs, bronzes, porcelains, and other antiquities, which are now in the Metropolitan Museum of Art. After his return from Egypt, he was engaged principally in the practise of law in Warsaw, and in the management of his own affairs, delivering occasional lectures and political speeches, and writing accounts of his Egyptian experiences. In this connection he spent the winters of 1894–1900, 1904, and 1906 in Europe. Besides the description of the voyage up the Nile, he also wrote: *Egypt and Its Betrayal; an Account of the Country during the Periods of Ismail and Tewfik Pashas and of How England Acquired a New Empire* (1908), and a *Foreman-Farman-Forman Genealogy* (1911). He was married twice: first, on Dec. 24, 1855, to Lois Parker of Madison, Ohio; second, on Oct. 8, 1883, to Sarah Adelaide Frisbie of Galesburg, Ill. He had three children by the second marriage.

[In addition to Farman's works mentioned in the sketch, see *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 1, 1912.] H. F. W.

**FARMER, FANNIE MERRITT** (Mar. 23, 1857–Jan. 15, 1915), daughter of John Franklin and Mary (Watson) Farmer, was born in Boston, Mass. Her parents planned to send her to college, but a paralytic stroke which she sustained while she was a student at the Medford high school, forced them to abandon the plan. She eventually recovered her health sufficiently to assist in the housekeeping, and developed such an interest in cooking that her family urged her to attend the Boston Cooking School. After her graduation from that institution in 1889, she was asked to return as assistant to the director the next year. Upon the death of the director she was elected to that position (1891). She resigned some eleven years later to open (1902) a school of her own, known as Miss Farmer's School of Cookery. Always shy and reserved, she shunned publicity and was said never to have subscribed to a clipping bureau or preserved a press notice. Nevertheless, her name became known throughout the land, and *The Boston Cooking School Cook Book*, which she edited in 1896, ran into twenty-one editions before her death. She also published: *Chafing Dish Possibilities* (1898), *Food and Cookery for the Sick and Convalescent* (1904), *What to Have for Dinner* (1905), *Catering for Special Occasions, With Menus and Recipes* (1911), and *A New Book of Cookery* (1912).

In the Boston Cooking School the courses were designed for the training of teachers; in her own school the courses were designed for the training of housewives. Her main interest was in practise, not theory. Her school specialized in invalid cookery and supplied lecturers on that subject to training classes for nurses. Miss Farmer herself gave a course on invalid cookery one year at the Harvard Medical School. Her weekly lectures at the cooking school were largely attended and widely reported in the press. She was much in demand for addresses to women's clubs; and for ten years, assisted by her sister, she conducted a popular page on cookery in the *Woman's Home Companion*.

Some years before her death, another stroke deprived her of the use of her limbs, but as soon as she recovered sufficiently, she continued her lecturing, though compelled to speak from a wheeled chair. She followed closely the régime prescribed by her physician and almost by sheer will-power continued her work. Her last lecture was delivered only ten days before her death. It was said that the achievement of which she was most proud was the introduction of accurate measurements in cooking; and she was sometimes called "the mother of level measurements."

[*Woman's Home Companion*, Dec. 1915; *Journal of Home Economics*, May 1915; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 15, 1915.] B. R.

**FARMER, FERDINAND** (Oct. 13, 1720–Aug. 17, 1786), Jesuit missionary, was the son of a Swabian family by the name of Steinmeyer. He adopted the name of Farmer after coming to the United States. His family lived in comfortable circumstances, and his studious habits as a boy early marked him for one of the learned professions. His first inclination was toward medicine and he had given three years to courses in the science of healing when, in 1743, the urge to heal souls as well as bodies caused him to enroll himself among the followers of Loyola at Landsberg. He was eager for foreign missionary service and hoped to be sent to China, but need of a German-speaking priest among the widely scattered Catholic settlers of Pennsylvania and New Jersey caused his superiors to send him to America. He arrived at Lancaster, Pa., in 1752 and served the mission there for six years. He was then transferred to the German parish of St. Joseph in

Philadelphia. That his duties were not those of an assistant in the city church of to-day may be comprehended when it is borne in mind that at this time the whole city of New York was part of St. Joseph's parish in Philadelphia.

While first Father Theodore Schneider, the founder of the original German-Catholic congregation in Philadelphia, and later Father Robert Harding attended to the spiritual needs of the Catholics in and near that city, Father Farmer was "on the road" almost continuously. He penetrated nearly every section of New Jersey and made frequent trips to the country around what is now Greenwood Lake, where he made many converts. That he crossed into New York in the early days of the Revolution, thereby risking the death penalty if captured, seems fairly well established, for while he was careful not to implicate others by committing to writing records of his journeys in territory forbidden to priests, he reported the necessity of having often to travel by night and of more than once being compelled to minister to the sick and dying in the attire of a Quaker merchant. He is generally regarded as the organizer, just prior to the Declaration of Independence, of the first Catholic congregation in New York City—a congregation which in time became the parishioners of St. Peter's, but which in 1785, after ten years of existence, was reported to Bishop Carroll as "yet in a poor situation, and under many difficulties," with only some two hundred communicants (Bayley, *post*).

In 1778, after the capture of Philadelphia, an effort was made by the British to create a regiment of Roman-Catholic volunteers, and much was hoped for the project in Philadelphia if Father Farmer could be induced to become the chaplain. He steadily refused to accept the position and in a letter to a priest in London declared that the offer had embarrassed him on account of his age "and for several other reasons." Five years later his name led all those attached to an address presented to Washington by "the Clergy, Gentlemen of the Law and Physicians of the city of Philadelphia."

"He was," says an old pamphlet of the times, "of a slender form, having a countenance mild, gentle and bearing an expression almost seraphic" (*Researches,* July 1890). He seems to have borne the rigors of his missionary journeys extremely well and was seldom sick. He was one of the first trustees of the University of the State of Pennsylvania, when it was chartered in 1779, a member of the American Philosophical Society, and an astronomer and mathematician who made time to correspond with various learned societies in Europe. He was popular with all classes; his funeral was attended by all the Protestant clergymen of Philadelphia as well as by the trustees of the University and delegations from a number of public bodies.

[*Am. Cath. Hist. Researches,* Jan. 1888, Apr. 1889, Jan. 1890, Jan., Apr. 1897, Jan. 1900; *Am. Cath. Hist. Records,* vols. II–VI (1886–95); Peter Guilday, *The Life and Times of John Carroll* (2 vols., 1922); *Cath. Encyc.*; J. R. Bayley, *A Brief Sketch of the Hist. of the Cath. Church on the Island of N. Y.* (1853); obituary in *Pa. Gazette,* Aug. 23, 1786.] E. F. B.

**FARMER, HANNAH TOBEY SHAPLEIGH** (Mar. 20, 1823–June 27, 1891), philanthropist, wife of Moses Gerrish Farmer, was born in Berwick, Me., the third daughter of Richard and Olive (Tobey) Shapleigh. Her father was primarily a public-school teacher but, while not a lawyer, maintained a law office in association with another. He was a practical and accurate surveyor, justice of the peace, deputy sheriff, and representative for several terms in the General Court at the state capital. In this environment Hannah grew up and earned the reputation in her early girlhood of "a lass with a great deal of pluck." Sadness entered her life at an early age with the death of a little brother, and within a month of each other two sisters near her own age died of tuberculosis. When she was seventeen her father died of the same disease, leaving his family destitute except for a house in Eliot, Me. To this place the widow moved and there Hannah was obliged to assist her mother in maintaining the home. This she did with her needle as a mantua-maker, going from house to house and earning twenty-five cents a day. On Dec. 25, 1844, she married Moses Gerrish Farmer [*q.v.*] who was a preceptor of the Eliot Academy and lodged with her mother. During the earlier years of her married life the family income was severely limited but Mrs. Farmer was in entire sympathy with her husband's electrical experimentation and invention and was of great assistance to him in the development of many of his important discoveries. She, too, apparently acquired the trend of thought of the inventor for she received a patent rather late in life, on Dec. 11, 1883, for a "head protector." As the family means permitted, she became active in charitable and philanthropic work in and about Boston. With the outbreak of the Civil War and throughout that struggle she originated and conducted public benefits for the soldiers by which large sums of money and supplies were realized and distributed especially through the Christian Commission and other benevolent channels of Boston. In 1888 she built in Eliot a large dwelling in memory of her infant son. This she called "Rosemary Cottage," its purpose being to afford shelter

and food to weary and needy women and children. Before her death this institution was given over to the care of the City Missionary Society of Boston. Under the pen name of Mabelle, Mrs. Farmer wrote both prose and poetry, contributing it chiefly to the general press, the theme for most of these writings being for the advancement of the various civic betterment movements in which she was interested. She died in Eliot, survived by her husband and daughter.

[Augustin Caldwell, *The Rich Legacy, Memories of Hannah Farmer* (1892); obituary in *Boston Transcript*, June 28, 1891; U. S. Patent Office records.] C. W. M.

**FARMER, JOHN** (June 12, 1789–Aug. 13, 1838), antiquarian and genealogist, was born at Chelmsford, Mass., the eldest son of John and Lydia (Richardson) Farmer and seventh in descent from John Farmer whose widow Isabella came to New England in 1669. In his native town he attended a private school kept by the Rev. H. Packard. In 1803 his parents moved to Lyndeboro, N. H., and soon afterward John went to work in a store in Amherst, N. H. There he attended school, when business was dull, and also studied medicine with a local physician, but his slender physique discouraged him from entering the profession. In 1810, and for a few years thereafter, he taught school, an employment in which he excelled. His keenest interest, however, was in genealogy and in local history.

In 1813 he published *A Family Register of the Descendants of Edward Farmer of Billerica, in the Youngest Branch of his Family* (Concord, N. H.). In the following year the Massachusetts Historical Society printed "A Sketch of Amherst, N. H." (*Collections*, 2 ser., vol. II) which he had prepared. This was followed by *An Historical Memoir of Billerica, Mass.* (1816), and "Note on the County of Hillsborough, N. H." (*Massachusetts Historical Society Collections*, 2 ser., vol. VII, 1818). These studies won him recognition among scholars, and in 1822 he received an honorary degree of M.A. from Dartmouth College.

In 1821 Farmer moved to Concord, N. H., where he formed a business connection with Dr. Samuel Morril and opened an apothecary store. From this vocation he acquired the title of "Doctor." His hours of leisure were devoted to the study of New Hampshire annals and New England genealogy, and he produced a number of books in rapid succession: *An Ecclesiastical Register of New Hampshire* (1821); *The New Military Guide* (1822); *The New Hampshire Annual Register* (1822–38 inclusive); *A Genealogical Register of the First Settlers of New England* (1829); *A Catechism of the History of New Hampshire* (1829); and a one-volume edition of the first two volumes of Jeremy Belknap's *History of New Hampshire* (1831). In conjunction with Jacob B. Moore he published *A Gazeteer of the State of New Hampshire* (1823), and *Collections, Historical and Miscellaneous* (3 vols., 1822–24). Of all these works the *Genealogical Register* is the most important, and it is significant that James Savage [*q.v.*] used it as the basis for his *Genealogical Dictionary*. In the *American Quarterly Register* Farmer published sketches of early graduates of Dartmouth College, 1771–83; a list of the graduates of all the colleges in New England; and memoirs of the ministers who graduated at Harvard before 1657. In the last year or two of his life he was appointed by the legislature to examine, arrange, and index the state papers at Concord. This difficult task he performed admirably.

Farmer was of average height, erect and extremely thin. In spite of his very uncertain health there was an animated cheerfulness in his whole aspect. He was highly religious and thoroughly orthodox in his belief. The cause of anti-slavery took a deep hold upon him and he was for a number of years corresponding secretary of the New Hampshire Anti-slavery Society. He was deeply interested in the formation of the New Hampshire Historical Society in 1823, and was its corresponding secretary from 1825 until his death in 1838.

[The best memoir of Farmer is that by Jacob B. Moore in *Am. Quart. Reg.*, Feb. 1839. This is preceded by an engraving of a miniature portrait painted in 1824. John Le Bosquet, *A Memorial . . . of John Farmer* (1884), is an intimate biography. The first sketch in the first issue of the *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1847, was "Memoir of John Farmer," an abstract of Moore's memoir. An obituary attributed to Joseph Willard is in the Worcester *Aegis*, Aug. 22, 1838.] L. S. M.

**FARMER, JOHN** (Feb. 9, 1798–Mar. 24, 1859), cartographer, was born in Halfmoon, Saratoga County, N. Y., the son of John and Catharine Jacokes (Stoutenburgh) Farmer. He received his education in schools in and about Albany, N. Y., and for a time taught in a Lancastrian school in Albany. By invitation of Gov. Cass and the trustees of the University of Michigan, Farmer went to Detroit from Albany in 1821 to take charge of one of the university schools; but about two years later he resigned his position and went to Ohio. Returning to Detroit in 1825, he engaged in surveying and map making. His first map was of the United States government road which had recently been built from Detroit to the Maumee River. While employed by a surveyor named Risdon in connection with a map of Michigan, Farmer took out for himself,

in August 1825, three copyrights covering maps of Michigan on scales of eight, eighteen, and thirty miles to the inch. The first of these, which was the only one of the group to be published, appeared in 1826 and was followed within the next ten years by several other maps of the territory. Of the latter, the map of 1830, which was accompanied by a small gazetteer, was especially notable, while that of 1835 was the first map which Farmer engraved with his own hand. All of these maps had a wide sale throughout the East and were greatly influential in promoting the extensive immigration into Michigan that took place between 1825 and 1840.

In addition to the maps just described Farmer published several editions of a map of Wisconsin and in 1831 drew for Congress a map of Detroit which was later published in the *American State Papers, Public Lands,* Vol. VI, and even to-day is regarded as the only legal authority and guide to surveys in the older portions of the city. In January 1835 he issued the first map of Detroit on which the size and correct outline of the several lots were shown. Shortly after the publication of this last work Farmer sold his copyrights to a New York map house and entered upon a period of public service during which he held the positions of county surveyor and city treasurer as well as numerous minor offices.

In 1844, he again actively engaged in map making, producing a new map of Michigan. This was followed by other maps of this same state, of Wisconsin, Lake Superior, and the Mineral Region, but the crowning achievement of his career was a large map of Michigan and Wisconsin, size 68 x 72 inches, which appeared in 1859. The hard work attendant upon the drawing and engraving of this map brought on a nervous disease from which he never recovered, his death occurring on March 24, 1859. He was survived by his wife, Roxana Hamilton, whom he had married on Apr. 5, 1826, and by three children.

[Biographical sketch by Farmer's son Silas, in the latter's *Hist. of Detroit and Wayne County and Early Mich.* (2nd ed., 1890), II, 1085–86; Wm. L. Jenks, "A Michigan Family of Map Makers," in *Mich. Hist. Mag.*, Apr. 1927; F. B. Streeter, *Mich. Bibliography* (2 vols., 1921).] G. H. B.

**FARMER, MOSES GERRISH** (Feb. 9, 1820–May 25, 1893), inventor, pioneer American electrician, was born in Boscawen, N. H., where his father, Col. John Farmer, was a farmer and prosperous lumber merchant. Both his father and mother, who was Sally Gerrish, were descendants of early seventeenth-century English settlers in New England. For the first sixteen years of his life young Farmer attended school spasmodically, studied music—the piano particularly

Farmer

—and as soon as he was old enough assisted his father both on the farm and in the lumber business. After his father's death, in the fall of 1837, he went to Andover, Mass., entered the famous preparatory school there, and two years later was admitted to the freshman class of Dartmouth College. Here he made rapid progress and was a diligent student, and to augment his limited finances did considerable teaching of piano. This crowding of activities was more than his constitution could stand and he became seriously ill with typhoid fever which left him in such a delicate condition that he was compelled to give up his college work before its completion. About the only thing available in the way of work for him, in view of his physical condition, was school-teaching. While waiting for possible positions in this field, he spent part of the year of 1842 in the office of a civil engineer in Portsmouth, N. H., but in the succeeding winter became assistant in a private school in that city. Upon completing the winter term there, he next accepted the preceptorship of Eliot Academy, Eliot, Me., and went there in the spring of 1843. In 1844 he became the principal of the Belknap School for Girls, in Dover, N. H., and later, of another school in the same city. While in Eliot he lived for a time in the home of a Mrs. Shapleigh, who within eighteen months became his mother-in-law through his marriage to her daughter, Hannah Tobey Shapleigh, on Dec. 25, 1844. [See Farmer, Hannah Tobey Shapleigh.]

From the time he left college and started teaching, Farmer had shown in a variety of ways his innate ingenuity and an intense interest in mechanics and natural philosophy. Besides teaching, he tuned pianos, played the church organ, and was deeply interested in mathematics. As a result of his meeting with a window shade manufacturer of Dover, Farmer, presumably to satisfy his own ideas, devised a machine on which to print shades made of paper as a substitute for linen. Since paper shades could be sold at one-fourth the price of linen, this venture was successful, and in 1845 over 40,000 shades were printed and sold. At about this time Morse and Vail were bringing electricity to the attention of the world through the electro-magnetic telegraph. Farmer was one of those especially attracted to the study of the new power; in fact, he became so enthusiastic that both school-teaching and curtain manufacture lost their charm for him. He began delving into the subject in 1845 and undertook as his first experiment nothing less than an electric railroad. With money earned from curtain manufacture and with the help of his brother, John, he constructed a miniature

electric train of two cars, on one of which were mounted the motor and wet batteries, the other being the passenger car. The first exhibition of the train was held in the yard of Farmer's home on July 26, 1847, and during the summer and fall of that year Farmer and his brother held exhibitions in the public halls of Dover and other neighboring cities of New Hampshire and Maine, at which children were drawn around in the passenger car. These exhibitions, although a novelty, were not financially profitable to Farmer, but he was now so wholly engrossed in electricity that when, in December 1847, he was offered the position of wire examiner of the new electric telegraph line between Boston and Worcester, he accepted, and moved to Framingham, Mass., in January 1848. During the succeeding six months, in addition to his regular duties he learned telegraphy and later, in July 1848, was appointed operator in the telegraph office at Salem, Mass., and immediately moved his family thither. Shortly thereafter he took charge of the telegraph between Boston and Newburyport, Mass., and undertook to open up telegraph offices along this line, continuing in this service until 1851.

Meanwhile, all of his spare time had been devoted to electrical experimentation at home. As early as 1848 he had invented an electric-striking apparatus for a fire-alarm service which, in association with Dr. William F. Channing [*q.v.*], he had developed to the point that when Channing succeeded in 1851 in inducing the City of Boston to install a fire-alarm system, the Channing and Farmer invention was selected and Farmer gave up his telegraphic work to serve as superintendent of the system. He had not only devised the signalling mechanisms but also perfected a special water motor to drive the electric dynamos. This was the first electric fire-alarm system in the United States. There was no experience or precedent to follow and as a result there were a multitude of conditions encountered which Farmer with his fertile inventive instincts was able to combat. He resigned the superintendency in 1853 and for several years thereafter worked quietly along developing his various electrical ideas. In 1855 he discovered the means for duplex and quadruplex telegraph and in the same year he read a paper before the American Association for the Advancement of Science on the general subject of multiplex telegraphy. In 1856 he succeeded in depositing aluminum electrolytically, and was induced to go into partnership with several men as electrotypers. The business proved prosperous from the very start, but the panic of 1857 completely wiped out the partners' capital. This financial loss materially restricted

Farmer

Farmer's experimentation for the next few years, but in 1861 he became superintendent of a tobacco-extracting manufactory in Somerville, Mass. Here his chemical knowledge was of great value to him and the business gave him a means of livelihood and permitted him to continue his electrical studies and experiments. Shortly after the failure of his electro-plating business, he had experimented with electricity as a source of light, and in 1858–59 invented an incandescent electric lamp. The filament was a platinum wire and the current was supplied by a wet-cell battery. With two of these lamps arranged in multiple, he lighted the parlor of his home for several months of the summer of 1859. He realized, of course, that a galvanic battery as a source of electricity was impracticable and that a substitute was needed, and after a number of years of experimentation, in 1866 he conceived and patented what is now called the "self-exciting" dynamo. With one of these dynamos, in 1868, he lighted a private residence in Cambridge, Mass., with forty of his incandescent lamps arranged in multiple series and with absolute regulation at the dynamo. In 1872 he was selected to fill the office of electrician at the United States Torpedo Station at Newport, R. I., and moved his family to that place from Salem. While it had been intended that his employment should be for a period of six months, his services were so valuable to the federal government that the appointment was continued for a total period of nine years, during which time he greatly advanced the art of torpedo warfare for the United States navy. Ill health necessitated his resignation in 1881. In the years immediately preceding, however, he had concentrated his attention more and more upon electric power generation and distribution and after leaving the Torpedo Station, as far as his health permitted, he acted as consulting electrician for the United States Electric Light Company of New York. After several years he retired with his family to his summer home at Eliot, Me.

Like many other pioneers, Farmer did not profit greatly from his inventive work. He led the way by thirty years in many applications of the electric current and, whenever he arrived at results which settled in his mind the laws of its action, instead of laboring to perfect a marketable invention, he would lay aside what he had done and proceed in search of the unknown. As the late Gov. Claflin of Massachusetts once said of him, "He was deserving of more honor than he ever received." He was always much interested in charitable and philanthropic movements and late in life carried out the wishes of his wife's father and established a public library at Eliot,

Me. He died suddenly in Chicago, whither he had gone, against the advice of his physician, to prepare an exhibit of his inventions for the World's Fair. He was survived by his daughter and was buried in Eliot.

[*Electricity*, Dec. 21, 1892, May 31, 1893, Aug. 4, 1897; Geo. B. Prescott, *Farmer on the Electric Light* (1879); T. C. Martin and S. L. Coles, *The Story of Electricity* (1919), vol. I; *Religio-Philosophical Jour.*, June 3, 1893; *Sci. Am.*, June 3, 1893; U. S. Patent Office Records.] C. W. M.

**FARNAM, HENRY** (Nov. 9, 1803–Oct. 4, 1883), railroad builder, and philanthropist, born in Scipio, Cayuga County, N. Y., was the descendant of Connecticut stock. His parents, Jeffrey Amherst Farnam and Mercy Tracy, belonged to families which had left the Thames Valley in the eighteenth century to establish pioneer farms farther west; and on such a farm he was born and brought up. Studying and teaching in the village school, reading—by the light of the winter fire to save the expense of a candle—what text-books in mathematics he could procure, he prepared himself as a surveyor, and was employed in that capacity on the Erie Canal from 1821 to 1824. In 1825 he went to Connecticut to take the post of assistant engineer in the construction of the Farmington Canal, became chief engineer of that undertaking in 1827, and so remained until 1846, when the canal was abandoned and he acted as chief engineer and superintendent of the railroad which took its place. In 1839 he married Ann Sophia Whitman of Farmington.

The canal, completed from New Haven to Farmington in 1828, and later extended to Northampton, never realized the dreams of its projectors. Of small dimensions (taking boats only of twenty to twenty-five tons), cheaply built (two-thirds of the sixty locks were of wood), it counted a year fortunate when it collected, from the scant traffic, tolls sufficient to cover ordinary maintenance. Breaches were frequent, occasioned by freshets and, so it was charged, by malicious injury. The engineer was out day and night, rain or shine (particularly in rain), driving in his buggy from one point to another of the canal. In his later years, after a broken night, he would often say, "I have been spending the whole night repairing a breach in the old canal."

Work on the canal brought Farnam into intimate relations with Joseph E. Sheffield [*q.v.*], a man of property and considerable business connections, a large stockholder in the canal and contributor of most of the capital to the railroad which succeeded it. The two were associated in a plan to build a railroad from New Haven to New York, obtained a charter in 1844, but found only one other individual willing at that time to subscribe to stock, and had to abandon the enterprise.

In the twenty-five years devoted to the New Haven-Northampton line Farnam gained little but experience. He got that in full measure, and established a reputation for technical competence, business ability, sound judgment, and integrity. In 1850 he was invited to Chicago, a town approaching a population of 30,000 but still lacking railroad connections with the outside world. In the few years following, the firm of Sheffield and Farnam completed the Michigan Southern Railroad from Hillsdale to Chicago, providing an all-rail line to the East (1852), built the Chicago & Rock Island, giving railroad connection with the Mississippi River (1852–54); Farnam designed and built the first railroad bridge crossing the Mississippi River, at Rock Island (1855), and the firm of Farnam & Durant carried the construction of the Mississippi & Missouri Railroad as far as Grinnell, Iowa. Bridging the Mississippi was resented by the river interests and led to many suits. To defend one of these Farnam engaged Abraham Lincoln, whose argument won the famous Rock Island Bridge case. Early reports of the Chicago & Rock Island Railroad show that the contractors were given a right of way and had to provide practically everything else to make a railroad. Not only did they do the grading, build the bridges, import and lay the iron rails; they also built the stations and freight houses, built the machine shops and equipped them with engines, machinery, and tools, and supplied the rolling stock, from locomotives to handcars. They were paid mostly in bonds and stock, so that they had to finance as well as build the road. They also organized the operating force, and Farnam shortly assumed the presidency of the Chicago & Rock Island, and held that place until his retirement in 1863, in his sixtieth year. After several years of travel abroad he returned to New Haven, where he made notable gifts to Yale College and many civic causes. Of him Noah Porter said: "His public spirit was a passion." He combined the homely virtue of his Puritan ancestors with the boldness and breadth of view of the modern business leader, and as a pioneer in railroad construction made a permanent contribution to the development of the country.

[Sources are: Henry W. Farnam, *Henry Farnam* (privately printed, New Haven, 1889), a memoir based on family papers and personal recollections; papers and pamphlets relating to the Farmington canal in the Yale Library; early reports of the Chicago & Rock Island R. R.; obituary in *N. Y. Tribune*, Oct. 5, 1883. Chauncey A. Goodrich, *The Excursion* (1854), "a poetical jeu

d'esprit," commemorates the excursion in celebration of the opening of the Chicago & Rock Island.] C. D.

**FARNHAM, ELIZA WOODSON BURHANS** (Nov. 17, 1815–Dec. 15, 1864), philanthropist, author, was born in Rensselaerville, N. Y., the daughter of Cornelius and Mary (Wood) Burhans. Her mother died when Eliza was six years old, and she was sent to live with an aunt and uncle in Maple Springs, N. Y. In this somewhat backwoods section she found little kindness; her aunt was jealous and nagging, her uncle addicted to whiskey, and Eliza became obsessed with the desire to alleviate misery in the world. She was the only child in the neighborhood who was not allowed to attend school and the only one who read books of her own accord. At about sixteen, she left her uncle's home and went to live with another uncle, who had taken her brother and two sisters when her mother died, and was sent to school for a time. In 1835 she moved to Illinois, where in 1836 she married Thomas Jefferson Farnham [*q.v.*], a young lawyer, to whom she bore three sons. After his return from an expedition to California (1839–40), in 1841 the Farnhams moved to New York. In 1844 Mrs. Farnham accepted an appointment as matron of the female department of the state prison at Sing Sing. She determined to prove that prisoners would respond more satisfactorily to kindness than to the harsh treatment accorded them formerly, met with much success in her experiment, and retained her office until 1848. Meanwhile her husband had removed to Illinois and then to San Francisco, where he died in September 1848. After a brief period of employment at the Institution for the Blind in Boston, in 1849 Mrs. Farnham went to California. Prior to her departure she attempted to organize a party of women to emigrate with her, and her project, which did not prove successful, was indorsed by Judge J. W. Edmonds, Horace Greeley, Henry Ward Beecher, Catharine M. Sedgwick, and other notables. The difficulties of her journey and her experiences on the Coast she later described in a book, *California, Indoors and Out* (1856). She returned to New York in 1856, and devoted the next two years to studying medicine. In 1859 in pursuance of the plan conceived a decade earlier, she organized a society in New York City to assist destitute women in finding homes in the West, and she personally conducted several companies of "emigrants" of this class to California. Shortly after the death of her first husband she was married a second time (*Burhans Genealogy*), to William Fitzpatrick, of Ireland. She retained the name Farnham, however. By this marriage she had one daughter, who died in infancy. In addition to the book already mentioned, Mrs. Farnham was the author of *Life in Prairie Land* (1846); *Eliza Woodson, or, The Early Days of One of the World's Workers* (1864, previously issued in a very small edition, 1859); and *The Ideal Attained* (1865). Although the last two are classed as fiction, all three were based to some extent upon her own experiences. Her most significant work was *Woman and Her Era* (1864), published in two volumes. It is an intelligent discussion of woman's capabilities for other vocations than motherhood. She urged women to develop intellectual interests but in doing so not merely to imitate men. She also edited, wrote the preface to, and illustrated an American edition of a treatise, *Rationale of Crime, and its Appropriate Treatment* (1846), by Marmaduke Blake Sampson. She died at Milton-on-the-Hudson, N. Y.

[In addition to Mrs. Farnham's own writings, see Samuel Burhans, Jr., *Burhans Genealogy* (1894), p. 193; obituaries in *N. Y. Tribune*, Dec. 16, and *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 18, 1864.] M. Sh—r.

**FARNHAM, RUSSEL** (1784–Oct. 23, 1832), fur-trader, was born in Massachusetts, the son of John and Susan (Chapin) Farnham. Little is known of his early life except that he received a fair education. As a clerk he joined the Astoria sea expedition that left New York on the *Tonquin*, Sept. 6, 1810. In the Oregon country he was one of the most active and adventurous of the party and figured in almost all of the exciting incidents that marked the brief history of the enterprise. On the sale of Astoria to the North West Company, Nov. 12, 1813, he was chosen by Hunt to carry to Astor the company records and the net proceeds of the sale, consisting of about $40,000 in sterling bills on London. Embarking on the company's brig *Pedlar*, he sailed, Apr. 3, 1814, and was landed at Kamtchatka, whence he started afoot, carrying a small pack of provisions, across Siberia. This extraordinary exploit, characterized by his friend Darby as a feat that for bravery, danger, and daring was never equaled by any other man, was successfully accomplished. After enduring great sufferings from hunger and exposure, at one time being reduced to the necessity of cutting off and eating the tops of his boots, he reached St. Petersburg, and later Copenhagen. From the latter port, on or about Oct. 16, 1816, he sailed for Baltimore, ultimately delivering the papers consigned to him into Astor's hands.

For the remainder of his life he continued in the employ of Astor. In 1817–19 he was the manager of the American Fur Company's business on the upper Mississippi. For an alleged violation of the trading laws he and his compan-

ion, Daniel Darling, were arrested in the fall of 1817, but on a suit brought by the company were awarded a verdict of $5,000. In 1819 he ventured into the Missouri River trade, but from 1821 was again active on the upper Mississippi. In the same year he began to acquire land in the village of Portage des Sioux, in northeastern Missouri, where he established a well-stocked farm and built a beautiful home. On Oct. 27, 1829, at St. Louis, he married Susan, the daughter of Charles Bosseron, a French settler of wealth and position. Early in 1832 he journeyed east. In October, some months after his return, he went to St. Louis, and on his arrival was stricken with cholera, dying within two hours. He was buried in the Catholic cemetery.

Farnham is described by Darby as of ordinary size, with a powerful frame, and his Copenhagen passport, not quite tallying with Darby as to his stature, adds the information that his hair was light and curly and that he had brown eyes. He was companionable and sociable. "The best meaning and one of the most sanguine of men," was the characterization of him given by his friend Ramsay Crooks, who added that he underwent greater privations "than any half dozen of us."

[See John F. Darby, *Personal Recollections* (1880); Louis Houck, *Hist. of Missouri,* vol. III (1908); Bruce E. Mahan, *Old Fort Crawford and the Frontier* (1926); Stella M. Drumm, "More About Astorians," *Ore. Hist. Soc. Quart.* (Dec. 1923). Other material is in Gabriel Franchère's "Narrative" and Alexander Ross's "Adventures of the First Settlers" (pub. in *Early Western Travels,* ed. by R. G. Thwaites, 1904), vols. VI, VII. The account of Farnham's life in Elihu H. Shepard's *Early Hist. of St. Louis and Missouri* (1870) is largely fiction.]

W. J. G.

**FARNHAM, THOMAS JEFFERSON** (1804–Sept. 13, 1848), lawyer, traveler, writer, is commonly reported to have been born in Vermont, but the obituary printed in a San Francisco newspaper shortly after his death at that place says he was a native of the state of Maine. For some years prior to 1839 he had been living at Peoria, Ill., engaged in the practise of law. During the fall of 1838 Rev. Jason Lee, superintendent of the Oregon Mission of the Methodist Episcopal Church, went East and on his way gave a number of lectures on Oregon. He had with him two Indian boys, one of whom became ill and was left at Peoria where Lee gave a lecture. In consequence of the new personal information about the Far West nineteen young men of that place and its vicinity decided to make a trip across the continent in the spring. Farnham was one of these, and was chosen captain. They outfitted at Independence, Mo., and, on May 13, took the Santa Fé trail up that river to Bent's Fort on the Arkansas. Most of them afterwards crossed over to Fort St. Vrain on the South Platte and wintered with a party of trappers on Green River. Some deserted to Santa Fé. Only four men went with Farnham, who pushed his way across the Colorado Mountains to Fort Hall, thence down the Snake River Valley to the Walla Walla, and Fort Vancouver. He visited the Whitman Mission, also the settlers on the Willamette, for whom he seems to have written a petition directed to the government of the United States requesting that Oregon be taken under its protection. It was signed by the American settlers generally and was carried back to the United States by Farnham who sailed to the Sandwich Islands on one of the Hudson's Bay Company's vessels, thence securing transportation to Monterey in California. He claims to have been instrumental in liberating from prison certain Americans and Englishmen who had been implicated in a local revolution. Dropping down to San Blas in Mexico, he crossed to the Gulf of Mexico and ascended the Mississippi to Peoria during the summer of 1840. For a time thereafter he lived in New York, where he brought out his most important book: *Travels In the Great Western Prairies, the Anahuac and Rocky Mountains and in the Oregon Territory* (Poughkeepsie, 1841; London, 1843). He later settled near Alton, Ill., but finally removed to San Francisco, in 1846 or 1847, where he practised law during the brief remaining period of his life.

Farnham's *Travels in the Great Western Prairies,* which was reprinted by Thwaites in *Early Western Travels,* is valuable for its description but is unreliable so far as the author's expression of personal opinions goes. He was a fluent and entertaining writer and, having accomplished a transcontinental journey by a route which in some portions was new, he made a contribution to Far West geography which is his sole title to recognition. H. H. Bancroft, with some asperity, pronounced his other book on California, *Life and Adventures in California* (1846), "in all those parts resting on his own observations . . . worthless trash, and in all that relates to the California people a tissue of falsehood" (*Works of H. H. Bancroft,* vol. XX, 1885, p. 735). He was a man of vigorous and engaging personality, who made a strong impression on his fellow men. The *Travels* had a rather wide popularity and both of his books went through several editions.

Farnham married in 1836 Eliza Woodson Burhans [see Eliza Woodson Burhans Farnham], who wrote on prison reform, and later on California. She also aided in bringing Eastern girls to the Pacific Coast to become wives of the pioneer settlers. The Farnhams had three children.

[The best account of Farnham's activities is in R. G. Thwaites, *Early Western Travels*, XXVIII (1906), 10–15. The only obituary notice hitherto discovered is in the *Californian* (San Francisco) for Sept. 16, 1848. Joseph Holman, one of the associates of Farnham, who settled in Oregon, left a narrative of the Farnham party which can be found in S. A. Clarke, *Pioneer Days of Oregon Hist.* (1905), and elsewhere.] J. S.

**FARNSWORTH, ELON JOHN** (July 30, 1837–July 3, 1863), soldier, was born at Green Oak, Mich., where he received his early education. When he was seventeen years old, his father and mother, James Patten and Achsah (Hudson) Farnsworth, moved to Rockton, Ill., where his mother died soon after arrival. In 1855, young Farnsworth entered the University of Michigan, but in the winter of 1857–58 left college to join Gen. A. S. Johnston's Utah Expedition against the Mormons, as a forage-master. In 1861, he hastened home to join the 8th Illinois Cavalry which his uncle, Col. John Franklin Farnsworth [*q.v.*], was organizing. He became first lieutenant and regimental adjutant, and on Christmas Day, 1861, a captain. In the ensuing two years, which covered the Peninsular campaign, it has been said of Farnsworth that he never missed a battle or skirmish, forty-one in all, in which his regiment was engaged (James Barnet, *The Martyrs and Heroes of Illinois in the Great Rebellion*, 1865). In the spring of 1863, he was commended in orders by Gen. Pleasanton for gallant service in the field; and soon after, Pleasanton appointed him aide-de-camp on his staff, after efficient work as acting chief quartermaster of the IV Army Corps. On June 29, 1863, Farnsworth was promoted from captain to brigadier-general, United States Volunteers, in Kilpatrick's cavalry division; and in justification of this promotion Pleasanton wrote: "Nature made him a general" (letter to J. F. Farnsworth, *Farnsworth Memorial*, p. 322).

In the Gettysburg campaign, Farnsworth's brigade was sent in pursuit of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart's raiding force, and later on July 3, 1863, was in position near Little Round Top on the left flank of the Union army. Here, he received peremptory orders from Kilpatrick to charge the right flank of the Confederate lines. The ground was uneven and broken; the enemy was well posted behind fences and stone walls; everything was unfavorable for a charge. Farnsworth entered a dignified protest but was overruled. The cavalry charge which followed was one of the bravest as well as one of the most disastrous of the entire war; and by military writers has been compared to that of the Light Brigade at Balaclava (C. D. Rhodes, *History of the Cavalry of the Army of the Potomac*, 1900, p. 68). Although the gallant movement penetrated the enemy's lines for nearly two miles and resulted in the desired withdrawal from the front lines of several regiments of Confederate infantry, Farnsworth received five mortal wounds and his devoted command lost nearly one-fourth of its numbers (*Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, 1887, III, 328–29, 376, 393–96). By his contemporaries he was regarded as a hero. Buried not far from where he fell in battle, his remains were disinterred by his uncle, Col. John F. Farnsworth, and transported to Rockton, Ill., for permanent interment. Farnsworth never married.

[Biographical sketch and complete genealogy of Farnsworth's family in Moses F. Farnsworth, *Farnsworth Memorial* (1897), p. 318, in which reference is made to Abner Hard, *Hist. of the Eighth Cavalry Regt., Ill. Volunteers* (1868); information from the Ill. State Hist. Soc.] C. D. R.

**FARNSWORTH, JOHN FRANKLIN** (Mar. 27, 1820–July 14, 1897), politician and soldier, was born at Eaton, Canada, of New England ancestry, the son of John Farnsworth and his wife, Sally Patten. At an early age he became a resident of Michigan, practising surveying. In 1842 he set up as a lawyer in St. Charles, Ill., and on Oct. 12, 1846, he married Mary A. Clark. He entered politics as a Democrat but after 1846 he espoused the anti-slavery cause as a supporter of Owen Lovejoy. About 1852 he moved to Chicago and in 1856 he was elected to Congress as a Republican from the 2nd or Chicago district, the Democratic *State Register* characterizing him as "a full-blown Lovejoy abolitionist" (Sept. 25, 1856). In 1858 he was reëlected from the same district. He gained the approval of his anti-slavery constituents by a resolution of inquiry into violations of provisions of the Ashburton Treaty with regard to the slave-trade (*Aurora Beacon*, Jan. 6, 1859), and by a resolution satirizing Buchanan's proposal to annex Cuba by the suggestion of annexing British America (*Belleville Advocate*, Feb. 9, 1859). He was defeated for renomination in 1860 by Isaac N. Arnold, and refused to run as an independent.

At the outbreak of the Civil War, Farnsworth raised the 8th Illinois Cavalry, which was attached to the Army of the Potomac. His nephew, Elon J. Farnsworth [*q.v.*], served under him for a time as captain. J. F. Farnsworth was promoted brigadier-general Nov. 29, 1862, but had previously commanded a cavalry brigade. He served in the Peninsular and Antietam campaigns. Disabled by severe injuries at the end of 1862, he resigned his commission and took the seat in Congress to which he had been elected in the fall. He assumed decisive ground in the Illinois campaign of 1863 on behalf of the Emancipation Proclamation. He voted for the Thir-

teenth Amendment and spoke for the repeal of the Fugitive-Slave Law (*Rockford Register,* July 9, 16, 1864). He was reëlected to Congress in the fall of 1864, and by virtue of successive elections served until Mar. 3, 1873. With regard to Reconstruction, he was at first one of the radicals. He spoke in favor of the Fourteenth Amendment and of the reconstruction acts. He urged the impeachment of Johnson in 1867, and took an active part in the impeachment proceedings of 1868.

The election of 1870 made it evident that Farnsworth had outstripped the sentiment of his district. His former majority of 14,000 in the election of 1870 had sunk to a plurality of 300. He was not renominated in 1872. In 1874 he contested the 4th District against Hurlbut, the Republican candidate, in a hot campaign (*Chicago Tribune,* Oct. 12 and 28, 1874), and in 1880 was mentioned as a possible Democratic candidate for governor (*Illinois State Register,* Jan. 9, 16, 1880). His political career, however, was at an end. In that year he removed to Washington where he practised law until his death, and acquired a considerable fortune in real estate.

[In addition to contemporary newspapers and the *Congressional Globe,* see Moses F. Farnsworth, *Farnsworth Memorial* (1897); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); Abner Hard, *Hist. of the Eighth Cavalry Regt., Ill. Volunteers* (1868); *Chicago Tribune* and *Evening Star* (Washington), July 15, 1897.] T. C. P.

**FARNUM, DUSTIN LANCY** (May 27, 1874–July 3, 1929), actor, was born at Hampton Beach, N. H. The theatre was his natural heritage, for his father was Greenleaf Dustin Farnum, actor and theatrical manager, and his mother, Clara Adèle Legros, actress and opera singer. In his early childhood his parents moved to Bucksport, Me., where he attended the public schools and the East Maine Conference Seminary, a Methodist institution. He began his stage career while still at school, appearing in the summer months with Thomas Shea, and with "The Hidden Hand" Company. With these groups he did singing and dancing specialties. His first opportunity to play parts came in 1897 when he toured New England with the Ethel Tucker Repertoire Company. Then followed eighteen months with Margaret Mather, "stock" in Buffalo, two seasons with Chauncey Olcott, and a short engagement with Blanche Walsh in *Marcelle.* When *Arizona,* by Augustus Thomas, was revived with a new cast at the Academy of Music, New York, Aug. 19, 1901, Farnum made a great success in the part of Lieutenant Denton.

Because of his good work in *Arizona,* he was selected to play the title rôle in *The Virginian,* the dramatization of the book of that title. After a road tour, the play opened at the Manhattan Theatre, New York, Jan. 5, 1904, and Farnum rose from comparative obscurity to fame in a night. The production was so successful that it ran for three seasons. He next appeared in *The Ranger* by Augustus Thomas, and afterward in the short-lived *Rector's Garden* by Byron Ongley. In a long road tour in Edwin Milton Royle's *The Squaw Man* which followed, Farnum pleased critics and public alike as Jim Carston, a part previously created and played with much success by William Faversham. In *Cameo Kirby,* which had been a failure, with Nat Goodwin as star, Farnum won new laurels as a romantic actor. In January 1911, he played in a revival of *The Squaw Man.* Later in the same year he acted with his brother, William, in a Civil War melodrama, *The Littlest Rebel,* by Edward Peple. At the Lyric Theatre, New York, Apr. 28, 1913, he reappeared as Lieutenant Denton in a star revival of *Arizona.*

As public taste changed, the gun-play melodrama went out of favor. Farnum had long considered going into the motion pictures and in the fall of 1913 commenced acting before the camera. He repeated on the screen his success on the speaking stage, playing many of his former parts. Again, as with the speaking stage, the up-to-the-minute public demanded new fare. The brawny, all-virtuous hero gave way to the sophisticated youth of the "flapper" drama. The smaller towns still reveled in melodrama, however, so Farnum continued for some years in his favorite style of acting, retiring from the screen about 1925. He was admirably fitted by natural endowment for playing romantic parts, and according to the majority of his critics, he played them extremely well, excelling especially in the portrayal of Western types. He had a beautiful, "almost a poetic face," according to one critic, with large brown eyes, dark, wavy hair, and a deep resonant voice. It was inevitable that he should become a matinée idol *par excellence.*

Farnum married Agnes Muir Johnston in 1898, and was divorced from her in 1908. On Mar. 23, 1909, he married Mary Elizabeth Conwell, from whom he obtained a divorce on Aug. 18, 1924. That same year he was married to Winifred Kingston, by whom he had a daughter Estelle.

[John Parker, ed., *Who's Who in the Theatre* (1925); Walter Browne and E. De Roy Koch, eds., *Who's Who on the Stage* (1908); T. Allston Brown, *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage,* vol. III (1903); *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Tribune,* July 5, 1929; *N. Y. Dramatic Mirror,* Jan. 8, 1910; *Variety,* July 10, 1929; clippings on Dustin Farnum in the Robinson Locke Collection in the N. Y. Pub. Lib.] L. H. F.

Farragut

**FARRAGUT, DAVID GLASGOW** (July 5, 1801–Aug. 14, 1870), naval officer, was the second of the five children of George Farragut [*q.v.*] and Elizabeth (Shine) Farragut and the third member of his family to enter the navy, being preceded by his father and elder brother. He was born at Campbell's Station, a few miles southwest of Knoxville, Tenn., and his name was always borne on the rolls of the navy as from that state. His paternal grandparents were Spanish, and one of his maternal grandparents was Scottish. His mother died when he was seven and he never saw his father after he was nine. The removal of his family to New Orleans in 1807 and the entrance of his father and brother into the navy were important factors in the shaping of his career. It happened that the father of Commander (later Commodore) David Porter was cared for in his last illness by the Farraguts and died at their house. Out of gratitude, Porter, then commander of the New Orleans naval station, adopted young Farragut and promised him a berth in the navy. In 1810, under the protection of his friend and guardian, he was placed in school, first in Washington and later in Chester, Pa., the home of Porter, and on Dec. 17 of that year, at the age of nine and a half, he was appointed midshipman by the secretary of the navy. Until 1814 his name was borne on the rolls of the navy as James Glasgow, and thereafter as David Glasgow, a change doubtless made in honor of his guardian.

In 1811 when Porter was given command of the frigate *Essex,* Farragut sailed with him and saw his first sea service off the coast of the United States. In the War of 1812 when the *Essex* made her memorable cruise in the Pacific Ocean, the young midshipman gave a good account of himself in the various duties that fell to him. He was made a prize master of one of the *Essex's* prizes, the *Alexander Barclay.* "This was an important event in my life," he wrote in his journal, "and when it was decided that I was to take the ship to Valparaiso, I felt no little pride at finding myself in command at twelve years of age." The cruise of the *Essex* came to an end on Mar. 28, 1814, in the harbor of Valparaiso, in her engagement with the *Phoebe* and *Cherub,* the longest and most bloody sea fight of Farragut's career. During the fight he performed the duties of captain's aide, quarter gunner, and powder boy, to the entire satisfaction of Porter, who commended him and would have recommended him for promotion had it not been for his extreme youth.

A prisoner on parole until exchanged in November 1814, Farragut was then ordered to the brig *Spark,* which was fitting for sea at New York, but before she was ready to sail the war came to an end. The years 1815–20 he spent chiefly in the Mediterranean, first on board the *Independence,* then the *Washington,* and finally the *Franklin.* These were all ships of the line and flew the broad pennant of the commander of the squadron. Farragut served as aide, successively, to Commodore Bainbridge, Commodore Chauncey, and Captain Gallagher. Engaged in routine cruising on the station, the American fleet visited the principal Mediterranean ports and gave the young midshipman an opportunity to see many places of historical interest, to enlarge his knowledge of foreign peoples, and to enjoy the social diversions of the squadron. When Charles Folsom, his naval schoolmaster, was appointed American consul to Tunis, Farragut eagerly embraced the opportunity that was happily offered to accompany Folsom to his new post and to pursue there systematically a course of studies under his direction. For nine months Farragut remained ashore, studying the French and Italian languages, English literature, and mathematics. Entering his profession with little schooling, he had to acquire knowledge as best he could. It is rather remarkable that he learned to speak French, Italian, Spanish, and Arabic. In 1826, when living in New Haven, he attended the lectures of the professors at Yale College, and later, when stationed in Washington, those at the Smithsonian Institution, missing but one in eighteen months. His chief schoolroom, however, was the quarterdeck of a ship and his chief schoolmasters were the gallant officers of the old navy, Porter, Bainbridge, and others, for whom he had throughout his life a profound admiration.

Having been made an acting lieutenant of the brig *Spark,* Farragut in 1821 was sent home from the Mediterranean to take an examination preliminary to promotion to a lieutenancy. Ignorant of unimportant naval minutiæ, he failed in the test. In a subsequent examination he passed twenty-second in a class of fifty-three. In 1822 he made a cruise on the *John Adams,* detailed to carry to Vera Cruz Joel R. Poinsett, the American minister to Mexico; and in the two following years he served with the Mosquito fleet under Commodore David Porter, who was entrusted with the difficult task of suppressing piracy in the West Indies. This service while somewhat trivial was at the same time perilous and exhausting. Farragut's first orders were to the *Grey Hound,* commanded by his brother. Later he served as executive officer of the *Sea Gull,* the flagship of the fleet, and for a time he commanded the *Ferret*—his first command of a naval ves-

sel, the obtaining of which he regarded as an important milestone in his career. He participated in several of the encounters with the pirates and acquired a knowledge of the Gulf of Mexico and neighboring waters that was to prove useful in the Civil War.

On Sept. 24, 1823, Farragut married Susan C. Marchant of Norfolk, Va., and henceforth until 1861 made that city his home. A large part of the three decades preceding 1855, when he first became eligible for the highest commands, he spent there, on duty or leave of absence. It was a slack time in the navy and berths at sea were few and hard to obtain. Farragut made numerous requests of the Navy Department for active duty, but these were often refused, for he was not a favorite of the government, with which he had to contend for an equitable share of employment.

In 1840 his wife died after an illness of sixteen years, having been tenderly cared for by her husband, who proved himself a skilful nurse. "When Captain Farragut dies," said a Norfolk woman, who witnessed his devotion, "he should have a monument reaching to the skies made by every wife in the city contributing a stone." On Dec. 26, 1843, he married again and established another tie with Norfolk, for his second wife, Virginia Loyall, was the eldest daughter of William Loyall, a highly esteemed resident of that city and a member of a family with many naval connections.

In 1825 Farragut obtained his lieutenancy and performed his first duty in that grade on the frigate *Brandywine,* then under orders to convey Lafayette to France. In 1829–30 he served on the sloop *Vandalia* off the coast of Brazil, and early in 1833 as the executive officer of the sloop *Natchez,* when she visited Charleston, S. C., to support the federal government in its dispute with the nullifiers. Later in the same year she proceeded to the Brazil Station, where Farragut remained until 1834 when he returned home with the schooner *Boxer.* Four years later he was again at sea, this time as commander of the sloop *Erie,* with orders to proceed to Mexican waters and protect American citizens and property there, endangered by the war between Mexico and France. At Vera Cruz he observed with keen professional interest the attack and capture of the castle of San Juan de Ulloa by the French and formed definite views on the reduction of forts by naval vessels, which were serviceable when he was faced by similar tasks during the Civil War. His last sea duty in the lieutenant's grade was that of executive officer of the ship of the line *Delaware* of the Brazil Station. In 1842, while on this station, he was assigned to the command of the sloop *Decatur,* a position in keeping with the new rank of commander, which he had attained on Sept. 9, 1841.

When in 1845 the government's difficulties with Mexico became acute, Farragut requested the secretary of the navy to assign him to duties in the Gulf, urging as qualifications his long service there and his knowledge of the Spanish language and asking that he might be permitted to participate in the capture of the castle of San Juan de Ulloa, which he thought should be effected by the navy. Not until February 1847, when he was ordered to take command of the sloop *Saratoga,* was his request granted. Before he reached Vera Cruz the castle had surrendered to the army under Gen. Scott, and the officers of the navy, in the words of Farragut, "paid the penalty—not one of them will ever wear an Admiral's flag" (L. Farragut, *post,* p. 158). Acquiring, as Farragut thought, the ill will of his commodore, he was assigned unimportant blockade duties with no chance of distinguishing himself; and he became involved in a dispute with that officer over this assignment. On asking to be relieved, he was ordered home and thus ended what he regarded the most mortifying cruise of his career.

In 1850–52 Farragut was employed in Washington and Norfolk on ordnance duties, and, assisted by other officers, drew up a book of ordnance regulations. Results obtained by him while serving as assistant inspector of ordnance were published in 1854 under the title of *Experiments to ascertain the Strength and Endurance of Navy Guns.* On the outbreak of the Crimean War, he requested that he be sent to the seat of war as an official observer, but he failed to interest the department in his application. In August 1854, he was ordered to proceed to the West Coast and establish a navy-yard at Mare Island, a task of considerable difficulty, and of some privations on account of primitive living conditions. While in California, on Sept. 14, 1855, he was commissioned captain. At the end of four years he returned East by way of the Isthmus of Panama and soon after his arrival was ordered to take command of the sloop *Brooklyn* and proceed to Mexico, then in the throes of one of its periodical revolutions. His chief duty was to carry down and convey from port to port Robert McLane, the new American minister to Mexico. In October 1860 he was relieved of this command.

The winter of 1860–61 Farragut spent at Norfolk on waiting orders. He was in the sixtieth year of his age and he had been in the navy more than forty-nine years. Since 1815 only the Mexican War had offered naval officers an opportunity

to win professional distinction and this Farragut had missed. There were officers lower in rank with greater professional reputation. None surpassed him, however, in the painstaking performance of duties, in acute observation of all naval matters, and in ambition for professional success. But these qualities do not always bring advancement in time of peace. Farragut was not a courtier. His independence in thought and act disqualified him as a "climber" either inside or outside of the navy. The Civil War gave him the opportunity he had long desired and for which he was thoroughly prepared.

On Apr. 17, 1861, the Virginia Convention passed an ordinance of secession and it became necessary for Farragut, living in a Virginia city, to choose between the state and the nation. On the morning of the 18th at a common meeting-place where he and his friends were wont to talk over the political news, he expressed his dissatisfaction with the action of the convention and his conviction that Lincoln was justified in calling for troops. One of his friends impatiently informed him that a person of those sentiments "could not live in Norfolk." He calmly replied, "Well, then, I can live somewhere else" (*Ibid.*, p. 204). That evening he left for the North with his family. At the village of Hastings-on-the-Hudson he secured a small cottage, resolved to remain there until called into service. As all officers of Southern descent were under suspicion, he remained unemployed until September when he was made a member of a naval board convened at the New York navy-yard to select incapacitated officers for retirement—a safe and innocuous position.

The most important step toward opening the Mississippi River, one of the major Federal objectives, was the capture of New Orleans. By the fall of 1861 the government had decided upon a naval expedition against this city, and realizing its difficulty and magnitude, sought diligently for an officer equal to the task. Among others, Farragut was considered and his action in leaving Norfolk strongly recommended him, showing, it was thought, "great superiority of character, clear perception of duty, and firm resolution in the performance of it" (Mahan, *post*, p. 123). Proceeding cautiously, the Department ordered Commander D. D. Porter to visit Farragut and sound him out. On receiving a favorable account from its emissary, it ordered him to report in Washington and at a conference held on Dec. 21, at which he showed much enthusiasm for the enterprise and confidence in its success, he was chosen to undertake it. On Jan. 9, he was formaily appointed to the command of the West Gulf Blockading Squadron, whose limits were specified as extending from St. Andrew's Bay, Fla., to the Rio Grande and including the coasts of Mexico and Yucatan. His confidential orders, issued on January 20, directed him to "proceed up the Mississippi River and reduce the defenses which guard the approaches to New Orleans, when you will appear off that city and take possession of it under the guns of your squadron" (L. Farragut, *post*, 209).

On Feb. 2, 1862, Farragut sailed from Hampton Roads in the steam sloop *Hartford*, his flagship, a new vessel and one of the finest in the navy, and eighteen days later arrived at Ship Island, the naval rendezvous, about one hundred miles north-northeast of the mouth of the Mississippi. Two months elapsed before his fleet, consisting of seventeen vessels and a mortar flotilla, was ready for operations. The Confederate defenses, forty miles above the Gulf, consisted of Fort Jackson on the west side of the Mississippi, Fort St. Philip a little higher up on the east side, and a flotilla above the forts. The armament of the Unionists was inferior to that of the Confederates (Mahan, *post*, p. 128). The battle began on Apr. 18 with the bombardment of Fort Jackson by the mortar flotilla, commanded by Commander David D. Porter [*q.v.*]. This continued for several days and nights without doing any considerable damage. Farragut now reached the momentous decision to run by the forts before they were reduced—a movement contrary to the orders of the Department and the advice of some of his ablest officers. Before daylight on the 24th, the seventeen ships advanced in a line of three divisions, with Farragut leading the second division. They encountered a terrific fire and the *Hartford* narrowly escaped destruction from a fire-raft, but all but three ships passed the forts. They next engaged the Confederate flotilla and destroyed eleven of its vessels, including the ram *Manassas*. The Union fleet lost 184 men. On the day after the battle it reached New Orleans, which, being defenseless, was taken without bloodshed. On Apr. 28 Forts Jackson and St. Philip surrendered to the mortar flotilla. By his energy, audacity, and application of correct strategic principles, Farragut had won a magnificent victory, the moral effect of which abroad as well as at home was exceedingly great. His achievement made him the leading officer of the navy, a distinction which he held until his death. On July 11, 1862, the President approved a resolution of Congress tendering him and his officers and men the thanks of the nation, and on July 30, he was commissioned a rear-admiral (taking rank from July 16), the first officer in that grade.

Had his movements been left to his own discretion, Farragut, after the capture of New Orleans, would have proceeded against the defenses of Mobile. The government at Washington however had given peremptory orders that he should open the Mississippi to the northward and join the fleet of Flag Officer Davis [*q.v.*], which in June captured Memphis. With considerable difficulty he ascended the Mississippi to Vicksburg and on June 28 ran past the defenses there, giving and receiving a heavy fire and losing forty-five men. As Vicksburg was impregnable to a naval attack, about the middle of July he returned to New Orleans. For the rest of 1862 he was chiefly employed in blockade duties. Galveston, Corpus Christi, and Sabine Pass surrendered to his ships, and by December he held the whole of the Gulf coast within the limits of his command, except for Mobile.

The year 1863 opened with several reverses on Farragut's station—the recapture of Galveston and Sabine Pass, the sinking of the *Hatteras* by the *Alabama,* and the escape of the *Florida* from Mobile. These were sore trials to the admiral, whose orders to guard the lower Mississippi held him to that part of his station. He longed for a chance to attack Mobile. "I would have had it long since, or been thrashed out of it," he wrote on Jan. 7. In March he attacked the batteries at Port Hudson and two of his vessels, the flagship and a gunboat, passed them—an achievement he ranked next to the capture of New Orleans. On Aug. 1 he sailed for New York on the *Hartford* for a brief respite from his arduous labors. He and his historic flagship, which had been struck 240 times by shot and shell, were objects of much interest in New York. The Chamber of Commerce adopted and presented to him resolutions of congratulation engrossed on parchment, and the Union League Club gave him a sword, with scabbard of gold and silver and with hilt set in brilliants.

Early in January 1864, Farragut again hoisted his flag on the *Hartford* and sailed from New York for his station in the Gulf, where a new task awaited him, the capture of the Confederate defenses in Mobile Bay. In opening the Mississippi he had shown himself a master of strategy. At Mobile Bay the problem was chiefly one of naval tactics. Would he prove himself equally proficient in this more restricted sphere? Offensive operations had to await the arrival of the necessary ironclads and the movements of the army. The entrance to Mobile Bay, thirty miles from the Gulf, was defended on its east side by Fort Morgan; and nearly three miles distant on its west side by Fort Gaines. Close under Fort



Morgan was an open channel used by blockade runners. The rest of the passage was obstructed by a double row of mines, then known as "torpedoes." Farragut's fleet consisted of four ironclads and fourteen wooden ships. Early in the morning of Aug. 5 it steamed down the channel under Fort Morgan, the ironclads leading, followed by the wooden ships lashed in pairs. The *Hartford* was about the middle of the line, carrying the admiral, who had taken an elevated position in the main rigging of his ship, in order to observe the battle from the best vantage-point. At 6.45 A.M. the *Tecumseh* fired the first shot. Soon the forts answered, and then the Confederate flotilla. Off Fort Morgan the *Tecumseh* struck a torpedo and went down, carrying with her nearly all her officers and crew. The other ships fell into confusion. The *Brooklyn* in front of the *Hartford* stopped. Hesitating for a moment at this crisis in the battle, Farragut decided to go on and ordered the *Hartford* to be driven ahead at full speed. A warning cry came from the *Brooklyn,* "Torpedoes ahead!" "Damn the torpedoes!" shouted the admiral, as the *Hartford* took the lead. Her bottom scraped them as she passed over them, but none exploded, although their primers snapped. Soon the whole fleet had safely passed the forts, above which the Confederate flotilla was encountered and dispersed. The loss of the Unionists was 315; of the Confederates 157. On Aug. 7 Fort Gaines surrendered, and on the 23rd, Fort Morgan. The battle of Mobile Bay was the crowning event of Farragut's life. He had reached a position as preëminent in the American navy as that of Nelson had been in the British navy. On Dec. 23 the President approved a bill creating the office of vice-admiral and Farragut was immediately named to fill it. On July 26, 1866, he was commissioned admiral, a grade especially created for him.

Soon after the battle of Mobile Bay the Department chose Farragut to command the naval forces that were to be employed in the reduction of the defenses of Wilmington, N. C. When it learned that his health had been undermined by his long service in Southern waters, it relieved him from the new assignment and gave him a leave of absence. On Dec. 12 he reached New York and was formally received by the city, with many expressions of gratitude and admiration. A few days later some of its leading citizens presented him with a purse of $50,000 in expectation that he would buy a house in the city and reside there, which he did. Late in January 1865, an ominous threat of the Confederate forces on the James River led the Department to send Farragut to meet it. The situation proved not

to be serious, and he returned to Washington. This was his last active service in the Civil War.

In April 1867, Farragut was chosen to command the European Squadron and in June he hoisted an admiral's flag on the frigate *Franklin* and sailed for the waters that he had first visited fifty years earlier when a young midshipman. It was a tour of good will. Everywhere he was received with the consideration due to his exalted rank and notable achievements. The cruise came to an end with his arrival in New York on Nov. 10, 1868. In 1869 he visited the Mare Island navy-yard which he had established shortly before the Civil War. On the return trip he suffered at Chicago a severe attack of the heart. Although he rallied, he never completely regained his health. In the summer of 1870 he sailed on the dispatch boat *Tallapoosa* to visit the commandant of the navy-yard at Portsmouth, N. H. He had a premonition that the end was approaching. As he left the ship he was heard to say, "This is the last time I shall ever tread the deck of a man-of-war" (L. Farragut, *post*, p. 541). He died at the house of the commandant in the seventieth year of his age. His body found a temporary resting place at Portsmouth. In September, at the request of the citizens of New York, it was brought to that city, arriving on the 30th, which was observed as a day of mourning. A procession which included President Grant, members of his cabinet, many naval and army officers, and ten thousand soldiers, escorted the body to a train at Forty-seventh St. Thence it was conveyed to Woodlawn Cemetery, Westchester County. Farragut left one child, Loyall Farragut, who died in 1916, leaving no children.

Physically, Farragut was of medium size—his stature about five feet, six and a half inches, and weight not over 150 pounds until late in life when he put on considerable flesh. His complexion was sallow and swarthy, with indications of his Spanish descent. In appearance he was neither handsome nor striking. Owing to much tropical service, he suffered from considerable sickness, including sun-stroke, cholera, and yellow fever. Always alert in body, he delighted in physical exercises, and was a good fencer. His superiority, however, lay chiefly in his mental and moral qualities — courage, initiative, decision, good judgment, and willingness to accept responsibility. He had great aptitude for the naval profession and a strong desire to succeed in it. Secretary Welles said that he would more willingly take risks in order to obtain great results than any other officer of high rank in either the army or the navy, and Lincoln was of the opinion that his appointment was the best made during the war (Welles, *post*, I, 230, 440).

Farragut

Farragut had two absorbing interests, his profession and his family. His most revealing letters, even upon military matters, are those addressed to his wife or to his son. He was not fond of writing, least of all about his naval successes, and he wrote relatively little. One of his principles of warfare is found in his orders to his captains for passing the batteries at Port Hudson, when he said, "The best protection against the enemy's fire is a well-directed fire from our own guns" (L. Farragut, *post*, p. 316). A few days before the battle of New Orleans he wrote to his wife, "As to being prepared for defeat, I certainly am not. Any man who is prepared for defeat would be half defeated before he commenced. I hope for success; shall do all in my power to secure it, and trust to God for the rest." Before a battle he calculated thus: "I have to take this place. The chances are that I shall lose some of my vessels by torpedoes or the guns of the enemy, but with some of my fleet afloat I shall eventually be successful. I cannot lose all. I will attack regardless of consequences, and never turn back" (L. Farragut, *post*, pp. 218, 316, 544). The letters of Farragut, who late in life joined the Protestant Episcopal Church, contain many expressions of dependence upon a Higher Power. At the critical moment in the battle of Mobile Bay he offered up this prayer: "O God, who created man and gave him reason, direct me what to do. Shall I go on?" "It seemed," the Admiral said, "as if in answer a voice commanded, 'Go on!'" (Mahan, *post*, p. 277).

The most artistic memorial to Farragut is the statue of him by St. Gaudens in Madison Square, New York, given by the Farragut Monument Association and unveiled in 1881. There was also completed that year for the federal government a colossal bronze statue of him, the work of Miss Vinnie Ream, which stands in Farragut Square, Washington. In 1893 Boston erected in Marine Park a statue of him by H. H. Kitson. There is in the Naval Academy Chapel, Annapolis, a memorial window to him, a gift of the graduates of the Academy. Farragut's achievements have been celebrated in verse by Oliver Wendell Holmes, Henry Howard Brownell, and other poets. According to his son, the most satisfactory portraits are those in the Union League Club, and the University Club, New York.

[Record of Officers, Bureau of Navigation, 1810–1870; *Report of Secretary of the Navy*, 1861–65; *Official Records* (*Navy*), 1 ser., vols. XVIII–XXI; L. Farragut, *Life and Letters of David Glasgow Farragut* (1879); A. T. Mahan, *Admiral Farragut* (1892), and *The Gulf and Inland Waters* (1885); R. M. Thompson and R. Wainwright, "Confidential Correspondence of

Gustavus Vasa Fox," *Nav. Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. IX (1918); *U. S. Naval Inst. Proc.*, XLIX (1923), pp. 1961–86; H. W. Wilson, *Battleships in Action* (1926), I, 13–18, 28–31; *Diary of Gideon Welles* (1911), vols. I and II; *Mag. of Hist.* (1922), vol. XXII, extra number, no. 87; J. E. Montgomery, *Our Admiral's Flag Abroad* (1869); *Mil. Order of Loyal Legion, Commandery of D. C., War Papers*, no. 98, Dec. 1916.] C. O. P.

**FARRAGUT, GEORGE** (Sept. 29, 1755–June 4, 1817), naval and army officer, was born in Ciudadela, the capital of Minorca, when that Spanish island was a British possession. He was the son of Anthony Ferragut and Juana Mesquida, both of Spanish extraction. For more than five centuries members of the Ferragut family had held prominent offices in Minorca in the army, the government, and the church.

George was sent to school at Barcelona but at the age of ten he went to sea and from 1765 to 1772 was employed chiefly in the Mediterranean. Toward the end of this period, while in the Russian service, he aided in the destruction of a Turkish fleet as one of the crew of a fireship that set fire to the fleet. In 1773–75 he was employed in the American seas trading chiefly between Havana and Vera Cruz. In the latter year at New Orleans on hearing of the difficulties between Great Britain and her colonies, he resolved to devote his life and fortune to the service of the Americans. Proceeding to Port-au-Prince he exchanged his cargo for cannon, arms, and ammunition and sailed for Charleston, S. C., where he arrived in 1776. Following a period of service as a lieutenant on a privateer, he was appointed, in 1778, a first lieutenant in the South Carolina navy. After superintending the construction of some of the galleys of that state, he was given the command of one of them and going to sea fought a severe action in the Savannah River.

In 1779 Farragut assisted at the defense of Savannah and in the following year was actively employed at the siege of Charleston, on the fall of which city he was taken prisoner. When exchanged he went to sea on board a privateer and in an engagement had his right arm badly shattered by a musket ball. The use of his arm he never fully recovered. Giving up sea service he made his way to Gen. Marion's headquarters, where he acted as a volunteer. He also served in that capacity at the battle of Cowpens. Then, proceeding to Wilmington, N. C., he was appointed by Gov. Nash of that state to the command of a company of volunteer artillery, which took part in the battle of Beaufort Bridge. When Cornwallis invaded North Carolina, Farragut raised a company of volunteer cavalry with which he harassed the rear of the army of the enemy as it marched into Virginia. The state of North



Carolina made him a captain of cavalry and for his military services he received the thanks of Gen. Marion and of the governor of South Carolina.

After the Revolution Farragut earned a livelihood as a mariner until 1792 when Gen. Blount, governor of the Southwest Territory, invited him to take up his residence in Knoxville and appointed him a major of militia. In 1793 he served under Gen. Sevier in an expedition against the Cherokees. Farragut remained in Tennessee until 1807 when President Jefferson made him a sailing master in the navy, and in that year he removed to New Orleans and took command of a naval gunboat. In 1811 he was ordered to the Bay of Pascagoula, Miss., near which he had a large plantation. He was in the navy until discharged, Mar. 25, 1814. His last military service was performed at the battle of New Orleans.

In 1795 Farragut married Elizabeth Shine (1765–1808), who was born in Dobbs County, N. C. Of this union five children were born, the two eldest of whom, William A. C. and David G. Farragut [*q.v.*], were officers in the navy. Farragut died at Point Plaquet, West Pascagoula, Miss. He was a man of courage, a restless adventurer, "by profession a mariner," a fit sire for a great naval officer.

["Memorial of Geo. Farragut to Sec. of the Navy Wm. Jones, May 20, 1814," found in Miscellaneous Letters, vol. IV, no. 57, U. S. Navy Dept.; Loyall Farragut, *Life and Letters of David Glasgow Farragut* (1879), pp. 1–10.] C. O. P.

**FARRAR, EDGAR HOWARD** (June 20, 1849–Jan. 6, 1922), lawyer, for more than forty years an outstanding figure in the legal and political life of Louisiana, and New Orleans, was born at Concordia, La., the son of Thomas Prince and Anna (Girault) Farrar. He spent his early life in the Mississippi Delta and attended school in Baton Rouge, proceeding thence to the University of Virginia, where he graduated with the degree of M.A. in 1871. He then studied law at the University of Louisiana, was admitted to the bar in 1872, and commenced practise in New Orleans. Giving special attention to municipal and corporation law, he quickly established himself as an authority on those subjects, and in 1878 became assistant city attorney, being appointed city attorney two years later. In 1882, he was appointed by Paul Tulane [*q.v.*] one of the trustees of the fund to establish a university in Louisiana and for years thereafter devoted much of his time to the furtherance of the project. Meanwhile, induced by his experiences as city attorney, he turned his attention to municipal reform. He assisted in the organization and for many years was chairman of the Executive Commit-

tee of One Hundred established for the purpose of reforming the city government of New Orleans. He instigated and was one of the most active participants in the movement which resulted in the adoption and installation of an up-to-date sewerage and water system, and revolutionized the health statistics of the city, also drafting the legislation under the provisions of which the new system was constructed and operated. In 1890 during the Mafia agitation he was chairman of the Committee of Safety organized to bring the murderers of Chief-of-Police Hennessy to justice. He was also one of the leaders of the movement which opposed and defeated the proposition to prolong the charter of the Louisiana state lottery. Till within a short time of the campaign preceding the presidential election of 1896, though a strong Democrat, he had not participated to any extent in national politics, but on the nomination of W. J. Bryan he helped to organize the National Democracy or "Gold Democrats," was appointed temporary chairman of the Gold Democratic Convention held at Indianapolis, where he made a speech on the currency question which attracted national attention, and was active in procuring the nomination of John M. Palmer for the presidency. He also participated vigorously in the electoral campaign which followed. In 1906 he was appointed president of the Louisiana Tax Commission, and retained that position for two years. In 1907 he again became a national figure through his celebrated letter to President Roosevelt, drawing attention to the "post roads clause" of the United States Constitution and maintaining that under this clause the federal government had plenary power to enact legislation for the purpose of controlling both interstate and intrastate railroads. His contention was the subject of bitter criticism throughout the country to which he replied in a pamphlet (*The Post Road Power in the Federal Constitution,* 1907) which, in legal circles, was considered a masterly production. In 1910 he was retained as counsel for Edward Hines in the Lorimer Investigation. At the request of Gov. Hall in 1912, he drafted a revision of the state laws affecting corporations, which aroused the vehement opposition of the corporate interests as too radical, and it failed of passage in the legislature. In the following year he prepared the Tax Reform Amendment to the state constitution which has been termed "the greatest practical scheme of taxation and assessment written in America," but his advanced views did not commend themselves to the people and the proposed amendment was decisively defeated. He was associate counsel with S. Untermeyer for the Pujo

Farrar

Congressional Investigating Committee in 1912–13.

Farrar was essentially a corporation lawyer and held a general retainer from some of the largest organizations in the state. Perhaps the outstanding feature of his legal career was the preparation of the ordinances and contracts required in connection with the consolidation of the New Orleans street railways, which he carried to a successful conclusion, contrary to the universal opinion that it was impossible to reconcile the numerous conflicting interests involved. "Practically all of the important bond legislation in the state for a period of forty years was handled by him or through him" (*American Bar Association Journal,* January 1922, p. 12). Despite his corporation connections, however, he had wide sympathies, and consistently supported all measures having for their object the betterment of the people and improvement of the law. Other pamphlet publications of his were: *The Legal Remedy for Plutocracy* (1902), and *State and Federal Quarantine Powers* (1905). He died at Biloxi, Miss. His wife was Lucinda Davis Stamps of New Orleans, whom he married in 1878.

[H. P. Dart, *Edward Howard Farrar* (1922); "The Farrar Family" in *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.,* vols. VII–X (1899–1903); *La. Bar Asso. Report,* 1922, p. 197; *Lawyer and Banker,* Feb. 1913.] H. W. H. K.

**FARRAR, JOHN** (July 1, 1779–May 8, 1853), mathematician, physicist, astronomer, was the son of Deacon Samuel and Mary (Hoar) Farrar of Lincoln, Mass., formerly part of Concord. He graduated from Harvard College with the degree of B.A. in 1803, older than most of his classmates. Feeling that he had a call to the ministry, he then proceeded to Andover Theological Seminary, but in 1805 decided to return to Harvard as a tutor in Greek. A year later he received the degree of M.A. and in 1807 he was made Hollis Professor of mathematics and natural philosophy. This position he held until 1836, when he resigned because of ill health. He was elected a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1808 and was its recording secretary, 1811–23, member of the committee on publications, 1828–29, and vice-president, 1829–31. He was twice married: first, to Lucy Maria Buckminster of Portsmouth, N. H., and second, to Eliza Ware Rotch (1791–1870), writer of numerous books for the young. He received the honorary degree of LL.D. from Brown University in 1833. He died at Cambridge, Mass.

Farrar wrote numerous articles for the *Transactions* of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and various monographs of meteor-

ology and astronomy. He did much to make the astronomical and elementary mathematical literature of Europe known in America, translating or adapting the arithmetic of Lacroix (1818), the algebras of Euler (1818) and Lacroix (1825), the spherical trigonometry of Lacroix and Bézout (1820), the geometry of Legendre (2nd ed., 1825), *Elements of Electricity* (1826) and *An Experimental Treatise on Optics* (1826) from the *Précis Élémentaire de Physique* of Biot, the astronomy of Biot (1827), and a tract on comets from Arago (1832). He also wrote *An Elementary Treatise on the Application of Trigonometry to Projection, Mensuration, Navigation, and Surveying* (1822); and *An Elementary Treatise on Mechanics* (1825). He was not a man of much genius, but he had a gift for exposition and a knowledge of French scientific literature that enabled him to be of service to American schools.

[Brief mention in S. A. Eliot, *A Hist. of Cambridge, Mass.* (1913); Josiah Quincy, *Hist. of Harvard Univ.* (1840); *Andover Theol. Sem. Gen. Cat.* (1909); *Hist. Cat. Brown Univ.* (1914); *Quinquennial Cat. of Harvard Univ.* (1925); official letters received in reply to questions.] D. E. S.

**FARRAR, TIMOTHY** (Mar. 17, 1788–Oct. 27, 1874), jurist, author, traced his descent from Jacob Farrar, who came from England to America about 1650 and settled at Lancaster, Mass. He was born at New Ipswich, N. H., being the only son of Timothy Farrar, a major in the Revolutionary War, who for more than forty years served in the court of common pleas and the supreme court of New Hampshire. The father settled at New Ipswich in 1770 and on Oct. 14, 1779, married Anna, daughter of Capt. Edmund Bancroft of Pepperell. The younger Timothy was educated at Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass., and at Groton, Mass., entering Dartmouth College in 1803, where he graduated in 1807. He then studied law with Daniel Webster at Portsmouth, N. H., and, on his admission to the Rockingham bar at Exeter in 1810, commenced practise in his home town. In 1813, however, at the solicitation of Webster he became the latter's partner and removed to Portsmouth. When Webster established himself at Boston in 1816, Farrar continued to practise alone at Portsmouth, and in 1817 married Sarah, daughter of William Adams of that town. Five years later he was appointed secretary, treasurer, and librarian at Dartmouth College and took up residence at Hanover, where he also practised his profession. In 1824 he was appointed judge of the New Hampshire court of common pleas, a position which he held until the abolition of the court in 1833. His enforced retirement was a matter of regret to the community since he had exhibited great judicial qualifications, his written decisions being models of logical reasoning, his charges to the jury distinguished for their clarity, and his demeanor on the bench always dignified. On his retirement he resumed practise at Portsmouth, but in 1836 removed to Exeter where he engaged in financial business. In 1844 he took up his residence in Boston, and there passed the remainder of his life, engaging in various business enterprises in addition to an extensive law practise and much literary and historical work. As a legislative draftsman he was considered preëminent. Much of the more intricate legislative work of his period, not only in New Hampshire but in adjoining states, he put into its final form. In 1854 he represented the City of Boston in the General Court. He died at Mount Bowdoin, Boston.

In 1819 Farrar published a *Report of the case of the Trustees of Dartmouth College against William H. Woodward,* which contains the only report of the argument of Jeremiah Mason. He himself was of counsel with Webster in the suit. He compiled a *Memoir of the Farrar Family* (n.d.) for private circulation, and was also the author of a *Review of the Dred Scott Decision* (1857), and a *Manual of the Constitution of the United States* (1867). The latter was a remarkable book considering the advanced age at which he wrote it. He was a frequent contributor to the newspapers and periodicals of his time, particularly the *North American Review,* and *New Englander.* Samuel Lee, who knew him intimately, says that as a scholar he was learned rather than brilliant, and that as a lawyer he was preëminently a safe adviser. However, in his opinions, which he never hesitated to express, he was always positive, not to say aggressive.

[Timothy Farrar, *Memoir of the Farrar Family* (n.d.); Samuel Lee, "Timothy Farrar, LL.D.," in *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* July 1875; F. Kidder and A. A. Gould, *Hist. of New Ipswich* (1852), p. 358; C. H. Bell, *The Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894), p. 356.] H. W. H. K.



**FARRER, HENRY** (Mar. 23, 1843–Feb. 24, 1903), etcher, landscape-painter, was born in London, England, the son of a miniaturist, Thomas Farrer. He came to America in 1863. Little is known of his youth, though he was probably in moderate circumstances, since he was mainly self-taught. Upon reaching this country, he established his studio in New York City and painted in both oil and water-color. He made his home in Brooklyn, where he lived until his death. He did some landscapes, chiefly of scenes near the coast, but eventually became most widely known as an etcher, being one of the first and most pro-

lific in America. He exhibited in London, Paris, and New York, and took an active interest in various art organizations. He was a member of the Artists' Fund Society, secretary of the American Water Color Society in 1879 and president of the New York Etching Club in 1881. In the following year he was elected fellow of the Royal Society of Painter-Etchers, London, and in 1885 was made honorary member of the Philadelphia Society of Painter-Etchers. If any question exists regarding the validity of his claim to being an American artist, it may be emphasized that his art follows closely that of his adopted country.

Farrer's work offers an interesting study of his development in technique. His early work was rather detailed and elaborate, but later gained a simplicity and freedom which indicated far greater power. His first serious attempts at etching were made about 1868, with a press and tools which he himself had made. He was obliged, however, to follow more lucrative pursuits until 1877, the year of the formation of the etching club. "The Old Tree," etched in 1872, retouched in 1877, indicates his early tendency to over-elaboration, and reflects, in general, his pre-Raphaelite sympathies. The work of 1877 shows greater skill, but the same deliberate and methodical characteristics. Two beautiful examples of this period and style are "A Cloudy Day" and "A November Day." "Chickens" (1877) and "The Washerwoman" (1877) mark a growing freedom and generous use of the dry-point. "Winter in the Woods," (1878) in which his representation of light and air is excellent, and "December," (1877) which is the largest etching in this class, are both noteworthy in the further development of his style. After this he gradually diminished the use of artificial printing and the dry-point, and placed more emphasis on the etched line. Some of his later etchings are exquisite and masterful. They are not only examples of a fine technique, but display rare individuality and charm.

Farrer's works in other mediums are also worthy of mention. His oil-paintings include: "A Quiet Pool" (1878); "Sunset—Gowanus Bay"; "Road to the Landing" (1881); "Winter," "Autumn" (1882); "Now Came Still Evening On" (1883); and "Sweet Restful Eve" (1884). Two of his best water-colors are "Sunset," and "When the Silver Habit of Clouds Comes Down upon the Autumn Sun" (1884). He sent "A Windy Day" (belonging to Dr. J. G. Holland) and "The Old House on the Hill" to the American Centennial Exhibition of 1876. In 1878 he exhibited "A Quiet Pool" (belonging to Robert Gordon) at the Paris Exposition and also at the National Academy of Design.



[C. E. C. Waters and L. Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century and Their Works*, I (1879), 247; J. D. Champlin, Jr., *Cyc. of Painters and Paintings*, II (1886), 42; *Am. Art. Ann.*, 1903, p. 140; *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *N. Y. Evening Mail*, Feb. 14, 1872; *N. Y. Tribune*, Apr. 19, 1878; *Am. Art Rev.*, Dec. 1879; *Mich. State Lib. Biog. Sketches of Am. Artists* (5th ed., 1924).]

J. M. H.

**FARWELL, CHARLES BENJAMIN** (July 1, 1823–Sept. 23, 1903), man of business, and politician, was born at Mead Creek, near Painted Post, Steuben County, N. Y. Descended from Henry Farwell who was made a freeman of Massachusetts Bay, Mar. 14, 1639, he was the second son of Henry and Nancy (Jackson) Farwell, who were married at Westminster, Mass., on Oct. 5, 1819. He received his early education at Elmira Academy. In 1838 his family removed to Illinois, settling in Mount Morris, Ill., the following year. There he worked as farm-hand and surveyor. In 1844 he removed to Chicago, where he found employment as clerk in various mercantile concerns. Successful real-estate speculation laid the foundation of his fortune. He had probably been financially interested in the mercantile transactions of his brother, John V. Farwell [*q.v.*], for some time before he became a member of the firm of John V. Farwell & Company, dealers in dry-goods, in 1865. To Charles B. Farwell was attributed the completion of the Washington Street tunnel in Chicago.

He had early become interested in politics and served as clerk of Cook County from 1853 to 1861. In 1870, as a Republican, he was elected to Congress over John Wentworth in a closely contested campaign. He was reëlected in 1872, and was unseated in 1876 as a result of a contested election in 1874 (*Chicago Tribune*, May 4, 1876). He was elected once more in 1880 and, on Jan. 19, 1887, was elected to the Senate to fill the vacancy left by the death of John A. Logan but was not returned in 1891 because of the reaction against the McKinley Tariff and the activity of the Farmers' Alliance in Illinois politics. In Congress he played no very active part. The only subjects in which apparently he took any interest were the currency and banking, but his speeches display no particular insight into the question. His rôle was that of a keen politician rather than that of a statesman. In 1870, the *Chicago Tribune* had opposed him as the leader of the "Tammany" of Cook County, alleging corruption against him (Oct. 24, Nov. 1, Nov. 7, 1870). On Feb. 25, 1875, the *Tribune* assailed him for dodging a vote on what it termed a "tax grabbing, whiskey ring measure" in the House. In

1880, as the Blaine leader in the state, he endeavored to manipulate the county and state conventions in such a way as to defeat Logan in the choice of a Grant delegation. He was beaten by Logan in the struggle in the state convention and, apparently, had no decisive part in the later choice of anti-Grant delegates to the national convention (*Chicago Tribune*, May 15, 1880; *Illinois State Register*, May 22, 1880). In the senatorial election of 1885, the Democrats switched their votes to him in a last effort to stave off the election of John A. Logan (*Chicago Tribune*, May 20, 1885). In 1889–90 he quarreled with President Harrison over the patronage.

Farwell was married on Oct. 11, 1852, to Mary Eveline Smith of South Williamstown, Mass. Four of their nine children reached maturity, and their oldest daughter, Anna, married Reginald de Koven [*q.v.*], the composer. After 1870 Farwell's residence was fixed at Lake Forest, Ill., where he was active in the establishment of Lake Forest University and where his death occurred in his eighty-first year.

[A. T. Andreas, *Hist. of Chicago* (3 vols., 1884–86), esp. vols. II, III; *Reminiscences of John V. Farwell, by His Elder Daughter* (2 vols., 1928); Anna F. de Koven, *A Musician and his Wife* (1926); D. P. and F. K. Holton, *Farwell Ancestral Memorial* (1879), corrected and supplemented by *The Farwell Family* (2 vols., 1929); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Congressional Record* and newspapers as cited.] T. C. P.

**FARWELL, JOHN VILLIERS** (July 29, 1825–Aug. 20, 1908), merchant, the son of Henry and Nancy (Jackson) Farwell, was born in Steuben County, N. Y. Later the family moved to a farm near Big Flats in Chemung County, and when John was thirteen years old, they emigrated in a covered wagon to a squatter's homestead about a hundred miles southwest of Chicago, in Ogle County, Ill. When he was nineteen, after three years of farm work with attendance at Mount Morris Seminary in the winter, young Farwell determined to go to Chicago to follow a commercial life. He worked his way into town on a load of wheat, with $3.45 in his pocket. He had acquired the elements of bookkeeping at the seminary but his first employment was in the office of his uncle, the county clerk. Besides his duties as clerk, for which he received twelve dollars a month, he reported the proceedings of the City Council for a weekly newspaper. These reports seem to have been altogether too literal, with resulting embarrassment to the council. As one chronicler put it, "what was fun to the town was mortification to the Councilmen" (*Biographical Sketches of the Leading Men of Chicago*, 1868, p. 92). He next took employment as salesman and bookkeeper with a dry-goods firm



at eight dollars a month, remaining in this position one year, then became a clerk for Hamlin & Day, a similar firm, at $250 a year. After four years without increase of salary, he transferred his services in 1849 to Wadsworth & Phelps, a wholesale dry-goods house, at a yearly stipend of $600. This was the beginning of success; he remained with the firm as salesman and partner until, by a succession of changes in personnel, it became John V. Farwell & Company.

In the spring of 1849 he had married Abigail Gates Taylor, a former schoolmate, who died in May 1851. In that year Farwell was admitted to partnership in the firm, which had become Cooley, Wadsworth & Company, and three years later, in 1854, he married Emeret Cooley, a sister of his partner. Wadsworth retired in 1862 and the firm was reorganized as Cooley, Farwell & Company, the "company" being young Marshall Field [*q.v.*], who had come to Chicago in 1856 and had been employed as a clerk by Cooley, Wadsworth & Company. When Cooley retired in 1864, the name of the organization became Farwell, Field & Company, and Levi Z. Leiter and S. N. Kellogg were admitted to partnership. This arrangement had continued but a single year when opportunity knocked at the door of Field and Leiter in the form of an offer from Potter Palmer to take over his retail dry-goods business in Chicago. With their departure from the firm, Farwell brought in his two brothers W. D. and Charles B. Farwell [*q.v.*], in 1865, to form the firm of John V. Farwell & Company, of which he remained president until his death.

Farwell had foreseen the commercial destiny of Chicago and had boldly expanded his business in anticipation of an enlarged market. In 1851 the firm had sales of $100,000 a year; by 1868 sales were ten millions. The new store was burned in 1870 and no sooner was it rebuilt than it was again destroyed by the Great Fire of 1871, but Farwell rebuilt on a yet larger scale, with unwavering faith in the future growth of the city. This faith was rewarded by the amassing of a very considerable fortune. John V. Farwell & Company remained the leading wholesale dry-goods firm in Chicago until displaced from that position by Marshall Field & Company.

Typical of the pioneer of New England stock, Farwell was enterprising, industrious, and shrewd in business affairs, but dominated in his inner life by a puritanical moral code and a religious fervor. He gave fifty of his first year's earnings of ninety-six dollars to help build the first Methodist church in Chicago. In 1856 he started the Illinois Street Mission to promote the welfare of boys in the city. Having come under the influ-

Fassett

ence of the revivalist, Dwight L. Moody [*q.v.*], he interested himself with Moody in the revival meetings of 1857–58. Through Moody's influence he gave the land for the first Y. M. C. A. building in Chicago, which was also the first of the association's buildings in the country. He also contributed liberally to the Moody Bible Institute. During the Civil War he was president of the Chicago Branch of the United States Christian Commission, organized to promote the spiritual and temporal welfare of the officers and men of the army and navy. In this connection he visited the front, making numerous talks to the soldiers in the camps. So interested was he in Moody's work that he followed him to London in 1867 where Moody was preaching to London's poor. There he met Hogg and Bernardo who were doing rescue work in the slums and also made the acquaintance of George Williams, the father of the Y. M. C. A. Before returning home he visited Glasgow and Edinburgh to see the results of Moody's work. He participated but slightly in the political life of his community. As presidential elector, he cast his vote for Lincoln, and under Grant's administration he served as Indian commissioner. He died in Chicago in his eighty-fourth year.

[*Some Recollections of John V. Farwell* (1911), by his son, John V. Farwell, Jr., and *Reminiscences of John V. Farwell, by His Elder Daughter* (2 vols., 1928), are based on Farwell's unpublished diaries covering the years 1848–51. These diaries are in the library of the Chicago Hist. Soc. Biographical sketches appear in Geo. W. Smith, *Hist. of Ill. and Her People* (1927), IV, 355, and in D. P. and F. K. Holton, *Farwell Ancestral Memorial* (1879), corrected and supplemented by *The Farwell Family* (2 vols., 1929). The *Chicago Daily News* and *Chicago Tribune* of Aug. 21, 1908, have valuable obituaries.] E. A. D.

**FASSETT, CORNELIA ADÈLE STRONG** (Nov. 9, 1831–Jan. 4, 1898), portrait and figure painter, was born in Owasco, Cayuga County, N. Y., the daughter of Captain Walter and Elizabeth (Gonsales) Strong. On Aug. 26, 1851, at the age of twenty, she married Samuel Montague Fassett, a photographer and artist of Chicago, Ill. She received instruction in water-color painting from J. B. Wandesforde, an English artist, in New York City, then studied crayon drawing and painting in oil under Castiglione, La Tour, and Matthieu during a subsequent three years' sojourn in Paris and Rome. For twenty years she pursued her art career in Chicago, near the end of which time she was elected a member of the Chicago Academy of Design. In 1875 she moved to Washington, D. C., where she was elected to membership in the Washington Art Club and where her studio entertainments became a notable feature of the social life of the city. Her works include numerous portraits in miniature and many in oils. Among the studies painted from life were those of Presidents Grant, Hayes, and Garfield; Vice-President Henry Wilson, said to be one of the most successful for which he ever sat; Charles Foster, then governor of Ohio (now in the State House at Columbus); Dr. Rankin, the president of Howard University, and many other prominent people of Chicago and Washington. Unquestionably, her outstanding work is her representation, in oils, of "The Florida Case before the Electoral Commission" (Feb. 5, 1877), painted from life sittings in the United States Supreme Court-room. It was purchased by Congress and now hangs in the eastern gallery of the Senate wing of the Capitol. It is a large canvas, showing the old Senate-chamber, now the Supreme Court-room, with William M. Evarts the central figure as he addressed the Court in the opening argument. Around him are grouped some two hundred and sixty men and women, well-known figures in the political, social, and journalistic life of Washington at that period. The picture is considered unique because each face is turned in such a way as to present an individual portrait, and the likenesses are so faithful as to be striking in so large a composition. Mrs. Fassett devoted her last years to miniature painting, at which she was very successful. She died suddenly, of heart-failure, in her sixty-eighth year.

[*Am. Art Ann.*, 1898, p. 31; C. E. C. Waters, *Women in the Fine Arts* (1904), p. 121; C. E. C. Waters and Laurence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century and Their Works*, I (1879), 248; B. W. Dwight, *Hist. of the Descendants of Elder John Strong* (1871), II, 1484, 1486; *Washington Post*, Jan. 5, 1898.] J. M. H.

**FASSETT, JACOB SLOAT** (Nov. 13, 1853–Apr. 21, 1924), lawyer, congressman, financier, was born in Elmira, N. Y., the son of Newton Pomeroy Fassett and Martha Ellen (Sloat) Fassett. His mother's father was Jacob Sloat, of Sloatsburg, builder of the first cotton-twine factory in the United States; his father's forebears were originally residents of Vermont. He was educated in the public schools of his native city and in 1871 matriculated at the University of Rochester, from which institution he was graduated four years later with honors. He then took up the study of law in his father's law office in Elmira, and gained admission to the bar as an attorney in 1878 and as a counselor in 1879. After brief service as district attorney for Chemung County, he continued his studies at the University of Heidelberg (1880–81), then returned to the practise of law in Elmira. His interest in politics led to his election, in 1883, to the state Senate, to which he was returned by overwhelming majorities at the three successive elec-

tions, serving until 1891. He soon rose to great prominence as chairman of the Senate committees on commerce and navigation and on insurance, and more especially as head of the committee on cities, known at that time as the "Fassett committee" because of its investigation which unearthed notorious evidence of corruption in the departments of New York City (*Testimony, Senate Committee on Cities,* 1890, 2 vols.). In 1891, as a result of the enthusiastic support of the "young Republican" element, he received his party's nomination for governor against the wishes of Platt, who, fearing that Fassett would have to carry the entire weight of his unpopularity, sponsored the candidacy of Andrew D. White (Platt, *post,* p. 216; White, *post,* I, 232–34). He waged an aggressive campaign in which he exposed the corruption under the Hill administration. His defeat at the hands of his Democratic opponent, Roswell P. Flower, by a plurality of about 40,000, was attributed to the opposition of organized labor, to his inability to rid himself entirely of responsibility for allowing the World's Fair to go to Chicago, and to his failure to throw off the stigma of being known as "Platt's man." When refused the nomination in 1894, because of Platt's opposition, he rejected the offer of second place on the state ticket.

Fassett entered national politics in 1880 when he was sent as a delegate to the Republican National Convention at Chicago. From 1888 to 1892 he served as secretary of the Republican National Committee. Appointed by President Harrison to the office of collector of the port of New York, he served for a month and a half in 1891 before entering the gubernatorial campaign. As temporary chairman of the Republican National Convention at Minneapolis in 1892, he sounded the keynote of the campaign. In 1904 he was elected to Congress where he served his district until 1911. Here his characteristic aggressiveness and fearlessness were tempered by party regularity. From 1879 until 1896, as editor and proprietor of the *Elmira Advertiser,* he exhibited in his columns, at least in the later period, symptoms of revolt from the Platt machine in the state.

In later life Fassett devoted himself chiefly to his large business enterprises. As a result of his marriage, Feb. 13, 1879, to Jennie L. Crocker, daughter of Judge E. B. Crocker of Sacramento, Cal., he became extensively interested in Western ranching, mining, and banking. As a banker he was associated with the Second National Bank of Elmira and the Commercial State Bank of Sioux City, Iowa; as a ranch owner he had important interests in New Mexico. He held important mining concessions in Korea and a controlling interest in the exploitation of the hardwood resources of the Philippine Islands. He also had large lumber holdings in Canada, and North Carolina and was financially interested in the manufacture of typewriters and of bottles. He died in Vancouver, B. C., on his return from a business trip to the Orient.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1924–25; C. E. Fitch, *Encyc. of Biog. of N. Y.,* IV (1916), 343–45; *Biog. Directory Am. Cong.,* 1928; De A. S. Alexander, *Four Famous New Yorkers* (1923); T. C. Platt, *The Autobiog. of Thomas Collier Platt* (1910); A. D. White, *The Autobiog. of Andrew Dickson White* (2 vols. 1905); *Sun* (N. Y.), Oct. 8, 9, 22, and Nov. 4, 1891; *N. Y. Times,* Jan. 8, 1904, for Fassett's interests in Korea; N. Y. papers for Apr. 22, 1924.] R. B. M.



**FAULK, ANDREW JACKSON** (Nov. 26, 1814–Sept. 4, 1898), third governor of Dakota Territory, was born at Milford, Pike County, Pa. In 1815 his parents, John and Margaret (Heiner) Faulk, moved to Kittanning, in Armstrong County, where Andrew received his education in the subscription schools and Kittanning Academy. Later he learned the printing trade, then studied law under Michael Gallagher and Joseph Buffington, though he was not admitted to the bar until 1866. In 1835 he married Charlotte McMath, of Washington County, Pa. Faulk essayed a crusader's rôle in local politics early in life, first through the medium of the *Armstrong County Democrat,* which he edited and published from 1837 to 1841, and then by means of various county offices which he held from 1840 to 1860. He attacked the Pennsylvania law permitting imprisonment for debt and gave active support to Thaddeus Stevens's free-school program. Because of his opposition to the further extension of slavery in the territories, he became an advocate of Col. Samuel Black's anti-slavery resolution in the Democratic state convention at Pittsburgh in 1849, and following its repudiation by the succeeding convention, he shifted from the Democratic to the newly formed Republican party. In 1861 he was appointed by President Lincoln post-trader to the Yankton Indian reservation, on the Missouri River, which at the time was the principal supply base for the military stations and Indian agencies in the upper Missouri country. His work at the post was important, for his tactful and honest policy in dealing with the professedly friendly Yankton Indians did much to prevent their alliance with the hostile Santee Sioux to make war on the whites while the federal troops were occupied in the Civil War. From 1864 to 1866 Faulk was again in Pennsylvania. There he assisted in organizing and superintending the Latonia Coal Company of New York, and promoted the Paxton Oil Company of Pittsburgh.

In 1866 he returned to Dakota as territorial governor and superintendent of Indian affairs, by virtue of President Johnson's appointment. During his two-year term of office he aided the geologist, E. N. Hayden, in calling attention to the mineral resources to be found in the Black Hills by bringing the Black Hills question before the territorial legislature, and by inducing that body to appeal to Congress for help in recovering the region from the Indians. As an advisory member of Gen. Sherman's commission which negotiated the treaty of Fort Laramie, establishing the Indians west of the Missouri River, Faulk aided in opening the Black Hills to white settlers. His policy aimed at peace with the Indians and in achieving that end he showed an unusual knowledge of Indian affairs. After retiring from the governorship he continued to reside at Yankton until his death. He was at various times mayor and alderman of Yankton, United States court commissioner, clerk of the territorial courts for the second judicial district, and for many years president of the Dakota bar association.

[*Press and Dakotan* (Yankton, S. D.), Sept. 8, 1898; (S. D.) *Memorial and Biog. Record* (1897), pp. 223–35; *S. D. Hist. Colls.*, I (1902), 135; *Monthly South Dakotan*, July 1898; *House Jour. . . . of the Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Dakota*, 1866–69, *passim*.] T. D. M.

**FAULKNER, CHARLES JAMES** (July 6, 1806–Nov. 1, 1884), congressman, diplomat, soldier, was born at Martinsburg, Va. (now W. Va.). His father, Maj. James Faulkner, received the special thanks of the General Assembly of Virginia for his gallant defense of Craney Island, near Norfolk, in the War of 1812. His mother, Sarah Mackey, was the daughter of Capt. William Mackey of the Revolutionary army. Left an orphan at the age of eight years, Faulkner later attributed his success to the discipline of his early struggles. He was graduated in 1822 from Georgetown University, Washington, D. C., attended Chancellor Tucker's law lectures at Winchester, Va., was admitted to the bar in 1829, and soon became a successful practitioner at Martinsburg.

First elected to the House of Delegates in 1829, he served there also in 1831–34. In 1832 he took part in the slavery debate of that period in Virginia, urging the expediency of gradual abolition. In the same year he was appointed by Gov. John Floyd [*q.v.*] as commissioner on the part of Virginia to adjust the boundary dispute between that state and Maryland, and he was largely responsible for the satisfactory solution of the question. In the session of 1833 he made two speeches in the General Assembly, condemning the South Carolina doctrine of nullification but in other

Faulkner

respects supporting the state-rights views of Calhoun. In this year he was married to Mary Wagner Boyd, daughter of Gen. Elisha Boyd, and retired to private life, but in 1838 was elected to the state Senate and served till 1842, when he again retired to resume his law practise. In 1843 he was a prominent advocate of the annexation of Texas, and early favored the Mexican War, offering his services to the governor before the declaration of war, and promising that no one who fought in this conflict should want as long as his purse lasted. He stated that if Congress did not offer a bounty he would give every man from Berkeley County who enlisted and won an honorable discharge 150 acres of land in Texas. His speech in 1848 on violations of the federal compact made his name well-known throughout the South. He was a member of the noted Virginia constitutional convention of 1850, and in this same year was elected to Congress, serving in the House of Representatives from 1851 to 1859.

Appointed by President Buchanan minister to France in 1859 he rendered notable service there, securing the recognition by France of the American citizenship of former French citizens. After the beginning of the Lincoln administration Faulkner returned to the United States and was arrested Aug. 12, 1861, on the ground that Virginia was prosecuting a treasonable insurrection and that his sympathies were given to the conspirators. No charges to this effect were ever officially investigated, and in December 1861 he was exchanged for Alfred Ely, a congressman from New York. He then entered the Confederate army and served as assistant adjutant-general on the staff of Stonewall Jackson. In this position he prepared the official battle reports from Jackson's rough notes. After the war, he returned to his home in Berkeley County (now in West Virginia) and resumed his law practise, one of the largest in the South. He was an extensive farmer, president of the Berkeley County Agricultural and Mechanical Association and of the Martinsburg & Potomac Railroad. He was temporary president of the West Virginia constitutional convention of 1872 and was an influential figure in the framing of the constitution of that year. He was elected as a Democrat to the Forty-fourth Congress (1875–77) but declined reëlection. He continued active in the legal profession till his death, at the age of seventy-eight.

[In addition to the brief sketch in the *Biog. Directory Am. Cong.* (1928), there are longer articles in *The South in the Building of the Nation*, XI (1909), and in *Frank Leslie's Illustrated Newspaper*, Feb. 11, 1860. There is a sketch, dealing principally with his imprisonment, in G. W. Atkinson and A. F. Gibbens, *Prominent Men of W. Va.* (1890). The "Case of Charles J. Faulkner," in

*Official Records* (*Army*), CXV, gives the correspondence in regard to his arrest; *Official Records* (*Army*), LXXI, 367, gives the special order of Maj.-Gen. Hunter to burn Faulkner's dwelling and outbuildings. There are a few letters and copies of speeches in possession of the family of his son, C. J. Faulkner, at Martinsburg, W. Va.]

J. E. W.

**FAULKNER, CHARLES JAMES** (Sept. 21, 1847–Jan. 13, 1929), United States senator, the second son of Charles James Faulkner [*q.v.*] and Mary Wagner Boyd, born at Martinsburg, Va. (now W. Va.), at "Boydville," the ancestral home which he later inherited by his father's will subject to the life estate of the mother. He had one brother, and six sisters who married into prominent Southern families. In 1860–61, while his father was minister to France, he attended schools in Paris and Switzerland. In 1862 he entered the Virginia Military Institute at Lexington and with other cadets volunteered in the Confederate army. After serving with the cadets in the battle of New Market, he became aide to Gen. John C. Breckinridge and later to Gen. Henry A. Wise, with whom he remained until the surrender at Appomattox.

In October 1866, after a term of study in his father's law office, he entered the department of law of the University of Virginia, from which he graduated with the LL.B. degree in 1868. He was admitted to the bar at Martinsburg in September, and soon attained high rank in the profession. As a Mason he attained distinction in 1879 by his election as Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of West Virginia. In October 1880, he was elected judge of the 13th judicial circuit of West Virginia. His decisions showed impartiality and good judgment. By 1887 he had become prominent in politics. Without being a candidate, he was elected to the United States Senate to succeed J. N. Camden, whose term expired on Mar. 4, and in 1893 was reëlected for a second term. He was chairman of the Democratic state conventions in 1888 and 1892 and of the Democratic congressional committee in 1894, 1896, and 1898. Among the important bills which he framed as senator was that of 1888–89 which became the first general law prohibiting food and drug adulteration. He was also the author of a law for regulation of railways in the District of Columbia. He took a leading part in some of the great contests in the Senate of his period, including that on the Blair Educational Bill which was defeated largely by his activity. He was one of the most active leaders in the defeat of the Force Bill (1890–91). He was appointed a member of a joint commission of the two houses to investigate the cost of railway mail transportation and postal-car service. In 1897–98 he was a member



of the joint commission to investigate charities, and reformatory institutions in the District of Columbia. In April 1898 he spoke in favor of the resolutions for intervention in Cuba. In September 1898 he was appointed by the President to membership on the Anglo-American Joint High Commission.

After his retirement from the Senate (1899) he resumed the practise of law with offices in Washington, and Martinsburg, specializing in corporation law and becoming attorney for several railroads. He especially enjoyed his association with the Baltimore & Ohio, for which he had first been employed as counsel in 1868. He was one of the charter members who organized the American Law Institute in May 1923. In May 1918 he closed his Washington office and discontinued his legal work for the combined railroads. Thereafter he resided at Martinsburg until his death. His immediate community treasured him as the finest type of citizen, who was always ready to share actively in common undertakings. His last public appearance was in the sesquicentennial parade of Nov. 12, 1928, in which he rode with an escort of honor. He was first married on Nov. 25, 1869, to Sallie Winn of Charlottesville, Va., by whom he had five children. She died in March 1890. On Jan. 3, 1894, he was married to Virginia Fairfax Whiting of Hampton, Va., by whom he had one son. He died at "Boydville" in the same room in which he had been born over eighty-one years before.

[F. Vernon Aler, *Hist. of Berkeley County* (1888), p. 397; G. W. Atkinson and A. F. Gibbens, *Prominent Men of W. Va.* (1890); Morris P. Shawkey, *W. Va. in Hist.*, vol. IV (1928), pp. 337–38; *Martinsburg Evening Jour.*, Jan. 14, 1929.]

J. M. C.

**FAUNCE, WILLIAM HERBERT PERRY** (Jan. 15, 1859–Jan. 31, 1930), clergyman, college president, was born in Worcester, Mass., the oldest son of Daniel Worcester Faunce, a Baptist clergyman, and Mary Parkhurst Perry, of Bristol, R. I., a member of Commodore Perry's branch of the family. The first of the Faunce name in America was John, who came to Massachusetts on the ship *Ann* in 1623. Thomas, his son, was the last ruling elder at Plymouth. William was fitted for college in the high schools of Concord, N. H., and Lynn, Mass., and graduated from Brown University in 1880. After graduation he entered the Newton Theological Institution, but spent the year 1881–82 at Brown as an instructor in mathematics. In 1884 he finished his course at Newton, was ordained to the Baptist ministry, became pastor of the State Street Baptist Church, Springfield, Mass., and was married to Sarah Rogers Edson, of Lynn, Mass. In

1889 he was called to the Fifth Avenue Baptist Church, New York City. While on leave of absence in 1895 he was a student at the University of Jena. As a preacher and public speaker, he early won a place among the leaders of his day, not by Demosthenic "action," but by the appeal of his thought and the eloquence of his language. He took a poet's delight in the artistry of words, and his addresses, delivered in a voice flexible and sympathetic, never failed to captivate his audience. His fame brought him appointments as lecturer in the Divinity School of the University of Chicago, 1897–98, and as resident preacher at Harvard, 1898–99. Later he was one of the "Lyman Beecher" lecturers at Yale, delivering a series of addresses, which were published in 1908 under the title, *The Educational Ideal in the Ministry.*

In 1899 he became president of Brown University, succeeding Elisha Benjamin Andrews [*q.v.*]. Upon taking this office he assumed the direction of an inchoate university, which in ten years had more than trebled in numbers. During the three decades of his administration a still greater proportional enlargement occurred; funds increased eight-fold, the greatest building era in the history of the college took place, and with characteristic liberality President Faunce secured the removal of the charter restriction of the presidency to Baptists. His management of the institution won the confidence of men of affairs, and his personal qualities brought him into high favor not only with faculty and students but also with the citizens of Providence, and there was developed a new comity between "town and gown."

In addition to his university work he took an active part in some of the leading religious and educational movements of his time. He was president of the Higher Education Section of the National Educational Association, 1903–04, and of the Religious Education Association, 1906–07. After 1918 he was president of the World Peace Foundation, and was active to the last in its administration and its plans for the future. He was abroad six times. In 1912–13 he made a tour of the world, during which he acquired a deep interest in China, particularly in the part that may be played by American universities in its educational development. One of the results of this journey was his *Social Aspects of Foreign Missions,* published in 1914. Upon entering the ministry the importance of religion overshadowed in his thought every other social interest, but later he became sympathetic with all great social reforms and was active in several.

He was recognized by the Baptists as one of

Faunce

their foremost intellectual leaders and his influence had much to do in holding the denomination to its historic liberalism. Though he described himself rather as a mediator between Modernists and Fundamentalists than as an out-and-out Modernist, a pamphlet was issued by a Fundamentalist in 1922 demanding that the Corporation of Brown University remove him for heresy, and he was denounced in a Fundamentalist mass meeting in New York for an article on "Freedom in School and Church" that he published in the *World's Work* for March 1923. He acknowledged his debt to science for wider horizons, but he appears not to have grasped the unity and the full significance of scientific progress.

In person he was of medium height and sturdy build. His features were rugged. He was selective in his intimacies and naturally reserved. Always a great reader, he had remarkable power for grasping and retaining the contents of a book. He kept up with the affairs of the day and his addresses were pointed with references to matters of current interest. Music played an important part in his life. While a student he had served as a church organist, and in his later life he found in music an inspiration and solace. His summers were spent at Lake Mohonk, and the community there was long virtually his parish. In the seclusion of that mountain park, he did his writing. Among his publications not already mentioned are: *What Does Christianity Mean* (1912), Cole Lectures at Vanderbilt University, in which he discussed the fundamentals of the Christian faith and its place in the modern world; *Religion and War* (1918), Mendenhall Lectures at DePauw University, in which he portrayed the World War as a challenge to the moral leadership of the church and looked forward to an ultimate union of nations to abolish war; *The New Horizon of State and Church* (1918), Bedell Lectures at Kenyon College, in general a study of Christian patriotism and the international mind; *Citations for Honorary Degrees Granted by Brown University, 1900–1924* (1924), which contains his cameo-like characterizations of the recipients; and *Facing Life* (1928), selections from his chapel addresses.

In 1925 he suffered a severe breakdown. He recovered sufficiently to attend to the larger interests of the university until, having reached the age of seventy, he was automatically retired at Commencement, 1929. He had established himself in a new home in Providence with his books around him, and continued to preach and lecture. Less than a year later, however, he died of pneumonia.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *Hist. Cat. Brown Univ.* (1914); *Newton Theol. Inst. Gen. Cat.* (1899); *Brown Alumni Monthly*, Mar. 1930; *N. Y. Times*, Feb. 1, 1930; Faunce's own manuscript material in the graduate records of Brown University; records of the class of 1880 at Brown; and personal recollections.]

H. L. K.

**FAUQUIER, FRANCIS** (1704?–Mar. 3, 1768), lieutenant-governor of Virginia, was the eldest son of Dr. John Francis Fauquier, a director of the Bank of England, and Elizabeth Chamberlayne. He himself married Catharine, the daughter of Sir Charles Dalston. He was a director of the South Sea Company in 1751, and was elected on Feb. 15, 1753, a fellow of the Royal Society. In 1756, early in the Seven Years' War, he published *An Essay on Ways and Means of Raising Money for the Support of the Present War without Increasing the Public Debts*, of which there were three editions. In January 1758, he was appointed lieutenant-governor of Virginia. He was in fact governor, as the governor-in-chief (Earl of Loudoun, 1756–63; Sir Jeffrey Amherst, 1763–68) had no share in the administration of the government of the colony.

Fauquier assumed the duties of the governorship of Virginia when the colony was in the midst of the French and Indian War, and worked harmoniously with Washington and the legislature of the colony to bring that conflict to a successful end. He foresaw in the tendencies of his time signs of independence, and warned Pitt in 1760 that if Great Britain should continue her oppressive policy and impose additional taxation, the colonies would certainly offer resistance. From the very beginning of his administration he endeavored to carry out his instructions, in such a way as not to interfere with a practical, peaceful conduct of the affairs of the government. He was explicitly instructed to prevent the speaker of the House of Burgesses from serving any longer as treasurer of the colony. Upon his arrival, instead of attempting to execute this instruction, which would have caused a conflict and which also would have deprived him of a useful and influential man, he frankly agreed with him that they would work together for the best interests of the colony, and so informed the British Board of Trade. His relations with the burgesses were on the whole amicable, for he was clever enough to know when to grant their requests. The House, on the other hand, also desired harmony, and in its relations with the executive, endeavored to accomplish its ends without open conflict. He did not hesitate to exercise his power over that body when he thought that his position demanded it. In 1765, for example, he dissolved the House for passing the



resolution against the Stamp Act, introduced by Patrick Henry. This action, even at so critical a period, seemed not to render him especially obnoxious to the colonists. Under his predecessor the House of Burgesses had assumed much power in directing military affairs, yet Fauquier was not interfered with in such matters.

The death of Fauquier on Mar. 3, 1768, at Williamsburg, after ten years of service, deprived the colony of a governor who appreciated conditions there and so administered the government that even during a most critical period the colonists raised no complaint against him but always considered him a friend. A county in Virginia bears his name

[There are many reports and letters in the British Public Record Office sent by Fauquier while in Virginia. A few letters written by him to Colonel Bouquet concerning military forces in Virginia, and one to Sir Henry Moore are in the British Museum. See also *The Speech of the Hon. Francis Fauquier, His Majesty's lieutenant-governor, in the city of Williamsburg, Sept. 14, 1758* (1758); *Dict. of Nat. Biog.*, and P. S. Flippin, "The Royal Government in Va., 1624–1775," Columbia Univ. Studies in Hist., Economics and Public Law, vol. LXXXIV, no. 1 (1919), pp. 133–36.]

P. S. F.

**FAVILL, HENRY BAIRD** (Aug. 14, 1860–Feb. 20, 1916), physician, was born in Madison, Wis., the son of John Favill, a physician of state-wide reputation, and Louise Sophia Baird. He was a descendant in the fourth generation from John Favill who came to America from England before the Revolutionary War, fought in the Continental Army, and later settled in Manheim, Herkimer County, N. Y. On his mother's side he was descended from the Ottawa chief, Kewinoquot. He was educated in the public schools of his native city and in the University of Wisconsin, where he graduated in 1880. Following his graduation from Rush Medical College in Chicago in 1883 and an interneship in the Cook County Hospital, he returned to Madison to practise with his father. From 1890 to 1894 he was a special lecturer on medical jurisprudence at the University of Wisconsin. Relinquishing a large practise, he moved to Chicago in 1894 where he accepted the chair of medicine at the Chicago Policlinic and the adjunct chair of medicine in Rush Medical College. In the latter school he was promoted in 1898 to the Ingalls professorship of preventive medicine and therapeutics and in 1906 to the chair of clinical medicine. With a practise confined to internal medicine he soon built up a large and select clientele, and his reputation became nation-wide. At different times he was on the staffs of the Augustana, Passavant Memorial, and St. Luke's hospitals, and was for many years president of the Chicago Tuberculosis Institute. He was active

in the membership of the Chicago Society of Internal Medicine, Chicago Institute of Medicine, and the Physicians' Club. He was also interested in the Association for the Study and Prevention of Tuberculosis, and the National Committee for Mental Hygiene.

Favill's interests were not confined to his profession. He was active in municipal affairs, and fearless in his opposition to corrupt politics. From 1907 to 1910 he was president of the Municipal Voters' League, an organization pledged to good government. He was an ardent advocate of municipal improvement and sanitary progress, acting for many years as trustee of the Chicago Bureau of Public Efficiency and as director of the United Charities. In the later years of his life he became a cattle breeder. He developed a model dairy farm at Lake Mills, Wis., where he spent whatever time he could spare from his professional work. He wrote and lectured upon agricultural and breeding problems and was elected president of the National Dairy Council. It was while attending a meeting of this organization in Springfield, Mass., in February 1916, that he contracted pneumonia and died

Favill will be long remembered in Chicago as a physician of uncommon ability and as a public-spirited citizen. He had a rare gift for public speaking, combining a finely modulated voice with remarkable clarity of expression. He was a model presiding officer. Though so well fitted for medical instruction he displayed no particular interest in his teaching appointments, and made little impress upon his classes. His writings, whether on municipal reform, cattle breeding, or medicine, were characterized by an originality in thought and language. An address entitled "The Public and the Medical Profession, A Square Deal" delivered before the Pennsylvania State Medical Society in 1915 (reprinted in the memorial volume) is an example of his literary skill. Physically he was tall, straight, and powerfully built. Though five generations removed from an Indian maternal ancestor, he had the dark skin, dark mournful eyes, high cheek bones, full lips, and straight hair of the North American Indian. He took no little pride in this aboriginal ancestry. He was married in 1885 to Susan Cleveland Pratt of Brooklyn, N. Y.

[John Favill, compiler, *Henry Baird Favill . . . A Memorial Volume, Life, Tributes, Writings* (1917); *Who's Who in America,* 1914–15.] J. M. P.

**FAWCETT, EDGAR** (May 26, 1847–May 2, 1904), author, was born in New York, and despite much foreign travel and a residence abroad during his later years, his native city remained



throughout his life the principal theme of his literary work. His father, Frederick Fawcett, was an Englishman who became a prosperous merchant in New York; his mother, Sarah Lawrence Fawcett, was of American descent. After obtaining his preliminary education in the public schools of New York, Fawcett entered Columbia College. Here he failed of distinction as a student—his name appeared on the minutes of faculty meetings chiefly as the recipient of admonitions for irregular attendance upon classes—but he gained a campus reputation as a man of letters, and, as a member of the Philolexian literary society, he was prominent in undergraduate literary activities. He graduated in 1867, and three years later Columbia conferred the degree of M.A. upon him. After leaving college, since he was under no necessity of entering a gainful occupation, he devoted himself to literature and "elegant leisure." A prolific writer, he worked in various forms—poetry, the essay, the novel, and the drama. His chief volumes of verse, *Fantasy and Passion* (1878), *Song and Story* (1884), *Romance and Revery* (1886), and *Songs of Doubt and Dream* (1891), reveal but a slender talent. A strained mode of expression and echoes of the major Victorians too often usurped the place of inspiration. In some of the short and simple nature sketches Fawcett is seen at his best. Very characteristic of his cast of mind are several poems which voice his hostility to formal religion and his sympathy with skepticism and science. In *Agnosticism and Other Essays* (1889), which contains an introduction by Robert G. Ingersoll, he again comes to the defense of unbelief, declaring that religion is founded on fear and that miracles are old wives' tales.

It was as a novelist that Fawcett made his bulkiest contribution to the literature of his day. His volumes of fiction number approximately thirty-five, and with wearisome uniformity they reiterate one main theme. With his first novel, *Purple and Fine Linen* (1873), he began an assault on New York's high society, with which he had a first-hand acquaintance, and in book after book—among them *Tinkling Cymbals* (1884), *The Adventures of a Widow* (1884), *An Ambitious Woman* (1884), *Rutherford* (1884), *A Demoralizing Marriage* (1889), and *New York* (1898)—he held up to ridicule the Van Cortlandts, Van Tassels, and other members of a snobbish Knickerbocker aristocracy, as well as the newly rich social climbers, and the "silly striplings" who for the most part made up the masculine element in this exalted set. The picture thus drawn, allowing for the necessary ex-

aggeration of satire, is not unveracious, especially in its presentation of the struggle between the old Dutch patricians and the new plutocrats. At the same time the amateurishness of Fawcett's plots, the woodenness of his characters, the dreary earnestness of his manner, and the monotony of his subjects are sufficient to justify Henry Stoddard's plaint: "Won't somebody please turn this Fawcett off?"

Social satire dominates Fawcett's plays as it does his novels. *A False Friend* (1880), *Our First Families* (1880), *Americans Abroad* (1881), and *Sixes and Sevens* (1881) were all performed in the theatres of New York, and met receptions varying from failure to moderate success. *The Earl* (1887), an imaginative, blank verse drama, was produced at Boston and ran for only a week (*Boston Transcript*, Apr. 12, 1887, and following issues). Contemporary reviews of these unpublished plays suggest that they possessed much the same defects as the novels. His liveliest bit of writing is *The Buntling Ball* (1884), a verse play not intended for the stage. Another satire on New York society, it escapes the charge of monotony by the marked metrical ingenuity it displays, which owes not a little to W. S. Gilbert and takes amusing liberties with Swinburne. *The New King Arthur* (1885), "an opera without music," which makes burlesque of the Arthurian material, evidently for Tennyson's benefit, pleasantly resembles *The Buntling Ball* in its jigging rhymes. Had Fawcett not misunderstood his talent, he would have written more "Buntling Balls" and fewer "Demoralizing Marriages."

Whether from a sense of irritation at the contempt with which certain newspaper critics in New York treated his work, or from some other cause, Fawcett at the age of fifty left America and took up his residence abroad. London was his home during his last years, and here, in bachelor quarters in the Chelsea district, he died after less than a week's illness.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; A. H. Quinn, *A Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Civil War to the Present Day* (2 vols., 1927); T. Allston Brown, *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (3 vols., 1903); records of Columbia Coll.; N. Y. City Directory; *The Ann. Reg.*, 1904; obituary and other notices in the *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 22, 1880, Oct. 6, 1881, May 3, 1904; the N. Y. *World*, May 3, 1904; the *Times* (London), May 3, 1904.] O. S. C.

**FAY, EDWARD ALLEN** (Nov. 22, 1843–July 14, 1923), educator of the deaf, was born at Morristown, N. J., the oldest child of Barnabas Maynard Fay and Louise Mills. His descent was from John Fay, who came to America in the *Speedwell* in 1656 and settled in Worcester County, Mass. His father had taught deaf pupils for five years in the New York Institution for the Deaf before settling on the ministry as a profession. When the son was eleven years old his father returned to educational work with the deaf by accepting the principalship of the new state school for the deaf and the blind at Flint, Mich., so young Fay spent a considerable portion of his boyhood in association with deaf young people. He graduated from the University of Michigan in 1862 (M.A. 1865), and in 1863 became an instructor in the New York Institution for the Deaf. Three years later, at the invitation of Edward Miner Gallaudet he joined the faculty of the recently established National Deaf-Mute College, later Gallaudet College, in Washington, D. C. Here he remained as professor and vice-president (1885) until his retirement in 1920, a period of fifty-four years. In 1881 he received the degree of Ph.D. from Johns Hopkins University. From 1870 to 1920, he was also the editor of the *American Annals of the Deaf*, the oldest and best-known magazine dealing with the education of deaf pupils, and the official organ of the Conference of Superintendents and Principals of American Schools for the Deaf, and of the Convention of American Instructors of the Deaf. His contributions to this magazine on various topics number nearly one hundred and fifty. His statistics on methods, pupilage, and the condition of American schools, published yearly in the *Annals*, were so thorough and so accurate that they formed the basis of all statistical statements about American schools for the deaf in all parts of the world.

Fay's teaching was confined largely to the subjects of Latin, French, and German, in which his pupils made amazing progress, but his knowledge of languages was much broader. He became well versed in Greek, Spanish, and Italian. His *Concordance of the Divina Commedia*, begun at the request of the Dante Society of Cambridge, was finished in 1888, and stands as a monument of great scholarly attainment. He edited the *Histories of American Schools for the Deaf*, published in 1893, a valuable collection detailing the work of pioneers in that field of education. Perhaps the greatest work of his life, however, was his *Marriages of the Deaf in America*, completed in 1898. In this study of over thirty thousand marriages he was able to prove that deafness as a rule is not an inherited tendency, despite the fact that consanguineous marriages seem to increase it, and to hold out to deaf people the belief that wisely choosing deaf partners in marriage need not be forbidden.

Fay married Mary Bradshaw in 1871, and

brought up in his home at Kendall Green, which he occupied for half a century, a family of six sons and one daughter.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; Robert Patterson, "Edward Allen Fay," in the *Am. Annals of the Deaf*, Sept. 1923; *Ibid.*, Sept. 1910, Nov. 1911, and Oct. 1913; information as to certain facts from members of the family, and personal acquaintance.] P. H.

**FAY, EDWIN WHITFIELD** (Jan. 1, 1865–Feb. 17, 1920), teacher, scholar, author, was born at Minden, La., the fourth of the five children of Edwin Hedge Fay and Sarah Elizabeth Shields. The father was born in the South and was Southern in sympathy though his descent was Puritan and he was a graduate of Harvard. The greater part of his life was spent in teaching. For twelve years he was head of a Presbyterian school for girls, Silliman Institute, at Clinton, La., and for three years state superintendent of public instruction for Louisiana. The mother came of an old Georgia family of culture and distinction. Both parents were intellectual, sincerely religious, and stern in their devotion to duty. Edwin prepared for college in his father's seminary, read widely in his home library, and, unlike most Southern boys, was taught to play the piano. Though he was not particularly athletic he was devoted to tennis and continued to play until his last illness. At nineteen he entered Southwestern Presbyterian University at Clarksville, Tenn., and studied there till he received the degree of M.A. in 1883. Then he taught for a year each in the high schools at Jackson, Miss.; Bonham, and Beaumont, Tex. In 1886 he went to Johns Hopkins, where his major study was Sanskrit, complemented by comparative philology and classics. He received the Ph.D. degree with Phi Beta Kappa honors in 1890, though his dissertation, *The Treatment of Rig-Veda Mantras in the Grhya Sūtras*, was not published until 1899. As a student he developed characteristics which he never lost—versatility of intellect, power of concentration, continuous industry, rapidity in work. Besides his major studies he was an enthusiast in modern literature, wrote verse, and taught a Bible class. During the year 1890–91 he was instructor in Sanskrit and classics at the University of Michigan; in 1891–92 he traveled abroad and studied at the University of Leipzig; in 1892-93 he was acting professor of Latin at the University of Texas and for the next six years, 1893–99, he was professor of Latin at Washington and Lee University. In the fall of 1899 he returned to the University of Texas as professor of Latin and held this position till his death, nearly twenty-one years later. He was married Dec. 20, 1904, to Lucy Bell Hemphill, daughter of Charles R. Hemphill, later president of the Presbyterian Theological Seminary at Louisville, Ky.

As a man Fay was not socially inclined. His sensitive and reserved nature would not allow him to make friends casually, but in his close associates he inspired unusual affection. They enjoyed his wit, they respected his attainments, they admired his character. As a teacher he had little patience with idleness, but to serious-minded students he gave, besides a knowledge of the language which he taught, an insight into human values which they did not forget. Not a few count him one of the strongest influences in their lives. As a scholar he won honor by the extent and accuracy of his scholarship and the constant activity of his mind. The items of the bibliography prepared by Morgan Callaway reach a surprising total of one hundred and ninety-three. They include three books: *The History of Education in Louisiana* (1898); *T. Macci Plauti Mostellaria*, with introduction and notes (1902); and his dissertation. The other works were for the most part published in scientific journals; a few appeared in periodicals of a popular character. Although most of the articles were scientific —etymological, semantic, syntactic, textual, or exegetical—some were light, and still others were biographical or historical. Whether scientific or popular, they all showed a keen feeling for style and an individuality which led the editors of the London *Classical Quarterly* to speak of him as one of the "most original-minded of its contributors."

[Morgan Callaway, ed., *In Memoriam Edwin Whitfield Fay, 1865–1920*, in the Univ. of Tex. Bull., no. 2425, July 1, 1924; *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21.] W. J. B.

**FAY, JONAS** (Jan. 28, 1737 N.S.–Mar. 6, 1818), physician, politician, the son of Stephen and Ruth (Child) Fay, was born at Westborough, Mass. He was fourth in descent from John Fay who came to New England in 1656. In 1756 Jonas Fay served under Col. Samuel Robinson at Fort Edward and Lake George. On May 1, 1760, he married Sarah, daughter of Captain John Fassett, Sr., and about six years later he settled at Bennington, together with his father and brothers. The Fays soon became prominent in the controversy between the governments of New Hampshire and New York over the control of the so-called New Hampshire grants (now the State of Vermont). Consequently, in June 1772, Jonas and his father were appointed the agents of the settlers of the grants to lay their complaint before Gov. Tryon at New York. Two years later he became clerk of a convention held at Manchester to take action in the controversy.

Thence he was, almost without exception, secretary of the various conventions held by the settlers. On May 10, 1775, he was surgeon to the company of Green Mountain Boys which captured Ticonderoga, and, for the remainder of that year, saw active service in the war. In 1776 he was again prominent in the meetings of the settlers. At the Westminster Convention of Jan. 15, 1777, he was appointed a member of the committee to inform the Continental Congress that the settlers of the New Hampshire grants had declared themselves a separate state, independent of New York and New Hampshire, to present a petition asking Congress for recognition as such—a petition ignored by Congress (Doane, *post*, pp. 67–71). Fay continued to represent the new state in the various attempts to win recognition from the Congress. But meanwhile he was a member of the Windsor Convention of July 1777 which drafted the constitution of the state. This convention provided for a temporary government of the state by a Council of Safety, to which Fay was immediately appointed secretary. When the first Assembly met in March 1778, Fay had been elected a member of the Governor's Council, a capacity in which he served until 1785. As a member of that body he must have been cognizant of, if not a party to, the negotiations between Ira Allen [*q.v.*] and Gen. Haldimand, regarding the recognition of Vermont as a British province, although his name is not among those mentioned in Thomas Chittenden's list of those in the secret. On Oct. 29, 1784, he was appointed one of three agents "to transact the necessary business of opening a free trade to foreign powers, through the Province of Quebec" (*Records of the Governor and Council of the State of Vermont*, vol. III, 1875, pp. 397–98). Meanwhile, he was judge of the supreme court of Vermont (1782), and judge of probate (1782–87). He resided at Bennington until 1800, where he quietly practised medicine when not in the state's service. Later he removed to Charlotte and then to Pawlet. He spent his last years at Bennington, however, and died there Mar. 6, 1818. His second wife was Lydia (Warner) Safford whom he married Nov. 20, 1777. He left several children, among them Maj. Heman Allan Fay. Jonas Fay appears to have been a man of some little learning and sagacity, well versed in the political economy of his time. With Ethan Allen [*q.v.*], he was the author of *A Concise Refutation of the Claims of New-Hampshire and Massachusetts-Bay, to the Territory of Vermont*, published in 1780.

[O. P. Fay, *Fay Geneal.* (1898); G. G. Benedict, "The Recovery of the Fay Records," *Proc. Vt. Hist. Soc.*, 1903–04, pp. 49–55; Jonas Fay, *Records of Conventions in the N. H. Grants for the Independence of Vt., 1776–77* (1904); J. E. Goodrich, ed., *Vt. Rolls of the Soldiers in the Revolutionary War, 1775 to 1783* (1904); G. H. Doane, "The Continental Cong. and the N. H. Grants," in the *Vt. Rev.* (Barre, Vt.), Sept.–Oct. 1927; *Vt. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. I (1870), p. 6, II (1871), p. 7; Wm. Slade, *Vt. State Papers* (1823); E. B. O'Callaghan, *Doc. Hist. of the State of N. Y.*, IV (1851), pp. 529–1034; J. B. Wilbur, *Ira Allen, Founder of Vt.* (1928); *Vt. Hist. Gazetteer*, I (1868), 173–74. Date of birth is taken from *Vital Records of Westborough, Mass.* (1903), p. 40.] G. H. D.

Fay

**FAY, THEODORE SEDGWICK** (Feb. 10, 1807–Nov. 24, 1898), author, diplomat, was born in New York, the eldest child of Joseph Dewey Fay by his first wife, Caroline Broome. His father, a native of Vermont, had studied law in the office of Alexander Hamilton, was a successful practitioner, and gave much time to advocating the abolition of imprisonment for debt. Theodore became a clerk for his father, who died in 1825, and was admitted to the bar in 1828, but in the same year he joined Nathaniel Parker Willis and George Pope Morris as an editor of the *New York Mirror*. He had established his connection with the paper by continuing a series of light essays, entitled "The Little Genius," that had been begun by his father. *Dreams and Reveries of a Quiet Man* (2 vols., 1832) is a collection of his early *Mirror* articles. Though not heavily ballasted intellectually, he was versatile and sprightly, and his work was usually entertaining. In 1833 he married Laura Gardenier of New York and, in Poe's phrase, went "a-Willising in foreign countries" for three years, meanwhile sending home sketches of travel and miscellaneous matter to be published in the *Mirror*. His first novel, the once famous *Norman Leslie, A Tale of the Present Times* (2 vols., 1835) was replete with sentiment, bloodshed, heroics, and moral purpose. Fay's literary friends in New York reviewed it with tremendous enthusiasm, and the book was a best seller until Edgar Allan Poe, beginning his career as a critic, excoriated it in the *Southern Literary Messenger* (December 1835, pp. 54–57). This review proved an even greater sensation than the novel and started a verbal war between Poe and the New York literati. Fay's other novels—*Sydney Clifton* (1839), *The Countess Ida* (1840), *Hoboken, A Romance* (1843)—made pleasant reading for his contemporaries; the first of the three, like *Norman Leslie*, is a tale of "vicissitudes in both hemispheres"; the other two were written to expose the evils of dueling. For the rest of his life Fay lived in Europe. After holding a minor diplomatic post in London, he was appointed secretary of the legation in Berlin by President Van Buren in 1837. He was well liked in Berlin and in 1853 was promoted to

be resident minister to Switzerland. On retiring in 1861, he returned to Germany and resided at Blasewitz, near Dresden, and in Berlin, where he died in his ninety-second year. His first wife died while he was minister at Bern; his second wife was of German birth. Until after his eightieth birthday he was active as a writer. *Ulric, or The Voices* (1851) was a narrative poem, somewhat in the manner of Walter Scott, dealing with a German captain of horse who became a disciple of Martin Luther. It reflects Fay's concern for the truths of Christian doctrine, which became stronger as he grew older. He tried his hand at schoolbooks with *A Great Outline of Geography* (2 vols., 1867) and *First Steps in Geography* (1873). *Die Sklavenmacht: Blicke in die Geschichte der Vereinigten Staaten von Amerika* (Berlin, 1865), and *Die Alabama-Frage* (Leipzig, 1872) were replies to hostile propaganda. His most substantial work is a popular political history of Germany, *The Three Germanys* (2 vols., 1889). He also did much writing for magazines. He outlived his friends, whom in later years he saw but seldom, and was almost forgotten by the time of his death.

[O. P. Fay, *Fay Geneal.* (Cleveland, Ohio, 1898); N. Y. *Evening Post*, Nov. 25, 1898; brief notices in E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (rev. ed., 1875); R. W. Griswold, *Prose Writers of America*, and *Poets and Poetry of America* (many eds.); T. S. Fay, *Statement* (privately printed, 1845) and *Account of the Death of his Wife, Mrs. Laura Fay, with Observations on Christianity* (Bern, Switzerland, 1856); H. A. Beers, *Nathaniel Parker Willis* (1885); portrait in M. E. Phillips, *Edgar Allan Poe the Man* (1926), p. 523; F. L. Mott, *Hist. of Am. Magazines 1741–1850* (1930).]

G. H. G.

**FAYERWEATHER, DANIEL BURTON** (Mar. 12, 1822–Nov. 15, 1890), leather merchant, philanthropist, was born at Stepney, Fairfield County, Conn., a son of Lucius and Amelia (Beardsley) Fayerweather. His grandfather, Capt. Samuel Fayerweather, was a veteran of the Revolution and the War of 1812. In Daniel's boyhood his father died and he was bound out to a farmer in the neighborhood. The work was hard and the boy had practically no opportunity for schooling. Released from his term of service before its completion, he learned shoemaking and was successful in that trade, but because of uncertain health he was in time forced to look elsewhere for employment. When nothing better offered, he went to Virginia and there engaged in what was called in those days "tin-peddling," or selling wares from door to door through the country. When he could not get cash for his merchandise he took hides in payment and thus made a start in the leather business, from which he was eventually to derive a fortune. So highly did

Fayerweather

he value education that after he came of age he sought and gained admission to a boys' boarding school in Connecticut, where the pupils were from five to seven years his juniors (letter of John M. Toucey in *Shoe and Leather Reporter*, Dec. 11, 1890).

Having recovered his health in the outdoor life which he led in the South, Fayerweather was ambitious to get into the leather trade, but it was not until 1854, when he was thirty-two years of age, that an opportunity of the kind he had been seeking came to him. He was offered a clerkship in the New York house of Hoyt Brothers which he eagerly accepted, and within one year he was admitted to the firm. From that time on his rise was steady and significant until his death in 1890, when he was senior partner in the house doing the largest leather business in the United States, if not in the world. Fayerweather & Ladew had tanneries in Pennsylvania, Maryland, and West Virginia, as well as in New York. From factories which were operated in New York City an immense output of belting and sole-leather was marketed annually. His success was based on the strictest integrity and the soundest financing. He had few rivals, but continually found and exploited new territory. In the wholesale leather district of New York, near the Manhattan and Brooklyn Bridge, he was known to scores of men as "Dan," and beyond the bounds of that business district his name was rarely heard or printed, even after he had reached the rank of millionaire.

Not one of the men who met Fayerweather from day to day suspected that he was harboring plans of philanthropy on a great scale; most of them underestimated his wealth; and only a few knew of his disposition to give largely of it. He quietly sought the counsel of President Roswell D. Hitchcock of Union Theological Seminary, and from October 1884 to November 1890, only three men knew that on the former date Fayerweather had signed a will giving from $50,000 to $300,000, as well as additional gifts from the residuary estate, to each of a score of American colleges. It was also clear that he had made no provision whatever for having his own name perpetuated as a donor, or for restricting the institutions in the use of the funds bestowed. A codicil made on the day of his death gave full control of the estate to the executors, who, after providing for his widow, Lucy (Joyce) Fayerweather (1824–1892), proceeded to carry out the testator's bequests to the colleges.

[*Commemorative Biog. Record of Fairfield County, Conn.* (1899), p. 987; Samuel Orcutt, *A Hist. of the Old Town of Stratford and the City of Bridgeport, Conn.* (2 vols., 1886); *Shoe and Leather Reporter*, Nov.

20, 1890; *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 17, 1890; *N. Y. Tribune*, *New Haven Evening Reg.*, Dec. 9, 1890.] W. B. S—w.

**FAYSSOUX, PETER** (1745–Feb. 1, 1795), physician and surgeon, was born probably in Charleston, S. C., whither his mother had emigrated from Southern France, and where in 1746, she married Dr. James Hunter. He served his apprenticeship with his step-father, was sent to Edinburgh University, then the medical center of the world, and graduated in 1769. There also he began his friendship with Benjamin Rush [*q.v.*]. With Alexander Baron, Charles C. Pinckney and Thomas Heyward, Jr., he was elected in 1773 curator of the first museum of natural history in America, at Charleston. At the outbreak of the Revolution, he took a leading part. He served on the committee to collect signatures to the patriots' association in 1775, in 1776 was one of the signers of South Carolina's paper money, and attended the wounded behind the palmetto logs of Fort Moultrie in the first British attack on America. He was also present at the assault on Savannah in 1779 and gave an account of the last hours of Count Pulaski. As senior physician to the South Carolina line he officiated with Moultrie's forces until the surrender of Charleston in 1780. While a prisoner he was arrested with the leading citizens on parole in Charleston and sentenced to exile in St. Augustine, but was released as a surgeon and escaped the fate of the others. He wrote a very graphic letter concerning the British treatment of sick and wounded prisoners during this period, which was widely quoted as evidence of their inhumanity. After his exchange, he joined Greene's army and was appointed, May 15, 1781, chief physician and surgeon of the hospital, Southern Department.

Fayssoux became a charter member of the South Carolina Society of the Cincinnati; served in the legislature of the state and on the privy council of Gov. Moultrie. In 1786 he was one of the incorporators of the Santee Canal Company. He was twice married: first to Sarah Wilson on Jan. 29, 1772, and second, to Ann (Smith) Johnston, in March 1777. He became the father of at least thirteen children from whom all Americans of the name are descended.

It was in the field of his chosen profession that Fayssoux rendered the most conspicuous service to his country. His European education, his alert and open mind, together with his unusual hold on his patients' affections, led David Ramsay [*q.v.*] to accord him first place in his day among the physicians of Charleston. In treating yellow fever, so fatal in coastal Carolina, he was quick to adopt and spread the discoveries of Benjamin Rush, while many of the Northern physicians rejected them. In December 1789 David Ramsay and Alexander Baron met at his house to organize the Medical Society of South Carolina, of which he became the first president, 1790–92. Fayssoux's place in the progress of American civilization rests rather on his position of influence as the leading physician of his section than on any great originality in scientific research. He was quick to recognize truth and to acknowledge it, but he left no published records of his own observations.

[C. G. Davidson's "Surgeon-General Peter Fayssoux" is now in preparation. The sketch in H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biog.* (1928), is very inaccurate. Best published sources are: J. M. Toner, *The Medic. Men of the Revolution* (1876), and scattered material in the *S. C. Hist. and Geneal. Mag.*] C. G. D.

**FEARN, JOHN WALKER** (Jan. 13, 1832–Apr. 7, 1899), lawyer, diplomat, was born at Huntsville, Ala., the son of Richard Lee and Mary Jane (Walker) Fearn. His mother was a daughter of John W. Walker, United States senator from Alabama, and a sister of Leroy P. Walker [*q.v.*], Confederate secretary of war. When he was two years old, his father, who was a physician, moved his family to Mobile, and there John Walker Fearn received his early education, in the private academy of Dr. Norman Pinney, an eminent classical scholar. He entered Yale and upon his graduation in 1851 he began the study of law under Judge John A. Campbell. Although Fearn was admitted to the bar in Mobile in 1853, a talent for literature and languages which he had developed at an early age led to his appointment in that year as secretary to the United States minister to Belgium. Three years later he was made secretary of the legation in Mexico, where he served until 1859, when he resigned ostensibly to return to the practise of law at Mobile. These were the days of secession, however, and when the Southern states sent their first commission—William Yancey, Pierre A. Rost, and A. Dudley Mann [*qq.v.*]—to Europe early in 1861 before the outbreak of hostilities, they availed themselves of the experienced services of Fearn. He went to Madrid with Rost early in February 1862, shortly after John Slidell's arrival in Paris, but when Rost resigned because of his cold reception and his poor health, Fearn's position as secretary of legation was vacated by Secretary of State Judah P. Benjamin in a letter to Slidell, dated Sept. 26, 1862. Fearn thereupon returned to America, running the blockade at Charleston, S. C., and after being wrecked under the guns of Fort Moultrie, escaped and secured an appointment on the staff of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston. On Nov. 19, 1862, Benja-

min instructed L. Q. C. Lamar to proceed to St. Petersburg to secure the friendly support of the Czar, and Fearn accompanied him as secretary. Russia refused to receive the Confederate commissioner; consequently Fearn returned again and obtained a place on the staff of Gen. William Preston. Early in 1864, when there seemed some hope of recognition of the Confederacy by Mexico, Fearn accompanied Preston [*q.v.*] to Cuba on the way to Mexico, but anticipating a cold reception they returned without reaching the Mexican capital. After 1866 he practised law at New Orleans, La. He was interested in the University of Louisiana and is said to have been appointed to the chair of French, Spanish, and Italian at the Tulane University in 1884. In 1885 President Cleveland appointed him minister resident and consul-general to Greece, Rumania, and Servia. Upon his retirement from this position, about 1887, he established an international law firm with offices in London and New York. On his return to America, he was made chief of the Department of Foreign Affairs of the World's Columbian Exposition at Chicago in 1893. Under Cleveland's second administration Fearn was appointed one of the judges of the International Mixed Tribunal in Egypt and remained a member of that distinguished body until the failure of his health necessitated his resignation. Immediately upon the first attack of rheumatic gout, he set out for home. His friends feared he would die at sea, but he rallied on landing at New York and passed the summer at Newport. On his physician's advice, he moved to Hot Springs, Va., where he died, being survived by his widow, who was Fanny Hewitt, daughter of James Hewitt, a merchant of New Orleans, and by two children, a daughter and a son. The supreme court of Louisiana adjourned at his death as a mark of respect.

[*Obit. Record Grads. Yale Univ., 1890–1900* (1900); *Times-Democrat* (New Orleans), Apr. 9, 1899; Jas. M. Callahan, *The Diplomatic Hist. of the Southern Confederacy* (1901), and Jas. D. Richardson, *A Compilation of the Messages and Papers of the Confederacy*, vol. II (1905).] H. F. W.

**FEATHERSTON, WINFIELD SCOTT** (Aug. 8, 1819–May 28, 1891), lawyer, congressman, soldier, was born four miles from Murfreesboro, Tenn., the youngest of seven children. His parents, Charles and Lucy (Pitts) Featherston, were recent pioneers from Virginia. Although he became a man of learning, his formal education did not extend beyond the high school, and even this was disturbed in 1836 when he left the studies in which he was engaged at Columbus, Ga., and served as a volunteer in the war against the Creek Indians. After some indecision he chose to study law, and was admitted to the bar in Houston, Miss. His successful legal career, begun in 1840, was interrupted by membership in the Thirtieth and Thirty-first Congresses (1847–1851) to which he was elected on the Democratic ticket over a strong opposition. Though again a candidate in 1850, he shared in the state-wide defeat suffered by the State-rights party. He remained in private life until the beginning of the Civil War. In 1857 he moved to Holly Springs, Miss., and in the following year he married Elizabeth M. McEwen of that city, who lived until the yellow-fever epidemic of 1878. He had lost his first wife, Mary Holt Harris of Columbus, Miss., a few months after their marriage in 1848.

As secession became imminent, Featherston was sent from Mississippi in December 1860 to treat with the Kentucky authorities. Soon after he was elected colonel of the 17th Mississippi Regiment. He was a man of commanding presence, over six feet tall and well proportioned. He served in the Virginia army through the year 1862, taking part in several important battles. In one of these he was wounded, and was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general (Mar. 4, 1862) for skill and gallantry in action. In January 1863 he was sent at his own request to assist in the defense of Vicksburg, but was not captured at the fall of the city. While covering Pemberton's retreat into Vicksburg his brigade was cut off and proceeded to Jackson, Miss., where it joined the army of Gen. Joseph E. Johnston.

At the close of the war, Gen. Featherston returned to Holly Springs, resumed his law practise, and became an important factor in the overthrow of the Ames regimen in Mississippi. He was president of the state tax-payers' convention which met in January 1874 and succeeded himself in the same office a year later. At both times protests were made against the high taxes and needless expenditures of the existing state government. He led the attack on Gov. Ames by introducing in the lower house of the legislature the resolution looking toward the impeachment of the governor, and acted as chairman of the committee which prepared the articles and conducted the prosecution. In addition to his service in the legislature of 1876–78, he was a member of this body in 1880–82, and in the capacity of chairman of the judiciary committee, assisted in the revision of the state code of 1880. In 1882, he became judge of the second judicial circuit of the state. His last public service was in the constitutional convention of 1890, in which he was a member of the judiciary committee. He died at his home in Holly Springs the following year.

[*Jour. of the House of the State of Miss.*, 1876, 1880;

*Jour. of the Senate of the State of Miss. Sitting as a Court of Impeachment*, 1876; *Memoirs of Miss.* (1891); *Confed. Mil. Hist.*, VII (1899); Dunbar Rowland, *Mississippi* (1907); Reuben Davis, *Recollections of Miss. and Mississippians* (1889); *Memphis Commercial*, May 30, 1891. Featherston's papers, relating chiefly to his military career, are in the possession of his son, D. M. Featherston of Holly Springs, Miss.] C.S.S.

**FEBIGER, CHRISTIAN** (1746–Sept. 20, 1796), Revolutionary soldier, was born on the island of Fünen, Denmark. He attended a military school and while still a youth joined the staff of his uncle, who was governor of the island of Santa Cruz, in the West Indies. In 1772 he made a tour of the American colonies from Cape Fear to the Penobscot and engaged in the "lumber, fish and horse trade." Lexington found him domiciled in Massachusetts and ten days later he joined Col. Samuel Gerrish's Essex and Middlesex militia regiment. He was promoted adjutant and rendered "valuable service" at the battle of Bunker Hill. He served as Benedict Arnold's brigade-major during the invasion of Canada and was taken prisoner at the assault on Quebec, Dec. 31, 1775. Exchanged in January 1777, he was immediately commissioned lieutenant-colonel of Col. Daniel Morgan's 11th Virginia regiment, Continental line. He was promoted colonel after the battle of Brandywine (September 1777) and took part in the battles of Germantown (October 1777) and Monmouth (June 1778). In July 1779 he was chosen by Washington to command one of the four light infantry regiments organized for the storming of Stony Point. On July 15 Gen. Wayne and Cols. Febiger and Butler made a final reconnaissance and during the night took the fortress by assault. For his share in the triumph Febiger received Wayne's commendation. Gen. Muhlenberg stationed Febiger at Philadelphia in August 1780 with orders to forward arms and clothing to Richmond, where Muhlenberg was hastily assembling troops and equipment for Gen. Gates. In November, Gen. Greene, who had taken over the command in the South, ordered Febiger to remain in Philadelphia as agent for obtaining and forwarding stores to the southern army. In this service "Old Denmark" displayed great talent for procuring supplies from the quartermaster-general and the Board of War. Returning to Virginia, he aided Morgan in suppressing the Loyalist insurrection in Hampshire County (May–June, 1781), served as recruiting officer, and commanded a body of Virginia recruits in Lafayette's army. In the fall of 1781 he wrote to Washington describing himself as "Superintending officer of the Virginia line." At the close of the Revolution he retired from the army and was brevetted brigadier-general by Congress (Sept. 30, 1783). Settling in Philadelphia he



was elected treasurer of Pennsylvania (1789–96). He married Elizabeth Carson, daughter of a Philadelphia merchant.

[Henry P. Johnston, memoir in *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, Mar. 1881; and *The Storming of Stony Point on the Hudson* (1900); R. Frothingham, *Hist. of the Siege of Boston* (1849); H. B. Dawson, *The Assault on Stony Point* (1863); Chas. J. Stillé, *Maj.-Gen. Anthony Wayne and the Pa. Line in the Continental Army* (1893); H. A. Muhlenberg, *The Life of Maj.-Gen. Peter Muhlenberg of the Revolutionary Army* (1849); C. Tower, *The Marquis De La Fayette in the Am. Revolution* (1895); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1903; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. of Officers of the Continental Army* (1893); Wm. P. Palmer, *Calendar of Va. State Papers*, vols. I, II, III (1875–83).] F.E.R.

**FECHTER, CHARLES ALBERT** (Oct. 23, 1824–Aug. 5, 1879), actor, was born in London, the twelfth of the thirteen children, of whom eleven died in infancy, of Jean Maria Guillaume and Marie Angélique (Regis) Fechter. His mother, Flemish by birth, Piedmontese by blood, was a maker of artificial flowers and dabbled in verse and fiction. His father, French by birth, German by blood, was a sculptor and designer for jewellers and had in him the makings of a comic actor. Charles spent most of his early years in France. He studied music, painting, and sculpture and was proficient in all three. Acting, however, was to be his career. He joined in 1840 an amateur company playing at the Salle Molière in Paris, suffered the usual vicissitudes of a young player, and by 1848 had attained distinct success. For the next ten years he was the favorite *jeune premier* on the French stage, achieving his greatest triumph as Armand Duval in Dumas's *La Dame aux Camélias* (Vaudeville, Feb. 2, 1852). During these years he was frequently reprimanded by the critics for his bold departures from stage traditions; he manifested on several occasions the temper and obstinacy that marred his otherwise amiable character and finally brought him to catastrophe; and the first signs developed of the disease that cut short his life. In 1857 he became joint manager of the Odéon. When the government forbade him to produce plays that were the exclusive property of the Théâtre Français, he resigned in a huff and determined to try his fortune in London, where he had already acted in French.

His accession to the English stage marked the culmination in London of the vogue of French romantic realism in acting, and inaugurated a revolution in stagecraft. By no means the best actor of the period, Fechter was theatrically the most effective, even when acting in English, which he spoke in the main correctly and fluently but with a French intonation. Before his time no one in England had devoted such attention and resource to the construction and equipment of the

stage, the scenery, and other properties, and to costuming. Making his first appearance in the title rôle of Hugo's *Ruy Blas* (Royal Princess's, Oct. 27, 1860) he scored an astounding success. Some months later he invaded the citadel of British theatrical conservatism with his *Hamlet* (Mar. 20, 1861), the merits of which were a subject for lively debate among critics fifty years after its performance. Symbolizing his realism and his break with tradition by wearing a blond wig, he interpreted many passages anew, slurred the famous soliloquies, and portrayed Hamlet as a man of action. His interpretation has been of lasting influence, but the same methods applied to *Othello* (Oct. 23, 1861) resulted in an ignominious failure; in later productions Fechter took the part of Iago and enjoyed his customary success. He became a close friend of Wilkie Collins and Charles Dickens, with whose romanticism in realistic trappings his own art was akin. Fechter was considered the greatest lover ever seen on the English stage, but after a few years his popularity waned. As an actor-manager he became involved in inextricable difficulties, and at the instigation of Dickens, who heralded his appearance with a laudatory article in the *Atlantic Monthly* (August 1869), he turned to America to retrieve himself.

His American career began auspiciously with *Ruy Blas* at Niblo's Garden, New York, Jan. 10, 1870. In Boston, next month, he was received with overwhelming enthusiasm, and in September he returned to that city as manager of the Globe Theatre. A notable company had been assembled, public support was assured, but Fechter quarreled with the younger James W. Wallack and with Mr. and Mrs. Chanfrau, and in January the venture ended dismally. His estrangement from his leading lady, Carlotta Leclercq, and her subsequent marriage in England, threw him into a fit of grief that shook body and mind. After failing as a manager in New York, he returned to England for a few months late in 1872, but the next spring found him acting again in New York. Playgoers in various American cities continued to see him in his repertoire, including Hamlet, Ruy Blas, and Obenreizer in Wilkie Collins's *No Thoroughfare*, but his remaining days were few and evil. His body grew coarse and bloated; sometimes he was too ill to act; at other times he acted though in great distress; his money melted away; and his friends were alienated by his outbursts of temper. Early in 1874 he married Lizzie Price, a handsome and capable Philadelphia actress, who became and remained his devoted slave; but before long it was common knowledge that the marriage was bigamous. He had been



married Nov. 29, 1847, to a *pensionnaire* of the Théâtre Français (a Mlle. Rolbert according to the *Dictionary of National Biography*, but the name is in doubt) by whom he had a son and a daughter. He died of cirrhosis of the liver on his farm near Quakertown, Bucks County, Pa. A man of genius, in the estimate of even his severest critics, an eminent actor on the French, the English, and the American stage, he died poor, despised, almost friendless. His monument in Mt. Vernon Cemetery, Philadelphia, bears the inscription, "Genius has taken its flight to God."

[Kate Field, *Charles Albert Fechter* (1882); Joseph Knight, article in *Dict. Nat. Biog.*, XVIII (1889); H. B. Baker, *The London Stage 1576–1888* (1889); Phila. *Times*, Dec. 23, 1878; Phila. *Item*, Aug. 10, 17, 1879; Phila. *Evening Telegraph*, Aug 5, 1879; *Phila. Inquirer*, Aug. 6, 1879; *N. Y. Herald*, Aug. 6, 7, 1879; C. M. Drake, "Report of the Autopsy of Mr. Charles A. Fechter, Tragedian," in *Medic. and Surgic. Reporter*, Aug. 16, 1879; R. G. White, articles in *Nation* (N. Y.), Feb. 24, June 9, 1870; H. A. Clapp, *Reminiscences of a Dramatic Critic* (1902); William Winter, *The Wallet of Time*, I (1913); J. R. Towse, *Sixty Years in the Theatre* (1916); G. C. D. Odell, *Shakespeare from Betterton to Irving* (1919); J. G. Huneker, *Steeplejack* (1920); E. B. Watson, *Sheridan to Robertson* (1926).]

G. H. G.

**FEE, JOHN GREGG** (Sept. 9, 1816–Jan. 11, 1901), Abolitionist, founder of Berea College, eldest son of John Fee and Elizabeth Gregg, was born in Bracken County, Ky. From his father, a landowner of Scotch and English descent, he received an inflexible will, humanized, however, by his inheritance from a tender Scotch-Irish mother of Quaker stock. Early in life he began to prepare for the ministry, studying first at a subscription school near his home and then at Augusta and Miami Colleges. He graduated from the former. In 1842 he entered Lane Theological Seminary, and after two years consecrated himself to the cause of Abolition. Returning to convert his slaveholding parents, he failed and was disinherited. On Sept. 26, 1844, he married Mathilda Hamilton, also of Bracken County. She was gifted with affection, courage, and endurance, and proved a most sympathetic partner.

Fee established two anti-slavery churches in Lewis and Bracken counties and labored with them for some years, though censured by the Synod for introducing Abolition into Church affairs, and though shot at, clubbed, and stoned. Preaching, speaking at conventions, and the preparation of anti-slavery pamphlets filled his days. In 1853 friends of freedom in Madison County invited him to give a series of sermons. There he established what still stands as Berea Union Church, and in the next year he moved to Berea as its pastor. In 1855 he founded an abolitionist school—now Berea College. About this

time he was the victim of a series of mobs. Finally, in 1859, while he was in the East raising money for the college, John Brown's raid occurred. False reports of a speech of his in Henry Ward Beecher's church fanned the flames, and Fee and ten other Bereans were driven from the state. Not until 1863 was he finally able to return to Kentucky to work with the negro soldiers in Camp Nelson. With the close of the war, he returned to Berea to build up both church and college, serving as pastor of the former and trustee of the latter. In 1894 his wife died, and the next year he retired from his pastorate. He remained in Berea, however, preaching and serving the college, until his death.

Fee was a clear thinker and a forceful speaker. He was calm but earnest, and was gifted with an intensity of moral purpose. Considering sects "contrary to the spirit of the Gospel, a hindrance to reform," he established a union church; hating slavery, he fought it in spite of family opposition, ostracism, and violence. He was never influenced by expediency; whatever seemed to him to be right he did without regard for consequences, but with steadfast devotion.

[Nat. Christian Asso., *Autobiog. of John G. Fee* (1891); John A. R. Rogers, *Birth of Berea Coll.* (1903); *Berea Coll., Ky.: An Interesting Hist.*, approved by the Prudential Committee, Cincinnati (1875 and 1883); the *Berea Quart.*, Feb. 1901.] W. P. F.

**FEEHAN, PATRICK AUGUSTINE** (Aug. 28, 1829–July 12, 1902), Catholic archbishop of Chicago, was born in Killenaule, County Tipperary, Ireland, to Patrick and Judith Cooney Feehan. Despite the penal laws, his father had acquired a sound schooling and speaking knowledge of French. A studious child, Patrick obtained the rudiments of a classical education at home and in a local school, so that at sixteen years of age, he was prepared to enter Castle Knock College. Here he was associated with two boys who were later famed as Lord Russell of Killowen and Archbishop Hale of Tuam. Answering a spiritual call, he entered Maynooth (1847), where he followed the seminary course for five years. In the meantime, his family, selling their dwindling possessions, fled from post-famine Ireland to America. Hence the young deacon gladly embraced the call of Archbishop Peter R. Kenrick of St. Louis, who sent him to his Seminary at Carondelet in final preparation for ordination (Nov. 1, 1852).

Appointed curate of St. John's Church, at St. Louis, Father Feehan proved an earnest preacher rather than an orator. As one who lived through the Irish famine and fever, his heart turned to the poor in the cholera epidemic (1853), when he nursed the sick, attended the dying, and coffined



the dead. Assigned to the rectorship of the diocesan seminary at Carondelet, he taught moral theology and sacred scripture for four years when he was placed in charge of St. Michael's Church, St. Louis. A year later he was transferred to the Church of the Immaculate Conception where he won the title of "the priest of the poor." He established a unit of the St. Vincent de Paul Society and made daily visits to the unfortunates in the local jail. During the Civil War, he spent himself administering the sacraments to dying soldiers and in comforting the wounded who crowded the neighboring hospital of the Sisters of Charity. After Shiloh, the wounded were sent to St. Louis in boatloads. No small percentage were Irishmen, but Feehan knew no racial or creedal distinctions in such a crisis. His charity, not his teaching, brought numerous deathbed conversions.

On the resignation of Bishop James Whelan of Nashville, Rome named Father Feehan to that war-torn diocese (1864). Owing to impaired health, he declined, but, on the death of his mother, accepted a second appointment and was consecrated by Archbishop Kenrick (Nov. 1, 1865). The diocese was in chaos: the cathedral and rectory had served as a barracks; every institution was bankrupt; there were only three secular priests in Tennessee. Undaunted, he entered upon the work of reconstruction. While attending the Second Plenary Council of Baltimore (1866) and the Ecumenical Council at Rome (1870), he sought financial aid to rebuild churches and construct chapels and invited priests and religious to enter his mission field. An organizer and a builder, he encouraged the Sisters of Mercy to establish St. Bernard's Academy (1866); he rebuilt St. Cecilia's Dominican Convent and School; he established St. Joseph's Orphanage for the children of dead soldiers; he purchased a cemetery; he erected several parochial schools; and he made trying visitations into inaccessible parts of the diocese. He went through cholera epidemics in 1866, 1873, and the terrible year of 1878, when thousands died, including twelve of his priests who were stricken while attending the dying. The bishop's courageous labors so won the affection of all classes, that sorrow was mingled with satisfaction when, on the death of Bishop Thomas Foley, he was elevated to the newly created archdiocese of Chicago.

Installed as archbishop, Nov. 28, 1880, he was destined to rule the archdiocese for twenty-two years during a time of tremendous municipal and Catholic growth. A remarkable business man, he bought and held property, and, despite criticism, he built in distant suburbs in realization of Chi-

cago's future. Sustained by the courts, he retained riparian rights and reclaimed invaluable lands from the waters of Lake Michigan. During his administration the Catholic population grew from 200,000 to over 800,000, priests increased from 204 to 538, churches and chapels from 194 to 298, colleges and academies from 17 to 28, and seminarians from 34 to 130. In this period of astounding development, he saw his people rise from labor into the professional and financial circles. He witnessed the erection of about 150 parochial schools. He aided in the foundation of the La Salle Institute, Saint Cyril's College, St. Vincent's College, and St. Viateur's College at Bourbonnais. The importance of Feehan's contribution to Catholic education was recognized when the Catholic Educational Exhibit displayed at the Catholic Congress of the United States won general encomiums from the promoters of the World's Fair (1893).

Archbishop Feehan was a social worker in the larger sense. While in Nashville, he had been one of the founders of the Catholic Knights of America (1877), he now supported the Catholic Order of Foresters, and defended the Ancient Order of Hibernians before the Third Council of Baltimore when some of the bishops attacked secret societies. In a quiet way, he was engaged in Americanization. His archdiocese was populated with a large proportion of immigrants of whom great numbers were foreign speaking. Aware of the ravages of drink, he gave full patronage to temperance societies. He walked the streets of Chicago with policemen on their beats in order to learn of social conditions at first hand. He did not hesitate to join civic movements to reform the city and help its submerged and vicious classes. His deepest interest was in Catholic eleemosynary institutions: St. Vincent's Orphan Asylum, his Newsboys' Home, industrial schools and orphanages for girls, the homes of the Good Shepherd, and St. Mary's Training School for boys at Feehanville, where he erected his own summer residence and intimately concerned himself with the work of rehabilitation. Growing old, he sought relief from his burdens and obtained an auxiliary bishop, Peter J. Muldoon (1901). A year later, he was dead. To Catholics of all races and to Chicagoans in general, he had so endeared himself that few would disagree with the eulogy which Archbishop Ryan of Philadelphia delivered over the remains of his lifelong friend. A large, strongly built man, steadfast and frank in his opinions, reserved but kind, and rather unforgiving if deceived, Archbishop Feehan's courage was never broken. He had neither skill nor desire to dabble in secular or ecclesiastical politics. Reputed a good theologian, he wrote practically nothing and left little correspondence. Unswervingly, he confined himself to his official duties, and these he did well.

[C. J. Kirkfleet, Ord. Praem., *The Life of Patrick Augustine Feehan* (1922); *Souvenir of the Silver Jubilee of the Most Rev. P. A. Feehan* (1891); G. J. Garraghan, S. J., *The Cath. Ch. in Chicago* (Chicago, 1921); *Cath. Encyc.*; *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Rev. of Revs.* XXVI, 284; *Chicago American*, July 14, 1902; *Chronicle*, July 15, 1902. *The New World* (a diocesan weekly established by Feehan in 1892), reprinted editorial obituary comments from the secular and Catholic press. *The New World*, Apr. 14, 1900, contained an historical survey of the archdiocese.]

R. J. P.



**FEKE, ROBERT** (*c.* 1705–*c.* 1750), portrait-painter, styled a "mariner" in Newport records, was born at Oyster Bay, Long Island. The family was not Dutch, as has been stated. Robert Feke, Sr., a Baptist minister, was descended from Robert Feke, or Feake, who settled at Watertown, Mass., and married Elizabeth Fones, widow of Henry Winthrop. The Fekes were of Norfolk, England, a sixteenth-century ancestor being James Feake of Wighton. Little is known of the boyhood of Robert Feke, Jr. His mother was Clemence Ludlam. Several writers repeat the legend that he was disinherited by his Quaker father for adopting the Baptist faith; and that having gone to sea he was taken captive to Spain where he learned to paint. Professor W. C. Poland's researches established that Robert Feke, Sr., was himself a Baptist preacher, so that if the story of the disinheritance has any truth, it applies to the father and not to the artist. Feke's portraiture has no resemblance to Spanish painting of any period; its affinity to the eighteenth-century English school is obvious. It is probable that Feke had seafaring experience and that this brought him to Newport, a prosperous trading town. In 1729 Dean, afterward Bishop, George Berkeley visited Newport; and from internal evidence in Feke's painting some have thought that he either learned to paint from John Smibert, who was of Berkeley's entourage, or that he was influenced at least by Smibert.

On Sept. 23, 1742, Feke married Elinor Cozzens (in several publications styled "Eleanor." See *Newport Hist. Mag.*, I, 204). A tradition records that Mrs. Feke was a Quaker, while her husband remained a Baptist, and that each First-day he escorted her to the door of the Friends' Meeting-House before going to his own church. Feke was thus described by Dr. Alexander Hamilton, a Scottish visitor, in his *Itinerarium:* "This man had exactly the phiz of a painter, having a long pale face, sharp nose, large eyes,—with which he looked upon you steadfastly,—long curled black hair, a delicate white hand, and long

fingers." This description agrees with the two Feke self-portraits: one depicting a youth of about twenty; the other, a mature man as he may have looked about 1750. William Dunlap's reference (*History of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the United States,* 1918, I, 30) to a portrait of a Philadelphia woman, Mrs. Willing, painted in Philadelphia in 1746, has led to discovery of other signed portraits in that city (Hannah R. London, *Portraits of Jews by Gilbert Stuart and other Early American Artists,* 1927, pp. 34, 63, 123). A reference has also been discovered to his painting in Philadelphia in the spring of 1750. Mr. Henry Wilder Foote regards it as certain that in 1741 Feke visited Boston to paint the portrait group of Isaac Royall and family, now belonging to the Harvard Law Library, and again in 1748–49, when he painted more than twenty of his finest pictures, including those of the Bowdoin family. A legendary account which is credible represents Feke as suffering from ill health, a circumstance which led to his going to Bermuda (or possibly Barbados) where he died. He left five children of whom only two daughters had descendants. The widow died in Newport in 1804. Two portraits by Feke, portraying Mary Wanton and Philip Wilkinson, are in the Redwood Library, Newport. The portrait of Rev. John Callender at the Rhode Island Historical Society, in Providence, is now ascribed to Feke, though formerly attributed to Smibert. At Bowdoin College are the very striking likenesses of William and James Bowdoin and their wives. The Cleveland Art Museum has a fine portrait of Charles Apthorp. Of Feke's technique Lawrence Park wrote (*Bulletin of the Cleveland Museum,* July 1919): "The work of his maturity shows Feke to have been a clever draughtsman and although strongly influenced by the conventions of pose which are closely associated with his own and earlier periods, his portraits carry conviction, both as lifelike reproduction of likenesses, and, of the rich, elaborate costumes of velvets, silks and satins which his subjects wore. A pleasing pearliness of tone is found which did not exist when they left the artist's hands."

[See especially *Robert Feke: Colonial Portrait Painter* (to be published in 1930), by Henry Wilder Foote, which gives a full account of what is known of the artist and a descriptive catalogue of about seventy of his works; and *Robert Feke, the Early Newport Portrait Painter,* by Wm. Carey Poland (1907). Besides the authorities cited above there are references to Feke in Wilkins Updike, *A Hist. of the Episcopal Church in Narragansett, R. I.* (2nd ed., 3 vols., 1907); Maude Howe Elliott, "Some Recollections of Newport Artists," in *Newport Hist. Soc. Bull.,* p. 35 (1921). A concise biographical summary prefaces the reproductions with descriptive text of all the portraits attributed to Feke in F. W. Bayley's *Five Colonial Artists of New England* (1929). See also Mary Powell Bunker, *Long Island Genealogies* (1895), pp. 202–3.] F. W. C.



**FELCH, ALPHEUS** (Sept. 28, 1804–June 13, 1896), lawyer, senator, governor of Michigan, was born at Limerick, Me., the son of Captain Daniel Felch, a country merchant, and Sally Piper. His grandfather, Abijah Felch, had been a revolutionary soldier and a prominent citizen. When his mother died in 1808, leaving him an orphan, Alpheus lived successively with his grandfathers and with an aunt. He attended the Academy in Limerick, then in 1821 entered Phillips Exeter Academy in New Hampshire. In 1823 he enrolled at Bowdoin College, where he graduated in 1827, and in the same year he took up the study of law. Three years later he was admitted to the bar at Bangor, Me. He began his practise at Houlton, Me., where one of his sisters lived, but on account of his weak lungs, he was advised by a physician to go West. He left in 1833, traveling by stage, steamer, and canalboat, until he reached Monroe, Mich. From there he planned to go South, but when he arrived in Cincinnati, he contracted cholera. Returning to Monroe, he began to practise law. He married on Sept. 14, 1837, Lucretia W. Lawrence, the daughter of his friend, Judge Wolcott Lawrence. In 1834 he was elected village attorney, and in the next year he became a member of the state legislature. Thereafter he was successively state bank commissioner (1838), auditor-general (1842), justice of the state supreme court (1843), and governor. This last office he filled from Jan. 1, 1846, to Mar. 3, 1847. In 1846 he was elected to the United States Senate, as a Democrat, and served for one term. His career in Washington was not brilliant; his speeches were relatively few and caused no great stir. Nevertheless he won general respect, due to the fact that he never prepared a speech without thorough research. That he was exceedingly painstaking is shown by his speech against the French spoliation claims (*Congressional Globe,* 32 Cong., 1 Sess., app. pp. 564–74), and the speech on land grants to Iowa (*Ibid.,* pp. 145–54). Largely through his efforts a bill was passed by the Senate (*Ibid.,* 32 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 2232; app. pp. 941–64) providing for the construction of a canal at Sault Ste. Marie, which finally was enacted. In 1853, at the conclusion of his senatorial term, he was appointed president of a commission to adjust and settle the Spanish and Mexican land claims under the treaty of Guadalupe-Hidalgo.

In 1856 Felch opened a law office in Ann Arbor, Mich. He had made his home there since 1843. He was greatly interested in the rising

university, and upon his death left to it more than 4,000 books and pamphlets. From 1843 to 1847 he was one of the regents and from 1879 to 1883 he was Tappan Professor of Law. He died in Ann Arbor, survived by five children. His written works include a few articles on Michigan history which appeared in the *Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections.*

[An excellent biography of Felch was published by his friend C. B. Grant in the *Mich. Pioneer and Hist. Colls.*, XXVIII (1900), 94–104. See also G. I. Reed, *Bench and Bar of Mich.* (1897), pp. 161–64; B. A. Hinsdale, *Hist. of the Univ. of Mich.* (1906), pp. 167–68; W. F. Felch, *Memorial Hist. of the Felch Family* (1881), pt. III, p. 58; *Hist. of York County, Me.* (1880), pp. 333–40; the *Ann Arbor Courier*, June 17, 1896; the *Ann Arbor Reg.*, June 18, 1896; and the *Ann Arbor Argus*, June 19, 1896.] A. H.

**FELL, JOHN** (Feb. 5, 1721–May 15, 1798), merchant, judge, legislator, was born and schooled in New York City. He was a descendant of Symon Felle who subscribed twelve florins for fortifying the town on Oct. 11, 1655 (*Records of New Amsterdam*, 1897, I, 373). As senior partner of John Fell & Company he was a large merchant by 1759, having a fleet of several armed ships. Later he bought 220 acres of land and settled near Paramus, Bergen County, N. J. He was judge of the court of common pleas, 1766–74 and 1776–86 (*New Jersey Archives*, 2 ser., I, 54, 456). A leader in the meeting of 328 citizens of Bergen County who signed patriotic resolutions at the Hackensack Court House on June 25, 1774, he became chairman of the Bergen County committee which made the war locally, chairman of the Standing Committee of Correspondence, and on May 23, 1775, headed the Bergen deputies to the First Provincial Congress at Trenton. His work lay in tightening the grip of the revolutionists on Bergen County and he won fame as "a great Tory Hunter" (Journals of Stephen Kemble, Apr. 23, 1777, *New York Historical Society Collections*, 1883, p. 114). A member of the Provincial Council in 1776, he was taken at his home by Loyalist raiders Apr. 22, 1777, and badly treated in the provost jail in New York City (J. Van Zandt to R. Morris, Nov. 10, 1777), but paroled on Jan. 7, 1778, and released on May 11.

Elected to the Continental Congress, Nov. 6, 1778, he worked with great zeal, being reëlected May 25 and Dec. 25, 1779. Attending steadily from Dec. 5, 1778, to Nov. 28, 1780, he cast 265 votes but put few motions and wrote fewer reports. Though serving on various special committees, his main work was on the standing committee of five "to conduct the commercial affairs of the United States," which met almost daily. He was the New Jersey member on the special



foreign affairs committee Jan. 20, 1779, and also on that to estimate state quotas of supplies. He sided frequently with his colleague, W. C. Houston, voting steadily for economy, sound finance, and increase of national authority. Few men have been so solidly useful and so obscure. After serving uneventfully 1782–83 in the New Jersey Council, he sold his Bergen property, moving to New York City and thence to his son Peter's estate at Coldenham, Dutchess County, N. Y., where he died. He was a man of wealth and lived well. He had married Susanna Moskhk, or Marschalk, widow of one McIntosh. His son, Peter Renaudet Fell, was a lieutenant-colonel of Bergen County militia and married Margaret Colden, grand-daughter of Lieut.-Gov. Cadwallader Colden.

[The best accounts are by Wm. Nelson, *N. J. Archives*, 2 ser. I (1901), 456, 54–55n.; *N. J. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, IX (1916), 110–11. Fell's journal of prison days is in *Docs. and Letters to Illustrate the Revolutionary Incidents of Queens County* (1846), ed. by Henry Onderdonk. His list of the prisoners May 11, 1778, is in *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Record*, XXIV (1893), 85. Van Zandt's letter as to his hardships is in *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, n.s., V (1920), 177. Fell also kept a diary while in Congress (MS. in Lib. of Cong., see references "Fell," in E. C. Burnett, *Letters of Members of the Continental Cong.*, III, 1926, 564, IV, 1928, 560); his report on care of war prisoners is in Papers of Cont. Cong., No. 28, Folio 60, MSS. Div., Lib. of Cong.] W. L. W—y.

**FELS, JOSEPH** (Dec. 16, 1854–Feb. 22, 1914), soap manufacturer, and Single-Tax advocate, was born of German Jewish parents, Lazarus and Susanna (Freiberg) Fels, in Halifax County, Va. His father and mother had come to America under the migratory impulse of 1848. Soon after Joseph's birth they settled in Yanceyville, N. C., where they lived till the end of the Civil War. The boy's schooling was irregular and apparently of slight permanent worth. At Richmond and Baltimore, where the family lived after the war, opportunities were better, but at fifteen Joseph left school for business. For a year he worked with his father, who was engaged in the production of toilet soaps on a small scale. Then for three years father and son represented a Philadelphia soap house in Baltimore, but in 1873 they went to Philadelphia and took a commission with a larger house. Two years later, when he had reached his majority, Joseph went into a partnership with another Philadelphia manufacturer, whom he bought out, after the first year, for the sum of $4,000. This was the beginning of an uninterrupted business success continuing for twenty years. In 1893 he bought an interest in a process of soap-making from naphtha and after experimentation and improvement discontinued the manufacture of toilet soaps and developed the

Fels-Naptha plant, which eventually sent its products to every part of the civilized world.

While in England, planning for the extension of his export trade, Fels formed contacts with leaders of humanitarian effort, notably with George Lansbury, through whom he became interested in the English back-to-the-land movement. At Hollesley Bay Fels bought 1,300 acres of land for the use of the unemployed and later at Maylands, Essex, he devoted 600 acres to the same purpose. He promoted vacant-lot farming in London, as well as in Philadelphia.

It was not until 1905 that Fels became identified with the Single-Tax propaganda, of which he was to become within ten years an outstanding exponent. The humanitarian phase of the movement appealed to him especially. He himself said that a Socialist (Keir Hardie) unwittingly inspired him with zeal for social service that led to his enrolment among the followers of Henry George. Economic theory seems to have had a secondary part in his conversion to the Single Tax; but of the completeness of that conversion no one ever had the slightest doubt. He withdrew from business at a time when continuance seemed to promise great additions to a fortune already large and for the rest of his life devoted his time and his wealth unreservedly to the cause. He announced his decision in a speech to a Chicago audience, in these words: "We cannot get rich under present conditions without robbing somebody, I have done it; you are doing it now, and I am still doing it, but I am proposing to spend the money to wipe out the system by which I made it" (Fels, *post*, p. 159).

This was no empty promise. He was given credit for obtaining the inclusion of the land-tax feature in the British budget of 1909 and the active support of the measure by Lloyd George in a campaign memorable in British politics (Steffens, *post*, p. 746). He devoted not less than $100,000 a year from his private fortune for Single-Tax promotion throughout the world. Of this sum $25,000 annually was spent in England, $5,000 in Denmark, $5,000 in Canada, and considerable amounts in Germany, France, Spain, Italy, and Australasia. One of the Fels enterprises was to procure the translation of Henry George's *Progress and Poverty* into Chinese. Tracts were printed in various languages and widely distributed. To the Fels Fund for Single-Tax promotion he gave $131,000, as against a public subscription of nearly $83,000; but the money represented only a small part of his personal contribution. For years he was in the habit of making platform addresses wherever an audience could be had. A man of small stature, slightly



more than five feet in height, and endowed with extraordinary energy and vitality, he was a speaker of force, gifted with persuasive powers of no mean order. He disliked to be known as a philanthropist, but such enterprises as the establishment of health centers in London and the Boys' and Girls' Clubs sponsored by Margaret McMillan had his zealous and practical support. So, too, did the Zionist movement. His wife, Mary Fels, a distant relative, whom he met and married in Keokuk, Iowa, in 1891, was a sharer in his ideals and after his death wrote a sympathetic account of his life and work.

[The chief source of information about Fels is the biography by his wife, *Joseph Fels, His Life Work* (1916). See also an article by Louis F. Post in *The Public* (Chicago), Feb. 27, 1914, and additional material in the same periodical, May 8, 1914; "Joseph Fels, Single Taxer," by F. W. Garrison, in the *Single Tax Review*, Mar.–Apr., 1914; an article by Lincoln Steffens in the *American Mag.*, Oct. 1910; "Fels, a New Type of Philanthropist," by J. D. Miller, in the *New England Mag.*, June 1911; sketch by F. C. Howe in the *Survey*, Mar. 28, 1914, the obituary in the *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Feb. 23, 1914.] W. B. S—w.

**FELSENTHAL, BERNHARD** (Jan. 2, 1822–Jan. 12, 1908), rabbi, son of Simon and Eva (Gall) Felsenthal, was born at Münchweiler, Bavaria. His was the uneventful life of a quiet scholar. From the age of twenty to thirty-two he taught in a Jewish school in his native village. Then in 1854 he came to the United States, settling as a teacher in Lawrenceburg, Ind., and in 1856 in Madison, Ind. In April 1858, he went to Chicago, where, after three years' service in a bank, he became, in June 1861, the first rabbi of Sinai Congregation, an outgrowth of the Jüdischer Reformverein in which he had been the leading spirit. In 1864, he was elected rabbi of Zion Congregation, Chicago, which he served until he was made Rabbi Emeritus in 1887. His wife, Caroline Levi, died in December 1863, two years after their marriage. A year and a half later he married Henrietta Blumenfeld, who bore him five children, and who died in 1901. He died in his eighty-seventh year.

Such was the unsensational framework within which was lived a singularly unassuming life. Yet, Felsenthal was a leading figure in the development of Reform Judaism in the Middle West, and had a far-flung influence among reform and orthodox Jews alike, due to his fine-fibered personality. When the exigencies of public life called him, he gave himself readily, though primarily as the scholar. In 1879, with Emerson and ten others, he was elected honorary vice-president of the Free Religious Association. He served the Jewish Publication Society of America, and made the first suggestion for the founda-

tion of the American Jewish Historical Society.

The bibliography of his writings lists 315 titles, practically all on Jewish themes. Most of these apply the learning of the past to issues of his day. Two main strands run through them—Reform Judaism and Zionism. His attitude to these movements changed markedly as his knowledge, experience and judgment deepened with advancing years.

As a young man, he pleaded eloquently in his *Kol Kore Bamidbar* (A Voice Crying in the Wilderness, 1859) and other writings and addresses for discarding what he called the outworn elements of Judaism, so that it should appear as the natural religion in the soul of man. He held that "Reform is on the side of life, conservatism on the side of death." Later, he saw with misgivings a generation of Jews growing up, to whom, as he said, "Jewish rites and customs and usages are as unknown as those of the Hindus." When he became convinced that a Reform Judaism which emphasized universalism and negated Jewish national elements, would not fulfil the Jewish mission, but would lead to the absorption of Israel, this conservative Reform Rabbi declared repeatedly, "This extreme Reform we have in America, which knows no limit, will gradually lead to the extinction of Israel and its religion."

Similarly, in his earlier years, he had showed no active sympathy for Jewish Palestinian movements; but when Dr. Herzl organized the Zionist movement in 1897, Felsenthal, in the face of ridicule and derision, was one of the first in America to rally to its support. The septuagenarian and octogenarian Rabbi stood toweringly alone in Reform Judaism as an advocate of Zionism. He taught with tireless vigor, especially in his masterly "Jewish Theses" ("Jüdische Thesen," *Deborah,* September–November 1901; translated in *Menorah Monthly,* November 1901–January 1902), that Judaism was not only a religion, but a national culture, "the sum total of all the manifestations of the distinctively Jewish national spirit." His conviction daily became "more intensified that Zionism alone will be the savior of our nation and its religion, and save it from death and disappearance." Only Zionism, he asserted, could effectively counteract those environmental forces which tend progressively to the assimilation, absorption, and extinction of the Jew. By rising above his contemporaries in the brave expression of his matured evaluation of the two causes to which his life was most fervently given, Reform Judaism and Zionism, the sweet-souled, beloved teacher, Bernhard Felsenthal, attained a permanent and significant place in the history of the ideology of American-Jewish life.



[*Bernhard Felsenthal, Teacher in Israel, Selections from his Writings, with Biographical Sketch and Bibliography* (1924), by his daughter, Emma Felsenthal; *Year Book, Central Conf. of Am. Rabbis,* XVIII (1908), 161–67 and *passim* in earlier volumes; *Pubs. Am. Jewish Hist. Soc. No. 17* (1909), pp. 218–22; *Chicago Hist. Soc. Ann. Report,* 1909; *Reform Advocate* (Chicago), Feb. 8, 1908.]

D. de S. P.

**FELT, JOSEPH BARLOW** (Dec. 22, 1789–Sept. 8, 1869), antiquarian, was born in Salem, Mass., the son of John and Elizabeth (Curtis) Felt. His father, a shipmaster, died in 1802, and Joseph went to work for a merchant. The reading of biographical works in his leisure hours served as an incentive for a college education. At eighteen he entered the academy at Atkinson, N. H., which was then under the charge of John Vose, a distinguished educator. In 1813 he was graduated from Dartmouth College. After a brief return to mercantile work Felt taught school and studied for the ministry with the Rev. Samuel Worcester of Salem. His first parish, 1821–24, was at Sharon, Mass.; his second and last was at Hamilton. Owing to ill health he retired from pastoral work in 1833, and in the following year removed to Boston. While at Hamilton he acquired a considerable reputation as an antiquarian and local historian. He prepared articles for John Farmer's *Genealogical Register* (1829) and published *The Annals of Salem* (1827, 2nd ed. 2 vols., 1845–59) and a *History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton* (1834). Soon after his removal to Boston he spent three years (1836–39) in classifying and arranging ancient papers in the state archives. In 1830 he was elected a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and from 1842 to 1854 he was its librarian. From 1850 to 1853 he was president of the New-England Historic Genealogical Society. Throughout these years he wrote much. His *Historical Account of Massachusetts Currency* (1839) was considered invaluable by numismatologists. In 1847 he finished publishing the *Collections* of the American Statistical Association which contained a large amount of original matter and bore proof of "patient research and thorough work." These were followed by *A Memoir, or Defense of Hugh Peters* (1851), and *The Customs of New England* (1853). His most ambitious work was an *Ecclesiastical History of New England,* the first volume of which appeared in 1851, the second in 1862. Though his zeal for discovering and reading old manuscripts was extraordinary, his literary style was lifeless, and his conclusions were sometimes colored by his own religious sentiments. Consequently, "he will be known and remembered rather as a diligent annalist than as a philosophical historian" (Dexter, *post*). In daily life he was a simple, faithful Christian who oc-

casionally gave offense by his outspoken orthodoxy. On Sept. 18, 1816, Felt married Abigail Adams Shaw, a niece of Mrs. John Adams. After her death in 1859 he married Mrs. Catharine (Bartlett) Meacham, Nov. 16, 1862.

[The best biographical sketch is that by Felt's nephew, J. B. F. Osgood, in the *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1870. Henry M. Dexter's memoir in the *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, XIV (1876), 113–16, appears to have been based on Osgood's sketch, but the closing paragraph is valuable because it gives Dexter's opinion of Felt's historical work.] L. S. M.

**FELTON, CORNELIUS CONWAY** (Nov. 6, 1807–Feb. 26, 1862), classical scholar, was the son of Cornelius Conway Felton and Anna (Morse) Felton, daughter of David and Abigail (Bayley) Morse of Newbury, Mass. He was a descendant of Lieut. Nathaniel Felton, who came from England to Salem, Mass., in 1633. In 1692 Nathaniel with his wife and two sons signed a protest against the prosecution of a neighbor on the charge of witchcraft. The family continued to be resident in Essex County, and the younger Cornelius Conway was born at Newbury. He began in early childhood to show the ambition for learning which was to mark his career through life. Under the tuition of Simeon Putnam at North Andover he was fitted to enter Harvard College and was graduated there with the class of 1827. His scanty means obliged him, even as an undergraduate, to take precious time for earning money by school-teaching, and after graduation he continued teaching at various "academies." In 1829 he was called to Harvard as tutor in Latin, was made Greek tutor in the following year, promoted to be professor of Greek in 1832, and in 1834 received the Eliot Professorship of Greek Literature which he held until his election as president of the college in 1860. He was married twice: in 1838 to Mary, daughter of Asa Whitney, who died in 1845; and in 1846 to Mary Louisa, daughter of Thomas G. Carey of Boston.

Felton's most prominent quality was the breadth of his intellectual interests. His conception of classical scholarship as set forth in his public utterances was, first, of solid learning grounded in a thorough study of linguistic details and then the widening out of this purely linguistic approach to include the whole life of the people whose language is studied: its geography, its philosophy, its political structure, and every form of its artistic expression. In his inaugural address on assuming the Eliot Professorship he outlined with great force and clearness the course he intended to pursue and throughout his tenure of nearly thirty years he maintained, often in the face of much opposition, the lofty ideal he here laid down.

As an author Felton was active principally as editor of classical texts and selections from Greek writers for academic use. His most popular work consisted of his four courses of lectures before the Lowell Institute in Boston delivered in the years 1852, 1853, 1854, and 1859 and published in two volumes in 1867, five years after his death, under the title: *Greece: Ancient and Modern.* These lectures embodied the results of his long years of study in the records of Greek life and thought, enlivened by his recollections of recent travel in the scenes of ancient culture. Another posthumous volume was *Familiar Letters from Europe* (1866).

He had begun life as a school teacher, and this experience gave him a sympathetic understanding of the needs of elementary and secondary schools. Well informed on the conditions of English and Continental education he maintained that American youth should be trained according to American conditions. He watched with great interest the advancing claims of the natural sciences to a larger place in school programs and favored their recognition, yet always with the reservation that the highest education must be built upon the "humanities" and through the medium of language. For many years he served the public as a member of the School Committee of Cambridge and of the Massachusetts Board of Education, and as one of the Regents of the Smithsonian Institution. He was keenly interested in the detail of academic discipline and in all that concerned the wise regulation of student life. It was in recognition of this quality that in 1849, on the creation of the office of "Regent" under President Sparks, he was chosen as the first incumbent. The purpose of this office, like that of the more recent Dean, was to relieve the president of much of the detail of personal dealing with students, and for eight years he performed its duties with a rare union of strictness and tact. Upon the resignation of President Walker in 1860 the unanimous choice of the governing boards selected Felton as his successor. Although in impaired health he accepted and began his administration with every promise of notable success. Unfortunately, the strain of his new responsibilities proved to be more than he could bear, and after little more than a year, seeking relief in a more genial climate, he died at Chester, Pa.

[Cyrus Felton, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Felton Family* (1886); *Inaugural Address of Cornelius Conway Felton as Eliot Professor of Greek Literature* (Cambridge, 1834); *Addresses at the Inauguration of Cornelius Conway Felton as President of Harvard College, July 19, 1860* (1860); memoir by Henry Barnard, in *Am. Jour. of Educ.*, Mar. 1861; eulogy by Theodore Dwight Wool-

sey, printed in *Annual Report . . . of the Smithsonian Inst. for the year 1861* (1862); memoir by Geo. S. Hillard in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, vol. X (1869); *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.*, vol. VI (1866); A. P. Peabody, *Sermon on the Death of Cornelius Conway Felton* (1862); *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Feb. 28, July 16, 1862.] E.E.

**FELTON, REBECCA LATIMER** (June 10, 1835–Jan. 24, 1930), writer, United States senator, the daughter of Charles and Eleanor (Swift) Latimer, was born near Decatur, DeKalb County, Ga. Her *Country Life in Georgia in the Days of My Youth* (1919) contains reminiscences of her girlhood. After graduation (1852) from the Madison (Ga.) Female College, she was married (1853) to Dr. William Harrell Felton [*q.v.*], who played a noteworthy rôle in Georgia politics. He was an advanced liberal and waged a stubborn fight over many years with the conservative element of his party. In this fight he was ably assisted by his wife. Her ability as a writer and speaker became generally recognized and, though never offering for public office herself, she became a rather important factor in state affairs. For twenty-eight years she was a regular contributor to the tri-weekly edition of the *Atlanta Journal,* and through this medium exercised considerable influence in formulating public opinion in Georgia. As her days lengthened (she died in her ninety-fifth year), her intellect remained undimmed, her interest in public matters persisted, and she was always ready to express in quite positive fashion her views on all sorts of questions, state, national, and international. Among the first to advocate equal political rights for women, an ardent temperance fighter long before prohibition became a national question, a champion of penal reform in Georgia, Mrs. Felton was generally to be found on the side of civic righteousness and progressive legislation. In her well-known book, *My Memoirs of Georgia Politics* (1911), she left unflattering accounts of many important Georgians with whom she and her husband had contended, at the same time paying tribute to those who she felt were on the side of honest government and clean politics.

A member of the board of lady managers of the Chicago Exposition (1893), chairman of the woman's executive board of the Cotton States and International Exposition in Atlanta (1894–95), a juror on the agricultural board of the St. Louis Exposition, and a member of numerous patriotic organizations, she had attained considerable, but chiefly local, prominence before her appointment to the United States Senate made her for the moment a national figure. Following the death of Senator Thomas E. Watson, in September 1922, and before the election of his successor, Walter F. George, in November, Gov. Thomas W. Hardwick made a graceful gesture by giving Mrs. Felton on Oct. 3 an *ad interim* appointment. Taking the oath of office Nov. 21, she attended the session of that day and of Nov. 22, when Senator George was sworn in. Surviving her four sons and her daughter, she lived until Jan. 24, 1930, when she died in an Atlanta hospital. On the afternoon of the following day the Senate adjourned early out of respect for the first and until that time the only woman to become one of its members.

[The *Atlanta Journal,* Jan. 26, 1930, contains many columns devoted to Mrs. Felton's life, including the proceedings in the Senate, and a long editorial tribute. See also *Biog. Directory Am. Cong.* (1928); *Who's Who in the South* (1927). Her papers were left by her will to the Univ. of Ga.] R. P. B—s.

**FELTON, SAMUEL MORSE** (July 17, 1809–Jan. 24, 1889), civil engineer, was born at Newbury, Mass., the son of Cornelius Conway and Anna Morse Felton, and brother of Cornelius Conway Felton [*q.v.*]. His father, a chaise maker by trade, lost his property during Samuel's youth and moved his family to Saugus where they knew keen poverty. At the age of fourteen the son went into Boston to be clerk and general errand boy at a wholesale grocery store. For four years he earned his living in this way and studied during every spare moment in order to prepare himself for high school. Working as a clerk and bookkeeper, he put himself through the Livingston County high school at Geneseo, N. Y., of which his brother was principal, and saved enough money to enable him to enter Harvard in 1830 where he practically supported himself by teaching. After his graduation in 1834 he spent two years teaching in a private school and then entered upon his engineering career with Loammi Baldwin, Jr., of Boston. Upon Baldwin's death in 1838, Felton succeeded to the business. His first railroad work was in 1841 when he constructed the Fresh Pond Railroad, designed to transport ice into Boston. Two years later he began the construction of the Fitchburg Railroad. From the time he became superintendent of this road in 1845 until his death he was continuously connected with railroad management in this country. In 1851 he removed to Philadelphia to become president of the Philadelphia, Wilmington & Baltimore Railroad. He found the road in a demoralized condition, unsuccessful financially, and badly mismanaged. His efforts to remove the causes for its failure brought down personal abuse on his head, but he was successful, and in a few years the road had become one of the best equipped and most profitably run railroads in the country. During these difficult years he refused the presidency of both the Baltimore & Ohio and

the Philadelphia & Reading railroads (the latter at a salary larger than that given to any other railroad official in the country) in order to fulfil what he felt to be his obligations to the stockholders of the Philadelphia, Wilmington & Baltimore.

At the outbreak of the Civil War the Philadelphia, Wilmington & Baltimore became of great strategic importance. It was over this road that Lincoln made his entrance into Washington at the risk of his life. Felton changed the President's advertised route into the capital, arranging for his secret passage from Harrisburg to Washington the night before he was expected, and thus saved him from the Baltimore mob which attacked the train supposed to be carrying him. The service he rendered in the transportation of Union troops during the war can scarcely be overestimated. For his part in getting Gen. Butler's troops to Annapolis and in preparing plans for the cooperation of all railroads centering in Philadelphia, the telegraph lines and Adams Express Company, he received the official thanks of the War Department. But the stinging criticisms he received while performing the almost superhuman duties involved in the task were too much for him and in 1864 a stroke of paralysis forced him to retire from active work. By the following year, however, he had recovered sufficiently to assume the presidency of the Pennsylvania Steel Company engaged in the manufacture of steel rails. Though he devoted much time in the later years of his life to this project, he never gave up his railroad interests. He had retained even during his illness the presidency of the Delaware Railroad, a small road which he had developed in his earlier years with the Philadelphia, Wilmington & Baltimore. From 1873 to 1883 he took an important part in the development of the Pennsylvania Railroad, of which he was a director. He was also one of the organizers and later a director of the Northern Pacific Railroad. In addition to these activities he served as a commissioner of the Hoosac Tunnel from 1862 to 1865 and was for some time managing director of the Lehigh Navigation Company. Felton was twice married: first in 1836 to Eleanor Stetson who died in 1847, and again in 1850 to Maria Low Lippitt.

[Cyrus Felton, *A Geneal. Hist. of the Felton Family* (1886); Thos. Doane and Chas. Harris, "Samuel Morse Felton, A Memoir," in the *Jour. Asso. of Engineering Socs.*, Apr. 1892, abstracted in *Proc. Am. Soc. of Civil Engineers*, Apr. 1893; *Railroad and Engineering Jour.*, Mar. 1889; *Railroad Gazette*, Feb. 1, 1889; *Memorials of the Class of 1834*, Harvard Univ. (1884); *Investigation into the Alleged Misconduct of the Late Superintendent of the Phila., Wilmington and Baltimore Railroad Co.* (3 vols., 1854–55).]

E. Y.



**FELTON, WILLIAM HARRELL** (June 19, 1823–Sept. 24, 1909), politician, the only child of John and Mary Felton, was born in Oglethorpe County, Ga. His father, who had been a captain in the War of 1812, was a farmer and the boy grew up among rural surroundings. For the purpose of educating their son, his parents moved in 1835 to Athens, seat of Franklin College (as the University of Georgia was then called), from which he was graduated in 1842. Two years later he received his degree from the medical college of the state. Felton's nervous system was such that he was unable to bear the strain of a physician's life. He therefore abandoned it, and took up farming in Bartow County, whither the family moved in 1847. In 1848 he was licensed as a local Methodist preacher and for nearly fifty years filled appointments without remuneration. As a preacher all accounts say that he was extraordinarily effective.

Felton was in early life a Whig and served one term in the legislature (1851) as a member of that party. He volunteered as a surgeon during the Civil War and served in a Macon hospital. After the war he became a Democrat, but in 1874 he entered the race for Congress from the 7th District as an independent candidate. The campaign which followed was among the bitterest and most spectacular in the state's history. Arrayed against Felton were the entire Democratic organization, all the important political leaders, and the press of the district and the state. Single-handed, except for the great assistance of his wife, Felton waged war on the organization and was successful by a small majority. For many years thereafter he was the leader and inspiration of all those elements which disliked ring rule. He became the central figure in Georgia politics. Repeating his success in the two following contests, he served in Congress from 1875 to 1881, and there advocated the remonetization of silver. An organization candidate, Judson C. Clements [*q.v.*], defeated him for reëlection in 1880.

Four years after retiring from Congress Felton was elected to the legislature as representative from Bartow County, and served until 1890. Though now a feeble old man, he was full of fire and an antagonist to be dreaded. In the legislature he championed the re-leasing of the state-owned Western and Atlantic Railroad, the disposition of which constituted the principal issue of the day, but at a much larger rental. He also advocated devoting the rental to elementary education. The bill, practically as he drew it, passed after a strenuous fight lasting through two sessions of the legislature. Felton scathingly denounced the convict leasing system, worked for

the establishment of a reformatory for juvenile delinquents, was a champion of higher education and was said to have saved the life of the University, of which he was a trustee, 1879–89. He fought and exposed corruption of all sorts, fearing no man, however powerful or well entrenched in the affections of the people.

Felton's first wife was Anne Carlton of Athens, who died in 1851. In 1853 he married Rebecca Latimer, who was destined to become as well-known as her husband [see Felton, Rebecca Latimer]. In *My Memoirs of Georgia Politics* (1911), Mrs. Felton recounted circumstances very damaging to the reputations of many leading Georgians who had opposed her husband in politics. Felton died at his home in Cartersville, Ga., in 1909, being then in his eighty-seventh year.

[I. W. Avery, *Hist. of the State of Ga. from 1850 to 1881* (1881); L. L. Knight, *A Standard Hist. of Ga. and Georgians* (1917), IV, 2098–2101; sketch by Mrs. Felton in W. J. Northen, *Men of Mark in Ga.* (1908), IV, 103; obituary in *Atlanta Jour.*, Sept. 25, 1909.]

R. P. B—s.

**FENDALL, JOSIAS** (*c.* 1620–*c.* 1687), colonial governor of Maryland, first attracted attention in 1655. In that year, while William Stone, the proprietary governor of Maryland, was resisting the commissioners of Parliament for the government of that province, Fendall, one of Stone's officers, took a leading part in seizing some arms and ammunition for the governor's force. His services were rewarded by a grant of two thousand acres of land and by appointment, July 10, 1656, as governor. He visited England in 1657 and the following year brought back an agreement under which the government was definitely restored to the proprietor, as well as a new commission curtailing his power as governor. Chafing under criticism of the proprietor for negligence at courts and for contradicting court orders, in March 1659–60, with a number of associates, he suddenly attempted to overthrow the proprietary government and set up in its place a commonwealth in which the supreme power should be vested in a House of Burgesses. Over this body the governor was to preside; but the House, retaining its speaker, was to have the power to adjourn and dissolve. The attempted revolution was easily frustrated. The proprietor asked that Fendall forfeit his life, but the provincial court only issued an order to confiscate his estate and banish him from the province. Subsequently, in response to a petition for mercy, his punishment was reduced to disfranchisement and disqualification for office. He retired to his estate in Charles County where he had a wife, a daughter, a brother, and several servants. In



1678 the freemen of that county were disposed to elect him a delegate to the Assembly, but they were informed by the governor and council that if he were elected his seat would be declared vacant. In April 1679 he was charged with seditious utterances and a warrant was issued for his arrest, but he was not found. About this time he became influential in northern Virginia among the sympathizers of Nathaniel Bacon [*q.v.*] and associated with John Coode [*q.v.*], who a few years later was the principal leader in the overthrow of the proprietary government. Both Fendall and Coode were arrested in 1681 and Fendall, tried in November, was found guilty of atttempting to raise a mutiny in Charles County, fined 40,000 pounds of tobacco, and banished from the province. In 1682 he was resident in Virginia. Two years later (June 1684), it was reported that he was on a London ship in the Potomac River and a warrant was issued for his arrest, but he was not found. Here the record of his career closes. The name of Mary Fendall, his widow and administratrix, appears in court records in 1688.

[The *Archives of Md.*, vols. I, III, V, X, XV, and XLI are the only important primary source of information about Fendall. For secondary sources see B. C. Steiner, "Md. under the Commonwealth," *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies*, vol. XXIX (1911); W. H. Browne, *Maryland* (1884); J. L. Bozman, *Hist. of Md.* (1837); J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Md.* (1879); *Md. Hist. Mag.*, Mar. 1906, Sept. 1912.]

N. D. M.

**FENGER, CHRISTIAN** (Nov. 3, 1840–Mar. 7, 1902), surgeon and pathologist, was born in Breininggaard, Breininge Sogn, Denmark. He was one of twelve children born to Kammerraad Hans Fritz Fenger and Frederikke Mathilde Fjelstrup, both representatives of well-to-do farmer families. He attended Herlufsholm school for eight years, graduating in 1859, followed by a year devoted to engineering in the Polyteknisk Läreanstalt in Copenhagen. In accordance with his father's wishes he turned to the study of medicine, which he pursued at the University of Copenhagen from 1860 to 1865, interrupted by the war with Prussia in which he served as assistant physician. In addition to his service in the Schleswig-Holstein War, he was appointed to an international ambulance during the Franco-Prussian War. After passing the examination for the practise of medicine in 1866–67, he served for three years as assistant in clinical otology to Dr. Vilhelm Meyer. Then followed an interneship of two years in the Royal Frederik's Hospital, and three years as prosector to the Commune hospital. The latter service furnished Fenger a splendid opportunity for investigation in pathology and morbid anatomy. In

this period he wrote several noteworthy articles including one on cancer of the stomach which was his thesis for the degree of doctor of medicine conferred in 1874. In the spring of 1875 Fenger went to Alexandria, Egypt, to take over the practise of his brother, who was also a physician, while the latter was away. On his brother's return, he was appointed to the office of *Médecin du Quartier de Kalifa* in Cairo. From 1875 to 1877 he remained here making a special study of the highly prevalent trachoma and bilharziosis, but was compelled, on account of chronic dysentery, to resign and seek a temperate climate. Due to an acquaintance with some American army officers he decided to come to the United States. He arrived in the fall of 1877 and settled in Chicago. Shortly afterward he was married to Caroline Sophie Abildgaard, a native of Denmark.

In Chicago Fenger immediately attracted attention by his profound knowledge of pathology in autopsies performed at the morgue of the Cook County Hospital. He was appointed chief pathologist of that hospital in 1878 and held that position until 1893. During that time he exercised an influence upon scientific medicine in Chicago greater than any other man of his period. It can be truly said that he introduced real pathology to Chicago. He created a following which developed Senn, Murphy, and the Mayos in surgery, and Hektoen, Le Count, and Wells in pathology. Though his name suggests the surgeon, he was never a brilliant operator. He lacked manual dexterity, but this was compensated for by his unequaled diagnostic skill and knowledge of morbid anatomy. He was appointed curator of Rush Medical College Museum in 1880, professor of surgery in the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1884, professor of surgery at Northwestern University in 1893, and professor of surgery at Rush Medical College in 1899. Though he spoke English poorly and with halting words, he was an able teacher. In his surgical clinics he was wont to forget the patient in the earnestness of his discussion of the pathology involved.

For twenty years after 1880 he was attending and consulting surgeon at Cook County Hospital. It was upon and through the internes of this hospital that he exerted his most profound influence and it was among them that he developed the following which might well have been called the Fenger school. He was in addition surgeon-in-chief of the Passavant Memorial, German, and Lutheran Tabitha hospitals from the time they were organized until his death. At different times he was also attending surgeon at Mercy and Presbyterian hospitals. Stricken with pneu-



monia in Chicago, his last illness was attended by the élite of the city's profession, all former students of their beloved professor. He was a prolific writer of journal articles on subjects relating to surgery, pathology and diagnosis. These were republished in 1912 under the joint editorship of Ludwig Hektoen and C. G. Buford as the *Collected Works of Christian Fenger.*

[There is a short autobiography of Fenger in the *Collected Works,* vol. I. See also *Surgery, Gynecol. and Obstetrics,* July–Dec. 1922; *Am. Medicine,* July–Dec. 1902; *Bull. Soc. Medic. Hist.,* 1913; *Ibid.,* 1923; *Ill. Medic. Jour.,* 1924.] J. M. P.

**FENNELL, JAMES** (Dec. 11, 1766–June 13, 1816), actor, one of the most erratic figures ever connected with the American stage, was born in London of Welsh, Scotch, and Irish ancestry. His father, John Fennell, in the Pay Corps of the navy, who had lived in New York for some years, and his mother, a former Miss Brady, were, according to Fennell's own statement, so indulgent that he early developed the vice of obstinacy. After some preliminary schooling he was sent to Eton at about thirteen, and then to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he enjoyed a frolicsome career—inadequate preparation for the church, for which his parents had destined him. After leaving the university, Fennell undertook to study law in London, but, having contracted heavy gambling debts, he turned to the stage in an effort to recoup his losses. Given his first opportunity by John Jackson, manager of the Theatre Royal, Edinburgh, he made his début in June 1787, as Othello, a character which remained one of his principal rôles. After a short engagement at Edinburgh, Thomas Harris, director of Covent Garden Theatre, London, accepted him for a half dozen performances and then attempted to retain him for the coming season, but, being bound to Jackson, Fennell returned to Scotland for the winter. At the end of this season a quarrel arose between him and Woods, a favorite Scotch actor, over the matter of parts, and Fennell was compelled to leave the Edinburgh stage. After some acting in the provinces, he returned to Covent Garden for a short engagement, but when differences of opinion necessitated his withdrawal, he started a weekly paper, the *Theatrical Guardian,* in which, during its brief existence, he professed to right all stage wrongs. On May 10, 1792, he married Miss B. H. Porter and went to Paris for the honeymoon. Following this sojourn he wrote *A Review of the Proceedings at Paris during the Last Summer* (1792).

In the summer of 1793, having signed a contract with Thomas Wignell, manager of the new

Chestnut Street Theatre in Philadelphia, Fennell arrived in America. At his Philadelphia début, which, because of an epidemic of yellow fever, was delayed until Feb. 19, 1794, he was received with great favor. Accepted with equal cordiality by the social world, he soon found that his expenditures were exceeding his income. To remedy the situation he patented a device for extracting salt from sea-water, induced many influential Philadelphians to invest in the project, and temporarily abandoned the stage. But the enterprise failed and brought ruin upon its originator. Fennell's subsequent career was largely an alternation between the stage, where he always made money, and the salt-works, where he always lost it. With amazing persistence he erected a succession of manufactories along the coast, but disaster invariably befell them, and he was repeatedly jailed—once for sixteen months—for fraudulent practises, although apparently he had no intent to deceive, being always one of the heaviest losers himself. On Sept. 8, 1797, Fennell made his first appearance in New York and won the enthusiastic approval of the audience. Between 1800 and 1806 he played with some regularity at the Park Theatre, New York, but much of his time then, as throughout his whole life, was occupied with assorted and ill-fated projects—salt making, lectures on physics, lectures in defense of the Bible, a school of elocution, a boys' school on the Eton model, a magazine, a Shakespeare concordance, etc. In his later years ill-health and dissipation so weakened his powers that, when he took his farewell of the stage at Philadelphia in 1814 in the rôle of Lear, his decay matched that of the character he was impersonating.

In his prime Fennell was one of the most prominent tragedians in America. Although his gigantic figure lacked grace and his powerful voice lacked flexibility, he possessed histrionic gifts which, if cultivated as assiduously as he cultivated salt, might have placed him at the very top of his profession. As it was, he was sure of an audience whenever he chose to perform. During an engagement at Philadelphia in 1806 he played thirteen nights to receipts of $13,000, at one time said to be the greatest instance of patronage ever given to American drama (Clapp, *post*, p. 89). Among Fennell's writings are a five-act comedy, *Lindor and Clara; or, the British Officer* (1791), and a few other unimportant plays, but his chief work is his *Apology*, an eccentric but fairly reliable record of his life, in which he makes no attempt to conceal his many shortcomings.

[*An Apology for the Life of Jas. Fennell. Written by Himself* (1814); contemporary newspapers; D. E. Baker, and others, *Biographia Dramatica* (1812); William Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Am. Theatre* (1832); W. B. Wood, *Personal Recollections of the Stage* (1855); John Bernard, *Retrospections of America* (1887); G. C. D. Odell, *Annals of the N. Y. Stage*, vols. I and II (1927); John Jackson, *The Hist. of the Scottish Stage* (1793); W. W. Clapp, *A Record of the Boston Stage* (1853).]

O. S. C.



**FENNER, ARTHUR** (Dec. 10, 1745–Oct. 15, 1805), fourth governor of Rhode Island, was born in Providence, R. I. His great-grandfather, Capt. Arthur Fenner, was born in England in 1622, and emigrated early in life to Providence. His home, which because of its huge chimney was called "the Castle," remained in existence for about one hundred and fifty years. Capt. Fenner's first wife was Mehitable, daughter of Richard Waterman, by whom he had six children. Of these, his son Thomas was the father of Arthur, who served in the British-American army as ensign in one of the companies which took part in the invasion of Canada in 1759, married Mary Olney, and became the father of Arthur Fenner, the governor. Little is known of the youth of the latter, but in December 1774, on recommendation of the Continental Congress he was appointed one of the "Committee of Inspection." He was also for many years clerk of the court of common pleas in Providence. When the question of the ratification of the federal Constitution arose, the contest was especially severe and protracted in Rhode Island. Gov. John Collins had favored calling a convention to decide the matter, and in consequence had become unpopular. Fenner was a member of the party opposed to adoption, and was appealed to by the citizens of Newport and Providence to head a compromise ticket upon which there should be a Federalist for deputy-governor and an equal number of Federalist and Anti-Federalist assistants. He referred the matter to the freemen of the colony; the Anti-Federalists were successful, and on May 5, 1790, the Rhode Island General Assembly declared Arthur Fenner (Anti-Federalist) governor, and Samuel J. Potter (Federalist) deputy-governor. Final action on the Constitution was deferred until the last week in May, when on the twenty-ninth by a count of thirty-four to thirty-two, the Assembly voted for ratification. In the following June, Gov. Fenner convened the General Assembly in special session and all officers took oath to support the Constitution newly adopted. In August 1790 President Washington made a visit to Newport and Providence to welcome Rhode Island into the Union. At the wharf in Providence a throng gathered to greet the President, and the Governor led the largest and most distinguished procession which the town had ever known. In 1791 Fenner was once more elected governor and

was successively reëlected until his death at Providence in 1805. His wife was Amey, daughter of Gideon Comstock.

[J. P. Root, *Geneal. of the Fenner Family* (1887), reprinted from *R. I. Hist. Mag.*, Jan. 1887; *Biog. Cyc. of Representative Men of R. I.* (1881); S. G. Arnold, *Hist. of the State of R. I. and Providence Plantations* (2 vols., 1859–60); Edward Field, ed., *State of R. I. and Providence Plantations* (3 vols., 1902).] I.B.R.

**FENNER, BURT LESLIE** (Sept. 1, 1869–Jan. 24, 1926), architect, the son of Edward B. and Margaret Virginia (Taylor) Fenner was born in Rochester, N. Y. His father's family had come from England two generations before. After graduating from high school he attended the University of Rochester (1888–89), spent the following year in architectural work in Rochester, then studied at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (1890–91). In the fall of 1891 he entered the office of McKim, Mead & White, then famous not only for its work, but known also as the best place for an ambitious draftsman to learn the essentials of good architecture. His advancement in the office was rapid and on Jan. 1, 1906, he was taken into the firm, remaining with them as a partner for the rest of his life. His duties were chiefly administrative and executive and after the deaths of Stanford White (1906) and Charles F. McKim (1910) he became, in fact, the executive head of the firm.

Fenner was greatly interested in city planning and was instrumental in the preparation of the report of the heights of buildings commission which was issued in 1913 and which was directly responsible for the passage by the New York legislature of the amendment to the New York City charter enabling the board of estimate and apportionment of the city to enact the comprehensive zoning ordinance of 1916. In 1918 he was made general manager of the United States Housing Corporation created under the Department of Labor. Despite labor difficulties, administrative red tape, congestion on the railroads, and scarcity of materials, he succeeded in creating an organization which efficiently produced workmen's villages at strategic points from the Atlantic to the Pacific. The chronic labor difficulties in the building trades in the three or four years following the war impressed upon him the importance of the relation of the architect to the labor unions. In 1922 he was made chairman of the committee appointed jointly by the New York chapter of the American Institute of Architects and the Building Trades Employers Association to inquire into the controversies and scandalous conditions which had produced the famous Brindell investigation. In this position he had not only to fight the mutual suspicions of unions and



contractors, but also a considerable hostile opinion among architects and the public. One of the matters at issue was the admission of new members to the unions, and the preservation of high standards of technical skill. The result was the formation of the apprenticeship commission of which Fenner was made president, establishing a basic apprenticeship system supervised and supported by the contractors and the unions, and having the official cooperation of the American Institute of Architects. Fenner became a member of the American Institute of Architects in 1908, a fellow in 1913, its secretary in 1915–16, and for several years was a member of its board of directors. In 1910–11 he was recording secretary of the New York chapter and president in 1919–21. He was married Dec. 9, 1896, to Louise McKittrick of Brooklyn, by whom he had one son. He died suddenly of heart-failure at his home at Croton-on-Hudson, and was buried at Sleepy Hollow.

[*Am. Architect*, Feb. 5, 1926; *Jour. of the Am. Inst. of Architects*, Mar. 1926; *Architectural Record*, Mar. 1926; obituaries in N. Y. *World* and *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 26, 1926; *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; and information as to certain facts supplied by Fenner's son, Ward W. Fenner.] T. F. H.

**FENNER, CHARLES ERASMUS** (Feb. 14, 1834–Oct. 24, 1911), soldier, jurist, was a member of a well-known Southern family. His grandfather, Dr. Richard Fenner of North Carolina, fought in the Revolutionary War and was one of the original members of the Society of the Cincinnati. His father, Dr. Erasmus D. Fenner, a distinguished physician, married Annie America Callier, who was of Scotch-Irish descent, settled in New Orleans in 1840, and assisted in the founding of the *New Orleans Medical Journal* in 1844. He himself was born at Jackson, Madison County, Tenn., and received his early education in the New Orleans public schools, proceeding thence to the Western Military Institute of Kentucky. Having completed his academic training at the University of Virginia he studied law in the office of J. P. Benjamin at New Orleans, took a course in the law department of the University of Louisiana, and was admitted to the Louisiana bar in 1855. Commencing practise in partnership with L. E. Simmonds, a leading member of the New Orleans bar, he rapidly came to the front. On the outbreak of the Civil War he entered the Confederate army as first lieutenant in the Louisiana Guards and served in Virginia under Gen. Magruder, being promoted captain. In April 1862, his term of enlistment having expired, he organized Fenner's Louisiana battery of light artillery at Jackson, Miss., and took part in the fighting at Port Hudson, serving later under Gen.

Joseph E. Johnston in the Army of Tennessee. Attached to Gen. J. B. Hood's forces in the Nashville campaign, his battery covered the rear of the Confederate army on the retreat from Nashville. He was with Gen. R. Taylor's detachment when the latter surrendered at Meridian in 1865. He had consistently declined promotion since it would necessitate severing connection with his battery.

On the termination of hostilities he resumed practise in New Orleans and in November 1865 was elected a member of the first post-war Louisiana legislature, serving one term. This was the only occasion upon which he sought political honors, though he took an active interest in public affairs and was conspicuous whenever any matter of vital interest to the city or state was agitated. When the Nicholls and Packard controversy came to a head in 1876 he prepared the resolution which was passed at the mass meeting in Lafayette Square setting forth the inalterable antagonism of the people to the Packard government and announcing that the latter could only be maintained in power by military force. During these years his reputation as a lawyer steadily increased and he achieved an outstanding position at the bar. In 1880 he was appointed by Gov. Wiltz an associate justice of the supreme court of Louisiana, and, being reappointed by Gov. McEnery on the expiration of his term in 1884, retained this position till 1894. As a member of the judiciary his wide experience, firm grasp of legal principles, and eminently sane outlook made him a strong figure and he enjoyed the confidence and respect of the entire community. On leaving the bench he resumed practise, confining himself to consultations, and his services were requisitioned in an advisory capacity in much difficult litigation up to within two years of his death.

Apart from the law, his chief interest lay in educational work. He had at the request of Paul Tulane become first vice-president of the board of administrators of the Tulane Fund, and as such took a prominent part in the organization of the Tulane University of Louisiana, being elected in 1884 professor of civil law—a position which, as a member of the administration, he was unable to accept. In 1892 he became president of the board, continuing in active contact with all phases of the work of the university till his resignation in 1908. He was also a member of the board of trustees of the Peabody Educational Fund. A fluent and impressive speaker, he was much in request on patriotic and anniversary occasions and was the author of a number of legal and historical addresses and papers.

He married, Oct. 16, 1866, Caroline, daughter of Jacob V. Payne, a leading New Orleans merchant of his time.

[See *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; J. R. Ficklen, *Hist. of Reconstruction in La.* (1910); *Official Records* (*Army*); obituary notices in the *Picayune* and *Times-Democrat* (New Orleans), Oct. 25, 1911.] H. W. H. K.

**FENNER, JAMES** (Jan. 22, 1771–Apr. 17, 1846), governor of Rhode Island, son of Gov. Arthur Fenner [*q.v.*] and Amey Comstock, was born in Providence. He entered Rhode Island College, now Brown University, in 1785, graduating four years later at the head of his class. He began his political career as a member from Providence in the Rhode Island General Assembly. In 1804 he superseded Christopher Ellery as United States senator from Rhode Island, and served until 1807, when he resigned. In that year he was elected governor, which office he held until 1811 and again from 1824 to 1831. In May 1818, he was elected chief justice of the Rhode Island supreme court but declined the office. From 1822 to 1833 he was the first president of the Rhode Island Historical Society. During the enlargement of the suffrage, known as the Dorr Rebellion, Fenner took sides with the so-called Law and Order party, which opposed Dorr. Following the defeat, by a narrow margin, of the first government or "Freemen's" constitution, a convention was held in 1842 which framed and submitted to the people of Rhode Island a constitution designed to replace the royal charter still in force. The constitution was overwhelmingly approved, and under the new government Fenner became the first governor, holding office from 1843 to 1845.

Fenner was a good politician. It was said of him, in view of his responsiveness to popular feeling, that "few public men in Rhode Island history have been more successful in trimming their sails to catch an approaching breeze." In 1827, at the time of a strong temperance movement in Rhode Island, the governor on election day, instead of indulging in the usual convivial practise, donated one hundred dollars to the Newport public-school fund. Later, when the Dorr party appealed for intervention by the federal government he called an extra session of the General Assembly to take action upon what he termed "an unwarrantable interference of the national government with the internal affairs of an individual state." After 1845 Fenner retired to his "What Cheer" estate, and on his death in 1846 was accorded a public funeral. His wife was Sarah, daughter of Sylvanus and Freelove (Whipple) Jenckes of Providence, whom he married in November 1792.

[*The Biog. Cyc. of Representative Men of R. I.*

(1881), p. 197; Edward Field, ed., *State of R. I. and Providence Plantations* . . . (3 vols., 1902); *Proc. R. I. Hist. Soc.*, 1873–74, p. 87; R. I. Legislative Manual; A. M. Mowry, *The Dorr War* (1901).] I. B. R.

**FENNO, JOHN** (Aug. 12, 1751 o.s.–Sept. 14, 1798), editor, was born in Boston, probably the son of Ephraim Fenno, leather-dresser and alehouse keeper, and Mary Chapman. His first employment, as an usher in Samuel Holbrook's Writing School, indicates that he had received some education. The orderly books which Fenno kept while secretary to Gen. Artemas Ward, covering the period from Apr. 20 to Sept. 16, 1775, are examples of his excellent penmanship and evidence of his war service. He was married to Mary Curtiss on May 8, 1777. Trying his hand at trade, he imported largely and unwisely at the close of the Revolution, eventually compounded with his creditors, and went to New York to retrieve his fortunes in "a printing way" in 1789. He had "in some sort been an adjutant-general to [Benjamin] Russell" of the *Massachusetts Centinel* (*Massachusetts Historical Society Collections*, 5 ser., III, 1877, p. 123), where his literary achievements were so "very handsome" that his plan for a newspaper "for the purpose of disseminating favorable sentiments of the federal Constitution and the Administration" was not ignored by the Federalists (King, *post*, I, 357). Fenno's *Gazette of the United States* was established in New York, Apr. 11, 1789, but was published in Philadelphia beginning Apr. 14, 1790. It was the editor's ardent hope that his little three-column folio, printed on a sheet seventeen by twenty-one inches, would become the dignified journal of a dignified court; but Jefferson and his colleagues, discovering Fenno's attempt "to make way for a king, lords, and Commons" (Ford, *post*, V, 361), matched press with press, and between the *Aurora* of Benjamin F. Bache [*q.v.*] and the *National Gazette* of Philip Freneau [*q.v.*] Hamilton's protégé was forced into undignified controversies. In the one personal encounter between the editors, Bache's use of his cane proved decisive. Yet the tone of the *Gazette of the United States* was somewhat above the average of its contemporaries, and the Federalists were well served through its columns. The circulation never exceeded 1,400, a quarter of which was gratis. The *Gazette* had the aid of prominent Federalists. Alexander Hamilton was especially active, contributing articles under various pseudonyms and rescuing the editor from bankruptcy in 1793 by raising $2,000 to dispose of pressing creditors (King, *post*, I, 501).

Fenno died in Philadelphia during the yellow-fever epidemic of 1798 "with all his blooming



virtues thick upon him" (*Russell's Gazette*, Boston, Sept. 24, 1798). His son, John Ward Fenno, carried on the paper until 1800, when he sold it.

[P. L. Ford, ed., *The Writings of Thos. Jefferson* (1892–99), *passim*; MS. papers of Alexander Hamilton in Lib. of Cong.; "Belknap Papers," II, 122–23, 126, 132, in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 5 ser., vol. III (1877); J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Philadelphia*, III (1884); W. G. Bleyer, *Main Currents in the Hist. of Am. Journalism* (1927); C. R. King, *Life and Correspondence of Rufus King*, I (1894); S. E. Forman, "The Pol. Activities of Philip Freneau," in *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies in Hist. and Pol. Science*, 20 ser., nos. 9–10 (1902), an account that is unfriendly to Fenno.] T. D. M.

**FENOLLOSA, ERNEST FRANCISCO** (Feb. 18, 1853–Sept. 21, 1908), poet, student of Oriental art, was the son of Manuel Francisco Ciriaco Fenollosa, a Spanish musician, who, having as a youth enlisted in the band attached to an American frigate, came to the United States in 1838 and finally settled in Salem, Mass., where he married Mary Silsbee. Their son prepared for college at the Hacker Grammar School and at the Salem High School, and entered Harvard with the class of 1874. He graduated first in his class, was chosen poet, and was awarded a fellowship which he used for further study at Cambridge, first in philosophy and then in the Divinity School. In January 1877, he entered the newly founded school at the Boston Museum of Fine Arts. In 1878 he went to Japan where he taught political economy and philosophy at the Imperial University at Tokio for two years (1878–80); then philosophy and logic for six years (1880–86). When the Tokio Fine Arts Academy and the Imperial Museum were opened in 1888, he was made manager of both institutions. Brought into intimate contact with Japanese artists and men of culture, the sensitive young esthete became a professing Buddhist and was baptized under the name of Tei-Shin. His Japanese name in art was Kano Yeitan Masanobu, showing him to have been an apprentice accepted by the ancient and conservative academy of the Kano. He was decorated by His Imperial Highness, the Emperor of Japan, with the fourth, later with the third, class of the order of the Rising Sun; and with the third class of the Sacred Mirror. In 1890 he returned to the Boston Museum of Fine Arts to become curator of the department of Oriental art. There he remained until 1897 when he again went to Japan to serve as professor of English literature in the Imperial Normal School at Tokio. After three years he returned to the United States to write and lecture on Oriental subjects. In June 1878 he had married Lizzie Goodhue Millett. A son and a daughter were born to them. After their divorce he married, in 1895,

Mary McNeill. He died in London, Sept. 21, 1908.

Estimates of his contributions to the study of Oriental art vary greatly. It has been said by some that he discovered the subject; by others, that he made no important contribution to it. His most significant work *Epochs of Chinese and Japanese Art* (2 vols., 2nd ed., 1912) was compiled after his death by Mary McNeill Fenollosa, from a "rough pencil draught." It is lamentably full of tentative statements and errors, which, had he lived, he would undoubtedly have corrected. Some of the errors have been corrected in bulletins of the Boston Museum of Fine Arts and in the footnotes of a critical Japanese translation. Nevertheless, though Western knowledge of Oriental art has progressed since his death, it has foilowed the path blazed by him. While his information was derived from his Japanese friends, his conclusions were his own and they were formed at a time when there was no background of Western appreciation. Besides various monographs on phases of Oriental art, he published *The Masters of Ukioye* (1896), an historical description of Japanese paintings and color prints exhibited at the New York Fine Arts Building; and a book of poems, *East and West*; *The Discovery of America and Other Poems* (1893). The poem, "East and West," was delivered before the Phi Beta Kappa society at Cambridge, June 30, 1892. After his death, his literary executor, Ezra Pound, published, in part from his notes and manuscripts, *Cathay* (1915), translations, chiefly from the Chinese; *Certain Noble Plays of Japan* (1916); and *'Noh'; or, Accomplishment, a Study of the Classical Stage of Japan* (1916).

[An account of Fenollosa is contained in the preface, written by Mary McNeill Fenollosa, to his *Epochs of Chinese and Japanese Art*. The report of the fiftieth anniversary of the Class of 1874, Harvard College, contains a sketch. Further information has been derived from *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09, and from his daughter, Mrs. Moncure Biddle.] L. W.

**FENTON, REUBEN EATON** (July 4, 1819–Aug. 25, 1885), United States senator, governor of New York, banker, was born in Carroll, Chautauqua County, N. Y., the youngest son of George W. and Elsie (Owen) Fenton. Forced to curtail his academic and legal studies at the age of seventeen when his father failed in business, he devoted himself assiduously to lumbering in an effort to retrieve the family losses. For years his life was spent in the logging camps and in piloting his rafts down the Allegheny and Ohio rivers. At length, having paid his father's debts and secured a comfortable competence for himself, he entered upon a crowded political career, partly prefaced by a term of eight years as supervisor



of Carroll, beginning in 1843. In 1849 he was elected to the Assembly as a Democrat. He was sent to Congress in 1852 when the controversy arose over the Kansas-Nebraska Bill. His maiden address against this measure (*Congressional Globe*, 33 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 156 ff.), marked his secession from the Democratic party on the slavery question. He was one of the leaders in the formation, and afterward in the conduct, of the Republican party, serving in 1855 as presiding officer of the first Republican state convention in New York. In 1854 he was defeated for Congress on the Know-Nothing ticket, but in 1856 he was elected as the Republican candidate, serving until 1864, when he resigned to become governor of New York. Nominated to head the state ticket in 1864, he fully appreciated the importance of vindicating the President by bringing about Gov. Seymour's downfall, and was credited with a vigorous campaign. His vote exceeded that of Lincoln and he at once became a figure of national importance. In the campaign of 1866, despite many obstacles, he was reëlected by a majority of over 13,000 (E. A. Werner, *Civil List . . . of the . . . State of New York,* 1888, p. 166).

Fenton's conduct in office gave rise to conflicting estimates of his ability as an executive. He is associated with proposals of reform in the registry law and the prison system, and with numerous educational reforms,—the establishment of Cornell University, of state normal schools, and the abolition of the school rate bills (*Messages from the Governors,* V, 605, 695, 697, 778–81, 850–55). Hence, even the *New York Times* (Feb. 4, 1868) conceded that his "administration of state affairs" had in the main been a success. A contrary impression, however, was created by ugly newspaper allegations. When, in 1868, Fenton signed the bill which legalized the acts of the Erie directorate, charges were made that his signature had been bought (*New York Herald,* Apr. 21–30, 1868; *New York Times,* Apr. 20–May 8, 1868; *Sun,* Apr. 21, 1868; also *New York Commercial Advertiser,* Jan. 2, 1869; the *Nation,* Mar. 18, 1869), although a subsequent investigation did not support them (see *Documents of the Senate of the State of New York,* 1869, no. 52, pp. 146–48, 151–55).

Fenton succeeded in building up one of the most powerful political machines in the history of the state and came to be regarded as its ablest political organizer after Martin Van Buren. This achievement had been effected not without making a powerful group of enemies who eventually brought about his political downfall. In 1869 Fenton engaged in a ruthless campaign against

Edward D. Morgan [*q.v.*] for the senatorial nomination. His success, due to his liberal disposition of choice assignments, aroused much factional feeling (*Harper's Weekly*, June 24, 1871). After his election to the Senate in that year, he made strenuous attempts to keep in the favor of President Grant. When it was obvious that Conkling was to be the distributor of the state patronage, Fenton offered to withdraw his own candidacy for the presidency if the patronage question could be settled satisfactorily (*New York Times*, July 24, 1872). Relations were terminated between him and Conkling. The latter, capitalizing the support of the administration, carried the feud to his own state, and brought about the defeat of Fenton in the state convention of 1871. Finally, the recognition of the Murphy-Arthur organization in New York City was a stunning blow from which Fenton never recovered. In 1872 he supported the candidacy of Horace Greeley for the presidency.

On the expiration of his senatorial term in 1875, he devoted himself principally to his business interests. He served as president of the First National Bank of Jamestown and gained a reputation for his special knowledge of monetary affairs. In 1878 President Hayes sent him abroad as chairman of the United States commission to the International Monetary Conference held in Paris in that year. He died in Jamestown, N. Y. His first wife, Jane, daughter of John Frew of Frewsburg, whom he married in 1838, died two years later. His second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Joel Scudder, survived him.

[Biographical material is found in Obed Edson and Georgia Drew Merrill, *Hist. of Chautauqua County* (1894); Chauncey M. Depew, *Orations, Addresses, and Speeches* (1910), I, 259 ff.; *A Sketch of the Life of Gov. Fenton* (1866), a political pamphlet; obituary notices of Aug. 26, 1885, in *N. Y. Times* and N. Y. *World*. Fenton's public papers as governor are found in *State of N. Y., Messages from the Governors*, vol. V (1909), ed. by Chas. Z. Lincoln. His political career is treated in Homer A. Stebbins, *A Political Hist. of the State of N. Y., 1865–69* (1913), and De Alva S. Alexander, *A Political Hist. of the State of N. Y.* (1909), vols. II, III.]

R. B. M.



**FENWICK, BENEDICT JOSEPH** (Sept. 3, 1782–Aug. 11, 1846), Roman Catholic prelate, second bishop of Boston, was born near Leonardtown, St. Marys County, Md., one of the ten children of Col. Richard Fenwick and his wife Dorothy, daughter of Joseph Plowden of "Resurrection Manor." He was a great-grandson of Cuthbert Fenwick, who came to this country with Leonard Calvert [*q.v.*] in 1634. In his eleventh year he entered Georgetown College where he distinguished himself as a student, and, after finishing his course in philosophy, was an instructor. Having resolved to become a priest, in 1805 he took up the study of theology at the Sulpician Seminary, later St. Mary's, Baltimore. When, however, in 1806 the Society of Jesus was reëstablished in the United States and a novitiate was opened at Georgetown College, Fenwick was one of the first to be admitted. On Mar. 12, 1808, he was ordained priest by Bishop Leonard Neale [*q.v.*]. The following year, with Father Anthony Kohlmann, S. J. [*q.v.*], he was sent to New York City where the two took charge of St. Peter's Church. The Diocese of New York had been erected in 1808, but its first bishop, Richard Luke Concanen, died before he could reach America, and his successor, Bishop John Connolly [*q.v.*], did not arrive until Nov. 24, 1815. Father Kohlmann administered the diocese until early in 1815 when he was recalled to Maryland, and thereafter, until Bishop Connolly came, Father Fenwick was in charge. During this critical period these two priests labored devotedly and successfully. They soon opened a school for young men, the New York Literary Institution, which, under the direction of Father Fenwick, came to be held in high regard by Protestants as well as Catholics. In accordance with plans prepared by him, St. Patrick's Cathedral was commenced on a plot of ground between Broadway and Bowery Road. Traveling extensively through the diocese, he reclaimed many wandering Catholics and made some notable converts. In the spring of 1817 he was transferred by his superiors to Georgetown where he served as president of the college and as pastor of Trinity Church. In the fall of 1818, however, at the request of Archbishop Maréchal, who conferred upon him the power of vicar-general, he was sent to Charleston, S. C., where, displaying great tact and administrative ability, he did much to heal long-standing schisms. After the erection of the Diocese of Charleston in 1820, and the coming of Bishop John England [*q.v.*], Father Fenwick was retained for a time as vicar-general, but in May 1822 he was appointed minister of Georgetown College and procurator-general of the Society of Jesus in the United States (Clarke, *post*). He succeeded his brother, Rev. Enoch Fenwick, S. J., as president of the college, serving from September 1822 until 1825 (Shea, *Memorial*), when he was sent to assume spiritual direction of the Carmelite Convent, then located in Charles County, Md. On May 10, 1825, he was made bishop of Boston, and Nov. 1 of that year was consecrated in the Cathedral at Baltimore.

A task of great magnitude confronted him upon his arrival at Boston. His diocese comprised all of New England, and in its whole extent there were only two or three church buildings worthy

the name, and but two or three priests. He had also to encounter an intense prejudice against Catholicism on the part of Protestants. With difficulty, since there was a general scarcity of clergy, he managed to secure a few able assistants. In the hope of increasing his staff, he gave instruction personally to candidates for the priesthood, and in 1827 had the satisfaction of ordaining two of his pupils, one of whom, James Fitton [*q.v.*], carried on zealous missionary labors for many years in all parts of New England. From the start he devoted much attention to the education of the young, opening a Sunday-school in the Cathedral, and when the latter was enlarged in 1828, establishing a day school in the basement, which was conducted by his ecclesiastical students. He moved the Ursuline Convent to a more suitable site in Charlestown, where the nuns opened an academy for girls. On Aug. 11, 1834, the convent was destroyed by an anti-Catholic mob. That the truths of the Church might be "explained, and moderately, but firmly defended," he started in Boston *The Jesuit, or Catholic Sentinel,* one of the earliest Catholic papers in the country, the first number of which appeared on Sept. 5, 1829. Its name was several times changed, and it was finally called *The Pilot.* Under his patronage Sisters of Charity came to Boston in 1832, opened a free school for girls, and established St. Vincent's Orphan Asylum. As the exodus from Ireland brought many immigrants to Boston, he urged them to go forth into other sections of New England, and in 1834, having secured a half township of land in Aroostook County, Me., he established there the Catholic colony of Benedicta. In 1842 he received from Father Fitton land in Worcester upon which the latter had erected a school for the higher education of young men. This the Bishop put under the care of the Jesuits and it became the College of the Holy Cross. Such was the energy and success of his administration that at his death the diocese contained some forty churches with attendant priests, and from it had been carved the Diocese of Hartford, which comprised Connecticut and Rhode Island.

He was a man of great personal charm, a brilliant conversationalist, witty and humorous. Firm and uncompromising in his convictions, he was nevertheless humble, tender-hearted, and charitable toward all. He was an accomplished scholar, well informed in widely different fields, but of practical rather than speculative turn of mind. His business ability was of a high order, and he possessed many of the qualities that make an able statesman. The long period of suffering that preceded his death he bore with fortitude and cheerfulness, and not having been able to lie down for weeks, he died sitting in his chair.

[*The Metropolitan Cath. Almanac and Laity's Directory for . . . 1850* (1849); Geo. L. L. Davis, *The Day-Star of Am. Freedom* (1855); Jas. Fitton, *Sketches of the Establishment of the Ch. in New England* (1872); Wm. Byrne and others, *Hist. of the Cath. Ch. in the New England States* (1899), vol. I; Richard H. Clarke, *Lives of the Deceased Bishops of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.* (rev. ed., 1888), vol. I; John G. Shea, *A Hist. of the Cath. Ch. Within the Limits of the U. S.*, vols. III, IV (1890–92), and *Memorial of the First Centenary of Georgetown College, D. C.* (1891); *Brownson's Quart. Rev.*, Oct. 1846; *The Cath. Encyc.*, II, 705; family history from Mr. A. F. King of Leonardtown, through the courtesy of Mr. R. J. Purcell.]

H. E. S.

**FENWICK, EDWARD DOMINIC** (Aug. 19, 1768–Sept. 26, 1832), first Catholic bishop of Cincinnati, was the fourth of eight children born to Ignatius and Sarah Brooke (Taney) Fenwick, who were both descended from Baltimore's first colonists and occupied ancestral lands in St. Marys County, Md. Like some of his forebears, Ignatius Fenwick was a notable figure: an ardent patriot, a colonel in the Revolution, a member of the Committee of Public Safety, a framer of the state constitution, and a man of affluence who was proud of his aristocratic connections. Edward faced the trials of the war era during which both his mother and father died, the latter in 1784, leaving him dependent on relatives and tutors. Although the penal laws were abolished, there were no Catholic schools, so that the youth, following the old practise, was sent to Europe. He entered Holy Cross College, Bornhem, Belgium (1784), an English Dominican foundation, and probably completed his classical studies at Liège. Joining the Dominicans, he served a severe novitiate before taking the vows of a friar preacher (1790). Continuing his philosophical studies, he was ordained at Ghent (Feb. 23, 1793) somewhat hurriedly because of unsettled political conditions. Escaping with their lives, the Dominicans fled from the French invaders and sought refuge on an estate in Surrey, England, where they founded Carshalton College. As an American citizen, Father Fenwick was left behind as procurator in the hope of saving the community property. This he was unable to do. The college was fired and partially destroyed, and Fenwick was harshly treated. On protestation, he was released from prison and found his way to England. He spent several happy years in teaching at Carshalton, attending a mission at Woburn Lodge, and continuing his theological studies, but he felt that his life's mission was to establish an American province of his order, as the Irish Augustinians had succeeded in doing. After encountering many obstacles and conducting much tedious correspondence, finally, aided by Richard

Luke Concanen, an Irish Dominican in Rome and later Bishop of New York, and encouraged by Bishop Carroll, Father Fenwick obtained the consent of his English provincial and of Pius J. Gaddi, the superior general in Rome. But men were scarce and the order, impoverished by war and confiscations, could not advance the necessary money. Not until September 1804, were Fenwick and his volunteer-companion, Robert Anthony Angier, O. P., ready to sail from London to Norfolk, Va.

After an absence of twenty years, the friar was welcomed by the Fenwicks of Maryland, though in this religious family given to vocations a priest occupied no unique position. Father Fenwick longed to erect a priory in his native state, but Bishop Carroll urged the claims of Kentucky where there were numbers of scattered Catholics who had emigrated from Maryland. Temporarily assigned to the mission at Piscataway, Fenwick visited Kentucky (1805) where at first he was warmly received by Stephen Badin [*q.v.*] who had spent lonely years in the frontier missions. Disposing of his lands in Charles County, Md., Fenwick purchased 500 acres in Washington County near Springfield, Ky., in the heart of the Catholic settlements. Here, assisted by two recently arrived Dominicans (Samuel T. Wilson and William R. Tuite), he transformed the farmhouse into the convent of St. Rose of Lima, the mother-house of the Dominican Order in the United States. The College of St. Thomas Aquinas (1807) was housed in a brick building and St. Rose's Church was erected (1812) from bricks made by the fathers and their parishioners. Relieved by the more erudite Dr. Wilson of his duties as prior and teacher, Fenwick engaged in itinerant missionary work throughout Kentucky and Ohio and into the North. At Cincinnati, on refusal of a site for a chapel, he built a small structure outside the city (1811). Within a few years, as the German and Irish immigrants arrived, he had a respectable frame church (1819). Aided by his nephew, Father N. D. Young, O. P., Fenwick's labors in the wilderness attracted such attention that when Bishop Flaget urged that Cincinnati be constituted the seat of a new diocese, Pius VII named the Dominican as its bishop. It was a proud day at St. Rose's when Dr. Flaget consecrated Fenwick and Bishop David preached the sermon (Jan. 13, 1822). Accompanied by Father Wilson as his vicar-general, Bishop Fenwick traveled through the woodland trail by wagon, actually swimming the Kentucky River.

The following year he paid his visit to Rome, where he attended the coronation of Pope Leo XII who displayed a practical interest in the Cincinnati diocese by presenting books, plate, and an elaborate tabernacle. Traveling in Italy, and France, Fenwick sought volunteer priests and obtained promises of financial aid. As a result of this journey, he induced such famous figures as Martin Kundig, Frederick Rese, Samuel Mazzuchelli, and John M. Henni to cast their lot in the frontier missions of America. Returning to Cincinnati, he continued his missionary work, preaching at court-houses to non-Catholic audiences, making conversions, gathering the isolated Catholics of Ohio into congregations, and gradually building small churches in towns like Lancaster. In 1828, he was further burdened with a life appointment as Dominican provincial. At the First Provincial Council of Baltimore (1829), he could report a prosperous diocese with a rapidly increasing immigrant population. Near his cathedral and diocesan seminary, he erected in 1831 the Athenæum, later St. Francis Xavier College as a school and a lyceum, whose public lectures attracted the élite of Cincinnati. Aware of the value of the press, he founded, in the same year, *The Catholic Telegraph,* which still flourishes as a diocesan weekly paper. While on a laborious visitation, he fell a victim to the cholera and was buried in Wooster before the nearest priest, John M. Henni, arrived. Later his remains were interred in the new cathedral and still later in a large mausoleum in St. Joseph's Cemetery.

[V. F. O'Daniel, *The Right Rev. Edward Dominic Fenwick* (1920), containing full bibliography; R. H. Clarke, *Lives of the Deceased Bishops of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.* (1872), I, 328–52; J. H. Lamott, *Hist. of the Archdiocese of Cincinnati, 1821–1921* (1921); C. P. Maes, *Life of Rev. Chas. Nerinckx* (1915); M. J. Spalding, *Sketches of the Early Cath. Missions of Ky.* (1844); B. J. Webb, *The Centenary of Catholicity in Ky.* (1884); J. G. Shea, *Hist. of the Cath. Ch. Within the Limits of the U. S.*, vols. II, IV (1890–92); *The Truth Teller* (N. Y.), Jan. 26, 1833.] R. J. P.

**FENWICK, GEORGE** (1603–Mar. 15, 1656/7), colonist, was the son of George Fenwick of Brinkburn and his wife Dorothy Forster. On Feb. 11, 1621/2, he was admitted to Gray's Inn (Joseph Foster, *Register of Admissions to Gray's Inn, 1521–1889*). In 1626 he bought the estate of Brinkburn. In 1632 Fenwick was one of the group of lords and gentlemen to whom the Earl of Warwick, president of the Council for New England, granted forty leagues of territory west of the Narragansett River. He is not named in the patent but in 1635 signed the commission of John Winthrop, Jr., sent over as governor, and agreements between the patentees and Winthrop and Lyon Gardiner, who were to oversee the construction of a fort, the laying out of a town, and the building of houses. In 1636 Fenwick visited

Saybrook, the town at the mouth of the Connecticut River begun by Winthrop and Gardiner. He soon returned to England and there married Alice, daughter of Sir Edward Apsley and widow of Sir John Boteler. In the summer of 1639 Fenwick and his wife sailed to New England and took up their residence at Saybrook. They were joined by Fenwick's sisters, Mary and Elizabeth, and three children were born to them. Fenwick expected the other patentees at Saybrook, but with the assembling of the Long Parliament in 1640, they came into power in England and remained there. In December 1644 Fenwick sold the fort at Saybrook to Connecticut and agreed that the territory between the Connecticut and Narragansett rivers should be settled under the jurisdiction of Connecticut if that were possible. On Oct. 22, 1645, he conveyed to the town of Guilford in the New Haven Colony, land to the west of the Connecticut River. From 1643 to 1645 he was one of the commissioners of the New England Confederation. In 1644, 1645, 1647, and 1648 he was elected a magistrate of the Connecticut Colony although at the time of his election in 1647 and 1648 he was in England. Probably in November 1645, Lady Fenwick died and was buried at Saybrook, and Fenwick, with one daughter, returned to England. Early in the following year he wrote to his sister Mary to bring her niece and nephew to England. He was elected to the Long Parliament in 1645 and added to the parliamentary commission for plantations. He was named a member of the High Court of Justice appointed to try Charles I, but did not serve. He was a colonel in the parliamentary army and in 1648 governor of Tynemouth, in 1649 governor of Berwick, and in the following year governor of Edinburgh and Leith. In 1652 he married Katherine, the daughter of Sir Arthur Hesilrige. He was elected from Berwick to the Parliaments of 1654 and 1656 and was one of the members excluded from the latter Parliament by the Council. He died on Mar. 15, 1656/7. His widow married Col. Philip Babington. Although he had instructed his sister in 1646 to bring her nephew to England, his will, dated Mar. 8, 1656/7, makes no mention of a son but names his daughters, Elizabeth and Dorothy, as co-heirs. Elizabeth married Sir Thomas Hesilrige, and Dorothy, Sir Thomas Williamson. Fenwick left his property in America to his sister Elizabeth, who had remained in Connecticut and married Capt. John Cullick.

[*Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series*; *Conn. Colony Pub. Records*, vol. I (1850); *New Plymouth Colony Records*, vols. IX and X (1859); *Winthrop's Journal* (2 vols., 1908), ed. by J. K. Hosmer; "Winthrop Papers," in *Mass. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, 4 ser. vols. VI, VII (1863–65), 5 ser. vols. I, VIII (1871, 1882); C. H. Firth, and R. S. Rait, *Acts and Ordinances of the Interregnum* (3 vols., 1911); *Hist. Mag.*, Feb. 1871; Northumberland County Hist. Committee, *A Hist. of Northumberland* (12 vols., 1893–1926); Benj. Trumbull, *A Hist. of Conn.* (2 vols., 1818).]

I. M. C.

**FENWICK, JOHN** (1618–December 1683), colonist, son of Sir William Fenwick, was described as of Bynfield, Berkshire, England. In 1640 he was a law student at Gray's Inn, London; but soon afterward was an officer in Cromwell's horse. Fighting manfully for the Puritan cause, he was commissioned major (Johnson, "Memoir," p. 55). At the execution of Charles I, Major Fenwick, at the head of a squadron of cavalry, was present to preserve order. Originally an Independent in religion, the Cromwellian trooper later joined the Society of Friends. He was one of the group with whom originated the idea of a Quaker colony in America. It was to him, in trust for the Quaker merchant, Edward Byllinge, that, in March 1673/74, Lord John Berkeley made over his half of New Jersey. By arrangement with Sir George Carteret, partner of Berkeley, New Jersey was divided geographically, and the Friends secured the portion lying along the Delaware, henceforth known as West New Jersey. Thither Fenwick sailed in the ship *Griffin* with a party which included his three daughters, Elizabeth, Anna, and Priscilla, two sons-in-law, and five grandchildren. At Salem he planted, in June 1675, the first Quaker settlement on the Delaware. Styling himself "Chief Proprietor," he planned an elaborate development. Though a Friend by conviction, it would seem that the spirit of "the World's People" was not entirely dead in the ex-major for he became involved in contentions with other Friends interested in West Jersey. A misunderstanding with Byllinge was arbitrated by William Penn who, to the chagrin of Fenwick, adjudged one-tenth of the province to him and nine-tenths to Byllinge. A more serious quarrel resulted from the conduct of John Eldridge and Edmund Warner, Friends who had loaned Fenwick money for his colony. Them he accused of trying to defraud him of his rights as proprietor. In 1682 he was finally pacified by an arrangement which confirmed him in the possession of 150,000 acres at Salem, commonly called Fenwick's colony, and made over the other conflicting claims to William Penn. Meanwhile another antagonist had arisen in Sir Edmund Andros, governor of New York, who had ordered Fenwick to desist from exercising authority at Salem. The ex-Cromwellian resisted with spirit and was twice imprisoned by Andros. On one occasion when summoned by the Governor's lieutenant, he bolted himself in his house and refused

to go "without he was carried away either dead or alive, and if anyone dare to come to take him it was at their peril, and he would do their business" (*New Jersey Archives*, I, 190). In spite of this un-Quakerlike defiance, he was compelled temporarily to submit. In 1680, however, James, Duke of York, surrendered his claims over West Jersey. In Fenwick's will William Penn was named guardian of his three favorite grandsons. Fenwick was twice married. His first wife, mother of his daughters, was Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Walter Covert. His second wife, Mary Burdett, did not accompany him to America.

[Accounts of Fenwick's career are found in R. G. Johnson, "Memoir of John Fenwicke" in *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, IV (1850), 53, and in *An Hist. Account of the First Settlement of Salem in West Jersey* (1839), by the same author. Fenwick's activities in West Jersey may be traced in *N. J. Archives*, vol. I (1880). See also Samuel Smith, *Hist. of the Colony of Novo Cæsaria or New Jersey* (Burlington, 1765; Trenton, 1877).] E. P. T.

**FENWICKE, JOHN** [See FENWICK, JOHN, 1618–1683].

**FERGUSON, ALEXANDER HUGH** (Feb. 27, 1853–Oct. 20, 1911), surgeon, was born in Manilla, Victoria County, Ontario, seventh of the nine children of Alexander Ferguson and Annie McFadyen, both natives of Argyleshire, Scotland. His preliminary education was obtained in the common schools of the neighborhood and at Rockwood Academy. The family later moved to Winnipeg and there he attended Manitoba College. He began the study of medicine in Winnipeg under Dr. John H. O'Donnell in 1877 and took his M.D. degree at Trinity Medical College, Toronto, in 1881. He began practise in Buffalo, N. Y., but returned to Winnipeg in 1882 to be near his aged mother. Here he practised his profession for twelve years.

Shortly after his arrival in Winnipeg he was appointed registrar of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of Manitoba. The following year he took the initiative in founding the Manitoba Medical College. In the new faculty he was professor of physiology and histology during the years 1883–86 and professor of surgery from 1886 to 1894. He was surgeon-in-chief of St. Boniface Hospital and a member of the staff of Winnipeg General Hospital. He went to Chicago in 1894 to become professor of surgery at the Chicago Post-Graduate Medical School and Hospital, and in 1900 was appointed, together with Dr. Albert J. Ochsner [*q.v.*], to the chair of surgery in the medical department of the University of Illinois. He was on the surgical staffs of the Post-Graduate Hospital, the Chicago Hospital, and the Cook County Hospital for the Insane.



He was a member of the British Medical Association and was the first president of the Manitoba branch. He was a fellow of the American Surgical Association, of the American Association of Obstetricians and Gynecologists, and of the Southern Surgical and Gynecological Association, in addition to holding membership in local societies. In 1906 the King of Portugal conferred upon him the decoration of Commander of the Order of Christ of Portugal in recognition of his surgical achievements.

His practise in Winnipeg gave him an experience in hydatid disease of the liver such as came to no other man in America and these cases followed him to Chicago. He originated a method of treating hernia and improved the technique of cleft palate operations. He was one of the first to advocate decortication of the kidney for chronic Bright's disease. He contributed more than a hundred articles on surgical subjects to medical periodicals, was the author of a book entitled *The Technic of Modern Operations for Hernia* (1907), and was engaged upon a text-book of surgery at the time of his death which occurred in Chicago, following three months' illness from septicemia due to a carbuncle. He was survived by his wife, Sarah Jane Thomas of Nassagaweya, Ontario, whom he had married in 1882, and by two sons.

Ferguson was an athlete and foot-ball player in his youth and kept his close-knit, powerful figure to the end. Abounding in energy, he was genial and companionable but with an easily aroused pugnacity. Although filling teaching appointments throughout his entire professional career he had but a mediocre gift for instruction, except by the example of his operative skill.

[Of the biographical sketches of Ferguson appearing in periodical literature, those by Dr. A. J. Ochsner in the *Illinois Medic. Jour.*, 1912, and by Dr. C. W. Barrett in the *Am. Jour. of Obstetrics*, June 1913, are noteworthy. A sketch, with portrait, appears also in *Trans. Southern Surgic. and Gynecol. Asso.*, 1912. See also *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09.] J. M. P.

**FERGUSON, ELIZABETH GRAEME** (Feb. 3, 1737–Feb. 23, 1801), poet, translator, writer of letters and journals, was the youngest child of Dr. Thomas Graeme and his wife, Ann Diggs (Keith, *post*, pp. 161–64). Dr. Graeme owned an imposing house in Philadelphia and a country estate called Graeme Park. The family were prosperous, and entertained lavishly (*Port Folio*). At the age of seventeen Elizabeth became engaged to William Franklin [*q.v.*], the son of Benjamin Franklin. In the summer of 1757 he went to London, where he found feminine society that overtaxed his constancy. He soon quarreled with his fiancée, and in 1762 he was married in

London to a Miss Elizabeth Downes. Disappointed in love, Elizabeth Graeme turned to poetry for consolation and made a careful translation of Fénelon's *Télémaque*. She still continued to grieve, however, and her health declined until her parents in 1764 sent her to London in hope that change of scene might help her to forget her trouble. Through her father's friend, the Rev. Richard Peters, who was abroad at the same time, she made many interesting acquaintances. She was on intimate terms with the Penn family and their friends; and according to tradition, she met Lawrence Sterne and was treated with special courtesy by the King (*Ibid.*). She had treatment from the famous Dr. John Fothergill and returned home much improved in health, but still sad in spirit because her mother had died during her absence.

Mistress, now, of her father's house, she made it a gathering place for the literary set of Philadelphia. A manuscript journal of her travels and her *Télémaque*, which she revised from time to time, gave her a local reputation as a writer. With Nathaniel Evans [*q.v.*], who had accompanied her and Richard Peters on the voyage from England, she carried on a discreet flirtation in verse. She made a metrical version of the Psalms, celebrated important incidents in verse, and wrote voluminously to her friends. Her writings are not without interest, but they probably would not be remembered to-day had not later events given the author an unhappy notoriety.

On Apr. 21, 1772, she was married to Henry Hugh Ferguson, a Scotchman ten years younger than she. In the autumn of the same year Dr. Graeme died, and she inherited Graeme Park, where she and her husband resided until the outbreak of the Revolution. In the fall of 1775 Ferguson went to England and Scotland on business. Returning two years later, he accompanied Howe's army to Philadelphia in September 1777. In November, after Washington had refused to allow him to go to Graeme Park, he became commissary of prisoners under the British commander. Gen. Washington had so much faith in Mrs. Ferguson's patriotism that he allowed her to visit her husband whenever she wished. She undoubtedly sympathized with her fellow countrymen, but her longing for peace and her devotion to her husband, who was unscrupulous enough to make her a catspaw, soon led her into some questionable enterprises. She was made the bearer of a letter from the Rev. Jacob Duché [*q.v.*] to Washington, urging the American general to surrender, and later she was empowered by Gov. George Johnstone, one of the peace commissioners, to offer Joseph Reed a heavy bribe if he would bring about a settlement satisfactory to the British (see W. B. Reed, *Life and Correspondence of Joseph Reed*, 2 vols., 1847). Both attempts failed, and Mrs. Ferguson soon found herself in trouble. Ferguson was attainted and proscribed, and his personal property was confiscated and sold. Mrs. Ferguson's estate was also confiscated and would have been sold but for her friends among the patriot leaders. In 1781 she received permission to retain Graeme Park during her lifetime, and in 1791 she was allowed to sell it. Her dead sister's son and daughter, whom she had reared, and a friend, Eliza Stedman, were the companions of her last years. She died in comparative poverty and was buried at Christ Church.

Mrs. Ferguson had many admirable qualities —intellectual culture, taste, sincere piety. When her husband was commissary of prisoners, she did much to relieve the sufferings of those unfortunates. Even in adversity she gave freely to charity. She was a dutiful daughter, a loyal friend, and a conscientious foster-mother. These virtues have disposed her biographers to pass lightly over her faults and deal gently with her memory.

[The chief source for the biography of Elizabeth Graeme Ferguson is a sketch and a collection of letters published by the late Simon Gratz in the *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July–Oct. 1915. Other biographical sketches are found in the *Port Folio*, June 1809; Elizabeth Ellet, *The Women of the Am. Revolution* (1848); R. W. Griswold, *The Female Poets of America* (1853); E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *Cyc. of Am. Lit.* (1856); *Memoirs of the Hist. Soc. of Pa.* vol. I (1864); G. P. Keith, *Provincial Councillors of Pa.* (1883); Moses Coit Tyler, *The Lit. Hist. of the Am. Rev.* (1897); M. Katherine Jackson, *Outlines of the Lit. Hist. of Colonial Pa.* (1906); H. M. Ellis, *Joseph Dennie and His Circle* (1915); and Geo. E. Hastings, *The Life and Works of Francis Hopkinson* (1926). The Ridgway Lib. (Phila.), owns the MS. of Mrs. Ferguson's *Télémaque*, the Hist. Soc. of Pa., that of her metrical version of the Psalms. Both possess letters and other biographical material. Her metrical epistles to Nathaniel Evans were published in his *Poems on Several Occasions* (1772) and in Duyckinck's *Cyclopedia;* one of them is quoted by Tyler. Griswold's collection contains selections from *Télémaque*.]

G. E. H.

**FERGUSON, THOMAS BARKER** (Aug. 8, 1841–Aug 11, 1922), Confederate soldier, scientist, diplomat, was born in Berkeley County, near Charleston, S. C., the son of James and Abby Ann (Barker) Ferguson. His great-grandfather, James Ferguson, came to Charleston from Scotland late in the seventeenth century, and his grandfather, Thomas Ferguson, was prominent in state politics during the Revolution. After attending elementary schools in Charleston, Thomas Barker Ferguson went to the state Military Academy, where he graduated in 1861 and immediately entered the Confederate service as a

cadet engineer. With his classmates he helped construct and operate a battery on Morris Island which prevented the U. S. S. *Star of the West* from relieving Fort Sumter in April 1861. Serving throughout the Civil War, he rose to the rank of major before he was twenty-five. While in command of the artillery of Walker's division of Johnston's army at Jackson, Miss., in 1863, he was shot through the lungs, but recovered in time to become before the end of the war commander of the First Military District, which included South Carolina, Georgia, and Florida. In 1867 he moved to Baltimore and married Jane Byrd, daughter of Gov. Thomas Swann of Maryland. He organized the Maryland State Fish Commission in 1870 and long served as a member. After acting as judge of awards for the Centennial Exposition at Philadelphia in 1876, he was sent as assistant commissioner of the United States to the Paris Exposition of 1878. Appointed on his return as assistant commissioner of fish and fisheries of the United States, he served until 1887, inventing meanwhile many improvements in the apparatus used for incubating fish eggs. He published in 1880 a monograph on pisciculture (in Vol. V of the *Reports* of the United States Commission to the Paris Exposition, 1878) which set forth his many discoveries in that field. In February 1894 he was appointed by President Cleveland minister to Sweden and Norway. After spending four uneventful years in Stockholm, he returned to the United States and lived in Washington, D. C. Devoting himself to inventing, he produced an improved coffee pot and the *Cadmus,* both patented in 1903. The latter was a copy book for beginning students in writing and forced the pupil to follow the example instead of copying his own errors. He died while visiting his daughter in Boston, Mass. A prominent clubman with a wide circle of friends, Ferguson performed valuable services through his researches in fish propagation.

[*American Biog. Directories, District of Columbia, 1908–09* (1908); obituaries in *Boston Transcript* and *Boston Post,* Aug. 11, 1922, and *Evening Star* (Washington), Aug. 12, 1922; U. S. Department of State, Records of the Appointment Bureau.]

W. L. W—t., Jr.

**FERGUSON, WILLIAM JASON** (June 8, 1844–May 4, 1930), actor who saw Lincoln shot, was born in Baltimore, Md., the son of Alexander and Ann (Wilson) Ferguson, both Scottish emigrants. After the death of his father in 1848 and of his grandfather, James Wilson, a few years later, Ferguson, then a boy of nine, was obliged to abandon his schooling and contribute to the support of his family. He was first a newsboy, later a printer's devil on the *Baltimore Clipper,* and at the age of sixteen a train-boy on the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad. His stage career began in 1863 when he was hired as call boy at Ford's Theatre in Washington. There the shooting of Lincoln occurred on Apr. 14, 1865, during the run of *Our American Cousin* with Laura Keene. The construction of the box, which concealed its occupants from the audience, and the disposition of the other actors at the time of the assassination, support the claim that Ferguson was the sole witness. His description has been accepted as the most reliable account of the shooting, and has appeared in the *Saturday Evening Post* (*post*), the *New York Times* (Apr. 18, 1915), and finally in book form as *I Saw Booth Shoot Lincoln* (1930).

Immediately after the assassination Ford's Theatre closed, but Ferguson continued on the stage, serving his apprenticeship in various companies, touring New York and Pennsylvania with Sherry's troupe, later joining the Ravels, Ben de Bar's, the Bidwell company, and Mrs. Conway's stock company. In the fall of 1872 he was engaged to play juveniles at Wallack's Theatre in New York City. Thereafter he remained in New York, establishing himself in a house in Brooklyn, and playing "enough melodrama characters to populate a town" (*New York Times, post*). He appeared with Mr. and Mrs. W. J. Florence in 1875, and with Mantell and Maurice Barrymore in Al Hayman's stock company in 1886. In 1890 he began his association with Richard Mansfield, with whom he played character rôles in *Master and Man* (1890), *Don Juan* (1891), *Ten Thousand a Year* (1892), and *Beau Brummel,* the unusual success of which was attributed to Ferguson's deft characterization of Mortimer (*New York Times, post*). Later he joined the Charles Frohman company, creating in 1895 the part of Stephen Spettigue in *Charley's Aunt.* Until his retirement he was to be found at any time adding to the comic zest of some Broadway performance. After half a century on the legitimate stage, Ferguson added motion-pictures to his routine with the filming of *The Deep Purple* in 1915. He made fourteen in all, many of which were film versions of his earlier stage successes. His mobile face, his sense of timing, and above all his mastery of the art of gesture and pantomime made him especially valuable to motion-pictures. During the filming of *The Yosemite Trail* in 1922, he broke his hip, thereby ending a long and energetic career. His last years were spent with a niece and nephew in Baltimore.

Shortly after leaving Ford's Theatre, Ferguson married Fannie Pierson, an actress, who died

within a few years. In 1880 he married Catherine Ferrell, who survived him.

[T. Allston Brown, *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage*, vol. III (1903); Ada Patterson, "An Eccentric Comedian of the Old School" in *Theatre Mag.*, May 1908; Wm. J. Ferguson, "I Saw Lincoln Shot," and Merle Crowell, "Ferguson—Who saw the Greatest Murder in Modern History," in *Am. Mag.*, Aug. 1920; *Saturday Evening Post*, Feb. 12, 1927; Baltimore *Sun*, May 6, 1930; *Washington Post*, May 8, 1930; *New York Times*, May 8, 1930; *Billboard*, May 17, 1930; information as to certain facts from Mr. W. E. Croggan and Miss Katharine F. Mazan, Ferguson's nephew and grand-daughter.]

C. W. P.

**FERGUSON, WILLIAM PORTER FRISBEE** (Dec. 13, 1861–June 23, 1929), clergyman, reformer, was born in Delhi, N. Y., the son of Phineas Rice and Electa Ann (Frisbee) Ferguson. His mother was a descendant of Edward Frisbee, one of the first settlers of Branford, Conn., who died in 1690. William graduated from Walton Academy, N. Y., in 1884, and from Drew Theological Seminary in 1887. This same year he was admitted to the Troy Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and on Apr. 5, married Lena Grace Hathaway of Sidney Center, N. Y. Transferred to the Mexico Conference, he engaged in missionary work until 1889, when, having become a member of the New York Conference, he was stationed in Bangall, N. Y. In 1888 he received the degree of B.A. from Texas Wesleyan College at Fort Worth. He was principal of the Mohawk Collegiate Preparatory Institute, Utica, N. Y., in 1891, and the following year was principal of Utica Private Academy. In 1893 he was transferred to the Northern New York Conference, but withdrew from the Methodist Church, and until 1896 served as pastor of the Presbyterian church at Whitesboro, N. Y.

He was a militant Prohibitionist, as early as 1880 contributing verses to the *Living Issue*, published in Utica, N. Y., and actively supporting the candidates of the Prohibition party in the presidential campaign of 1884. After 1896 he was engaged chiefly in editorial work, being on the staff of the *Voice*, New York, from 1897 to 1899, and serving as managing editor of the *New Voice*, Chicago, from 1899 to 1902. Once more shifting his denominational allegiance, he became pastor of the Universalist church, Harriman, Tenn., and proprietor and editor of the *Citizen* in 1904–05. In the latter year he took charge of the Third Universalist Church, Brooklyn, N. Y., and assumed proprietorship of the *Defender*, New York. Purchasing the *Home Defender* of Chicago in 1907, and merging his own paper with it, he took over the subscription list of the *New Voice*, previously discontinued, and issued a publication called the *National Prohibitionist*. This



was consolidated with the *Vindicator*, Franklin, Pa., in 1911, of which he was in charge until 1916. He also edited the *Venango Daily Herald* of Franklin (1912–19), and later the *News Herald* and the *Citizen-Press*. He was an effective speaker and presented the subject of prohibition from the platform in many different sections of the country. In 1900 he published *The Canteen in the United States Army; a Study of Uncle Sam as a Grog-Shop Keeper*; and in 1902, *Prohibition in the United States*. His popularity was attested by the large vote he received as Prohibition candidate for Congress from the Twenty-eighth District of Pennsylvania in 1914, and as candidate for the state legislature from Venango County in 1918. In the Prohibition Convention of 1916 he had strong support for the presidential nomination, but he transferred it to J. Frank Hanly. During the later years of his life he carried on investigations in Isle Royale, Lake Superior, and published "Michigan's Most Ancient Industry: the Pre-Historic Mines and Miners of Isle Royale" (*Michigan History Magazine*, July–October 1923), and "The Franklin Isle Royale Expedition" (*Ibid.*, October 1924).

[E. S. Frisbee, *The Frisbee-Frisbie Geneal.* (1926); W. P. Tolley, *Alumni Records of Drew Theol. Sem. 1867–1925* (1926); *Minutes N. Y. Conference M. E. Ch.* for 1892 and 1893; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; E. H. Cherrington and others, *Standard Encyc. of the Alcohol Problem*, vol. III (1926); *N. Y. Times*, June 25, 1929.]

H. E. S.

**FERNALD, CHARLES HENRY** (Mar. 16, 1838–Feb. 22, 1921), entomologist, teacher, was born at Fernald's Point, Mount Desert Island, Me., the son of Eben and Sophronia (Wasgatt) Fernald. He was a thorough New Englander by ancestry, by training, and in his personality. His father was a ship-owner, and the boy's ambition naturally was to become a ship captain. He spent his summers from the age of fifteen to twenty-one at sea and his winters in teaching and in studying. At twenty-one he entered the Maine Wesleyan Seminary, preparing for entrance to Bowdoin College. The Civil War broke out, and he entered the navy, serving until 1865, when he resigned with the rank of ensign. During his three years of naval duty he studied constantly, completing the Bowdoin College course. In 1871 this college gave him the honorary degree of master of arts. On Aug. 24, 1862, he was married to Maria Elizabeth Smith of Monmouth, Me. On his return from the war, he taught at Litchfield and Houlton Academies, and in 1871 was made professor of natural history in Maine State College. His first interest in natural history had begun in his study of sea forms as a boy. Later he became interested in geology and still later in

botany and zoölogy. In his new position he taught all branches of natural history but became more and more interested in insects, publishing papers on a variety of topics. He gradually concentrated on the study of certain comparatively unknown groups of *Microlepidoptera,* especially the *Pyralidae* and the *Tortricidae.* In 1886 he was made professor of zoölogy in the Massachusetts Agricultural College at Amherst, holding the position until his retirement in 1910. During this period he developed admirable postgraduate courses in entomology.

Although he was not a prolific writer, Fernald's work was careful and sound. His reputation as a taxonomist rests principally upon his studies of the *Tortricidae.* In this field he was well-known to European workers and was in constant correspondence with the leading English, French, and German entomologists. He made frequent trips to Europe, and his entomological learning was perhaps especially appreciated by Lord Walsingham who was in his time the world's leading authority on the *Microlepidoptera.* Fernald also gained a high reputation in economic entomology and held at one time the position of state entomologist of Massachusetts and was president of the American Association of Economic Entomologists in 1896. On the appearance of the gipsy moth in New England, he was at once consulted and, down to the time when the federal government entered the field, had virtual charge of scientific aspects of the fight which the state instituted against this pest and later against the brown-tail moth. Mrs. Fernald, who was also an entomologist, was the first person to recognize the gipsy moth in New England in the summer of 1889 while her husband was absent on one of his European trips. Fernald's greatest achievement, however, was that of a teacher of entomology. He was one of the first Americans to teach the subject systematically. He aroused great interest and enthusiasm among his students, and trained many men who are prominent in this work to-day. Through his influence one of the first buildings erected specially in the name of entomology on any college campus was built at Amherst in 1910. This building was named Fernald Hall.

[Excellent biographical accounts of Fernald are those by A. F. Burgess in the *Jour. of Economic Entomology,* Apr. 1921 (with portr.), and Annette F. Braun in *Entomological News,* May 1921. Some accounts of his career will also be found in an "Address at the Dedication of the Entomology and Zoology Building of the Massachusetts Agricultural College," by L. O. Howard (*Science,* Dec. 2, 1910). The fullest account and an excellent portrait will be found in *Entomology and Zoology at the Mass. Agric. Coll.* (1911), a pamphlet published by the college.]

L. O. H.

Fernald

**FERNALD, JAMES CHAMPLIN** (Aug. 18, 1838–Nov. 10, 1918), Baptist clergyman, author, editor, was born in Portland, Me., the son of Henry Baker and Mabel (Collins) Fernald. He graduated from Harvard College, where he received one of the Bowdoin prizes, in 1860, and from the Newton Theological Institution in 1863. On Apr. 27, 1869, he married Mary Beulah Griggs of Rutland, Vt., one of the early graduates of Vassar College. She died of consumption on June 7, 1870, in her twenty-second year. On June 18, 1873, he married Nettie Barker of McConnelsville, Ohio, who survived him. Until 1889 he remained in the active ministry, holding pastorates at Rutland, Vt., 1862–65; Waterville, Me., 1865–66; Granville, Ohio, 1869–72; McConnelsville, 1876–77; Clyde, 1877–79; Galion, 1879–80; Springfield, 1880–85; and Garretsville, 1885–89. During the Civil War he was in the service of the Massachusetts Soldiers' Aid Society before Fredericksburg, in the Washington hospitals, and at Gettysburg. He traveled in Europe for his health, 1866–67, and when health and voice again failed him became a clerk in the Treasury Department at Washington, 1873–75. He was an ardent Prohibitionist and through his writings and lectures for the cause made the acquaintance of Isaac K. Funk [*q.v.*], who was another. Funk took Fernald with him to New York to help edit the *Homiletic Review* and the *Voice,* which was an organ of the Prohibition movement. Fernald's use of economic as well as moral arguments for teetotalism was then somewhat novel, and his *Economics of Prohibition* (1890) was in its day an influential book. When Funk organized the editorial staff of the *Standard Dictionary* he placed Fernald in charge of synonyms, antonyms, and prepositions. The choice was unusually lucky, for although his scientific knowledge of English was meager Fernald did possess an extraordinary gift for comparing and contrasting words. His work for the *Standard* (1893–94) was revised and extended for the *New Standard* (1913), was used generously in various abridgments of the two large dictionaries, and as a separate publication, *English Synonyms and Antonyms* (1896, revised and enlarged, 1914), has enjoyed a large, and well-earned, popularity. His *Connectives of English Speech* (1904) has also been much used as a work of reference. He was the editor of several abridgments of the *Standard* dictionaries, but the merits of these books were due to his assistants rather than to himself; he lacked the executive capacity, regard for details, and patience indispensable to a lexicographer. He lived in Washington, D. C., as a

teacher, 1905–09. He died at his home in Upper Montclair, N. J.

[Letter to author from Dr. Frank H. Vizetelly, Feb. 28, 1928; *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19, which contains a list of Fernald's writings; *Quinquennial Cat. of Harvard Univ. 1636–1915* (1915); *Report of Class of 1860, Harvard Coll., 1860–80* (1880); *Ibid., 1895–1900* (1900); *Gen. Cat. of the Newton Theol. Institution* (1899); *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 11, 1918.] G. H. G.

**FERNOW, BERNHARD EDUARD** (Jan. 7, 1851–Feb. 6, 1923), forester, author, teacher, was born in Inowrazlaw, Posen, Germany. His father, who held a distinguished position in the service of the Prussian government, was a man of unusual culture both in literature and music and his home was a musical center for some of the most renowned artists of the time. The son received his education at the gymnasium at Bromberg, the University of Königsberg, and the Hanover-Münden Forest Academy. He served as a volunteer in the Franco-Prussian War in 1870. After the war he entered the Prussian forest service, and, before coming to America in 1876, had attained the grade of Forstkandidat. When young Fernow reached the United States, eager to practise his chosen profession, he found that forestry was almost unknown. There had been some legislative effort to encourage the planting of trees on the prairies and elsewhere, but the conception of forestry as applied to the protection and perpetuation of existing forests was new in America. A few far-sighted scientists and others had urged the necessity for a better handling of forest resources, but no steps had been taken to check the forest fires and the wasteful methods of exploitation of timber. Bernhard Fernow found a pioneer field of endeavor. In 1878 he was employed as manager of a large tract of land in Pennsylvania owned by the Cooper-Hewitt mining interests, a post which he held for seven years. He began at once to write articles about forestry. He soon attracted the attention of scientists and others who were interested in the subject, and was called into consultation in connection with various proposals for forest legislation. In 1882 he was instrumental in organizing the American Forestry Congress (later the American Forestry Association), which consistently has been one of the most influential national agencies for the promotion of forestry. He was secretary of that organization for twelve years.

In 1886 he was appointed chief of the Division of Forestry in the United States Department of Agriculture. He at once became the recognized leader of the forestry movement. Under his direction many important investigations were made regarding the American forests, the life characteristics of different important species of trees, the qualities of the wood produced, and the economic consequences of forest destruction. He promoted federal and state legislation for the protection of forests from fire and other adverse agencies. He vigorously attacked the neglect of the forests on the public domain and proposed specific legislative measures for their conservation. It was largely due to Fernow's efforts that legislation was finally enacted for the establishment of the present system of National Forests. Congress authorized the withdrawal of forest lands from the public domain in 1891, but six years more were required to secure the needed legislation making provision for the care of the federal forest reserves. The law as finally passed in 1897 carried the principles that Fernow had outlined in his early proposals.

In 1898 he retired from the government service, to organize at Cornell University the first collegiate school of forestry in the United States. The State of New York acquired a large tract of land in the Adirondack Mountains, as an instructional and demonstration forest for the new school. A conflict of opinion arose in a few years over the methods of handling the tract, and the controversy resulted in the withdrawal in 1903 of the State's support of the project in the Adirondacks and also of the School of Forestry. During the next four years Fernow engaged in a private consulting practise. He advised private timber landowners regarding their special problems; he conducted exploration in the West Indies and Mexico; he gave courses of lectures at the Yale School of Forestry in 1904; and in 1906 inaugurated the work of forestry at the Pennsylvania State College. In 1907 he was called to the University of Toronto to organize and administer a department of forestry. In this position he served with great success and distinction until his retirement from active university work in 1919. As emeritus professor he continued to live in Toronto, in close association with the school which he had founded, until his death in 1923.

Fernow was a vigorous writer and public speaker. His most important books were: *Economics of Forestry* (1902); *A Brief History of Forestry in Europe, the United States, and Other Countries* (1907); and *The Care of Trees, in Lawn, Street and Park* (1910). In addition he prepared or edited over fifty government and other bulletins and circulars and had to his credit over two hundred articles and addresses on subjects relating to forestry. He was responsible for the establishment in 1902 of the *Forestry Quarterly*, the organ of the Society of American

Foresters, and was the editor of that publication and of its successor, the *Journal of Forestry*, until 1922. Fernow was a thorough scholar in science and was widely read in literature and philosophy. He was also an accomplished musician. An enthusiast with deep convictions, and possessed of an argumentative disposition, he was frequently a center of professional controversy. He retained, however, the respect of those who differed with him. He was a great teacher, inspiring his students to a high standard of scholastic endeavor and to the best professional ideals. In 1879 he was married to Olivia Reynolds of Brooklyn, N. Y., who survived him. There were five children of this marriage, four sons and one daughter.

[*Jour. of Forestry*, Apr. 1923; Filibert Roth, "A Great Teacher of Forestry Retires," in *Am. Forestry*, 1910; the *Annual Reports* of the Division of Forestry, U. S. Dept. of Agric., 1887–98; numerous scattered references in the forestry periodicals from 1886 to 1923; obituary in the *Globe* (Toronto), Feb. 7, 1923.]

H. S. G.

**FERNOW, BERTHOLD** (Nov. 28, 1837–Mar. 3, 1908), historian, archivist, editor, was born in Inowrazlaw, Posen, Germany, the eldest of thirteen children. His father was Edward F. Fernow, a Prussian Landrat, and his mother Bertha von Jachmann, sister of Admiral Jachmann. Prepared by private tutors, he entered the gymnasium at Magdeburg, 1849, from which he transferred to Bromberg in 1856. Enamored of rural life, the young man devoted himself to the study of agriculture from 1858 to 1860. In the latter year he served as a lieutenant in the Reserve of the Prussian army. In 1861, on the advice of his father, he emigrated to the United States, bought a farm in Iowa, and became a naturalized citizen. He espoused the Union cause in the Civil War and in 1862 volunteered as a private in the 4th Missouri Cavalry. In 1863 he was promoted to second lieutenant of the 3rd United States Colored Infantry and served in South Carolina and Florida. He was detailed as topographical engineer in the coast division of Sherman's army in 1864, and mustered out Oct. 31, 1865. For the next ten years he was engaged in commerce in New York City and Berlin as an employee of the Hamburg American Steamship Company and of a Berlin bank. His heart was in America, however, and in 1874 he purchased a farm at Metuchen, N. J., where he cultivated strawberries on a large scale.

In 1875 he met John Bigelow [*q.v.*], secretary of State of New York, by whom he was appointed keeper of historical records, and began to devote himself to scholarly tasks. With enthusiasm and ability, from 1876 to 1883 he added Volumes XII, XIII, and XIV (published 1877–83) to *Documents Relating to the Colonial History of the State of New York*. In 1882 he accepted a position under the Regents of the University of the State of New York, which he held until 1889. Under these new auspices he compiled Volume XV ("New York in the Revolution," published 1887) of the *Documents*. He wrote *Albany and Its Place in the History of the United States* (1886), and prepared articles on "New Netherland" and the "Middle Colonies" for Justin Winsor's *Narrative and Critical History of America* (vol. IV, 1885, and vol. V, 1887). After 1889 he was employed in private compilations and research. In 1890 *The Ohio Valley in Colonial Days* was published at Albany as No. 17 of Munsell's historical series. For the Colonial Dames of New York Fernow prepared the *Calendar of Wills on File and Recorded in the Offices of the Clerk of the Court of Appeals, of the County Clerk at Albany and of the Secretary of State 1628–1836* (1896). *New Amsterdam Family Names and their Origin* appeared in 1898; and *Albany and New York Families*, translated from Dutch Bibles, in 1900. From 1898 to 1902 he was employed by the New Jersey Historical Society to compile a "Calendar of Records in the Office of the Secretary of State 1664–1703," and to make abstracts of wills (1670–1730)—in Volumes XXI and XXIII of the *New Jersey Archives* (1899, 1903). He edited *The Records of New Amsterdam from 1673 to 1674 anno Domini* (7 vols., 1897), published under the authority of the City of New York, and for the Colonial Dames, *The Minutes of the Orphanmasters of New Amsterdam, 1655 to 1663* (2 vols., 1902–07). In 1902 a "Calendar of Council Minutes 1668–1783," originally intended as part of the series of *Documents Relative to . . . Colonial History*, was published by the New York State Library as *Bulletin: History 6*.

Fernow was a man of versatile mind, deep sentiment, and striking personality. Large physically, well-groomed, sociable, an entertaining conversationalist, and a delightful comrade, he was a frequent guest in the best homes of Albany. His mind was orderly and encyclopedic, and his translations and compilations, although not without errors, were done creditably. The last two years of his life were spent in the preparation of "The World's Largest Libraries," which was finished shortly before his death in the National Home for Disabled Volunteer Soldiers at Togus, Me. He was unmarried.

[An account of Fernow's life prepared by Capt. E. B. Van Winkle, Lieut. A. T. Gurlitz, and Gen. J. G. Wilson as a memorial, on Sept. 30, 1908, was printed as *Circu-*

*lar No. 29, Ser. of 1908*, at New York City by the Military Order of the Loyal Legion. See also *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; the N. Y. Comptroller's Report, *Assembly Docs.* 1877–85, and *Education Dept. Bull. No. 462* (1910); some unprinted magazine articles and an autobiographical sketch are in the State Lib., Albany, N. Y.]

A. C. F.

**FERREL, WILLIAM** (Jan. 29, 1817–Sept. 18, 1891), meteorologist, was born in Fulton County, Pa. His Scotch-Irish grandfather, William Ferrel, came to America about 1785, and married an English woman by the name of Veach. Their son Benjamin married a Miss Miller, of German origin, and William Ferrel, born in 1817, was the first of their family of six boys and two girls. Although the home was only a log cabin with a mud and stick chimney, William got a little schooling in reading, writing, and arithmetic. In 1829 the family moved to a farm in Berkeley County, Va. (now W. Va.). Here William was kept busy in the fields, but went to school two winters in the usual log cabin of the times with greased paper windows. About this time he happened to see a copy of Park's *Arithmetic*, with a brief discussion of mensuration at the back; the diagrams fascinated him, but he had no money to buy the book. He shortly got work in a neighbor's harvest field, however, and thus earned fifty cents, his very first money. As soon as possible, he went to a town some distance away eager to spend his all for the coveted book. Then came a great shock, the price of the book was sixty-two and a half cents, and quickly a greater joy, for the storekeeper reduced the price to the boy's limit. The book was mastered in short order. In 1834 he obtained a copy of Gummere's *Surveying* that contained a number of miscellaneous problems requiring a knowledge of geometry for their solution. He knew no geometry, but solved them nevertheless, using barn doors for blackboards and pitchforks for chalk and compass. These barn-door diagrams he often went to see in later life. In the spring of 1839 he entered a preparatory school connected with Marshall College, Pa. Here he first saw an algebra. The next winter he taught school, and then returned to Marshall College, where by the fall of 1841 he had completed all the mathematics offered, and the extra work of a volunteer class besides. After teaching for two years, he entered Bethany College from which he graduated on July 4, 1844.

In the fall of this year he went to Liberty, Mo., where he taught about eighteen months, until ill health obliged him to stop. He next taught for seven years in Todd County, Ky. In the spring of 1854 he opened a school in Nashville, Tenn. In 1856 he published his famous "Essay on the Winds and the Currents of the Ocean" in the



*Nashville Journal of Medicine and Surgery.* This essay treats, in a non-mathematical manner, of the effect of the rotation of the earth on the courses of winds and currents. It immediately attracted great attention in France, and later equal attention in other countries. In the spring of 1857 he went to Cambridge, Mass., to work on the *American Ephemeris and Nautical Almanac.* He returned in the fall to Nashville, taking work with him, but the following spring gave over his school to a partner and went back to Cambridge. In 1867 he entered the Coast and Geodetic Survey, and there published many important papers, and also devised a tide-predicting machine. From 1882 to October 1886 he had a high position in the Signal Service and published many additional papers on meteorology. In addition to his publications in book form, "Tidal Researches" (*United States Coast and Geodetic Survey Report*, 1874, Appendix), *Meteorological Researches* (1877–82), *Recent Advances in Meteorology* (1886), and *A Popular Treatise on the Winds* (1889), the bibliography of his writings includes about a hundred titles.

After resigning from public service he spent the remaining six years of his life with certain of his brothers and sisters in Kansas, in pleasant ease and comfort until his final dropsical illness. His own problems and a few intellectual friends (he was too diffident to have many) absorbed all his time. Humor, frivolity, and even romance —he never married—were foreign to his nature. In early life he was a Campbellite, but in later years a Unitarian. He was a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and of the National Academy of Sciences, and an honorary member of the Royal Meteorological Society and of others of like character.

[Cleveland Abbe, "Memoir of William Ferrel," in *Nat. Acad. Sci., Biog. Memoirs*, vol. III (1895), with bibliography; autobiographical sketch dated Jan. 1888 printed with the above memoir; Wm. M. Davis, "William Ferrel," in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.*, vol. XXVIII (1893).]

W. J. H.

**FERRERO, EDWARD** (Jan. 18, 1831–Dec. 11, 1899), Union soldier, was born at Granada, in Spain, of Italian parents, who removed to New York a year or two after his birth. The father established a dancing-school which became both successful and fashionable, and the son continued it with equal success, also teaching dancing at West Point. In 1859 he published *The Art of Dancing, Historically Illustrated.* Meanwhile he had entered the militia and by 1861 had worked up to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He was mustered into the volunteer service as colonel of the 51st New York Infantry, Oct. 14, 1861,

and commanded his regiment in the North Carolina expedition of the following winter, fighting at Roanoke Island and New Berne. At the second battle of Bull Run, at Chantilly, South Mountain, Antietam, and Fredericksburg, he commanded a brigade. His appointment as brigadier-general of volunteers, which was delivered to him on the battlefield at Antietam, expired Mar. 4, 1863, when the Senate adjourned without confirming his nomination, but he was reappointed, May 6, 1863. The IX Corps, to which his brigade belonged, joined Grant's army in June, and took part in the close of the Vicksburg campaign. In the defense of Knoxville, late in 1863, Ferrero commanded a division. When the IX Corps returned to the Army of the Potomac, in the spring of 1864, he was transferred to the command of a newly organized colored division, which saw its first serious fighting at the Petersburg crater. Ferrero's division was originally selected by Burnside to lead the assault, as soon as the mine should be exploded, but both Meade and Grant disapproved the choice, believing that such a task should not be given to new and untried troops. In the event, however, the leading division did not advance out of the crater, and it was Ferrero's division, pushing through the disorganized troops in front, that actually delivered the assault on the heights beyond, and was repulsed with heavy loss. The responsibility for the failure was fixed in part upon Ferrero, who exercised little control over his troops and left them to fight practically uncommanded. A similar criticism had been made of his conduct at the siege of Knoxville, where it was said that his division's gallant defense against the Confederate assault of Nov. 28–29, 1863, was made without any orders from him. Apparently a division was a larger body of troops than he was competent to command in action. During the latter part of the war he was stationed in the defenses of Bermuda Hundred. He was mustered out, Aug. 24, 1865. Returning to New York, he leased and managed several large ballrooms in succession, including, for seventeen years, that in Tammany Hall. He was a member of the Tammany Society, though he took no part in politics. He gave up his last holding, the Lenox Lyceum, a few months before his death.

[F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. of the U. S. Army* (1903), I, 417; obituary in the *N. Y. Tribune*, Dec. 14, 1899; *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vols. IX, XIX (pt. 1), XXI, XXXI (pt. 1), XL (pts. 1, 2, 3).] T. M. S.

**FERRIS, GEORGE WASHINGTON GALE** (Feb. 14, 1859–Nov. 22, 1896), civil engineer, inventor of the Ferris Wheel, was the son of George Washington Gale Ferris and Martha (Hyde) Ferris, and was born at Galesburg, Ill., but moved with his parents to Carson City, Nev., in 1864. After graduation from the military academy at Oakland, Cal., he entered the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute from which he received his engineering degree in 1881. After a few months in the railroad contracting office of Gen. J. H. Ledlie in New York City, he helped to locate seventy-eight miles of the proposed Baltimore, Cincinnati & Western Railroad in West Virginia, and a narrow-gauge road three and a half miles long in Putnam County, N. Y. As engineer, and later general manager for the Queen City (W. Va.) Coal Mining Company (1882) he designed and built a coal trestle in the Kanawha River and located and built three 1,800-foot tunnels. He next became interested in bridge-building, was employed successively by several companies, and achieved something of a reputation for concrete work under heavy pressure in pneumatic caissons.

In 1885 he took charge, for the Kentucky and Indiana Bridge Company of Louisville, of the testing and inspection of steel and iron bought at Pittsburgh. Foreseeing an increase in the use of structural steel, at that time just being introduced in bridge work, he familiarized himself with the processes involved in its manufacture and from the duties and responsibilities of his inspecting position developed a new profession. Eventually he organized the firm of G. W. G. Ferris & Company at Pittsburgh, with a corps of engineers and assistants to conduct mill and shop-work inspection and testing throughout the country. He was connected with this company until within about a week of his death. After the organization was functioning well, however, he turned his personal attention toward the promotion and financing of large engineering projects, and was concerned in the construction of bridges across the Ohio River at Wheeling, Cincinnati, and Pittsburgh.

When Daniel H. Burnham [*q.v.*], chief of construction for the World's Columbian Exposition, challenged the civil engineers of the country to produce something to rival the Eiffel Tower of the Paris Exposition, Ferris's imagination was fired, and in an effort to achieve something entirely new he designed the Ferris Wheel. He undertook its construction against the advice of friends and business associates. In the midst of the severe financial depression which the country was experiencing in 1892, the financing of the proposition was rather a difficult matter; at first the scheme was looked upon as fantastic; not for some months was he granted a concession, and not until after the Fair had opened was the wheel

completed. Rising 250 feet above the Midway, carrying thirty-six cars, each with a capacity of some forty passengers, revolving under perfect control, and stable against the strongest winds from Lake Michigan, it excited general attention. The daring and accuracy involved in its design and the precision of machine work involved in its construction won the admiration of engineers. The most spectacular feature of the Exposition, it proved also a profitable investment. Ferris died less than four years later. He was survived by his wife, Margaret Beatty of Canton, Ohio.

[H. B. Nason, *Biog. Record Officers and Grads. Rensselaer Polytechnic Inst.* (1887); Carl Snyder, "Engineer Ferris and his Wheel," *Rev. of Revs.* (N. Y.), Sept. 1893; Wm. H. Searles, "The Ferris Wheel," *Jour. Asso. Engineering Socs.*, Dec. 1893; F. G. Coggin, "The Ferris and Other Big Wheels," *Cassier's Mag.*, July 1894; *Engineering Record*, Nov. 28, 1896; *Pittsburgh Post*, Nov. 23, 1896.]

E. Y.

**FERRIS, ISAAC** (Oct. 9, 1798–June 16, 1873), Reformed Dutch clergyman, university president, was born in New York, the son of John and Sarah (Watkins) Ferris, and was of English descent. His father, a poor man with a large family of children, could do little to educate him, but Isaac traded a pair of skates for a Latin grammar, attended the instruction of a blind classical master named Neilson, and graduated in 1816 at the head of his class in Columbia College. For a short period during the War of 1812 he appears to have been a soldier under his father, who was then a captain and quartermaster in the army. He taught Latin for a year or two at Albany and then began the study of divinity under the Rev. John Mitchell Mason [*q.v.*]. When Mason on account of ill health was compelled to dismiss his pupil, Ferris resorted to the New Brunswick Theological Seminary, where he graduated in 1820. Licensed by the Classis of New Brunswick, he labored as a missionary for five months in the Mohawk Valley, and on Dec. 30, 1820, married Catharine Burchan, who died Sept. 9, 1837. His second wife was Sarah J. Crygier, who died July 2, 1848; his third wife, whom he married Oct. 1, 1850, was Letitia Storm. Among them they bore him twelve children. For thirty-three years Ferris was an active and successful minister, serving the Reformed Church at New Brunswick, N. J., 1821–24, the Second Church at Albany, N. Y., 1824–36, and the Market Street Church in New York, 1836–53. At Albany his unflinching devotion to the sick and dying of all creeds during the cholera epidemic of 1832 was remembered with gratitude forty years after the event. In New York he founded Rutgers Female Seminary. In 1840 he became a member of the American Bible Society and for the last twenty-six years of his life was chairman of its committee on distribution. In 1852 he helped organize the New York Y. M. C. A. On his advice the Reformed Dutch Church in 1858 appointed its own board of foreign missions; as its first corresponding secretary he did much to further its work in India, China, and Japan. Ferris Seminary in Yokohama was named in his honor. His most responsible post was the chancellorship of the University of the City of New York, to which he was elected in 1852. The University at that time was heavily involved in debt, had been without a chancellor for two years, and was moving rapidly toward chaos. Ferris was a good executive, and his majestic presence, confident address, and wholesome courage inspired confidence. By June 14, 1854, he had paid off a debt of $70,250. Acting as secretary of the financial committee of the University Council, he personally audited the accounts and saved the University not a little money. During his administration $215,000 was added to the funds, and the standards of scholarship were raised. While chancellor he was also professor of moral philosophy and of the evidences of revealed religion. In 1870 he retired as chancellor emeritus, built himself a house at Roselle, N. J., and, though still active in behalf of missions and charities, lived his few remaining years in quietness.

[J. L. Chamberlain, ed., *N. Y. Univ.* (1901); C. E. Crowell, *Partial Geneal. of the Ferris Family* (privately printed, 1899); *Cat. of the Officers and Grads. of Columbia Univ.* (16th ed., 1916); J. H. Raven, ed., *Biog. Record Theol. Sem. New Brunswick 1784–1911* (1912); E. T. Corwin, ed., *Manual of the Reformed Ch. in America* (4th ed., 1902), containing list of published sermons, papers, and addresses.]

G. H. G.

**FERRIS, JEAN LÉON GÉRÔME** (Aug. 8, 1863–Mar. 18, 1930), historical painter, born in Philadelphia, derived his name, as well as, in some respects, his manner as an artist, from Jean Léon Gérôme, the celebrated painter of France. His exquisite and delicate art savored of the Gallic master, but with the difference that it was devoted to native American subjects. His mother, Elizabeth Anastasia (Moran) Ferris, was a sister of the Philadelphia artists Edward, Peter, and Thomas Moran [*qq.v.*] His father, Stephen James Ferris, was a painter and etcher of note in old Philadelphia, when Christian Schussele [*q.v.*] was the teacher of painting at the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts. There he acquired the gift of drawing, of which his son wisely said: "What success I may have had in depicting the human face and expression is owing to his instruction. He knew more about the fundamental principles of their production than any artist I have ever met" (information from

Mrs. Ferris). Gérôme Ferris began his studies in Philadelphia under his father and Schussele. The former was a devotee of Gérôme and Fortuny, and in 1881 he took his son to Spain to pursue the footsteps of the latter artist. The younger Ferris thus began his career in an atmosphere of the finest of the fine arts, where his tradition and inspiration were coupled with vigorous drawing and educated fidelity to fact. In Granada, where his father was painting a portrait of the Marquesa de Heredia, Ferris sold to that lady the first of his pictures. Beginning thus in the land and under the shadow of Fortuny it was natural, as a next step, for him to enter the Académie Julian in Paris in 1884 to study under Bouguereau, and while there to receive from the great artist for whom he was named the "most valuable personal criticism," and the direction to confine his attention to historical painting.

He studied for a time in London and in Madrid, and traveled through France, Spain, and Morocco painting small scenes of the life he saw, making these early efforts in genre in order to acquire from studies of the living model technique later to be used in his interpretation of history. In 1888 he went to England and Belgium to furnish his mind for the delightful and engrossing task he had adopted. He made studies of the seventeenth century, its architecture, customs, dress—always with the idea of a series of paintings of the history of his own country. He made special study of early American vehicles and ordnance, and turned over to the New York Historical Society and the National Museum much of the data he accumulated; models constructed on the basis of his studies are now in Congress Hall Museum, Philadelphia. He had considerable skill in handicraft; and built in miniature the boats, the caravels, and the battleships he painted. The accurate knowledge thus gained imparted a sense of reality to his canvases. The secret of his art was the application of the careful technique caught from France to the things of home.

About 1900 he began the series of some seventy historical paintings which constituted his greatest work. They carry the spectator from the adventures by sea of the early settlement of America, through all the stages of the unfolding drama of the nation's development down to Abraham Lincoln. Two later scenes were added, "A Word to the Kaiser" in 1902, and a marine, "Sunk Without Trace," in 1917. It was the artist's purpose to give consecutively the story of the American people. To effect this object he arranged with the City of Philadelphia that all his work would be shown, appropriately, in that

Ferris

room in Independence Hall where Washington was inaugurated in 1793. The collection now (1930) hangs in a special gallery in Congress Hall as a loan to the city and under agreements that forbid its being scattered.

Ferris was whimsical, genial, and witty. His humor showed itself in his droll smile and in such deft extravaganzas as his volume of silhouettes of the great ladies and gentlemen of the Revolution, many known, not a few invented, and only one genuine. The antique paper used in this book, the insignia and postmarks, all from the hand of the artist, would deceive a connoisseur, if the title of the volume were not given as "Sundri Impostures Innocentes: Pictor J. L. G. Ferris, Philadelphia, MCMXXVIII." He died in Philadelphia, where he had lived most of his fruitful and happy life. On May 17, 1894, he had married Annette S. Ryder of Brewster, N. Y. They had one daughter who died before her father.

[Warren W. Brown, "J. L. G. Ferris, America's Painter-Historian," in *Print Connoisseur*, Apr. 1924; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; *Who's Who in Art*, 1912; *Art News*, Apr. 12, 1930; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Mar. 19, 1930; personal information.]

H. S. M.

**FERRIS, WOODBRIDGE NATHAN** (Jan. 6, 1853–Mar. 23, 1928), educator, governor, United States senator, son of John Ferris, Jr., and Estelle (Reed) Ferris, was born near Spencer, Tioga County, N. Y. He was educated at the Spencer Union Academy, the Candor Union Academy, the Oswego Academy, and the Oswego Normal and Training School. In 1873 he entered the University of Michigan as a medical student but left after six months of study to become principal of the Free Academy at Spencer, N. Y. In 1875 he organized the Freeport Business College and Academy at Freeport, Ill. The next year he became a member of the faculty of Rock River University at Dixon, Ill. From 1877 to 1879 he was principal of the Dixon Business College and Academy, which he founded, and from 1879 to 1884, superintendent of schools of Pittsfield, Ill. In 1884 he founded the Ferris Institute at Big Rapids, Mich. From a small beginning this institution developed under Ferris's presidency until it had a total yearly enrolment of more than two thousand students. About twenty thousand students were graduated prior to the founder's death.

Ferris's political career began in 1892 when the Democrats of the 11th Michigan District nominated him for representative in Congress. He was defeated, as he was in his race for governor in 1904. He was elected governor in 1912 and was reëlected in 1914. A fourth nomination

for governor in 1920 resulted in defeat. Although the Republicans controled both branches of the legislature during his administrations, Ferris got along harmoniously with them. He showed his political courage during the strike in the Upper Peninsula copper mines in 1913 when he mobilized the entire National Guard for the protection of life and property. The affectionate popular appellation of "Good Gray Governor" attests to his success. In the campaign of 1922, he was nominated for the United States Senate and was elected, the first Democratic senator from Michigan since Charles E. Stuart in 1863. In 1924 he was the choice of the Michigan Democrats for the nomination for president and received the vote of the state delegation on the first ballot. An ardent Prohibitionist, he publicly opposed the presidential nomination of Gov. Alfred E. Smith of New York in 1928 (*New York Times,* Mar. 8, 1928). He died in Washington, D. C., after a short illness. He was married in 1874 to Helen F. Gillespie of Fulton, N. Y., and three sons were born to them. After the death of his wife in 1917 he wrote a memoir of her, "Mrs. Nellie G. Ferris," published in the *Michigan History Magazine* (January 1919). In 1921 he was married a second time, to May Ethel McLoud of Indianapolis, Md.

[*Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Who's Who in America,* 1926–27; *Mich. Biogs.* (1924), I, 288–89; *Mich. Manual* (1913), p. 728; articles on Ferris by J. G. Hayden and John Fitzgibbon in the *Detroit News,* Mar. 23, 1928; memorial addresses in the Senate, May 6, 1928, published separately, *Sen. Doc. No. 100,* 70 Cong., 1 Sess. (1929) and in *Cong. Record,* 70 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 8241–48, which also includes a completed but undelivered address by Ferris on education; a memorial folder, especially valuable for photographs, issued by the Ferris Inst. (n. d.); *The Crimson and Gold,* 1928, pub. by the students of the Ferris Inst.] E. S. B—n.

**FERRY, ELISHA PEYRE** (Aug. 9, 1825–Oct. 14, 1895), lawyer, governor of Washington, was the son of Pierre Peyre Ferry, one of Napoleon's colonels of cavalry, who emigrated from France in 1814, settled first near Sandusky, Ohio, and then removed to a village which later became Monroe, in the southeastern corner of Michigan. The veteran's love for the name Peyre was transmitted to his sons and by them, in turn, to all their own children. After finishing in the public schools of his birthplace, Monroe, Mich., Elisha began the study of law, and in 1845 was admitted to the bar. The next year (1846) he moved to Waukegan and began his life-work. In addition to establishing the foundations of an unusual public career in that Illinois town, he began also a beautiful family life, on Feb. 4, 1849, by becoming the husband of Sarah B. Kellogg, daughter of Dr. David Kellogg of Waukegan. Ferry was a successful lawyer from the beginning of his practise and public office came to him early. He became Waukegan's first mayor, was elected a presidential elector in the campaigns of 1852 and 1856, was a member of the Illinois constitutional convention in 1862, and for two years thereafter served as a bank commissioner of Illinois. During the Civil War he also served as assistant adjutant-general, with the rank of colonel, on the staff of Gov. Yates. In this capacity he aided in forwarding many Illinois regiments to the field and in the course of that duty made a friend of Gen. Grant, who, on becoming president in 1869, appointed him surveyor-general of Washington Territory and promoted him to the governorship in 1872. Soon after he assumed that office it was announced that Emperor William I of Germany, as arbitrator, had decided the San Juan case in favor of the United States, and Gov. Ferry promptly transferred the large archipelago to Whatcom County for temporary government. He was reappointed in 1876. At the end of his second term in 1880 he moved to Seattle and resumed his work as a lawyer and a banker with the firm of McNaught, Ferry, McNaught & Mitchell and with the Puget Sound National Bank. When Washington was admitted to statehood, he was elected its first governor. He administered satisfactorily the problems growing out of the transition from territorial to state government. On Feb. 12, 1899, in the fourth year after his death, the legislature named Ferry County in his honor.

[Brief biographies may be found in C. B. Bagley, *Hist. of Seattle* (1916), III, 534–35; H. H. Bancroft, "Washington, Idaho and Montana," *Hist. of the Pacific States,* vol. XXVI, 1890, pp. 279, 282, 314; Georgiana M. Blankenship, *Early Hist. of Thurston County, Wash.* (1914), pp. 65–66; Elwood Evans and others, *Hist. of the Pacific Northwest—Ore. and Wash.* (1889), II, 324; H. K. Hines, *An Illus. Hist. of the State of Wash.* (1893), pp. 644–45; E. S. Meany, *Govs. of Wash.* (1915), pp. 47–49; C. A. Snowden, *Hist. of Wash.: the Rise and Progress of an Am. State* (1909), vol. IV, *passim*; *Seattle Post Intelligencer,* Oct. 14 and 15, 1895.] E. S. M.

**FERRY, ORRIS SANFORD** (Aug. 15, 1823–Nov. 21, 1875), representative, and senator, was born in Bethel, Conn., the son of Starr and Esther (Blackman) Ferry. A career in the business of his father, a substantial hat-manufacturer, had been contemplated for him, but after he had served a brief apprenticeship, it became apparent that his tastes lay elsewhere. With his father's permission, he withdrew from the business to prepare for college. A graduate of Yale College in the class of 1844, he achieved especial distinction in literary and forensic activities. In the pages of the *Yale Literary Magazine,* which he

served as an editor, Ferry was represented by such varied contributions as book reviews, essays on political trends, and a novel of life in colonial New England.

His natural inclinations drew him to the law. His professional training was obtained in the offices of Thomas W. Osborne of Fairfield and of Thomas B. Butler of Norwalk. In 1846 he was admitted to the bar and took up his practise in Norwalk. In the following year he was married to Charlotte Bissell, daughter of Gov. Clarke Bissell. He served his local community as judge of probate (1849–56) and as state's attorney for Fairfield County (1857–59). Meanwhile, he had entered upon his political career. In 1855 and 1856 he was a member of the Connecticut Senate. Although at the time a relatively young man, he was made chairman of the committee on the judiciary. In 1858, after having failed of election to Congress two years previously, he was sent to the House of Representatives, where he served on the committee on Revolutionary claims and on the famous Committee of Thirty-three on "the disturbed condition of the country." In 1860 he lost his seat to a Democrat. Upon the declaration of war, he was made colonel of the 5th Connecticut Volunteers. During the Shenandoah campaign in the spring of 1862 he was promoted brigadier-general. Later he saw service with the Army of the Potomac, in North and South Carolina, and finally with the X Army Corps on the James River. He resigned his commission on June 15, 1865.

His election to the Senate in 1866 was probably the result of a deadlock between the two leading candidates for the nomination, although his enemies were ready to ascribe the victory to chicanery. Hitherto he had been regarded as a radical on Reconstruction, so much so indeed that one hostile paper remarked editorially, "Ferry is as radical a man as can be found in Connecticut" (*New Haven Register,* May 11, 1866). Once in the Senate, however, he pursued a fairly moderate course. Despite the profound abhorrence with which, as a New Englander, he regarded the slave-holding oligarchy, he favored a general policy of conciliation; yet he voted for the conviction of President Johnson and was one of those who filed opinions on the case. When he sought reëlection in 1872, his future was precarious. Both by his manner of obtaining election and by his conduct in the Senate he had alienated the regular Republicans. Fortunately for him, a coalition of Democrats and Liberal Republicans came to his aid. His reëlection was hailed by the Liberal Republicans as a presage of success, but he made haste to dissociate himself from Greeley's candidacy, referring to it as "mere mid-summer madness" (*New York Tribune,* May 25, 1872). During his last term in the Senate he was handicapped by a progressive spinal disease. He died on Nov. 21, 1875, still in the prime of life. Save for a period of youthful skepticism he had been a devout Christian throughout his life. A leading member of the First Congregational Church of Norwalk, once he prepared and delivered a series of lectures on the validity of the Christian revelation.

[The various histories of the Class of 1844, Yale College, contain useful biographical data, as do the *Memorial Addresses on . . . Orris S. Ferry* (1876) published by order of Congress. In the *Diary of Gideon Welles* (1911), II, 505–06, 509, III, 523, and *The Speeches, Correspondence and Political Papers of Carl Schurz* (1913), II, 374, 377, III, 1, V, 35, will be found brief but suggestive comments. See also *Obit. Record Grads. Yale Coll.*, 1876; J. A. Hamilton in *Congreg. Quart.*, Apr. 1877; *Biog. Encyc. of R. I. and Conn.* (1881); W. F. Moore, *Representative Men of Conn.* (1894); *Hartford Courant,* Nov. 22, 1875; the *Congregationalist,* Dec. 9, 1875; files of *New Haven Register* and *Hartford Courant,* especially for the campaigns of 1866 and 1872.] D. E. O.

**FERRY, THOMAS WHITE** (June 1, 1827–Oct. 14, 1896), senator from Michigan, was born on Mackinac Island, the son of William Montague Ferry and Amanda White. His father had been brought up on a farm in New England, but later in life had studied in Union College, and in 1822 was ordained in New York to the Presbyterian ministry. In the same year he established a mission on Mackinac Island; the next year he opened a school for Indian children. Thanks largely to the assistance of his wife, his labors began to bear fruit (Williams, *post*). Mrs. Ferry was the eldest daughter of Thomas White, of Ashfield, Mass. She had been well educated and was deeply religious. Her second child, Thomas White, was born in the Mission House, which since 1845 has served as a summer hotel (Wood, *post,* I, 414). In 1834 the Ferry family removed from the island to a tract of wild land near the mouth of the Grand River, where the father founded the town of Grand Haven, and built up a flourishing lumber business (obituary in the *Grand Haven Union,* Feb. 6, 1868). Thomas, after having graduated from the village school, was variously employed until he became a clerk in Elgin, Ill. Two years later he returned and became his father's partner in the lumber business. At the age of twenty-one he was elected member of the board of supervisors of Grand Haven, and in 1850 he entered the state legislature, serving until 1852. From 1857 to 1858 he was a state senator, in 1860 he was a delegate to the Republican National Convention at Chicago, from 1865 to 1867 and from 1869 to 1871, a member of Con-

gress. In the campaign of 1871 he succeeded in obtaining a seat in the Senate at Washington.

He was an expert in finance, and after the financial crisis of 1873, was the first to submit a plan for the remedy of existing evils. On Dec. 2 and 4, 1873, he presented propositions to remove the monopoly feature of the national banking system, to stop the contraction of too much paper currency, and to issue a low-interest convertible bond. His speeches on finance were characterized by concise statements, sound logic, and a lack of oratorical display. On Dec. 21, 1874, he introduced a resolution for revising and reclassifying the rules of the Senate, and two years later his revision was adopted unanimously and without amendment.

On Mar. 9, 1875, he was elected president *pro tempore* of the Senate, and in this capacity he acted at different times thereafter. During the famous Hayes-Tilden electoral count of 1877 he presided over the sixteen joint meetings of Congress which resulted in a decision in favor of Hayes. It was a time of intense excitement, and apparently only the vigor and ability of Ferry, who had no precedent to guide him, prevented a national disaster. His integrity and industry were such that under Hayes he was reëlected president *pro tempore* of the Senate without nomination of an opposing candidate. In 1883 he was defeated for a third term as senator by Thomas W. Palmer of Detroit. The rest of his life was shadowed by this disappointment and by the failure of the lumber business which he and his brother, E. P. Ferry, had organized. He died in Grand Haven, from cerebral apoplexy during the night of Oct. 13–14, 1896. He was never married.

[Sources include an article by Ferry's elder brother, W. M. Ferry, "Ottawa's Old Settlers," in *Mich. Pion. and Hist. Colls.*, XXX (1906), 572–82; M. C. Williams, "The Old Mission Church of Mackinac Island," *Ibid.*, XXVIII (1900), 187–96; L. M. Miller, "Reminiscences of the Mich. Legislature of 1871," *Ibid.*, XXXII (1903), 431–41; E. O. Wood, *Historic Mackinac* (1918); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); obituaries in *Grand Haven Daily News*, Oct. 14, 1896, *Washington Post* and *Detroit Free Press*, Oct. 15, 1896. In the Pub. Lib. at Grand Haven there is a large scrap-book, containing excerpts from newspapers relative to the early history of Grand Haven and the family of Ferry.] A. H.

**FERSEN, HANS AXEL, Count Von** (Sept. 4, 1755–June 20, 1810), Swedish soldier, statesman, was born at Stockholm of a family distinguished by long public service. He was the son of Field-Marshal Fredrik Axel and Countess Hedvig Catharina von Fersen, born Countess De la Gardie. At the age of fifteen he was sent abroad to study and spent four years in military schools at Brunswick, Turin, and Strasbourg. After five months in Paris, he then returned to Sweden. He was twenty-three when he again visited Paris. Rich, well-favored, and ambitious, "le beau Fersen," as he was called, soon became a favorite of Queen Marie Antoinette—so much a favorite that he was regarded with some jealousy by other courtiers. Like most young French liberals of the day he was inspired by a passion for liberty and sought a commission in the French expeditionary force which was to go to the aid of the American colonies in their struggle for independence. Through the influence of the Queen, and of Vergennes and Breteuil, old friends of his father, he was made colonel of a French regiment and appointed aide-de-camp to the Count of Rochambeau. In this capacity he rendered distinguished service in America.

Fersen embarked with the expeditionary force at Brest in May 1780 and arrived at Newport, R. I., in the following August. In October, already high in the confidence of his chief, he was sent to meet Gen. Washington at Hartford, whither the Count of Rochambeau was to repair for their first consultation. Thereafter he was a frequent bearer of dispatches between the two commanders. He served gallantly at Yorktown; and after the surrender of Cornwallis, he was sent secretly to hasten the embarkation of the French siege artillery, in order to elude two English frigates which might have barred their way to Baltimore. This mission he successfully accomplished. He returned to France with the French troops in 1783. His letters to his father, frequently printed in French and in English translation, contain shrewd observations on American characteristics, interesting comments on episodes of the Revolution, notably Arnold's treason, and illuminating accounts of the military operations which culminated in the victory at Yorktown.

His later life has no points of contact with America. In Europe, however, he had a distinguished career. He is best remembered for his daring attempt to rescue the royal French family in 1791. It was he who arranged the ill-fated flight to Varennes, himself driving their coach through the streets of Paris. He rendered notable service to his own sovereign King Gustavus III, as statesman and diplomat, suffered a temporary eclipse under the regency, but was made *Riksmarskalk* (imperial marshal) in 1801. He met an undeserved death in 1810 at the hands of a mob, who believed him and his sister implicated in the alleged poisoning of the newly elected King, Prince Christian Augustus.

[R. M. De Klinckowström, *Le Comte de Fersen et La Cour de France* (2 vols., 1877–78); F. F. Flach, *Grefve Hans Axel von Fersen* (1896); L. L. T. Gosse-

lin, *Le Drame de Varennes juin 1791* (1908); O. G. von Heidenstam, *Marie-Antoinette, Fersen et Barnave; leur Correspondance* (1913). F. V. Wrangel, *Lettres d' Axel de Fersen à son Père pendant la Guerre de l'Indépendance d'Amérique* (1929), is the most complete collection of Fersen's American letters. Some of these are translated in Katharine P. Wormeley's *Diary and Correspondence of Count Axel Fersen* (1902). They have also been twice printed in translation in *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, May, June, July 1879 and Jan., Feb. 1891.]

**FESSENDEN, FRANCIS** (Mar. 18, 1839–Jan. 2, 1906), lawyer, soldier, was the third son of William Pitt and Ellen (Deering) Fessenden of Portland, Me. He attended Portland Academy and Westbrook Seminary, graduated from Bowdoin College in 1858, and studied law at Harvard and in his grandfather's office. He went to New York in 1860 to complete his studies and was traveling in Minnesota when the Civil War began. He at once offered his services and was commissioned captain in the regular army by Secretary Cameron. He was assigned to the 19th Infantry and spent the first part of the war in recruiting, guarding prisoners, and similar routine duties. In March 1862 he was ordered to rejoin his regiment then under General Buell's command in Tennessee. He arrived in time to take part in the battle of Shiloh and was badly wounded in the arm. While recovering he was placed in non-combatant service but in September 1862 was appointed colonel of the 25th Maine Infantry and assigned to the defense of Washington. From March until July 1863, he was stationed at Centerville, Va., where his younger brother, Samuel, had fallen the year before.

When the 25th Maine was mustered out he was placed in command of the 30th Maine Infantry, a carefully selected unit composed almost entirely of veteran soldiers. In January 1864 the regiment was ordered to the Gulf and took part in the exhausting and bloody Red River campaign. On Apr. 23, Colonel Fessenden led a brilliant and successful assault on Monett's Bluff which was reported to have saved the retreating army from disaster. He was wounded a second time and lost his right leg by amputation a few days later. He was immediately recommended for the rank of brigadier-general by Secretary Stanton and the nomination was promptly confirmed by the Senate. In September 1864 he returned to duty in Washington and in the following spring was again assigned to active service. He was engaged in various administrative duties, now that the fighting was over, in Maryland, West Virginia, and the Shenandoah Valley, and also served as a member of the commission which tried and condemned Captain Wirz, former commandant of Andersonville Prison. In November 1865 he was made major-general of volunteers.

Fessenden

He was also brevetted major-general in the regular army for gallant and meritorious services during the war, and on the reorganization of that army in 1866 was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the 45th Infantry. He declined the appointment and asked to be brought before a retiring board by which he was placed on the retired list with the rank of brigadier-general.

After the war Fessenden returned to Portland and resumed the practise of law with his brother. He was not especially interested in a political career, serving only for a year as alderman and a single term as mayor (1876), declining renomination in both cases. He was an Overseer of Bowdoin College for many years. He performed a noteworthy service by collecting many of his father's letters and miscellaneous papers, and his *Life and Public Services of William Pitt Fessenden,* published posthumously in 1907, is a creditable biography. He was married, on Aug. 26, 1863, to Ellen W. Fox.

[Francis Fessenden, *Life and Pub. Services of Wm. Pitt Fessenden* (2 vols., 1907); W. E. S. Whitman and Charles H. True, *Maine in the War for the Union* (1865); *Portland Soldiers and Sailors,* compiled by members of the Bosworth Post, G. A. R. (1884); *Boston Transcript,* Jan. 2, 1906; *Biog. Encyc. of Me. of the Nineteenth Century* (1885), pp. 224–29; *Obit. Record of the Grads. of Bowdoin Coll. . . . for the decade ending 1 June 1909* (1911).] W. A. R.

**FESSENDEN, JAMES DEERING** (Sept. 28, 1833–Nov. 18, 1882), lawyer, soldier, was the eldest son of William Pitt and Ellen (Deering) Fessenden. He graduated from Bowdoin College in 1852, studied law, was admitted to the bar in 1856 and became a member of his father's law firm. On Nov. 5 of the same year he married Frances C. Greeley. He was active in the large practise carried on by his father's firm and showed great professional promise, but on the outbreak of the Civil War promptly entered military service, receiving a captain's commission. He recruited a company of sharpshooters and spent the first winter of the war in a Virginia camp, engaged in various administrative and training duties. In March 1862 he was transferred to the staff of Gen. Hunter and performed important services in South Carolina. He is reported to have organized and disciplined the first regiment of colored soldiers in the national service although Gen. Hunter's action was afterward disallowed and the regiment disbanded for the time being. He was promoted to the rank of colonel later in the year and took part in operations against Charleston in the spring of 1863. Severely injured by a fall from his horse, he was transferred to mustering and disbursing service during the summer months of 1863, but in September was ordered on active service with Gen.

Hooker who was then transferring two corps to the west for operations on the line between Nashville and Chattanooga. He took part in the heavy fighting at Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge, and was officially complimented by Gen. Hooker.

Fessenden was prominent in Sherman's campaign against Atlanta in 1864, and was recommended for the rank of brigadier-general for services at Resaca, Ga., on May 15. He also distinguished himself in the battles of New Hope Church, Kenesaw Mountain and Peach Tree Creek, and was again recommended for promotion by Gen. Hooker. On Aug. 8 he was appointed brigadier-general in recognition of his services in the Atlanta campaign. He was then transferred to Virginia and received a command under Gen. Sheridan. He took part in the battle of Cedar Creek and spent the last winter of the war performing administrative duties at Winchester, Va. After leading a brigade in the Grand Review at Washington, May 23, 1865, he was ordered on special service in Georgia and South Carolina. In recognition of distinguished services he was brevetted major-general of volunteers and mustered out Jan. 15, 1866. He then resumed the practise of law in Portland and in 1868 became register of bankruptcy under the act of Congress, and served in that capacity until the repeal of the law in 1878. He also served three terms in the legislature, 1872–74. He is described as a man of quiet and unassuming manner, efficient and reliable as a soldier and equally so in civil life. His father's letters show that he occupied a special place in the confidence and affection of the distinguished statesman.

[Francis Fessenden, *Life and Pub. Services of Wm. Pitt Fessenden* (2 vols., 1907); W. E. S. Whitman and Charles H. True, *Maine in the War for the Union* (1865); *Biog. Encyc. of Me. in the Nineteenth Century* (1885), pp. 302–07; *Portland Transcript*, Nov. 25, 1882; *Portland Soldiers and Sailors*, compiled by members of the Bosworth Post, G. A. R. (1884); F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. of the U. S. Army* (1903), vol. I.]

W. A. R.

**FESSENDEN, SAMUEL** (July 16, 1784–Mar. 19, 1869), lawyer, Abolitionist, was born at Fryeburg, Me., the son of William and Sarah (Clement) Fessenden. He attended Fryeburg Academy, graduated at Dartmouth in 1806, taught school for a short time, studied law, was admitted to the Maine bar in 1809, and began practise at New Gloucester, where he resided until he moved to Portland in 1822. On Dec. 16, 1813, he married Deborah Chandler who took into their household William Pitt Fessenden [*q.v.*], his illegitimate son. He secured a considerable practise from the start and is reported to have greatly increased his local prestige by thrashing the town bully in front of the court-house. He was well over six feet in height, strikingly handsome, an effective speaker, and usually referred to as "General." He actually held that rank in the militia. While at New Gloucester he was active in politics, as what Democrats loved to denounce—"a high-toned Federalist." From 1813 to 1815 he represented the town in the General Court at Boston, and in 1818–19 served in the Senate. While in the lower house in 1814 he made two notable speeches, one denouncing the national administration for the depressed conditions in Maine and the other, at a later session, supporting the call for the Hartford Convention. These have been frequently quoted by subsequent historians as illustrating the lengths to which prominent Federalists were willing to go in the direction of disunion. Following the separation of Maine from Massachusetts he represented Portland in the legislature, 1825–26.

While he had shown ability as a legislator and politician and for a time seemed destined for active political life, he failed to follow up his early success. This was due, apparently, to two reasons. On moving to Portland he formed a partnership with Thomas A. Deblois which lasted more than thirty years and became increasingly absorbed in professional work. Fessenden was especially interested in the law of real property and handled most of the business in that field while his partner handled commercial cases. Between them, they had probably the largest practise in the state prior to the Civil War, and the senior member was generally accepted as belonging to a select group of two or three outstanding leaders at the bar. Many successful lawyers received their training in this office. A second reason for his withdrawal from politics was his growing interest in the slavery question and dislike of the attitude maintained by both major parties. He became a member of the Anti-Slavery Society, held office, took an active part in its propaganda, and incurred the odium attached to membership in such a radical organization. He was a candidate for Congress and also for the governorship on Liberty party tickets, apparently for the purpose of demonstrating the growing strength of anti-slavery sentiment. He was not, however, as extreme in his doctrines as some of his associates, and believed in the necessity of preserving the union of the states.

In 1861 he retired from active practise and spent his last years in the home of one of his sons. He was blind for some years before his death. His personal qualities were such as to gain him the affection and respect of associates and the public at large. He was equally considerate and

generous to younger members of the bar, poor clients, and negro refugees.

[Wm. Willis, *A Hist. of the Law, the Courts, and the Lawyers of Me.* (1863); C. E. Hamlin, *The Life and Times of Hannibal Hamlin* (1899); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr. 1871. See also Francis Fessenden, *Life and Public Services of William Pitt Fessenden* (2 vols., 1907), which contains much valuable material on various members of the family and gives a special sketch of Samuel Fessenden: I, 34–39.] W. A. R.

**FESSENDEN, THOMAS GREEN** (Apr. 22, 1771–Nov. 11, 1837), poet, journalist, inventor, was the most important American satirist in verse between Trumbull and Lowell. He was born in Walpole, N. H., the eldest son of the Rev. Thomas Fessenden, the liberal pastor of the Walpole church for forty-seven years, himself an author, and his wife Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. Samuel Kendall of New Salem, Mass. Thomas Green Fessenden was prepared for Dartmouth probably by his Tory grandfather at New Salem, and assisted himself through college by teaching and conducting singing schools. He was graduated valedictorian in 1796, with some literary reputation for pieces of verse, mainly humorous, contributed over the pen-name "Simon Spunkey" to the *Dartmouth Centinel* and to the better known *Farmer's Weekly Museum* at Walpole, then edited by the essayist Joseph Dennie [*q.v.*], with whom he had begun a lasting friendship. His two most popular poems were "The Country Lovers," or "Jonathan's Courtship," first published as a broadside, probably in 1795, and as a pamphlet in 1796, and "The Rutland Ode." The former was the prototype and perhaps the model for Lowell's "The Courtin'." The latter was a Federalist campaign song, first sung, to music set by the author, at the Fourth of July celebration in 1798 at Rutland, Vt., where Fessenden was studying law.

In May 1801 Fessenden abandoned his law practise at Rutland and sailed for England as agent for a local company to secure English patent rights for a recently invented hydraulic device, which upon further testing proved fraudulent. He spent the next two years and his remaining funds in London in attempts to perfect this device and a new type of grain-mill. In February 1803 he rallied to the defense of another Yankee, Elisha Perkins [*q.v.*], whose "metallic tractors," after enjoying an enormous sale, were being attacked by the reputable medical profession. Fessenden, under the alias "Christopher Caustic, M.D., LL.D., A.S.S.," threw together a vigorous Hudibrastic satire, *Terrible Tractoration,* a pretended assault on the tractors, but actually ridiculing the most prominent of the skeptical physicians of England and Scotland.



Despite its small merit, the book was surprisingly popular, and well received in the reviews, and was several times reprinted. This was followed by his *Original Poems* (London 1804, Philadelphia 1806), chiefly selections from the Dartmouth and Rutland periods, with some added anti-Jacobin satires and literary parodies.

In July 1804 he returned, hailed as "the American Butler," to Boston, where he wrote and published in 1805, *Democracy Unveiled: or Tyranny Stripped of the Garb of Patriotism,* the most celebrated and virulent assault on Jefferson and the minor Democratic leaders, coarse and libellous to a degree not tolerable to-day. It is a long poem in six loosely constructed cantos, in Hudibrastic couplets grouped in quatrains, with copious footnotes outweighing the pages of text. Second and third editions, greatly enlarged, appeared later in 1805 at Boston, and in 1806 at New York. From Aug. 30, 1806, to Aug. 22, 1807, "Dr. Caustic" edited the *Weekly Inspector,* a Federalist partisan magazine, at New York, where he ran afoul of the youthful Salmagundi group, who ridiculed him as "Dr. Christopher Costive." In 1808 or 1809, after a sojourn with Dennie in Philadelphia, he retired to Brattleboro, Vt., and entered upon a less eventful but more useful period, practising law; editing the *Brattleboro Reporter,* 1815–16, and the *Bellows Falls Advertiser,* 1817–22; and compiling such legal and instructive works as the *Essay on the Law of Patents* (1810), *American Clerk's Companion* (1815), *Miniature Bible* (1816), and *The Ladies' Monitor* (1818). He married, at forty-two, in September 1813, Miss Lydia Tuttle, of Littleton, Mass.

In July 1822 Fessenden removed to Boston to establish the *New England Farmer,* editing it until his death, with the assistance of men like Timothy Pickering, John Lowell, and Daniel Webster as contributors. Simultaneously, he carried on three other periodicals devoted to agricultural interests, encouraged the introduction of silk culture in Massachusetts, and got out third and fourth editions of *Terrible Tractoration* in 1836 and 1837. In 1827 and 1830 he secured patents for two heating devices, the chief being a portable steam and hot-water stove, virtually a single hot-water radiator attached to an upright stove. In 1835 and again in 1836, he was elected by a large majority to the Massachusetts General Court as Whig representative from Boston and was a candidate for reëlection at the time of his death. For about the last two years of Fessenden's life Nathaniel Hawthorne, then editor of the *American Magazine of Useful and Entertaining Knowledge,* at Boston, was a lodger with the

Fessendens, and subsequently he wrote a eulogy which until recently was the best source of information concerning Fessenden (*Works*, 1883, XII, 246–63). It has been said that Fessenden's niece, Catherine Ainsworth, whom Hawthorne met at this time, was the original of Phebe Pyncheon in *The House of the Seven Gables*.

[Porter G. Perrin's *Life and Works of Thomas Green Fessenden* (1925); G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll.* (1867); *Boston Advertiser*, Nov. 13, 1837.] M. E.

**FESSENDEN, WILLIAM PITT** (Oct. 16, 1806–Sept. 8, 1869), lawyer, politician, financier, was the son of Samuel Fessenden and Ruth Greene, and a descendant of Nicholas Fessenden who came to America in the seventeenth century and settled at Cambridge, Mass. He was born out of wedlock at Boscawen, N. H., and spent his early years in the home of his grandparents at Fryeburg, Me., but when his father married in 1813 he became a member of the new household. He appears to have been a precocious boy and his entrance to college was delayed for some time on account of his extreme youth. He graduated from Bowdoin College, nevertheless, in 1823, although his diploma was withheld for a year on the ground that he had been "repeatedly guilty of profane swearing" and had "indicated a disorganizing spirit" and that "his general character and the bad influence of his example" called for punishment. Fessenden himself denied that he had been guilty of some of the alleged offenses. He was destined to receive the honorary degree of doctor of laws from Bowdoin in 1858 and to be a member of the governing boards of the college for the last twenty-six years of his life.

After graduation he studied law, with some interruptions, and was admitted to the bar in 1827. After two years at Bridgton he moved to Portland and except for a year in Bangor, maintained a residence there for the rest of his life. After his return from Bridgton he made his first appearance in public office when in 1831 he was elected to the legislature on the anti-Jackson ticket. He was engaged to Ellen, sister of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, and her death before their marriage was a great blow to him. On Apr. 23, 1832, he married Ellen Maria Deering, daughter of James Deering, a prominent Portland merchant. In 1835 he formed a partnership with William Willis which lasted until his election to the United States Senate almost twenty years later. He had by 1835 established a reputation as one of the able lawyers of the state. In a few years he was considered by many the equal of his father, then the leader of the Maine bar, against whom he frequently appeared in important litigation. He was active in the Whig party and in 1837 by special invitation accompanied Daniel Webster on a tour of several months in the western states. He was for many years on cordial terms with the great Whig leader, who had been his godfather in 1806, and with his family, but his letters show that he had some definite reservations as to Webster's political conduct and the chapter closed with Fessenden in opposition to his nomination for the presidency at the Whig convention of 1852.

In 1839 he was elected to another term in the Maine legislature, being a member of the judiciary committee and assisting in a revision of the statutes. The following year he was elected to Congress, where he remained a single term. His two years in the lower house were, naturally enough, without special distinction but some of his remarks in debate seem to have drawn favorable attention. His letters show that this first experience in Washington gave him certain unfavorable impressions of public life and participants in it, which he retained to the end. Unlike his abolitionist father, he was in the beginning conservative on the slavery issue, but a view of the situation at Washington aroused his contempt for "the mean subserviency of these northern hirelings" (Fessenden, *post*, I, 23), and in another letter he expressed admiration of John Quincy Adams for "his indomitable spirit and the uprighteousness of his soul." From that time on his hostility to the institution grew steadily and the following decade saw him among the active organizers of the new Republican party.

For twelve years following his retirement from Congress he held no important public office although he served two terms in the legislature in 1845–46 and 1853–54, was active in Whig party councils, and was several times an unsuccessful candidate for the national Senate and House. The growth of anti-slavery sentiment in Maine was decidedly to his advantage and on Jan. 4, 1854, an anti-slavery combination in the legislature elected him to the United States Senate. He was sworn in on Feb. 23, and on Mar. 3 delivered the first great speech of his senatorial career, in opposition to the Kansas-Nebraska bill (*Congressional Globe*, 33 Cong., 1 Sess., App., pp. 319–24). For the next fifteen years he was one of the dominant figures in national affairs.

In 1857 he was assigned to the finance committee which, under existing rules, then handled both revenue and appropriation bills in the upper house. He had approximately ten years' service in the committee, more than half of this period as chairman, and, due to the responsibilities entailed by the Civil War, earned a permanent place

among American public financiers. In 1857, when his most important work began, he suffered a severe loss in the death of his wife and his own health became permanently impaired. He is reported to have been one of the numerous victims of the mysterious epidemic said to have originated in the National Hotel. Thereafter he was inclined to be morose and unsociable in his habits and given to displays of irritability which would have been ruinous to any one but a man of commanding ability and high character. With a few friends, however, he was always on the best of terms and his letters to members of his family are hard to reconcile with his reputation for harshness and austerity. His constant references to his garden in Portland, or to fly-fishing on Maine trout streams, disclose a very different personality from the one appearing in speeches on the Morrill tariff, Reconstruction, and the Fourteenth Amendment.

As a leader of the opposition to the Buchanan administration he advanced steadily in prestige and he was now regarded as one of the greatest debaters who had yet appeared in Congress. Contemporaries sometimes found it hard to realize that a man of his slight physique, poor health, and unobtrusive manners was nevertheless one of the greatest intellectual forces in the government. In 1859 he was elected for a six-year term and was thus assured of a full share in the opportunities and responsibilities of the Civil War. "Let them stand firm like men and not tremble and shake before rebellion," he wrote when the final break impended, and his own conduct justified such advice.

When the Thirty-seventh Congress met in July 1861, he became chairman of the finance committee and carried a tremendous burden of work and responsibility in putting the finances of the country on a war footing. He did a great deal of the preliminary work in preparing bills and was in charge of their passage on the floor of the Senate. His reputation as a debater is seen to be well deserved by an examination of the debates on the great revenue and appropriation measures of the war period. His quick temper is equally apparent and even with the lapse of years the rasp of some of his comments can still be felt. He consistently tried, apparently, to confine expenditures to the legitimate outlays necessitated by the war, to avoid dangerous and wasteful precedents, to follow strictly the regular rules of procedure, and, as far as possible in view of extraordinary needs, to be economical and businesslike. "It is time for us to begin to think a little more about the money" he declared on one occasion early in the war, "the event of this war depends upon

Fessenden

whether we can support it or not" (*Congressional Globe*, 37 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 1038). Such a course inevitably meant opposition to a variety of personal and sectional projects and stirred the wrath of the proponents of a swarm of expensive, futile, but popular measures growing out of war-time conditions.

In general Fessenden supported Secretary Chase's financial program and did much to secure its adoption by Congress. In the very important matter of the legal-tender notes, resorted to in 1862, he expressed disapproval and voted for the unsuccessful Collamer amendment striking this feature from the bill. His speech on the evils of irredeemable paper and the dangers of inflation is a classic on the subject (*Ibid.*, pp. 762–67). He admitted, however, that the situation was without a parallel in the history of the United States and afterward stated that the legal tenders were probably the only resource available at the time. Later on, as secretary of the treasury, he stood firm against further inflation, and when the war was over assumed the offensive against greenback heresies. In one matter he had a clearer vision than most of his colleagues or Secretary Chase himself, namely, the need of a drastic taxing program, which was too long delayed by political cowardice and inertia. At the first war session he declared himself in favor of an income tax as best calculated to meet current needs (*Ibid.*, 37 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 255).

On June 29, 1864, Secretary Chase resigned and President Lincoln promptly selected Fessenden as his successor, sending the nomination to the Senate while Fessenden himself was seeking a White House appointment to recommend Hugh McCulloch. He accepted the post reluctantly and with a definite understanding that he would be relieved as soon as the situation permitted. Faced at the beginning with an almost empty treasury, unpaid bills, including the army's pay, maturing loans, inadequate revenue, and countless difficulties in detail, he was able during his brief tenure to meet emergencies and to turn the department over to his successor in relatively sound condition. He raised the interest rate on government bonds and through the sales organization of Jay Cooke marketed another great loan, standing firmly against any further inflation of the currency. He had been reëlected to the Senate for a third term on Jan. 5, 1865, and his resignation as secretary took effect on Mar. 3.

With the prestige of the preceding years behind him Fessenden was certain to take an outstanding part in Reconstruction. As Lincoln had said of him he was "a Radical without the petu-

lant and vicious fretfulness of many Radicals" (J. G. Nicolay and John Hay, *Abraham Lincoln,* 1890, IX, 100). His opposition to some features of the Confiscation Act, his refusal to be stampeded into an attempt to expel Senator Garrett Davis who had written some foolish resolutions which were alleged to be treasonable, and similar incidents, had tended to differentiate his position from that of Sumner, Wade, and other leaders. As a matter of fact, however, in his views as to policy toward the Southern states, he was, as Carl Schurz says, "in point of principle not far apart from Mr. Stevens" (*The Reminiscences of Carl Schurz,* III, 1908, p. 219). On Dec. 21, 1865, he became chairman of the famous joint committee on Reconstruction and its report, largely his personal work, is one of the great state papers in American history. His views of Reconstruction might well be summarized by his statement in reply to President Johnson's attack on the committee. He said the South had been subdued under the laws of war and "there was nothing better established than the principle that the conquerors had the power to change the form of government, to punish, to exact security, and take entire charge of the conquered people" (Fessenden, *post,* II, 9–10). He was equally emphatic that Reconstruction was a function of Congress and not of the President.

Fessenden's feeling toward the latter was made perfectly clear. He had little respect for him as a man and thoroughly disapproved of his policies and official conduct. He believed, however, that the President had not been guilty of any impeachable offenses and that the attempt to apply the remedy of impeachment would permanently lower the standards of American politics and government. He declined to vote on the Tenure of Office Act, but said that he disapproved of it on principle and that it would be productive of great evil. By 1867 he was definitely aligned with the conservatives. When impeachment finally came his position as a majority leader was especially difficult. His own view, stated again and again, was that the impeachment trial was a judicial process, not the summary removal of an unpopular and ill-advised executive. To a relative he wrote, "If he was impeached for general cussedness, there would be no difficulty in the case. That, however, is not the question to be tried" (Fessenden, *post,* II, 184). To Neal Dow, who had written him that Maine expected him to vote for conviction, he replied in terms worthy of Edmund Burke: "I wish you, my dear sir, and all others my friends and constituents, to understand that . . . I, not they, have solemnly sworn to do impartial justice. . . . The opinions and wishes



of my party friends ought not to have a feather's weight with me in coming to a conclusion" (*Ibid.,* II, 187–88). The official reasons for his vote of "not guilty" are found in the lengthy opinion which he filed in the official record (*Congressional Globe,* 40 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 452–57).

Fessenden undoubtedly reached the high point of his career by this vote, but it brought a tremendous storm of partisan denunciation which he faced courageously and in confidence that his course would eventually be justified by events. Throughout his senatorial career he showed himself indifferent to public opposition or acclaim, and he had already taken the unpopular side on many less conspicuous issues. As the excitement of the trial passed away, the country began to appreciate his courage and wisdom and he lived long enough to realize that the tide was turning. Whether he could have secured a reëlection is problematical as his death occurred before the attitude of the majority in the Maine legislature was definitely settled. His ability and strength of character, had he survived and been returned to the Senate for another term, would have been of inestimable value in the following decade. As it was, even if he appears at times to have interpreted America in terms of ledgers, balance sheets, and Supreme Court decisions, and if he lacked the sympathetic understanding of the feelings and motives of the common man which characterized Lincoln, he has a secure place among the great leaders of the Civil War era when courage in governmental circles was not always as much in evidence as on the battlefield.

[*Life and Public Services of William Pitt Fessenden,* by his son Francis Fessenden (2 vols., 1907), is the best source of information. While defective in arrangement and methods of presentation it gives a fair and comprehensive survey of his activities and contains personal correspondence and other material not available in official records. Brief sketches also occur in the following: G. H. Preble, "William Pitt Fessenden," *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* Apr. 1871; A. F. Moulton, *Memorials of Maine* (1916); L. C. Hatch, *Maine: A History,* vol. II (1919), and *Hist. of Bowdoin Coll.* (1927).]

W. A. R.

**FETTERMAN, WILLIAM JUDD** (1833?–Dec. 21, 1866), soldier, was the son of Lieut. George Fetterman, who entered the army from Pennsylvania, served at Fort Trumbull, Conn., from 1829 to 1833, and while stationed there married Anna Marie C. Judd, daughter of Bethel Judd of New London, on Apr. 18, 1831. His mother died in his infancy, and no record of his youth appears to be available. He entered the army, from Delaware, at the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861 and was twice brevetted for gallant and meritorious service, at the battle of Murfreesboro and again at the battle of Jonesboro. After the war he continued in the regular army,

was transferred on Sept. 21, 1866, to the 27th Infantry with the rank of captain, and sent out to Fort Phil Kearny, Wyo., to report to Col. Henry B. Carrington, in command at that post. He arrived at his station in November. He was of genial and dashing personality and at once became popular socially and with the subordinate officers and men. He was not familiar with frontier conditions or with Indian warfare and held rather a contemptuous view of the conservatism of his superiors and their manifest belief in the difficulty of the situation. On one occasion he declared that he could ride safely through the Indian country with eighty men (Hebard and Brininstool, *post*, I, 305). Consequently, when upon the morning of Dec. 21, 1866, an Indian alarm was signaled from the outlook, on Sullivan Hill, although Fetterman was the senior captain in the post, Col. Carrington directed Capt. J. W. Powell to take command of a troop of eighty men and go out to relieve the wood train, then upon its last trip for the season, to the forest upon Piney Island seven miles distant. When this order was given to Capt. Powell, Fetterman at once stepped forward and asserted his seniority. Col. Carrington, recognizing his right, with misgivings conceded it, but with distinct orders, several times repeated, under no circumstances to pass beyond the crest of Lodge Trail Ridge. So it was that Fetterman rode away with precisely the number of men that he had boasted would be sufficient to carry him safely through the Indian country. In disobedience to his orders he allowed Red Cloud to entice him beyond Lodge Trail Ridge where an ambush was prepared for him. There, fighting most gallantly, he with his entire command was killed; not a single white man survived. The Fetterman massacre has gone into history as one of the great tragedies of the frontier, only surpassed by the fate of Custer ten years later.

[*Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., XX (pt. 1), p. 404, XXII (pt. 3), p. 553, XXVIII (pt. 1), *passim*; F. B. Heitman, *Hist. Reg. and Dict. U. S. Army* (2 vols., 1903); G. R. Hebard and E. A. Brininstool, *The Bozeman Trail* (2 vols., 1922); Margaret I. Carrington, *Absa-ra-ka, Land of Massacre* (1878); C. T. Brady, *Indian Fights and Fighters* (1904).] D. R.

**FEW, IGNATIUS ALPHONSO** (Apr. 11, 1789–Nov. 28, 1845), college founder and president, son of Ignatius and Mary (Chandler) Few, was born on a plantation near Augusta, Ga. His grandfather, William Few, a native of Maryland, moved to North Carolina in 1758, and to Georgia soon after 1771. He had three sons, the most notable of whom, William [*q.v.*], after representing Georgia in the Constitutional Convention and in the United States Senate, married in New York City and went there to live. Another of the three sons was Ignatius, a captain in the Revolutionary army, and afterward a successful planter and merchant. When Ignatius, Jr., was about fifteen he was despatched to New York to be educated under the supervision of his uncle William. He entered a school in Bergen, N. J., and later went to Princeton, where he remained for a considerable time without registering in the college. Here he studied privately, music, French, drawing, and fencing. He soon went back to New York where he studied for a while longer before returning to Georgia. In Augusta, he turned his attention to law, but about 1811 he married Selina Carr, and retired to an extensive farm not far distant. In 1815 he went to Savannah as colonel of a regiment intended to save the town from an expected attack by the British, but the enemy did not appear. During the years following he gave himself passionately to general reading, and even to the writing of poetry, in which "he evinced a talent which would have done him honor, had graver pursuits permitted its cultivation" (Sprague, *post*). By 1823 his business had pretty well disintegrated and he went to Augusta to practise law. In the autumn of 1824, it became plain that he had tuberculosis, and from then on, "frequent discharges of arterial blood from his pulmonary vessels, sometimes alarmingly rapid and profuse, continued to appear through the several subsequent years of his life" (Summers, p. 308). For a number of years he had grieved his friends by avowing himself a skeptic, but about this time he became open to religious conviction. In 1826 or 1827 he joined the Methodist Church, in 1828 he became a minister, and in the time before 1835, when he was retired, he preached in Savannah, Columbus, and Macon. As early as 1832 he was convinced that the Methodists of Georgia should conduct a college of their own, and began urging them to such an enterprise. There was little sympathy with his project, and he made a temporary compromise with himself by furthering, under Methodist control, a secondary school in which the students supported themselves by laboring on a farm. In 1837 the college he had advocated was chartered under the name Emory. He was made its president, and it was located near the farm-school already in operation. The first session began in 1838. The president's financial problems were from the first grave, but he would not be bound by anything so inexcusable as lack of funds. He had $100,000 in subscriptions signed by prominent Methodists, and that seemed to him justification for erecting the really necessary buildings and also for aiding the farm-school, which was itself

by that time practically defunct. Many of the subscriptions remained unpaid, and things went from bad to worse till the summer of 1839. Then he resigned, his "continued and increasing disease," he said, "having rendered that course indispensable" (*Longstreet, post*). He was a member of the first conference of the Methodist Church, South, which met in Louisville in 1845, and he is reported to have drawn up the official report on the division of the Methodist Church. His health was intermittently wretched till his complete breakdown in March 1845. "He died in Athens, Ga., in perfect tranquillity, sitting in a large arm-chair" (Sprague, *post*).

[T. O. Summers, *Biog. Sketches of Eminent Itinerant Ministers* (1858); W. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, vol. VII (1859); G. G. Smith, *Hist. of Methodism in Ga. and Fla.* (1877); C. E. Jones, *Education in Ga.* (1889); W. J. Northen, *Men of Mark in Ga.*, vol. II (1910); J. D. Wade, *Augustus Baldwin Longstreet* (1924).] J. D. W.

**FEW, WILLIAM** (June 8, 1748–July 16, 1828), statesman, soldier, banker, belonged to a Quaker family which emigrated from England in 1682, settling in Pennsylvania. His father, William Few, removed to Maryland and there married Mary Wheeler, a Catholic. Later on he became a Methodist and William, Jr., born near Baltimore, was reared in that faith. Failing as a tobacco planter in Maryland, the elder William Few removed his family in 1758 to North Carolina where his son became inured to the hardships of frontier life and received a meager schooling at the hands of itinerant teachers. He developed an omnivorous appetite for reading and really educated himself. In North Carolina the Few family became involved in the "Regulator" war, and a brother, James, was summarily hanged after the battle of Alamance (1771). A few days later the paternal farm, with cattle and horses, was destroyed by the British. Shortly thereafter, having gone bond for some of the "Regulator" outlaws, the elder William Few found himself involved in legal and financial difficulties and with his family removed to the Quaker settlement in St. Paul's Parish, Ga., near Wrightsboro, leaving the younger William behind to settle his affairs. The latter joined his family in 1776, when the entire connection became ardent Revolutionists. Benjamin Few, an older brother, was a colonel of militia, William Few, Jr., a lieutenant-colonel, and Ignatius Few, the youngest brother, a captain and brevet-major of dragoons.

During the Revolutionary period, in addition to his service in the field, William Few, Jr., was twice a member of the General Assembly of Georgia, and a member of the Executive Council



of the state. He served as surveyor-general of Georgia and commissioner to the Indians, and was twice a delegate to the Continental Congress. When the war closed he was again elected (1783) to the General Assembly and was again sent as a delegate to the Continental Congress. In 1787 he was one of the six Georgia delegates to the Philadelphia Convention which drafted the Constitution of the United States; he was one of the two (Abraham Baldwin being the other) who remained throughout the convention and signed the new Constitution, and was a member of the state convention (1788) which ratified it. Few was one of the first United States senators sent from Georgia under the new government. His term expired in 1793. He did not offer for reëlection, but returned to Georgia, served a fourth term in the state Assembly, and shortly thereafter (1796) was appointed judge of the 2nd (federal) judicial circuit of Georgia. This office he held for three years and resigned. In 1799, then in his fifty-second year, he removed to New York City. Almost immediately he assumed a position of importance. For four years he served in the General Assembly; he became inspector of state prisons; and served as an alderman in the city. From 1804 to 1814 he was a director in the Manhattan Bank and he ended his career as president of the City Bank. He died at the home of his son-in-law, Maj. Albert Chrystie, at Fishkill-on-the-Hudson.

Few is described as tall, slender, erect, of grave and dignified demeanor. He was a stanch believer in revealed religion and a liberal giver of his wealth to all good causes. His wife, Catherine, daughter of Commodore James Nicholson, and three daughters survived him.

["Autobiog. of Col. Wm. Few of Ga.," *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, Nov. 1881; *Jours. of Cong.*; *Revolutionary Records of the State of Ga.* (1908); Chas. C. Jones, Jr., *Biog. Sketches of the Delegates from Ga. to the Continental Cong.* (1891); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); Marion Letcher, in Wm. Northen, *Men of Mark in Ga.*, vol. I (1907); *N. Y. Spectator*, July 25, 1828; *Augusta Chronicle and Ga. Advertiser*, Aug. 2, 1828.] R. P. B—s.

**FEWKES, JESSE WALTER** (Nov. 14, 1850–May 31, 1930), ethnologist, was born in Newton, Mass., the son of Jesse and Susan Emeline (Jewett) Fewkes. He had the local advantages of schooling and was prepared for Harvard College, where he graduated in 1875 and received the degree Ph.D. in 1877. Working his way through college, he was uncertain as to what line to follow. Leaning for a time toward electricity, he conducted a number of experiments in that field, but finally through the magnetism of Louis Agassiz took up marine zoölogy. Many papers on echinoderms and other forms of sea life at-

test this phase of his work, which was advanced by a course in zoölogy at Leipzig. After his return from Germany he became assistant in the Museum of Comparative Zoölogy at Harvard and secretary of the Boston Society of Natural History. Transferring his interests to anthropology, he took up the work of the Hemenway Southwestern Archeological Expedition lately directed by Frank Hamilton Cushing [*q.v.*], and founded the *Journal of American Ethnology and Archæology* for the publication of the results. This journal, of which five numbers were issued, contains some of Fewkes's best work. In 1895 he became connected with the Bureau of American Ethnology, his first undertaking being the investigation of the classic ancient pueblo of Sikyatki in the Hopi Reserve, northeastern Arizona. The report on this exploration marks the introduction of zoölogical methods to archeology; the analysis of zoömorphic designs led to the connection of current Hopi designs with the ancient ("Archeological Expedition to Arizona in 1895," *17th Annual Report, Bureau of American Ethnology*, 1898, pt. 2, pp. 519–744). This association with the Hopi Indians, whose customs and art evidently relate to ancient predecessors, led Fewkes to the intensive study of their cults. A long list of publications covering their history and religious life ensued, among the more striking being: "The Snake Ceremonials at Walpi" (*Journal of American Ethnology and Archæology*, vol. IV, 1894); "Tuscayan Snake Ceremonies" (*16th Annual Report, Bureau of American Ethnology*, 1897, pp. 267–312); "Hopi Katchinas, drawn by Native Artists," describing the figurines representing the numerous deities of the Hopi pantheon (*21st Annual Report*, 1903, pp. 3–126); "The Tuscayan New Fire Ceremony" (*Proceedings of the Boston Society of Natural History*, vol. XXVI, 1895, pp. 422–58); "The Winter Solstice Ceremony at Walpi" (*American Anthropologist*, March, April 1898); "The New-Fire Ceremony at Walpi" (*Ibid.*, January–March 1900). Intensive work at the Hopi pueblos was followed by archeological researches among the ancient ruins of Arizona, New Mexico, Colorado, and Utah. Typical ruins in all parts of this region were scientifically explored by Fewkes and accounts of the results promptly published. Realizing the heritage that the United States possesses in these ancient remains, he sought whenever possible to clear out rooms and protect broken walls against further injury, leaving the sites for public education. Evidence of this pioneer work is seen in the cliff dwellings and pueblos of the Mesa Verde, at Casa Grande, Ariz., and in other localities. Always adequately

Fewkes

presented from a full store of knowledge, his reports on the archeology of the Pueblo region are incomparable. Notable among these are "Two Summers' Work in Pueblo Ruins" (*22nd Annual Report, Bureau of American Ethnology*, 1904, pt. 1, pp. 3–195), the Sikyatki report mentioned, and many others. He discovered a new type of naturalistically and geometrically decorated pottery, in the Mimbres Valley, N. Mex., indicating an extinct tribe of Pueblo relationship (*Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collections*, vol. LXIII, no. 10, 1914, pp. 1–53). In 1926 he explored what was to be his last work in the Southwest, an important ruin called Elden Pueblo, near Flagstaff, Ariz. (*Ibid.*, vol. LXXVIII, no. 7, 1926, pp. 207–32). While his work was principally with the ethnology and archeology of the Southwest, he prosecuted explorations in Porto Rico ("The Aborigines of Porto Rico and Neighboring Islands," *25th Annual Report, Bureau of American Ethnology*, 1907, pp. 3–220), and eastern Mexico ("Certain Antiquities of Eastern Mexico," *Ibid.*, pp. 221–84). Taking up the archeology of the eastern United States in its relation to present tribes, he carried on work in Tennessee, Georgia, and other Southern states. At Weeden Island, near Tampa, Fla., he excavated a large ancient mound (*Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collections*, vol. LXXVI, no. 10, 1924, pp. 88–98) and continued investigations on the keys to the south. In the press of exploration and the preparation of reports he found opportunity to write several papers of general scope: "Sun Worship of the Hopi Indians" (*Annual Report of the Smithsonian Institution*, 1918, 1920, pp. 493–526); "Great Stone Monuments in History and Geography" (*Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collections*, vol. LXI, no. 6, 1913), and "The Sun's Influence on the Hopi Pueblos" (*American Anthropologist*, January–March 1906). After long service in the Smithsonian as ethnologist, in 1918 he was accorded promotion and became chief of the Bureau. Scientific societies at home and abroad honored him; in recognition of his contributions to the exhibits of the Columbian Historical Exposition held in Madrid in 1892 the Queen Regent of Spain made him a Knight of the Order of Isabella the Catholic, and in 1894 he received a gold medal from King Oscar of Sweden. One of his important contributions to anthropological science was the demonstration of the value of the study of living tribes in solving the problems of archeology. In his work among the Hopi he proved by the traditions relating to anciently occupied sites the story of the migrations of the clans that coalesced to form the tribe. The exploration and repair of ruins now cus-

tomary was begun through his efforts. The first phonographic records of Indian songs were made under his direction. In the intimate study of Indian secret ceremonies begun by A. M. Stephen and Frank Hamilton Cushing he had no equal. Among the Hopi he was initiated into the Snake and Flute fraternities and given the name Naquapi, "Medicine Bowl." To this day his memory is green among these Indians. As a result of his numerous explorations an immense body of artifacts flowed into the collection of the National Museum through the Bureau of American Ethnology. These thousands of specimens form one of the most valuable archives in existence. They are material which students will perennially come to examine.

Around the camp fires in the desert he was a most comradely companion. With Dr. Fewkes and his gentle wife, who always accompanied him, all people coming into contact felt an atmosphere of friendliness. No mask of seriousness blocked the success of this master explorer. Broadly cultivated in the arts and sciences, he was at home among men of his rank and embraced all men by his intensely human qualities. After the death of his first wife, Florence Gorges Eastman, to whom he was married in 1883, he married in 1893 Harriet Olivia Cutler of Cambridge, Mass. He retired from the Bureau in 1928 and died two years later at his home in Forest Glen, Md.

[*Harvard College Class of 1875, Fiftieth Anniversary Report* (1925); *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; Frances Sellman Nichols, *Biog. and Bibliog. of Jesse Walter Fewkes* (1919); *Evening Star* (Washington), May 31, 1930; *Sunday Star* (Washington), *N. Y. Times*, and *Washington Post*, June 1, 1930; personal information.] W. H.

**FFOULKE, CHARLES MATHER** (July 25, 1841–Apr. 14, 1909), collector of and authority on tapestries, was born in Quakertown, Bucks County, Pa., where his family had settled in 1712 on land granted them by John, brother of William Penn. His parents were Benjamin Green Ffoulke and Jane Mather. He was the second son, one of six children. With his brothers and sisters he was educated in the Friends' School at Quakertown and attended regularly the Friends' Meeting. At sixteen he was sent for a year to a boarding school at Gwynedd and later to the Friends' Central High School at Philadelphia. In 1860, when only nineteen years of age, he himself was made principal of the Friends' School in Quakertown.

Being a Quaker, to his bitter disappointment he was not allowed to join the Union army at the time of the Civil War but instead, went into the wool business. As buyer for the firm of Davis

Ffoulke

& Ffoulke, he traveled extensively in this country, and through exposure on one of these trips, contracted rheumatism with which he battled for the rest of his life. In 1872, on account of ill health, he gave up his business and went to Europe, where he met and, in December of that year, married Sarah Cushing of New York. It was through his wife, who had had training as an artist, that he became interested in art and it was during this first trip to Europe that he acquired something more than a working knowledge of the paintings of the great masters, as well as three foreign languages—French, German, and Italian.

The Ffoulkes returned to America in 1874, settled in Philadelphia, and for another ten years Ffoulke devoted himself exclusively and very successfully to business. By that time he had acquired sufficient means to be able to purchase works of art which, on a previous journey, he had coveted. In 1884 he and his family, consisting of his wife and children (one son and three daughters), went to Europe and took up residence in Nice. The disastrous effects of the earthquake of 1887 caused them to change their residence to Florence, and it was here that Ffoulke took up the study of tapestries, which he pursued with the utmost diligence. A friendship with an Italian painter brought him into contact with a leading Italian collector and authority on textiles, Giuseppe Salvadori, from whom he learned much concerning technique. His first valuable purchase was a set of Flemish tapestries, historically important, rich in gold and silver, which he found and acquired in Munich.

In 1888 his improved health permitted his return to America and he took up his residence then in Washington. The following year, while in Europe, he had the good fortune to be presented by a friend to the Princess Barberini and was given opportunity to examine the great Barberini collection of tapestries, many pieces of which had then been stored for thirty years. This entire collection he later acquired (with the consent of the Italian government) and brought to the United States. The collection included series depicting Dido and Æneas, Judith and Holofernes, and the life of Christ. The collection was too large even for the gallery Ffoulke had prepared for it in Washington, and he therefore disposed of some of the pieces. The largest set, illustrating the life of Christ, was thus obtained for the Cathedral of St. John the Divine in New York.

A confirmed invalid after 1892, for years before his death Ffoulke was unable to walk a step, and from a man of commanding stature became pitiably dwarfed and crippled. Wherever he went

he was carried, but so heroically did he disregard his physical disabilities that others forgot them. In 1904, though terribly broken in health, he went abroad with his wife, daughter, and youngest son, and after spending some time in France and Italy, wintered in Egypt, where he made a special study of Egyptian weavings. It was while he was on this trip that the King of Belgium requested and secured the loan of his Flemish tapestries for the Exposition in Brussels in 1905.

Charles M. Ffoulke was essentially public-spirited and a leader. After establishing himself in Washington he helped to secure a charter from Congress for a National Academy of Art (inactive) and was instrumental in organizing the National Society of the Fine Arts (later the Washington Society of the Fine Arts), of which, in 1907, he became president. During his presidency of this society he organized a fine exhibition of tapestries and textiles, which was held in the Corcoran Gallery of Art and for which he wrote a descriptive catalogue. During his last years he frequently discussed with friends the establishment of a national organization to quicken interest in, and appreciation of art in America and to serve as a channel for the expression of public opinion in matters pertaining to art that might call for legislative action. These plans materialized in the organization of the American Federation of Arts, a little more than a month after his death, which occurred in New York, where he had gone for treatment.

[Foreword by Glenn Brown to *Ffoulke Collection of Tapestries* (1913); obituary in *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Apr. 16, 1909; personal recollections.]

L. M.

**FFRENCH, CHARLES DOMINIC** (1775–Jan. 5, 1851), Catholic priest, son of a Church of Ireland prelate and cousin of Lord Ffrench, was born in Galway, Ireland. On his mother's death, the boy was reared by a religious aunt and tutored by a liberal-minded father and a scholarly parson. Following servants to chapel, he joined the Catholic Church along with a brother, Edmund, who became bishop of Galway (died, 1852). The boys were assailed on all sides; Trinity College was closed to them; in accordance with the penal laws, they were cut off from their inheritance; as sons of a Protestant they could not study for the priesthood in state-aided Maynooth seminary. In despair, they turned to the Dominican priory, where they continued their classical training in preparation for the College of Corpo Santo at Lisbon, where Charles was ordained, Dec. 21, 1799. Two years later, on his way to Ireland, his ship was captured by Spaniards and he was taken to Galicia as a prisoner.

Ffrench

Soon released, he made his way via Portugal and England to Ireland where he ministered for eight years. Among his converts was an American merchant who urged his enlistment in the American missions. Armed with letters from his provincial and Archbishop Troy, he went to Lisbon and thence to Canada where he arrived in September 1812. Appointed vicar in Quebec, he made such an appeal to Protestants, that under Anglican pressure his bishop sent him to St. John, New Brunswick (1813), where he built a chapel from which he attended Indian stations over an immense area. He learned the native dialect and was unusually successful until exposure from falling through an ice-hole into a bayou impaired his robust constitution.

In 1817, he joined the diocese of New York and attended missions through New Jersey and New York state. In the course of his duties, he said the first mass at Claremont, N. H., and took part in the conversion of the Rev. Daniel Barber. Racial troubles with certain trustees of St. Peter's Church, New York, as well as charges concerning loans on New Brunswick lands where he had hoped to establish a Dominican priory, caused him considerable annoyance. He set forth for St. John in 1822, but his ship was wrecked. Largely because of his skill and courage, the long boats were lowered and landed at Kingston, R. I., without even the loss of the steerage passengers whom the captain would have abandoned. Continuing his journey, he obtained evidence for *A Short Memoir . . . in Vindication of . . . the Character of Rev. Charles Ffrench* (*c.* 1826). Apparently this refutation ended the charges of his detractors. In 1826, he joined Bishop Fenwick [*q.v.*] at Boston and was assigned to Eastport, Me., where he built a church and established an Indian mission at Pleasant Point. At intervals he attended Irish camps on canals; in 1827 he took over Dover, N. H., as a station and within a year erected St. Aloysius's Church (*Truth Teller,* New York, July 26, 1828). Assigned to Portland, Me., Father Ffrench, despite nativist threats, built St. Dominic's Church and incidentally converted J. M. Young, later Catholic bishop of Erie, Pa. With noteworthy zeal, he gathered together congregations at Quincy and Newburyport, Mass. (*Catholic Telegraph,* Sept. 7, 1833). In 1839, without leave of absence, he went to Rome in hopes of bringing Dominicans to Portland. On his return, he served as pastor of Greece, N. Y., where he constructed a small church; but with the accession of Bishop Fitzpatrick, he was recalled to the Boston diocese and given charge of Lawrence, Mass. (1846), where he built the church and school of the Immaculate Conception

and attended mass-stations at Methuen, Andover, and Haverhill.

A powerful man who carried his 350 pounds without being unwieldy, he finally surrendered to death after a few weeks of inactivity. Of him Bishop Fitzpatrick, who was not uncritical, confided to his notes that he was zealous and regular, buoyant and amicable, and no bearer of ill will even to opponents, whose faults he presented in a favorable light with an effort "as amusing as it was edifying."

[*U. S. Cath. Hist. Soc., Records and Studies,* vol. II, pt. 1 (1900) pp. 40 ff.; *The Cath. Almanac* (1852), p. 243; *Hist. of the Cath. Church in the New England States* (1899), ed. by W. Byrne; *U. S. Cath. Intelligencer,* May 11, 1832; photostat copies in the Dominican House of Studies, Washington, D. C., of Ffrench's account of his life (1840) in archives of San Clemente, Rome, of Bishop Bayley's notes, of broadsides in the trustees' dispute, and of Bishop Fitzpatrick's obituary *Memoranda,* in Vol. IV in the Boston archdiocesan archives.] R. J. P.

**FIELD, BENJAMIN HAZARD** (May 2, 1814–Mar. 17, 1893), philanthropist, was born at Yorktown, Westchester County, N. Y. A descendant of Robert Field, who came from England about 1630 and migrated to Rhode Island about 1638, he was the son of Hazard and Mary (Bailey) Field and first cousin of Maunsell Bradhurst Field [*q.v.*]. He attended the North Salem (Westchester County) Academy, a well-known school at that time, directed by the Rev. Hiram Jelliff, and as a lad entered the office of his uncle, Hickson W. Field, a commission merchant in New York City. In 1838 he was married to Catherine M. Van Cortlandt de Peyster, a member of an old New York family. In the same year he took charge of his uncle's business, which involved much trading with foreign countries, and conducted it successfully for more than a quarter of a century. Having been joined by his son as a partner, he retired at fifty-one from commercial activities, remaining a silent partner and devoting the rest of his life to philanthropy in various forms, giving his time and thought unreservedly to every public enterprise with which his name was associated.

Within a year he became president of the Home for Incurables, a New York institution that was virtually alone in its field. To this undertaking Field gave his attention continuously until his death—a period of twenty-seven years, during which he was said to have been absent from only seven monthly meetings of the Board of Managers. He gave liberally for specific needs of the Home, and the chapel, built in 1885, was the joint gift of himself and his wife, but far more important was the personal care that he lavished on the institution, differing in no degree from the



attention that a sagacious business man would give to a profit-making enterprise. At the same time he was interested in the New York Eye and Ear Infirmary and in like agencies of healing. In 1880 he was one of a small group of public-spirited citizens who founded the New York Free Circulating Library, which twenty years later formed the nucleus of the circulation department of the New York Public Library. At his death, in 1893, he was president of this organization. He worked for it enthusiastically for years, often at the sacrifice of personal comfort, when those who saw the importance of branch libraries on New York's East Side were few and were compelled to get on with scant resources.

Field was a life member, treasurer, and president of the New York Historical Society and also gave support to the American Geographical Society and the American Museum of Natural History. He aided the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, the Working Women's Protective Union, and the Sheltering Arms. His philanthropies were never showy; he seems to have had nothing to do with any public cause that he had not seriously studied and in every project for which he assumed official responsibility he would not rest until he knew the details of organization more thoroughly than most corporation directors know what is going on in their own companies. In his case the philanthropic motive wholly replaced the motive of personal enrichment. It became a greater joy to him to see good accomplished by his efforts and his money than it had been in his earlier years to accumulate the riches that made his philanthropies possible.

[F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (2 vols., 1901); J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Westchester County, N. Y.* (1886), 443–45; *27th Ann. Report Home for Incurables* (1893); Scharf, *Hist. of Westchester County, N. Y.* (1886), *N. Y. Times,* Mar. 18, 1893.] W. B. S—w.

**FIELD, CHARLES WILLIAM** (Apr. 6, 1828–Apr. 9, 1892), Confederate soldier, engineer, was born at "Airy Mount" in Woodford County, Ky., descended from Henry Field who settled in Virginia in the seventeenth century, and the youngest son of Willis and Isabella Miriam (Buck) Field. He was graduated from the United States Military Academy on July 1, 1849, and assigned to the 2nd Dragoons (present 2nd Cavalry) as brevet second lieutenant. Until 1855, he served on the frontier in New Mexico, Texas, and Kansas. He was promoted first lieutenant on Mar. 3, 1855, and the next year was detailed instructor in cavalry tactics at the Military Academy. He became captain on Jan. 31, 1861, and resigned his commission to enter the Confederate service as captain of cavalry on May

30 of the same year. Appointed colonel of the 6th Virginia Cavalry in September 1861, he organized that regiment at Manassas and served in "Jeb" Stuart's cavalry division until Mar. 9, 1862, when he became brigadier-general and commanded an infantry brigade which participated in the fighting against McDowell's advance on Fredericksburg and opened the Seven Days' battles in the attack on Mechanicsville, June 26, 1862. He was in the battles of Cedar Mountain and Second Bull Run (Manassas). In the latter he received a desperate wound through the hips, from which he never entirely recovered. As a token of the esteem in which he was held by his superiors, he was promoted major-general in February 1864 and given command of that crack fighting unit, Hood's old Texas division (Longstreet's corps), which he led in the vanguard of the troops that checked Grant's flank movement in the Wilderness. One company in his 4th Texas (Gregg's) Brigade lost every officer and man in that fight. Field was with Lee, Longstreet, and Jenkins when Longstreet was seriously wounded and Jenkins killed by fire from Confederate troops, supposed to be Mahone's, who mistook them for Federals. Until the end of the war Field was constantly engaged and he bore a heavy part in the bloody fighting at Cold Harbor, Deep Bottom, and before Petersburg. At Appomattox his division, the only thoroughly organized and effective body of troops in the Army of Northern Virginia, its nearly 5,000 men comprising more than half of the infantry surrendered by General Lee, "with bands silent, and flags nevermore to be unfurled, . . . stacked arms and became again true and orderly citizens of the United States."

After the war Field engaged in business in Baltimore and Georgia until 1875 when he became colonel of engineers of the Egyptian Army and its inspector-general during the Abyssinian War. In recognition of his services he was decorated by the Khedive with the Order of the Medjidie. In 1877 he returned to the United States and on Apr. 18, 1878, became doorkeeper of the House of Representatives of the Forty-sixth Congress. From 1881 to 1885 he was a civil engineer in the service of the United States and from 1885 to 1889 superintendent of the Hot Springs (Ark.) Reservation. In 1857 he married Monimia Mason of Virginia, by whom he had two sons. Of vigorous intellect and indomitable will, of superb physique, Field was the *beau sabreur*. In the words of Gen. Bradley T. Johnson (*post*), "Gentle and tender as a woman, and bold and true as Bayard, no better man ever strode horse or drew blade in peace or war." On

Field

the twenty-seventh anniversary of the surrender at Appomattox, he died in Washington, D. C.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. Officers and Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed., 1891); Bradley T. Johnson in *Asso. Grads. U. S. Mil. Acad., Ann. Reunion*, 1893, pp. 145–49; F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (2 vols., 1901).]

J. W. L.

**FIELD, CYRUS WEST** (Nov. 30, 1819–July 12, 1892), merchant, capitalist, promoter of the first Atlantic cable, sprang from typical New England stock. The founder of the family in America was Zechariah Field, who came from England about 1629; he was the grandson of John Field, astronomer, and was born in the old home at Ardsley, Yorkshire. Capt. Timothy Field, grandfather of Cyrus Field, served in the Continental Army under Washington. His son, David Dudley Field [*q.v.*], was graduated from Yale in 1802, became a Congregational minister, and married Submit Dickinson, daughter of Capt. Noah Dickinson of Somers, Conn. She was known as "The Somers Beauty." Cyrus West Field, their eighth child and seventh son, was born at Stockbridge, Mass. He was named after Cyrus Williams, a bank president, and the predecessor, West, of David Field in the pastorate at Stockbridge. The boy had a careful, Puritanical upbringing. His mind seems to have matured early. At the age of fifteen he abandoned the idea of a college education such as several of his brothers received, and persuaded his father to let him leave home and seek his fortune. With eight dollars in his pocket, he drove fifty miles to the Hudson and sailed down the river. In New York, where an older brother helped him, he became an errand-boy in the well-known dry-goods store of A. T. Stewart & Company on Broadway. For the first year he received $50 in wages, for the second year $100; board and lodging cost him $2 a week. His clothes were home-made from Stockbridge. After three years in New York he resigned at Stewart's and went to Lee, Mass., as assistant to his brother Matthew, a paper-manufacturer, who sent him on occasional trips. In less than two years he started in business for himself as a paper-manufacturer at Westfield, Mass., but shortly afterward was invited to become a partner in the firm of E. Root & Company, wholesale paper dealers, Maiden Lane, New York City. When he was twenty-one years old, he married Mary Bryan Stone of Guilford, Conn., his father performing the ceremony. Now, when everything looked promising, came one of those sudden changes of fortune which were to follow him through life. Six months after his marriage, the firm of E. Root & Company failed (Apr. 2, 1841), and though Field was only a junior partner, upon him fell the burden

of the debts. Out of this financial wreck he built up the firm of Cyrus W. Field & Company, his brother-in-law Joseph F. Stone being his partner. Such long hours did Field work to clear off the debts of the old company that his children saw him only on Sundays. In 1849 the family physician advised a trip to Europe because of overwork. Field and his wife visited England and the Continent. At the age of thirty-three he had paid all debts with interest, and was wealthy enough to retire from business, having over $250,000, all of which had been made in less than nine years. With his friend, Frederick E. Church [*q.v.*], the landscape-painter, he then took a trip to South America, crossed the Andes, and brought back an Indian boy and a live jaguar.

In 1854 he met a Canadian engineer, Frederick N. Gisborne, who was promoting a telegraph line across Newfoundland for the purpose of connecting with fast steamers to run between St. John's and Ireland, thus shortening by several days the transmission of important news from one side of the Atlantic to the other. There was talk of using carrier-pigeons between Newfoundland and the mainland of Nova Scotia. While Field studied a globe in his library, the idea of a cable between Newfoundland and Ireland came to him. Next morning he wrote to S. F. B. Morse [*q.v.*] and to M. F. Maury [*q.v.*] of the National Observatory at Washington. Morse and others, both in America and Europe, had had the idea before, but no promoter such as Field had taken it up. The longest submarine cables up to this time were between England and Holland, and Scotland and Ireland, where no great depths complicated the problem. After a favorable governmental charter had been obtained granting a fifty years' monopoly, a company of prominent New Yorkers was formed and $1,500,000 subscribed. The men who joined in this somewhat visionary scheme included Field's neighbors and friends, Peter Cooper, Wilson G. Hunt, Moses Taylor, and Marshall O. Roberts. When Field was fully started in this new enterprise, his partner Stone died, and a little later his only son; other difficulties began to arise, testing the courage and perseverance for which he became justly famous. Two and a half years were consumed in putting a telegraph line across Newfoundland and connecting it by cable with the mainland. A company was organized by Field in England and capital subscribed; Sir Charles T. Bright and John W. Brett cooperated and prominent people like Thackeray and Lady Byron took stock. Soundings were made in the ocean between Newfoundland and Ireland, and a shallow tableland or "telegraph plateau" discovered under Maury's direction. The British government assisted by lending a ship to help lay the cable and by guaranteeing a generous annual sum for official messages. At Washington when similar measures were proposed, opposition arose; but a bill was squeezed through by a narrow margin, and the large frigate *Niagara* was assigned to help the British *Agamemnon*. The laying of the cable was begun in 1857 with very little knowledge of how such things should be done. Several hundred miles had been laid out from Valentia, Ireland, when the cable broke; over $500,000 lost in the depths of the Atlantic! To cap the disappointment to Field, the financial depression of 1857 forced his mercantile firm in New York into bankruptcy and debt. Undeterred, in 1858 he tried the plan of having the two ships meet in mid-ocean, splice their cable ends, and start in opposite directions, one toward Ireland and one toward Newfoundland. On three of these attempts the cable quickly broke, and the ships returned to Ireland. There was talk of abandoning the enterprise. A fourth attempt was made, however, and proved successful; the ships arrived at their separate destinations on the same day, Aug. 5, 1858. A copper wire 1,950 miles long connected Trinity Bay with Valentia, through water over two miles deep. On Aug. 16, after the necessary adjustments had been made, Queen Victoria sent a message to President Buchanan. Hilarious celebrations were held, and Field was toasted by the same wiseacres who a few weeks before had called him a fool. In New York a two-day "cable carnival" was held, in "glorious recognition of the most glorious work of the age." At about the same time the cable stopped working. Several hundred messages had been sent in the three weeks of operation but now only vague signals came over the wire. This was perhaps due to faulty insulation or to using an electric current of too high a potential in the various experiments that had been tried. Among the scientists who advised about the trouble were Sir Charles Wheatstone and Professor William Thomson (afterward Lord Kelvin). The populace which had lauded "gallant" and "bold Cyrus" now began saying that the cable had not worked at all, and that the messages had been faked in order to permit him to sell his stock at a high price. The fact that he had not sold his stock made no difference to the story; nor did the clear evidence that a large sum of money had been saved the British government by the quick transmission of news from England to Canada to the effect that peace had been made with China, so that two regiments of soldiers which had been ordered from Canada to India were called back.

Field's telegraph stock declined sharply in value, and the next year his New York office and warehouse burned with heavy loss.

In 1859 Field was again in London and funds were raised for a new cable and for possible repairs to the old one. His personal business reverses and the Civil War now intervened. During the war Field talked and wrote to influential officials both in the United States and England about the need for a cable. Before the war was over he had engaged the world's largest steamer, the *Great Eastern,* to lay a new cable on condition that if it were not successfully laid no payment would be made, but that £50,000 would be paid in shares of the telegraph company for a successful laying. A heavier and better-insulated cable was started out from Valentia. When more than half of the distance had been covered, the cable parted. Grappling was tried and the cable picked up, but lost each time. Additional funds were raised by a reorganization of the company, and another cable ordered. During the summer of 1866 experience and technical improvements won the long fight; a new cable was successfully laid and the cable of 1865 grappled for and recovered. In 1867 Congress voted Field a gold medal but because of the stupidity of a government clerk several years elapsed before he received it.

Field gave early support to the idea of laying a cable to the Hawaiian Islands, thence to Asia and to Australia, and corresponded with various foreign officials about it. During the controversies between the United States and England following the Civil War, he lent the influence resulting from his acquaintance with such men as Gladstone, John Bright, and the Duke of Argyll toward smoothing over the international difficulties. His already extensive travels were continued by trips to Iceland and around the world. In 1877 he interested himself in the efforts being made to give New York a system of elevated railways. The project was in financial straits. He offered to purchase a majority of the stock and to serve as president without salary if the creditors would accept bonds at sixty cents on the dollar. He contributed largely to make the elevated lines a reality. Other activities included participation with Jay Gould in the development of the Wabash Railroad, and control of a New York newspaper, the *Mail and Express.* In 1881 when President Garfield was shot, Field started the movement to raise a sum of money for the bereaved family; over $362,000 was raised, of which he contributed $5,000. A few years later during the illness of Gen. Grant he was deterred from a similar service by a modest note from

Field

Grant. In a few more years Field himself was to be in need of similar help. His investments were depreciating rapidly in value, partly because of operations of men whom he considered as friends. On his seventy-second birthday he found that of the fortunes which he had invested in telegraph and elevated-railway stocks only a few thousand dollars were left. His last years were saddened by financial and domestic troubles. A gleam of happiness, however, came in 1890 when he and his wife celebrated their golden wedding. They had had seven children and many grandchildren. The family had lived at Gramercy Park in New York City but had spent many of their summers in a fine country house at Irvington-on-Hudson. Field's wife died a year after the golden wedding, and Field himself less than a year after his wife. He was buried in Stockbridge.

He was a courageous and spirited man, with strong persuasive powers and a quick, decisive manner. He possibly overestimated the value of his enthusiasm and frankness in overcoming the selfishness and ingratitude of others. When misfortunes overtook him, less brilliant men than he remarked sagely that he was too visionary and chivalrous for a workaday world. Of his brothers, David Dudley [*q.v.*] was an eminent jurist and law reformer, Stephen Johnson [*q.v.*] became a justice of the United States Supreme Court, and Henry Martyn [*q.v.*] attained some distinction as a clergyman and author.

[The best source is *Cyrus W. Field, His Life and Work* (1896), by Isabella Field Judson, his daughter; this includes autobiographical notes and many letters. Other references are *Cyrus W. Field* (n.d.), *History of the Atlantic Telegraph* (1867), and the revised *Story of the Atlantic Telegraph* (1892), all by Henry Martyn Field; *The Story of the Atlantic Cable* (1903), by Chas. Bright; *The Telegraph in America* (1886), by Jas. D. Reid; *The Atlantic Telegraph* (1866), by W. H. Russell; *The Laying of the Telegraphic Cable* (1858), by John Mullaly; *N. Y. Tribune,* July 13, 1892.] P.B.M.

**FIELD, DAVID DUDLEY** (May 20, 1781–Apr. 15, 1867), Congregational clergyman, local historian, was born at East Guilford (now Madison), Conn. He was the younger son of Capt. Timothy and Anna (Dudley) Field and a descendant of John Field, an English astronomer, whose grandson, Zechariah Field, came to Massachusetts about 1629. He early displayed a taste for the ministry. As a boy he was wont to mount a rock and preach as long as his youthful companions might listen; as he walked on the seashore he shouted texts at the waves. His family encouraged him and he was prepared for college by his pastor, John Elliott. He graduated from Yale with high honors in 1802 and studied divinity with Dr. Charles Backus of Somers. Field

had gone to Somers for theological instruction; there he also found a wife, and in October 1803 married Submit, the fourth daughter of Capt. Noah Dickinson. In September 1803 he had been licensed to preach by the Association of New Haven East. After preaching five months as a candidate at Haddam he was made pastor of the Congregational church. He remained in Haddam exactly fourteen years. For five months in 1818 he was on a missionary tour in western New York; on his return he stopped in Stockbridge, Mass., and preached several sermons. After a trial of three months, on Aug. 25, 1819, he was installed as pastor of the Congregational church at Stockbridge at a salary of $600 a year. He returned in 1837 to his old church in Haddam to bring peace and harmony to a divided flock. Seven years he preached in the little church at Haddam and seven years in the near-by village of Higganum. Early in 1851 he was persuaded to retire and moved to Stockbridge, where he remained until his death sixteen years later. There were two daughters and eight sons, of whom four —David Dudley, Cyrus West, Stephen Johnson, and Henry Martyn [*qq.v.*]—achieved distinction in the life of nineteenth-century America.

Field had long been interested in gathering the details of local history and in 1814 he published a small *History of the Towns of Haddam and East-Haddam, Connecticut.* Five years later the Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences published his *Statistical Account of the County of Middlesex.* He edited and prepared the *History of the County of Berkshire, Mass.* (1829), and published a *History of the Town of Pittsfield . . . Mass.* (1844). He was appointed historian of his class in 1842 and his *Brief Memoirs* were privately printed in 1863. He published several other local histories and five sermons, including a *Warning against Drunkenness* (1816), delivered at the execution of Peter Lung at Middletown. His historical work was distinguished chiefly by his unwearying labor and practical common-sense.

[F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (2 vols., 1901); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. V (1911); Henry M. Field, *Life of David Dudley Field* (1898) and *Record of the Family of the late Rev. David Dudley Field* (privately printed, 1880); Henry B. Dawson in *Hist. Mag.*, June 1867.] F. M—n.

**FIELD, DAVID DUDLEY** (Feb. 13, 1805–Apr. 13, 1894), lawyer, law reformer, born at Haddam, Conn., was the eldest son of Rev. David Dudley Field [*q.v.*] and Submit (Dickinson) Field. On his mother's side he was descended from Capt. Noah Dickinson who had served with Gen. Putnam in the French war. He attended the Academy at Stockbridge, Mass., and Williams College, from which he withdrew before the graduation of his class in 1825. He studied law with Harmanus Bleecker in Albany, and with the firm of Henry and Robert Sedgwick in New York. In 1828, he was admitted to the New York bar, and two years later became the partner of Robert Sedgwick on the retirement of Henry. He was married three times: first to Jane Lucinda Hopkins, who died in 1836; second, to Mrs. Harriet Davidson, who died in 1864; and third, to Mrs. Mary E. Carr, who died in 1876. Field attained some prominence in politics although his temperament was not such as to fit him for great success in that field. He was too rigid and unbending, and too likely to form and express opinions without regard to party leadership. He was Democratic nominee for election to the New York Assembly in 1841, but was defeated. Later, he broke vehemently with his party on two important issues,—the annexation of Texas, which he rightly declared meant war with Mexico; and the slavery question. In 1847 he was a delegate to the Democratic convention in Syracuse, where he introduced the "Corner-Stone" resolution, declaring "uncompromising hostility to the extension of slavery into territory now free, or which may be hereafter acquired by any action of the Government of the United States" (H. M. Field, *post,* p. 115). When the Republican party nominated Frémont for president, Field favored his candidacy; and when Lincoln spoke for the first time in New York City, Field was one of his supporters on the platform at Cooper Institute. Although not a delegate to the Chicago convention of 1860, Field attended, and his influence with Horace Greeley and others at the time when they had conceded the nomination to Seward, is thought by many to have been chiefly responsible for Lincoln's nomination. He was chairman of the New York delegation to the Peace Conference in Washington in 1861. After the assassination of Lincoln, he ceased to act with the Republicans. In 1876, at the suggestion of Tilden, he was elected to Congress to fill the two months' unexpired term of Representative Smith Ely, in order that he might participate in the Hayes-Tilden election contest.

Field's political activities, though important in themselves, were in reality mere episodes in a life devoted to law and law reform. He was prominent as a lawyer for sixty years and in the great cases litigated in the ten years following the Civil War was an outstanding figure. Many of these cases involved constitutional questions of the utmost importance, for example, the Milligan case, which was argued in 1867 before the United States Supreme Court on the part of the United

States, by Attorney-General Stanbery and Benjamin F. Butler, and for Milligan by Field, Jeremiah S. Black and James A. Garfield. The decision upheld the contention that, since the civil courts were open, the military commission which had tried and convicted Lamdin P. Milligan was without jurisdiction in the case; and that, the period of suspension of the writ of *habeas corpus* having expired, a writ should be issued and Milligan discharged from custody.

Then followed the Cummings case in which Field and his associates convinced the United States Supreme Court of the invalidity of the Missouri constitutional provision requiring all citizens to take an oath of loyalty declaring that they had not been in armed hostility to the state or given aid and comfort to persons engaged in such hostility. The McCardle case of 1868 involved the constitutionality of the Reconstruction Act of 1867 under which military governments had been set up in states lately in rebellion. McCardle was being held for trial before a military commission in Mississippi on the charge of inciting to insurrection, disorder, and violence. On the hearing in the United States Supreme Court, eminent counsel including Charles O'Conor were associated with Field for McCardle, and the case was argued on its merits. Before a decision was rendered, the act of 1867 was amended, and subsequently McCardle was discharged. A fourth constitutional case argued by Field was the Cruikshank case (1875) in which the constitutionality of the Enforcement Act of 1870 was involved. The decision of the circuit court for Louisiana convicting Cruikshank of conspiring to prevent negroes from exercising their right to vote, was, upon reasoning adduced by Field, reversed by the United States Supreme Court.

A chapter in Field's professional life which was the subject of bitter controversy concerned the Erie Railroad litigation of 1869. Field was counsel for Jay Gould and James Fisk [*qq.v.*] and was charged by Samuel Bowles and others with unprofessional conduct in having, it was alleged, in connection with a stockholders' meeting, engaged in a conspiracy to carry an election for Fisk and Gould by the use and abuse of legal process and proceedings. A large amount of controversial literature was produced, characteristic examples of which were by Charles Francis Adams (*Chapters of Erie*, 1871), by George Tick. nor Curtis (*An Inquiry into the Albany and Susquehanna Railroad Litigations of 1869*), by Jeremiah S. Black (*Galaxy*, March 1872), and by Albert Stickney (*North American Review*, April 1871; *Galaxy*, October 1872). Field's conduct was considered by the Committee on Grievances

Field

of the Association of the Bar of the City of New York, which presented a report "of such a character that the consequences to Mr. Field, if the recommendations had been adopted, would have been of the most serious character" (Theron G. Strong, *Landmarks of a Lawyer's Lifetime*, 1914, p. 192). No vote was taken on the recommendations. His opponents also put the worst construction on the fact that, from 1873 to 1878, he served as chief counsel for the defendant in the prosecution of "Boss" Tweed, who had become a director, along with Gould and Fisk, of the Erie Railroad.

Field's skill and learning as a lawyer were, however, never questioned. He served with distinction as counsel for Tilden in opposition to William M. Evarts, before the Hayes-Tilden Electoral Commission of 1876. As late as 1882, when he was seventy-seven years old, he argued for the plaintiff the case of *New York* vs. *Louisiana* before the United States Supreme Court. But while he was a leader among practising lawyers, the work in which he made for himself a permanent name was that of law reform, with special reference to codification, both of municipal and international law. He had been at the bar only eleven years when in 1839 he began an agitation from which he did not desist until his death. His purpose was to reduce to written form the whole body of law of New York, both substantive and adjective, and in the latter field to combine in one series of proceedings actions both at law and in equity. It was through his efforts that there were added to the New York State Constitution of 1846 provisions (Article I, Section 7, and Article VI, Section 24) directing the legislature to appoint three commissioners to "reduce into a written and systematic code the whole body of the law of this state, or so much and such parts thereof as to the said Commissioners shall seem practicable and expedient"; and three other commissioners "to revise, reform, simplify and abridge the rules, practice, pleadings, forms and proceedings of the courts of record." The legislature at its next session appointed the required commissions, of which Field became a member. Largely through his personal effort two procedural codes were prepared and reported to the legislature. The first commission to codify the substantive law produced no permanent result, and a new commission with Field as chairman was not appointed until 1857. Between 1860 and 1865, complete political, civil and penal codes were reported, but only one of them, the Penal Code (1881) was adopted by the legislature. The Civil Code was twice rejected by the Assembly and thrice passed by it, on two oc-

casions receiving the assent of the Senate, but failing to obtain the approval of the governor. The concept of these codes was wholly Field's, and the execution of them almost equally so. With him on the commission were William Curtis Noyes and Alexander W. Bradford, but neither of them did any large part of the work of codification, which was done by Field with the assistance of Austin Abbott, Benjamin Vaughan Abbott and Thomas G. Shearman. The struggle for the adoption of the Civil Code was a battle royal between Field, almost single-handed, and the leaders of the New York bar. James C. Carter was appointed by the Association of the Bar of the City of New York to head the opposition, by means of arguments and addresses to the successive legislatures and governors. The struggle was not devoid of personal bitterness. "Few men," says Strong, "have been subjected to greater ridicule and abuse than David Dudley Field," but, he continues, "the Code of Civil Procedure . . . is a monument to his legal capacity, untiring zeal and constructive force that will immortalize his name as the 'Father of the Code'" (*Landmarks of a Lawyer's Life,* p. 420). The Civil Procedure Code has been adopted in whole or in part by twenty-four states, as well as by several foreign nations. Almost equal recognition has been given to the Criminal Procedure Code. The state of California adopted all five of the "Field" codes.

The passion for codification was almost an obsession with Field, and so it came about naturally that while engaged in the struggle for the adoption of his New York Codes, he headed a movement for the codification of the law of nations. The drafting of the New York Codes was completed in 1865. The successful issue, during the next year, of his brother's attempt to lay the Atlantic cable stirred Field's imagination, and caused him to believe that a further bond between nations might be forged by the preparation of an international code. At the Manchester meeting of the British Association for the Promotion of Social Science, in September 1866, he proposed the appointment of a committee to prepare the outline of such a code. The committee was appointed with Field as a member. When the work moved slowly because the widely separated members could not meet for conference, Field essayed the task alone. With the assistance of Austin Abbott, Howard P. Wilds, Charles F. Stone and President F. A. P. Barnard of Columbia College, he prepared, and published in 1872, a *Draft Outline of an International Code,* dealing with the relations between states in time of peace. The second edition, published in 1876, included



Part II on War. An Italian translation of the first edition was published in 1874, and a French translation of the second edition, in 1881. From 1866 to his death, Field visited Europe nearly every year to attend conferences devoted to international affairs, before which he read many papers; and he was instrumental in the formation of the Association for the Reform and Codification of the Law of Nations, the first meeting of which was held in Brussels in October 1873.

Both as a lawyer and as a jurist, Field made a deep impression on his generation. His positive achievements were of a high order, such as could come only from a man of great natural ability and of extensive learning. At the same time, he was aggressive and relentless in the prosecution of his designs, strong in his feelings and passions, positive in his opinions, and combative in temperament. One of his maxims was, "The only men who make any lasting impression on the world are fighters." Therefore he made many enemies, and a few stanch friends. All found him stalwart and impressive. Some found him cold and forbidding, while others who professed to know him more intimately found in him a magnetic and sympathetic personality.

[The chief sources of information are Field's own writings contained in *Speeches, Arguments and Miscellaneous Papers* (3 vols., 1884–90), ed. by A. P. Sprague; a *Life* by Henry Martyn Field (1898); Helen K. Hoy's biographical sketch in Lewis's *Great Am. Lawyers* (1908), V, 125–74; and an article by S. Newton Fiero in *N. Y. State Bar Association Proc.,* 1895, XVIII, 177–93; F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (1901); *Am. Law Rev.,* May–June, 1894; *N. Y. Tribune,* Apr. 14, 1894; *High Finance in the Sixties,* ed. by Frederick C. Hicks (Yale Univ. Press, 1929).] F. C. H.

**FIELD, EUGENE** (Sept. 2?, 1850–Nov. 4, 1895), author, was the son of Roswell and Frances (Reed) Field. The exact date of Eugene Field's birth is uncertain. He himself gave both Sept. 2 and Sept. 3, preferring Sept. 3 in his later years (*Auto-Analysis,* privately printed, 1894). Family tradition inclines to Sept. 2. His latest biographer (Slason Thompson, *Life of Eugene Field,* 1927) conjectures that he may whimsically have favored the double date in order that friends who forgot Sept. 2 might have a chance "to make amends." His father was a native of Vermont who had removed to St. Louis, Mo., and who was legal counsel for Dred Scott. His mother was also of Vermont ancestry, the daughter of a professional musician. She died in 1856, and her two children, Eugene and Roswell, Jr., were put in the care of a cousin, Miss Mary Field French, of Amherst, Mass. Eugene attended for a time a private school at Monson, Mass., and he spent most of the academic year 1868–69 at Williams College. In the summer of 1869 his father died

and in the following autumn he entered Knox College, Galesburg, Ill. Here he completed the year, probably not very profitably. The next year he spent at the University of Missouri, where his brother was a junior. After an unimportant attempt to be an actor, he went abroad in the autumn of 1872, taking with him a college chum. Here he saw something of Great Britain, France, and Italy, and spent all that was available of a considerable inheritance from his father. On his return he married (Oct. 16, 1873) Julia Sutherland Comstock, of St. Joseph, Mo., to whom he had become engaged two years before when she was but fourteen years of age. In spite of the youth of the bride and considerable parental hesitation the marriage proved a happy one. Mrs. Field not only endured, but seems to have enjoyed the eccentricities of her husband; she aided in keeping his business affairs from complete wreck, and she was a devoted mother to her eight children; while Field himself wrote a year before his death, "It is only when I look and see how young and fair and sweet my wife is that I have a good opinion of myself." After spending the little remainder of his patrimony on a wedding trip, he turned to newspaper work, and held successively editorial positions on the *St. Joseph Gazette,* the *St. Louis Journal,* the *Kansas City Times,* and the *Denver Tribune.* In 1883 he joined the staff of the Chicago *Morning News* (renamed the *Record* in 1890) with which he remained till the time of his death. His chief task was the conducting of a column on the editorial page, "Sharps and Flats." In 1889–90 he took an extended trip to Europe, partly for his health, which was precarious during his later years. He continued to be active, however, and wrote his stint of newspaper copy on the day of his death. For some time he lived in Buena Park, a suburb of Chicago, and here not long before he died he acquired a house and grounds of his own which he nicknamed "The Sabine Farm." His experiences in planning and remodeling furnished material for his series of sketches, "The House." In spite of his ancestry and his boyhood in New England Eugene Field always considered himself a thorough Westerner. He declined flattering calls to Eastern newspapers on the ground that he would feel cramped and repressed in the East; and he introduced the word "Western" rather obtrusively into the titles of two of his best-known volumes.

Field possessed a whimsicality which showed itself both in his personal relationships and in his writings. He seems to have fascinated most of those who knew him. The stories of his ingenious, elaborate, and sometimes apparently heartless practical jokes, and of his fertile schemes for inducing friends to buy his meals and pay his bills may impress some readers less favorably than friendly narrators expected. In his writings he was as odd and as irrepressible as in private life. Although his editorial superiors are said to have rejected many of his extreme paragraphs, his column made free with the names of friends, enemies—so far as he had enemies—and strangers; telling imaginary anecdotes, creating imaginary precocious children for childless persons, announcing the engagements of well-known people in the most embarrassing fashion. One of his favorite practises was to attribute to various notables his own verses—not merely burlesques, but some of his better serious poems. The "Wanderer" was published as the work of Madame Modjeska, the actress; and his "Divine Lullaby" and some other bits were ascribed to Judge Cooley, the first head of the Interstate Commerce Commission. The daily contributions to "Sharps and Flats" included not only ephemera, but verse and prose that has become classic of its kind. While in no sense a poet of depth and power, and given to such affectations as the elaborate concoction of verse in real and imaginary dialects—Old English and Dutch particularly—he could cleverly hit the popular taste in both humorous and pathetic bits. His most successful humorous poem, "The Little Peach," written while he was still in Denver, was long recited and sung by many comedians. It is interesting to notice that on this his own comment was "Popular, but rotten" (*Auto-Analysis*). A less boisterous humor is seen in "Just 'fore Christmas." He set most store, however, by his pathetically sentimental poems and his poems for children. Here there is considerable sameness, which he tried to relieve by resorting to his artificial dialects. He dealt many times with the joys of Christmas, and with the death of a child and the toys and tokens left behind. The best treatment of this latter theme is in "Little Boy Blue." The most successful of the lullabies is "Wynken, Blynken, and Nod," which keeps the Dutch imagery, but avoids the dialect. He also wrote a number of short tales, mostly fanciful or sentimental, which have not on the whole lasted so well as the better verse.

Two of Field's chief interests in his later years were Horace and book-collecting, and both were extensively reflected in his column. He made free—and to the devout classicist irreverent—paraphrases of some of Horace's *Odes,* which were first printed in "Sharps and Flats" and were afterward issued, together with others by Roswell Field, as *Echoes from the Sabine Farm* (privately printed 1891, published 1892). His

interest in rare and beautiful books led to the creation of the "Saints and Sinners" anecdotes; a group of well-known Chicago bibliophiles, among them three divines, were supposed to meet in a corner of a local book-store and talk of their treasures and of things in general. Later, Field began, and had almost finished at the time of his death, a series of sketches arranged as an imaginary autobiography, "The Love Affairs of a Bibliomaniac."

He was by no means the first American newspaper paragrapher to conduct an individual column, but his practise differed from that of most of his predecessors; and while his audacious indulgence in personalities could not safely be followed, he has had a strong influence on the later development of an interesting feature of American journalism. "Sharps and Flats" had more serious prose and verse than most earlier columns, and of better quality. The humor was whimsical, sometimes subtle, rather than of the slap-dash order. Of especial importance was the introduction of literary and bibliographic material in a journal of the sort for which Field wrote. Almost all of his writings of importance were first published in the newspapers with which he was connected, though not all in his special columns. His first booklet, *The Tribune Primer* (Denver, 1882), compiled from rather cheap humorous bits in the *Denver Tribune*, is now a rare collector's item, as is *Culture's Garland* (Boston, 1887), a collection of satirical skits the nature of which may be inferred from the descriptive sub-title, *Being Memoranda of the Gradual Rise of Literature, Art, Music, and Society in Chicago and other Western Ganglia*, followed by a wreath of sausages as title-vignette. Other works published in his lifetime are *A Little Book of Western Verse* (1889); *A Little Book of Profitable Tales* (privately printed 1889, published 1890); *With Trumpet and Drum* (1892); *Second Book of Verse* (1892); *The Holy Cross and Other Tales* (1893). He also contributed an introduction to Stone's *First Editions of American Authors* (Cambridge, 1893). After his death a collected edition of his works—not including the *Tribune Primer* or *Culture's Garland*—was published in New York (10 vols., 1896), enlarged by the addition of two volumes of *Sharps and Flats* collated by Slason Thompson (1900). There have been various collections of his poems and stories for children, with illustrations and music. Since his death there have been private editions of various selections from his otherwise uncollected writings. (See *Cambridge History of American Literature*, II, 543, IV, 641, for a more inclusive bibliography.)



[Field recounted briefly the facts of his life in a sketch at the time of the publication of *Culture's Garland* (reprinted in *Eugene Field's Creative Years*, pp. 10–11), and at slightly greater length in the opening paragraphs of his *Auto-Analysis*. The many obituary notices consisted mostly of facts from the *Auto-Analysis* supplemented by anecdotes. *Yenowine's Illustrated News* issued a Eugene Field *Supplement* (Milwaukee, Nov. 30, 1895). The most important biographies are Slason Thompson, *Eugene Field, a Study in Heredity and Contradictions* (2 vols., 1901); Chas. H. Dennis, *Eugene Field's Creative Years* (1924); Slason Thompson, *Life of Eugene Field* (1927). Numerous anecdotes and bits of reminiscence have been written by former newspaper associates, actors, literary friends, and others. See for example Francis Wilson, *The Eugene Field I Know* (1898); E. C. Stedman, *Genius and Other Essays* (1911).]

W. B. C.

**FIELD, HENRY MARTYN** (Apr. 3, 1822–Jan. 26, 1907), clergyman, author, born at Stockbridge, Mass., was a son of David Dudley [*q.v.*] and Submit (Dickinson) Field and a descendant of Zechariah Field who emigrated to Boston about 1629 and later settled in Connecticut. As a youth he was sickly and was given to study. He entered Williams College at the age of twelve and at fourteen delivered a temperance address in the church at Tyringham. He was graduated in 1838 and several months later entered the Theological Seminary at East Windsor, Conn. In 1840 he was licensed to preach and the following year graduated from the Seminary, delivering an oration on "The Ministry favorable to the Highest Development of Mind." When his brother, David Dudley [*q.v.*], offered to advance him money for study in Germany, his father warned him to eschew German rationalism and he went to New Haven for a year. That he was called to St. Louis in 1842 as pastor of the Third Presbyterian Church and thus escaped settling in New England, Field always regarded as a special providence. After five years he resigned and went to Europe. He visited Ireland in the year of the great famine. While living in Paris he witnessed the revolution of 1848. He went to Italy and observed Roman Catholicism; he felt sad to think that it was all a splendid pageant, but no religion (*Good and Bad in the Roman Catholic Church*, 1849, p. 5). Having returned to New York, he sought out the descendants of the Irish patriots living in that city and in 1851 published a popular history, *The Irish Confederates and the Rebellion of 1798*. In May 1851 Field married Laure Desportes who after having been seriously involved in the Choiseul-Praslin tragedy (see London *Times*, Sept. 2–4, 1847) had left Paris and settled in New York. In the same year he became pastor of a Congregational church in West Springfield, Mass. He resigned in 1854, moved to New York, and bought an interest in the *Evangelist*, of which he later became sole owner and editor.

He published in 1867 the *History of the Atlantic Telegraph* of which his brother, Cyrus West [*q.v.*], had been a chief promoter.

In 1875–76 Field made an extended tour of the world seeking to forget the recent death of his wife. He described this tour in two volumes published in 1877: *From the Lakes of Killarney to the Golden Horn* and *From Egypt to Japan.* A journey to the East in 1882 and a tour of the Mediterranean in 1886–87 each resulted in the publication of three volumes. His travel books, written in a discursive and faintly ecstatic style, were the delight of a large public which yearned for amusement and edification. Field was a liberal and progressive influence within the Presbyterian Church. He long advocated a revision of the Westminster Confession of Faith. He was one of the first to make a study of the reconstruction problems of the South for himself. In 1888 he entered a long public discussion with Robert G. Ingersoll [*q.v.*] in an effort to persuade him of the sublimity of the idea of God, but the latter only congratulated him upon having "bidden farewell to the Presbyterian church" (*Field-Ingersoll Discussion,* 1888, pp. 6, 61). Field had sometimes used the *Evangelist* to exploit the distinguished family to which he belonged. In 1880 he issued privately a *Record of the Family of the Late Reverend David Dudley Field.* He wrote biographies of his brothers David Dudley and Cyrus West and had planned a volume on his brother Stephen Johnson, a justice of the United States Supreme Court. When in the evening of his life he contemplated the past, his melancholy was tinged with regret that his brothers had been born to great deeds and he but to celebrate them.

[Autobiographical fragments in Field's own writings; *Boston Transcript,* Jan. 28, 1907; *Who's Who in America,* 1903–05; private information.] F. M—n.

**FIELD, HERBERT HAVILAND** (Apr. 25, 1868–Apr. 5, 1921), zoölogist and bibliographer, was born of Quaker parents, Aaron and Lydia Seaman (Haviland) Field, in Brooklyn, N. Y. His early education was at the Friends' School and the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute. He received the B.A. degree from Harvard in 1888, the M.A. in 1890, and the Ph.D. in 1891. His graduate work was in the department of zoölogy but in connection with his own research he became deeply interested in the problem of simplifying and clarifying bibliographical methods. After completing his work at Harvard, he went abroad, continuing his zoölogical studies at Freiburg, Leipzig, and Paris.

During the years 1892–95, he published several important papers upon which his reputation as a zoölogist rests, but his interest centered more and more clearly in bibliography, and primarily in the problem of how to make the essential contents of current zoölogical literature available to the workers in that rapidly expanding field of research. Wherever he went he took occasion to confer with teachers, investigators, and librarians, seeking advice and encouragement in the formation and development of his plans. He recognized in Dewey's decimal system of classification of knowledge for library purposes a most valuable aid and by combining it with a system of index cards, he believed he saw the solution of his problem. By the prompt publication and distribution of such cards, workers in the zoölogical laboratories of the world could be kept continually in touch with the current literature bearing on their particular problems. Obviously a central publication office where the indexing should be done, and the cards printed, and from which they could be distributed, was a prime requisite. After careful consideration, Field selected Zürich, Switzerland, as the most suitable place for such an office and there in 1895, he established the "Concilium Bibliographicum," with which his name has ever since been associated. In 1903 he was married in London to Nina Eschwege and established a home in Zürich. His greatest difficulty was finding the financial support for what was necessarily an expensive undertaking, of interest to a very limited constituency. He gave generously from his own by no means abundant resources, and he received subventions from Switzerland, from Zürich, and from various scientific foundations and organizations. Throughout his whole life, however, his work was hampered by inadequate financial support.

Field was a man of striking appearance and personality, with unusual linguistic ability. He used Latin, Italian, French, German, Dutch, and Russian as well as his native tongue and was therefore a particularly desirable member of international gatherings. He was also gifted with an exceptional memory, manifested not only in an ability to quote freely from literature and conversations but especially in the power of reproducing music to which he had been a listener. He was conspicuous for orderliness and pertinacity, qualities without which he could never have established and maintained the Concilium.

[Field's own accounts of the foundation of the Concilium in *Papers and Proc. 26th Meeting, A. L. A.* (1904) and in *Annotationes Concilii Bibliographici,* Dec. 1907; Henry B. Ward, "Herbert Haviland Field," in *Science,* Nov. 4, 1921; Karl Hescheler, "Dr. Phil. Herbert Haviland Field," in *Nekrologen zu den Verhandlungen der Schweizerischen Naturforschenden Gesellschaft* (Schaffhausen, 1921); *Who's Who in America,* 1920–21; *Nature,* Apr. 21, 1921; *N. Y. Times,* Apr. 7, 1921.] H. L. C.

Field

**FIELD, JOSEPH M.** (1810–Jan. 28, 1856), actor, playwright, journalist, is said to have descended from the dramatist, Nathaniel Field, Shakespeare's contemporary (Lilian Whiting, *Kate Field,* 1899, p. 4). The family came originally from Warwickshire, but subsequently settled in Ireland, and while some chroniclers state that Field was born in England, his probable birthplace was Dublin, where his father, Matthew, was a prominent Catholic. While Joseph was still an infant the family emigrated to Baltimore and then to New York (*Longworth's New York Directory,* 1817–18, p. 198). His education could not have been extensive, for he appeared at the Tremont Theatre, Boston, as early as 1827 (*Columbian Centinel,* Nov. 28, 1827). Three years later he made his New York début at the Park Theatre, but by 1833 he was playing at New Orleans and soon came to be recognized as one of the leading actors on the southwestern circuit. Under the management of Sol Smith he appeared at Cincinnati, St. Louis, Mobile, and lesser towns. At this time Field regarded himself as a tragedian, but afterward, in the words of N. M. Ludlow (*Dramatic Life as I Found It,* 1880, p. 436), under whose management he also served, he "settled down to what he really was clever in,—eccentric comedy." In 1837 he married Smith's leading actress, the beautiful Eliza Riddle, and thereafter the two frequently played together in the southwestern theatres, the season of 1839–40 being spent at New Orleans. During this period Field contributed scores of poems, signed "Straws," to the New Orleans *Picayune,* most of them commenting humorously on current affairs. In 1840 the *Picayune* sent him to Europe as a correspondent. Five years later, after further experiences in the theatre, including engagements in New York and Philadelphia, he was associated in the founding of the St. Louis *Reveille,* a noted newspaper during the six years of its life (William Hyde and H. L. Conard, *Encyclopedia of the History of St. Louis,* 1899, III, 1638). In May 1852, after having directed the Mobile Theatre for two years, he opened the handsome new Varieties Theatre at St. Louis. Though his company was one of the best that had yet appeared in that city, he found the enterprise so unprofitable that he abandoned it in the fall of 1853 (*Missouri Republican,* Nov. 8, 1853, and following issues). During his last years he confined his efforts chiefly to Mobile, and there he died after a lingering illness. He was survived by his wife and daughter, Mary Katherine Keemle [*q.v.*], who as "Kate Field" became a celebrated lecturer.

Field was a prolific writer of plays, none of which was published. At least one, however, *Job and His Children,* produced at St. Louis, Aug. 25, 1852, exists in manuscript and gives evidence of some command of situation and character. It is known that his *Victoria* (1838) had as main persons the British queen and James Gordon Bennett; that *Family Ties* (1846) won a five hundred dollar prize offered by the actor Danforth Marble and was given at the Park Theatre; that *Oregon, or the Disputed Territory* (1846) dealt with the northwest boundary dispute. His chief published work, *The Drama in Pokerville; The Bench and Bar of Jurytown, and Other Stories* (1847), is a collection of crudely humorous tales. Field was a man of varied abilities, whose very versatility, so his contemporaries thought, was a bar to distinction in any one pursuit.

[Aside from references cited above, see Sol F. Smith, *Theatrical Management in the West and South* (1868), *passim*; J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of St. Louis City and County* (2 vols., 1883); J. N. Ireland, *Records of the N. Y. Stage* (2 vols., 1866–67); A. H. Quinn, *A Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Beginning to the Civil War* (1923). The records of Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass., have been used to verify dates of birth and death.] O. S. C.

**FIELD, KATE** [See FIELD, MARY KATHERINE KEEMLE, 1839–1896].

**FIELD, MARSHALL** (Aug. 18, 1834–Jan. 16, 1906), merchant, was born near the village of Conway, Mass., the son of John and Fidelia (Nash) Field and a descendant of Zechariah Field who came to Dorchester, Mass., about 1629. He attended the district school and a private school in Conway, but his school life ended by the time he was seventeen, when he left home to become a clerk in the dry-goods store of Deacon Davis at Pittsfield. Here he remained for five years, a quiet, unassuming, but courteous clerk, giving little promise of success. He was offered a partnership in the business, but his interest was in the fast-developing West and, accordingly, he left Pittsfield for Chicago in 1856. Although the city had more than doubled in population in the four years 1852–56, it was still a mud town with wooden sidewalks. Field, having no capital, took employment as a clerk in the wholesale dry-goods firm of Cooley, Wadsworth & Company, the leading wholesale house in the city. His salary was $400 the first year; he slept in the store and saved $200.

He was employed as traveling salesman as well as clerk in the store, and his travels about the country impressed him with the opportunity for business expansion. Courteous and good-looking, he soon built up a following at the store. In January 1861 he became general manager and the next year a partner in the firm which was now Cooley,

Farwell & Company. In 1864 Levi Z. Leiter was admitted to partnership, and the firm became Farwell, Field & Company. Hardly had the firm become established under its new name when Potter Palmer, wishing to retire from the retail and wholesale dry-goods business he had built up, offered it in 1865 to Field and Leiter. Palmer financed the new organization of Field, Palmer & Leiter, retiring himself in 1867. Within eight years Field had risen from the position of clerk at $400 a year to become head of a successful business in which he had an interest of $260,000. He was now thirty years old. When Potter Palmer withdrew from the firm in 1867, Henry Field and later Joseph Field, brothers of Marshall, were taken in. The firm remained Field, Leiter & Company until 1881 when, upon the withdrawal of Leiter, it became Marshall Field & Company, Field owning the principal interest. The business weathered the loss of its store and stock of goods in the Chicago Fire of 1871, and the ensuing panic of 1873. Hardly had this latter trial passed, when the retail store was again burned in 1877. Nothing could prevent the success of the business under Field's management, however. As early as 1868 sales amounted to $12,000,000 a year; by 1881 they were $25,000,000, and before Field's death, had reached $68,000,000.

Field, like A. T. Stewart in New York and Wanamaker in Philadelphia [*qq.v.*], promoted a new type of merchandising. His was a one-price store, with the price plainly marked on the merchandise. Goods were not misrepresented, and a reputation for quality merchandise and for fair and honest dealing was built up. Sales were for cash. When credit was extended, payment was exacted on the date when due. Goods could be bought on approval and exchanged. Courtesy toward customers was an unfailing rule. Stocks of goods were bought at wholesale for cash in anticipation of consumer demand and then a demand for them was created. Thus Field was able to undersell competitors who waited for the demand to appear and then bought on the open market. "His business was his passion," says one of his former partners. His thorough grasp of detail, his ability to select able managers, and a skilful handling of employees all counted in making him one of the most successful merchants of his time. Buying agencies were operated on a world-wide scale, the whole output of manufacturing plants was contracted for. As a final step the company organized its own manufacturing establishments, making a large part of the goods sold in its stores. Field's partners became millionaires, but as they accumulated wealth he bought them out to make room for able younger men in the business.

Field took no active part in politics, or in the social life of the city, and gave little time to charity, education, or public welfare. As one of the organizers of the Commercial Club of Chicago, however, he helped toward the founding of the Chicago Manual Training School. He donated ten acres of ground as a site for the new University of Chicago and later gave $100,000 to that institution. In 1893, his gift of a million dollars made possible the Columbian Museum at the Chicago World's Fair. This later developed into the Field Museum of Natural History. By a provision of his will, a gift of $8,000,000 was made available for the new building for that institution, a splendid marble structure on the lake front in Grant Park. Field seems to have had no scientific interest in the founding of the museum but to have acted solely on the prompting of his friends who were interested in preserving the valuable collection which had been gathered for the Columbian Exposition. The gift which seems to have given him the greatest personal satisfaction was that of a library to the town of Conway near the place where he was born. It was at the dedication of this building that he made his first and only public address. While he was recognized as a power in the financial and business world, he remained through life a quiet, genial man, without the arrogance and air of superiority which sometimes accompany the acquisition of wealth.

Field was first married in January 1863 to Nannie Scott, daughter of Robert Scott of Ironton, Ohio. She died in 1896, and in 1905 he was married to Mrs. Delia Spencer Caton, this second marriage occurring a few months before his death, which came suddenly as a result of pneumonia. It seems to have been his desire to create a great family estate. The bulk of the large fortune which he had accumulated was left in trust for his grandchildren Henry and Marshall Field III, who were not to come into full possession of the estate until thirty-nine years after Field's death. In the event of the death of the heirs, the estate was to go to other members of the Field family to the third generation. It is of interest to note that this type of bequest was held contrary to American standards by the Illinois legislature and an act was passed prohibiting such accumulations in trust beyond the time when the heirs living at the time of the death of the testator shall come of age. The bulk of Field's estate was in real estate in the business district of Chicago.

[Biographical sketch by Thos. W. Goodspeed in *The Univ. of Chicago Biog. Sketches*, I (1922), 1–34; F. C.

Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (2 vols., 1901); Geo. W. Smith, *Hist. of Illinois and Her People* (1927), IV, 354; S. H. Ditchett, *Marshall Field & Company; the Life Story of a Great Concern* (1922); *Chicago Daily Tribune, Chicago Daily News,* and *Chicago Record-Herald,* Jan. 17, 1906.]

E. A. D.

**FIELD, MARY KATHERINE KEEMLE** (Oct. 1, 1838–May 19, 1896), journalist, author, lecturer, actress, was a woman of exceptional though eccentric intellectual gifts, and was continuously in the public eye and mind, mainly as a valiant apostle of reforms, from her youth until her death. She was born in St. Louis, the daughter of Joseph M. Field [*q.v.*], an actor, playwright, and manager, and Eliza (Riddle) Field, a popular actress. Her early schooldays and childhood were passed in St. Louis, and at the age of sixteen she went to Boston to visit relatives and to study at Lasell Seminary for girls. Beginning her frequent travels and sojourns abroad in 1859, she went to Europe with her uncle and aunt, living for varying periods in Paris, Rome, and Florence (where she was joined by her mother in 1860), and forming there enduring friendships with the Brownings, the Trollopes, George Eliot, Charlotte Cushman and other distinguished people. In his *Autobiography* (ch. XVII) Anthony Trollope refers to her as his "most chosen friend," whom not to mention "would amount almost to a falsehood." After returning to America, she lived for a time successively in Boston, Newport, and New York, resuming her studies of art, music, and the drama, writing essays for magazines and doing regular correspondence for daily newspapers. Undaunted by the ill success of her first attempt to become an actress, when on Nov. 14 and 21, 1874, she acted Peg Woffington for only two performances at Booth's Theatre, New York, she appeared afterwards at intervals for several years in that play, in pieces written by herself, and as leading woman with John T. Raymond in *The Gilded Age.* Under the name of Mary Keemle she acted in London in *Extremes Meet,* a comedy of her own writing, and also as Volante in *The Honeymoon.* She gained considerable vogue as a correspondent from London and elsewhere of the *New York Herald,* the *New York Tribune,* and other newspapers. From time to time she engaged in battles for such causes as international copyright, Hawaiian annexation, temperance, prohibition of Mormon polygamy, and in the interests of a futile organization she founded and called the Cooperative Dress Association. As a whole, her activities had little lasting effect, and many of the reforms she sought would have been as easily and as quickly accomplished without her aid. Her manner on the lecture platform was easy and vivacious, her newspaper correspondence and books of travel are graphic, her commentary upon actors is entertaining, although not especially authoritative. In everything she did she was vitally in earnest, and she had multitudes of friends who were attached to her even though they had little sympathy with her self-imposed tasks. During the last five years of her life she edited a paper called *Kate Field's Washington,* which she made a pulpit for the preaching of her social, economic, and political faith. Her religious beliefs were strong, but she was not attached to any sect. She died in Honolulu, whither she had gone on one of her many quixotic jaunts, and as a newspaper correspondent. Her published books are, *Adelaide Ristori* (1867); *Planchette's Diary* (1868); *Mad on Purpose, a Comedy* (1868); *Pen Photographs of Charles Dickens's Readings* (1868); *Hap-Hazard* (1873), travel and character sketches; *Ten Days in Spain* (1875); *History of Bell's Telephone* (1878); and *Charles Albert Fechter* (1882), in the American Actor Series.

[Lilian Whiting, *Kate Field; a Record* (1899); W. J. McGee, "Memorial of Kate Field" in *Columbia Hist. Soc. Records* (Washington, D. C.), vol. I (1897); Anthony Trollope, *An Autobiography* (1883); Michael Sadleir, *Anthony Trollope, a Commentary* (1927); Kate Field's own books and newspaper correspondence; character sketch in *N. Y. Times, Saturday Review of Books and Art,* Sept. 28, 1901; obituary notices in *N. Y. Herald,* May 31, 1896, and *N. Y. Tribune,* May 31, 1896; review of her *Ten Days in Spain* in *N. Y. Times Saturday Review of Books and Art,* May 28, 1898; and numerous other newspaper articles about her.]

E. F. E.

**FIELD, MAUNSELL BRADHURST** (Mar. 26, 1822–Jan. 24, 1875), lawyer, author, traced his descent from Robert Field, a friend of Roger Williams, who, coming from Sowerby, Yorkshire, England, *c.* 1630, settled at Flushing, Long Island, in 1645. His father, Moses Field of New York City, and Peekskill, N. Y., married May 17, 1821, Susan Kittredge Osgood, daughter of Samuel Osgood [*q.v.*], first commissioner of the United States Treasury. Maunsell B. Field received his early education at Peekskill, and in 1837 proceeded to Yale University, graduating in 1841, with the highest honors and delivering the valedictory. Considerations of health delayed his choice of occupation, and in the spring of 1843 he undertook an extensive tour throughout Europe, Asia Minor, and Egypt. On returning to the United States in December 1845, he studied law and was admitted to the New York bar in January 1848. During that year he again visited Europe, and on his return joined John Jay in practise in New York City. The law, however, did not appeal to him, and, being financially independent, he went to Europe again in the au-

tumn of 1854, becoming temporarily secretary of legation to John Y. Mason, the United States minister to France, and visiting Madrid on a special mission to Pierre Soulé, United States minister to Spain. He was nominated commissioner for the State of New York to the Paris Universal Exposition of 1855, and served as president of the board of United States commissioners on that occasion, but declined a permanent appointment as secretary of legation which was offered him by President Pierce.

In 1861 he accepted the position of deputy assistant-treasurer of the United States at New York City, and fulfilled the duties of his office so efficiently that Secretary Chase in September 1863 promoted him to assistant secretary of the treasury at Washington, D. C. On June 1, 1864, the assistant treasurership of the United States at New York City became vacant, and Chase strongly recommended Field's appointment to the office. Field, however, had no political backing in New York and President Lincoln declined to make the appointment, saying he could not afford to quarrel with either of the two factions into which the Republicans of that state were at that time split. This ultimately led to Chase's resignation, and Field remained assistant secretary. The exigencies of the Civil War had made his position exceedingly onerous, and his health had materially suffered, so he resigned July 1, 1865, and President Johnson appointed him collector of internal revenue for the 6th District of New York, a position which he retained till 1869. In 1873 Gov. Dix appointed him judge of the 2nd judicial district court of New York City to fill a vacancy, and he remained on the bench till Jan. 1, 1875.

His legal equipment was mediocre, but as a civil servant he was earnest, efficient, and tireless, and enjoyed the complete confidence of his superiors. He had much literary ability, and was a close friend of G. P. R. James, collaborating with him in writing *Adrian; or, The Clouds of the Mind* (1852). He prepared a French edition of the Annual Report for 1854 of the Bureau of Indian Affairs, entitled *Les hommes rouges de l'Amérique du Nord* (1855), and in 1869 published a small volume of poems. The best known of his works is *Memories of Many Men and of Some Women* (1874), being his own reminiscences written in a vivacious and charming manner. He married, Jan. 7, 1846, Julia, daughter of Daniel Stanton of Stockbridge, Mass.

[F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (2 vols., 1901), contains details of Field's ancestry and a short sketch of his life; but his *Memories of Many Men and of Some Women* (1874) remains the only authority for many important incidents of his career. See also *Semi-Centennial Hist. and Biog. Record of the Class of 1841 in Yale Univ.* (1892); *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.*, I (1897), 326, ed. by D. McAdam and others; De Alva S. Alexander, *A Political Hist. of the State of N. Y.* (1909), III, 95.)

H. W. H. K.



**FIELD, RICHARD STOCKTON** (Dec. 31, 1803–May 25, 1870), senator, jurist, author, was born in White Hill, Burlington County, N. J., the son of Robert and Abigail (Stockton) Field. His paternal ancestor, Robert Field, emigrated from England about 1630, moving to Rhode Island about 1638. His mother was the daughter of Richard Stockton [*q.v.*], a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Upon the death of his father in 1810 the family moved to Princeton, where Richard S. Field received his education, being graduated from the College of New Jersey at the age of seventeen, with the class of 1821. After studying law with his uncle, Richard Stockton, he was admitted to the bar in 1825 and began his practise in Salem, N. J., where in 1831 he married Mary Ritchie. The next year they moved to Princeton which was their home for the rest of their lives.

Field's political career began with his election to the Assembly in 1833, to which body he was twice reëlected. In 1838 he was appointed attorney-general of New Jersey, serving until 1841, when he resigned to devote himself to the regular practise of his profession in Princeton. His relatives, the Stockton family, were largely interested in the Camden & Amboy Railroad and the Delaware & Raritan Canal Company, and he occupied himself in the professional duties arising in connection with the business of those transportation systems.

When a constitutional convention was called in New Jersey in 1844 Field was one of its prominent members and served on the committee relating to the appointing power. Since the abuses arising from legislative appointment had been one of the chief defects of the first constitution this committee occupied a very important position in the convention and accordingly brought its members special notice. Field also served as chairman of the committee on the common schools and secured the adoption of Section 7 of Article IV of the present constitution which set up the school fund. Inasmuch as his greatest service to his state was his achievement in developing New Jersey's educational system, it is significant to note the stress he laid upon this subject in the State's one and only constitutional convention. When the Law Department of the College of New Jersey was opened in 1847, he became professor of constitutional law and jurisprudence, serving until 1855. For a number of years he advocated the creation of a state normal school and his efforts were finally rewarded by the Act of Feb. 9,

1855, creating such an institution. He was made a member of the board of trustees and was at once elected its president, continuing to act in that capacity until his death. The annual reports of this board to the legislature from 1855 to 1870 were all written by him and bear testimony to his knowledge of and interest in this branch of the educational system of the state.

In November 1862 Gov. Olden appointed Field to fill a vacancy in the United States Senate. This appointment was in recognition of his service in organizing the Union-Republican party in New Jersey in 1862 (Knapp, *post*, p. 1310). Since the Democratic party was in control of the state legislature and supplanted him upon meeting in January, Senator Field occupied his seat but a few weeks. During his short service, however, he gained national prominence by his able argument in support of the power of the president to suspend the writ of *habeas corpus* (*Congressional Globe*, 37 Cong., 3 Sess., pp. 28, 216–20); and in recognition of his effective support of the administration on this occasion and also for that in his state during 1861–62, President Lincoln appointed him in January 1863 judge of the district court of the United States for the district of New Jersey, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Philemon Dickerson. Field served on the bench until Apr. 19, 1870, when he was stricken with paralysis and fell senseless from his seat. He died five weeks later in Princeton. He was one of the founders of the New Jersey Historical Society in 1845 and was serving as its third president at the time of his death. His most important literary work, "The Provincial Courts of New Jersey" (*New Jersey Historical Society Collections*, vol. III, 1849), was written in connection with the work of the Society.

Among his other writings are: *Trial of Rev. William Tennent* (1851); *The Federal Convention of 1787* (1853); *The Papers of Gov. Lewis Morris* (1852); *The Constitution Not a Compact between Sovereign States* (1861); *Life and Character of Chief Justice Hornblower* (1865); *Life and Character of Hon. James Parker* (1869); and several other addresses.

[A. Q. Keasbey, "Memoir of the Hon. Richard S. Field," *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser., II (1872), 111–132; C. H. Hart, *A Necrological Notice of the Hon. Richard Stockton Field . . . read before the Numismatic and Antiquarian Soc. of Phila.* (1870); F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (2 vols., 1901); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Gen. Cat. Princeton Univ.* (1908); C. M. Knapp, *N. J. Politics During the Period of the Civil War and Reconstruction* (1924); *Daily State Gazette* (Trenton), May 27, 1870.] C. R. E., Jr.

**FIELD, ROBERT** (*c.* 1769–Aug. 9, 1819), painter of portraits in oil, miniaturist, engraver, was a native of Great Britain who practised his profession in the United States and Nova Scotia. According to a Halifax tradition he was born in Gloucestershire, England. This the Thieme and Becker *Allgemeines Lexikon der bildenden Künstler* (vol. XI, 1915) states as a fact, but inquiries directed to Gloucester antiquarians have failed to establish it. Field advertised himself as "late of London," and it is known that in 1790 he joined the engraving class at the Royal Academy School. This date is the basis of the birth date tentatively assigned above. His earliest known work was his mezzotint portrait of Rev. Thomas Warton.

Possibly at the suggestion of Benjamin West, Field left England on Feb. 27, 1794, landing at Baltimore, where he soon gained the friendship and substantial support of Robert Gilmor, a noted connoisseur and collector. Thus began a residence of fourteen years in the United States, during which Field painted at Philadelphia, Baltimore, Washington, and Boston. His engraved portraits of Washington and Hamilton were advertised in the *American Minerva and New York Advertiser* of Apr. 23, 1795 (Piers, p. 12). The former work appeared, but the latter was never issued (Boston Museum of Fine Arts, *A Descriptive Catalogue of an Exhibition of Early Engraving in America*, 1904, p. 34). Field is believed by his biographer, Harry Piers, not to have painted the Washington miniature now owned by the Mount Vernon Ladies' Association and by them attributed to him. In 1801, however, he visited Mount Vernon and painted Mrs. Washington from life. His American paintings in oil were unsigned, and some of the Philadelphia "Stuarts" are suspected of being the work of Robert Field. During several years' residence in the capital he painted many celebrities and won social recognition. In 1805, following the example of Stuart and Malbone, he removed to Boston, then a fast-growing seaport. William Dunlap, author of *A History of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the United States* (1834), who met Field in Boston, wrote of him: "He was a handsome, stout, gentlemanly man, and a favorite with gentlemen. . . . I remember two very beautiful female heads by him; one of Mrs. Allen, in Boston, and one of Mrs. Thornton, of Washington" (edition of 1918, II, 119). At Boston Field made several engravings and a notable miniature of his fellow artist, Henry Sargent.

The growing tension between the United States and England may have caused Field, who never had been naturalized, to return to British territory. In 1808 (not in 1807 as stated in the Boston Museum's *Descriptive Catalogue*), he set up as a "portrait painter, in oil and water-colours,

and in miniature" at Halifax, thus advertising himself in the *Royal Gazette,* May 30, 1808 (Piers, p. 52). Nova Scotia at the time was prosperous because of the American Embargo, and Field found much employment. He was befriended by Sir John Wentworth, royal governor, whose portrait he painted (it is now in Government House). A good singer and conversationalist, he became a social favorite. He was active in Masonry. His portrait of Sir A. Cochrane, painted in 1810, was exhibited at the Royal Academy, London, and of that year was his likeness of the Right Reverend Charles Inglis, bishop of Nova Scotia, now in the British National Portrait Gallery. By 1815 Field's income from portraiture must have fallen off, for he then opened a book-shop in Water St., Halifax. In 1816, evidently seeking new employment, he went to Jamaica where, after presumably indifferent success, he died of yellow fever.

[Harry Piers, *Robert Field, Portrait painter in oils, miniature and water colours and engraver* (1927), and reference in "Artists in Nova Scotia," *N. S. Hist. Soc. Colls.,* XVIII (1914), 112–19; other authorities cited above. The earlier biographical sketches of Field are fragmentary and superficial.] F. W. C.

**FIELD, ROSWELL MARTIN** (Sept. 1, 1851–Jan. 10, 1919), author, youngest of the six children of Roswell Martin and Frances (Reed) Field, was born in St. Louis and died at his home in Morristown, N. J. His father, descended from Zechariah Field, who came to Massachusetts from England about 1629, went to college and studied law in New England, and in 1839 removed to Missouri. Roswell's mother, though living in St. Louis at the time of her marriage, was also of New England origin. When she died in 1856, the boy and his brother Eugene [*q.v.*], a year older than himself, were sent to live with their father's niece, Miss Mary Field French, in Amherst, Mass., and their grandmother in Newfane, Vt. Roswell was educated at Phillips Exeter Academy and at the University of Missouri; and he studied law in Vermont in the office of his uncle, Charles Kellogg Field. Perhaps the chief hero held up before him in his youth was Oliver Cromwell, and he seems always to have been affected by the Cromwellian seriousness. In 1874 he was still enough stirred by his college fraternity ritual to compose for a grand convention of Phi Kappa Psi a poem celebrating love among the brethren and the grief of all of them upon the death of any. Far later than 1874, he nerved himself, in spite of his devoted love for his brother Eugene, to reprimand him for attempting always to be humorous. On the death of their father in 1869, the two brothers inherited an assured livelihood. Roswell soon

Field

put an end to his formal education, and went into journalism. Generally in an editorial capacity, he worked in San Francisco, in St. Louis, and in Kansas City. In Kansas City he was married, in October 1885, to Henrietta Dexter. Later he worked on newspapers in New York and Chicago, and in the latter city for about fourteen years he conducted in the *Post* a column called "Lights and Shadows." He retired six years prior to his death. Beginning in 1891 he published a number of books—first, in collaboration with his brother Eugene, *Echoes from the Sabine Farm,* a series of verse translations from Horace. *In Sunflower Land, Stories of God's Own Country* (1892), is made up of sketches of village and farm life in Missouri and Kansas, mostly sentimental, but with touches of humor and realism. He wrote a memoir of his brother prefixed to *A Little Book of Western Verse,* the first volume of the "Sabine Edition" of Eugene Field's collected works published in 1896. *The Muses Up to Date* (1897) comprises six plays for children written by Roswell Field and his wife. Part rhyme and part prose, they are directed in general, as the authors explain in their preface, toward the goal of "plenty to do and little to say." *The Romance of an Old Fool* (1902) rehearses what came near being a love affair between January and May, but was shifted to a more seemly affair between May and June. *The Bondage of Ballinger* (1903), and *Little Miss Dee* (1904) are conventional novelettes showing how young love and antique virtue go hand in hand, but *Madeline* (1906) is concerned, after the manner of medieval romance, with the affairs of Sir Dives, who finds joy at last as a book collector, and of his poor relation Madeline and his friend Master Pauper, both of whom, after a short moment of matrimony, find joy at last "in the flowering meadow and along the pleasant stream" of Heaven (*Madeline,* p. 104).

[Phillips Exeter Acad. *Catalogue, 1783–1869* (1869); Univ. of Mo. *Catalogue* 1870–71; C. K. Field, *Geneal. Hist. of the Family of the Late Gen. Martin Field* (1877); Slason Thompson, *Life of Eugene Field* (1927); *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19; *N. Y. Times,* Jan. 11, 1919.] J. D. W.

**FIELD, STEPHEN DUDLEY** (Jan. 31, 1846–May 18, 1913), electrical engineer, inventor, was born in Stockbridge, Berkshire County, Mass., the son of Jonathan Edwards and Mary Ann (Stuart) Field. His education was directed at first toward law, and he attended Williams Academy and then Reid Hoffman's School in Stockbridge. When, however, through the efforts of his uncle, Cyrus West Field [*q.v.*], the first Atlantic cable was successfully laid in 1858, and a telegraph office was opened at Stockbridge

in his father's law office, Stephen, then twelve years old, became intensely interested in telegraphy. Completing his schooling at Dutchess County Academy, Poughkeepsie, N. Y., in 1863 he went to California as a telegraph operator for the California State Telegraph Company, and after two years in this service spent three more with the Collins Overland Telegraph in British Columbia. He then was made an inspector with the San Francisco Fire Alarm Telegraph Company in which capacity he served until 1872 when he organized the California Electrical Works to develop his original ideas for electrical improvements. One of his first inventions was a multiple call district telegraph box, and in 1878 he designed, built, and equipped a telephone line sixty miles long with twenty-four stations. The following year he designed and subsequently perfected a dynamo as a substitute for the galvanic battery in the generation of electric current for telegraph apparatus, and after solving the problems of using this equipment in combination with the quadruplex telegraph, he sold the system to the Western Union Telegraph Company. He then turned his attention to the electric railway. He was without capital, however, and returned to Stockbridge in 1879. Shortly thereafter he imported from Germany several Siemens electric motors and built an electric locomotive which he operated on a special track near his home in August 1880. After devoting three years to invention in this field, in cooperation with Edison he built and operated an electric railway at the Chicago Railway Exposition in 1883. Having covered his improvements by patents, Field next turned his attention to the stock ticker. He soon designed one surpassing in speed anything of its kind then in use, which led to the organization of the Commercial Telegram Company. During the three years he devoted to this work, however, other inventors became active in the electric railway field and when it seemed that his own patents would be involved in litigation, Field sold them to a group of large electrical interests. In 1887, with Rudolf Eickemeyer [*q.v.*], he invented and constructed a direct-connected, side-bar electric locomotive which was tried out on the New York Elevated Railroad. He was resident engineer during the construction and equipment of a 150-kilometer electrical railway in Geneva, Switzerland (1897–1900). In 1909 he invented and installed the first submarine quadruplex telegraph between Key West and Havana. Field obtained over one hundred patents covering nearly every branch of electrical engineering. He was a charter member and later fellow of the American Institute of Electrical Engineers and was a



manager of the Institute's first board of directors. He married Celestine Butters of San Francisco on Sept. 30, 1871, who with a son and daughter survived him at the time of his death in Stockbridge.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Electrical Review and Western Electrician*, May 24, 1913; *Electrical World*, May 24, 1913; *Proc. Am. Inst. Electrical Engineers*, July 1913; F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (2 vols., 1901); H. M. Field, *Record of the Family of the Late D. D. Field* (1880); *Boston Transcript*, May 19, 1913.]

C. W. M.

**FIELD, STEPHEN JOHNSON** (Nov. 4, 1816–Apr. 9, 1899), jurist, United States Supreme Court justice, was born in Haddam, Conn. His father was the Rev. David Dudley Field [*q.v.*], a graduate from Yale College in 1802, and a descendant of Zechariah Field, who emigrated from Yorkshire, England, to Boston about 1629. His mother was Submit Dickinson, daughter of Noah Dickinson of Somers, Conn. Both his grandfathers had been officers in the Revolution. He was one of a family of eight sons and two daughters, among whom were David Dudley, Cyrus W., and Henry M. Field [*qq.v.*], and the future mother of Justice David Josiah Brewer [*q.v.*] of the Supreme Court. In 1829 Stephen accompanied his sister and her husband, the Rev. Josiah Brewer, to the Levant, where he remained for two and a half years, one winter of which was passed in Athens. Besides acquiring considerable fluency in modern Greek, Stephen imbibed a valuable lesson in religious tolerance, conceiving for the religious devotion, sobriety, and honesty of the Turks an especial admiration. He also displayed marked bravery in ministering on one occasion to victims of the plague. Returning to the United States, Stephen in September 1833 entered Williams College, from which he graduated valedictorian of his class in 1837. His instructor in his senior year was Mark Hopkins, president of the college, who gave courses in rhetoric, logic, natural theology, and metaphysics. His training was thus almost exclusively in abstract subjects and governed by the idea that the facts of life are best evaluated in the light of a few established principles. Field had originally thought to become a teacher of languages, but in 1838 he entered upon the study of the law in his brother David Dudley's office in New York City, later completing it in that of John Van Buren, afterward attorney-general of New York, at Albany. Upon admission to the bar in 1841, Stephen became his brother's partner in a firm which lasted till 1848. David Dudley during this period was deep in the agitation which led in 1850 to the submission to the New York legislature of his codes of civil and criminal procedure, an inter-

est which Stephen shared. Returning from a second visit to Europe, Stephen set sail for California by way of Panama on Nov. 13, 1849, arriving at San Francisco Dec. 28 of the same year. Freed at last from the family leading-strings, Field now found himself in an environment which was a stimulus to self-assertion in the highest degree. Besides his legal training he possessed good health, moral and physical courage, and a mind which was healthily responsive to its tangible surroundings. The experiences of this period are recounted in his *Reminiscences of Early Days in California,* which he dictated in 1877. The book evinces devotion to the fact and energy of purpose, as well as some appreciation of humorous situations.

Field landed with ten dollars in his pocket, of which seven were spent in getting his two trunks ashore. The cost of living soon forced him to repair to a settlement on the Sacramento, later named Marysville, which was at the center of the gold-mining region. The day he arrived he purchased—on paper—sixty-five town lots, and a few days later instigated the organization of a local government, he himself being elected alcalde. In this capacity he enforced a stern justice, and order reigned. His fees of office, receipts as attorney, and investments brought him a quick prosperity, which was presently shattered, however, in consequence of his falling out with the newly appointed state judge for the district, one Turner. In the course of this absurd feud Field was disbarred, reinstated, disbarred again, sent to jail for contempt of court, heavily fined, and his life threatened; while on his own part, following the advice of a member of the state supreme court, he purchased a brace of pistols and acquired the subtle art of shooting from the pocket.

In the autumn of 1850 Field was elected to the state legislature. He promptly introduced and procured the passage of an act reorganizing the state judiciary, whereby his enemy Turner was relegated to a desolate region in the northern section of the state. A friend of Turner next challenged Field to a duel, but when Field accepted, backed down and apologized. Later Field became similarly involved with Turner's successor, Barbour. Barbour, too, challenged, was accepted, and withdrew.

Field's chief constructive work in the legislature was the drafting of civil and criminal practise acts for the state. While based in large measure on his brother's codes, they embodied many changes in deference to local conditions and habits, as well as to Spanish legal ideas. One feature of the Civil Practise Act was the famous section



621, which ordered the courts in cases involving mining claims to admit proof of miners' customs. Noteworthy, too, were the provisions in the act for liberal exemptions of debtors' property from forced sale. Field himself owed some eighteen thousand dollars at this time, on which he was paying interest at the rate of ten per cent. per month.

Disappointed in his further political ambitions, Field returned to Marysville and a lucrative practise of the law. On Sept. 2, 1857, he was elected to the state supreme court. The important litigation of the period concerned titles to land and the subjacent minerals. By the treaty of 1848 the United States had confirmed "existing grants." What, however, purported to be existing grants were often forged, while authentic grants frequently overlapped. Proof of authenticity, furthermore, was difficult on account of the chaotic state of the Mexican archives. Nor was it settled to what extent such grants should be construed by common law ideas and to what extent by Spanish-Mexican ideas. Previous to Field's accession the court had won small confidence in its handling of these complex questions. Its membership had fluctuated violently; it had repeatedly overruled itself; and some of the judges had proved corrupt. Field's leadership, both on score of learning and of native ability, was promptly conceded by his colleagues. Of deliberate and announced purpose, he couched his decisions in broad terms in order to head off future litigation. Some of his rulings provoked violent criticism; and that in the so-called "City Slip Cases" (16 *Cal.,* 591), in which he appears to have gone out of his way to upset earlier decisions, became a political issue. In his handling of squatters' rights, on the other hand, of the rights of mortgagors, and of the question of title to minerals, he manifested a healthy pragmatism in discarding common law notions; while in *ex parte Newman* (9 *Cal.,* 502), in dissenting from a decision pronouncing void a Sunday closing act, he asserted broadly the power of the legislature "to legislate for the good order, peace, welfare, and happiness of society," and to adopt special measures for the protection of labor. On the United States Supreme Court his numerous dissents were usually on the other side of such questions.

Upon the outbreak of the Civil War, Field as a Buchanan Democrat instantly aligned himself with the pro-Union party which kept California in the Union. Although the United States Supreme Court was at this time in confessed need of a member acquainted with the land and mining cases coming to it from the Pacific Coast, it

was not until Mar. 1, 1863, that Congress finally authorized the new justiceship and attendant circuit judgeship. On the urgent suggestion of the congressional delegations of California and Oregon, Field was promptly nominated to the post, and unanimously confirmed, Mar. 10, 1863. The same summer, while presiding over the new United States circuit court at San Francisco, he delivered, in the case of *United States* vs. *Greathouse* (26 *Fed.*, 18, no. 15,254), a noteworthy charge on the subject of treason under the Constitution. He took his seat in the Supreme Court the first Monday of the ensuing December.

Few more convinced doctrinaires in constitutional exegesis have ever sat on the supreme bench than Field. The practical spirit of accommodation to tangible fact characteristic of many of his opinions as state judge seems to have taken wing. The reason is, no doubt, that when brought into contact with problems of constitutional construction, he was thrown back upon a set of ideas with which his mind had become thoroughly imbued in his early youth. From the point of view thus supplied, the Constitution was the perfect code which took account of all relevant facts from the beginning, and in the interpretation of its lucid phraseology it was impossible for loyal intention and good will to go far astray.

Field's theory of the relation of the national government and the states was the dualistic one of the Jacksonian, ante-bellum court: "a national government for national purposes, local governments for local purposes," and each "sovereign" within its assigned sphere, so that neither was dependent upon or subordinate to the other in any degree, nor, indeed, capable of clashing with it so long as the powers of each were properly defined. To this statement there was one seeming exception, for it was the rôle of the judicial branch of the national government to draw the line between the national and state spheres of action. The exception was, however, only apparent, for the Court acted merely in a *judicial* capacity and was therefore the mere mouthpiece of the Constitution. Confronting his theory of the nature of the federal system was his doctrine of natural rights. This, too, was a boyhood inheritance: but the recrudescence of the doctrine at this period was due partly to the contemporary discussion of freedmen's rights, partly to the individualistic preachments of the then dominant "classical school" of political economy, and partly, in Field's own case, to his Western experience.

The question naturally arises of the entire compatibility of the two outstanding elements of Field's constitutional creed. There was a time

Field

when he urged that the national government should be recognized as the guarantor of the sum total of human rights, on the basis of the contention that the term "privileges and immunities of citizens of the United States," as used in section one of the Fourteenth Amendment, comprised the fundamental rights of citizenship in all free governments (16 *Wallace*, 36); and this in the face of Justice Miller's cogent warning that such a construction of the phrase in question would entirely subvert the federal system. A doctrinaire, in other words, is not necessarily a good logician. It should be added that Field's habitually positive manner of expression was very likely to lead him into a statement of principles which conflicted with other principles which he accepted with equal fervor but which were not at the moment relevant to the problem before the Court.

The following cases in which Field spoke for the Court are especially worthy of note: the Test Oath Cases (4 *Wallace*, 277, and 333); *Paul* vs. *Virginia* (8 *Wallace*, 168); *The Daniel Ball* (10 *Wallace*, 557); Tarbles' Case (13 *Wallace*, 397); State Tax on Foreign-held Bonds (15 *Wallace*, 300); *Pennoyer* vs. *Neff* (95 *U. S.*, 714); *Escanaba Bridge & Transportation Company* vs. *Chicago* (107 *U. S.*, 678); *Barbier* vs. *Connelly* (113 *U. S.*, 27); *Gloucester Ferry Company* vs. *Pennsylvania* (114 *U. S.*, 196); and *Chae Chan Ping* vs. *United States* (130 *U. S.*, 600). In the Test Oath Cases he scandalized radical Republican opinion by joining forces with the ante-bellum judges against the other Lincoln appointees. Many of the other cases represent early formulations of important principles later further developed by the Court. In *Chae Chan Ping* vs. *United States* we find him, in contradiction of previously expressed views, invoking in support of the right of the national government to exclude aliens, its prerogative as the government of a sovereign nation. But his most characteristic opinions were dissenting opinions. Those in volume 100 of the *United States Reports* run to over eighty vehement pages and ring the changes on the doctrine of the duality of the federal system. They were ineffectual. His dissents in the Slaughterhouse Cases (16 *Wallace*, 36, 83) and in *Munn* vs. *Illinois* (94 *U. S.*, 113, 130) were, on the contrary, contributions of the utmost importance to the later development of constitutional law. The former elaborates the interpretation of the "privileges and immunities" clause of the Fourteenth Amendment which was mentioned above, and which is to-day, so far as the property and ancillary rights are concerned, incorporated in the Court's version by the "due process of law" clause of the same amendment. The

latter offers, in relation to the power of government to regulate prices, a distinction between "property devoted to a public use" and "property merely affected with a public interest," which seems also, recently, to have been ratified by the Court (see *Wolff Packing Company* vs. *Court of Industrial Relations*, 262 *U. S.*, 522). To the end Field repelled the proposition that Congress could validly give paper money the quality of legal tender (110 *U. S.*, 421, 451), resisted the creation of special administrative agencies for the handling of deportation cases (149 *U. S.*, 698, 744), and joined enthusiastically in tearing down the powers of the original Interstate Commerce Commission. His last considerable opinion was his dissent in *Brown* vs. *Walker* (161 *U. S.*, 591, 628), where he gives the constitutional immunity of witnesses fantastic scope. Meantime, in his concurring opinion in the first Income Tax Case (157 *U. S.*, 429, 586), he had delivered himself of an aggrieved warning against "class legislation." "The present assault on capital," he predicted, was "but the stepping-stone" to "a war of the poor against the rich" (p. 607).

The most dramatic chapter of Field's judicial career is that comprising his work as presiding judge in his home circuit. In the Chinese Immigrant Case (3 *Sawyer*, 144) and the famous Queue Case (5 *Sawyer*, 552), he boldly defied local sentiment on the Chinese question, and in the Sharon will litigation he met fearlessly the threat of assassination. A will filed by one Althea Hill was found to be a forgery. Later Miss Hill's attorney, David S. Terry, who had been an associate of Field's on the California supreme court, married his client. On account of their outrageous conduct in court, Terry and Miss Hill were held for contempt in the term of 1888. Terry, who was already known as the assassin of Senator David S. Broderick [*q.v.*], now proclaimed his intention of shooting Field if the latter returned to California in the summer of 1889. Field returned none the less, although with a guard whose protection he had reluctantly consented to accept. The outcome of the matter was the shooting of Terry himself by this guard in a dining car at Lathrop, Cal., on the morning of Aug. 14, 1889, as Terry approached Field with the apparent intention of assaulting him. The episode, which is related in his *Annoyances of My Judicial Career* (printed and paged with the 1893 edition of his *Reminiscences of Early Days*), led to the celebrated case of *in re Neagle* (135 *U. S.*, 1), the Court's opinion in which, by Justice Miller, marks a wide departure from Field's dualistic theory of the Union.



Field was married June 2, 1859. His bride was Virginia Swearingen of San Francisco; no children were born to them. In 1870 he purchased for his permanent home in Washington, a section of the Old Capitol at the corner of A and First Sts., N. E. Here, in a spacious library, he spent his mornings from seven to eleven-thirty in methodical labor. At eleven-thirty he went to Court. The late afternoon he spent in recreation, and his evenings in society, of which he was extremely fond. One of his closest friends was Justice Miller, who was his antithesis in temperament and his frequent antagonist on the bench. Field was one of the avowedly Democratic members of the Electoral Commission of 1877, and his opinion in the Florida Case is the most effective presentation of the Democratic contention that the Commission was duty-bound to go into the merits of each case on the question of fraud. Partly because of this, his name was occasionally mentioned for the Democratic nomination in 1880, and again in 1884; but the hostility of the Democratic machine of his own state, due to the decisions just mentioned in support of the constitutional rights of Chinese, prevented his candidacy from making much headway. Upon Cleveland's election the latter year Field set about to prevent his enemies from gathering any of the spoils of victory and was successful in this enterprise for some months (Swisher, *post*). Later, however, when Cleveland appointed Fuller to the chief-justiceship, a post to which Field himself aspired, a coolness developed between the President and the Justice. It would seem that Mrs. Field's social ambitions were reflected in her husband's political ambitions (*Ibid.*). In 1890 Field was chosen by his brethren to be the Court's spokesman at the celebration in New York of its first centenary. His address on that occasion is an informing confession of constitutional faith (134 *U. S.*, App.).

To judge from his portraits, Field must have appeared to his contemporaries the very embodiment of judicial dignity. His bald and lofty dome, his broad brow and dark eyes, his long straight nose and flowing beard, endowed him with a truly patriarchal aspect. He was of better than average stature, and of great dignity of carriage, despite a slight lameness from an injury to one of his knees incurred while he was a law student in his brother's office.

Field had the misfortune to tarry on the bench over long. In the 1895 term he spoke for the Court in only four brief opinions and in the 1896 term he delivered no opinions. Eventually Justice Harlan was designated by the other justices to convey a hint to Justice Field that he should

resign (C. E. Hughes, *The Supreme Court of the United States*, 1928, 75–76). Field himself had been of a committee which had waited on Justice Grier years earlier on a like errand. In April 1897 he did resign, the resignation to take effect the following Dec. 1, a stipulation which enabled him to exceed Marshall's incumbency by two months! The letter which he sent his associates on the occasion of his retirement (168 *U. S.*, App.) recalls with obvious pride that he was the last of Lincoln's appointees, that as state judge and justice of the Supreme Court he had rounded out forty years of judicial service, and that first and last he had prepared some 1,042 opinions, 620 of them on the Supreme Court. He survived his retirement a little over a year.

[H. M. Field, *Record of the Family of the Late Rev. David Dudley Field* (1880); F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (1901); S. J. Field's own *Reminiscences; Some Account of the Work of Stephen J. Field* (1881; 1895), ed. by C. F. Black with an introductory sketch by John Norton Pomeroy; J. N. Pomeroy, Jr., and Horace Stern in *Great Am. Lawyers*, vol. VII (1909), ed. by W. D. Lewis; G. C. Gorham, *Biog. Notice of Stephen J. Field* (1892); 8–22 *California Reports*; 68–168 *U. S. Reports*; Carl B. Swisher, *Stephen J. Field, Craftsman of the Law* (in press, 1930); obituaries in *Boston Transcript* and *Washington Post*, Apr. 10, 1899.] E. S. C.

**FIELD, THOMAS WARREN** (1821–Nov. 25, 1881), author, born in Onondaga Hill near Syracuse, N. Y., was the son of a small tradesman. After a brief education in the elementary schools he became a teacher; in the long career that followed he "was everything by starts, and nothing long." He moved to New York City in 1844, where he became an engineer. After a time in business as a florist he moved to the village of Williamsburgh (now in Brooklyn), N. Y., and did surveying and school-teaching. On May 14, 1849, he was made the principal of Public School No. 18 on Mauger St., Brooklyn. Through fortunate investments in real estate he acquired wealth and considerable property, especially in Bushwick Avenue where he established a nursery which he called "Weirfield" in honor of his first wife, Charlotte E. Weir. His income enabled him to retire and devote himself to fruit culture. He had previously published, in 1848, a thin volume of verse, *The Minstrel Pilgrim*, greatly influenced by Shelley and the romantics. In 1858 he published a manual on *Pear Culture*. Field became a member of the Board of Education in 1854 and served for twenty-one years. From 1865 to 1873 he was an assessor and from 1873 until the time of his death he was superintendent of public instruction in Brooklyn. His avocation was scholarship: in 1865 he edited Alexander Garden's *Anecdotes of the American Revolution* and in 1869 he edited for the Long Island Historical Society a collection of original documents on the battle of Long Island (published as Vol. II of the Society's *Memoirs*), to which he contributed an introduction of more than three hundred pages. Other volumes which he issued were *Historic and Antiquarian Scenes in Brooklyn and its Vicinity* (1868); an edition of the *Relation of Alvar Nuñez Cabeça de Vaca* (1871); and *The Schoolmistress in History, Poetry and Romance* (1874). For many years Field had been collecting books dealing with American Indians. In 1873 he published a catalogue of his library: *An Essay Towards an Indian Bibliography*, which listed 1,708 items and contained critical notes distinguished alike for their delightful spirit and for their erudition. In 1875, because of a decline in real-estate values and because of legal expenses incurred in a scandal that time has effectively obscured, he was forced to sell his library. With the *Essay* as a basis a *Catalogue* was compiled, listing 2,663 items and containing the original notes by Field and many additions by his friend, Joseph Sabin. The sale by auction brought more than $13,500. After the death of his first wife, Field married Helen Tuttle, who was killed in an accident on the Hudson River Railroad on the day of her wedding. His third wife, Emiline Van Siclen, he divorced in 1874 after she had become involved with Thomas Kinsella, the editor of the *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*. Alice E. Martin, whom he married in 1876, survived him.

[*American Bibliopolist*, June 1875; N. Y. *Evening Post*, May 21, 1875; J. G. Shea in *N. Y. Tribune*, May 24 and 26, 1875; *Brooklyn Eagle*, Nov. 25, 1881; *N. Y. Times*, *N. Y. Sun*, and *N. Y. Tribune*, Nov. 26, 1881; private information.] F. M—n.

**FIELD, WALBRIDGE ABNER** (Apr. 26, 1833–July 15, 1899), jurist, was a descendant of John Field, an English astronomer, through his great-grandson Thomas Field of Yorkshire, who, *c.* 1667, settled in Providence, R. I. Through his grandmother, Elizabeth Williams, wife of Pardon Field of Chester, Vt., Walbridge A. Field was also a lineal descendant of Roger Williams [*q.v.*]. The eldest child of Abner Field, a merchant and banker of Chester and Springfield, Windsor County, Vt., who married on Feb. 16, 1832, Louisa, daughter of David Griswold, he was born at Springfield, where his youth was spent, his primary education being received in the common schools. Continuing his studies successively at the Perkinsville Academy, the Springfield Wesleyan Seminary, and Kimball Union Academy, Meriden, N. H., in September 1851 he entered Dartmouth College, where "he held through his whole course the standard of abso-

lute perfection, a rank touched by only two other men in the history of the college—Rufus Choate and Professor Putnam" (Noble, *post*, p. 68). After his graduation in 1855 he remained at Dartmouth for two years as tutor in Latin, Greek, and mathematics. He then commenced the study of law in Boston under Harvey Jewell, but returned to Dartmouth in 1859, teaching mathematics for two terms, after which he attended the Harvard Law School, and was admitted to the Suffolk County bar May 12, 1860. Commencing practise in Boston in association with Jewell, he took an active interest in municipal affairs, was a member of the Boston School Board in 1863 and 1864, and served in the Common Council, 1865–67. At the same time his legal ability was recognized and in July 1865 he became assistant United States district attorney for Massachusetts under Richard Henry Dana, an office which he continued to hold until his appointment in 1869 as assistant to E. Rockwell Hoar, the attorney-general of the United States, and consequent removal to Washington, D. C. A year later he resigned, returning to Boston to resume private practise in partnership with Jewell and W. Gaston. The firm enjoyed a high reputation and an influential clientele, which brought them important corporation business and litigation. Field possessed none of the qualifications of a successful jury lawyer, but his infinite capacity for research was utilized in the preparation of trial briefs, and he appeared to great advantage in appellate court work, where his sound knowledge of law, impressive presentation of facts, and a singular clarity of argument always carried weight. In 1876 he was the Republican candidate for the representation of the 3rd Massachusetts district in the Forty-fifth Congress and served till Mar. 28, 1878, when, his election having been contested, the House awarded the seat to his Democratic opponent. In the same year he was elected to the Forty-sixth Congress. He served his full term, but a political career had no attraction for him and he declined a renomination. He was appointed associate judge of the supreme judicial court of Massachusetts by Gov. Long on Feb. 21, 1881. Possessing all the attributes of judicial strength—wide grasp of principles, mastery of procedure, sound common sense, and patience—he commanded the respect of the profession and the confidence of his colleagues, and his promotion to the chief justiceship by Gov. Brackett, Sept. 4, 1890, met with unqualified approval. His tenure of judicial office, extending over eighteen years, was not marked by decisions of outstanding interest and he was not called upon to solve any unusual problems involving important legal principles, but his written opinions—over eight hundred in number and distinguished for their terse language and rare literary excellence—uniformly displayed a complete comprehension of all the relevant facts and legal points involved and an almost mathematical precision of reasoning. Not brilliant, but an eminently sane and accurate thinker, he had no patience with extreme views or eccentric natures. He was twice married: on Oct. 4, 1869, to Eliza Ellen, daughter of William McLoon of Rockland, Me., who died Mar. 8, 1877; and on Oct. 31, 1882, to Frances Eaton, daughter of Nathan Allen Farwell of Rockland.

[F. C. Pierce, *Field Geneal.* (1901), which contains (II. 919) an extended biography; John Noble, "Memoir of Walbridge A. Field" in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser. XIX (1905), 61 ff.; E. P. Scales, *Class of 1855 of Dartmouth Coll.* (1885), p. 17; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); Conrad Reno, *Memoirs of the Judiciary and Bar of New England* (1900), p. 5; 174 *Mass. Reports*, 591; *Tributes of the Bar and of the Supreme Judicial Court of the Commonwealth to the Memory of Walbridge Abner Field* (1905), which reprints some of the preceding material; obituary notices in *Boston Sunday Jour.*, July 16, 1899; *Boston Advertiser* and *Boston Transcript*, July 17, 1899.] H. W. H. K.



**FIELDS, ANNIE ADAMS** (June 6, 1834–Jan. 5, 1915), author and wife of James T. Fields [*q.v.*], was born in Boston, the daughter of Dr. Zabdiel Boylston Adams, a well-known physician, and Sarah May (Holland) Adams. She was a descendant on her father's side of Henry Adams, of Braintree, who settled in New England in 1633. She was one of a large family, and was educated at home and in the school kept by George B. Emerson [*q.v.*]. In 1854, at the age of twenty, she became the second wife of James T. Fields, the publisher, who was seventeen years older than she. Writing just before the marriage, Fields asked Miss Mitford, "Have you room in your heart for one more American? Her name is Annie Adams, and I have known her from childhood, and have held her on my knee many and many a time." Mrs. Fields spoke of her wedding as sweeping her "suddenly out upon a tide more swift and strong and all-enfolding than her imagination had foretold." It was not long before the "exquisite eager young woman," endowed with most of the social graces, had established a kind of salon in her home at 148 Charles St. Her husband's wide acquaintance with writers brought many distinguished people to his study, where they were held by his wife's beauty and charm. Over a long course of years she formed intimate friendships with Hawthorne, Whittier, Lowell, George William Curtis, Harriet Beecher Stowe, Holmes, Agassiz, Lydia Maria Child, and Henry James, as well as Thackeray, Dickens, and Landor. She traveled ex-

tensively with her husband, sometimes abroad and later on his lecture trips through the United States. She was of great assistance to him in his work, relieving him of responsibilities to which he was too busy to attend. After his death, in 1881, the Fields house still continued to be a social center for literary people in Boston. Mrs. Fields herself had unusual literary gifts and was the author of several volumes. *Under the Olive* (1881), her first book, was followed by *How to Help the Poor* (1883). Her *James T. Fields, Biographical Notes and Personal Sketches* (1881), was an interesting tribute to her husband. *Whittier, Notes of His Life and of His Friendships,* appeared in 1893, shortly after that poet's death. Other volumes by her are: *A Shelf of Old Books* (1894); *The Singing Shepherd and Other Poems* (1895); *Authors and Friends* (1896); *The Life and Letters of Harriet Beecher Stowe* (1897); and *Letters of Sarah Orne Jewett* (1911). For many years she kept a diary, begun in 1863 and maintained regularly until 1876, after which date it was written only intermittently. Many magazine articles also appeared from her pen during her lifetime. She died in the midst of the World War, having outlived most of her contemporaries.

[M. A. De W. Howe, *Memories of a Hostess, A Chronicle of Eminent Friendships Drawn Chiefly from the Diaries of Mrs. James T. Fields* (1922); Henry James, *The American Scene* (1907) and "Mr. and Mrs. James T. Fields," *Atlantic Monthly,* July 1915; *Boston Transcript,* Jan. 5, 6, 1915.] C. M. F.

**FIELDS, JAMES THOMAS** (Dec. 31, 1817–Apr. 24, 1881), author and publisher, was born in Portsmouth, N. H., the son of a shipmaster who died at sea when James was only four years old, leaving a widow and two small sons. The boy, who had bookish tendencies, was educated in the local public schools, but spent much of his time reading in the Portsmouth Athenæum, where he developed a taste for good literature. At the age of fourteen, feeling obliged to help support his family, he went to Boston as clerk in a bookstore, where he soon, according to Mrs. Fields, displayed an uncanny gift of predicting what kind of volume a customer was likely to want. Such was his enterprise that he was made, at twenty-one, a junior partner in the publishing house of Ticknor, Reed & Fields, of which he was later the head, the firm being known, after Reed's retirement in 1854, as Ticknor & Fields. In business Fields was orderly and methodical, and thoroughly understood both the financial and literary sides of his occupation. He had an amazing capacity for making and retaining friends. Reserved and shy at meeting strangers, he was exuberant and jovial with his intimates. His



even temper, his hospitality, his chivalry, and his sympathy were his outstanding characteristics. In 1847, 1851, 1859, and 1869 he visited Europe, making the acquaintance of many notable writers, and he was early a member of the famous Saturday Club.

When, in 1859, the *Atlantic Monthly* came into the hands of Ticknor & Fields, Lowell was still the editor, but he resigned in May 1861, and Fields took his place, holding the position until 1870. Because of his extensive literary acquaintance and sound critical acumen, he made an admirable editor, and the periodical flourished under his management. He was able to secure the best contemporary writers as contributors, and it was not long before he was acknowledged as a patron of letters. He was given the degree of LL.D. by Dartmouth in 1867. In 1870 he withdrew from active business with a comfortable fortune. After his retirement, although his health was supposed to be impaired, he became a successful popular lecturer, making frequent tours of the larger cities. Like Dickens, whom he emulated, he had a gift for entertaining audiences, mainly by putting them at once in a personal relationship with himself. At one period he had twenty-seven topics upon which he was prepared to speak.

He was also something of a figure in literature. In his eighteenth year he read the anniversary poem before the Boston Mercantile Library Association, and in 1849 he published a volume of *Poems* (reprinted in 1854), followed by *A Few Verses for a Few Friends* in 1858. His *Yesterdays with Authors* (1872), containing sketches, largely reminiscent, of Thackeray, Hawthorne, Dickens, Wordsworth, and Miss Mitford, ran through many editions and is still sold and read. Other works of his are: *Hawthorne* (1876), *In and Out of Doors with Charles Dickens* (1876), and *Underbrush* (1877), a collection of articles on various subjects. In conjunction with the critic, Edwin P. Whipple, he edited the *Family Library of British Poetry* (1878). In 1881, just before his death, *Ballads and Other Verses,* containing many poems from his earlier volumes, was issued.

As a young man, Fields was betrothed to Mary Willard, eldest daughter of Simon and Mary (Adams) Willard, but she died before they could be married. In 1850 he married her younger sister, Eliza Josephine Willard, but she lived only a short time. Fields then took for his second wife, in 1854, her cousin, Annie Adams, a most attractive woman who became a personage in Boston society [see Annie Adams Fields]. They had no children. He died at his house on Charles

St., Boston, from angina pectoris, after a long period of illness. In reviewing his life, the *Boston Transcript* (Apr. 25, 1881) said of him rightly: "He has been from early manhood an educator of the public, and never stooped to vitiate the popular taste."

[Mrs. Fields's *Jas. T. Fields, Biog. Notes and Personal Sketches* (1881) is rich in material. See also E. P. Whipple, "Recollections of James T. Fields," *Atlantic Monthly*, Aug. 1881; Henry James, "Mr. and Mrs. James T. Fields," *Atlantic Monthly*, July 1915; M. A. de W. Howe, *The Atlantic Monthly and its Makers* (1919), and sketch in E. W. Emerson, *The Early Years of the Saturday Club* (1918). There is an excellent obituary in the *Boston Transcript*, Apr. 25, 1881.]

C. M. F.

**FILLEBROWN, THOMAS** (Jan. 13, 1836–Jan. 22, 1908), dentist, author, educator, a son of James Bowdoin and Almira (Butler) Fillebrown of Winthrop, Me., received his early education in the Winthrop public school, and Towle Academy, and the Maine Wesleyan Seminary, from which he graduated in 1859. After serving a term as a teacher in the public school of his native town, he began the study of dentistry with his father. He became a member of the dental firm of Strout & Fillebrown at Lewiston, Me., but shortly afterward established an independent practise at Portland. When the dental department of the Harvard University Medical School was established in 1867, Fillebrown entered its first class, and received the dental degree of D.M.D., in 1869. He served as one of the instructors of that institution until 1883, and as its professor of operative dentistry and oral surgery for the next twenty-one years. In 1883, he received the degree of M.D., from the medical school of Bowdoin College.

From 1869 until shortly before his death Fillebrown practised dentistry in Boston, and became one of the leading authorities of his day on the use of cohesive gold-foil for filling teeth. He was also known as a skilful oral surgeon. Beginning in 1873, he contributed a number of articles to dental journals on operative dentistry, oral surgery, hypnosis as an anesthetic, and the physiology of vocalism. In 1889 he published *A Text-book of Operative Dentistry*, which was a standard work on the subject for many years. He was a teacher of ability and a fluent public speaker, who took a prominent part in dental association work, and he was an active member of several medical societies, including the American Medical Association. He was instrumental in bringing about the consolidation of the American Dental Association and the Southern Dental Association, which merged in 1897 as the National (later the American) Dental Association, with Fillebrown as its first president. From 1871 to 1874 he was president of the Harvard Dental Alumni Association. He was also a member of the Massachusetts Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. He died in his seventy-third year and was interred at Portland, Me. His life was devoted to his family and his profession, and his influence as a dental teacher and writer was far-reaching. On Sept. 2, 1861, he married Helen Dalton of Kent's Hill, Me. They had three daughters and two sons.

[C. B. Fillebrown, *Geneal. of the Fillebrown Family* (1910); *Dental Cosmos*, Mar. 1908; B. L. Thorpe in the *Hist. of Dental Surgery*, edited by C. R. K. Koch, vol. III (1910); *Index of the Periodical Dental Literature* for 1839–95 (4 vols., 1923–27); *Gen. Cat. of Bowdoin Coll.* (1912); *Boston Transcript*, Mar. 23, 1908.]

L. P. B.



**FILLMORE, JOHN COMFORT** (Feb. 4, 1843–Aug. 14, 1898), musician, theorist, was born on a farm near Franklin, New London County, Conn., the son of John L. and Mary Ann (Palmer) Fillmore. Though there is no record of his early training, it is certain that he entered Oberlin from New Lyme, Ohio, in 1862 and was graduated in 1865. There was as yet no music department at Oberlin College, but music instruction was provided for those desiring it, and Fillmore studied organ, and probably piano, under George W. Steele. He had evidently decided upon a musical career during his college course, for after his graduation he went to Leipzig where he studied under Moritz Hauptmann, Ernst Richter, and Benjamin Papperitz, who were eminent theorists as well as fine organists. During 1867–68 he was instructor in instrumental music at Oberlin. In 1868 he became professor of music at Ripon College, Wisconsin, remaining until 1878, when he accepted a similar position in the Milwaukee College for Women. In 1884 he founded the Milwaukee Music School and was its director until 1895 when he accepted a call to Pomona College, Claremont, Cal. He held this position until his death, which occurred at Taftville, Conn., within six miles of his birthplace. He was survived by his wife, Eliza Hill Fillmore, and two sons.

Fillmore was an important figure in his time, and was keenly interested in placing music in the college curriculum. As early as 1883 he was known as an important theorist. He also became interested in the music of the American Indian and spent much time among various tribes, writing down their tribal calls, ceremonial songs, and weird rhythms. As an authority on Indian music he was closely associated with Alice Fletcher [*q.v.*] and Francis La Flesche and collaborated with them in writing *A Study of Omaha Indian Music* (1893) and several magazine articles.

He was an enthusiastic and an inspiring teacher, whose genial disposition won him many friends, especially in his own profession. His appearance was not prepossessing, partly because of his long reddish beard and florid complexion. He is known as the author of: *Pianoforte Music: Its History, with Biographical Sketches . . . of its Greatest Masters* (1883); *New Lessons in Harmony* (1887); *Lessons in Musical History* (1888); *On the Value of Certain Modern Theories,* of von Ottingen and Riemann (1887); and as the translator of Riemann's *Klavierschule* and *Natur der Harmonik.*

[W. S. B. Mathews, *One Hundred Years of Music in America* (1889); *Oberlin Coll. Hist. Cat. 1833–1908*; Theodore Baker, *Biog. Dict. of Musicians* (1900); newspaper clippings; and information as to certain facts from Fillmore's son, Thomas Fillmore, and Clarence S. Brigham of the American Antiquarian Society.]

F. L. G. C.

**FILLMORE, MILLARD** (Jan. 7, 1800–Mar. 8, 1874), thirteenth president of the United States, was the oldest son and second child of Nathaniel and Phoebe (Millard) Fillmore, who about 1798 emigrated from Bennington, Vt., to Locke, Cayuga County, N. Y., where Millard was born. The Fillmore family had resided in New England for several generations. John Fillmore (or Phillmore), "mariner," of Ipswich, Mass., who purchased an estate in Beverly, Mass., in 1704, was the first known ancestor in America. The Fillmores had acquired neither prominence nor wealth in their New England residence, and the younger pioneer family in New York suffered the privations and hardships common to the frontier. Equally typical of the frontier of the early nineteenth century were Millard's youthful experiences. He worked on his father's farm, tried his hand as an apprentice at the clothier's trade, and attended school at none too frequent intervals until the age of eighteen, when he began to read law in the office of a Cayuga County judge. When the family moved to East Aurora, near Buffalo, young Fillmore continued his law study, teaching school meanwhile to make ends meet, until in 1823 he was admitted to the bar of Erie County. He opened a law office in East Aurora and remained there till 1830, when he moved his practise to Buffalo, henceforth his home. He had already become active in politics. In 1828 he met Thurlow Weed, with whose support he was elected to the legislature of New York in that year as an Anti-Mason. The close association with Weed endured for twenty years. When Weed, discarding the original principles of the Anti-Masonic party, undertook to lead it into the coalition against Jackson in 1834, Fillmore followed him, thus



becoming a Whig (Charles McCarthy, "The Anti-Masonic Party," *Annual Report of the American Historical Association,* 1902, vol. I). Meanwhile he had served three terms in the state legislature and in 1832 had been elected to Congress. He did not stand for reëlection in 1834, but in 1836 was again elected and served thereafter for three consecutive terms, declining renomination in 1842. In Congress he was a Clay Whig, though with a healthy degree of independence, as when he refused to join Clay's fight for the reëstablishment of a national bank. He rose rapidly into prominence in the party, and when the election of 1840 gave the Whigs a majority in the House of Representatives, Fillmore became chairman of the ways and means committee and in that capacity took a leading part in framing the tariff of 1842, which was in harmony with his belief in protection.

Fillmore was put forward by his friends for the vice-presidential nomination in 1844, and when he failed to secure that, was nominated for governor of New York against Silas Wright, the Democratic candidate. His defeat and that of Clay at the head of the national ticket he attributed to "the Abolitionists and foreign Catholics" (Severance, *post,* II, 268). Three years later he was elected comptroller of the State of New York, but after holding that office little over a year (Jan. 1, 1848–Feb. 20, 1849) he resigned in order to take up his duties as vice-president of the United States. He owed his nomination for that office in part to the influence of the Clay following, who, angered at the choice of Zachary Taylor for first place on the ticket, refused to accept Abbot Lawrence, the Massachusetts cotton manufacturer, as the nominee for vice-president, declaring they would not "have cotton at both ends of the ticket" (*Autobiography of Thurlow Weed,* 1883, p. 585). Discovery by Southern Democrats of a letter written ten years before in which Fillmore had expressed mild anti-slavery views gave some embarrassment to his Southern friends but did not prevent the triumphant election of the Whig ticket (Severance, *post,* II, 174, 281–82; U. B. Phillips, "The Correspondence of Robert Toombs, Alexander H. Stephens, and Howell Cobb," *Annual Report of the American Historical Association,* 1911, II, 128).

Shortly after Fillmore's inauguration as vice-president there occurred a break in the cordial relations which he had long maintained with Thurlow Weed and with William H. Seward, now a senator from New York. The loss of these political friends was to some extent compensated for by a reconciliation with Daniel Webster, with

whom an unfortunate misunderstanding had arisen several years before (DeA. S. Alexander, *Political History of the State of New York*, II, 1906, 37–38, 79–80; Severance, *post*, II, 274–75). Soon after the election Fillmore had written to a friend: "I regard this election as putting an end to all ideas of disunion. It raises up a national party, occupying a middle ground, and leaves the fanatics and disunionists, North and South, without the hope of destroying the fair fabric of our Constitution" (Severance, *post*, II, 286). How far this estimate was from the truth was revealed when Congress convened in December 1849, and proslavery and anti-slavery men fought bitterly over the various aspects of the slavery question. Over the angry debate in the Senate Fillmore, as vice-president, presided with firmness, fairness, and good humor, but no amount of mere suavity could permanently help the situation. When Clay, in the Senate, proposed his well-known measures of compromise, President Taylor, Louisiana slave-owner though he was, opposed any yielding to the South and in that course had the support of Seward and the more extreme anti-slavery Whigs, while Webster threw his whole influence on the side of Clay and compromise (H. D. Foster, "Webster's Seventh of March Speech and the Secession Movement, 1850," in the *American Historical Review*, January 1922). Fillmore was apparently slow in determining his stand. In April he said in a private letter that he approved the President's plan (*Quarterly Publications of the Historical and Philosophical Society of Ohio*, April-June 1918, p. 43). Early in July, however, according to his own statement, he had a conversation with President Taylor in which he plainly intimated that if he were called upon to give a deciding vote on the bill embodying the various compromise measures, he should vote in favor of it (Severance, *post*, II, 321–24). The sudden death of Taylor, July 9, 1850, called Fillmore to the presidency. Taylor's cabinet resigned, and Fillmore's prompt appointment of Webster as secretary of state and Crittenden of Kentucky as attorney-general demonstrated unmistakably his alliance with the moderate Whigs who favored compromise. In a message to Congress, Aug. 6, 1850, Fillmore urged the propriety and expediency of indemnifying Texas for the surrender of her claim upon New Mexico, adding a plea for the adjustment of all the outstanding controversies. That this message was decisive in persuading Congress to take the first step toward compromise was the opinion of a hostile observer, Salmon P. Chase, who wrote that it won six New England votes in the Senate

Fillmore

(*Annual Report of the American Historical Association*, 1902, II, 217). Clay's composite compromise bill—the "omnibus bill"—could not pass Congress as a whole, but it was separated into its component parts, and one by one these passed House and Senate and became law, receiving their most consistent support from Northern Democrats and Southern Whigs. A vital part of the compromise, from the Southern point of view, was the Fugitive-Slave Law, and this too Fillmore signed (Sept. 18, 1850), thereby drawing from the Abolitionists a torrent of abuse such as that which had greeted Webster's "Seventh of March" speech. Unmoved by such criticism, the President spared no effort in enforcing the unpopular law.

The compromise measures of 1850 were the outstanding domestic achievement of Fillmore's administration. Though his part in them damned him with the Abolitionist clique (and hence with historians for the next half-century), it appears now as the work of a cool-headed conservative who, like Lincoln later, placed the preservation of the Union above any specific settlement of the slavery question.

In the contest for the Whig nomination for the presidency in 1852, Fillmore had the cordial support of the Southern Whigs. The New Englanders generally supported Webster, while the Seward Whigs, the extreme anti-slavery group, favored Gen. Winfield Scott. Could the friends of Webster and Fillmore have combined on either, they could have controlled the convention, but when this proved impossible, the nomination went to Scott. The ensuing campaign was the last in which the Whig party took active part. With the rise of the Republican party many conservative Whigs, both North and South, found a temporary abiding place in the American or Know-Nothing party, which, originating as a Protestant-nativist body, now appeared to many a means of uniting North and South on an issue not connected with the slavery question. When Fillmore, in 1856, was tendered the presidential nomination by this party, he accepted it and in his campaign stressed the value of the Union and the dangers of sectionalism. In the election he ran a poor third to Buchanan and Frémont. Always for conciliation rather than coercion, Fillmore opposed the Lincoln administration in its conduct of the Civil War and in the election of 1864 supported McClellan (Severance, *post*, II, 431–35). During Reconstruction his sympathies were with President Johnson (*Ibid.*, II, 106–10).

Fillmore was the first chancellor of the University of Buffalo, one of the founders of the

Filson

Buffalo Historical Society and its first president, a founder of the Buffalo General Hospital, and an interested worker in various other civic, educational, and philanthropic enterprises. A proffered degree of D.C.L., from Oxford University he declined in 1855 on the ground that he possessed no literary or scientific attainments to justify his accepting it (*Grosvenor Library Bulletin,* December 1920). While such of Fillmore's letters and speeches as are preserved make him seem singularly colorless, his contemporaries have left testimony to his impressive presence, kindly blue eyes, and gracious manner, all of which seem borne out by his portraits. "He was strictly temperate, industrious, orderly," writes the historian Rhodes, "and his integrity was above reproach." He was twice married: to Abigail Powers of Moravia, N. Y., on Feb. 5, 1826, and after her death in 1853, to Caroline Carmichael McIntosh, a widow of Albany, on Feb. 10, 1858.

[The best existing biography of Fillmore is W. E. Griffis, *Millard Fillmore* (1915). Many of his letters, speeches, and public papers were edited by Frank H. Severance and published under the title "Millard Fillmore Papers," vols. I and II, in the *Buffalo Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vols. X and XI (1907), and a large collection of manuscript letters received by Fillmore, 1849–53, is in the possession of the Buffalo Hist. Soc. See also *N. Y. Tribune,* Mar. 9, 1874.] J. W. P.

**FILSON, JOHN** (*c.* 1747–October 1788), explorer, historian, has a unique and permanent place in Kentucky history, because he wrote the first history of Kentucky, made the first map of it, and published (and in all probability wrote) the first account of Daniel Boone. Very little is known of him before he appeared in Kentucky in 1783. The date of his birth is unknown, although the year 1747 seems the most probable conjecture (R. T. Durrett, *post*). He was born on a farm in the township of East Fallowfield in southeastern Pennsylvania. His father was Davison Filson, and his grandfather John Filson, an emigrant from England (Jillson, *post,* p. 139). Nothing is known of his early life in Pennsylvania beyond the fact that he was taught by the Rev. Samuel Finley, later president of the College of New Jersey. No record of Revolutionary service has been found, but his coming to Kentucky was apparently for the purpose of taking up land on certain Virginia military warrants which had come into his possession. He seems to have spent his first year in Kentucky teaching a private school in Lexington (G. W. Ranck, *History of Lexington, Kentucky,* 1872, p. 96). It is evident from his writings that he was much better educated than most Kentuckians of the time. He secured several thousand acres of land in Kentucky, and as a sequel to this achievement wrote his *Discovery, Settlement, and Present State of Kentucke* (1784, 1st ed.), with the purpose, as it appears from internal evidence, of attracting immigrants and thereby increasing the value of land. The descriptive portions of this famous book are vivid and attractive; the historical setting is inadequate, misleading, and often quite inaccurate. An appendix to the book contains "The Adventures of Col. Daniel Boon." The "Boon" is written in the first person but it certainly was not written by Boone himself. There has been much dispute over the authorship but its stilted, pedantic style clearly indicates that it was written by Filson himself. It contains many mistakes of fact as well as continual sins of diction, but it established the reputation of Boone and, more than anything else, was responsible for his place in Western history. The book also contained a map of Kentucky—the first and a remarkably accurate one. The map was published separately, also, and among his contemporaries Filson seems to have been better known for this map than for anything else. There being no printing press in Kentucky at the time, Filson journeyed to Wilmington, Del., and had his book published there in 1784. The map was published at Philadelphia in the same year. The *Discovery* was very popular, running through several editions in London and Paris the next few years (Lewis Collins, *History of Kentucky,* 1874, II, 183).

Filson returned to Kentucky in 1785 and took up his residence at Louisville where he engaged in business as a fur trader. Restlessness and land hunger led him into several trips to the Illinois country in 1785 and 1786. In the latter year he once more visited his home in Pennsylvania, returning to Kentucky in 1787. After this he appears twice in Kentucky affairs: on January 19, 1788, when he published in the new-born *Kentucky Gazette,* at Lexington, a prospectus of a school which he proposed to establish there, and in August of the same year when he published in the same paper a prospectus of a town he and some associates proposed to lay out in Ohio on a tract of land bought from Judge Symmes. This town, first named Losantiville, is the present Cincinnati. While surveying with Symmes up the Little Miami, Filson was killed by an Indian in October 1788 (*The Correspondence of John Cleves Symmes,* 1926, ed. by B. W. Bond, p. 46).

[All that is known of John Filson, or can reasonably be conjectured, is contained in R. T. Durrett, *John Filson, the First Historian of Ky., An Account of his Life and Writings,* Filson Club Pubs., no. 1 (1884). John Wilson Townsend, *Kentuckians in Hist. and Lit.* (1907), has a sketch of him. P. Lee Phillips, *The First*

*Map of Ky.* (1908), deals with him as a cartographer. W. R. Jillson has published (1929) a facsimile reproduction of the original Wilmington edition of *Filson's Kentucke,* with a sketch of his life and a full bibliography. The Filson Club Pubs., no. 35. Manuscript journals and diaries of his trips to Vincennes are in the Draper Manuscripts of the State Hist. Soc. at Madison, Wis.]

R. S. C—l.

**FINCH, FRANCIS MILES** (June 9, 1827–July 31, 1907), jurist and poet, was born in Ithaca, N. Y., of New England stock, the son of Miles Finch, a merchant, and his wife, Tryphena Farling. He was educated at Ithaca Academy and at Yale College (A.B., 1849), where he clearly showed literary proclivities, as editor of the *Yale Literary Magazine,* winner of a prize for English composition, and class poet. Both before and after graduation he wrote many college songs which are still sung. Returning to Ithaca he read law, was admitted to the bar, and gained repute as a practising lawyer. On May 25, 1853, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert May Brooke of Philadelphia. During Grant's first administration he served as a district collector of internal revenue. He took up the central work of his life in 1880, being twice appointed to fill vacancies and then elected for the full term of fourteen years as associate judge of the New York court of appeals. Sitting regularly until Dec. 31, 1895, he wrote more than 750 opinions, widely known for their knowledge of the law, clear and cogent reasoning, and unusual refinement and grace of style.

A close friend of Ezra Cornell and Andrew D. White [*qq.v.*], he was active in the founding of Cornell University, as a trustee and especially as a legal counselor. After serving as a non-resident lecturer in the Cornell Law School from its foundation in 1887, and as dean from 1892, upon his retirement from the court of appeals he became professor of the history and evolution of law and taught actively until four years before his death. In 1899 he was chosen president of the New York State Bar Association.

Though a successful lawyer and a distinguished judge he is most widely known as a poet. He wrote verses infrequently but continuously from his college days to the end of his life. For the centennial celebration of the Linonian Society of Yale, 1853, he wrote as an "episode" in a longer poem his well-known "Nathan Hale." On hearing that the women of Columbus, Miss., had "strewn flowers alike on the graves of the Confederate and of the National soldiers," he composed his famous poem, "The Blue and the Gray," first published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (September 1867) and soon printed and recited everywhere in both North and South. It is probably



not an exaggeration to say "that all the orations and sermons and appeals for the restoration of kindly feeling between the two sections have been exceeded in real effect upon the national heart by this simple poem" (White, *post,* p. vi). Most of his poems were written and printed occasionally; at the end of his life he made a collection, published posthumously as *The Blue and the Gray and Other Verses* (1909), containing a preface in which he refers to his verses as "only incidents along the line of a busy and laborious life." He perhaps accounts for both his small output of verse and its sincerity in his reply on being offered at the opening of Cornell University a professorship of rhetoric and literature: "My whole life as a lawyer has been a battle against literary longings. I have kept the most earnest part of my nature in chains. I fear I have done it so long as to make full liberty dangerous to me" (*Ibid.,* p. vii). Notable among his addresses are: *The Life and Services of Ezra Cornell* (1887) and *Chief Justice John Marshall, Marshall Day Address* (1901).

In his appearance kindliness shone through a look of judicial austerity, and the many tributes paid him at the celebration of his seventy-fifth birthday emphasized not merely his eminence as a judge but his personal charm and genius for friendship. He was perhaps happiest in his large library and in his garden overlooking Cayuga Lake. "So strong was his love of home life that nothing could induce him to visit other lands, or even to travel far in his own" (A. D. White, as cited).

[A. P. Stokes, *Memorials of Eminent Yale Men* (2 vols., 1914); *Yale Univ. Obit. Record,* 5 ser. (1910); *Exercises in Honor of Francis Miles Finch* (Cornell Univ., 1902), in which E. W. Huffcut notes Finch's most important legal opinions; *Cornell Alumni News,* Aug. 1907; E. H. Woodruff, in *Cornell Law Quart.,* vol. IV, nos. 3 and 4; Andrew Dickson White, *Autobiography* (1905) and "Preliminary Word" in *The Blue and the Gray and Other Verses*; *Proc. N. Y. State Bar Asso.,* 1908; obituaries in *Evening Post* (N. Y.), July 31, 1907; *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Tribune,* Aug. 1, 1907.]

F. C. P.

**FINCK, HENRY THEOPHILUS** (Sept. 22, 1854–Oct. 1, 1926), author and music critic, was one of the most versatile and gifted members of his profession. He was born in Bethel, Shelby County, Mo., the fourth of five children of Henry Conrad Finck and Beatrice (Fink) Finck. Both parents came from towns adjacent to Stuttgart in Würtemberg, but were unrelated and unacquainted until they met in Bethel. The father was an apothecary, which occupation included the duties of a physician, and was also an excellent violinist. He took time to give his children musical instruction in piano and stringed instru-

ments, and when Henry was seven, gave the boy a 'cello. The mother died when Henry was still a child. The father then removed to Oregon where his children would be beyond the turmoil of the Civil War. Instead of taking the route by covered wagon, he chose the long but less tedious route by way of Panama. The family settled at Aurora Mills whither a colony formerly situated at Bethel had removed. There Henry attended the school conducted by Christopher Wolf, an ex-clergyman and graduate of Göttingen. When Wolf found that young Finck had the dream of entering Harvard, and was trying to educate himself in the classics, he offered gratuitous instruction. Wolf's thorough training enabled Finck to read any Greek or Latin writer at sight, which so impressed the Harvard examiners that they admitted him to sophomore standing in the classics. Each year he secured a scholarship of three or four hundred dollars, and was graduated with the highest honors in the class of 1876. Though he majored in philosophy and psychology, he also studied harmony and musical history under J. K. Paine. His skill on the 'cello furnished opportunity for playing with Paine, also for practising in the secret hours of the night on the piano in the basement of University Hall. Though disappointed at his failure to obtain the Parker fellowship, with which he expected to continue his studies in philosophy and psychology in European universities, he decided that he must in some way secure means to go to Bayreuth, to attend the first Wagner Festival. His funds were depleted, but he borrowed five hundred dollars from an uncle, and through his friends John Fiske and W. D. Howells he arranged to write several articles for the New York *World,* and one for the *Atlantic Monthly.* At the close of the festival, he wintered in Munich, hearing much music and eking out an existence by tutoring. Upon his father's earnest solicitations that he begin his life work, he returned to America, but went to Cambridge as a resident graduate in philosophy and won the Harris scholarship of six hundred dollars annually. This gave him three more years in Berlin, Vienna, and Heidelberg (1878–81). He relaxed his efforts for a doctorate, and while he wrote many philosophical articles for the *Nation* and the *World,* he was hearing much music and unconsciously preparing himself for the work of a music critic.

In August 1881 Finck became music critic for the *Nation,* continuing in this capacity until his retirement in May 1924. For forty years, beginning in 1882, he gave annually twenty-four lectures on musical history at Mrs. Thurber's Conservatory. In 1890 he married Abbie Helen Cush-



man, a pupil of Joseffy, who shared her husband's tastes and assisted him in his writing. So successfully did she adopt his literary style that their best friends could not detect the authorship of her contributions to his works. At the close of his active career he had written seventeen books. During the last two years of his life he wrote his memoirs under the title of *My Adventures in the Golden Age of Music,* the final revision of which was completed almost on the eve of his death. He was authoritative and entertaining, whether he wrote on humorous, musical, or seriously philosophical topics, and he was an equally interesting lecturer. He probably knew intimately a larger number of famous artists than any other critic, even among those of whom he had not written in laudatory terms. He was the champion of Wagner, Chopin, Schumann, Liszt, Grieg, Tschaikovsky, Dvořák and MacDowell, but he had an unmitigated contempt for Brahms. He was in some ways a militant critic, with strong convictions, yet he was open-minded toward the best in the newer music. It is characteristic of the man that, although his real middle name was Gottlob (after his mother's distinguished brother, Prof. Fink of Tübingen University), Finck considered the name too Teutonic, and since there was no exact English equivalent, translated it as faithfully as possible to Theophilus.

His psychological and anthropological works are: *Romantic Love and Personal Beauty* (1887), his first book; *Primitive Love and Love Stories* (1899); *Food and Flavor* (1913); *Girth Control* (1923); and *Gardening with Brains* (1922). His musical works include: *Chopin and Other Musical Essays* (1889); *Wagner and His Works* (2 vols., 1893), translated into German; *Pictorial Wagner* (1899); *Anton Seidl, a Memorial by his Friends* (1899); *Songs and Song-Writers* (1900); *Grieg and his Music* (1909); *Success in Music* (1909); *Massenet and his Operas* (1910); *Richard Strauss* (1917); and the following edited collections: *Fifty Master Songs* (1902); *Fifty Schubert Songs* (1903); *Fifty Grieg Songs* (1909); *One Hundred Songs by Ten Composers* (1917); and *Musical Laughs* (1924). He also wrote three books of travel: *The Pacific Coast Scenic Tour* (1890); *Spain and Morocco* (1891); and *Lotus Time in Japan* (1895).

[*My Adventures in the Golden Age of Music* (1926), which gives family history; Louis C. Elson, *Hist. of Am. Music* (1904); Theodore Baker, *A Biog. Dict. of Musicians* (1900); N. Y. *Evening Post,* May 31, 1924, Oct. 2, 1926; *N. Y. Times,* Oct. 2, 1926; and newspaper clippings.] F.L.G.C.

**FINDLAY, JAMES** (Oct. 12, 1770–Dec. 28, 1835), soldier, congressman, was born in Frank-

lin County, Pa., the third son of Samuel and Jane (Smith) Findlay. In 1793 he and his wife, Jane Irwin, removed from Pennsylvania to Virginia, thence to Kentucky, and ultimately settled in Cincinnati, Ohio. In his adopted state Findlay quickly rose to prominence. In 1798 he became a member of the first territorial legislative council and three years later was appointed the first receiver of public moneys in the newly established land office at Cincinnati. The following year he was appointed United States marshal for the District of Ohio, being the first to hold this office. He served two terms as mayor of Cincinnati, in 1805–06, and again in 1810–11. At the time of the Burr conspiracy (1806) he held the rank of brigadier-general in the state militia, and in company with Maj.-Gen. John S. Gano was ordered by Gov. Tiffin to take charge of the military operations at Cincinnati and help in suppressing the proposed expedition from Blennerhasset's Island. At the outbreak of the War of 1812 Gen. Findlay was placed in command of the 2nd Ohio Volunteer Infantry with the rank of colonel in the regular army. He was present in Detroit at the surrender of Gen. William Hull, which he vigorously denounced (J. G. Forbes, *Report of the Trial of Brigadier-Gen. Hull,* 1814, pp. 29, 45, *passim*). In the family correspondence there is a letter which states that Gen. Findlay was urged "to put Hull in irons, but he would not, as he said there is [was] no precedent for it" (Goss, *post,* III, 27). He was commended for his services at Detroit by Gen. Hull and was promoted to the rank of major-general in the state militia in which capacity he served for many years. In June 1812 he began the erection of Fort Findlay, which was named in his honor, and upon the site of this fort the present town of Findlay, in Hancock County, was founded. In 1824 he was elected to Congress as a Jacksonian Democrat from the 1st district, composed of Hamilton and Clermont counties. He continued to represent this district until 1833 when he was succeeded by Robert T. Lytle. The year following his retirement from Congress he was nominated on the Democratic ticket for governor but was defeated by Robert Lucas. A lawyer by profession, an active officer in the state militia, one of the proprietors of the *Liberty Hall and Cincinnati Gazette,* and a partner in the Cincinnati Bell, Brass & Iron Foundry, his interests touched many aspects of the life of his local community. As a stanch supporter of President Jackson's policies, he was an influential Ohio Democrat. His sterling integrity, unquestioned patriotism, and warm hospitality gained for him the respect of his fellow citizens. Although he had a natural



reserve in manner which gave strangers the impression of austerity, "he was the soul of kindness and geniality."

[C. F. Goss, *Cincinnati, the Queen City* (4 vols., 1912); E. O. Randall and D. J. Ryan, *Hist. of Ohio,* III (1912); "Ohio in the War of 1812" in the *Ohio Archæol. and Hist. Quart.,* July 1919; "Selections from the Torrence Papers," in the *Quart. Pubs. of the Hist. and Philos. Soc. of Ohio,* July 1906, Jan.–Mar. 1907, July–Sept. 1908, July–Sept. 1909, Apr.–June 1911, July–Sept. 1911; G. A. Worth, "Recollections of Cincinnati, 1817–1821," in the *Quart. Pubs. of the Hist. and Philos. Soc. of Ohio,* Apr.–July 1916; J. Burnet, *Notes on the Early Settlement of the Northwest* (1847); H. Howe, *Hist. Colls. of Ohio* (3 vols., 1891).] R. C. M.

**FINDLEY, WILLIAM** (1741–Apr. 5, 1821), congressman, was a descendant of one of the signers of the Solemn League and Covenant in Scotland. His grandparents emigrated to North Ireland during the persecution of the Presbyterians by the last two Stuart kings. In their adopted country, where William Findley was born, the members of the family played a conspicuous part in the thrilling events of the time. While the formal education of William was limited, he had a strong intellect, which he cultivated by reading. He landed in America in 1763 and established himself in a flourishing Scotch-Irish settlement near Waynesboro, in what is now Franklin County, Pa. For several years he worked at the weaver's trade, to which he had been apprenticed in Ireland, and at the same time he taught school for a number of terms. After his marriage in 1769, he purchased a farm and settled thereon. He identified himself with the interests of the colonists in the long controversy with the mother country and vigorously espoused their cause. He became a member of the first committee of observation from his county, and upon the opening of hostilities he entered the army and soon rose to the rank of captain. Near the close of the war he moved beyond the mountains into Westmoreland County to a farm near the present site of Latrobe. He was elected to the council of censors, on which he served from 1783 to 1790, and held various other public offices, among which were those of assemblyman, state supreme executive councilman, and delegate to the state constitutional convention of 1789–90.

Findley displayed early in life that ability for leadership which won for him a long and creditable career in public service. Indeed, he was a consummate politician. Because of his large personal acquaintance and his inherent ability he became a formidable factor in shaping public opinion not only in western Pennsylvania but throughout the state. An Anti-Federalist, he vigorously opposed the ratification of the Federal Constitution and later Hamilton's financial measures. In 1791 he was elected to Congress,

where he served continuously until 1817 with the exception of four years, from 1799 to 1803, when he served in the state Senate. Although openly hostile to the Federalist legislative program, he was consulted frequently by Washington and his cabinet concerning frontier problems. Especially significant was Findley's persistent opposition to the early practise of referring practically all questions of importance to the heads of departments for their consideration. It was upon a recommendation made by him that the first standing committee, that of ways and means, was appointed.

Findley was one of the prominent men identified with the Whiskey Insurrection of 1794. Feeling as he did that the tax on whiskey was exorbitant and unjust, he encouraged open resistance to the government at first. Later, however, he counseled moderation and obedience to the law and displayed real statesmanship in working for a compromise. In 1796 he published a *History of the Insurrection in the Four Western Counties of Pennsylvania,* in which he attempted to vindicate his own position as well as to furnish an acceptable apology for those who participated actively in the insurrection. Throughout his public career Findley was a faithful guardian of the interests of the frontiersmen, who were his associates and his friends.

[R. M. Ewing, "Life and Times of Wm. Findley," *Western Pa. Hist. Mag.*, Oct. 1919; G. D. Albert, *Hist. of the County of Westmoreland, Pa.* (1882); J. H. Campbell, *Hist. of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick and of the Hibernian Soc. 1771–1892* (1892); W. C. Armor, *Scotch-Irish Bibliog. of Pa.* (1906); *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, vol. V (1881); *Democratic Press* (Phila.), Apr. 11, 1821.]

A. E. M.

**FINE, HENRY BURCHARD** (Sept. 14, 1858–Dec. 22, 1928), mathematician, was born at Chambersburg, Pa., the son of Lambert Suydam Fine, a Presbyterian minister, and Mary Ely Burchard. The father died in 1869. His widow, after living for a time at Winona, Minn., removed to Princeton, N. J., in 1875. Her son Henry finished his preparation for college by private study and entered the College of New Jersey (now Princeton University), in 1876. He led his class for four years, and was graduated with first honors in 1880. At first he devoted himself to the study of the classical languages, but before graduation he turned to the study of mathematics. After spending a year as a fellow at Princeton in physics, he was made instructor in mathematics. He served in this capacity until granted leave of absence for study abroad. He spent a year and a half at Leipzig, under Felix Klein, received the doctor's degree from that University in 1885, and on his return to Princeton was made assistant professor of mathematics. In 1891 he was appointed to the Dod Professorship of Mathematics, and from that time on, until his death, he was either the virtual or the titular head of the department of mathematics.

Fine published a few original papers on the general topic of singularities of curves, but his real interest was in the exact logic of mathematics, and its presentation to students. He embodied his views as to how mathematics should be taught in several text-books: *The Number System of Algebra* (1891); a *College Algebra* (1905); *Coördinate Geometry,* with Henry Dallas Thompson (1909), and *Calculus* (1927). He was a member of the American Mathematical Society and served for a term (1911) as its president. He was also a member of the American Philosophical Society and of the Mathematical Association of America. He was an active member of the Princeton faculty and served on various committees. In 1903, when Woodrow Wilson was president of the university, he was appointed dean of the faculty, with oversight of the scholarship and discipline of the students. He introduced the policy of establishing rules laying down standards of scholarship which were reasonable and intelligible, and of enforcing these rules rigorously and almost automatically. This policy was justified by its results. In the controversies which raged during Wilson's administration on various questions of academic policy, he supported the president. After Wilson resigned the presidency in 1910, Fine was practically acting president under the nominal presidency of John A. Stewart, the senior member of the board of trustees, until John Grier Hibben was elected president in 1912. He then resigned his office as dean of the faculty.

In 1909 Fine was appointed dean of the scientific departments. He continued in this office until his death, and contributed greatly to the development of a broad and sound engineering curriculum, and to the strengthening of the scientific departments by the appointment of men of proved ability in research and by the acquisition of a considerable endowment for research. A large part of this endowment was given by his personal friends, as a token of their admiration and affection. His interests and activities were closely bounded by the academic life. When Woodrow Wilson became president of the United States he offered to send Fine as ambassador to Germany, and later offered him a place on the Federal Reserve Board. Both of these offers he declined. He was a member of the Presbyterian Church but took no part in church work. The only public office which he held was a membership on the board of education of Princeton Bor-

ough. He was married, Sept. 6, 1888, to Philena Fobes of Syracuse, N. Y., who died in April 1928. His eldest child, Capt. John Fine, died from an illness developed by his service at the front in the World War. An older daughter also died in her youth. A younger daughter survived him. His death resulted from the collision of a motor-car with the bicycle which he was riding.

[The catalogues of Princeton University; the *Princetonian*, and the *Princeton Alumni Weekly*, particularly that of Jan. 11, 1929; R. S. Baker, *Woodrow Wilson, Life and Letters*, vol. II (1927); *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 23 and 24, 1928.]

W. F. M.

**FINK, ALBERT** (Oct. 27, 1827–Apr. 3, 1897), railroad engineer and operator, generally regarded as the father of railway economics and statistics in the United States, was born in Lauterbach, then located in the Grand Duchy of Hesse-Darmstadt, the son of Andres S. and Margaret (Jacob) Fink. He was educated at private and polytechnic schools at Darmstadt, being graduated in engineering and architecture in 1848. Unsympathetic with the forces that triumphed in the German revolution of that year, he emigrated to the United States in 1849, and entered the drafting office of the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad under Benjamin H. Latrobe [*q.v.*], chief engineer. He was soon placed in charge of design and erection of bridges, stations, and shops for the section of the railroad from Grafton to Moundsville, Va. (now W. Va.).

During this period he invented the bridge truss which bears his name, and which was first used in the bridge over the Monongahela at Fairmont, Va. (now W. Va.), in 1852, the three spans of 305 feet each comprising at the time the longest iron railroad bridge in the United States. He became section engineer and later division engineer, but left the Baltimore & Ohio in 1857 to become construction engineer of the Louisville & Nashville Railroad, with headquarters at Louisville, Ky. Here he planned and superintended the erection of a freight and passenger station, then turned his attention to bridging Green River, about seventy-four miles south of Louisville, an achievement that attracted much attention because of its engineering difficulties. The bridge was constructed over a wide gorge, at a considerable distance above water, and at an angle to the main direction of the stream. It was at the time the largest iron bridge on the continent of North America, except for the Victoria Bridge at Montreal.

At this same period Fink designed and constructed a new court-house for the city of Louisville. In 1859 he took charge of the machinery of the Louisville & Nashville Railroad, in addition to buildings and bridges, and in 1860 became

Fink

chief engineer of that railroad. During the Civil War, much of the property of the Louisville & Nashville was destroyed, and it fell to him to carry out the work of reconstruction. At the end of the war, the railroad was in good physical condition, and found it comparatively easy to settle its accounts with the government, because of the intelligent and complete records which Fink had maintained. In 1865 he was promoted to general superintendent. During the succeeding ten years he rehabilitated the line, built up business-like relations with competing and connecting railroad companies, and as an engineer completed his crowning work, the bridge across the Ohio River at Louisville. The total length of the bridge was one mile, and the principal span of 400 feet over the Indiana channel of the river was the longest truss bridge in the world. Following the death of the president of the railroad in 1869, Fink was given wider powers through appointment as vice-president and general superintendent.

He now began in his annual reports to publish information as to the real cost of transportation. He analyzed and standardized freight rates, establishing them upon an accounting and statistical basis. He raised accounts and statistics to the level of a science—the economics of railway operation. His report of 1874, generally known as "The Fink Report on Cost of Transportation," is regarded as the foundation stone of American railway economics. At the time, this report was called "the fullest investigation into the cost of railroad transportation ever published in our country or language" (*Railway Gazette*, May 30, 1874). In addition, he took an active part in extending the Louisville & Nashville Railroad beyond Nashville as far as Montgomery, Ala., which involved large financing, partly negotiated in England. The wisdom of his financial measures, both in financing and in operation, was thoroughly tested during the panic of 1873, when the Louisville & Nashville was one of the few railroads which continued payment of interest on its funded debt, and escaped bankruptcy.

In 1875 he resigned, his intention being to retire from active life and engage in literary work on various railroad problems. This intention was frustrated by the offer of the executive directorate of the Southern Railway & Steamship Association, then recently formed, with principal offices in Atlanta, Ga. The railroads between 1870 and 1880 were engaged in considerable warfare among themselves, there being no effective regulation of rates or other railway practises, and the wiser heads among railway officials recognized the necessity of appointing a man of

known ability and integrity to iron out their difficulties. In his two years as commissioner Fink undertook to eliminate, or at least to smooth down, the many points at which the twenty-five competitive Southern railways found themselves at loggerheads, and to give to the public a stabilized set of freight rates on which they could depend. He was successful in bringing a fair degree of order out of the existing chaos.

In 1877, he again decided to retire, but at the urgent request of the chief executives of the four trunk lines centering in New York City, he organized the Trunk Line Association in an effort to settle the disastrous rate war then in progress. He became its commissioner, with powers and duties similar to those he had held in Atlanta, and met with success summed up by Charles Francis Adams as follows: "It is safe to say that the greatest of all these combinations—that of the Trunk Lines—is held together only by the personal influence and the force of character of one man, its Commissioner" (quoted in *Transactions of the American Society of Civil Engineers*, XLI, 635). The Interstate Commerce Act of 1887, beginning the period of government regulation, made work of his type less vital, and this fact, together with his failing health, led him to retire from active work in 1889. The rest of his life he spent largely in his Kentucky home, devoting himself to study and research. He died at a sanitarium on the Hudson River in his seventieth year. During his young manhood Fink was married in Baltimore and after the death of his first wife he was married a second time, on Apr. 14, 1869, to Sarah Hunt of Louisville.

[Memoir in *Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers*, XLI (1899), 626–38; "Albert Fink . . . A Bibliographical Memoir" (1927), and Chas. K. Needham, "The Life and Achievements of Albert Fink," read before the Filson Club, Louisville, Ky., in 1920, both MSS. in possession of the Bureau of Railway Economics, Washington, D. C.; J. G. Wilkes, "Albert Fink, Pioneer Railroader," *Louisville & Nashville Employees Mag.*, Aug. 1927; obituaries in *Railroad Gazette*, Apr. 9, 1897, and *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 4, 1897.] J.H.P.

**FINLAY, CARLOS JUAN** (Dec. 3, 1833–Aug. 20, 1915), physician, was born in Camagüey, Cuba, to Dr. Edward Finlay, native of Scotland, and Isabel de Barrés, of French birth. His early education was obtained in France, mainly in the Lycée of Rouen. He graduated in medicine from the Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, in 1855 and from the University of Havana in 1857. His first venture in practise was in Lima, Peru, but after a few months he returned to Cuba. He spent the greater part of the years 1860–61 in Paris in postgraduate study. He practised for a time in Matanzas but practically all of his professional career was passed in Havana. Though a general practitioner he specialized to some extent in ophthalmology. In 1865 he presented a paper before the Havana Academy of Science in which he gave the result of seven years of observation upon the influence of atmospheric alkalinity upon the incidence of yellow fever. Then and for many years after he ascribed great etiological importance to the alkalinity of the air. There is no explanation for his reasons for abandoning this theory, but in 1881 before the same society he read a paper entitled *The Mosquito Hypothetically Considered as the Agent of Transmission of Yellow Fever.* This paper was received with utter indifference.

For the following twenty years he held to the advocacy of the mosquito theory, building up a good circumstantial case against the *Stegomyia,* though repeated efforts at producing the disease experimentally were futile. His arguments, together with the work of Ross and the Italians in demonstrating the conveyance of malaria by the mosquito, and the observations of Dr. Henry Rose Carter [*q.v.*] upon what he termed the "extrinsic incubation" of yellow fever, caused the Reed board in 1900 to concentrate on the mosquito theory of causation. At the outbreak of the Spanish-American war Finlay, then 65 years old, went to Washington and offered his services to the American government. He participated in the Santiago campaign and later was on duty in Havana. He was associated with Guiteras, Gorgas, and Albertini on the Army Yellow Fever Commission which passed judgment on the diagnosis of every suspected case of the disease. In 1902 the Cuban government appointed him chief health officer and president of the Superior Board of Health. In 1909 he was retired with a pension and an honorary title. The triumph of his views on yellow fever brought him many honors. In 1908 the French government made him an officer of the Legion of Honor, and in 1911 he was elected a corresponding member of the French Academy of Medicine. The Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine in 1901 granted him the Mary Kingsley medal. The Jefferson Medical College gave him the honorary degree of LL.D., and he was elected a fellow of the College of Physicians of Philadelphia. In 1903 he was elected president of the American Public Health Association, in which capacity he presided over the meeting held at Havana in 1905.

Finlay's character combined a keen mentality and a tireless persistence with the utmost geniality and graciousness of manner. Physically he was rather undersized and of a delicate constitution. An attack of chorea in his childhood left him with an impediment of speech which inter-

fered much with his effectiveness as a public speaker. He was married on Oct. 16, 1865, in Havana to Adela Shine, a native of the Island of Trinidad. A son, Carlos Eduardo, followed his father in the practise of medicine in Havana.

[*Selected Papers of Dr. Carlos J. Finlay* (1912); Aristides Agramonte, "Dr. Carlos J. Finlay—a biographical Sketch," in *New Orleans Medic. and Surgic. Jour.* (July 1916), LXIX, 55–60, reprinted in *Sanidad y Beneficencia*, "Número Extraordinario en homenaje á la memoria del Dr. Carlos J. Finlay" (July–Aug. 1918); obituary notices in *N. Y. Times*, Aug. 21, 1915, *Bull. Pan. Am. Union*, Sept. 1915, *Am. Pub. Health Asso. Jour.*, Nov. 1915.] J.M.P.

**FINLAY, HUGH** (*c.* 1731–Dec. 26, 1801), was born in Scotland and emigrated to Quebec shortly after the capitulation of the country to Gen. Amherst in 1760. He entered business as a merchant, and was appointed a justice of the peace, an office of great importance at a time when there was a mere handful of English people in the midst of a large French community. He had the valuable qualification of understanding and speaking the French language. When Benjamin Franklin, deputy of the postmaster-general of England, decided after the Treaty of Paris in 1763 to extend the limits of the Colonial Post-Office to include the newly acquired territory, he came to Quebec, opened post-offices in that town, at Three Rivers, and at Montreal, and placed the Canadian section under Finlay. In 1765 Finlay was appointed to a seat in the Governor's Council, and, being a public-spirited person, fell into the position of "general-utility" man for the government. Among the services which he undertook to manage was the control of the roads and the transportation system. His zeal in the public service having attracted attention, in 1772 he was appointed post-office surveyor or inspector. In this capacity he explored in 1773 the uninhabited country between Quebec and Falmouth, Me., to ascertain the practicability of a post-route between Canada and New England. The expedition was so successful that the governor of New Hampshire was induced to open a road along the Connecticut River, where connection could be made with the country on the watercourse of the St. Francis, which emptied into the St. Lawrence. On Oct. 2, 1773, Finlay set out from Falmouth on a more extended tour, embracing the whole postal system from Maine to Georgia. His report is a valuable survey of the condition of the country on the eve of the Revolution.

On his return to New York, he learned of Franklin's dismissal on Jan. 31, 1774, and of his own appointment on Feb. 25 as joint deputy postmaster-general with Thomas Foxcroft of Philadelphia. The recognition of the independence of the colonies, however, made a readjustment necessary, and in July 1784, Finlay was appointed deputy postmaster-general of Canada. In 1787, by direction of the governor-general, Finlay made a journey to Halifax, Nova Scotia, through a country in large part wilderness, and established a mail-route which passed through the principal settlements in the Maritime Provinces. On his return he was placed in charge of the whole postal service of British North America. In 1792 he concluded a convention with the postmaster-general of the United States, the chief object of which was to provide for the conveyance to and from New York of mails between Canada and Great Britain. In 1799 disaster fell upon him. Owing to defalcations on the part of a postmaster for whom he was responsible, Finlay was dismissed from his office as a defaulter. That he was not regarded as blameworthy by the governor-general or his associates in Quebec is shown by the fact that he retained all his provincial offices, including that of legislative councilor until his death.

[W. M. Smith, *Hist. of the Post Office in British North America, 1639–1870* (1920); F. H. Norton, ed., *Journal Kept by Hugh Finlay, Surveyor of the Post Roads on the Continent of North America, . . .* (1867); Ruth Lapham Butler, *Doctor Franklin, Postmaster General* (1928).] W.S—h.



**FINLEY, JAMES BRADLEY** (July 1, 1781–Sept. 6, 1856), Methodist preacher, one of the most distinguished evangelical pioneers of the West, was born in North Carolina, the son of Robert W. and Rebecca (Bradley) Finley. His paternal grandfather was a Scotch settler in Pennsylvania; on his mother's side he was of Welsh and English descent. His father, first a Presbyterian then a Methodist minister, a man of restless, adventuresome spirit, was constantly on the move. Engaged in missionary work in the Carolinas and Georgia when James was born, he soon settled in Virginia, then crossed the mountains and established himself in Ohio, then removed to the cane-brakes of Kentucky, from which, turned out of house and home by land pirates, he migrated to Ohio again, settling near Chillicothe. As a result James grew up to be a typical backwoodsman, a man of stalwart frame, resourceful and courageous, versed in all the lore of the forests, intimately acquainted with the ways of wild beasts and Indians. His education was not neglected, however, for his father, who had conducted a school during his sojourn in Kentucky, gave him a good knowledge of the classics. To please his parents he also applied himself to the study of medicine, and being admitted to practise in 1800, in connection with his preceptor he visited and prescribed for the sick: but all the while his heart was in the forest. He

finally decided to adopt a hunter's life, and having on Mar. 3, 1801, married Hannah Strane, chosen in part because he deemed her fitted to share such a career, he built a cabin in the wilderness three miles from any neighbor.

His conversion at the Cane Ridge camp-meeting in August 1801 eventually took him from his dogs and guns, though not altogether from the forest, and sent him in pursuit of souls. In 1810 he entered the Western Conference of the Methodist Church on trial and in 1812 was received in full connection. For seven years he traveled long and difficult circuits, his backwoodsman's training and understanding of the people proving most advantageous; for twenty-one years he was superintendent of extensive districts; for six, missionary among the Indians. In this capacity he shared with John Stewart the distinction of being father of the famous Wyandott Mission, the Indians showing him unusual respect and devotion. For three years he was chaplain to the convicts in the state penitentiary; for six he was pastor of churches; and for one, conference missionary. As an evangelist and organizer he had notable success. He was eight times elected to the General Conference, and at the 1844 session proposed and defended the resolution whereby Bishop Andrew [*q.v.*] was requested to desist from exercising his office, because of his connection with slavery.

His wide experience and observation, together with his habit of journalizing the principal happenings of his life, resulted in a number of publications which throw light on the conditions and events of pioneer days in Ohio. Among them are: *History of the Wyandott Mission at Upper Sandusky, Ohio* (1840); *Autobiography of Rev. James B. Finley; or Pioneer Life in the West* (1853), edited by W. P. Strickland; *Sketches of Western Methodism* (1855), edited by W. P. Strickland; *Life Among the Indians* (1857), edited by D. W. Clark. In his *Memorials of Prison Life* (1850), edited by B. F. Tefft, he describes "what I saw and heard and experienced during my first year as chaplain."

[Consult Finley's published works; also, *Minutes of the Annual Conferences of the M. E. Church for 1857*, p. 441; Abel Stevens, *Hist. of the M. E. Church in the U. S. A.*, vol. IV (1867); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, VII (1860), p. 531; J. M. Buckley, *A Hist. of Methodism in the U. S.* (2 vols. 1897). *Selected Chapters from The Hist. of the Wyandott Mission*, ed. by R. T. Stevenson, was published in 1916.] H. E. S.

**FINLEY, MARTHA FARQUHARSON** (Apr. 26, 1828–Jan. 30, 1909), author, was born in Chillicothe, Ohio, the daughter of Dr. James Brown and Maria Theresa (Brown) Finley, who were first cousins. Both Finleys and Browns were of Scotch-Irish descent, natives of Pennsylvania. Martha Finley's grandfather, Gen. Samuel Finley, was a personal friend of Washington, a major in the Revolutionary army, and a general in the War of 1812, in which his son, her father, also fought. Farquharson, Gaelic for Finley, was sometimes used by Miss Finley as a pen name. She was educated in private schools in Philadelphia and in South Bend, Ind., where her father moved when she was a child. She lived there until she was about twenty-five, then went to New York and Philadelphia. She taught school for a time and in 1853–54 began writing newspaper stories and Sunday-school books, published by the Presbyterian Publication Committee. Soon her juvenile books of this type became so popular that she gave her whole time to writing them. In 1876 she visited Elkton, Md., the home of some of her relatives, and so liked the place that she settled there, in a spacious house with beautiful grounds. Here all of her later work was done and she continued to write almost to the end of her life, in spite of old age and poor health. She was of a social nature and gave much time to her many friends and to the activities of the Presbyterian Church. She died at her home in Elkton. Miss Finley produced altogether about a hundred volumes, nearly all juveniles, many of them in series. Her greatest popular success was the *Elsie* series, but the *Mildred* series, the Do Good Library, the Pewit's Nest Series, and the Finley Series (not juvenile) also had large sales. *Elsie Dinsmore* appeared in 1868. The good little girl there portrayed won such approval from parents and Sunday-school teachers that other *Elsie* books followed rapidly until by 1905 over twenty-five had been written and Elsie had become a grandmother. The *Mildred* series began in 1878 with *Mildred Keith* and extended to seven volumes by 1894. Typical of her Sunday-school books, outside these series, are: *Grandma Foster's Sunbeam, The Little Helper, Loitering Linus, Milly; or the Little Girl who Tried to Help Others and to do them Good* (all 1868), and *Willie Elton, the Little Boy Who Loved Jesus* (1864). She attempted several novels, among them *Wanted—a Pedigree* (1871), *Signing the Contract* (1879), and *The Thorn in the Nest* (1886), but their success was not striking. Miss Finley's books are among those which changing standards have thrown into the discard. Her Elsie and Mildred, once held up as examples by many parents and beloved by most children, are to-day considered abnormally docile and unpleasantly priggish. Their psychology is not that esteemed desirable for children, yet for many years Miss Finley held a leading place among writers of juvenile books.

[Warren S. Ely, *The Finleys of Bucks* (1902); *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; Frances E. Willard and Mary A. Livermore, *Am. Women* (1897); Mildred Rutherford, *Am. Authors* (1894); Ruth Suckow, "Elsie Dinsmore: A Study in Perfection," *Bookman*, Oct. 1927; obituary in the *Baltimore Sun*, Jan. 31, 1909.]

S. G. B.

**FINLEY, ROBERT** (Feb. 15, 1772–Oct. 3, 1817), Presbyterian clergyman, educator, organizer of the American Colonization Society, was born in Princeton, N. J. His father, James, was a yarn merchant of Glasgow. With his wife, whose maiden name was Angres, he came to Princeton at the suggestion of his Old-Country friend, John Witherspoon, then president of the College of New Jersey. Here he engaged in weaving, and during the Revolution was a cloth-ier to American troops. Robert, a scholarly, precocious youth, entered the College of New Jersey when he was eleven, graduating in 1787. He then engaged in teaching, first in the grammar school at Princeton, later in an academy at Allentown, N. J., and afterward in Charleston, S. C. In 1792, having decided to enter the ministry, he returned to Princeton, studied theology under Dr. Witherspoon, and also acted as tutor in the college. He was licensed to preach Sept. 16, 1794, and in April of the following year was called to the church at Basking Ridge, where he was ordained June 16, 1795. In May 1798 he married Esther Caldwell, daughter of the "soldier-parson," Rev. James Caldwell [*q.v.*].

For almost twenty-two years he served the church at Basking Ridge with great devotion and success, and in connection with his pastoral work conducted a school for boys which came to have the reputation of being one of the best in the country. For eleven years (1807–17) he was also a trustee of the College of New Jersey. In association with Rev. George S. Woodhull of Cranbury, N. J., he was responsible for the plan of Biblical instruction for the young by means of regular class work which was recommended to the churches by the General Assembly of May 1816. His interest in the welfare of the colored race led him in 1816 to be the prime mover in the organization of the American Colonization Society. The idea of colonization was by no means new and various influences were working toward the result that Finley achieved, but it fell to his lot to be the agency which finally effected it. Not very optimistic but determined, he went to Washington about the first of December 1816, and published a pamphlet *Thoughts on the Colonization of Free Blacks*, which attracted much attention. He called on President Madison, Henry Clay, and other prominent persons who gave him encouragement. His activities resulted in a meeting to consider his project, held Dec. 21, at which Clay presided. It was voted that a society be formed, and at an adjourned meeting, Dec. 28, the organization was formally effected. On Jan. 1, 1817, officers were elected, Hon. Bushrod Washington being chosen president and Finley one of the vice-presidents. He then returned to New Jersey and went to Trenton where after time spent in removing prejudices, he succeeded in having a state society formed auxiliary to the one established in Washington. In April 1817 he resigned his pastorate to become president of the University of Georgia. He removed with his family to Athens, Ga., in May, but during the summer while traveling about the state in the interests of the college he contracted a fever which cut short his career. Several of his sermons were published, one on the Baptism of John (1807), and *A Discourse on the Nature and Design, the Benefits and Proper Subjects of Baptism* (1808); also one on the death of Rev. William Boyd of Lamington (1807), and two in the *New Jersey Preacher* (1813).

[Isaac V. Brown, *Memoirs of the Rev. Robert Finley, D.D.* (1819), 2nd ed. enlarged (1857); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit*, IV (1858); *Memorial of the Semi-Centennial Anniversary of the Am. Colonization Soc.* (1867); A. L. Hull, *A Hist. Sketch of the Univ. of Ga.* (1894); John F. Hageman, *Hist. of Princeton and Its Institutions* (2 vols., 1879); *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 4 ser., VII (1922), 326; Archibald Alexander, *A Hist. of Colonization on the Western Coast of Africa* (1846); E. M. Coulter, *College Life in the Old South* (1928).]

H. E. S.

**FINLEY, SAMUEL** (1715–July 17, 1766), Presbyterian clergyman, president of the College of New Jersey from 1761 to 1766, was a Scotch-Irish immigrant who arrived in Philadelphia, Sept. 28, 1734. Like Gilbert Tennent [*q.v.*] whose friend and fellow worker he became, he was born in the County of Armagh, Ireland. When he arrived in Pennsylvania he had received a good education and was bent upon becoming a minister. He put himself under the care of the New Brunswick, N. J., Presbytery, and was probably a student for some years in William Tennent's Log College. On Aug. 5, 1740, he was licensed to preach, and on Oct. 13, 1742, he was ordained. At the time of his licensure the Great Awakening was under way and Finley followed Whitefield and Gilbert Tennent into New Jersey and carried on a notable evangelistic work in Deerfield, Greenwich, and Cape May. Later he preached for some months in Philadelphia. During this period he exhibited the acrimonious controversial spirit which accompanied the Awakening and joined in the arraignment of the "unconverted ministry." As early as Jan. 20, 1740/41, he delivered in Nottingham, Pa., a discourse of much severity, which was published under the

title, *Christ Triumphing, and Satan Raging, a Sermon on Matth. XII. 28*, which was reprinted in Boston and Edinburgh, the latter edition with an indorsement by Whitefield, beginning: "The following sermon was written by a worthy friend of mine abroad." In 1743 in Cape May he had a public disputation of two days' duration with Rev. Abel Morgan on the subject of baptism, and in 1746 he published *A Charitable Plea for the Speechless; or, The Right of Believers' Infants to Baptism Vindicated.* Morgan put forth a rejoinder, and in 1748 Finley replied with *A Vindication of the Charitable Plea for the Speechless.* In 1743 also he published *Satan Stripp'd of His Angelic Robe . . . the Substance of Several Sermons Preach'd . . . January 1742–3, Shewing the Strength, Nature, and Symptoms of Delusion, with an Application to the Moravians*; and *Clear Light Put Out in Obscure Darkness: Being an Examination and Refutation of Mr. Thompson's Sermon, Entitled The Doctrine of Convictions Set in a Clear Light.* In August of this same contentious year, having received a call to Milford, Conn., he was sent thither by his presbytery with permission "to preach for other places thereabouts, when Providence may open a door for him." Invited to preach to the Second Society, New Haven, a "Separatist" congregation without legal standing, he was arrested while on his way to the meeting, and later expelled from the colony as a vagrant.

In June 1744 he became pastor of the church in Nottingham, Pa., often referred to as in Maryland since it was on the boundary line. Here he remained seventeen years, his reputation for ability and scholarship steadily increasing. In connection with his pastoral work, he conducted a school which became widely known, in which were trained such men as Benjamin and Jacob Rush, Ebenezer Hazard, and Col. John Bayard. A tradition that his scholars were systematically birched every Monday morning on general principles of discipline is probably unreliable, for whatever the spirit displayed in his controversial utterances, he was esteemed for his kindness and courtesy. Pupils of his describe him as "a man of small stature and of a round and ruddy countenance": remarkable "for sweetness of temper and politeness of behaviour." He seems to have carried on extensive correspondence with clergymen abroad and in 1763 received the degree of D.D. from the University of Glasgow, on recommendation, it is said, of Dr. Samuel Chandler. On May 31, 1761, he was unanimously elected president of the College of New Jersey, having already been an active trustee for ten years. His administration was a successful one, but was cut



short by his early death. Among his published sermons not already mentioned are *The Approved Ministers of God,* ordination sermon of John Rodgers, Mar. 16, 1749; *The Curse of Meroz, or, The Danger of Neutrality in the Cause of God, and Our Country* (1757), preached during the French and Indian War, arraigning pacificism, and displaying the Scotch-Irish attitude in Pennsylvania as contrasted with the Quakers'; *Faithful Ministers, the Fathers of the Church* (1752), on the death of Rev. John Blair; *The Madness of Mankind* (1754); *The Power of Gospel Ministers* (1755); *The Disinterested and Devout Christian,* on the death of President Davies, preached May 28, 1761; and *The Successful Minister of Christ, Distinguished in Glory,* on the death of Gilbert Tennent, preached Sept. 2, 1764.

He was twice married; first to Sarah Hall, and in 1761 to Anne, daughter of Matthew Clarkson of New York. His death occurred in Philadelphia where he had gone for treatment, and he was buried in the Second Presbyterian Church there by the side of Gilbert Tennent, both bodies being later removed to the cemetery of that church.

[A. Alexander, *Biog. Sketches of the Founder and Principal Alumni of the Log College* (1845); Rich. Webster, *A Hist. of the Presbyt. Ch. in America* (1857); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit,* vol. III (1858); John Maclean, *Hist. of the Coll. of N. J.* (1877); Thos. Murphey, *The Presbytery of the Log College* (1889); *Memorial Book of the Sesquicentennial Celebration of the Founding of the Coll. of N. J.* (1898).]

H. E. S.

**FINN, FRANCIS JAMES** (Oct. 4, 1859–Nov. 2, 1928), Jesuit, author, educator, created a Catholic juvenile literature in English. The son of John and Mary (Whyte) Finn, he was born in St. Louis, Mo. In 1876 he entered St. Louis University, and a year later joined the Society of Jesus, though poor health deferred the official date of entry until Mar. 24, 1879. From the Jesuit Novitiate at Florissant, Mo., he went in 1881 to St. Mary's College, Kansas, and thence, two years later, to the Jesuit house of philosophical and theological studies at Woodstock, Md. The continued delicacy of his health necessitated this somewhat irregular course, and delayed the completion of his training until 1894. Meanwhile he had been ordained a priest by Cardinal Gibbons (June 29, 1891), and had taught in St. Xavier's College, Cincinnati, and Marquette College, Milwaukee, Wis. His career is almost an index to the number of Jesuit institutions then existing. St. Mary's College, at that time an obscure and struggling preparatory school, furnished the young Jesuit professor with material which he developed into a series of stories for boys. *Percy Wynn* (1889) and *Tom Playfair* (1892) attained

vast and almost immediate popularity, supplying American Catholic counterparts of the Tom Brown books. They blended pranks, fun, shrewd observation, idealism, and deft moral teaching. Though Finn could not keep to the level of these first stories, other books followed in rapid succession: *Harry Dee* (1893); *Claude Lightfoot* (1893); *Mostly Boys* (1897); *New Faces and Old* (1896); *Ada Merton* (1896); *Ethelred Preston* (1896); *That Football Game* (1897); *The Best Foot Forward* (1900); *His First and Last Appearance* (1900); *But Thy Love and Thy Grace* (1901); *The Haunt of the Fairies* (1906), a drama; *The Fairy of the Snows* (1913); *That Office Boy* (1915); *Cupid of Campion* (1916); *Lucky Bob* (1917); *His Luckiest Year* (1918); *Facing Danger* (1919); *Bobby in Movieland* (1921); *On the Run* (1922); *Lord Bountiful* (1923); *The Story of Jesus* (1924); *Sunshine and Freckles* (1925); and *Candles' Beams* (1927). Various Jesuit schools furnished the background for most of these stories, though several of them are not concerned with college life. Finn was appointed professor of literature and the classics in St. Xavier's College, Cincinnati, in 1897. Two years later, primarily because of ill health, he was relieved of teaching and assigned to the staff of St. Xavier's Church, in the same city. His chief duty became the direction of the parish school at 520 Sycamore St. Though he was constantly writing a book and had taken on added literary tasks—editing the *St. Xavier Calendar* and sponsoring the Little Flower Library—he devoted most of his energy to the school. This, frequented by children of twenty-one immigrant nationalities, became the first fee-less Catholic school in the United States, owing largely to the ability of its director in raising an endowment. Father Finn also encouraged frequent social gatherings at which Catholic young men and women might meet—a relatively novel idea in the nineties. He died in Cincinnati, Ohio. If he had lived a few months longer, he would have celebrated his fiftieth year as a Jesuit. His life spanned the period of the development of the Jesuit educational system in the United States, and he may fairly be said to have rendered it an incomparable service by making the boarding school idea appeal to thousands of boys. He is likewise considered an example of the priest in social work, interested less in the solution of a difficult social problem than in meeting an urgent immediate need.

[*Father Finn, S. J., the Story of His Life, Told by Himself* . . . (1929), edited by Daniel A. Lord; Records, Jesuit Novitiate, Florissant, Mo.; *America*, Nov. 17, 1928; the *Dial* (St. Mary's College, Kansas), December 1928; the *Commonweal*, Nov. 28, 1928; *The American Catholic Who's Who* (1911); *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Nov. 2, 1928.] G. N. S.



**FINN, HENRY JAMES WILLIAM** (June 17, 1787–Jan. 13, 1840), actor, playwright, the son of George Finn, a retired officer of the British navy, and of his wife Elizabeth, was born at Sydney, Nova Scotia, and was reared in New York City. He was educated at Traphagen's Academy, Hackensack, and Finley's Latin School, Newark. If, as has been stated (Ireland, *post*, I, 332), he later attended Princeton, it is at least certain that he did not graduate. After completing his formal education, he studied law for two or three years in New York and then visited England. There he joined a band of strollers and worked up to the Haymarket Theatre, London, where he played small parts in 1811 and 1812 (John Genest, *Some Account of the English Stage*, 1832, vol. VIII, pp. 243, 316). His first American appearance of which a record is available occurred at Philadelphia in 1817 (Wood, *post*, p. 213). His New York début at the Park Theatre followed, Jan. 16, 1818, and throughout the rest of his life his New York engagements were numerous. In 1818 he was acting successfully in Savannah, Ga. Two years later, with I. K. Tefft, he edited the *Savannah Georgian*. Being both restless and versatile, Finn returned to England in 1821, devoting himself to miniature painting and provincial acting until he obtained a leading position at the Surrey Theatre, London. On Oct. 28, 1822, he became associated with the Federal Street Theatre, Boston (*Columbian Centinel*, Oct. 5 and 26, 1822). Here he at first essayed such parts as Hamlet, Othello, and Richard III, but finding Cooper, Forrest, and Kean in secure possession of the tragic rôles, he turned to eccentric comedy, in which he became one of the distinguished actors of the day. A melodrama by Finn, *Montgomery; or, the Falls of Montmorency* (1825), which was brought out at Boston, Feb. 21, 1825, and repeated four times during the rest of the season (*Boston Patriot and Mercantile Advertiser*, Feb. 21–Apr. 18, 1825), though a wretched piece of playmaking, provided its author with a good vehicle for his peculiar type of comic acting in the Yankee, Welcome Sobersides. At about the same time he became a partner of Thomas Kilner in the management of the Federal Street Theatre. When a rival house, the Tremont, was built in 1827, Finn hastened to England and brought back some excellent recruits. After two years of competition the rivals were forced to combine, but Finn, though withdrawing from management, remained with the company and continued to delight Boston audiences to the end of his life. He also made frequent starring trips through the country, especially the South, where he was an immense favorite. While returning to his home

in Newport, R. I., from a Southern tour, he lost his life when the steamboat *Lexington* was burned in Long Island Sound. Theatrical benefits were held at Boston and New York for his family, which consisted of his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Snelling Powell of the Boston theatre, and several children. Aside from *Montgomery,* Finn's plays included *Removing the Deposits* (1835), a satire on President Jackson's financial policy, and *Casper Hauser; or, the Down Easter* (1835), both unpublished. In 1831 he brought out an *American Comic Annual,* in which he gave free rein to his incurable weakness for outrageous puns. His contemporaries were agreed that Finn honored the stage not only as a comic artist, but also as a witty, generous, and courteous gentleman.

[J. N. Ireland, *Records of N. Y. Stage* (2 vols., 1866–67); W. B. Wood, *Personal Recollections of the Stage* (1855); Sol (Solomon Franklin) Smith, *Theatrical Management in the West and South* (1868), pp. 76, 103, 109, 121, 153; N. M. Ludlow, *Dramatic Life as I Found It* (1880), pp. 474 ff.; W. W. Clapp, *A Record of the Boston Stage* (1853), *passim.* The date of Finn's birth and the names of his parents are taken from the records of the parish of St. George, Sydney, N. S.] O.S.C.

**FINNEY, CHARLES GRANDISON** (Aug. 29, 1792–Aug. 16, 1875), revivalist, educator, intimately associated with the early history of Oberlin College and from 1851 to 1866 its president, was born in Warren, Conn., the son of Sylvester and Rebecca (Rice) Finney. He was of early New England stock, and his father was a soldier in the Revolutionary War. When he was two years old his parents joined the westward migration, settling in Hanover (now Kirkland), Oneida County, N. Y., where among pioneer conditions he grew up. He attended such common schools as existed there, and spent two years at Hamilton Oneida Academy, Clinton, where the principal, Seth Norton, took especial interest in him, training his natural ability for music, and stimulating his desire for a college education. After the removal of his parents to Henderson, on Lake Ontario, he taught a district school for several years, and then went to Warren, Conn., to prepare for Yale. He did not enter, however, being persuaded by his schoolmaster that he could do the work of the college curriculum by himself in two years. Accordingly he went to New Jersey where he taught and studied privately. In 1818 he entered the law office of Benjamin Wright, Adams, N. Y., and later was admitted to the bar.

At this period he was a handsome fellow, six feet two inches tall, erect, alert, full of energy and fond of outdoor sports. Having a musical voice of wide range, he organized the young people of the town into a chorus and trained them; he also took great delight in playing the 'cello. Fond of dancing and attractive personally, he was popular at all social gatherings. He had the moral stamina and religious tendency of his New England ancestry, but as a youth had received little religious training. Not until in his study of the law he came across references to Mosaic institutions, did he own a Bible. What preaching he had heard repelled him. Although at Adams he attended the church services and was a friend of George W. Gale [*q.v.*], its pastor, he was frankly critical of the dogmas taught and the prevailing practises. His own study of the Bible, however, together with his natural religious sensitiveness, finally resulted, after violent struggles, in his conversion. This event and his immediate subsequent experiences were attended by great emotional excitation. He seemed to see the Lord standing before him; he received a "mighty baptism of the Holy Spirit," and wept aloud with joy and love; wave after wave came over him, until he cried, "I shall die if these waves continue to pass over me" (*Memoirs,* p. 20). At another time, he beheld the glory of God about him, and a light ineffable shone into his soul. He saw all nature worshipping God except man, and broke into a flood of tears that mankind did not praise God.

His conversion involved a retainer from the Lord to plead his cause. He thought no more of the law, but straightway applied himself to the conversion of his fellow men. In 1823 he put himself under the care of the St. Lawrence Presbytery as a candidate for the ministry. Some of the members urged him to study theology at Princeton, but he refused on the ground that he did not want to be under such influences as they had been. His pastor, Mr. Gale, and another clergyman were accordingly appointed to superintend his studies. Extremely independent, and aggressively opposed to Gale's views on the atonement, he worked out his theology largely on the basis of his own study of the Scriptures. The Presbytery licensed him, however, in March 1824, and he was ordained in July of the same year. The following October he married Lydia Andrews of Whitestown, Oneida County, N. Y.

For almost a decade he conducted revivals in the Middle and Eastern States with results that attracted attention all over the country. He cast aside the ordinary conventions of the pulpit; used expressive language and homely illustrations; was startlingly direct and even personal in his appeal to men's consciences and in his prayers, so that he was threatened with tar and feathers, and even with death. He portrayed the terrible guilt and awful consequences of disobeying the divine law, and put the fear of God into his hearers. His

command over all classes was phenomenal; he broke down contrary wills by his logic and by the superior force of his own will. Violent physical manifestations resulted from his preaching; people burst into tears, shrieked, fainted, and fell into trances. Nevertheless, he produced permanent beneficial results; lives were transformed and whole towns cleansed. His views, methods, and idiosyncrasies subjected him to widespread persecution and misrepresentation, and awakened severe criticism, even in his own denomination. Lyman Beecher and Asahel Nettleton opposed him vigorously. As a result a convention was held at New Lebanon, N. Y., in July 1827, composed of Presbyterian and Congregational ministers, friends and opponents of Finney, to consider the points in controversy. The general effect of this gathering seems to have been in Finney's favor.

In 1832 he became pastor of the Second Free Presbyterian Church, New York, for the use of which Lewis Tappan and others had leased the Chatham Street Theatre. At his installation service he was stricken with the cholera, which was then prevalent in the city. After he recovered, his labors resulted in many converts and the establishment of several other churches. He shortly became dissatisfied with the working of the disciplinary system in Presbyterian churches, and the Broadway Tabernacle was organized for him, its place of worship being constructed in conformity with his desires. He withdrew from the Presbytery in 1836, and the church became Congregational in polity. While in New York he delivered lectures on revivals, which were printed weekly in the *New York Evangelist,* and published in book form in 1835. The work went through many editions and was widely read abroad. He also took a decided stand on the slavery question, but did not, he says, "make it a hobby, or divert the attention of the people from the work of converting souls" (*Memoirs,* p. 324).

While he was in New York, young men asked him to take them as students in theology. Having no time for such work, he proposed as a partial substitute to give a course of theological lectures each year, and a room in the Tabernacle was provided for this purpose. When, however, in 1835, after the students at Lane Seminary had left that institution because of restrictions placed on discussion of the slavery question, he was invited to establish a theological department for them in the newly founded college at Oberlin, Ohio, and Arthur Tappan had guaranteed him financial support, he accepted. He retained his pastorate in New York, giving to it about six months of the year. This dual arrangement was detrimental to his health, and on Apr. 6, 1837, his connection

Finney

with the church was severed. During the thirty-eight remaining years of his life he was connected with Oberlin College, upon the character of which he exerted a powerful influence. From 1851 to 1866 he was president, although relieved of much administrative detail; and from 1835 to 1872 he was also pastor of the First Congregational Church, Oberlin. He long carried on his evangelistic work during a part of each year, visiting Great Britain in 1849–50 and again in 1859–60, where his preaching had great effect. Through the *Oberlin Evangelist,* established in 1839, to which he contributed regularly, his views on doctrinal and practical matters were disseminated. As his theology developed, certain aspects of it aroused opposition. He was in general a New School Calvinist, but the emphasis that he laid upon the individual's ability to repent was exceptional. He also taught that sin and holiness, which he viewed as attaching only to voluntary actions, cannot coëxist in a person; and that a high plane of experience is possible in the Christian life, in which one becomes superior to one's weakness and enjoys a state of spiritual stability, which he designated as sanctification. This view was attacked as tending to Arminianism and Perfectionism, and "Oberlin theology" was long in ill-repute among more conservative Calvinists. Having this exalted idea of what a Christian should strive to attain, and feeling that a church should always be at a revival pitch, he was averse to popular amusements and other pursuits which might prove a hindrance. He was a strong advocate of temperance and opposed to the use of tobacco, and even tea and coffee. Although made a Mason in his youth he attacked the order later and published in 1869 *The Character, Claims, and Practical Workings of Freemasonry.* His *Lectures on Systematic Theology* were published in two volumes in 1846 and 1847, and after some revision, republished in England in 1851. Among his other works are: *Sermons on Important Subjects* (3rd ed., 1836); *Lectures to Professing Christians* (1837); and *Skeletons of a Course of Theological Lectures* (1840). In the forties he was an editor of the *Oberlin Quarterly Review* and later was a frequent contributor to the *Advance* and the *Independent.* Two volumes of sermons delivered at Oberlin and reported by Prof. Henry Cowles were published posthumously as *Sermons on Gospel Themes* (1876) and *Sermons on the Way of Salvation* (1891). Finney's first wife died in 1847, and he later married Mrs. Elizabeth Ford Atkinson, after whose death in 1863 he married Mrs. Rebecca (Allen) Rayl, an assistant principal of the women's department at Oberlin. He retained his vigor in an unusual de-

gree to the last, delivering his final course of lectures in his eighty-third year. Death came at the end of a quiet Sunday in August, from some affection of the heart.

[*Memoirs of Rev. Charles G. Finney, Written by Himself* (1876), deals chiefly with his evangelistic activities. A more complete account of his life and characteristics, including a lengthy statement of his theology, may be found in G. Frederick Wright's *Charles Grandison Finney* (1891). See also Wm. C. Cochran, *Charles Grandison Finney: Memorial Address* (1908); D. L. Leonard, *The Story of Oberlin* (1898); Nathan Sheppard, *Heroic Stature* (1897); Hiram Mead, "Charles Grandison Finney," *Cong. Quart.*, Jan. 1877; Jas. H. Fairchild, "The Doctrine of Sanctification at Oberlin," *Ibid.*, Apr. 1876; *Reminiscences of Rev. Charles G. Finney* (1876); F. H. Foster, *A Genetic Hist. of the New England Theology* (1907); reviews of Finney's *Lectures on Systematic Theology* by Geo. Duffield in *Biblical Repository*, Apr., July 1848 and by Charles Hodge [*q.v.*] in *Biblical Repertory and Princeton Rev.*, Apr. 1847; G. F. Wright, "Dr. Hodge's Misrepresentations of President Finney's System of Theology," *Bibliotheca Sacra*, Apr. 1876, and "President Finney's System of Theology in its Relation to the So-Called New England Theology," *Ibid.*, Oct. 1877; A. T. Swing, "President Finney and an Oberlin Theology," *Ibid.*, July 1900.] H. E. S.

**FINOTTI, JOSEPH MARIA** (Sept. 21, 1817–Jan. 10, 1879), Roman Catholic priest, bibliographer, was born at Ferrara, Italy, the son of Francis M. and Rose (Tassinavi) Finotti. His boyhood was made unhappy by his father, a judge, who treated the lad with unfeeling severity. Put to school to the Jesuits, he almost immediately evinced a desire to enter the Order and was received into the Company on Oct. 28, 1833. The reading, when he was twelve years old, of Botta's history of the War for Independence had awakened in him an interest in the United States, and in 1845 he accompanied Fr. James Ryder to America to work in the Maryland Province. He was ordained at Georgetown, D. C., in August 1847 and engaged in the ministry first at Frederick, Md., and later at Alexandria, Va. On Mar. 4, 1852, he left the Jesuits. "I felt as if the people with whom I lived were too hollow, impulsive hearts & idle brains, & made up my mind to come to Boston, where I have friends, slow to be made such, but steady & firm," he wrote later (unpublished letter in archives of the New-England Historic Genealogical Society). He was attached to Bishop Fitzpatrick's cathedral from April 1852 until December 1856, when he was appointed to the charge of the parishes of Brookline and Brighton. Always busy and often ill, he performed his parochial duties with exemplary fidelity and found time to write or translate several pious stories and to act as literary editor of the Boston *Pilot*. He also made a fine collection of coins and medals, which he later disposed of. His principal avocation was the forming of a remarkable, and perhaps unique, collection of American Catholic publications and the compiling of his



valuable *Bibliographia Catholica Americana: A List of Works Written by Catholic Authors and Published in the United States: Pt. I, 1784–1820* (1872), which he did not live to complete. "To this work," he wrote in the preface, "I have allotted all *subsecivas horas* for some years, while it has also happened that at times I could not copy one single title for months. Duties too sacred to be neglected kept me busy at something else. The most favorable time for work was when an old-fashioned N. E. rheumatism (envious friends most perversely call it *podagra!*—my physician assures me *on oath* 'tis a slander) would at stated times confine me to an *otium cum dignitate*, days, weeks, and months, on a venerable armchair in my library. Fortunately, whilst the underpins of the animal fabric were all ablaze, the upper story was cool and free, ready to take in storage day and night. In sooth, it has been my harvest time." Of his other works the only one to need mention is the posthumously published *Mystery of the Wizard Clip* (Baltimore, 1879), a curious narrative of miraculous occurrences at Smithfield, W. Va. In 1876 precarious health compelled him to relinquish his work. After sojourns at the Seminary of Mount St. Mary's near Cincinnati, and at Omaha, he joined Bishop Machebœuf at Denver. Reinvigorated by the mountain air, he accepted a pastoral charge at Central City, Colo., and labored with his customary zeal. In December 1878, while returning from a station where he had said mass, he slipped and fell on the ice. He died a few weeks later from the effects of the fall.

[*Cat. of the Library of the late Rev. Joseph M. Finotti* (1879) with biog. preface by John Gilmary Shea; *Cat. of the Balance of* [*his*] *Library* (1880); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1880; *Boston Transcript*, Jan. 22, 1879; article "Finotti" in the *Cath. Encyc.*, vol. VI (1909); notes of his life made by Finotti on the back of an invitation to be present at a reunion of the Philodemic Soc. of Georgetown Coll., July 2, 1867 (in archives of Georgetown Univ.).] G. H. G.

**FISCHER, EMIL FRIEDRICH AUGUST** (June 13, 1838–Aug. 11, 1914), opera singer, the son of Ignatia Caroline Achten, a concert soprano, and Johann Friedrich Fisher, a well-known court opera singer of Gratz, was born in Brunswick, Germany. He made his début in Gratz, Austria, in 1857, as the Sénéchal in Boieldieu's *Jean de Paris*. After singing in Pressburg, Stettin, and Brunswick, he became director of the Dantzig Opera in 1863, a position he held until the outbreak of the Franco-Prussian War. In 1875 he accepted a position as solo bass at the Royal Opera in Rotterdam, leaving it five years later for a similar one at the Dresden Court Opera. In 1885, with Lilli Lehmann and Anton Seidl, he was engaged as a principal for the sec-

ond season of German opera at the New York Metropolitan. Thereafter he was more or less intimately associated with the Metropolitan's activities until his final retirement in 1898. Versatile, a good natural actor, he was at home in French and Italian as well as German opera. As Mephistopheles in *Faust* and Ramfis in *Aïda* he was well known, but he was at his best in the Wagnerian rôles of the Landgrave, *Tannhäuser*; King Henry, *Lohengrin*; King Mark, *Tristan*; Wotan, *Walküre*; Hagen, *Siegfried*; and Hans Sachs, *Die Meistersinger*. His interpretation of this last rôle is generally regarded as its superlative American exposition, and his felicitous mingling of bluff good-nature, humanity, and idealism in the characterization of the cobbler-poet is still regarded as a model. He was opposed to singing Wagner in translation, and insisted that in the Wagner operas, "the function of the singer is to explain in words what the orchestra is saying." During the long years of his connection with the Metropolitan Opera House Fischer sang in 101 operas and appeared in America 839 times. Both as a man and as an artist he was very popular. The benefit performance given on Mar. 15, 1907, in honor of the fiftieth anniversary of his appearance on the operatic stage, in which he took part as Hans Sachs in an act from *Die Meistersinger*, yielded nearly $7,000. After his retirement he devoted part of his time to teaching, spending his winters in New York. He died in Hamburg, of cancer of the stomach, on one of his summer trips to Europe.

[H. E. Krehbiel, *Chapters of Opera in New York* (1908); "Old Wagner Singers Greatest," an interview with Fischer, in *Musical America*, May 20, 1911; *Ibid.*, Sept. 12, 1914; *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 4, 1914.] F.H.M.

**FISH, HAMILTON** (Aug. 3, 1808–Sept. 6, 1893), statesman, the son of Nicholas [*q.v.*] and Elizabeth (Stuyvesant) Fish, was born in New York and received his primary education in the private school of M. Bancel. He graduated with highest honors from Columbia College in 1827 and, after studying law in the office of Peter A. Jay for three years, was admitted to the bar and formed a partnership with William B. Lawrence, editor of Wheaton's *Elements of International Law*. True to the Federalist principles of his father, he adhered to the Whig party and became its candidate for the state assembly in 1834, failing to carry his Democratic district. His next candidacy, for Congress in 1842, was successful, but he was not returned for another term. He was defeated also in 1846 for the lieutenant-governorship of the state by the opposition of the "anti-renters," whose attacks on the patroons' land-leasing system he had denounced.

Fish

Next year, however, he was chosen for the office in a special election, and in 1848 he was elected governor. His administration was signalized by the passage of acts establishing free schools throughout the state and by extensions of the canal system. His attitude on the main national question of the time, as indicated by the declarations in his annual messages against the opening of California and New Mexico to slavery, was satisfactory enough to permit his selection for the treasury post in a reconstruction of the cabinet planned by President Taylor but cut off by his death (*Autobiography of Thurlow Weed*, 1883, p. 591).

Fish was not renominated for governor, but was supported by the Seward-Weed Whigs for the United States Senate in 1851. A deadlock in the legislature lasting over two months, caused by one Whig senator's dissatisfaction with his refusal to commit himself to the compromise measures of 1850, was only broken in his favor by a vote taken in the absence of two Democrats. In the Senate he achieved no special distinction. He followed his senior colleague, Seward, and his friend, Sumner, in their opposition to the repeal of the Missouri Compromise, though he was not disposed to make slavery a dominant issue in politics. Regretting the demise of the Whig party, he finally joined the Republican as the one according most nearly with his principles, but did not enter very energetically into its earlier activities. After the expiration of his term as senator he took his family to Europe for a stay of two years. By the time he returned his convictions had crystallized sufficiently to warrant him in working for Lincoln's election and in advising the outgoing administration to adopt a firm policy toward South Carolina and the seceding states. He was concerned in the outfitting of the *Star of the West* for supplying Fort Sumter, and expressed to Gen. Scott the opinion that the firing on the ship meant war. During the Civil War he served on the Union defense committee of his state and as a commissioner of the federal government for the relief of prisoners, contributing to the ultimate negotiation of the exchange agreement.

He had no special political or personal claim to a place in Grant's cabinet, although their acquaintanceship had extended to his entertainment of the General in his home. He had no desire for office and was unresponsive to suggestions of a ministerial post. When, after encountering several difficulties in early appointments, the President offered him the post of secretary of state, he promptly declined by telegraph, but followed his refusal by a reluctant acceptance through a per-

sonal mission of Gen. Babcock (*New York Tribune*, Jan. 25, 1879). He was commissioned Mar. 11, 1869. Intending to serve only until the administration had become stabilized, he remained in office through both of Grant's terms, despite repeated offers of resignation. He became a pillar of the administration and an influence for moderation in all its policies. In his own department he was an efficient executive, introducing reforms in the organization of personnel and classification of records. He brought to bear upon his duties a calm and orderly legal mind, a generally cautious temperament, and a fund of patience in working toward his ends against discouraging odds.

Fish's conduct of foreign relations in general was greatly affected by the question of annexation of the revolution-torn Dominican Republic. He sanctioned a mission of Gen. Babcock thither which, from an inquiry concerning the acquisition of a naval base at Samana Bay, developed into an irregular agreement with the government in power for annexation. Grant strongly favored the project, and Fish, though doubtful, authorized the negotiation of a formal treaty, concluded Nov. 29, 1869, which failed of ratification by the Senate. Grant's attempt, in 1871, to put the measure through by joint resolution was likewise defeated, despite the removal of Senator Sumner, its powerful opponent, from his position as chairman of the foreign relations committee. The President's need of Fish's support in these efforts and his antipathy toward Sumner, which arose out of their failure, favored the success of the Secretary's policies in other fields, albeit the breach of Fish's friendship with Sumner, which he attempted vainly to avert, was a painful experience.

The most notable achievement of Fish's administration of his office was the settlement of the controversy with Great Britain over damages suffered by Northern commerce during the Civil War through the British government's conduct as a neutral. The central factor in this controversy was the havoc wrought by Confederate cruisers equipped or supplied in British ports; and, commemorating the most famous of these, the American demands became, as stated in the final treaty, "generically known as the '*Alabama* claims.'" But behind these lay a mass of obscure grievances which in some minds extended to holding England's recognition of Confederate belligerency responsible for doubling the length of the war, with resulting liabilities which transcended monetary compensations and could only be extinguished by such a gesture as the cession of Canada. This view of the case was put, in part by implication, by Senator Sumner in the debate which led to rejection, in April 1869, of a convention concluded by the previous administration. Since the President inclined to the same view, Sumner's speech set the tone of Fish's official policy for nearly two years, as expressed in instructions to Motley, the minister in London, and conversations with Thornton, British minister at Washington (*Senate Executive Document 11*, 41 Cong., 3 Sess., pp. 2–5; *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the United States*, III, 1873, 329–36; E. L. Pierce, *Memoir and Letters of Charles Sumner*, 1893, IV, 409–10, 414; Adams, *post*, pp. 156–57, 160). Informally, however, he let it be understood that he was disposed to accept much less drastic terms, and a personal exchange of views to this effect was begun with Sir John Rose, a Canadian commissioner in the confidence of the British government, in July 1869 (J. C. B. Davis, *Mr. Fish and the Alabama Claims*, 1893, pp. 45–46). Not until November 1870, when Sumner's influence was waning through his opposition to the President's Dominican policy, did Fish intimate to the British minister the possibility of a settlement not including territorial compensation (Adams, *post*, p. 162). In January 1871 an understanding was reached through Rose for a joint high commission to arrange a settlement of the *Alabama* claims in connection with various questions regarding Canada at issue between the two governments—boundaries, fishing rights, navigation, and trade (J. B. Moore, *History and Digest of the International Arbitrations to which the United States Has Been a Party*, I, 1898, 523–31). Sumner's now categorically expressed opinion, that a definitive settlement could be based only on "the withdrawal of the British flag . . . from this hemisphere," was brushed aside. His removal from his committee chairmanship took place before the resulting agreement reached the Senate for ratification, but he did not then oppose it.

The commissioners began their work in March and on May 8, 1871, signed the Treaty of Washington, providing for arbitration of the *Alabama* claims under a set of definitions of neutral duties which held a neutral power bound to "use due diligence to prevent the fitting out, arming, or equipping" of belligerent cruisers in its ports. The arbitration conducted at Geneva encountered difficulties owing to the fact that, since the British government refused to admit in advance its neglect of these duties and its consequent liability, the American government refused to limit its claims, but put forward a number of indirect ones in addition to the damage directly inflicted by the Confederate cruisers. These were at last elimi-

nated, in accordance with Fish's design, by the tribunal which, on Sept. 14, 1872, rendered a decision on the direct claims against Great Britain, fixing the amount of damages at $15,500,000. A most disturbing controversy was thus honorably settled. Some of the Canadian questions dealt with in the treaty, such as fishing rights and arrangements regarding trade, dragged on; but the water boundary in the Strait of San Juan de Fuca was adjusted in favor of the United States by an arbitral decision of the German Emperor in October 1872.

A stubborn insurrection in Cuba gave rise to a set of problems which embarrassed Fish throughout his eight years in office, obliging him to press on the Spanish government the claims of Americans for reparation of injuries at the hands of local authorities and to respond to its complaints regarding filibustering activities in the United States. Efforts to persuade Spain to an accommodation with the rebels accompanied his exertions to defeat advocates of recognition of them as belligerents and of intervention in their favor. Fish was personally opposed to such recognition, but he had to keep the possibility of its expediency in mind. The President was disposed to favor recognition of belligerency. On Aug. 19, 1869, during an absence from Washington and while Fish was in the midst of an earnest though futile correspondence with Spain over a plan of pacification based on Cuban independence and the abolition of slavery, he signed a proclamation of neutrality. Fish deferred promulgating this document and later received Grant's acknowledgment that it had been a mistake (Adams, *post*, p. 19). Largely because of Grant's need of his support in the policy of Dominican annexation, Fish persuaded the President to reverse his attitude and declare recognition of belligerency unjustified in his annual message of Dec. 6. The same situation helped him to secure a still stronger special message on June 13, 1870, when the advocates of recognition attempted, unsuccessfully, to push through a joint resolution of Congress in its favor. Meanwhile the American government's efforts with Spain were met with fair promises of reforms and redress of grievances, of which the fulfilment continually fell short. The tension was somewhat relieved, however, by an agreement, reached Feb. 11, 1871, for a joint commission at Washington to decide on American claims for damages.

The situation in Cuba, which remained unimproved, continued to present fresh difficulties, and Fish's instructions to Sickles, the minister at Madrid, had been displaying for a year a rising impatience with the Spanish government, when,

Fish

in November 1873, a crisis arose which threatened to bring on hostilities. The steamer *Virginius*, under American registry and with a mainly American crew, but belonging to the Cuban revolutionary committee in New York and employed in its filibustering enterprises, was captured and taken into a Cuban port, where the Spanish authorities summarily executed the captain and fifty-three of the crew and passengers. In an ultimatum to the Spanish government of Nov. 14, Fish demanded release of the ship and survivors, signal punishment of the culpable officials, and a salute to the American flag within twelve days under threat of a severance of diplomatic relations. Warlike feeling rose in both countries, and Sickles had actually asked for his passports, when, on Nov. 27, Fish reached an understanding with the Spanish minister at Washington to dispense with the salute if his government was able to prove the illegality of the ship's registry. This condition was easily met. The critical phase of the affair lasted only a fortnight, but the questions of indemnities and punishment of the responsible officials dragged on as additions to the already numerous causes of friction with Spain.

A fresh start toward a general settlement was made with the appointment of Caleb Cushing as minister to Spain in February 1874. By holding up recognition of the new government of Alfonso XII until the *Virginius* indemnity claims were met, an award was secured, Mar. 11, 1875 (Department of State, *Instructions, Spain*, XVII, 177; *Papers Relating to the Foreign Relations of the United States*, 1875, vol. II). With this question disposed of, the way was opened for negotiations of a broader scope looking toward the independence or autonomy of Cuba. These were initiated by Fish's instruction to Cushing of Nov. 5, 1875, which was to be read to the minister of foreign affairs. It pointed out the necessity of bringing about the pacification of Cuba if relations between the United States and Spain were to continue "even on their present footing"; otherwise, "it may be the duty of other governments to intervene." Copies of the instruction were sent for communication to the British and the principal Continental governments, inviting them to express similar views to Spain. This diplomatic campaign was upset by the transmission to Cushing, on Nov. 15, of a Spanish note meeting by specific undertakings all the particular points raised in recent correspondence. Fish finally, in an instruction of Mar. 1, 1876, reduced his suggestions regarding Cuban administration to reforms in the direction of self-government and the effective abolition of slavery.

The Spanish government parried these by non-committal replies while pouring into Cuba reinforcements which practically extinguished the insurrection by the end of the year. With the satisfaction of American claims by awards of the joint commission and the elimination of various other causes of complaint, the discussions over Cuba ended.

In the course of Fish's long tenure of office, many other problems of foreign relations came before the United States. The government assumed the protection of the interests of North German subjects in France during the Franco-Prussian War and vainly offered its good offices for peace and its counsel for a moderate settlement. Fish and the minister at Paris, E. B. Washburne, successfully confronted Bismarck in asserting the right to pass sealed dispatches through the German lines during the siege of the city. Fish's advice contributed to the attainment of an understanding between the belligerents which prevented the extension of hostilities into the Far East. Concerning America's own relations with China, Fish upheld rigidly the special position of American citizens under early treaties, and he pursued a policy of cooperation with the European governments in affirming and extending foreign rights and prestige. An attempt by an armed expedition to extort a convention from Korea on the treatment of shipwrecked sailors was unsuccessful. American interests in the Pacific area were greatly promoted by a treaty of commercial reciprocity with Hawaii in 1875, which virtually incorporated those islands into the economic system of the United States.

Two attempts were made by Fish to secure agreements for the construction of an interoceanic canal. The first was with Colombia for use of the Panama route, but the treaty signed at Bogota on Jan. 26, 1870, was so amended by the Colombian Senate that the strategic value of the enterprise was destroyed and the United States failed to ratify. The second attempt was made in negotiations at Washington with a special envoy of Nicaragua, in February 1877, but no agreement could be reached as to the status of a proposed neutral zone. Among other questions which occupied Fish's attention, but which were marked by no definite developments, were almost incessant troubles on the Mexican border, handled generally with tactful regard for Mexican susceptibilities, and a controversy with Great Britain over the principles of extradition, in which Fish upheld the view that, in the absence of definite provisions to the contrary, embodied in a convention, the charge brought in court need not be identical with that on which surrender was obtained. One of the unpleasant incidents of his official business was the recall at his demand of the Russian minister Catacazy, in 1871, for interference in the *Alabama* claims negotiations and public abuse of the President.

Fish

After his retirement from office Fish did not again emerge from the private life of a gentleman of ample means and cultivated tastes. Not least, indeed, among his qualifications for the principal office he held was his eminently respectable personality, combining cordiality with dignity, which gave a tone of culture and refinement to an otherwise rather tawdry administration. He had married, on Dec. 15, 1836, Julia Kean, descendant of William Livingston, first governor of New Jersey. She created for him a charming home life, and her graciousness and tact as a hostess effectively adorned the generous hospitality which made their house the social center of Washington and contributed notably to the smooth conduct of official business. They had eight children, three of them sons. Nicholas, the eldest, was for some years in the diplomatic service, finally resigning the legation in Belgium to devote himself to banking. Hamilton was private secretary to his father as secretary of state, member and speaker of the New York Assembly, assistant treasurer of the United States at New York, and member of the Sixty-first Congress. Stuyvesant [*q.v.*] became a financier and railway executive. Like his father, Fish played a prominent part in non-political civic and social affairs. For long periods of years he served as trustee of Columbia College and as president-general of the Society of the Cincinnati. He was also a president of the Union League Club and of the New York Historical Society, besides taking an active part in other literary and philanthropic organizations and in the affairs of the Episcopal Church.

[C. F. Adams, Jr., *Lee at Appomattox and Other Papers* (1902), contains extracts from diaries and letters. See also A. E. Corning, *Hamilton Fish* (1918); *Senator G. F. Edmunds, Proceedings of the Leg. of the State of N. Y. in Memory of Hon. Hamilton Fish, held . . . Apr. 5, 1894*; J. V. Fuller, in *Am. Secretaries of State and their Diplomacy*, with bibliographical note, vol. VII (1928); DeA. S. Alexander, *A Political Hist. of the State of N. Y.*, II (1906); *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 25, 1879, Sept. 8, 1893; *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 8, 1893.] J.V.F.

**FISH, NICHOLAS** (Aug. 28, 1758–June 20, 1833), Revolutionary officer, prominent citizen, was born in New York City of well-to-do parents, Jonathan and Elizabeth (Sackett) Fish, tracing descent on his father's side from early seventeenth-century colonists of Massachusetts and settlers of Newtown, Long Island. After an attendance, but not graduation, at the College of New Jersey, he entered the New York law office

of John Morin Scott. At this time he formed a lifelong friendship with Alexander Hamilton, a student at King's College. They were fellow members of a drill corps and of a group which debated public questions (J. C. Hamilton, *Life of Alexander Hamilton*, 1834, I, 47). In 1775 Fish joined Malcolm's New York regiment, in which he held the ranks of lieutenant and captain before he became Gen. Scott's brigade-major, Aug. 9, 1776. He was present at the inglorious encounter on Long Island and was a chronicler of the flight of the militia after the British crossed the river. He was commissioned by Congress, Nov. 21, 1776, as major in the 2nd New York Regiment of the Continental Army. In the following year he took part in the two actions at Bemis Heights leading up to Burgoyne's surrender. He was appointed a division inspector under Steuben in 1778, and commanded a body of light infantry at the battle of Monmouth. As major in Clinton's brigade he served in Sullivan's expedition against the Indians in 1779. During the next two years he was with Lafayette's force, becoming Col. Hamilton's second-in-command in the Yorktown campaign. He was among the leaders of the American advance party in the assault of the redoubts on Oct. 14, 1781, and organized the defense of the position captured by Hamilton's unit. Recalling Fish's part in this operation, Lafayette gave into his custody a wreath presented at the Yorktown ceremony of Oct. 19, 1824, "as a deposit for which we must account to our comrades" (A. Levasseur, *Lafayette in America in 1824 and 1825*, 1829, I, 184–85). Through the remainder of the war Fish was with Washington's main army and was brevetted lieutenant-colonel at its close.

Following the resignation of his commission in 1784, he was appointed adjutant-general of the state of New York. In 1793 he was made supervisor of the revenue for the district of New York by President Washington. From 1806 to 1817 he held office as alderman, leading the opposition to Tammany and serving on many civic committees, including that of defense in the War of 1812. As Federalist candidate for lieutenant-governor, in 1810, he made a strong but unsuccessful run against DeWitt Clinton. His large and handsome person, and his dashing yet dignified bearing assured him a social popularity which was greatly enhanced by his marriage, on Apr. 30, 1803, to Elizabeth Stuyvesant, a descendant and heiress of the famous Dutch governor. Among the offices which he held in various societies was the presidency of the New York Society of the Cincinnati, and he was for some years chairman of the board of trustees of Columbia College. He

Fish

was named an executor of Hamilton's will, in tribute to their friendship, and he gave the statesman's name to his eldest son. The family whose fortune and prestige he founded has contributed distinguished names to the nation's political and business life in three succeeding generations.

["Obituary general order of the Society of the Cincinnati," June 20, 1833 (in *N. Y. Evening Courier*, June 21, 1833); M. J. Lamb, *History of the City of N. Y.*, vol. II (1881); DeA. S. Alexander, *A Political Hist. of the State of N. Y.*; Albert Wells, *Am. Family Antiquity*, III (1881), 154.] J. V. F.

**FISH, PRESERVED** (July 3, 1766–July 23, 1846), merchant, ship-owner, was born in Portsmouth, R. I., the son of Preserved Fish. There is no foundation for the often-repeated story that his unusual name was bestowed by a New Bedford fisherman who found him as an infant, adrift at sea in an open boat. The name had come down through several generations of descendants of Thomas Fish who was settled at Portsmouth in 1643. As a boy, he worked at first in his father's blacksmith shop and then tried farming. Finally he shipped on a whaler for the Pacific and by twenty-one had risen to captain. Endowed with an unusual amount of Yankee shrewdness and sharpness, Fish realized that more money could be made in selling whale oil than in gathering it. He became a merchant at New Bedford for a few years and then, after a political quarrel, impulsively sold his property for half its value. Like many other New Englanders of that day, he moved to New York with its wider range of business possibilities. In 1817 he was one of the twenty-eight brokers of the New York Exchange Board, the nucleus of the New York Stock Exchange, but he is principally remembered as the founder of an organization which eventually rose to first place in New York mercantile and shipping circles. The firm started in 1815 as Fish & Grinnell, and soon included three New Bedford brothers, Joseph, Henry, and Moses Hicks Grinnell. Originally the partners confined themselves to marketing part of New Bedford's whale-oil output. It was remarked that they "sold two kinds of oil, good and bad." By 1823 they were operating a line of four packets to Liverpool, competing with the Black Ball Line, and were also running a line of packets to New Orleans. Shortly after that, Fish left the firm. His eccentric disposition may account for the several sharp breaks in his business career. By 1832 Robert B. Minturn [*q.v.*] was a partner in the old firm which now became Grinnell, Minturn & Company. Under that name it secured an unquestioned primacy in New York foreign commerce. Fish, in the meantime, had gone to Liverpool where he formed a partnership with Edward

Carnes and Walter Willis. The firm was not successful financially, and broke up in two years. Returning to New York, Fish entered another partnership which lasted barely six months, and then retired from active business for seven years. He returned to it again about 1836, becoming president of the Tradesman's Bank and holding that position until his death. Fish was a Quaker until late in life when he turned Episcopalian. Though he was an active Jacksonian Democrat, he joined the Whigs in 1837 in opposition to Van Buren. He was married three times.

[Most of the material for Fish's life is to be found in the advertisements and notices in contemporary New York newspapers. There are frequent references to him in J. A. Scoville, *The Old Merchants of N. Y. City* (4 vols., 1863–66), but Scoville includes the fisherman story and must always be used with caution. There are genealogical notices in C. S. Brigham, *Early Records of the Town of Portsmouth* (1901), pp. 22, 293, 321, 371. See also Bayard Tuckerman, ed., *The Diary of Philip Hone* (2 vols., 1889), *The Merchants' Mag.*, Dec. 1846; the *Banker's Mag.*, Sept. 1846; *N. Y. Herald* and *N. Y. Tribune*, July 24, 1846.] R. G. A.

**FISH, STUYVESANT** (June 24, 1851–Apr. 10, 1923), railroad executive and banker, descended from New York colonial families, was one of the sons of Hamilton [*q.v.*] and Julia (Kean) Fish. He was born and grew up in New York City, where as a boy he had the best private school advantages then afforded, entering Columbia College at sixteen. There, in a class of less than fifty, he passed an enjoyable four years, being chosen as a junior chairman of the *Columbiad* Committee, and in senior year holding the office of class president. He was an honor man, with such competitors as Brander Matthews, R. Fulton Cutting, and Oscar S. Straus. His commencement oration was on the then unusual subject of political economy as a study. In 1874 Columbia awarded him the degree of M.A.

Immediately after graduation, in 1871, young Fish acquired clerical experience in the New York offices of the Illinois Central Railroad, but, after having become secretary to the president of the road in 1872, entered an opening which awaited him in the banking business of Morton, Bliss & Company. He remained with that house five years. Wall Street never appealed to him, however; constructive railroading was far more to his liking. In 1877 the young man was made a director of the Illinois Central. After holding various posts of responsibility in the management of that railroad, he became in 1887 president of the company. From Chicago to New Orleans the line had maintained itself by the traffic originating in its own territory. Four-fifths of its freights were the products of farm, forest, and mine. It was Fish's policy from the beginning to extend the facilities of the road in such a way as to create new traffic, thus continually building up an independent, self-sustained system, extending through the Mississippi Valley from the Lakes to the Gulf and fed by various tributary lines. The Illinois Central was almost the only north-and-south road of importance that prospered for a long term of years after the Civil War. In the nineteen years of his presidency, Fish increased the operated mileage of the road and its allied lines by 175 per cent. The gross receipts during that period were increased by 365 per cent., and dividends on the common stock showed an increase of 227 per cent. It was said that no other American railroad had so long a record of continuous dividend payments. A good part of its stock was held by small individual investors along its lines. Fish had installed a system by which the company's employees might purchase stock.

As a railroad administrator Fish succeeded too well for his own personal interest. The Illinois Central was developed into a property that was coveted by other corporations. In the course of the rapid expansion of the Harriman interests in Western and Central railroads it was seen that the president of the Illinois Central would, sooner or later, be forced to fight to retain his control. Before that issue was crystallized, however, Fish had antagonized powerful financiers in New York who were potential allies of Harriman. The antagonism came about through the uncompromising stand taken by Fish as a member of the committee appointed to investigate the charges preferred against officials of the Mutual Life Insurance Company, of which he was a trustee, in 1906. He demanded a thorough "house-cleaning," without fear or favor. In this demand he was not supported by his associates on the committee and he resigned both his committee membership and his trusteeship of the company, giving the facts to the press. The threat was then made in Wall Street that he would be deposed from the presidency of the Illinois Central, and within eight months he was actually ousted from office by the votes of directors who owed their seats in the board to Fish himself, one of those directors being Edward H. Harriman (Affidavit of Fish, printed with brief for the complainants, *George F. Edmunds, et al.* vs. *Illinois Central Railroad Company et al.*, p. 42).

Fish was a member of the Monetary Commission that was the outcome of the Indianapolis Monetary Conference of 1879. He was for many years vice-president and director of the National Park Bank of New York and also served as a trustee of the New York Life Insurance and Trust Company. He was president of the American Railway Association, 1904–06, and chair-

man of the seventh International Railway Congress, Washington, 1905.

A man of fine physical presence, he delighted in outdoor life on his estate at Garrison, N. Y. Early in life, June 1, 1876, he married Marian Graves Anthon, who became a social leader in New York and Newport. She died in 1915. The characteristic good-nature and air of *camaraderie* that made Fish beloved by hosts of friends may have led some to underestimate his moral sturdiness, but when the time of crisis came and he had made his decision, even the sacrifice of valued friendships could not cause him to waver. Still less could the lure of wealth affect his judgment. He died in his seventy-second year, survived by two sons and a daughter.

[For biographical information see J. R. Totten, "Stuyvesant Fish," in the *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Record*, Oct. 1923; *Undergraduate Hist. of the Class of 1871, Columbia College* (1871); *Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; obituary in *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 11, 1923. On Fish as a railroad executive and his deposition from the presidency of the Illinois Central, see the *Railway Age* (Chicago), Oct. 19 and 26 and Nov. 9, 1906; also an editorial in the *World* (N. Y.), Nov. 8, 1906, entitled "The Sandbagging of Stuyvesant Fish." The annual reports of Fish as president of the Illinois Central describe the development of that road from 1887 to 1906; besides these he wrote magazine articles and addresses on the broader aspects of American railroad building and operation.] W. B. S—w.

**FISHBACK, WILLIAM MEADE** (Nov. 5, 1831–Feb. 9, 1903), governor of Arkansas, was born in Jeffersonton, Culpeper County, Va., son of Frederick and Sophia Ann (Yates) Fishback. His paternal ancestor, John Fishback, brought a colony from Germany and settled in Virginia about 1714. A descendant named Frederick moved into Maryland and acquired a farm where the town of Frederick, named for him, now stands. The family soon moved back into Virginia, where William was born. He was graduated at the University of Virginia in 1855, taught school for a while, and then studied law in Richmond. In 1857 he moved to Springfield, Ill., where he had business relations with Abraham Lincoln. The next year he moved to Arkansas and settled at Fort Smith, Sebastian County. When secession was being agitated Fishback made strong speeches against it, and was elected to the state convention of 1861 as an opponent of disruption; but after the bombardment of Fort Sumter he introduced a resolution to the effect that any effort to coerce a state should be resisted by Arkansas "to the last extremity," and he voted for secession. In June 1862, he and David Walker, president of the convention, went to Missouri and took the oath of allegiance. Fishback then went on to St. Louis, where he acted for a time as one of the editors of the *St. Louis*



*Democrat*. After the fall of Little Rock (1863), Gen. J. M. Schofield sent him back to Arkansas to raise a regiment of loyal troops, but he failed to accomplish his mission.

When the loyal state government was organized in 1864 under Isaac Murphy [*q.v.*] as governor, Fishback was elected to the United States Senate. He presented his credentials in May 1864; and Senator Lane of Kansas moved that the oath be administered to him. Senator Sumner of Massachusetts, however, made a speech in opposition and the matter was delayed until February 1865, when the House resolved that neither senators nor representatives from the states lately in rebellion should be seated until both Houses had passed on the matter. A motion to admit Fishback was then defeated, 18 to 27. While waiting for this decision he edited for a time the *Unconditional Union* at Little Rock and served as special agent of the Treasury Department. He returned to Sebastian County and was elected as delegate to the constitutional convention of 1874. Though he had been loyal since 1862, he had become disgusted with the Carpet-Bag régime and he took a prominent part in undoing its work. He was a member of the legislatures of 1877 and 1879. In the latter he introduced what came to be known as the "Fishback Amendment" to the constitution, prohibiting the collection of any tax to pay the bonds issued by the Carpet-Baggers in aid of railroads and levees, as well as any new bonds to take up the "Holford" bonds, which were first issued in 1836 to the Real Estate Bank and which were clearly illegal. The amendment failed to receive the necessary majority, but it was resubmitted in 1884 and adopted. At the same election Fishback was again elected to the legislature. In 1892 he was elected by the Democrats as governor and served one term (1893–95). The most important event of his administration was the creation of the St. Francis Levee District covering 1,500 square miles, which resulted in the reclamation of nearly one million acres of valuable farm lands. On Apr. 4, 1867, he married Adelaide Miller, who bore him six children. He died at Fort Smith.

[Besides the *Journals* of the Convention of 1861 and of the state House of Representatives, and the *Official Records* (*Army*), see W. M. Kemper, *Geneal. of the Fishback Family in Am.* (1914); *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; Fay Hempstead, *A Pict. Hist. of Ark.* (1890); John Hallum, *Biog. and Pict. Hist. of Ark.* (1887), I, 468–70; T. S. Staples, *Reconstruction in Ark., 1862–74* (1923); D. Y. Thomas, *Ark. in War and Reconstruction, 1861–74* (1926). Information about family history was obtained from L. F. Fishback.] D. Y. T.

**FISHER, ALVAN** (Aug. 9, 1792–Feb. 13, 1863), painter, was born in Needham, Norfolk County, Mass., the son of Aaron and Lucy (Sted-

man) Fisher and a brother of John Dix Fisher [*q.v.*]. His father and his grandfather, Capt. Ebenezer Fisher, both served in the Revolution. As a lad, Alvan went to Dedham, Mass., where his permanent interests were centered. Until after the age of eighteen he worked in a country store but, finally, against the advice of friends, he decided to be an artist and became a pupil of John R. Penniman, with whom he remained about two years. Penniman was an excellent ornamental painter, but the mechanical method he imparted to his pupil proved a great disadvantage to the latter. It was years before Fisher could break away from the fixed early habits. His life as an artist began in 1814 when, for a year, he undertook to paint portraits at a very cheap rate. He then turned his attention to barnyard scenes, portraits of animals, and pictures of rural life, a field rarely touched at that time, and therefore comparatively profitable. In 1819 he decided to undertake portrait-painting and this finally became his specialty.

Alvan Fisher is said to have been the first landscape-painter who hung out a professional sign in Boston, where he had a studio on Washington Street near Summer (Gerry, *post*). In 1825 he visited England, France (where he spent some time in study), and Italy, and enjoyed a trip through Switzerland on foot. Upon returning to the United States he established himself as a portrait-painter in Boston where he lived many years. On June 3, 1827, he married at Dedham, Mass., Lydia, daughter of Abner and Martha (May) Ellis, by whom he had one son. Fisher died in Dedham at the age of seventy-one.

He had a distinct talent for art, and combined with it the unusual ability to make it pay. At the age of forty-three he invested savings amounting to $13,000 and lost every cent, but immediately set about retrieving his finances and, finally, through more fortunate investments, accumulated a small fortune. An interesting feature of his work was the painting of incidents in his landscapes. He rarely painted from nature but depended upon a good memory and fragmentary notes and sketches. He produced many excellent likenesses, notably that of the phrenologist Spurzheim, done from recollection. Among the works which he himself mentioned in a letter to Dunlap (*post*) are: "The Escape of Sargeant Champ"; "Mr. Dustin Saving Children from the Savages"; "The Freshet"; and "Lost Boy."

[P. A. Fisher, *The Fisher Geneal.* (1898), pp. 177 and 273–74; Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (rev. ed., 1918), III, 32–34; H. T. Tuckerman, *Books of the Artists* (1867), p. 67; *An Alphabetical Abstract of the Record of Deaths in the Town of Dedham, Mass., 1844–90* (1895); S. L. Gerry, "The Old Masters of Boston," *New Eng. Mag.*, Feb. 1891.]

J. M. H.



**FISHER, CLARA** (July 14, 1811–Nov. 12, 1898), actress, singer, was the daughter of Frederick George Fisher, an Irish Shakespearian scholar and a London auctioneer. Earlier he had been librarian in Brighton where he became the intimate of playwrights and actors. Four of his six children made reputations on the stage. Clara was four when he began to teach her to recite. She was six when she made her sensational début at Drury Lane Theatre (Dec. 10, 1817) as Prime Minister of Lilliput, in a children's version of Garrick's *Gulliver,* reciting also excerpts from *Richard III.* The miniature majesty of her Lord Flimnap, the precocious villany of her Richard, made her a child celebrity overnight. After repeating her triumph at Covent Garden, she starred in the United Kingdom for a decade, constantly widening her repertory. Her verbal memory was prodigious, as was her grasp of characters presumably beyond a child's ken. One of her early feats was the impersonation of half-a-dozen widely different parts in a single play. Injudicious managers forced her into a succession of mature male rôles. Before she was twelve she had played Shylock, Sir Peter Teazle, Goldfinch, Dr. Pangloss, Dr. Ollapod, and Young Norval. Ireland declares she could portray the soul of a grown man despite her child's physique; and Hutton records that when cast with actors of regulation size, she threw them out of drawing, dominating the scene. Her Richard was seriously compared with that of Kean.

In 1827, her family having removed to New York, she made her American début at the Park Theatre, her instant success precipitating the "Clara Fisher craze." Box offices were mobbed when she appeared, poems were written to her, fashions, hotels, babies and stage-coaches named after her. At sixteen she is described as bewitching rather than beautiful, daintily petite, her graceful head boyishly "bobbed," her action spirited, her expression artless and gay, full of a captivating archness. Her dramatic singing of Scottish heroic ballads made a hit by virtue of her personality rather than her voice. During her extensive American starring tour which carried her West and South, she seems to have played fewer men's than boys' parts, appearing often in light comedy rôles like Little Pickle in *The Spoiled Child,* or Maria in *Actress of All Work.* Her marriage (Dec. 6, 1834) to the Irish composer, James Gaspard Maeder, marked her decline as a juvenile star. The financial crisis of 1837 swept away her early professional earnings. As leading lady of stock companies supporting

most of the great stars, she became, according to Hutton, one of the most finished artists on the American stage. Among her best parts were Ophelia, the Fool in *Lear*, Viola, Clari in the *Maid of Milan*, Lady Teazle, and Lady Gay Spanker. Gradually abandoning her youthful parts, she later played the stage old lady until her retirement in 1889. When she died at Metuchen, N. J., she was the oldest actress in America. Mrs. Maeder had seven children, three of whom identified themselves with the stage: Frederick as actor and dramatist; Mollie as a soubrette; and Frank as theatrical agent and manager. Her autobiography mentions four brothers and sisters who appeared on the American stage: John, Charles who married Joseph Jefferson's daughter, Jane (Mrs. George Vernon), and Amelia.

[*Autobiography of Clara Fisher Maeder* (1897) with portraits and introduction by Douglas Taylor; Laurence Hutton, *Curiosities of the Am. Stage* (1891); sketch by J. N. Ireland in B. Matthews and L. Hutton, *Actors and Actresses of Gt. Brit. and the U. S.* (1886), III, 259–72; C. T. Congdon, *Reminiscences of a Journalist* (1880); *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 13, 1898.] M. B. H.

**FISHER, CLARK** (May 27, 1837–Dec. 31, 1903), naval engineer, inventor, was the eldest son of Mark and Virtue Gage Fisher, and was born at Levant, Me. He prepared for college in the schools at Newport, Me., and at the Trenton Academy in Trenton, N. J., and he was graduated from the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute in 1858 with a degree in civil engineering. He entered the United States Navy in May of the following year as a third assistant engineer. He was promoted to second assistant engineer in July 1861, and to first assistant engineer in May 20, 1863. During the Civil War he took part in the engagements at Whitehouse Landing, and at Pocotaligo in 1862. He was with the forces which attacked Morris Island in Charleston Harbor and bombarded Fort Sumter. He participated also in the attack on Fort Wagner and Stone Inlet in 1863; in the advance up the James River; and in the attack on Howlett's, and the Dutch Gap Canal in 1864. In 1862 he was taken a prisoner at Magnolia Station, S. C., but escaped after being confined but one night. His younger brother, Otis, was killed at Fort Fisher. After the war was over, he did some brilliant experimental work for the navy at the Brooklyn Navy Yard which established the value of oil as a fuel. He originated the devices which were used for the economic combustion of this fuel in the experiments. He received his appointment as chief engineer, U. S. N., on Jan. 23, 1871, but resigned the following March on account of the death of his father who had been one of the founders of the Eagle Anvil Works at Trenton, N. J., in the forties and had now left his interest in them to his only surviving son. From 1874 till 1891 scarcely a year elapsed without the issuing of some new patent to Clark Fisher which meant new products for or improvements on old products of the Eagle Works. His first patents were for a railroad spike and a cast-iron anvil. Later patents included rail joints, a hydro-pneumatic engine, combined anvil and vise, a spring motor, lifting jack, and a railroad tie. The Eagle Anvil Works, established by Mark Fisher and developed for thirty years by Clark Fisher, are still doing a business in Trenton. In 1898 Fisher married Harriet White in London. His last years were spent in travel and at his home "Whitehall," at Flushing, Long Island, but he kept an active interest in business until his last illness.

[S. M. Studdiford, *A Memorial of Clark Fisher* (1904); *Trans. Am. Soc. Mech. Engineers*, XXV (1904), 1130–31; E. M. Callahan, *List of Officers of the Navy of the U. S. and of the Marine Corps, from 1775 to 1900* (1901); Geo. A. Wolf, *Industrial Trenton* (1900); H. B. Nason, *Biog. Record Officers and Grads. Rensselaer Polytech. Inst., 1824–86* (1887); private information.] E. Y.

**FISHER, DANIEL WEBSTER** (Jan. 17, 1838–Jan. 28, 1913), Presbyterian clergyman, for twenty-eight years president of Hanover College, Indiana, was born at a place called Arch Spring, in Sinking Valley, then a part of Huntingdon County, Pa. His father, Daniel, was a well-to-do farmer of German descent who had married a woman of Dutch ancestry, Martha Middleswarth. When he was fourteen years of age young Daniel entered Milnwood Academy, located at Shade Gap, and later finished his preparation for college at Airy View Academy. He graduated from Jefferson College in 1857, and from the Western Theological Seminary three years later. In April 1860, having been accepted by the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions for service and appointed to Siam, he was ordained by the Presbytery of Huntingdon. On the 25th of the same month he married Amanda D. Kouns, daughter of Michael Kouns of Ravenswood, Va. (now W. Va.). The illness of his wife as they were about to sail for their foreign station caused them to postpone the journey, and ultimately led him to resign his appointment. In the autumn of 1860 he took charge of the Thalia Street Church, New Orleans, but owing to the outbreak of the Civil War, he returned North in June of the following year. From 1861 to 1876 he was pastor of the First Presbyterian Church, Wheeling, W. Va. A trip abroad followed. Upon his return he supplied various churches, and had been ministering for a year and a half to the

Second Presbyterian Church, Madison, Ind., when on July 8, 1879, he was elected president of Hanover College. The institution was financially embarrassed and its existence in jeopardy, but under his administrative skill it was kept alive through the crisis, and as the years went on it increased in endowment, buildings, and efficiency. During the twenty-eight years of his presidency, he continued active in the affairs of his denomination. In 1866 and in 1874 he had been a member of the General Assembly, and he was again a member in 1889 and in 1900. In the latter year the Assembly appointed a committee to consider changes in the Westminster Confession of Faith, and as one of its members he assisted in shaping the "Brief Statement of the Reformed Faith" which the Assembly adopted in 1902. For many years he was a director of McCormick Theological Seminary. President Harrison in 1889 appointed him one of the commissioners to visit the Mint of the United States. After his resignation as president of Hanover he lived at Washington, D. C., and engaged in writing. In 1909 he published *A Human Life, An Autobiography with Excursuses;* and in 1911, *The Unification of the Churches* and *Calvin Wilson Mateer, Forty-five Years a Missionary in Shantung, China.* His son, Walter L. Fisher, was secretary of the interior under President Taft.

[Wm. A. Millis, *The Hist. of Hanover College from 1827 to 1927* (1927); *Who's Who in America,* 1912–13; Alfred Nevin, *Encyc. of the Presbyt. Ch. in the U. S. A.* (1884); *Evening Star* (Washington), Jan. 28, 1913.]

H. E. S.

**FISHER, EBENEZER** (Feb. 6, 1815–Feb. 21, 1879), Universalist clergyman, educator, was born on Plantation No. 3, now Charlotte, Washington County, Me., where his father and uncle had established themselves when it was a wilderness. He was a descendant of Anthony Fisher who came to Boston from England in 1637, and settled in Dedham, Mass., and son of Ebenezer and Sally (Johnson) Fisher. He grew up under frontier conditions, a sober-minded boy, early inured to long hours of toil in the open, with limited opportunities for schooling, but an eager reader of whatever books and papers came within his reach. His father was a liberal in religion; his mother, an earnest Baptist; and his mind early turned to questions of theology. When about sixteen he went to Sharon, Mass., and worked in a furniture establishment with his brother-in-law. Returning to his home at nineteen, for the next four years he taught school for a part of each year. In 1840 he was elected representative to the Maine legislature, where despite his youth he was put on one of the most important committees, that of revising the state statutes. He had determined to enter the ministry and in 1839 had for six months supplied for his board the Milltown Universalist Society. Most of the money he received as a state official went into books needful for his theological preparation. He joined the Maine Universalist Convention in 1840, and on Sept. 27, 1841, married Amy W. Leighton of Pembroke, Me. He was pastor of the Universalist church at Addison Point, near his home, from July 1841 to May 1847, when he was installed pastor of the Salem, Mass., Universalist church. In October 1853 a throat affection forced him to resign, but in November of that year he was able to take charge of the South Dedham Universalist church, of which he was pastor until 1858.

During these years in Massachusetts he became known as an able preacher and contributor to denominational periodicals. The most notable achievement of his career, however, was in connection with the theological department of St. Lawrence University, an institution chartered by the State of New York in 1856 for the purpose of "conducting a college in the town of Canton, St. Lawrence County, . . . and to maintain a theological school." Of the latter, the first Universalist theological school in the country, Fisher became the first principal, being installed Apr. 15, 1858, and serving for more than twenty years. Beginning with practically nothing to work with, in the face of many difficulties, especially during the Civil War, he administered its affairs, taught, raised funds, and insured its permanency. In 1869 he was offered a professorship in the new divinity school of Tufts College, which he declined. Death came to him suddenly one morning, ten years later, while he was on his way to the school. He was a man of large frame and noble head, its bald top "shining like a helmet," with a face both stern and kind. He was direct, practical, and unsentimental, terse in verbal expression, without wide range of learning, but sure of what he knew, and thoroughly honest; a person to inspire respect and confidence. The *Universalist Quarterly* from 1849 to 1876 contains numerous articles from his pen, and sermons by him appear in the *Trumpet* from 1849 to 1857. A discussion between him and Rev. J. H. Walden, entitled *The Christian Doctrine of Salvation,* was published in 1869.

[P. A. Fisher, *The Fisher Geneal.* (1898); Geo. H. Emerson, *Memoir of Ebenezer Fisher, D.D.* (1880); *Sixty Years of St. Lawrence* (1916); *Christian Leader,* Feb., Mar., 1879.]

H. E. S.

**FISHER, GEORGE JACKSON** (Nov. 27, 1825–Feb. 3, 1893), physician, bibliophile, col-

lector, was born at North Castle, Westchester County, N. Y. Of his ancestry little is known except that the family name probably was originally Vischer and that his father was a farmer. When the boy was eleven years old the family moved to the central part of the state, where he became so attuned to rural life that cities never possessed any attractions for him. A *flair* for nature study developed and led him to the study of medicine; and from the first he was a collector. His preceptor was Prof. Nelson Nivison of Mecklenburg and Syracuse University, while his first course of lectures was taken in the medical department of the University of Buffalo and his medical degree was received from the University of New York in 1849. After a short sojourn with his preceptor at Mecklenburg he removed in 1851 to Sing Sing, now Ossining, N. Y., where he continued to practise until his death. He received numerous honors and distinctions: among them an honorary M.A. from Madison University in 1859; the presidency of New York State Medical Society in 1874; and an appointment as delegate to the International Medical Congress, 1876. His library comprised between 4,000 and 5,000 volumes of classics and he was particularly proud of his collections of anatomies and works on monstrosities. His collections of illustrations comprised nearly 500 portraits and 450 medals, the latter representing an investment of $1,000. At his death these collections seem to have been broken up. The portraits found their way to the Johns Hopkins Hospital Library.

He was active not only as surgeon, performing most of the major operations, but as a writer. In 1861 he published *Biographical Sketches of the Deceased Physicians of Westchester County, New York;* a paper "On the Animal Substances employed as Medicines by the Ancients" appeared in the *American Medical Monthly,* January 1862; and "Diploteratology: An Essay on Compound Human Monsters," in *Transactions of the Medical Society of the State of New York,* 1865–68. Twenty short papers written by him on the *Old Masters of Anatomy, Surgery and Medicine* appeared serially in the *Annals of Anatomy and Surgery* (1881–84); he contributed articles on *Teratology* to *Johnson's New Universal Encyclopedia* and also to Wood's *Reference Handbook of the Medical Sciences* (1889); and he wrote *A History of Surgery* for Ashhurst's *International Encyclopædia of Surgery* (1886). He embellished his own copies of S. D. Gross's *Autobiography* and *The Gold-Headed Cane* with many illustrations and autograph letters (the last work was left incomplete). He was a big, bluff and hearty, hospitable man, who never wearied of showing his treasures to the numerous physicians who made the pilgrimage to his home. His death resulted from an infection which he received while he was amputating a limb.

[The most complete record is the biographical sketch by Joseph H. Hunt, M.D., in the *Trans. of the Med. Soc. of N. Y.* (1893). The writer of this article was privileged to meet the doctor and to see his collections in 1885. The facts in the famous suit for slander are stated in *Wm. P. Woodcock, Jr., M.D. (of Sing Sing) against George Jackson Fisher (of Sing Sing). Proceedings at the Trial of Above Entitled Cause. Supreme Court. Westchester Co. White Plains. September 1873.*] E.P.

**FISHER, GEORGE PARK** (Aug. 10, 1827–Dec. 20, 1909), Congregational clergyman, historian, was the son of Lewis Whiting and Nancy (Fisher) Fisher, and a grandson of Lewis and Luther Fisher, whose descent is traced to the family of Samuel Fisher, the noted Quaker apologist and martyr, contemporary and friend of George Fox. He was born in Wrentham, Mass., where he attended the public schools until he entered Brown University from which he graduated in 1847. For a year after graduation he studied at Yale Divinity School, where Nathaniel W. Taylor was closing his great career as teacher of systematic theology. Thereafter Auburn Theological Seminary claimed him for a time; but he completed his three-years' theological course in 1851 at Andover, Mass., where Prof. Edwards A. Park was the leading influence. He thus secured the best training that the leaders of "New England Theology" could offer. It was then unusual for theological students to engage in graduate study abroad, but Fisher, still unsatisfied, spent the years 1852–54 in Germany, where he became acquainted with the theological celebrities of the time and received thorough training in the methods of historical research.

On his return in 1854 he was called to the Livingston Professorship of Divinity in Yale College, which at that time included the office of regular pastor and preacher of the college church (Congregational). Accepting this invitation he was ordained and installed as pastor of the Church in Yale College Oct. 24, 1854. He continued in this position until 1861, bringing out in 1858 a printed *History of the Church in Yale College.* His printed addresses during this incumbency include two sermons, *National Faults* (1860), and *Thoughts Pertinent to the Present Crisis* (1861), besides obituaries of his former teachers in the Divinity School, Nathaniel W. Taylor and Josiah Willard Gibbs. In April 1860 he married Adeline Louisa Forbes of New Haven, by whom he had two sons and a daughter. In 1861 he resigned the pastorate of the college church to accept a professorship of ecclesiastical history in the

Divinity School, where he taught continuously for forty years, remaining in active service until 1901. From 1895 until 1901 he also served as dean of the school and continued his connection with it as professor emeritus until his death.

Professor Fisher is vividly remembered by his former associates in the teaching of history for both the matter and the manner of his contributions. Of medium height, erect, handsome, and well-built, he had a gracious and genial address and a flow of witty anecdote which made him especially apt as host or as an after-dinner speaker. The combination of these qualities with unusual good sense and sobriety of judgment made him for years a fitting president of the American Society of Church History. It also won for him from a long succession of classes in the Divinity School a preëminent place as teacher, his lectures being not merely lucid and instructive, but thoroughly enjoyable. He himself found equal pleasure both in entertaining at his stately home a succession of distinguished guests and in the social contacts of the Century Club, New York, of which he was long a member. Far-reaching as was his influence at Yale through his effective work in the classroom, it was broadened and intensified in the country at large by the successive volumes that came from his study. Of these the first considerable work was his *Essays on the Supernatural Origin of Christianity* (1865). It was followed in 1866 by his *Life of Benjamin Silliman*, and this, after an interval of seven years, by *The Reformation* (1873), *The Beginnings of Christianity* (1877), *Faith and Rationalism* (1879), *Discussions in History and Theology* (1880), *The Christian Religion* (1882), and *The Grounds of Theistic and Christian Belief* (1883). These, together with his *Manual of Christian Evidences* (1890), attest his interest in apologetics during the conflict of orthodox church historians with the Tübingen school of criticism. Other writings, mostly of the later period, show him no less at home in the field of general history. Among them may be mentioned his *Outlines of Universal History* (1885), *The Colonial Era* (1892), and *A Brief History of the Nations* (1896), besides his *History of the Christian Church* (1887), *History of Christian Doctrine* (1896), and his edition of *An Unpublished Essay of Edwards on the Trinity* (1903). These show that while Fisher was quite ready to take up the cudgels of apologetic polemics when occasion required, he was from the heart both a liberal in sentiment and a true historian in his sincere desire to reach an impartial judgment. This genuinely conservative yet broad-minded disposition made him both a trusted leader in the Congregational fellowship and a judicious guide in the affairs of the Divinity School.

[The best available characterization of man and work is that presented by his successor at Yale, Prof. Williston Walker, in an obituary address printed in the *Yale Divinity Quart.*, Jan. 1910. See also E. P. Parker in *Hartford Daily Courant*, Dec. 22, 1909; *Brown Alumni Monthly*, June 1902, Jan. 1910; *Nation*, Dec. 23, 1909; *Outlook*, Jan. 1, 1910; P. A. Fisher, *The Fisher Geneal.* (1898); *Who's Who in America*, 1908–09.] B.W.B.

**FISHER, GEORGE PURNELL** (Oct. 13, 1817–Feb. 10, 1899), lawyer, jurist, was descended from John Fisher who came to Pennsylvania with William Penn in 1682. His father, Thomas, was twice high sheriff of Sussex County, Del., and twice high sheriff of Kent County—an unparalleled distinction—and commanded a brigade of Sussex County militia in 1812. He moved to Milford, Kent County, in 1815, where his third wife, Nancy Owens, daughter of Robert and Sallie Owens of Sussex County, gave birth to her only son, George Purnell Fisher. Fisher's early education was received in the county schools. At seventeen he attended St. Mary's College, Baltimore, but the following year transferred to Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pa., from which he was graduated in 1838. He at once entered the law office of John M. Clayton, a family connection, and at the same time tutored the latter's sons. In 1840 he married Eliza, daughter of Truston Polk McColley, a Milford merchant of Scotch ancestry, and after his admission to the bar in 1841, he settled at Dover, winning "marked success from the beginning" (Lore, *post*, p. 7).

It was not long before the young lawyer became enamored of politics, serving his political apprenticeship as clerk of the state Senate (1843), member of the state House of Representatives from Kent County (1844), and secretary of state of Delaware under the Democratic governors Joseph Maull and William Temple (1846–47). When John M. Clayton became secretary of state (1849–50) under President Taylor, Fisher served as his confidential clerk and participated actively in the negotiations which led to the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty. By Taylor's appointment, he adjudicated certain claims of American citizens against Brazil (1850–52), and at Fillmore's request, he acted as his private secretary until Fillmore's son came to Washington. In March 1855 Gov. Causey appointed Fisher attorney-general of Delaware for a term of five years, at the expiration of which he was the candidate of both wings of the People's party for election to the Thirty-seventh Congress, being elected by a majority of 247, although the state was normally Democratic. By 1862, however, when he was renominated by the Republican

party, the state had swung back again and he was defeated.

At Washington in 1861, he soon won the high regard of Lincoln, becoming the almoner of federal patronage in his state and helping to prepare a bill to carry out Lincoln's plan of gradual emancipation in Delaware. The project failed, but Fisher's efforts so impressed Lincoln that, on the abolition of the old courts and the creation of a supreme court for the District of Columbia, he appointed Fisher as one of the four justices, on Mar. 11, 1863, eight days after his congressional term had expired. Fisher is said to have displayed great ability on the bench and was praised especially for his conduct, in January 1867, of the first trial of John H. Surratt for participation in Lincoln's assassination. In May 1870 he was appointed by President Grant as United States attorney for the District of Columbia, but five years later he returned to Delaware. He was recalled to public life by President Benjamin Harrison in June 1889 to serve as first auditor of the treasury, a position which he held until the change of administration in 1893. The last years of his life he devoted to reading and literary pursuits, dying after a brief illness at Washington. Three years before his death he wrote to his daughter his reminiscences of houses and people in Dover when he was a lad of seven ("Recollections of Dover in 1824," *Delaware Historical Society Papers*, no. LV, 1896). His biographers describe him as without vindictiveness, a lovable and agreeable gentleman.

[Chas. B. Lore, "The Life and Character of George P. Fisher," *Del. Hist. Soc. Papers*, no. XXXVI (1902); H. C. Conrad, *Hist. of the State of Del.* (3 vols., 1908); Job Barnard, "Early Days of the Supreme Court of the District of Columbia," *Columbia Hist. Soc. Records*, XXII (1919), 1–35; obituaries in *Washington Post* and *Evening Star* (Washington), Feb. 11, 1899.] H.F.W.

**FISHER, JOHN DIX** (Mar. 27, 1797–Mar. 3, 1850), Boston physician, a pioneer advocate of education for the blind, was born to Aaron and Lucy (Stedman) Fisher at Needham, Mass. He was a younger brother of Alvan Fisher [*q.v.*]. After graduation from Brown University in 1820 and from the Harvard Medical School in 1825, he gave two years to professional study in Europe, chiefly in Paris, paying special attention to auscultation under Laënnec, the author of it, and becoming one of the first in America to utilize this aid to diagnosis. In his own practise he extended the application of it to diseases other than those of the chest, and he published the results of his findings. From investigations made abroad he issued, soon after his return, a book with illustrations, *Description of the Distinct, Confluent, and Inoculated Smallpox*, etc. (1829), which

Fisher

was highly esteemed. He wrote little, however, but served much in other ways. He was a pioneer in the use of etherization in childbirth; in fact, he was always zealous in behalf of the objects of the Boston Society for Medical Improvement. The Massachusetts Medical Society made him a member. Towards the end of his rather short life he was elected an acting physician of the Massachusetts General Hospital.

While a student in Paris he became interested in alleviation of another sort, that of the condition of blind children. Making a careful study of the means and methods used there in the National Institution 10r the Youthful Blind, that parent of all such schools, he presented his survey before influential friends in Boston and so aroused their enthusiasm that a meeting was called, a legislative bill prepared and promptly enacted, incorporating the New England Asylum, which later became the Perkins Institution and Massachusetts School for the Blind. This was in 1829. He was its vice-president and physician until his death, and for one year, while its director was abroad, administered it and wrote its annual report; for all which service it seems that he would take no fee.

Fisher introduced into America the movement for educating the blind (Eliot, *post*) and in his friend and fellow physician, Samuel Gridley Howe [*q.v.*], discovered the man to launch it. In token of his service Perkins Institution has named one of its family units Fisher Cottage and has carved the name of Dr. Fisher on its central mural tablet. At his death his many friends met to consider what measures should be taken to express their respect for his memory. The meeting was called to order by Charles Sumner, fitting resolutions were passed, and it was voted to set up a monument to him in Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass. That monument, which is of white marble, bears this inscription: "Erected to the memory of John Dix Fisher, M.D., by those who loved him for his virtues—The Physician and the friend of the poor—The early and efficient advocate for the education of the blind—The liberal deviseth liberal things, and by liberal things shall he stand."

[Walter Channing, *Sketch of the Life and Character of John D. Fisher, M.D.* (1850); *Medic. Communications Mass. Medic. Soc.*, vol. VIII (1854); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); Samuel Eliot, "The Perkins Inst. and Mass. School for the Blind," *New Eng. Mag.*, Feb. 1897; M. Anagnos, "Education of the Blind," *Perkins Inst. Ann. Report, 1881* (1882); *Hist. Cat. Brown Univ.* (1914); *Boston Daily Atlas*, Mar. 4, *Boston Daily Bee*, Mar. 5, *Puritan Recorder* (Boston), Mar. 7, 1850.] E.E.A.

**FISHER, JOSHUA FRANCIS** (Feb. 17, 1807–Jan. 21, 1873), publicist, historical student,

Fisher

humanitarian, was born in Philadelphia, to a position of social and financial security. His father, Joshua Fisher, descended from John Fisher, one of Penn's first company of English Quakers who settled in Pennsylvania about 1682, was the son of a wealthy Quaker merchant. He married Elizabeth Powel Francis, daughter of Tench and Anne (Willing) Francis, but died a few months later, before the birth of his only child. Joshua Francis Fisher was brought up by his mother and her sister and brother-in-law. He had all the school advantages open in his time to wealthy Philadelphians. In 1825, at the age of eighteen, he was graduated from Harvard College and soon began the study of law under Joseph R. Ingersoll. Following his admission in 1829 to the Philadelphia bar, he served for a brief time as attaché to the United States legation in France, while William C. Rives was minister to that country. Having an ample income, he never practised his profession. His interests were largely in American history and his studies in that then neglected field, while limited in scope, were for that day singularly penetrating and definitive. Of his published essays the most noteworthy are: "Some Account of the Early Poets and Poetry of Pennsylvania" (*Pennsylvania Historical Society Memoirs,* vol. II, pt. 2, 1830); "A Discourse . . . on the Private Life and Domestic Habits of William Penn" (*Ibid.,* vol. III, pt. 2, 1836); and the memoir "Andrew Hamilton, Esq., of Pennsylvania" (*Historical Magazine,* Morrisania, N. Y., August 1868). The Penn brochure indicates in particular a valuation of social and economic data in estimating historical characters that was far in advance of the writer's time. Fisher was one of the early members of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania and from 1828 to 1865 was more or less active in its management.

While Fisher was still in his early twenties the care and education of the blind began to appeal strongly to him. With the exception of the Perkins Institution at Boston there were nowhere in the United States schools that provided advanced instruction for that unfortunate group of people. Fisher, commissioned by Roberts Vaux to investigate European methods in their training, returned from abroad with a report which was influential in the founding at Philadelphia of the Pennsylvania Institution for the Instruction of the Blind, the second institution of its kind in the country. He was one of the incorporators and remained a member of the board of managers until his death—a period of forty years of service.

In March 1837 Fisher married Eliza Middleton, the youngest daughter of Gov. Henry Middleton of South Carolina, and thus became allied with a representative family of the "slave-holding aristocracy." As the slavery discussion grew more intense, during the fifties, Fisher became interested in efforts to reconcile the conflicting claims of North and South. He wrote *Concessions and Compromises* (1860), a pamphlet that proposed certain changes in the method of enforcing the provisions of the Constitution touching upon slavery. Although his own political views were conservative and inclined far more toward nationalism than toward sectionalism in any form, his sympathies in the Civil War were with the Confederacy because he felt that the South as a section had been unfairly treated by the North as a section. After the war he gave liberally of his personal wealth to rehabilitate the fortunes of members of his wife's family who had lost all they had in the conflict. In the Reconstruction measures of Congress he saw only injustice.

Long before the war was ended Fisher had turned his attention to evils that he conceived to inhere in the representative system. It is reported that as a young man he had conversed with De Tocqueville on the subject. He was one of the first Americans to become familiar with the writings of Thomas Hare, the English advocate of minority representation. While he recognized the gravity of the evils that Hare attacked, he could not accept his scheme as a practical remedy in America. He thought, however, that the subject should be discussed in the United States and to that end published *The Degradation of our Representative System and its Reform* (1863). In 1866 he brought out a pamphlet on *Reform in Our Municipal Elections,* one of the earliest American discussions in that field.

[*Recollections of Joshua Francis Fisher Written in 1864* (privately printed 1929), ed. by Sophia H. Cadwalader; Anna Wharton Smith, *Geneal. of the Fisher Family, 1682–1896* (1896), pp. 93–95; *Pa. Inst. for the Instruction of the Blind, Annual Report,* 1873; B. F. Perry, *Reminiscences of Public Men* (1883), pp. 277–84; obituary in the *World* (N. Y.), Jan. 24, 1873.]

W.B.S—w.

**FISHER, PHILIP** [See COPLEY, THOMAS, 1595–*c.* 1652].

**FISHER, SIDNEY GEORGE** (Mar. 2, 1809–July 25, 1871), lawyer, author, son of James L. and Ann Eliza (George) Fisher, was born in Philadelphia, where he also died. He graduated from Dickinson College in 1827, read law under Joseph Ingersoll in Philadelphia, and was admitted to the bar a few weeks before he was twenty-one. The routine of his law practise seems to have engrossed him for many years. By 1838 he had proceeded far enough in the world to be summoned back to make an address before his alma

mater, and in 1851 he was married to Elizabeth Ingersoll. About this time he became interested in farming, and devoting much of his time to Maryland plantations of his in Cecil and Kent counties, he adopted these two names as convenient signatures for his occasional contributions to the newspapers. In 1856 he published a volume of undistinguished verse, *Winter Studies in the Country,* and wrote for the Philadelphia *North American,* "Kanzas and the Constitution," an essay which—endorsing slavery but condemning the political rapaciousness of the South—so recommended itself to a group of Bostonians that they reprinted it as a pamphlet (1856). *Rustic Rhymes,* composed largely of two-and-three-stress lines, and *The Law of the Territories,* urging the retention of the Missouri Compromise, appeared in 1859. The next year, he published *The Laws of Race as Connected with Slavery,* an erudite plea for white supremacy, based to a great degree on his acceptance of slavery and his conviction that only people of "Saxon" derivation have any real desire for political freedom. *The Trial of the Constitution* (1862), his most voluminous work, restates in 390 pages the doctrines he had already promulgated concerning the great national issues of his time. In the *North American Review* for July 1864 he published an article, later issued in a pamphlet, called "A National Currency," upholding in general the policy of the government in issuing legal-tender notes. He made frequent addresses here and there before associations of farmers, advocating diversification of crops whenever he did not consider it more important to praise Daniel Webster, and to declare the idea of Union the one end to which all other political ideas in America should be made subservient. His son, named for him, with whom he has sometimes been confused, spelled his first name not Sidney, but Sydney.

[Dickinson College *Catalogue* (1840); *A Reply to a Pamphlet Recently Published by Sidney George Fisher, Esq., entitled "A National Currency"* (1865); L. D. Avery, *Geneal. of the Ingersoll Family in America* (1926), which, however, gives the name of Fisher's father incorrectly; Townsend Ward, "The Germantown Road and its Associations," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.,* V (1881); letter from Sydney George Fisher to Librarian of Congress, Feb. 1903; letter from Registrar Dept. Public Health, Phila., to author, July 5, 1928.]

J. D. W.

**FISHER, SYDNEY GEORGE** (Sept. 11, 1856–Feb. 22, 1927), lawyer and historian, was the only child of Elizabeth (Ingersoll) and Sidney George Fisher [*q.v.*]. He was descended on his father's side from John Fisher who accompanied William Penn to America on his first voyage, and on his mother's side from Jared Ingersoll, a distinguished lawyer who was judge of vice-admiralty for the middle colonies at the outbreak of the Revolution. His father was a Philadelphia lawyer who gave much of his time and efforts to public affairs and was especially active with his pen during the period of the slavery crisis and the Civil War. Sydney's boyhood was largely spent at his father's country home, now a part of residential Philadelphia near Eighth and Erie avenues; there he acquired along the creek that intense love of nature and outdoor life which remained a passion with him, in spite of his absorption later in literary labors. He was prepared for college at St. Paul's School, Concord, N. H., and entered Trinity College at Hartford, from which he received his B.A. degree in 1879. His literary bent was early manifested; while in college he edited the school magazine. From Trinity College he entered Harvard as a law student and remained there for two years. In 1883 he was admitted to the bar in Pennsylvania and began the practise of law.

He will be remembered chiefly for his historical writings, which began in 1896 with the publication of *The Making of Pennsylvania,* followed the next year by his *Pennsylvania, Colony and Commonwealth* and *The Evolution of the Constitution,* the latter of which went through three editions; in 1898 there appeared his *Men, Women, and Manners in Colonial Times* in two volumes, which also was published in three editions; and in 1899 *The True Benjamin Franklin* which went into seven editions. In 1900 appeared *The True William Penn* that ran into four editions; in 1902, *The American Revolution and the Boer War: An Open Letter to C. F. Adams* which held up to scorn the latter's opposition to a continuance of the struggle on the part of the Boers; also in this year, *The True Story of the American Revolution,* with five editions to its credit. This history of the Revolution, after being reshaped, rewritten, expanded, and very greatly improved, appeared in 1908 in two volumes, under title *The Struggle for American Independence.* In 1909 Fisher wrote an article for the *Nation* entitled "The South and the Negro"; in 1911 he published *The True Daniel Webster*; and in 1912 he wrote "The Legendary and Myth-making Process in Histories of the American Revolution," which was first read before the American Philosophical Society and then published in its *Proceedings* (vol. LI, no. 204, April–June 1912). In 1917 came his *American Education,* and finally in 1919 *The Quaker Colonies. A Chronicle of the Proprietors of the Delaware* (Chronicles of America Series). His *Pennsylvania: Colony and Commonwealth* is sketchy, impressionistic, and not always accurate (*American Historical Review,*

April 1897); but *The Evolution of the Constitution* is a more carefully constructed piece of work, collating for the first time all the provisions of the colonial charters and the early state constitutions relating to the same subjects (*Ibid.*, October 1897). *The True History of the American Revolution* put in high light "certain facts about the Revolution upon which the best historians and teachers of history have been agreed for twenty years" (*Ibid.*, July 1903). It is not a well-balanced account of that epoch but it did have the merit of being the first popular work which challenged the orthodox interpretation. He reached the high point in his rôle of historian in *The Struggle for American Independence*, with his insistence on the thesis that the American design from the beginning of the struggle was independence as the result of certain political ideas and material interests (*Ibid.*, October 1908).

In addition to his activities as a lawyer and historian Fisher was deeply interested in educational questions. His first published work was *Church Colleges; Their History, Position and Importance with Some Account of the Church Schools*, which appeared in 1895 and was concerned with a survey of Episcopalian educational institutions in the United States. For many years previous to his death he served as the president of the board of trustees of his alma mater, Trinity College, and he was also a trustee of the Institution for the Education of the Blind and of the Library Company of Philadelphia. His volume on *American Education* came out of his endeavor to grapple with certain educational problems in connection with his service of these boards. As a lover of the out-of-doors he spent many winters in Florida, much of the time in a shanty-boat on the Kissimmee River; and in Pennsylvania he finally took up his residence at Essington on the Delaware some miles below Philadelphia and close to the Corinthian Yacht Club of which he was an enthusiastic member. It was at Essington that he died in 1927. He was never married; his attachment to his own family, however, led him to retain possession of the ancestral home, Mount Harmon, on the Sassafras River near Chesapeake Bay.

[L. D. Avery, *A Geneal. of the Ingersoll Family in America, 1629–1925* (1926); *N. Y. Times, Public Ledger* (Phila.), Feb. 23, 1927; *Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; memoir prepared by Wm. M. Meigs (MS).]

L. H. G.

**FISHER, THEODORE WILLIS** (May 29, 1837–Oct. 10, 1914), psychiatrist, was born at Westboro, Mass., the son of Milton Metcalf and Eleanor (Metcalf) Fisher; his family, of English origin, settled in Dedham, Mass., as early as 1638. He was educated at Phillips Academy, Andover, and the Harvard Medical School (M.D. 1861). From 1862 to 1863 he served as surgeon to the 44th Massachusetts Volunteer Militia and at one time was in charge of the Foster General Hospital at New Bern, N. C. Always interested in mental disease, on his return to Boston, he became assistant superintendent of the Boston Lunatic Hospital in 1863, retiring to private practise in 1869. His services, after 1870, were soon in demand and he was made examining physician to the Board of Overseers of Public Institutions in Boston and examiner for the public insane. His reputation as a psychiatrist and alienist grew rapidly and "in the seventies, he was the leading expert in his branch in Boston and was frequently called on to testify as a witness in court" (Channing). In 1872 he published *Plain Talk about Insanity*, which served further to establish his reputation as a psychiatrist; his advice was sought by the state when erecting new hospitals for patients with mental disease. He practised successfully until 1881, when he accepted the position as superintendent of the Boston Lunatic Hospital. Here, until 1895, when he retired on account of his health, he carried out his progressive ideas and established something of a national reputation. During this period he taught in the Harvard Medical School (1884–98). He wrote few, but sound, papers such as *Cerebral Localization* (1889), emphasizing the new field of brain surgery. In 1881 he was called by the defense to testify at the Guiteau trial. Fisher was not allowed to express his full opinion in court; he thought Guiteau insane and therefore irresponsible. After the declaration of sanity, he, as well as other alienists, made a vigorous report on the subject (*Boston Medical and Surgical Journal*, June 29, 1882), criticizing sharply the conduct of the counsel for the defense.

Fisher belonged to many medical societies, including the New England Psychological Society, the Boston Society for Medical Improvement, the Massachusetts Medical Society, and the American Medical Association. He was one of the founders in 1880 of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology and its president in 1893. He married, in 1858, Maria, daughter of Dr. Artemus Brown of Medway, Mass. After the death of his first wife he married again, in 1873, Ella Richardson of Boston. Four children survived him. Dr. Fisher was an active, energetic man, at times thought brusque by those that did not know him well. As an expert in court he was straightforward, truthful, and was never known to be guilty of trickery or under-handedness. Like most experts of his day, he believed it his duty to be a medical attorney and lay stress on

points that would help the side that called him. His chief recreations were fishing and hunting, of which he was very fond. Death came to him after many years of invalidism from a chronic hereditary mental disease long well intrenched in his family. Although he knew the fatal nature of the malady, he bore himself with exceptional bravery, as was consistent with his character.

[W. Channing and others in *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.*, Jan. 21, 1915, CLXXII, 117; *Medic. & Surgic. Hist. of the War of the Rebellion* (1888), pt. III, vol. I, p. 555; *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, Dec. 5, 1914; T. F. Harrington, *The Harvard Medical School* (1905), III, 1503; P. A. Fisher, *The Fisher Genealogy* (1898); *Boston Transcript*, Oct. 12, 1914; letters from intimate friends.] H. R. V.

**FISK, CLINTON BOWEN** (Dec. 8, 1828–July 9, 1890), Prohibitionist, was born on that frontier of western New York to which the newly opened Erie Canal had brought opportunity and hope. Benjamin Bigford Fisk, his father, was a descendant in the fifth generation from William Fiske, who came to Salem, Mass., before 1637. Lydia Aldrich Fisk, his mother, was of Welsh extraction. Benjamin Fisk failed to find his opportunity in New York, and moved his family into Michigan Territory while Clinton was still an infant. Here he died, leaving Clinton to educate himself and grow to manhood in almost "pinching poverty" (J. O. Foster, *Our Standard Bearer*, 1888, 7). In Coldwater, a county town on the Michigan Southern Railroad, Clinton played tuba in the village band, married Jeannette Crippen in 1850, and prospered as a small banker, only to be broken by the panic of 1857. The outbreak of the Civil War found him living in St. Louis, Mo., acquainted with both Lincoln and Grant, and ready to turn to arms. He served first in the home guards and took part in the seizure of Camp Jackson (May 9, 1861); the following summer he recruited and became colonel of the 33rd Missouri Volunteers (J. T. Scharf, *History of St. Louis*, 1883, I, 468). His career as a civilian soldier was distinguished. On Nov. 24, 1862, he became a brigadier-general of volunteers, and before he was mustered out he received his brevet major-generalcy. He fought over Arkansas and Missouri, took part in the campaign against Price, and was on the verge of retirement when the murder of President Lincoln postponed his discharge from the service.

Fisk was detailed to the Freedmen's Bureau in 1865 as assistant commissioner of the bureau of refugees, freedmen, and abandoned lands for Kentucky and Tennessee. It is reported that Johnson defended his appointment with the remark: "Fisk aint a fool, he wont hang everybody" (A. A. Hopkins, *Life*, 1910, 94). He found in this office the most distinctive portion of his career (American Unitarian Association, *From Servitude to Service*, 1905, 201). An ardent Methodist, and imbued with the spirit of missionary activity, he saw in the freedmen an opportunity for social and spiritual service. In an abandoned army barrack at Nashville, where he exercised almost dictatorial power for a time, he opened in 1866 a school for the negroes which developed after his discharge, and which was chartered in 1867 as Fisk University (J. Wooldridge, *History of Nashville*, 1890, 422). The American Missionary Association took Fisk University under its charge, and Fisk, who soon appeared as a prosperous banker in New York, continued to support it. As it developed along the lines of the small college and normal school it was one of the earliest approaches to the large problem of negro education. Fisk's interest in this need of the colored race marked him for broader service. In 1874 President Grant placed him on the Board of Indian Commissioners, of which he was president from 1881 until his death (*Report of the Secretary of the Interior*, 1890, II, 780). The Methodist Book Concern owed much to his services on its governing committee after 1876 and he continually attended the national and international conferences of his church.

Fisk appears in his private life to have been both popular and austere. In the army his aversion to drink and profanity was thrown into contrast by the readiness with which his associates took to both. He was an abstainer, with interest in the movement which placed the national Prohibition party in the field in 1872; but he continued to vote the Republican ticket until the campaign of 1884. In this contest the Prohibition nominee, Gov. John P. St. John of Kansas, polled some 150,000 votes, nearly fifteen times as many as a Prohibition candidate had hitherto received. His total was perhaps due to protest votes of Republicans who would not vote for Blaine and could not bring themselves to vote for Cleveland; but to the Prohibitionists it looked like the dawn of a new era. A wave of temperance emotion swept the country, and two years later the party in New Jersey induced Fisk to become a candidate for governor in that state (*New York Tribune*, May 29, 1886). In 1888, with the renomination of Cleveland a foregone conclusion, and with an impressive Blaine boom suggesting that once more Blaine might be the Republican candidate, the Prohibition party met at Indianapolis on May 30. Before the eastern delegates left home it was agreed that Fisk was to be the candidate (D. L. Colvin, *Prohibition in the United States*, 1926, 187). He was nominated without opposition on the second day of the con-

vention, and received almost 250,000 votes in the following November (E. H. Cherrington, *The Evolution of Prohibition in the United States of America*, 1920, 234). He died two years later in New York.

[The best biography of Fisk is Alphonso A. Hopkins, *The Life of Clinton Bowen Fisk* (1910), which first appeared as a campaign biography in 1888. See also F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896), and the *N. Y. Times*, July 10, 1890.]

F. L. P—n.

**FISK, JAMES** (Oct. 4, 1763–Nov. 17, 1844), lawyer, politician, son of Stephen and Anna (Bradish) Green Fisk, was born at Greenwich, Mass., and traced his descent from Nathan Fiske, who was in Watertown in 1642. His father died when James was two years old. His childhood, as far as is known, was one of privation and limited opportunities. He was self-educated but his speeches show a wide range of information and a thorough command of English. He served over three years in a Massachusetts line regiment of the Revolutionary army and while in Congress once remarked that it had been a valuable experience which he never regretted. After the close of the war he engaged in farming near Greenwich, represented the town for several sessions in the General Court (1791–96), and became a Universalist preacher. On Apr. 27, 1786, he married Priscilla West. In 1798 he moved to Barre, Vt. This region was still in many respects frontier territory and Fisk apparently led the typical life of many of its leaders. He cleared a farm, preached occasional sermons for neighboring congregations, studied law, was admitted to the bar, and soon acquired a position of local influence. As a Jeffersonian Republican he represented Barre in the legislature in 1800–05, 1809–10, and again in 1815. He also served as judge in the Orange County Court for 1802 and 1809.

In 1805 he entered the Ninth Congress and served until the adjournment of the Tenth in 1809. The Federalists of New England still treated Republican representatives with condescension or contempt and Fisk underwent some of these disagreeable experiences. He was a man of real ability, however, and his position as a New England Republican undoubtedly gave him more prominence than he might otherwise have had. One of his early speeches, on Spanish relations (*Annals of Congress*, 9 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 966–73) is an able production. He followed orthodox Jeffersonian doctrines, favored economy, reduction in army and navy, the gunboat program, strict construction, and the rest. He supported the Embargo and was defeated in 1808 as a result. He was reëlected in 1810, however, and served throughout the Twelfth and Thirteenth Congresses. He gave full support to the Madison



administration, voted for war in 1812, denounced Federalist disloyalty, and was one of the most effective leaders of the New England minority, serving on both the ways and means and judiciary committees. He shared the prevalent idea that Canada would be easily conquered and in one of his speeches urged that such a conquest was the safest way to protect commerce. On the other hand, he believed that a navy had proved "the bane of every country which has had anything to do with it" (*Ibid.*, 12 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 969–70).

In 1812 Fisk declined President Madison's offer of a judgeship in the Indiana Territory, and on his retirement from Congress in 1815 served for a year as member of the supreme court of Vermont. In 1817, he was elected to the United States Senate but served for only a few weeks, resigning Jan. 8, 1818, to accept the post of federal collector of revenues for the district of Vermont, serving until 1826. He moved to Swanton in 1819 and lived there until his death. In his later years he appears to have been regarded as a local Nestor with a great fund of reminiscences about the men and events of the Jeffersonian era. Physically he is said to have borne a strong resemblance to Aaron Burr, and to have had the same flashing, penetrating eye.

[W. H. Crockett, *Vermont*, vol. V (1923); *Records of the Gov. and Council of the State of Vt.*, vol. V (1877), pp. 460–61; *Biog. Directory Am. Cong.* (1928); F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896), pp. 156–59, 262–64.]

W. A. R.

**FISK, JAMES** (Apr. 1, 1834–Jan. 7, 1872), capitalist, speculator, was the son of James and Love B. (Ryan) Fisk, of Bennington, and later Brattleboro, Vt. After scanty schooling, he was successively waiter in a hotel, ticket-seller for the Van Amberg circus, and salesman with his father's "traveling emporium," which he later purchased and operated himself, graciously admitting his father to his employ. A boastful, flashy, genial youth, with endless impudence and push, he was soon aspiring to larger spheres. He branched from peddling into a jobbing business for Jordan & Marsh of Boston, entered their wholesale department in 1860, and managed large war contracts for them on a commission basis. Later he went South to buy cotton in the occupied districts for a Boston syndicate, handled extensive purchases for Northern ports, and England, and became wealthy enough to launch into business for himself. His Boston establishment as dry-goods jobber was badly hit in 1865 by post-war deflation, and a brokerage office in Broad Street, New York, was a failure. But his conceit, swaggering energy, and taste for speculation were undiminished. He recouped his fortunes by acting as agent in the sale of Daniel Drew's

Stonington steamboats to a Boston group, returned to New York, and with Drew's support founded in 1866 the brokerage house of Fisk & Belden.

Fisk's rise to fortune was thereafter rapid. Drawn into the "Erie War" between Drew and Vanderbilt, he became a director of the Erie, helped Gould and Drew despoil it, and was an able, self-assertive second in all their schemes. During the battle royal of 1868, when Vanderbilt with the aid of Justice Barnard tried to capture the line, it was he who evaded Barnard's injunction against the issue of more stock by seizing 50,000 ready-signed shares, who used them to break Vanderbilt's attempted corner, thus netting millions for the trio, and who led the famous flight with Gould and Drew to Taylor's Hotel in Jersey City. When Drew and Vanderbilt made peace, Fisk and Gould shared control of the half-wrecked Erie Railroad. They at once embarked on a series of bold and unscrupulous ventures. They increased the Erie stock during the summer of 1868 from $34,265,000 to $57,766,000, where it stood on Oct. 24. Part of the proceeds was used for expansion, the two managers—Fisk as comptroller, Gould as president—leasing other railways, building branches, buying steamboats, rolling-mills, and car shops, and adding new equipment; part was used in reckless speculative forays. They launched a campaign with Drew in the fall of 1868 to make credit tight and raise the price of gold which reacted disastrously upon the nation's business and was felt even in Europe, but which netted them large sums. They also carried out a cornering operation which was so outrageous that Erie stock was stricken from the brokers' board; a raid upon the United States Express Company, whose stock they manipulated at will; and a raid upon the Albany & Susquehanna Railroad which resulted in a pitched battle of gangs of employees near Binghamton. These raids, exasperating public sentiment, culminated in the famous Black Friday attempt to corner the gold market (September 1869), when once more hundreds were ruined and all business suffered a profound shock. The coup disastrously failed, and Fisk flatly repudiated contracts of many millions through his responsible partner Belden. American opinion regarded him and Gould as public enemies, but he flippantly told a Congressional committee that the money had "gone where the woodbine twineth."

Meanwhile Fisk, now a fat, jovial, brassy voluptuary, was leading a life of half-barbaric prodigality. Buying Pike's Opera House at Twenty-third St. and Eighth Avenue he fitted up costly offices there, at the same time producing dramas

Fisk

and French opera bouffe; he leased the Academy of Music and put on grand opera till the expense chilled him; swaggered as "admiral" of the Fall River and the Bristol lines of steamboats, which he controlled; placed on the Hudson its largest ferryboat, the *James Fisk*; bought a summer garden for a restaurant; kept a large stable; and diverted the East by his antics as colonel of the 9th Regiment of the New York militia, a post to which he bought his way in May 1870. His visit with this regiment to Boston on Bunker Hill Day in 1871, when he asked permission to celebrate "divine service" on Boston Common, was one of the best-advertised episodes of his career. His end befitted his flashy life. After keeping numerous mistresses he singled out the actress Josie Mansfield as his favorite, quarreled over her and over business transactions with the dissolute Edward Stokes, was fatally shot by the latter in the Grand Central Hotel on Jan. 6, 1872, and died the next day. A spectacular funeral, with every honor from the Tammany administration and a cortège including the 9th Regiment and a band of two hundred pieces, was accompanied by innumerable denunciatory sermons and editorials. He was survived by his wife, Lucy D. Moore, of Springfield, Mass., whom he married in November 1855.

[F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896); Willoughby Jones, *Jas. Fisk, Jr., The Life of a Green Mountain Boy* (1872); R. H. Fuller, *Jubilee Jim: The Life of Col. Jas. Fisk, Jr.* (1928); Bouck White, *The Book of Daniel Drew* (1910); C. F. and Henry Adams, *Chapters of Erie* (1871); E. H. Mott, *Between the Ocean and the Lakes: The Story of Erie* (1899); *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 8, 1872, and other newspapers of the day.] A. N.

**FISK, WILBUR** (Aug. 31, 1792–Feb. 22, 1839), Methodist clergyman, educator, son of Isaiah and Hannah (Bacon) Fisk, was born in Brattleboro, Vt. To this state his father, a descendant of William Fiske, who came to Salem before 1637, had migrated from Massachusetts, finally settling at Lyndon, Caledonia County. There he achieved little financial success, but proved himself a worthy citizen, frequently representing his town in the legislature, and serving as chief justice of the county court. Resemblances between his career and that of James Fisk (1763–1844) have caused some authors to refer to Wilbur as James's son. From childhood Wilbur was frail, and early became subject to pulmonary hemorrhages from causes which brought his career to an end at the height of his influence. Much farm work and scant schooling characterized his boyhood, but by independent study and some preparation at a school in Peacham, he managed to enter the sophomore class at the University of Vermont in 1812. When its buildings

were turned into barracks the following year he entered Brown University, graduating in 1815. Although reared in the fervid atmosphere of early New England Methodism, he was without deep religious feeling and confessedly fond of amusements and ambitious for worldly honors. With the view to becoming a statesman he entered the law office of Isaac Fletcher at Lyndon, soon leaving it because of financial needs to be tutor in the home of a Col. Ridgely, near Baltimore. The religious training of his childhood prevented him from viewing a worldly career with equanimity, however, and he finally surrendered himself to the call of the ministry. He joined the New England Conference on probation in 1818, being received into full connection in 1820, and ordained elder in 1822. On June 9, 1823, he married Ruth Peck of Providence, R. I.

From his appearance in the ministry church historians date a new epoch in New England Methodism. He is said to have been the first college-bred minister of that denomination in the Eastern states, and he did much to lessen the contempt with which it was viewed in that section because of its indifference to learning. Not only did he lead Methodism of the East in educational enterprises, but his influence was felt throughout the whole church, for his abilities and charm made him respected and beloved everywhere. (See Abel Stevens, *History of The Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States,* 1867, IV, 288.) His pastoral work, including three years as presiding elder in the Vermont district, was brief. In 1825 he was elected principal of Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, Conn., which he had helped to establish, leaving it in 1830 a thriving institution, to become first president of Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., which also he had helped to found, and to the development of which he devoted the remainder of his life, saving it by his wisdom, confidence, and energy from the fate of similar early Methodist institutions. A member of the General Conferences of 1824, 1828, and 1832, he was active in behalf of increased educational facilities, and his advocacy in his own Conference of conference educational societies was the beginning of a movement which culminated in the formation of the Methodist Board of Education. In 1828 he was elected bishop of the Methodist Church in Canada, which office he declined partly because of poor health, but particularly because he was devoted to his work in New England. He was an early advocate of temperance and the formation of temperance societies; a promoter of missions; an opponent of the Abolitionists, though opposed to slavery; an advocate of colonization; and a defender of Methodist doctrines in a number of articles and published sermons. In 1835 Wesleyan sent him to Europe for the benefit of his health and to study educational institutions. While there the General Conference of 1836 elected him bishop, but upon his return he declined this honor. The results of his trip are incorporated in *Travels in Europe* (1838). Upon his return the disease from which he had so long suffered progressed rapidly. Death came to him in his forty-seventh year, and he was buried in the College Cemetery, Middletown.

[F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896); Jos. Holdich, *The Life of Willbur Fisk* (1856); Geo. Prentice, *Wilbur Fisk* (1890); Wm. B. Sprague, *Annals Am. Pulpit,* vol. VII (1859); Daniel D. Whedon, "Tribute to the Memory of President Fisk," *The Meth. Mag. and Quart. Rev.,* Oct. 1839; B. C. Steiner, *Hist. of Educ. in Conn.* (1893); and standard histories of Methodism.]

H. E. S.



**FISKE, AMOS KIDDER** (May 12, 1842–Sept. 18, 1921), editor, author, was born in Whitefield, N. H., the son of Henry and Lucinda (Keyes) Fiske. His father's ancestors came to Massachusetts from England about the middle of the seventeenth century. During his childhood, it was necessary for him to work both on his parents' farm and in a cotton-mill in a near-by village. Left an orphan at sixteen, he continued working as a factory hand, but determined to set aside enough money to launch him on his way through school. During 1860–61 he attended the Appleton Academy at New Ipswich, and in 1862, still having to earn his livelihood, he entered Harvard. He was graduated in 1866, with the highest honors. Soon afterward he went to New York. There he taught for a year, and then studied law for a year. One of the lawyers in the office where he studied was George Ticknor Curtis, who was busy at that time writing his life of Daniel Webster. Young Fiske, it seems, had a large hand in the more detailed aspects of that biography but no mention of him occurs in the preface. In 1867, he began his fifteen years' connection with the *Annual Cyclopædia.* In 1870, he was married to Caroline Child of Cambridge, sister of Francis J. Child [*q.v.*] of Harvard. From 1874 to 1877 he was an editor of the *Boston Globe,* but with that exception, he was nearly all of the time from 1869 to 1919 on the editorial staff of various New York newspapers—notably with the *Times,* 1869–71, 1878–97, and with the *Journal of Commerce,* 1902–19. In 1888 when his son, Philip Sidney, was old enough to enter Harvard, his family removed to Cambridge. His two daughters went to Radcliffe. From 1890 to 1914 he published nine books. The first of these, *Midnight Talks at the Club,* is a series of genial, wise

essays on topics of contemporary interest. *Beyond the Bourne* (1891) is a spiritualist story. Though he published *The Story of the Philippines* in 1898, and *The West Indies* in 1899, his interest during the last several decades of his life was divided chiefly between economic subjects and subjects having to do with Hebrew folk-lore. In *Jewish Scriptures* (1896), *The Myths of Israel* (1897), and *The Great Epic of Israel* (1911), he assumes that the Old Testament is not the "specially inspired word of God" (*Great Epic*, p. 4), but he exhibits great admiration for it not only as a curious document but as a source of beauty and wisdom; and he is avowedly bent on encouraging in his day an acquaintance with the Bible. *The Modern Bank* (1904) is almost entirely descriptive, but *Honest Business* (1914) is an entertaining, non-technical record of the author's conclusions about the economic structure of society—feelings conservative in general, but controlled always by an instinct for fairness. For the last year and a half of his life he was in delicate health, living in Cambridge at the home of his two daughters.

[F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896); Harvard Univ. *Quin. Cat.* (1910); *Who's Who in America*, 1920–21; *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 22, 1921; *N. Y. Jour. of Commerce*, Sept. 23, 1921.] J. D. W.

**FISKE, DANIEL WILLARD** (Nov. 11, 1831–Sept. 17, 1904), editor, librarian, book-collector, born in Ellisburg, N. Y., was the son of Daniel Haven and Caroline (Willard) Fiske, and traced his descent from Nathan Fiske, who was in Watertown, Mass., in 1642. Of his parents he himself wrote in 1857: "My father is from the most undoubted Puritan stock of Massachusetts, and was born there. . . . My mother is from Vermont, and among the hills of this latter state I spent some of the pleasantest hours of my boyhood." He attended Cazenovia Seminary and Hamilton College, but left the latter in his second year to go abroad to study the Scandinavian languages. After two years in Copenhagen and at the University of Upsala, Sweden, he returned to New York in 1852, taking a place in the Astor Library, where he remained until 1859. The following year he was general secretary of the American Geographical Society. Meanwhile from 1857 to 1860, he edited with Paul Morphy the newly founded *American Chess Monthly*. In Copenhagen Fiske had been connected with the United States legation; in 1861 he was appointed attaché to the legation in Vienna. Upon his return to the United States he spent two years (1863–65) with the *Syracuse Daily Journal*, later became a book-dealer in Syracuse, and in 1867 joined the staff of the *Hartford Courant*. While

Fiske

traveling abroad the next year he was called to be librarian and professor of North-European languages at Cornell University. Here his constructive services in the development of the institution were notable. In 1880 he married Jennie McGraw of Ithaca. At her death in 1881 he inherited a large fortune. Two years later he severed his connection with the university and passed the remaining years of his life in Europe. From 1883 to 1886 he rented the Villa Forini in the eastern quarter of Florence, a mansion previously occupied by the American minister, George P. Marsh. In 1892 he purchased and remodeled the Villa Landor, well above Florence, and just under Fiesole. In these attractive and historic villas he dispensed a generous but unassuming hospitality and devoted himself to intellectual pursuits.

The scope of Fiske's interests is suggested by his literary activities and his honorary connections. He was an early member of the National Institute of Arts and Letters, an honorary member of the National Icelandic Literary Society, and corresponding member of the Royal Society of Northern Antiquities, Copenhagen. He was given special distinction in 1892 by King Humbert I of Italy, and in 1902 by Christian IX of Denmark, chiefly in recognition of the wide extent of his literary achievements. He was an assiduous collector of rare and perfect book collections, a romantic crusader for a reformed and modernized Egyptian alphabet, a zealous propagandist for the game of chess, and a lifelong devotee to the advancement of Icelandic civilization. His writings were numerous and varied, including much admirable verse, reprints from which were published in the three volumes of the *Memorials* (*post*). He died in 1904 and was interred by the side of his wife in the memorial chapel which was constructed by the trustees of Cornell in the university grounds. In addition to his valuable book collections which he presented to Cornell, relating to Dante, Petrarch, Icelandic history and literature, and the Rhæto-Romanic language, he gave a fund of more than half a million dollars for the uses and purposes of the library.

[The record of Fiske's life may be found in the two following works by his literary executor, Horatio S. White: *Memorials of Willard Fiske* (3 vols., 1920–22); *Willard Fiske, Life and Correspondence* (1925). See also *Papers of the Bibliog. Soc. of America*, vol. XII, July–Oct. 1918 (Willard Fiske Memorial), which includes a bibliography of Fiske's writings on Iceland, a list of the Cornell University Library publications on Icelandic literature, on the Fiske Foundation, and a record of the catalogues of the various collections given by Fiske to the university library.] H. S. W.

**FISKE, FIDELIA** (May 1, 1816–July 26, 1864), missionary to the Nestorians, was a

descendant of William Fiske who came to Salem, Mass., from the County of Suffolk, England, before 1637, later settling in Wenham; and the daughter of Rufus and Hannah (Woodward) Fiske. She was born on a hill-top farm in Shelburne, Mass., where in 1761 her great-grandfather, Ebenezer Fiske, Jr., had established himself. Her parents were plain, New England country folk, hard-working, intelligent, and religious. From childhood her own religious tendencies were pronounced, and her eagerness to read whatever she could lay her hand on was so keen that by the time she was eight years old she had perused with interest, if not with full understanding, Cotton Mather's *Magnalia,* and had twice read through Timothy Dwight's *Theology.* She attended district school, and at seventeen became a district school teacher, in which occupation she continued for a period of six years, broken by brief terms of study at Franklin Academy, Shelburne Falls, and at a select school in Conway. In 1839 she entered Mount Holyoke Seminary, graduating in 1842, and immediately becoming an instructor in that institution. The intense religious and missionary zeal of the principal, Mary Lyon [*q.v.*], strengthened in Fidelia Fiske an early predilection for Christian service abroad, so that when in 1843 Rev. Justin Perkins [*q.v.*], who had founded a mission among the Nestorians a few years before, came to Mount Holyoke in search of teachers, she promptly volunteered and was accepted.

Under authorization of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions she sailed from Boston Mar. 1, 1843, and arrived in Oroomiah (Urumiah) in June of that year. Here she commenced a work which is credited with having been a potent factor in improving the condition of women in Persia, and displayed a spirit which has given her a place among those who in missionary annals are held up as ensamples. The story of her service is the story of the first fifteen years of the notable Oroomiah Seminary, a boarding school for girls, of which she was practically the founder. While successful in establishing this institution in the face of much native opposition and endless difficulties, she did much by personal ministrations and evangelistic labors to instruct and uplift women and children wherever she could reach them. She had gone to Persia with the expectation of remaining until death, but ill-health forced her to return in July 1858. Home again, she addressed missionary meetings and was a kind of chaplain to Mount Holyoke Seminary. An invitation to become principal she declined in the hope that she would be able to return to Persia, but her constitution was too seriously impaired, and death came to her at Shelburne in her forty-ninth year. She had been able, however, to prepare, *Memorial, Twenty-fifth Anniversary of Mount Holyoke Female Seminary* (1862), and at the time of her death was at work upon *Recollections of Mary Lyon,* which was published in 1866. She also furnished the material for Thomas Laurie's *Woman and Her Saviour in Persia* (1863), which contains much information about her work.

[D. T. Fiske, *The Cross and the Crown, or Faith Working by Love as Exemplified in the Life of Fidelia Fiske* (1868); Harriet B. Genung, *The Story of Fidelia Fiske* (1907); *Missionary Herald,* Sept., Nov., 1864.]

H. E. S.

**FISKE, GEORGE CONVERSE** (Feb. 28, 1872–Jan. 8, 1927) classicist, educator, was born at Roxbury Highlands, Mass., the eldest son of George Alfred and Kate (Washburn) Fiske. The greater part of his youth was spent at Ashmont, Dorchester, Mass., and from 1884 to 1890 he prepared for college at the Boston Latin School, of which his father was head master. As a student at Harvard he displayed that ability, energy, and thoroughness which stamped indelibly his professional career, for he worked his way through college and was graduated in 1894 with honors. He continued his training in the Harvard graduate school where he received the degrees of M.A. in 1897 and Ph.D. in 1900. After a summer spent in England and northern Germany he taught Latin and Greek in Belmont and was instructor in Greek at Phillips Andover Academy until Jan. 1, 1901, when he was appointed instructor in Latin at the University of Wisconsin. He became an assistant professor in 1902, associate professor in 1907, and professor in 1924. He was married on Dec. 26, 1908, to Augustine Louise Elleau at Newark, N. J.

His chosen fields of research were ancient religion, satire, and rhetorical theory. His most notable contribution to classical studies was his *Lucilius and Horace,* published by the University of Wisconsin in 1920, which won for him in this country and in Europe recognition as one of the leading authorities on Roman satire. The following articles bear witness to his scholarly investigations: "Notes on the Worship of the Roman Emperors in Spain" (*Harvard Studies in Classical Philology,* vol. XI, 1900, pp. 101–39); "The Politics of the Patrician Claudii" (*Ibid.,* vol. XIII, 1902, pp. 1–59); "Lucilius, the *Ars Poetica* of Horace, and Persius" (*Ibid.,* vol. XXIV, 1913, pp. 1–36); "Cicero's *Orator* and Horace's *Ars Poetica*" (*Ibid.,* vol. XXXV, 1924, pp. 1–74, written in collaboration with Mary A. Grant); "Lucilius and Persius" (*Transactions of the American Philological Association,* vol. XL,

1909, pp. 121–50); "The Plain Style in the Scipionic Circle" (*Classical Studies in Honor of Charles Forster Smith*, 1919, Wisconsin Studies in Language and Literature, No. 3), pp. 62–105; and "Augustus and the Religion of Reconstruction" (*Ibid.*, 2 ser., no. 15, 1922, pp. 111–33). During the World War he acted as secretary of the university committee on war publications, and was the author of a number of articles, among which was one on the "Violation of the Neutrality of Belgium" (reprinted in the *War Book of the University of Wisconsin*). At the time of his death he had just completed an article on "Cicero's *De Oratore* and Horace's *Ars Poetica*" and was engaged in writing a book on Greek and Roman rhetoric for the series Our Debt to Greece and Rome. There was much of the grandeur of the Roman Cato in Fiske's absolute honesty, his uncompromising and lofty ideals, and his courage in the face of misfortune; but above all his friends and acquaintances experienced and appreciated his sympathy and help, ever at their command. As senior editor of the *Classical Bulletin* his editorials were of real service and inspiration to the teachers of Latin in the state of Wisconsin. He was a frequent visitor at the high schools, and he took a keen interest and active part in the classical meetings and in the educational policies of the university, where he was an advocate of high standards and of sound methods of education.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1926–27; *Latin Bull. of the Univ. of Wis.*, Jan. 1927; the *Nation*, Feb. 16, 1927; the *Classical Jour.*, Mar. 1927; *Classical Philol.*, July 1927; the *Harvard Grads.' Mag.*, Mar. 1927; *Harvard Coll. Class of 1894*, 1894–1919.] K.S.

**FISKE, HALEY** (Mar. 18, 1852–Mar. 3, 1929), insurance official, lawyer, was born at New Brunswick, N. J., a son of William Henry and Sarah Ann (Blakeney) Fiske, and a brother of Stephen Fiske [*q.v.*]. His grandfather, Haley Fiske, had established an iron-foundry at New Brunswick, which was continued by his sons until after the Civil War. Fiske attended a private school, was matriculated at Rutgers College, and graduated B.A. in 1871. He then worked as a reporter on local newspapers, studied law, and within two years became a clerk in the law office of Arnoux, Ritch & Woodford, of New York. The firm was counsel for the Metropolitan Life Insurance Company and after Fiske's admission to the New York bar he was assigned to take charge of that company's litigation. Having shown marked ability as a trial lawyer, he was made a member of the law firm. Meanwhile he acquired, through his contact with the Metropolitan's affairs, so broad a knowledge of the insurance field that in 1891, when John R. Hegeman

Fiske

became president of the company, he brought about the election of Fiske as a vice-president. At that time the Metropolitan was a comparatively small insurance company, with about $258,000,000 of insurance in force and from $10,000,000 to $11,000,000 of annual premium. It was a stock company with a capital of $2,000,000 and dividends limited to 7 per cent. In 1902, largely as the result of Fiske's advocacy, the state legislature enacted a law which placed the actual control of the company in the hands of the policyholders. It was provided that all policyholders whose insurance had been in force for a year or more might vote for directors on condition that two-thirds of the directors elected should collectively own a majority of the capital stock. By 1914 the company's surplus had reached $40,000,000, while the assets totaled $500,000,000. Meanwhile Fiske had popularized and expanded the ordinary life business through the payment of bonuses to the insured. In 1915 the company was completely mutualized. The stockholders having been paid off, the election of officers was conferred on the policyholders alone.

A national health campaign that may fairly be characterized as statesmanlike was initiated by the company in 1909, when Fiske, because of President Hegeman's illness, was virtually the executive head of the organization. The problem was to conserve the health of the workingmen and their families who made up almost 10,000,000 of the policyholders. An army of visiting nurses was mobilized and set to work in the industrial centers of the nation. As a result, within nine years the company's mortality rate was reduced one-fifth. By 1921 more than 2,000,000 individuals had benefited from the nursing in their homes. The death rate from tuberculosis, typhoid, and acute contagious diseases was lowered for Metropolitan policyholders more rapidly than for the population in general. The actual money saving to the company was estimated at $3,500,000 a year. One outcome of Fiske's personal interest in health promotion was the company's investment of $7,500,000 in New York apartment houses to rent at a maximum of nine dollars a room together with loans on housing developments elsewhere (Haley Fiske, "Home—$9 a Room," in *Collier's*, Aug. 14, 1926). On the death of Hegeman, Fiske succeeded to the presidency of the Metropolitan in 1919. The company was already recognized as the largest financial institution in the world. Fiske himself had been identified with the policies which caused its rapid expansion and with others which made it a factor of growing importance in relation to public welfare, especially in American industrial centers.

All those policies were vigorously upheld during the ten years of his presidency. At the time of his sudden death, the company had in force about seventeen and one-half per cent of all life insurance reported, involving more than 42,000,000 policies.

Throughout his life Fiske gave the impression of unusual physical vigor. After he was seventy he occasionally played tennis. He was a leading layman of the Anglo-Catholic wing of the Protestant Episcopal Church, contributed liberally to the various church enterprises, notably the building of the Cathedral of St. John the Divine, and was versed in theology and church history. He was twice married: first, on Jan. 10, 1878, to Mary G. Mulford who died in 1886 and second, on Apr. 27, 1887, to Marione Cowles Cushman, who survived him. He left four daughters and two sons.

[F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896); *N. Y. Times*, Mar. 4, 1929; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; "The Metropolitan as a Public Institution," in the *Eastern Underwriter*, Apr. 8, 1921; and the *Insurance Field* (Louisville, Ky.), Mar. 8, 1929.] W. B. S—w.

**FISKE, JOHN** (Apr. 11, 1744–Sept. 28, 1797), naval commander, merchant capitalist, militia officer, traced his descent from John Fiske, who was in New England in 1637. Born at Salem, Mass., he was the son of Anna Gerrish Fiske and the Rev. Samuel Fiske, a talented divine whose usefulness was prematurely ended by quarrels with his parishioners. After a common-school education the son went to sea, forged ahead rapidly, and when barely twenty-one he was master of a brigantine voyaging to Spain. At the outbreak of the Revolution, his affairs were prospering, and he was well liked. In 1775 he acted as member of the Salem committee of safety and correspondence. In the next year, after a state navy had been authorized by the Massachusetts General Court, Fiske was commissioned captain of the brigantine *Tyrannicide* (Apr. 20). He was not the first naval officer of the state to receive a commission, despite Bentley's assertion, for that of Capt. Jeremiah O'Brien bore the date of Mar. 15, 1776. Fiske put to sea in July, captured a British prize four days after sailing, and in August he brought in three more. Other cruises followed. From February till October 1777, Fiske commanded the brigantine *Massachusetts*, then in March, by order of the board of war, Captains Fiske, Haraden, and Clouston sailed to harass enemy shipping off the coasts of western Europe. It was a notable cruise in the annals of the state navy. Many prizes fell into their hands some of which escaped, but Fiske took eight vessels. He put in at Marblehead late in July, but

Fiske

was soon at sea again, watching for English ships returning from the West Indies. He captured some prizes and returned to Salem in mid-October. Meantime, his professional honor having been assailed, an investigation of the charges made against him was made and he received a public vindication. In 1778 he was recommended for another command, and was offered the *Hazard*, but he refused it, alleging that it was not formidable enough.

Fiske now set up as a merchant, and his ventures proved fortunate till near the end of his life. He continued to buy ships, and fitted them out for voyages to the Mediterranean and to the East and West Indies. In 1791 he was elected master of the Salem Marine Society and he then urged Congress to establish aids to navigation on the Massachusetts coast (*Laws of the Salem Marine Society*, 60–62, 131). After the war he filled a few minor civic offices acceptably. In 1792 he attained the rank of major-general in the state militia, and during his term of service he greatly strengthened its morale. Capt. Fiske was a bluff, hearty man, vehement but reasonable and honest. He was generous to clerks and captains, and his reputation for hospitality was justly celebrated. In 1766 he married Lydia Phippen and had by her several children. She died in 1782. His second wife, Martha Lee Hibbert, whom he married in 1783, died in 1785 and the following year he married Sarah Wendell Gerry who, with three children by his first wife, survived his death.

[Wm. Bentley, *Funeral Discourse* (1797); *The Diary of Wm. Bentley* (1905–11); *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*; C. O. Paullin, *The Navy of the Am. Revolution* (1906); G. W. Allen, *A Naval Hist. of the Am. Revolution* (1913); *Mass. Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War* (1896–1907); *Vital Records of Salem* (1916–25), which gives Apr. 11, 1744, as date of birth; *Laws of the Salem Marine Soc.* (1914); J. B. Felt, *Annals of Salem* (1827); F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896).] F. M—d.

**FISKE, JOHN** (Mar. 30, 1842–July 4, 1901), philosopher, historian, only child of Edmund Brewster and Mary Fisk (Bound) Green, was born at Hartford, Conn., and was baptized Edmund Fisk. His original legal name was thus Edmund Fisk Green, which was changed by act of legislature in 1855 to John Fisk, the final *e* being added five years later without legal action. The Greens were of New Jersey Quaker ancestry. Little is known of them except that the child's grandfather was a substantial merchant in Philadelphia. The Bounds and Fisks were of English Puritan descent, branches of both families, after having been for some generations in Massachusetts, having established themselves in Middletown, Conn. There, subsequent to his graduation from Wesleyan University, Edmund

Green became a lawyer and married Mary Bound, Sept. 15, 1840. Green was in turn a journalist in Hartford, private secretary to Henry Clay in Washington, and owner and editor of a paper in Panama, where he died in 1852. During the later years of the marriage, his wife taught school in New York and Newark, and the child spent most of his time with his grandparents in Middletown. On his mother's second marriage, to Edwin Wallace Stoughton, a well-to-do New York lawyer, later United States minister to Russia, the son elected to remain at the Fisk home in Middletown, and it was then that he took the name of his great-grandfather on his mother's side.

The boy was extremely precocious, and at eight years of age wrote that he had then read about two hundred volumes, mostly on philosophy, chemistry, astronomy, grammar, mathematics, and "miscellaneous things," including some in Spanish. Throughout life the range and variety of his linguistic attainments were extraordinary, and when not yet twenty he could read German, French, Spanish, Italian, Portuguese, Latin, Greek, and Anglo-Saxon, and, less readily, Dutch, Danish, Swedish, Hebrew, Chaldee, and Sanskrit, while he had also "dipped into" Zend, Gothic, Wallachian and Provencal (Clark, *post*, I, 254).

At first he attended private schools in Middletown, and from 1855 to 1857, Betts Academy, Stamford, Conn. Returning to Middletown, he studied for two years under the Rev. H. M. Colton as tutor, preparing for Yale. He preferred Harvard, however, with its more liberal atmosphere, and after a year of study by himself and under a tutor at Cambridge, he entered the sophomore class in 1860. His wide reading in science and philosophy had already led him to heterodox opinions in religion, with the social results inevitable in a small New England town of that period. He did not fare much better at Harvard, where through an accidental discovery in a bookshop, he became an enthusiastic disciple of Herbert Spencer, whose long series of volumes were then in course of publication and to which Fiske at once subscribed. His vast reading—the boy studied from twelve to sixteen hours daily—bore important fruit even before graduation. Two articles, one pointing out fallacies in Buckle's *History of Civilization in England,* published in his senior year in the *North American Review,* clearly aligned him with the most advanced thinkers of the day on evolution. His views brought him into conflict with the Harvard authorities, who warned him of expulsion, should he attempt to spread his opinions. In spite of some difficulties, however, he received his degree of B.A. in 1863.

Fiske

The Civil War, then raging, had left him utterly cold at first; and although later he became interested, he does not seem to have considered taking a part in the great conflict. Before graduation he had become engaged to Abby Morgan Brooks, daughter of Aaron Brooks, of Petersham, Mass., to whom he was married Sept. 6, 1864. His mother, who was now well-to-do, seems to have been willing to assist him financially; but his marriage made the choice of a career imperative. That choice was between law and teaching, but he found the latter closed to him, at least at Harvard, on account of his open advocacy of the doctrine of evolution. In July 1864 he passed his examination for the bar, without formal study at the law school, and was admitted, taking his degree of LL.B. the following year. Although he started to practise in Boston, he had few clients, and his heart was not in his work. Some months before his marriage he had begun a correspondence with Spencer, and philosophical interests now dominated him. With the support of both his own and his wife's family, he decided to trust solely to writing for his living, taking a house in Cambridge, which was thenceforth to remain his home. The situation at Harvard had now altered. After a conflict between the reactionary and progressive factions, in which Fiske had taken part by articles in the *Atlantic Monthly,* and the *Nation,* Charles W. Eliot had been elected president. As one direct result of this invigorating change, Fiske was asked to deliver a course of lectures in 1869 on "The Positive Philosophy." During the next three years, although still encountering much opposition, he lectured on both philosophy and history, giving public courses in Boston also. In 1872 he was appointed assistant librarian of the college at a salary of $2,500 a year, and soon after published his first important volume, *Myths and Myth-Makers.* The following year, 1873, owing to the generosity of a friend who gave him $1,000 to continue his studies in Europe, and a year's leave granted him by Harvard, he was able to go abroad. In England, where his writings had already made him known, he met Spencer, Darwin, Huxley, Lewes, Clifford, Tyndall, and others, and while in London wrote his two volumes on *The Outlines of Cosmic Philosophy* (1874). After some months on the Continent he returned to Cambridge.

In 1879, having resigned as librarian at Harvard, he delivered a course of lectures on American history at the Old South Church, and, in the autumn of the same year, a similar course in London with great success. He now entered upon a life career as perhaps the most popular lecturer

on history America has ever known. For some years, however, his chief interest still centered in science and philosophy, as is evidenced in part by the list of his published volumes: *The Unseen World* (1876), *Darwinism and Other Essays* (1879), *Excursions of an Evolutionist* (1884), *The Destiny of Man Viewed in the Light of his Origin* (1884), *The Idea of God as Affected by Modern Knowledge* (1886).

About this time he turned from philosophy to history as a main preoccupation, due, according to some, to financial need, and, according to others, to his wish to study America from the standpoint of an evolutionist. As early as 1880 he had delivered a course of lectures before the Royal Institution of Great Britain in London, many times repeated in the United States, and in 1885 he published these under the title of *American Political Ideas Viewed from the Standpoint of Universal History.* The following year he became one of the editors of *Appletons' Cyclopædia of American Biography,* wrote six articles for the *Atlantic Monthly,* and lectured extensively. Fiske loved comfort and an ample scale of living, and he had to provide for six children. He undertook much heavy work, therefore, mainly for its financial return. That under the circumstances his books maintained their easy and flowing style is somewhat remarkable. These appeared in rapid succession in his new historical field: *The Critical Period of American History, 1783–89* (1888); *The Beginnings of New England* (1889); *The War of Independence* (1889); *Civil Government in the United States* (1890); *The American Revolution* (2 vols., 1891); *The Discovery of America* (2 vols., 1892); *A History of the United States for Schools* (1894); *Old Virginia and her Neighbors* (2 vols., 1897); *Dutch and Quaker Colonies* (2 vols., 1899). There also appeared in the last years of his life or soon after his death, several volumes dealing with philosophy and history, including: *The Origin of Evil* (1899); *A Century of Science and Other Essays* (1899); *Through Nature to God* (1899); and *Life Everlasting* (1901), in one group; and in the other, *The Mississippi Valley in the Civil War* (1900); *Essays, Historical and Literary* (2 vols., 1902); *New France and New England* (1902); *How the United States became a Nation* (1904). His only biographical work on a large scale was his life of *Edward Livingston Youmans, Interpreter of Science for the People* (1894). Three other titles indicate his varied interests: *Tobacco and Alcohol* (1869), *History of English Literature, abridged from Taine* (1872), and the article on Schubert in the *Cyclopædia of Music.* He was a devoted music lover, an excellent performer, and an occasional composer.

In his later years, Fiske made two more visits to England and traveled extensively through the United States, including Alaska. He had delivered lectures at Washington University, St. Louis, since 1881, and had been professor of American history there since 1884, although he continued to reside at Cambridge. As the years passed he failed to receive the Harvard professorship which would have gratified him. The reason may possibly be found in a shift from the former opposition to Fiske as an evolutionist to a slight mistrust of him as a scholar. In June 1894, however, he received signal honors: the degree of Litt.D., from the University of Pennsylvania, and that of LL.D., from Harvard University. Shortly before his death, Yale University had signified its intention of giving him an LL.D., and he had been asked to represent the New World and to deliver an address at the millennial celebration in honor of King Alfred at Winchester, England, but his death intervened. He had long been forcing himself at a rate of production too great for any man. Constant appearance on the lecture platform, and the traveling this involved, overtaxed him. Never given to sports or exercise, his tendency to corpulency had so grown upon him that he had come to weigh over three hundred pounds. On July 4, 1901, worn by overwork and exhausted by the heat, he died at Gloucester, Mass. He was survived by his widow and five children, and was buried at Petersham, where he had long been in the habit of spending the summer.

It has been said of him that "philosophers were inclined to think of him at his best as an historian, and historians to urge that he was primarily a philosopher" (*Nation,* Jan. 24, 1918). The truth is that he was neither a profound scholar nor an original thinker in either domain. He first came before the public as a lucid, brilliant, and courageous defender of the new doctrine of evolution. Darwin, Spencer, and Huxley all claimed him as no mean ally in the fight for scientific truth. He was the chief exponent of the new ideas in America, and, now that the bitterness of that fight has largely been forgotten, it is easy to belittle the importance of the service he rendered to American thought. Although in science, as in history, he relied upon others and did no original research, the lucidity and charm of his style made him unrivaled as a popularizer. In science he contributed only one original suggestion, that of the importance of the long and helpless childhood of the human infant in influencing the psychological complex of the family as a social unit.

Even in that he was forestalled two thousand years ago by Anaximander, but the idea was a genuine contribution as made by Fiske. In tracing the development of his thought, allowance must be made for the much stronger hold which religious ideas and emotions had upon him than upon the English leaders; the various stages of his writing show the struggle to harmonize these with the scientific doctrines which he also defended. He could never bring himself to abandon what he felt to be man's deepest interests—his religious beliefs and ideals—and much of his popular success was probably due to this very effort to combine two conflicting attitudes, even though this involved, as one critic averred, the use of the "block system" in his mind (W. D. Howells, *post*).

In the historical field, Fiske was solely a popularizer, and in spite of his strong adhesion to evolution his historical writing was not, as has so often been claimed, philosophical. Far from making any original contribution of material or interpretation, he merely narrated conspicuous facts, and he did that not authoritatively, but with a charm of style rare among American historians. He never got below the surface, and his reliance upon secondary works not seldom involved him in errors of fact. In spite of such criticisms, however, Fiske was one of the most important intellectual influences in America in the last quarter of the nineteenth century. He was probably the most admirably fitted among all his contemporaries to lead the fight for evolution among his countrymen; and the charm of his historical writings and lectures not only instilled an interest in the subject into a vast number of people but was the prime cause of not a few of the distinguished scholars of to-day first turning to history as their life-work.

[J. S. Clark, *The Life and Letters of John Fiske* (1917); reviewed in the *Nation*, Jan. 24, 1918; T. S. Perry, *John Fiske* (1906); Josiah Royce, "John Fiske," the *Unpopular Rev.*, July, Sept. 1918; Mrs. S. Van Rensselaer, "Mr. Fiske and the Hist. of N. Y.," *North Am. Rev.*, July 1901; W. D. Howells, "John Fiske," *Harper's Weekly*, July 20, 1901; G. L. Beer, "John Fiske," the *Critic*, Aug. 1901; A. McF. Davis, "John Fiske," *Proc. Am. Acad. of Arts and Sci.*, Aug. 1902; F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896).]

J. T. A.

**FISKE, STEPHEN RYDER** (Nov. 22, 1840–Apr. 27, 1916), journalist, theatrical manager, was born at New Brunswick, N. J. He was the son of William Henry and Sarah Ann (Blakeney) Fiske, the brother of Haley Fiske [*q.v.*], and a descendant of William Fiske, who came to Salem, Mass., before 1637. Before he was twelve he was being paid for his newspaper contributions and at fourteen he was editing a small paper. He entered Rutgers College in 1858 but upon the



appearance, some two years later, of the opening chapters of a novel satirizing the professors and their methods, he was duly asked to resign. Upon leaving college he went to New York where he became connected with the *New York Herald* which he served as editorial writer, special correspondent, and war correspondent during the Civil War. As the *Herald's* special correspondent, he accompanied the Japanese princes, the Prince of Wales (later King Edward VII), and President Lincoln on tours of the United States. Although many stories are told of the ingenuity exercised by newspapermen in attempting to file dispatches ahead of those of rival correspondents, one of the best of these records how Fiske telegraphed passages from the Bible from Niagara Falls to New York to hold the wires from competitors. He was recalled from the seat of war to become dramatic critic of the *Herald* in 1862. He continued as critic until 1866 when he sailed for England on the yacht *Henrietta* in the first Atlantic yacht race.

Fiske's rapidly moving career next took him to Italy where he was with Garibaldi at Rome during the revolution, and thence to London where he became manager of St. James's Theatre and the Royal English Opera Company, and engaged in several journalistic projects. In 1873 he produced at St. James's a version of Sardou's play, *Rabagas*, written by himself, with Charles Wyndham playing the title-rôle. Upon his return to the United States, he took over the management of the Fifth Avenue Theatre, New York, Oct. 15, 1877, succeeding Augustin Daly. There Mary Anderson and Madame Modjeska made their New York débuts, the former on Nov. 12, 1877. Edwin Booth and Joseph Jefferson played under his management in 1878. Following his retirement as manager of the theatre in January 1879, Fiske founded the *New York Dramatic Mirror* and took an important part in the establishment of the Actors' Fund. After giving up control of the *Mirror*, he devoted several years to the writing of plays. During the last ten years of his life, he was connected with *The Sports of the Times* (originally *The Spirit of the Times*) and was regarded as the dean of active dramatic critics. His better known plays included: *Corporal Cartouche*; *Martin Chuzzlewit* (adapted from Dickens's novel); *My Noble Son-in-law*; and *Robert Rabagas*. He was also a writer of sketches and stories some of which he published, as *English Photographs, by an American* (London, 1869); *Off-hand Portraits of Prominent New Yorkers* (1884); *Holiday Stories* (1891); and *Paddy from Cork, and Other Stories* (1891).

[F. C. Pierce, *Fiske and Fisk Family* (1896); *Who's*

*Who in Music and Drama*, 1914; *Who's Who in the Theatre*, 1912; *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; the *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 28, 1916; the *N. Y. Dramatic News*, May 6, 1916.]

D. W. M.

**FITCH, ASA** (Feb. 24, 1809–Apr. 8, 1879), entomologist, the son of Asa Fitch, M.D., and Abigail (Martin) Fitch, was the descendant of a long line of colonial ancestors (on the paternal side from the Brewsters of Plymouth). His father was prominent in the medical profession and in various positions of public trust. The son was born at Fitch's Point, Salem, N. Y., passed his boyhood on a farm, and attended the academy at Salem. He began a diary shortly after the age of twelve, which he continued for the rest of his life. He was attracted first to botany, and collected and drew flowers and plants. In 1826 he entered the Rensselaer School at Troy (later the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute). Here he followed his natural-history bent and took up zoölogy, quickly concentrating on entomology. After graduation, upon his father's advice, he began the study of medicine, graduating at the Vermont Academy of Medicine at Castleton in 1829, afterwards working at the Rutgers Medical College in New York City, and finally being admitted to practise from the office of Dr. March of Albany. All through his medical studies he continued work in entomology; lacking books, he copied by hand from the various entomological works which he found in libraries in the different towns in which he studied. In 1830 he became assistant professor of natural history in the Rensselaer Institute, and accompanied an expedition from the school to Lake Erie in the same year. He began the practise of medicine in 1831 at Fort Miller, N. Y. On Nov. 15, 1832, he married Elizabeth McNeil of Stillwater, N. Y.

In 1838 he gave up practise and returned to Salem, becoming interested in agriculture. His close connection with agriculture combined with his deep interest in insects made him what would be termed to-day an economic entomologist. He devoted most of his time to the study of the insects of his vicinity, making early studies of various grain insects and beginning to publish in 1845 in the *American Quarterly Journal of Agriculture and Science* and in the *Transactions of the New York State Agricultural Society*. He was then employed to collect and name the insects of the State of New York for the State Cabinet of Natural History. In 1854 he was appointed state entomologist of New York and held this position for seventeen years. During this time he published annual reports which were standard among the entomologists and agriculturists of the United States foi many years and are still considered of great value. His work was sound and far-reaching. He observed and recorded a mass of biological facts concerning the principal crop pests of that time, and, with his knowledge of both the biology of the insects and farming practises, he was able to make many valuable recommendations to the farmers of his state. Scientifically, his work was thoroughly sound, and his correspondence with scientific leaders in other parts of the country as well as in Europe was very great.

Fitch's appointment as state entomologist of New York was the first great practical step taken in the United States properly to investigate the problem of insect damage. It is true that T. W. Harris had prepared and the State had ordered published (in 1841) his admirable *Report on the Insects of Massachusetts Injurious to Vegetation*; but applied entomology had hitherto received no such definite official recognition as that implied in Fitch's appointment. In fact, the growth of official economic entomology in America dates from 1854. For a long time he worked virtually alone, and his admirably written and excellently arranged reports, based almost entirely upon his personal investigations, were of very great value to the agriculturists of the whole country and served as models to the state entomologists who began to be appointed years later. His style was simple and straightforward, but by no means devoid of charm; and his studies of the life history of many species were so full and so useful as to be almost beyond criticism.

His health began to fail in the late sixties, and his final report was published in 1870. He lived a quiet life until his death in 1879. C. V. Riley and P. R. Uhler [*qq.v.*], then both young men, visited him in 1870, and seem to have been impressed especially by his careful manuscript notes which at that time numbered 55,000 and were contained in 148 books. Many of these notebooks are now the property of the United States National Museum. Fitch was a deeply religious man and conducted daily family prayers and Bible readings. It is said, however, that on one occasion he interrupted his reading of the scriptures to reach for collecting apparatus with which to capture a rare moth that had alighted on his Bible.

[An appreciative biographical sketch by E. P. Thurston will be found in the *Pop. Sci. Monthly*, Nov. 1879. Another, written by C. V. Riley, is to be found in the *Am. Entomologist*, May 1880. It is in this last account that the story is told of the visit of Riley and Uhler. For ancestry see Emma C. Brewster Jones, *Brewster Geneal.* (1908), I, 209–10.]

L. O. H.

**FITCH, CLYDE** [See FITCH, WILLIAM CLYDE, 1865–1909].

**FITCH, JOHN** (Jan. 21, 1743–July 2, 1798), metal craftsman, inventor, was born on his father's farm in Windsor township, Hartford County, Conn. He was the fifth child of Joseph and Sarah (Shaler) Fitch and was descended from Thomas Fitch of Essex, England, whose five sons emigrated to Connecticut early in the seventeenth century. At the age of four he started attending "a dame school." He was an apt pupil, especially in "figures," but at the age of ten was taken from school and put to work on the farm. For a number of years, however, all of his leisure was spent in reading such books as he could secure, his especial interests being geography, astronomy, and mathematics. His physical weakness and inability to do his share of the farm work created in his father and older brother an antagonistic attitude which made his boyhood most unhappy. When he was fifteen, in an effort to get away from this environment, Fitch prevailed upon his father to hire him out to the local storekeeper. This work was not to his liking, except that it accomplished his deliverance from the farm, and for the succeeding six years he tried his hand at various occupations, all of which had unfortunate endings. He shipped on a coastwise sailing vessel but was mistreated by the mate; he apprenticed himself successively to two clock-makers but was not permitted to study or handle either time-pieces or tools, being kept at simple brass work or farm labor. Through these apprenticeships, however, he did acquire the rudiments of brass working and founding, and on the completion of his second term, on his twenty-first birthday, he set up a brass shop of his own in East Windsor. Doing odds and ends in brass founding, and cleaning or repairing clocks when owners could be induced to trust them in his hands, he paid off in two years the debt incurred when he set up his business, and then saved a bit of money all of which he lost through an unfortunate investment in potash manufacture, of which he knew nothing. Trying to recoup his losses by engaging again in brass work, he made the mistake of designing and equipping a plant of far greater capacity than the locality warranted. This embarrassment, coupled with the experience of an unhappy home life (he had married Lucy Roberts of Simsbury, Conn., on Dec. 29, 1767), was too much for him, and early in 1769 he left his family, business, and state.

Wandering southward, he eventually settled in Trenton, N. J., and in the course of seven years built up a profitable brass and silversmith business, only to have it wiped out in the Revolutionary War. He enlisted in a Trenton company and was made a lieutenant but soon left the army to take charge of the Trenton gun factory. He later gained considerable profit selling tobacco and beer to the Continental Army and made an occasional attempt to resume his silversmith's trade. Investing his money in Virginia land-warrants, he secured a surveyor's commission, spent the whole of 1780 in surveying lands along the Ohio River and locating his own claims, and recorded in his own name 1,600 acres in Kentucky. Early in 1782 he set out on a second expedition but was captured by Indians, turned over to the British, and held prisoner in Canada almost till the close of that year. Upon being exchanged, he settled in Bucks County, Pa., organized a company to acquire and exploit lands of the Northwest Territory, and made several surveying trips thither between 1783 and 1785, but all of his projects came to naught with the establishment of the federal policy of dividing the territory into mile-square sections, irrespective of the quality of the land. After the last of his surveying expeditions he made and engraved a map of the Northwest Territory from Hutchins's and Morrow's maps, with additions.

Back again in Bucks County, Fitch turned his attention to the invention of a steamboat, and from 1785 until his death thirteen years later devoted his whole time to this project. The question of financial assistance was ever his main stumbling-block. After failing to secure subsidies from the Continental Congress and several scientific societies, he turned to the state legislatures, and from New Jersey in 1786 and in 1787 from Pennsylvania, New York, Delaware, and Virginia, he obtained the exclusive privilege, for fourteen years, of building and operating steamboats on all the waters of these several states. Meanwhile he had built a number of rather successful models and with these and his privileges as talking points succeeded in organizing a company of prominent Philadelphians whose money, added to that which he made through the sale of his map of the Northwest Territory, enabled him to start work on a 45-foot boat. He was assisted, especially in the construction of the engine, by Henry Voight, a watchmaker. On the Delaware River at Philadelphia, Aug. 22, 1787, in the presence of the members of the Constitutional Convention then in session, the vessel was successfully launched and operated. It was propelled by a series of twelve paddles—six to a side, arranged like those of an Indian war canoe—and operated by steam power. In 1787–88 the claims of James Rumsey [*q.v.*] to priority in the application of steam to boat propulsion precipitated a controversy which elicited pamphlets from both sides but did not affect Fitch's monop-

oly, or deter him from proceeding immediately to work on another and larger boat. In July 1788 he launched a 60-foot boat propelled by a steam paddle wheel. With this boat he carried as many as thirty passengers on numerous round-trip voyages between Philadelphia and Burlington, N. J., on one occasion (Oct. 12, 1788) covering the twenty miles up-stream in three hours and ten minutes. Public indifference toward steam navigation still persisted, however, and in an attempt to overcome it Fitch persuaded the members of his company to give him funds to build a third and larger boat in 1790. This vessel was put in regular service on the Delaware River and its schedule of sailings, well maintained, was advertised in the Philadelphia daily papers; but the only encouragement Fitch received from this accomplishment was the grant of a United States patent on Aug. 26, 1791. Later in that same year he obtained French letters patent, and started the construction of a fourth boat appropriately named *Perseverance*. Before completion this was wrecked by a violent storm at Philadelphia and the disaster so discouraged the members of Fitch's company that they declined to advance any more money. In desperation Fitch went to France, but met with no better success there in securing financial aid, even though he possessed a French patent. Working his way back as a common sailor, he returned to Boston in destitute circumstances and ill health and from there was taken by his brother-in-law to his birthplace at East Windsor. Here he remained two years or more but without attempting to see his wife or children. About 1796 he decided to return to Kentucky to claim his lands. On the way he stopped in New York long enough to try once more to arouse interest in his invention, for he still had his monopoly. He converted a ship's yawl into a steamboat capable of carrying four people and operated it on Collect Pond, which once existed just off Broadway near City Hall. This craft was moved by a screw propeller. The demonstration was in vain, however, and, wholly discouraged, he went on to Kentucky and settled at Bardstown, where after two years he died.

While Fitch constructed four successful steamboats, he gave little or no attention to construction and operating costs, failed completely to see the need for demonstrating the economical aspects of steam navigation, and accordingly lost all financial support. For this reason, the steamboat era may be said to begin with Robert Fulton [*q.v.*], who launched his first steamboat after the death of Fitch.

[One volume of Fitch's manuscript autobiography, written during his residence in Bardstown, is now the property of the Phila. Library Company (Ridgway Branch); the other volume is in the possession of the Pa. Hist. Soc. The main body of his papers is in the Lib. of Cong.; there are also diaries in Yale Univ. Lib. Biographies are: Charles Whittlesey, "Life of John Fitch" in Jared Sparks, *Lib. of Am. Biog.*, 2 ser., vol. VI (1845); Henry Howe, *Memoirs of the Most Eminent American Mechanics* (1841); Thompson Westcott, *Life of John Fitch* (1857). See also *Memorial to John Fitch* (Govt. Printing Office, 1915); *John Fitch* (1912), comp. for Admiral Bunce Section, Hartford, Conn., No. 42, Navy League of the U. S.; W. B. Kaempffert, *Popular Hist. of Am. Invention* (2 vols., 1924).] C. W. M.

**FITCH, SAMUEL** (Jan. 16, 1724–Oct. 4, 1799), lawyer and Loyalist, was born in Lebanon, Conn., the son of Joseph and Anne (Whiting) Fitch, the grandson of Rev. James Fitch, first minister of Norwich, and great-grandson of John Mason of Pequot fame. James Fitch's brother was the great-grandfather of Gov. Thomas Fitch [*q.v.*]. Samuel was graduated from Yale in 1742, received the M.A. degree and was ranked socially sixth in a class of seventeen which included Joseph Hawley, later a prominent Whig of western Massachusetts, and Jared Ingersoll of Stamp Act notoriety. In 1746 he was lieutenant in a regiment raised for the Canadian expedition. Admitted to the bar in Connecticut, he was courting Elizabeth Lloyd of the manor of Queen's Village on Lloyd's Neck, Long Island, when in 1750 at the suggestion of her brother Henry who was a merchant in Boston, he started to practise in that town. The wedding took place in March 1753 at the manor. In 1761 or 1762 he was one of the first group elevated to the begowned and bewigged class of barristers, and in 1766 Harvard gave him the M.A. *ad eundem*. Evidently the law was his chief if not only interest: there is no record of nonprofessional activity except membership in the Fire Club, and an invitation four times repeated to inspect schools, the last betokening prominence in the community. John Adams was an intimate, and at Adams's suggestion in 1768 Fitch was made acting advocate general in the Court of Admiralty, serving until 1776. According to Adams, he never received a royal commission; but in this last statement Adams may have been mistaken, since there is in the Public Record Office a commission dated November 1769. Holding this office probably determined Fitch's political attitude, though his Loyalist brother-in-law, who had married into the Hutchinson family, may have been influential. Fitch was an addresser to Hutchinson on the governor's departure in 1774 and to Gage on his arrival and leaving, was a protester against the Solemn League and Covenant, and remained in Boston during the siege, departing for Halifax at the evacuation. He was proscribed and banished by the Act of September 1778 and his property confiscated the next year,

but there is no record of action under the law. His party to Halifax numbered seven, which probably did not include his son William, who became an ensign in the 65th Regiment, then in Boston, on Aug. 16, 1775, and who remained in the army until he was killed by the Maroons in Jamaica on Sept. 12, 1795, as colonel of the 83rd Regiment which he had raised in Dublin in 1793. Fitch had a pension for four children, probably including a daughter who predeceased him in England. He did not remain in Halifax but seems to have been in Ireland in September, and reached London on Dec. 7, 1776. Hutchinson presented him to Lord North on Jan. 23, 1777, and Samuel Quincy speaks of him as being in residence in February. Except for casual mention in the papers of fellow Loyalists, little is known of his last years. He was one of the Loyalist addressers to the King in 1779. He received from the British government a pension of £260, and during the war £550 a year for the loss of his professional income. Before his death he received further compensation to the amount of £5,000. The family was intimate with the Copleys and the artist made a painting of Col. William and his two sisters, probably begun about 1794 but not finished until 1801. The ladies were described as "fond of company and gaiety, but with scanty means of gratifying their taste" (Martha B. Amory, *Domestic and Artistic Life of John Singleton Copley,* 1882, p. 196). Fitch died in London and was buried in the graveyard of St. Mary's Church, Battersea. His wife survived him less than five months.

[Edward Alfred Jones, *The Loyalists of Mass.* (1930), pp. 134–35; Lorenzo Sabine, *Biog. Sketches of Loyalists of the Am. Revolution* (1864), I, 425; F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.*, vol. I (1885); the Mason pedigree in *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, XV, 121, are the main sources; but *Papers of the Lloyd Family of Lloyd's Neck, L. I.* (2 vols., 1927), in *N. Y. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, adds new material. See also *Jour. and Letters of Samuel Curwen* (1842), *passim.* There is scattered information in the papers of John Adams and of Fitch's fellow Loyalists.] D. M. M.

**FITCH, THOMAS** (*c.* 1700–July 18, 1774), lawyer, colonial governor, was a great-grandson of Thomas Fitch, one of the earliest settlers of Norwalk, Conn., and was born in that town, the son of Thomas Fitch, Jr., and his wife Sarah. As a member of the town's wealthiest and most prominent family, he entered readily into the inner political group of the colony of Connecticut and by his own abilities gained a position of leadership. He graduated from Yale College in 1721 and three years later married Hannah Hall of New Haven, who bore him eight children. He began his political career in 1726 as deputy from Norwalk to the General Assembly, serving on four subsequent occasions during the next five years. He was an Assistant in 1734–35 and again during 1740–50, when, upon the death of Gov. Jonathan Law and the advancement of Deputy Gov. Roger Wolcott, he was chosen deputy governor by the Assembly over the heads of the three senior Assistants. He was reëlected by the freemen in each of the three following years. In 1754, when Gov. Wolcott came under popular suspicion in connection with the embezzlement of most of the cargo of a Spanish ship which had put into New London harbor in distress, as a result, Fitch attained the distinction of being the first man to defeat a Connecticut governor for reëlection when the latter was an avowed candidate. Fitch was elected governor and held the office continually thereafter until 1766 when he was defeated because of his attitude in the Stamp Act controversy. Although regularly nominated for the magistracy in each of the remaining years of his life, he was never again elected. He was a deputy from Norwalk in 1772 but never held any royal appointments in Massachusetts as has sometimes been inferred (Gipson, *post,* p. 296, note 2).

Fitch was a lawyer by profession. In this capacity he served the colony on several occasions, including notably the land controversy with the Mohican Indians and the dispute with Massachusetts over the boundary. He was given charge of the revision of the laws of Connecticut, a task which he completed with some assistance in 1749. As deputy governor from 1750 to 1754 he was regularly appointed, as was the custom, chief judge of the superior courts. Many years after Fitch's death President Dwight of Yale referred to him as "probably the most learned lawyer, who had ever been an inhabitant of the Colony" (*Travels,* III, 504). He had various other interests as well. In 1740, together with two associates, he secured from the Assembly a fifteen-year monopoly of the right to make steel within the colony, experiments in which enterprise conducted at Simsbury were reported as successful four years later. As a young man he served as supply for the pulpit of the Norwalk church and in 1765 there appeared a tract, attributed to Fitch, which analyzed the Saybrook Platform of the consociated churches of Connecticut.

It was, however, in his capacity as governor during a term which included the last intercolonial war and the Stamp Act controversy that he was most distinguished. He was an ardent supporter of the British cause during the war and was largely responsible for the fact that the Connecticut Assembly more than once exceeded its quota of troops, although he did not entirely es-

cape the impatient criticism of the British commanders-in-chief. When, after the close of the war, proposals were first made for parliamentary taxation of the colonies, the Assembly requested Fitch and certain others to draw up the objections of the colony to such legislation. The resulting "Book of Reasons," for which the governor was chiefly responsible, was a clear and concise statement of the constitutional, historical, and economic arguments of the colony against the proposed stamp tax (*Reasons why the British Colonies in America, Should not be Charged with Internal Taxes, by Authority of Parliament; Humbly offered for Consideration in Behalf of the Colony of Connecticut,* 1764). Fitch's legalistic mind, which had been most helpful in this work, caused his downfall when the Stamp Act had finally been passed. Although he was unsympathetic to the tax, he believed in submission to parliamentary enactment and considered it his duty to take the oath required of all governors by the act. In defense of his action he published a small tract which contained logical reasoning and sound arguments but which completely ignored the feelings and passions of the colonists (*Some Reasons that Influenced the Governor to Take, and the Councillors to Administer the Oath, Required by the Act of Parliament; commonly called the Stamp-Act. Humbly submitted to the Consideration of the Publick,* 1766). Neither this pamphlet, however, nor the support of the conservatives of the colony, was able to save him in the election of May 1766. Although little is known of his personality, he displayed in all his actions a high sense of duty, courage, and an outlook on politics which extended beyond the confines of his little colony and included the larger world of the British Empire.

[Sources include: *The Public Records of the Colony of Conn.,* vols. VII–XII (1873–81), ed. by C. J. Hoadley; "The Fitch Papers . . . 1754–76," ed. by A. C. Bates with an introduction by Forrest Morgan in *Conn. Hist. Soc. Colls.,* vols. XVII and XVIII (1918–20); "Correspondence of Connecticut with the British Government," in *Conn. Hist. Soc. Colls.,* I (1860) and *Correspondence of Wm. Pitt . . . with Colonial Governors . . . in America* (2 vols., 1906), ed. by G. S. Kimball; Edwin Hall, *The Ancient Hist. Records of Norwalk, Conn.* (1847); Moses Dickinson, *A Sermon, Delivered at the Funeral of the Honorable Thomas Fitch, Esq.* (1774); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches Grads. Yale Coll.,* vol. I (1885); L. H. Gipson, *Jared Ingersoll* (1920); D. H. Van Hoosear, "A Complete Copy of the Inscriptions . . . in the Oldest Cemetery in Norwalk, Conn.," *Fairfield County Hist. Soc. Reports,* 1893–95. The inclusion of a sketch of Fitch in Lorenzo Sabine, *Am. Loyalists* (1847), is quite misleading in its implications.]

L. W. L.

**FITCH, WILLIAM CLYDE** (May 2, 1865–Sept. 4, 1909), playwright, was the son of Capt. William Goodwin Fitch of Hartford, Conn. (at the time of his marriage in 1863 a lieutenant in the Union Army), and of Alice Maud (Clark) Fitch of Hagerstown, Md. Born at Elmira, N. Y., his first four years were spent traveling with his parents from army-post to army-post, at the end of which time Capt. Fitch resigned from the service, and the family moved to Schenectady, N. Y., where they settled down for the next ten years. A small and delicate child, Clyde was nevertheless endowed with irrepressible spirits and originality. At nine he was editing "The Rising Sun," a weekly magazine all written out in his own large round hand. Its editorials consisted principally of humorous and precocious observations upon the neighbors; his other contributions were verse and such stories as "The Missing Hand; or Marie Gertrude Antoinette de la Rue—a thrilling tragedy à la Miss Goodrich." He originated The Hookey Club, consisting of himself and "Mollie" Jackson, his favorite playmate; its secret meetings seem to have been held for the sole purpose of deciding which one of them could invent the best excuse for not going to church. At nine or ten, he made his first venture into theatricals. He collected a small group of little girls into a very lively company, and drilled them in melodramas, mostly of his own concoction, made the costumes and the scenery, and acted all the "hero" parts himself. When the performances were over, he would lead the whole company down-town and have tintypes taken of it in the most thrilling scenes. His favorite play was *Blue Beard.*

At thirteen he began to grow restless under his mother's constant watchful care, and begged his father to send him away to some school "where he could be more like other boys." During the next winter—spent with an aunt at Hartford, Conn.—he attended the high school there, and the following year he was sent to the school for boys at Holderness, N. H., to prepare for college. In a letter to his mother at this time he wrote: "I think I ought to have something to say about what college I am to go to, when four years of my life are to be spent there, . . . I am not so delicate, my dear, as you think, and please don't write to any college about my being delicate, or about the climate, boys don't like to be talked about that way, and *I* don't, anyway." Amherst was finally decided upon, and Fitch entered the class of 1886. Prof. John F. Genung later said of him, "Fitch was not by any means my best student, but he was one of my most interesting pupils and I always felt he was a genius." His college activities were principally literary and dramatic. "Billy Fitch," as he was known on the campus, contributed to almost every issue of the *Student* and for a time was its editor. After his freshman year he lived

at the Chi Psi Lodge where he decorated the walls of his room with a frieze of apple blossoms, and painted over the fireplace *"O, ye fire and heat, Bless ye the Lord."* In his sophomore year, it was Fitch who "staged" the annual ceremony of burning up the class text-books on Analytical Geometry, which he called "The Funeral of Anna Lit." The *Student* in its next issue described the obsequies, as "having surpassed anything of a like nature ever witnessed at Amherst." "And as a result," writes Prof. Chilton Powell, "the Faculty eliminated future ceremonies of the kind." Fitch was an inveterate theatre-goer. On one vacation he and his chum, Tod Galloway, went to eleven plays in six days. His first essay as a playwright happened in his junior year. The Chi Psi Fraternity was to give an entertainment, and had done what had never been done before—invited the faculty. They had chosen to give a one-act operetta, *Il Jacobi,* only to find on rehearsal that it would not suffice to fill the evening. Walking home from chapel Fitch gloomily discussed with Galloway what was to be done about it. Two hours later he summoned Galloway to his room and read him a second act to *Il Jacobi,* cleverer than the original, which at the performance made the hit of the evening. Fitch belonged to the Junior and Senior Dramatics, and besides designing costumes and scenery, he painted a curtain. He produced Wycherley's *The Country Girl* and acted the rôle of Peggie Thrift. He appeared as Constance in *She Stoops to Conquer,* and as Lydia Languish in *The Rivals.* At his graduation he was chosen Grove Poet.

Capt. Fitch then tried every means of persuasion to induce his son to take up the profession of architecture; the idea of literature as a livelihood seemed to him absurd, and he frowned still more upon the thought of his son's writing for the stage. Fitch, however, had made up his mind. He felt the necessity of independence and was determined to go to New York and make his own way. Arriving at his goal in the autumn, he brought with him several letters of introduction; but before presenting any of them, decided to make a tour of the newspaper offices. He first tried the *World,* where he was told there was nothing for him. It was a hot morning, but unbaffled he went on to the *New York Times.* There they suggested "he might go over and hang around the Hoboken docks and see if anything turned up." But before he reached the street again, he had already made his decision—"If anything *does* turn up at the Hoboken docks, it won't be me!" His next efforts toward making a living were the writing of jokes and verses for *Life* and *Puck,* stories for children, and a novel,

Fitch

"A Wave of Life," published in *Lippincott's Magazine,* 1891. Meanwhile he was tutoring two small children. This trying experience having come to an end, Fitch made his first trip abroad, meeting his mother in Paris. Paris instantly took possession of him—as Italy did afterward; it answered the color and spontaneity in his nature and ignited the creative in him. There he met Massenet, Sybil Sanderson, Bernhard Berenson, and others, and sometimes read his writings to them. One night on a balcony, he read aloud *Frederick Lemaître,* a one-act play he had just finished, and became so impassioned, that a little Marquise, who lived below, sent up a note: "Would the American ladies and gentlemen please make a little less noise." From Paris he went to London, where the Æsthetic Movement, though on the wane, was still prevailing, and he, at twenty-three, felt its sway. He carried about with him a volume of Vernon Lee, and at Walter Pater's little house in Earl's Terrace, he met many of the rising younger writers. Returning to New York, he took rooms in the old Sherwood Studios on West Fifty-seventh St. He was still writing children's stories for the *Churchman,* the *Independent,* and other magazines (collected in book form in 1891 under the title of *The Knighting of the Twins*) and was giving readings from Browning, Praed, and Keats. In spite of short funds, he was never an "attic poet"; on the contrary, with tapestry, books, old furniture (rickety perhaps but beautiful), stuffs and pictures—gleanings from the old Paris shops—he created a charming place where he received his friends at tea, in a blue velvet coat with a pink carnation in his buttonhole—and always there was a manservant at the door to take one's hat.

Among the letters of introduction Fitch had brought with him to New York was one to E. A. Dithmar, dramatic editor of the *New York Times,* who soon began taking him to the opening nights at the theatres. At this time, Richard Mansfield had been hunting in vain for a man who would write a play around the character of Beau Brummell and, in despair, appealed to Dithmar. Without hesitation, Dithmar recommended Clyde Fitch. The actor and the playwright met in Philadelphia and Fitch set to work. It was not all plain sailing, however. The experienced actor made many valuable suggestions; but impatient and temperamental, he nearly drove Fitch into a sanatorium before the play was completed. Mansfield lacked confidence in the piece up to the last dress rehearsal. That morning, striding up and down the stage, he muttered to W. J. Ferguson "We can't do this play tomorrow—it will be a failure. We shall have to put on *A Parisian Ro-*

Fitch

*mance.*" But Fitch stuck it out; and when the curtain rose on that brilliant opening night, it proved to be the first of his many triumphs.

Fitch's next productions were: *Betty's Finish,* a one-act play of college life (Boston Museum, 1890), *Frederick Lemaître* (Tremont Theatre, Boston, 1890), and *Pamela's Prodigy* a comedy of the period of 1830 (Royal Court Theatre, London, 1891). His first drama of contemporary life, *A Modern Match,* was well constructed, strong and human, and an obvious broadening out of his work. After a successful season, the foreign rights were bought by Mr. and Mrs. Kendal, who appeared in it in London, Dublin, and elsewhere, under the title of *Marriage 1892.* The following six years were filled with hard work and many variations of fortune. During this time Fitch wrote seven original plays and eleven adaptations from foreign sources; two of these, *Gossip* and *A Superfluous Husband* in collaboration with Leo Ditrichstein. *The Masked Ball,* from the French of Bisson and Carré, for John Drew (his first appearance as a star) and Maude Adams, had a long run of popularity. Mrs. Langtry in Fitch's *Gossip,* Otis Skinner in a charming production of Fitch's *His Grace de Grammont,* and Madame Helena Modjeska in the title rôle of Fitch's *Mistress Betty* (revised in 1905 as *The Toast of the Town*), were the high spots of those years. There were failures too, but Fitch met these with his remarkable faculty of working even harder in the face of defeat. Meanwhile he made his annual trips abroad, watching the trend of the Continental theatres.

Fortune smiled upon him in the simultaneous opening in 1898 of *The Moth and the Flame* in Philadelphia, with Effie Shannon and Herbert Kelcey, and *Nathan Hale* in Chicago, with Nat Goodwin and Maxine Elliott. *The Moth* drew capacity audiences at one theatre, while *Nathan Hale* was turning people away at the other. Fitch was dazed. Kelcey, meeting him at the theatre the morning after the opening, found him staring at an open telegram. It was from Nat Goodwin: "Breaking all records line from box-office around the corner. Nat." "Tell me, Kelcey," Fitch gasped, "do you think this is *true,* or is Goodwin joshing me?" Also during the same year Charles Frohman successfully produced Fitch's *Barbara Frietchie,* a drama of the Civil War, with Julia Marlowe in the title rôle. Experience, by now, convinced the managers it was to their own profit to give Fitch free rein in the entire production of his plays—the choice of casts, the rehearsing, and the staging. Actors liked being directed by him; they soon recognized the actor in him, and behind his patience and tact, the driving force of "a man who knows his job." He was often criticized for his insistence upon small details; once a man sitting in front at a scenic rehearsal, exclaimed, as Fitch climbed down from the stage into the orchestra stalls, disgusted because some "property" had not arrived: "Why do you bother so much about such little things?" "Because," answered Fitch, "I think they are *very important*; I believe in watching every bit of scenery, every action, every incidental blessed thing connected with the production. It is the 'little things' that quickest show the lack of study and preparation." To such infinite pains Fitch owed much of his success. No other American dramatist of his day could present the so-called "Society plays" as Fitch did; he knew the chatter of the drawing room as well as its setting, and from the first speech, no aside was needed to reveal to the audience what sort of people it was about to have the pleasure of meeting.

Fitch was now (1901) thirty-six years old, and, in appearance, the unmistakable man of the world. His swinging walk, flowing overcoat, thick stick (a book or a manuscript always under his arm), and his habit of talking to himself as he came along, made him a conspicuous figure. He disliked intensely being pointed out in public places, yet he took a boyish pleasure in seeing his name screamed out in electric lights over the entrance to a theatre. The year 1901 marked for him the beginning of a future of uninterrupted prosperity. Four of his plays—*The Climbers, Captain Jinks* (with Ethel Barrymore), *Barbara Frietchie* (a return engagement), and *Lover's Lane,* were all running in New York at the same time, to packed theatres. Praise from the critics, however, was still given grudgingly, and Fitch was never able to overcome his depression over their continued adverse attitude. Though at the crest of success he never slackened in his work; writing, personally attending to his productions, and rushing off to other cities for the try-out of new plays—besides, of course, being constantly in social demand. In the spring of 1902 the strain of overwork began to tell on him, and on his physician's advice to go to the country for rest he bought a piece of land at Greenwich, Conn., and before sailing again for Europe he started to build "Quiet Corner." While in Europe he was threatened with appendicitis. At Berne, Switzerland, he was advised to go to St. Moritz, where under care he might avoid an operation. At St. Moritz he slowly improved; but in the autumn, without fully regaining his strength, he returned home, bringing back with him two complete new plays, *The Stubbornness of Ger-*

*aldine* and *The Girl with the Green Eyes.* Between this date and 1907 he produced sixteen plays: ten of them original and six adaptations. On Jan. 7, 1907, he had two plays open on the same night—*The Straight Road,* and *The Truth.* For the latter, in which Clara Bloodgood played the leading rôle, he had high hope, feeling that in it he had achieved his best. The critics gave unstinted praise to *The Straight Road* (a melodrama of the New York slums), while towards *The Truth* they were lukewarm. Fitch's disappointment was bitter. From "Quiet Corner" he wrote, "Of course I am pretty depressed over the abuse I get in the press. . . . A few days will tell the tale. But I have very little hope." A week later the critics had changed their tone. Fitch wrote again: "The *Evening Sun* was fine and *so was Alan Dale today*—very fine—*my best! they come too late!* . . . It will But, also, I fear be a dreadful blow to me—as it will convince me that it is impossible for me *to* succeed in New York *with the present press.* Which will mean my laying down my pen." Fitch was right, the damage was done, *The Truth* closed after a few weeks of vain struggle. Three months later, however, the play made an enormous hit in London. At the end of the first performance the brilliant audience rose and cheered and called again and again for the author. The acting of Marie Tempest as Becky was hailed by all the papers as "a triumph." Fitch afterward saw *The Truth* acted in Germany, Italy, Russia, Hungary, and Scandinavia, repeating its London success in each country. In the fall of 1907 Mrs. Bloodgood toured with the play, but after two happy months of success, the tour was brought to a sudden termination by her tragic suicide.

At the end of that season Fitch began fighting a losing battle against failing health, but he would not give up. Forced to spend much of his time in the country, he took his manuscripts and his friends with him. Nothing was too good for the latter. Once, accused of liking too many people, he answered—"*I've* always thought, if you like a lot of other people, you often learn new ways to please the ones you like best." Between 1907 and 1909 he wrote and produced two original plays, *A Happy Marriage* and *The Bachelor,* and adapted a farce from the German, *The Blue Mouse.* While writing on this farce, the idea came to him of a tremendous climax for a new play (*The City*). From then on, this drama possessed him so completely that he could think of nothing else, writing feverishly, at a furious pace, "as though he knew the night was coming." On June 25, 1909, nervously worn out, he boarded the *S. S. Lorraine* for Havre, leaving behind him the finished work. After two weeks in Paris, he crossed to London to see *The Woman in the Case* (first produced in 1905), which was having a sensational success. Happy over its reception, he could not stand the excitement of the demands its popularity made upon him. Very tired, he slipped away, returning to Paris; and started on a lonely tour through the Tyrol. He carried with him the manuscript of a light comedy, writing on the way. Returning by way of Châlons-sur-Marne, he was taken acutely ill there on Aug. 30, and an emergency operation was resorted to that night. On Sept. 4 a brief cable brought the news to New York of his death. Three months later, on the night of Dec. 21, *The City* opened at the Lyric Theatre. Every seat was filled. The feeling was intense. By the end of the second act, the developing horror of impending catastrophe swept the audience into a demonstration seldom witnessed in a New York theatre—a scene of hysterical confusion. Men were shouting, women fainted. The *New York Tribune* (Dec. 22, 1909) said, "The art employed is remarkable; the effect is at moments mighty." Fitch's plays will live in the history of the American drama like Congreve's of the gay Restoration period—as mirrors of their day or, as Mr. John Corbin once said, "They are not only pictures of their time, they are documents of the period."

[Twelve of Fitch's best-known plays were published after his death in *Plays by Clyde Fitch* (4 vols., 1915), memorial edition, ed. by M. J. Moses and Virginia Gerson. The same editors also published *Clyde Fitch and his Letters* (1924). For criticism see W. P. Eaton, *At the New Theatre and Others* (1910); Wm. Lyon Phelps, *Essays on Modern Dramatists* (1921); A. H. Quinn, *A Hist. of the Am. Drama from the Civil War to the Present Day* (1927), I, 265–96. Quinn, *op. cit.,* II, 288–92 and the *Cambridge Hist. of Am. Lit.,* IV (1921), 765–67, give additional references and list Fitch's plays with dates of production.] V.G.



**FITLER, EDWIN HENRY** (Dec. 2, 1825–May 31, 1896), manufacturer, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the son of William and Elizabeth (Wonderly) Fitler. His father was a prosperous leather merchant and tanner. Since his parents were in easy circumstances, young Fitler received an excellent academic education. Planning to adopt the law as a profession, he entered the office of Charles E. Lex, a prominent lawyer of Philadelphia, but after four years of legal study he decided that his natural tastes were for mechanical pursuits. Accordingly, he abandoned law for a more congenial occupation, and obtaining a position in the cordage house of his brother-in-law, George J. Weaver, began to lay the foundation of his life-work. Two years later, at the age of twenty-three, he was admitted to partnership in the firm, known first as George J. Weaver

& Company and later as Weaver, Fitler & Company (Philadelphia Cordage Works). Under his management labor-saving machinery was introduced, much of it being of his own invention. These inventions were not patented but were freely offered to the trade and many were adopted by other cordage manufacturers. By 1870 he had purchased the interests of most of his other partners and the firm name was changed to Edwin H. Fitler & Company (Philadelphia Cordage Works). At the time of his death, the factory, situated in the Bridesburg section of Philadelphia, was one of the largest cordage works in the United States.

Fitler was one of the most successful and best-known business men of his time. He was noted for his keen perceptions and the rapidity and correctness of his decisions. His position in the trade is attested by the fact that he was repeatedly elected president of the American Cordage Manufacturers Association. His relations with his employees were of the most cordial character. It is said that he never had labor troubles in his plant. He was intensely patriotic and at the outbreak of the Civil War threw the whole weight of his influence into the Union cause, and personally outfitted a company from among his employees. He took an active part in the work of projecting and organizing the Centennial Exposition and in 1875–76 was a member of its board of finance. He was also one of the founders of the Philadelphia Art Club.

Until 1887 he successfully avoided public office, but in that year was prevailed upon to run for mayor of the City of Philadelphia and was elected by nearly 30,000 majority. He was the first mayor under the new city charter and during his administration many reforms were instituted and many improvements were made in all branches of the city government. Rigidly adhering to his own ideas and his own policies regardless of political or other pressure, he won the confidence of the whole community. At the Republican National Convention held at Chicago in 1888 he received the vote of the entire Philadelphia delegation, also of several delegates from other parts of Pennsylvania and a few from other states, as their choice for president of the United States. After his retirement from the mayoralty in 1891 he again devoted himself to his business. He was a director of the National Bank of the Northern Liberties and served as both vice-president and president of the Union League. He died, after a long illness, at his country estate near Philadelphia. His wife, whom he married in 1850, was Josephine R. Baker.

[W. W. Fitler, *Geneal. of the Fitler and Allied Families* (1922), pp. 26–29; J. T. Scharf and Thompson Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884), III, 2311 ff.; obituaries in the *North American*, the *Press*, and the *Public Ledger*, of Phila., June 1, 1896.]

J.H.F.



**FITTON, JAMES** (Apr. 10, 1805–Sept. 15, 1881), Roman Catholic missionary, was born in Boston, Mass. He was of English and Welsh descent, the son of Abraham Fitton, an emigrant from Preston, England, and Sarah Williams. After attending the public schools of Boston, and an academy conducted by Rev. Virgil Horace Barber, S. J., at Claremont, N. H., he prepared for the priesthood under the personal instruction of Bishop Fenwick [*q.v.*] of Boston, and was by him ordained on Dec. 23, 1827. His ministry covered a period of more than fifty years, during the first half of which he traveled in almost every section of New England, a zealous missionary indifferent to hardship and persecution. Churches sprang up everywhere along his path. He was first sent to labor among the Passamaquoddy Indians of Maine. Later he was commissioned to look after the spiritual wants of the faithful scattered over the state of Vermont. In July 1830 he went to Connecticut where he was the second resident priest in what is now the Diocese of Hartford. Here he remained for the next six years, sometimes alone and sometimes with assistants. From Hartford, which was his residence, he went forth "to wherever a child of the faith was to be found." Every county of the state was traversed repeatedly; stations were established in the larger towns, and also in Massachusetts and Rhode Island. In 1836 Worcester became his headquarters, and his field of labor included the eastern part of Connecticut, the central and western parts of Massachusetts, and extended down the Blackstone Valley into Rhode Island. Purchasing some sixty acres of land on a hillside at Worcester, he erected buildings and opened Mount St. James Seminary. This property he deeded to Bishop Fenwick in 1842, and it became the site of the College of the Holy Cross, the first Catholic college in New England. In 1843 Father Fitton was put in charge of the Church of SS. Peter and Paul, Providence, and the following year Bishop Tyler assigned him to duty in Woonsocket, Pawtucket, and Newport. When Newport was made a parish in 1846, he became its pastor. While here he built the beautiful church of Our Lady of the Isle. In compliance with the dying request of his friend, Father William Wiley, he was called from Newport to East Boston in 1855 to complete an edifice for the Church of the Most Holy Redeemer, which the former had begun. He continued as pastor of this church until his death, twenty-six years later.

He published: *The Triumph of Religion* (n.d.); *Sketches of the Establishment of the Church in New England* (1872); and *St. Joseph's Manual: containing a Selection of Prayers for Public and private devotion* (1877).

[Wm. Byrne and others, *Hist. of the Cath. Ch. in the New England States* (1899); John G. Shea, *A Hist. of the Cath. Ch. Within the Limits of the U. S.* (1890); *The Cath. Encyc.* (1909); Wm. Lincoln, *Hist. of Worcester, Mass.* (1837); Chas. Nutt, *Hist. of Worcester and its People*, vol. II (1919); *Boston Marriages, 1752–1809* (1903); *Diary of Christopher Columbus Baldwin* (1901); *N. Y. Freeman's Jour. and Cath. Reg.*, Oct. 1, 1881; Fitton's own *Sketches . . . of the Church in New England*.] H.E.S.

**FITZ, HENRY** (Dec. 31, 1808–Nov. 6, 1863), telescope maker, was born in Newburyport, Mass., the son of Henry and Susan Bradley (Page) Fitz. His grandfather, Mark Fitz, was town clerk and a person of consequence in Newburyport. Henry's first occupation was that of printer, but, thinking that printing did not offer scope enough for his inventive faculty, he became a locksmith. At that time the locksmith was a more important man than he has ever been since, and Fitz, whose skill enabled him to do two days' work in one, prospered in his new trade and devoted his surplus energy to experiments with optical glass. About 1835 he constructed his first reflecting telescope. During the winter of 1844 he devised a method of perfecting object-glasses for refracting telescopes. The next autumn, at the Fair of the American Institute, his exhibit of an instrument with a six-inch aperture attracted favorable attention and won him the patronage of several astronomers. Though its lenses were ground from ordinary American flint glass, this telescope was considered an excellent one. Fitz now moved to New York and gave all his time to the manufacture of telescopes, which he carried on with conspicuous success. In time he was a little prior to Alvan Clark [*q.v.*], and had he lived longer he would probably have carried his art as far and become as well-known. His methods were of his own invention and were refined to a point where he could detect the expansion of an object-glass effected by passing a finger over its surface on a frosty night (*New York Tribune, post*). He is said to have made use of local polishing fifteen years before the process was developed in Europe. His instruments were highly prized. He made a large number of six-inch telescopes, including one that Lieut. James M. Gilliss [*q.v.*] took with him on the United States Astronomical Expedition to the Southern Hemisphere and that found a permanent home in the Chilean government's observatory. With another six-inch Robert Van Arsdale of Newark, N. J., was able to discover several comets. Fitz made various eight- and nine-inch telescopes, among them a nine-inch that belonged to the British chargé d'affaires at Montevideo. He made one instrument of ten inches for a Mr. Vickers of Baltimore, two of twelve inches for the University of Michigan and for Vassar College, two of thirteen inches for the Dudley Observatory at Albany, N. Y., and for a group of men in Allegheny, Pa., and at least one of sixteen inches, which was owned by a Mr. Van Duzee of Buffalo. For Lewis Morris Rutherfurd [*q.v.*] he made five telescopes—of four, five and three quarters, six, nine, and eleven and one quarter inches, the last an instrument of remarkable defining power. His ambition in his later years was to build a twenty-four inch telescope. He was about to sail for Europe to select the glass when death overtook him.

[*N. Y. Tribune*, Nov. 7, 1863; James Hill Fitts, *Geneal. of the Fitts or Fitz Family in America* (1869); *Vital Records of Newburyport, Mass., to the End of the year 1849* (1911), I, 138.] G.H.G.

**FITZ, REGINALD HEBER** (May 5, 1843–Sept. 30, 1913), Boston pathologist and clinician, the son of Albert Fitz, a government consul, and his wife, Eliza R. Nye, was born at Chelsea, Mass. After attending the Chauncy Hall School he entered Harvard where he received the degrees of B.A. (1864) and M.D. (1868), both with distinction. He began the study of medicine under Jeffries Wyman [*q.v.*], and later came under the influence of H. J. Bigelow, O. W. Holmes, and Edward H. Clarke [*qq.v.*]. During his last year at the medical school he served as house physician to the Boston City Hospital. In 1868 he went to Vienna where he studied pathology for several months under Rokitansky and Skoda, and also had contact with Billroth, the surgeon. At this time, however, the school of pathology at Vienna was in its decline. The Berlin school, on the other hand, was in the ascendant under Rudolf Virchow, who was then making his great contribution to scientific medicine through the application of the microscope to the study of diseased tissue ("cellular pathology"). He taught that disease was not an independent entity, but merely *life* under altered conditions. Fitz spent a year in the stimulating atmosphere of Virchow's laboratory, and laid the foundation for his career as a pathologist. While in Berlin he published an important paper in Virchow's *Archiv für pathologische Anatomie und Physiologie* (vol. LI, 1870, pp. 123–26) on the microscopic changes occurring in a respiratory disease known as bronchiectasis. Much stirred by the methods and teaching of his Berlin master, Fitz returned to America in 1870 and became instructor in pathology at the Harvard Medical School. His academic ad-

vancement proved unusually rapid. In 1873 he became assistant professor of pathological anatomy, and full professor in 1878. In 1892 he was transferred to the Hersey Professorship of the Theory and Practice of Physic. From 1887 until 1908 he was visiting physician to the Massachusetts General Hospital. He was also an active member of all local and national medical societies, being president of the Association of American Physicians for the year 1893–94.

Fitz's contributions to medicine were numerous and important. Soon after his return to America he began to write upon a great variety of pathological conditions, notably tuberculosis, ectopic pregnancy, and intestinal obstruction. For many years he interested himself in a group of cases in which the patients had rapidly succumbed after acute attacks of right-sided abdominal pain, and in 1886 published his remarkable paper, "Perforating Inflammation of the Vermiform Appendix; With Special Reference to its Early Diagnosis and Treatment" (*Transactions of the Association of American Physicians,* I, 1886, 107–35) in which he named the disease now known as appendicitis, proved its origin from the appendix, and advocated radical surgical intervention for its cure. He also described the more important features of the clinical diagnosis of the condition. This paper has always been looked upon as one of the three or four classics of modern scientific medicine, being a model of form as well as of substance. The literature of his subject was exhaustively treated, a series of more than 250 carefully recorded cases was painstakingly analyzed, and finally, by a process of shrewd deductive reasoning, he drew a few sweeping conclusions from the facts disclosed. In 1889 he analyzed a second series of seventy-two cases. In the same year he elucidated a rarer abdominal disease known as acute pancreatitis, describing its characteristic pathology and indicating the chief clinical points of distinction between it and other acute abdominal conditions (*Boston Medical and Surgical Journal,* Feb. 21–Mar. 7, 1889). In addition to these two specific contributions, Fitz exerted a wide influence upon scientific pathology, especially in America. Being the earliest of Virchow's students to return to America, he was the first to introduce the microscopic study of diseased tissue. In his constant emphasis upon the need for cooperation between pathology and clinical medicine and surgery, he did much to advance rational therapeusis.

Personally Fitz was conservative and industrious, with unusual gifts as a teacher, and a fondness for administrative duties. He served regularly upon committees at the Harvard Medical School, and secured many reforms in the curriculum of medical study. It is said that before conducting a post-mortem examination he would often ask the physician in charge of a case to express an opinion as to the nature of the pathological process involved. If the findings failed to confirm the prediction Fitz never hesitated to point out the faulty logic or imperfection of the clinical examinations which had led to the diagnostic error. On such occasions he spared himself no more than his fellows, but his rather ruthless verbal dissections often irritated his older colleagues, though they never ceased to delight his students. His lectures were erudite, clear, and incisive. "He had a habit of tilting his head backward, closing his eyes, talking with extreme rapidity and fluency, never missing a word, for 61 minutes in the hour. . . . It was as if he read a carefully prepared lecture from the inside of his eye lids" (Blake, *post*). On his sixty-fifth birthday his former students published a collection of medical papers dedicated to him (*Boston Medical and Surgical Journal,* May 7, 1908). He died in his seventy-first year, following an operation for a long-standing gastric ulcer. In 1879 he married Elizabeth, daughter of Edward H. Clarke, by whom he had two daughters and two sons, one of whom, Reginald, became a physician.

[W. W. Keen and C. W. Eliot, *Memorial Addresses Delivered at the Harvard Medic. School, Nov. 17, 1913* (1914); John B. Blake in the *Harvard Alumni Bull.,* 1914; F. C. Shattuck in the *Harvard Grads.' Mag.,* Dec. 1913; *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.,* Oct. 23, 1913; *Boston Transcript,* Oct. 1, 1913. A list of appreciations and obituaries is to be found in the *Index Cat. of the Lib. of the Surgeon General's Office, U. S. Army,* 3 ser., V (1925), 783. Certain of Fitz's unpublished manuscripts have been deposited in the Boston Medical Library.] J.F.F.

**FITZGERALD, DESMOND** (May 20, 1846–Sept. 22, 1926), hydraulic engineer, was born at Nassau, Bahama Islands, the son of Lionel Charles William Henry and Sarah Caroline (Brown) Fitzgerald. His father, a captain in the British army, was born in Turlough Park in northwestern Ireland. His mother, born at Nassau, was a daughter of Patrick Brown, president of His Majesty's Council, and Desmond through her was closely related to one of the best-known families of Rhode Island. The family moved to Providence, R. I., when Desmond was a child, and there he received his early education. At twelve he spent a year in Paris studying art, with the idea of becoming a sculptor. He then entered Phillips Academy at Andover, Mass., graduating in 1864. While still under age he became deputy secretary of Rhode Island and later private secretary to Gen. Burnside, the governor of the state, and during this period he began to study engi-

neering in the office of a firm in Providence. His first engineering work, in the Middle West, led to his appointment some six years later as chief engineer of the Boston & Albany Railroad (1871–73). He had already begun to display the characteristics of energy and thoroughness which marked his entire career. In 1870, he married Elizabeth Parker Clark Salisbury of Brookline, Mass.

In 1873 Fitzgerald began his career as a hydraulic engineer by becoming superintendent of the western division of the Boston water works. Here most of his pioneer work was done in connection with the sanitary protection of water supplies, the improvement of reservoirs, and the study of *algæ* and bacteria in drinking water. He designed and constructed some of the largest and most important storage reservoirs built by the city of Boston during these years. Due largely to his efforts a suit was brought by the city to prevent the pollution of one of the reservoirs, which was won after seven years' litigation in the courts of the state.

He was a pioneer in the study of color in water and of methods of reducing it by swamp drainage, as well as of the effect of sunlight in bleaching stored water. He was the first to establish a biological laboratory in connection with water supply. One of his assistants in this work was George C. Whipple [*q.v.*] who later became prominent as a sanitary engineer. Fitzgerald made a long series of experiments at the Chestnut Hill reservoir upon the subject of evaporation from water area which for the first time afforded a fundamental basis and formula for the study of the subject. His paper on "Evaporation" (*Transactions of the American Society of Civil Engineers,* September 1886), as well as that on "Rainfall, Flow of Streams and Storage" (*Ibid.,* September 1892) received the Norman Medal of the American Society of Civil Engineers, of which he was a member for many years, and president in 1899. When the metropolitan water board absorbed the Boston supply works in 1898, he continued in charge of operation until his resignation in 1903. He later continued for some years in consulting practise, and was connected with many projects of importance, including the Chicago drainage canal, and the water supplies of Washington, San Francisco, and Manila. He was also one of the experts of the Metropolitan Sewerage Commission of New York City.

Fitzgerald was a distinguished lover and patron of art. Soon after his return to Boston in 1871 he became a collector. In 1913 he erected in Brookline his art gallery, an attractive brick building near his house, which became a center of interest in paintings, and Korean and Chinese pottery and porcelains. His gallery was open daily and was a gathering place on Sunday afternoons for his family and friends. Here he will perhaps be best remembered, easy and calm in manner, interesting and illuminating in conversation, and always kindly.

[Desmond Fitzgerald, *Family Notes* (1911); *Who's Who in America,* 1926–27; *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* Jan. 1927, pp. 63–72; *Trans. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers,* vol. XCII, 1928, pp. 1656–61.] H.K.B.

**FITZGERALD, EDWARD** (Oct. 26, 1833–Feb. 21, 1907), Roman Catholic prelate, was born in Limerick, Ireland, of an able family of Celtic and German Palatinate descent. He accompanied his parents to America in 1849 and soon after entered the Lazarist Seminary at the Barrens, Mo., from which he transferred to Mount St. Mary's Seminary, Cincinnati. On the completion of his theological studies at Mount St. Mary's, Emmitsburg, Md., he was ordained by Archbishop Purcell, Aug. 22, 1857, and assigned to St. Patrick's Church, Columbus, which was then under interdict for the insubordination of the trustees. During his pastorate of nine years, he organized a model parish. On June 22, 1866, he was preconized as bishop of Little Rock, Ark. Following his consecration by Archbishop Purcell on Feb. 3, 1867, he set forth for his war-torn, bankrupt diocese which had only five priests, 1,600 scattered communicants, and three charitable institutions under the Sisters of Mercy. He lived the life of an itinerant missionary and was preaching the Gospel on the frontier when he was called to the Vatican Council in Rome. In this assembly, on July 13, 1870, in the preliminary ballot on the doctrine of infallibility, Fitzgerald voted negatively. Unlike fifty-five of his brother bishops in the same group who took occasion to retire from Rome, Fitzgerald remained for the final ballot a few days later when only he and Aloisio Ricci of Cajazzo, Italy, voted *non placet.* However, when the dogma was pronounced, he "testified his acceptance of the decree on the papal primacy and infallibility to the Holy Father himself" (F. J. Zwierlein, *The Life and Letters of Bishop McQuaid,* II, 1926, 60). This determined attitude did not appear to injure Fitzgerald's position, though a leading Catholic editor, James McMaster of the *Freeman's Journal,* never grew tired of repeating that "the Bishop of Little Rock had in vain butted his head against the Big Rock" (United States Catholic Historical Society, *Historical Records and Studies,* March 1921, p. 15). Fitzgerald remained in his obscure diocese, though his name was third on the list of nominees for Purcell's coadjutor,

until his resignation and retirement to St. Joseph's Infirmary at Hot Springs about a year before his death.

As ruler of the diocese, Fitzgerald was unusually active and capable. Unable to obtain a sufficient number of secular priests for an impoverished people, he called upon the Benedictines at St. Meinrad, Ind., who established an abbey at Spielerville or Subiaco in Logan County (1876) and founded Subiaco College (1887), and upon the Fathers of the Holy Ghost from Marienstatt, who settled near Morrillton (1879). Around these foundations, thriving German communities developed. The bishop also took great interest in a Polish settlement at Marche, and the Italian communities at Sunnyside, Barton, New Gascony, and Tontitown. In 1883, he represented the province of New Orleans at the conference of American bishops in Rome in preparation for the meeting of the Third Plenary Council of Baltimore (1884). As a member of the latter, he urged prudent caution in imposing compulsory parochial education. This did not imply a lack of interest in Catholic education, however, for during his life he aided in the establishment of eight academies, and built twenty-nine schools in forty-one parishes, as well as two colored industrial schools at Pine Bluff. Above all, he left to his successor a harmonious diocese of 20,000 people under sixty secular and religious priests.

[*The Cath. Encyc.* (1910), vol. IX; J. D. G. Shea, *The Hierarchy of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.* (1886), pp. 275–76; J. H. Lamott, *Hist. of the Archdiocese of Cincinnati, 1821–1921* (1921), p. 353; *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; D. T. Herndon, *Centennial Hist. of Ark.* (3 vols., 1922).] R.J.P.

**FITZGERALD, EDWIN** [See Foy, Eddie, 1856–1928].

**FITZGERALD, OSCAR PENN** (Aug. 24, 1829–Aug. 5, 1911), Methodist bishop, author, son of Richard and Martha Jones (Hooper) Fitzgerald, was born in Caswell County, N. C., and died in Monteagle, Tenn. His father and mother were intensely pious. They regularly attended revivals and camp-meetings, and Oscar at the age of four had already seen much of such matters. At that time one of his favorite diversions was to assemble a group of his playmates and preach to them, calling them to repentance after the approved formulas. He attended the schools of the community until he was thirteen, when he went to Lynchburg, Va., to take a position in a newspaper office. Soon after his father enlisted for the Mexican War, and he was obliged to go home and help support his mother. He did this by running a country school. Upon the return of his father he went to Richmond to work for John



Moncure Daniel [*q.v.*], then editor of the *Examiner*. There he read widely and attended many lectures—among others, the one given by Poe on the poetic principle. After several years in Richmond, he lived for a brief time in Columbia, S. C., and in Macon, Ga. In Macon, during a protracted illness, he found his thoughts running on religion, and on his recovery he felt a strong religious bent. In 1853 he entered the Methodist ministry and in 1854 was sent to Savannah. He developed into an effective preacher, always somewhat dominated in his method by the far from subtle clerical models he had observed in his childhood. He had the faculty of making the unrighteous doubtful of their final welfare, and when he had been in Savannah about a year his superiors determined to send him to California as a missionary. He set out by way of New Orleans, and at Enon, Ala., on Feb. 16, 1855, he was married to Sarah Banks. In California, after preaching for a while, he became editor of the *Pacific Methodist Advocate* and the *Christian Spectator*; and although he was openly sympathetic with the South in the Civil War, he was from 1867 to 1871 state superintendent of public education. In 1872 he was offered the Democratic nomination for the United States Senate. From 1878 to 1890 he edited the Nashville, Tenn., *Christian Advocate*, and in 1890 he was made a bishop. He continued to reside in Nashville. In 1880 he published *California Sketches*, some notes on his experiences in the West; a "Second Series" followed in 1881. *Glimpses of Truth*, made up of sententious, pious extracts from the *Advocate*, was published in 1883. A small volume of the same general tenor, *The Whetstone*, offering a thought for every day in the year, was published in 1897. *Upper Room Meditations* (1903) is smoother in its approach but essentially the same kind of book. The bishop's most notable writing was a series of biographies of great or near-great Southern religionists —*Dr. Summers* (1884), *John B. McFerrin* (1888), *Judge Longstreet* (1891), some sketches under the title *Centenary Cameos* (1885), and *Eminent Methodists* (1896). These works, while valuable as social history, do not always retain the briskness and charm found in them by a generation familiar with their theme; they are sentimental and discursive, likely at any time to break into apostrophe to some place or person or state of affairs quite irrelevant to the subject in hand. *Sunset Views* (1901) and *Fifty Years* (1903) are primarily autobiographical, but they contain a number of informal essays and the briefs of several lectures and sermons. They seem to vouch so far as concerns the personal qualities of their au-

thor for great sweetness and modesty, for a lovable thing almost like shyness. During the last ten years of his life he was infirm in health and unable to carry out the active duties of his office.

[Sources not already named: *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; the *Independent*, Sept. 20, 1900; *N. Y. Tribune*, Aug. 6, 1911; *Nashville Banner*, Aug. 7, 1911; *Christian Advocate*, Aug. 11, 1911.] J.D.W.

**FITZGERALD, THOMAS** (Dec. 22, 1819–June 25, 1891), editor, publisher, playwright, was born in New York City, in a building in Franklin Square which stood on the site later occupied by the publishing house of Harper & Brothers. He removed to New Brunswick, N. J., at an early age and became connected with the *Fredonian*, then the only newspaper issued there. Having learned the practical work of journalism, he returned to his native city as a reporter on the New York *Commercial Advertiser*, but while still a youth he went to Tallahassee, Fla., where he was made editor of the *Tallahassean*. In 1847 he left the South and settled in Philadelphia. With George C. Foster, Robert G. Govett, and John F. Carter, he organized a company to publish a weekly newspaper called the *City Item*. This was first issued Sept. 25, 1847, but it did not prosper, and at the end of its second year Fitzgerald had bought the shares of his partners and was issuing the paper himself. In 1850 he purchased the *Pennsylvania Volunteer*, and subsequently the *Fireside Visitor* and the *Bazaar*. These were incorporated with his original paper, which was published under different headings during his ownership, and which, on Sept. 10, 1870, appeared as an afternoon daily entitled the *Evening City Item*. As such it was a pioneer in developing modern methods of distribution for afternoon newspapers, and due to the excellent system which was organized, the paper at one time claimed to have a circulation of 90,000 copies a day.

Through the columns of the *Item*, Fitzgerald advocated many needed and progressive reforms. He urged the construction of street railways, the removal of unsightly market houses which then cluttered some of the main streets of Philadelphia; he called for the uniforming of the police, the establishment of the fire and police telegraph system, and the erection of a public morgue. Having traveled over a considerable part of the United States, he was unfavorably impressed with the characteristic and severe red brick fronts of Philadelphia buildings, and started the movement which resulted in the building of modern stone structures, of more attractive architecture. As a member of the board of controllers of the public schools in the city, he worked for the improvement of school buildings, and for the introduction of music into the schools. His personal interest in music was shown by his early advocacy of the Academy of Music as a suitable home for grand opera in Philadelphia. All of his reforms were realized. When baseball was becoming popular through the organization of professional and semi-professional clubs, Fitzgerald's newspaper was the first, and for a long time the only Philadelphia journal which devoted space to reporting the games. This was due, no doubt, to the fact that for five years, from 1860 to 1865, he was president of the Athletic Base Ball Club, which he had helped to organize.



Not only music but art and the drama attracted Fitzgerald. He assembled a fine gallery of paintings, and for half a dozen or more years, produced a number of dramas which met with success. The first of these was *Light at Last*, first played at the Arch Street Theatre, Philadelphia, Dec. 30, 1867. It was followed by *Patrice, or the White Lady of Wicklow* with Laura Keene in the title-rôle, *Wolves at Bay, Tangled Threads, The Regent, Who Shall Win, Perils of the Night*, and *Bound to the Rock*. For many years the journalist made an annual tour of Europe, and wrote for his newspaper most entertaining and sprightly letters. While on such a trip in 1891, he became ill, and died in London. His remains were brought to Philadelphia where they were buried. His wife was Sarah Levering Liter, daughter of Dr. George W. Liter. Four sons and one daughter survived him.

[*Public Ledger* (Phila.), June 26, 1891, for obituary sketch; and the *Proof-Sheet* (Phila.), Sept. 1870.] J.J.

**FITZGIBBON, CATHERINE** [See IRENE, SISTER, 1823–1896].

**FITZHUGH, GEORGE** (Nov. 4, 1806–July 30, 1881), lawyer, sociologist, was born on what was known as the Brenttown tract, in Prince William County, Va. His father was Dr. George Fitzhugh of "Belmont," King George County, and his mother Lucy Stuart of "Mt. Stuart," of the same county. His paternal grandfather was John Fitzhugh, who married Alice Thornton. George Fitzhugh regarded himself as a descendant of William Fitzhugh, the immigrant, who was military commandant and land agent under Lord Fairfax in Northern Virginia in the seventeenth century, and of a hardly lesser personage, Col. William Fitzhugh, of "Marmion," Stafford, now King George County. Painstaking research, however, has failed to verify the connection. George Fitzhugh's parents, when he was six, moved to the neighborhood of Alexandria, then the center of the aristocratic "Chotank" region,

populated by descendants of Cavaliers and Huguenots. Here he lived until he was twenty-three, receiving scant education in a field school, and afterwards reading law. In 1829 he married Mary Brockenbrough, and seems to have moved then to Port Royal, Caroline County, where he was long engaged in law practise, specializing in criminal cases. He had nine children, three of whom died in infancy. In Buchanan's administration, Fitzhugh was employed in the attorney-general's office, in the land claim department, at which time James D. B. De Bow knew him as a convivial soul. About 1856 he went North, and at the house of his relative, Gerrit Smith, the Abolitionist, met Harriet Beecher Stowe. On this trip he lectured in Boston, and returned to the South a stouter defender of negro slavery. He wrote for the New York *Day Book* and *Richmond* (Virginia) *Examiner,* and from 1857 to 1867 contributed regularly to *De Bow's Review,* generally on the subject of the political economy of the South. His best-known formal works were: *Sociology for the South; or, the Failure of Free Society* (1854), and *Cannibals All! or, Slaves without Masters* (1857). Though not the first to set forth the advantages of the Southern slave system, Fitzhugh deserves credit for seeking to convert the debate, on the Southern side, from a mere negative rebuttal into an aggressive doctrine of positive benefits. He believed that free capitalist society, animated by the *laissez faire* doctrines of Adam Smith, was a gross failure. It deserved the denunciation it received at the hands of the Utopian socialists—Owen, Fourier, St. Simon and their American followers, such as Horace Greeley. Exploitation of the working class by capitalist and landlord plunged the real producers into destitution. But Fitzhugh did not follow the socialists in their plans for reform, which he characterized as chimerical. He found that the patronal economy of the slave South answered every constructive purpose. The masses of workers had more real liberty and their only true security when they were the chattels of their employers, who thus had the strongest interest to preserve their health and morale. To the eve of the Civil War, Fitzhugh was hopeful of converting the North to his doctrines, and of eventually seeing the Southern aristocracy, which he regarded as racially superior to the Northern, dominant in the Union. In his advocacy of manufacturing in the South he was evidently influenced by H. C. Carey. He died at Huntsville, Tex.

[*Virginia Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, from Oct. 1899 to Oct. 1901 for the Fitzhugh genealogy; Fairfax Harrison, *Landmarks of Old Prince William* (1924), I, 186, 194; Fitzhugh's article in *De Bow's Review*, Jan. 1861, and scattered autobiographical references in his books.]

B. M.

**FITZHUGH, WILLIAM** (1651–October 1701), lawyer, was the son of Henry Fitzhugh of the town of Bedford, England, barrister-at-law. He was born at Bedford and was baptized Jan. 10, 1651, according to parish records, though the exact date of his birth is not known. Indeed, practically nothing is known of his life in England. He undoubtedly received an excellent education, including a thorough training in law, probably in his father's chambers. He emigrated to Virginia about 1670 and established himself on the Potomac in what was then Stafford County, Va. There he purchased a large estate and settled down to the life of a planter and exporter, at the same time practising law. Adapting himself quickly to his new environment, he soon acquired a leading place as a lawyer, and his agricultural and mercantile ventures proved extremely successful. In 1682 and 1683 he came to the fore as counsel for the accused in the celebrated Beverley case. Maj. Robert Beverley, clerk of the House of Burgesses, had declined to supply the governor and council with copies of the legislative journals without permission of the House and thus incurred the enmity of the governor. The latter had him arrested on a variety of charges and an application for a writ of *habeas corpus* was refused. Fresh charges were preferred upon which he was found guilty, though he was finally released after begging pardon on his bended knees. Fitzhugh's letter to Beverley relative to his rights is extant and displays deep knowledge on some extremely intricate legal questions (*Virginia Magazine, post,* October 1893). He was a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses for some years and found himself on two occasions involved in legal entanglements in which he was charged with misrepresenting his claims for emolument, but apparently he was never brought to trial. In 1687 as lieutenant-colonel of the county militia, he commanded the force which was collected to oppose the raids of the Seneca Indians. In 1692 he prepared a digest of the laws of Virginia, with a preface reviewing their development, which he sent to England with a view to publication, but apparently no steps were taken to implement his wishes, and the manuscript has disappeared. Almost all the information we possess as to the details of his life after 1679 is derived from the remarkable series of letters—213 in number—addressed by him to his relatives and intimates in England, as well as to business men there, the originals of which are in the Harvard Library. They cover the period between May 15,

1679, and Apr. 26, 1699, and are extremely valuable from a historical standpoint in that they afford an intimate insight into the business processes of a prominent Virginia capitalist of those times. He died in Stafford County, Va., in October 1701. He married May 1, 1674, Sarah, daughter of John Tucker of Westmoreland County, Va. His grand-daughter, Sarah, became the wife of Edward Barradall [*q.v.*], attorney-general of Virginia.

["The Fitzhugh Family," in the *Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, Oct. 1899, Jan. 1900; "Letters of Wm. Fitzhugh," *Ibid.*, July 1893 to Oct. 1898 (excepting Apr. 1898); "Will of Wm. Fitzhugh," *Ibid.*, Jan. 1895; P. A. Bruce, *Institutional Hist. of Va. in the Seventeenth Century* (2 vols., 1910); H. R. McIlwaine, ed., *Jours. of the House of Burgesses of Va., 1659/60–1693* (1914).]

H. W. H. K.

**FITZPATRICK, BENJAMIN** (June 30, 1802–Nov. 21, 1869), governor of Alabama, United States senator, was born in Greene County, Ga., the son of William and Anne (Phillips) Fitzpatrick. His forebears came originally from Virginia. His father served in the Georgia legislature for nineteen years. Bereft of both of his parents at the age of seven, his education was severely limited; in fact, he never attended school more than six months. He removed to Alabama in 1816, while it was yet a part of Mississippi Territory, to assist in the planting interests of his elder brothers whose lands lay on the east side of the Alabama River about six miles above Montgomery. He studied law in the office of Judge N. E. Benson and was admitted to the bar at the age of twenty-one years. Soon afterward he formed a professional partnership with Henry Goldthwaite of Montgomery. His legal success is attested by the fact that he was soon elected solicitor of the Montgomery district, in which position he served for two terms. Ill health led him to retire in 1827 to a plantation which he had acquired in the Alabama Valley about six miles west of Montgomery. For twelve years he engaged exclusively in planting, developing one of the most attractive estates in the region. Here, "surrounded by all the comforts wealth can bring, he dispensed a boundless hospitality" (Brewer, *post*, p. 240).

During the year that Fitzpatrick abandoned law for planting he married Sarah Terry Elmore, a member of one of the most distinguished families of the state, and by his marriage also became the brother-in-law of Dixon H. Lewis [*q.v.*], the state's most powerful state-rights leader and a member of Congress from 1829 until his death in 1848. This union laid the basis of Fitzpatrick's political fortunes. In 1840 he was called out by the Democratic party convention to stump the state for Martin Van Buren, who was being sorely pressed by the Whigs. He showed himself a man of unusual talents in this campaign and was chosen by his party for the governorship before the end of the year. He was elected the following year over James W. McClung, an independent Whig candidate. He was reëlected without opposition for a second term. Fitzpatrick's messages to the legislature were remarkable documents for one who had never had the advantage of schools. His administration is notable for the overthrow of the state banking system which had degenerated into a public evil.

At the end of his second term he repaired again to his plantation, and, his first wife having died in 1837, in 1846 he was married to Aurelia Rachel Blassingame of Marion, Ala. From planting he was called back into politics in 1848 by Gov. Chapman to fill the unexpired term of Dixon H. Lewis, in the United States Senate. In 1853 he was appointed by Gov. Collier to fill the vacancy in the federal Senate caused by the resignation of William R. King who had been elected vice-president of the United States. Two years later he was elected to the Senate for a full term of six years. His high standing in that body is indicated by the fact that he was chosen president *pro tempore* in 1857 and served in that capacity till 1860. The National Democratic Convention, held at Baltimore in 1860, offered him the nomination for vice-president on the Douglas ticket. This he declined, probably because there was no chance for victory, though he himself declared that he could not run with Douglas because he did not approve the "squatter sovereignty" doctrine.

Fitzpatrick was by nature conservative and imperturbable. Though a personal and political friend of Yancey, he opposed the latter's "Alabama Platform" and ranged himself by the side of King, Winston, Collier, Campbell, and Hilliard to prevent Yancey and Samford from taking Alabama out of the Union in 1850. Though an ardent Southerner, he held steadfastly to the view, down to the outbreak of hostilities, that secession was not the proper remedy for the South's grievances, well founded though they were. But when secession came he withdrew from the federal Senate and supported wholeheartedly the Southern cause. When the war was over he undertook to help reconstruct the state in a manner acceptable to President Johnson, but was for a time imprisoned with other prominent leaders. In 1865 he was unanimously elected to preside over the constitutional convention assembled in pursuance of President Johnson's plan of reconstruction. This was his last public function, for soon afterward he was disfranchised. He maintained, how-

ever, a lively interest in public questions until his death.

[W. Brewer, *Alabama* (1872); W. G. Brown, *Hist. of Ala.* (1900); J. W. Du Bose, *The Life and Times of Wm. L. Yancey* (1892); Wm. Garrett, *Reminiscences of Public Men in Ala.* (1872); A. B. Moore, *Hist. of Ala.* (1927), vol. I; T. M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.* (1921), vol. III; *Trans. Ala. Hist. Soc.*, vol. IV (1904); B. F. Riley, *Makers and Romance of Ala. Hist.* (n.d.); *Mobile Daily Register*, Nov. 23, 1869.]

A. B. M.

**FITZPATRICK, JOHN BERNARD** (Nov. 15, 1812–Feb. 13, 1866), third Roman Catholic bishop of Boston, was born in Boston and died there though he had traveled extensively in his lifetime. His parents were Bernard Fitzpatrick and Eleanor Flinn, both natives of Tullamore, Ireland, who settled in Boston in 1805, coming from Baltimore where there had been family connections since colonial days. Through his father he was kinsman of the Fitzpatricks of Upper Ossory whose coat of arms Pope Pius IX combined with that of the See of Boston when appointing him Assistant at the Pontifical Throne (*Ecclesiastical Review*, July 1911, p. 5). His mother was a Daughter of the American Revolution, her father, James Flinn, who lies buried on Boston Common, having served with the Massachusetts militia before his marriage in Baltimore to the beautiful Mary Kinsella, a descendant of William Bard, the founder of Bardstown, Ky.

From his mother, who taught for a time at the Boylston School, he received his early training. Later he attended the Adams School and the Boylston School, under Master Fox, where he was a brilliant student. In September 1826, he entered the famous Boston Latin School from which he was graduated in June 1829. References to his school friendships appear in *Early Memories* (1913, p. 56), by Henry Cabot Lodge, whose uncle, George Cabot, was a classmate, and also in the *Ode on the 250th Anniversary of Boston Latin School* (privately printed, n.d.), by Thomas Parsons [*q.v.*], the Dante scholar and poet, who also graduated at the same time. His course was strictly classical and was guided chiefly by Benjamin Apthorp Gould, Frederick Percival Leverett, and Samuel Parker Parker.

College studies were made at the historic Collège de Montréal which he entered in September 1829. Here, after four years of study under the priests of the Société de Saint-Sulpice, most influential of whom was Rev. John Larkin (United States Catholic Historical Society, *Historical Records and Studies*, vol. IV, pt. 1, 1906, p. 97), John Fitzpatrick sustained so ably his theses in philosophy at a public disputation, August 1833, in competition with J. U. Beaudry, later the Canadian jurist, and Ambrose Manahan, of New



York, afterwards a doctor of the Propaganda, Rome, that he was appointed a *Régent* or tutor on the college faculty. Three years more of study in addition to teaching did not satisfy his own high standard of preparation for the priesthood, so that after a brief visit at home in August 1837 he sailed for Paris.

At the Grand Séminaire de Saint-Sulpice, Paris, where M. Antoine Garnier, the great linguist, who had done parish work in Baltimore while his parents were resident there, was Superior, and the brilliant Abbé Le Hir was professor of Hebrew, he made his final studies for the priesthood (L. Bertrand, *Bibliothèque Sulpicienne*, 1900, vol. II). Already tonsured at Boston by his bishop, Benedict Fenwick, S. J., Sept. 8, 1834 (dismissorial letters in Bibliothèque St.-Sulpice, Montreal), he received minor orders Dec. 22, 1838, at the hands of Mgr. de Quélen, Archbishop of Paris; subdiaconate May 28, 1839, and diaconate Dec. 21, 1839, both from Mgr. Blanquart de Bailleul, then Bishop of Versailles; and priesthood June 13, 1840, *sede vacante*, in the Church of St. Sulpice, from the hands of Mgr. Pierre Dominique Marcellin Bonamie, titular Archbishop of Chalcedon and second superior of the Picpussiens (Records of the *Société de Saint-Sulpice*, Paris). His priestly life in Boston, though brief, was of that superior quality which warranted his advancement to the episcopacy. Accordingly, in the new division of New England following the Fifth Provincial Council of Baltimore, he was consecrated Bishop of Callipolis and coadjutor of Boston Mar. 24, 1844, in the Chapel of the Convent of the Visitation at Georgetown, D. C. On Aug. 11, 1846, upon the death of Bishop Fenwick [*q.v.*], he succeeded to the See of Boston.

Fitzpatrick's episcopal career was a series of worrisome problems and of personal triumphs. His chief duty was the organization of the diocese to meet the needs of the great Irish immigration which began almost immediately after he was enthroned. Out of this underlying problem came many others, including the dispute over Bible reading in the public schools (1859), the inspection of the convents (1854), and the opposition to Catholic schools and colleges (1849–65). Had it not been that the Bishop was especially gifted in diplomacy, the course of church and state in Massachusetts might have been much more uneven than it has been. A man of letters himself, his great care was for the higher education of his clergy, and, through them, of the people. To this end he established regular annual collections for the assistance of diocesan theological students; invited priests distinguished for cultural

talents to work in the diocese, even temporarily; encouraged the Jesuits, already at Holy Cross College, to rebuild there, to take over St. Mary's parish, Boston, start Boston College, and renew the Abenaquis mission in Maine; invited the Sisters of Notre Dame from Cincinnati to teach in the parochial schools; approved the establishment by diocesan priests of the weekly *Boston Catholic Observer,* 1847–49; and acted as European agent for the foundation of the Provincial Seminary at Troy, N. Y. (Farley, *post;* Gabriels, *post*).

Recognition of his personal talents came largely from the literary world, though he had no time to prepare anything for publication save a few letters and pastorals which, for the most part, are hidden in the files of the *Pilot.* He was invited to be a member of the Thursday Evening Club of congenial Bostonians (Edward Warren, *The Life of John Collins Warren,* 1860, I, 371). Harvard College, which was denied his allegiance in undergraduate days, made him an alumnus in 1861, the only Catholic bishop ever to receive the degree of doctor of sacred theology from that institution. In 1862 he was invited to become a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

Disinclined to ostentation of any kind, simple and retiring in his tastes, Bishop Fitzpatrick would have been glad to have relinquished the dignity and distinctions which he carried so gracefully had he been allowed to choose his own career in the Church. The exigencies of the period, however, required unremitting service from those most competent, and obedience as well as strong faith was among his virtues. The apostle of temperance, Father Mathew, the Vatican astronomer, Father De Vico, S. J. (A. J. Thébaud, *Three-Quarters of a Century,* 1904, III, 343), the American philosopher, Orestes Brownson (the *Convert,* 1877, p. 280), all received from him a gracious reception and warm encouragement. The members of many old New England families, carried into membership in the Catholic Church on the tide of the Oxford movement, turned to him for sincere sympathy and sound advice and found both. Gov. Andrew and the statesmen of the time relied upon his loyal integrity and judicious influence. Yet, although he was appraised by the first personal representative of the Holy Father to visit America, Cajetan, Cardinal Bedini, as one of the three ablest bishops of the United States at the time (1853), his reputation to-day endures only within the confines of the diocese which he organized in spite of tremendous obstacles, where his personal character forms a great part of the background of the history of the Catholic Church in New England. In appearance he was tall and well-poised, with regular features and high forehead. His figure is close to that of Gov. Andrew in the bas-relief "Departure for the War" on the Soldiers and Sailors Monument on Boston Common. His body rests in the crypt of the Cathedral of the Holy Cross which he had planned but was unable to build because of the financial uncertainties of Civil War times.

[The most authentic account of Fitzpatrick's life is found in the pamphlet, *In Memoriam, John Bernard Fitzpatrick* (1866). Obituaries appeared in *Proc. Am. Acad. Arts and Sci.,* VII, 116 (May 29, 1866); *Sadlier's Cath. Dir.,* 1867; *Boston Daily Advertiser,* Feb. 14, 1866. See also R. H. Clarke, *Lives of the Deceased Bishops* (1872), II, 310; John Murphy Farley, *The Life of John, Cardinal McCloskey* (1918); Henry Gabriels, *Hist. Sketch of St. Joseph's Provincial Seminary, Troy, N. Y.* (1905). The date of Fitzpatrick's birth is usually given as Nov. 1, 1812. That given above, Nov. 15, is based on baptismal records.] M. T. R.

**FITZPATRICK, MORGAN CASSIUS** (Oct. 29, 1868–June 25, 1908), educator, congressman, was born at Tuscaloosa, Ala., the son of Louisa (Cross) and Joel M. Fitzpatrick who had recently moved from Tennessee and in 1874 returned to that state. Young Fitzpatrick, brought up on a farm in Smith County, was educated in the common schools of his community, at Elmwood Institute in Tennessee, at National Normal University, Lebanon, Ohio, and graduated from the law college of Cumberland University, Tenn., in 1890. Of robust physique, magnetic personality, and considerable mental endowments, he began a varied and promising career. Making his home in Hartsville, in Trousdale County, where in 1894 he married Maggie May De Bow, he taught school, practised law, became county superintendent of education (1893–94), edited the *Hartsville Vidette* (1895–96), and was elected in 1894 as representative from Trousdale, Sumner, and Wilson counties to the lower house of the Tennessee legislature. As a legislator, holding the chairmanship of the committee on education and common schools, he displayed qualities of energy and leadership. He was reelected to the state House of Representatives and in 1897 was chosen to be its speaker. In the following year he became chairman of the Democratic executive committee of the state, a position that he retained for four years. As a Democratic leader in Tennessee he was instrumental in securing the election of his friend, Benton McMillin, as governor, and was rewarded by him with appointment in 1899 to the office of state superintendent of public instruction. During the four years of Gov. McMillin's two administrations Fitzpatrick retained this position and did much to arouse the people of the state, whose more

wealthy citizens sent their children to private schools and academies, to a realization of the responsibility of the state for an adequate and well-financed system of public education. As legislator and as superintendent he advocated and was instrumental in securing the enactment of a uniform text-book law, a county high-school law that enabled counties to establish public high schools and thus bridge the gap, particularly in evidence in rural counties, between the elementary schools and the colleges and universities, and a law making school districts and civil districts coextensive. To Peabody Normal College (now George Peabody College for Teachers) and to state and county teachers' institutes he gave support as much needed instruments for improving the qualifications of the state's teachers. He sought in many ways to better the state's educational system but he constantly insisted, with some eventual success, that Tennessee's educational defects resulted not primarily from an inadequate system but from "the lack of funds with which to employ better teachers on better salaries and to double the terms of our schools." In 1902 he was elected to the Fifty-eighth Congress. He did not seek reëlection, however, for his health had become seriously impaired. He moved his residence to Gallatin where he practised law until his death.

[Information from Fitzpatrick's brother, Mr. A. J. Fitzpatrick of Castalian Springs, Tenn., Mrs. Isabel Hayes Williams of Johnson City, Tenn., and others; *Who's Who in America*, 1903–05, which is inaccurate in certain details; *Journals* of the House of Representatives of Tenn.; *Reports* of the Superintendent of Public Instruction of Tenn.; obituary in Knoxville *Journal and Tribune*, June 26, 1908.] P. M. H.

**FITZPATRICK, THOMAS** (*c.* 1799–Feb. 7, 1854), trapper, guide, Indian agent, was one of the eight children of Mary (Kiernan) Fitzpatrick, and was born in County Cavan, Ireland. Nothing is known of his early years except that he acquired the fundamentals of a good education. Before he was seventeen he came to the United States. He drifted West and in time seems to have become an Indian trader. He first came into notice as one of the company of trappers engaged by Gen. William Ashley [*q.v.*] for his second expedition up the Missouri in 1823. He took part in the two battles with the Arikaras in that year; and late in September, at Fort Kiowa, a trading-post near the present Chamberlain, S. D., was chosen by Ashley as second in command of a small party under Jedediah S. Smith [*q.v.*], directed to penetrate the Wyoming wilderness. Reaching the Bighorn Mountains, the party wintered with the Crows, and in the following March (1824) crossed to the Green River by South Pass, thus making the effective discovery of that afterward famous thoroughfare. As a leader of trapping parties Fitzpatrick remained with Ashley and his successors—Smith, Jackson, and William L. Sublette—until the summer of 1830, when with James Bridger, Milton G. Sublette, and two others he took over the interests of this firm and formed the Rocky Mountain Fur Company. The latter company was dissolved in 1834, Fitzpatrick, Bridger, and M. G. Sublette continuing the business; but the American Fur Company had become dominant in the mountains, and the partners within a year became its employees.

With the decline of the fur-trade Fitzpatrick varied his trapping ventures by serving as a guide. In 1841 he led the first Pacific-bound emigrant train (the Bidwell-Bartleson company), accompanied by Father De Smet's missionary party, as far as Fort Hall, continuing with De Smet to the Flathead country, in what is now northwestern Montana. On his return the following year he met the White-Hastings Oregon party near Fort Laramie and guided it to Fort Hall. In 1843–44 he served as guide to Frémont's second expedition, and in 1845 to Kearny's expedition to South Pass and to Lieut. J. W. Abert's expedition along the Purgatory and the Canadian rivers. In 1846 he guided Kearny's Army of the West to Santa Fé, continuing with Kearny on the march to California until beyond Socorro, N. Mex., when he was sent East with the dispatches brought from the Coast by Kit Carson.

His many encounters, peaceful as well as belligerent, with the Indians had made him widely known and both feared and respected among them. Because of an accident suffered from the bursting of a rifle they called him "Broken Hand," "Bad Hand," or "Three Fingers," and because of the premature graying of his locks through a terrible experience with the Grosventres they called him also "White Hair." On his arrival at Westport in November 1846, he learned that a new agency—that of the Upper Platte and the Arkansas—had been established and that on Aug. 6 he had been appointed agent. His charges were mainly the Cheyennes, the Arapahos, and certain bands of Sioux, and his field was the region between Fort Laramie and Bent's Fort (after 1849 Bent's second fort, farther down the Arkansas). About 1850 he married Margaret, the daughter of an Indian trader, John Poisal, and an Arapaho woman. In the fall of the year, for some unknown reason, he was removed from his post, but on the demand of the Missouri delegation in Congress was reappointed, Mar. 12, 1851.

In cooperation with Col. D. D. Mitchell, superintendent of the Central Agency at St. Louis, he arranged the great Indian council held near Fort Laramie in September 1851, and negotiated the treaties signed there with the plains tribes north of the Arkansas. On July 27, 1853, at the second Fort Atkinson, near the present Dodge City, Kan., he induced the turbulent Comanches, Kiowas, and Kiowa Apaches to sign a treaty which for a time brought peace. Called to Washington for a conference, he arrived in the capital about Jan. 1, 1854. While stopping at Brown's Hotel he was seized with an attack of pneumonia, which proved fatal. His remains rest in an unmarked grave in the Congressional Cemetery.

Of the three outstanding "mountain men" of the trapper and early emigrant periods—Fitzpatrick, Carson, and Bridger—the first-named was esteemed by his contemporaries as the greatest and the most capable. By a capricious turn of history his achievements were forgotten, while his rivals became famous. His letters in the files of the Indian Office reveal a man of keen intelligence and sound judgment, studious, reflective, and informed, and with an exceptional gift of expression. His skill as a guide was highly praised by De Smet, Frémont, Kearny, and Abert, and his efficiency as an Indian agent by virtually all who were acquainted with his work. He treated the Indians with a justice that won their confidence and admiration and caused him to be long remembered by them—in the words of Chief Little Raven, of the Arapahos, in 1865—as "the one fair agent" they had ever had.

[This sketch is based on researches of the writer and of Prof. LeRoy R. Hafen for the forthcoming book, *Broken Hand, the Life-Story of Thomas Fitzpatrick*; and on information from Mrs. M. G. McCarthy, grandniece of Fitzpatrick. Published sources include Frémont's reports, *Sen. Doc. No. 243*, 27 Cong., 3 Sess., and *Sen. Doc. No. 174*, 28 Cong., 2 Sess.; Kearny's and Abert's reports, *Sen. Doc. No. 1, No. 438*, 29 Cong., 1 Sess. References are found in H. M. Chittenden, *The Am. Fur Trade of the Far West* (1902); H. M. Chittenden and A. T. Richardson, *Life, Letters and Travels of Father Pierre-Jean De Smet, S. J.* (1905); E. L. Sabin, *Kit Carson Days* (1914); W. J. Ghent, *The Road to Oregon* (1929); J. C. Alter, *Jas. Bridger* (1925); H. C. Dale, *The Ashley-Smith Explorations* (1918); J. S. Robb, under pseud. of "Solitaire," in the *St. Louis Reveille*, Mar. 1, 1847. An obituary was published in the *Daily Globe* (Washington, D. C.), Feb. 9, 1854.]

W. J. G.

**FITZSIMMONS, ROBERT PROMETHEUS** (June 4, 1862–Oct. 22, 1917), alias "The Cornishman," "The Antipodean," "Fighting Bob," "Freckled Bob," "Ruby Robert," and "The Village Blacksmith," a pugilist, actor, and gentleman of leisure, was born in Helston, Cornwall, England. When he was only a child, his parents emigrated to Timaru, New Zealand, where his father opened a blacksmith shop in which Robert toughened his muscles for some years. Though reared in a highly devout atmosphere—"My mother," he once said, "believed everything in the Bible, and the old man was worse than mother about religion"—he soon showed a stronger preference for boxing than for theology; and from 1880 to 1890 he acquired an ever-increasing reputation as New Zealand's most promising pugilist. Having come to San Francisco in 1890, he shortly leaped into fame by winning the world's middleweight championship from Jack Dempsey, the "Nonpareil," at New Orleans on Jan. 14, 1891. His most notable victory came on Mar. 17, 1897, when he whipped James J. Corbett at Carson City in a fight that lasted fourteen rounds. Until the last round Corbett seemed to be winning with ease; but in that round Fitzsimmons suddenly drove a terrific left-hand blow to the pit of Corbett's stomach and then smashed the same fist against Corbett's jaw. In less than three seconds Fitzsimmons had accomplished three epochal feats: he had knocked out an Irishman on Saint Patrick's Day, he had won the heavyweight championship of the world, and he had invented the terrible "solar plexus punch" that will always be associated with his name. In an athletic sense, however, Fitzsimmons was already old; and on June 9, 1899, he lost his crown to James J. Jeffries in the eleventh round of a battle at Coney Island. The next year he quickly disposed of those two redoubtable fighters, Tom Sharkey and Gus Ruhlin; but in 1902 Jeffries again laid him low, although Fitzsimmons broke all the knuckles of his right hand against Jeffries's ponderous jaw. "I felt them bust in my glove like a piece of chalk," Fitzsimmons explained. From 1903 to 1914 the aged veteran fought eight times; his last battle was waged in his fifty-second year. Though he engaged in over 360 fights, he died without a scar.

Fitzsimmons has been aptly described as "a cannon-ball on a pair of pipe-stems." His knock-kneed legs were so lean that he wore thick underwear to hide their thinness, and he weighed barely 160 pounds; but he had the shoulders and arms of a giant. In action he preferred to stand still, with his left foot advanced and his body weaving around on his hips; when he did move, he awkwardly shuffled along in a flat-footed fashion. His powerful torso was crowned by a small head scantily covered with ragged wisps of sandy hair, beneath which two quizzical blue eyes blinked innocently amid a mass of freckles. He was easy-going, good-natured, and rather sentimental. He lost most of his money to various fleecers and sharpers; he liked to sing old-fash-

ioned hymns in his high, falsetto voice; and when he defeated Corbett, he wept with such copious joy that his wife compelled him to desist.

He was married four times, though the name of his first wife, by whom he had one son, is unknown. In 1894 he married Rose Julian, an acrobat, who bore him two sons, Robert and Martin, and a daughter, Rosie. Rose died in 1904, and the next year he wedded Julia May Gifford, a singer, who was touring with him in a play called "A Fight for Love." A few months later she left him for another man with whom Fitzsimmons wished to fight a duel; but common sense finally triumphed, and in 1915 he married Temo Ziller, an Italian, with whom he lived until his death from double pneumonia while he was on a vaudeville engagement in Chicago. A little later, his wife was denied a petition that she might exhume his corpse in order to remove the diamonds that studded his teeth.

[Robt. H. Davis, *"Ruby Robert," Alias Bob Fitzsimmons* (1926); *Physical Culture and Self-Defense* (1901), by Robert Fitzsimmons, with introduction by A. J. Drexel Biddle; Henry Sayers, *Fights Forgotten* (n.d.); Jeffery Farnol, *Famous Prize Fights* (1928); various newspaper items, notably *Chicago Tribune*, Oct. 22, 1917, and *N. Y. Times*, Oct. 19, 20, 22, 23, 25, 29, and Dec. 16, 1917.]

R. F. D.

**FITZSIMMONS, or FITZSIMONS, THOMAS** (1741–Aug. 26, 1811), congressman, was born in Ireland. As a youth he went to Philadelphia, where he embarked on a mercantile career. On Nov. 23, 1761, he married Catharine Meade, daughter of a prosperous and influential merchant, Robert Meade, the great-grandfather of Gen. George G. Meade. A few months later, he formed a partnership with his brother-in-law under the firm-name of George Meade & Company, which carried on an extensive mercantile and commercial business, particularly with the West India Islands. FitzSimons not only warmly espoused the cause of the colonists in the controversy with England but, after the opening of hostilities, raised and commanded a company of militia, which saw service in a number of important campaigns. In addition, he served on the Council of Safety and the Navy Board and took an active part in the construction of fire ships and other military equipment. Near the end of the war, George Meade & Company contributed £5,000 (Flanders, *post*) towards a general subscription for the immediate necessities of the army. FitzSimons was elected in 1782 to the new Congress established under the Articles of Confederation. In the closing months of the war he labored strenuously to induce the government to pay all the arrears due to the soldiers, since he felt that the meeting of this obligation should precede their demobilization. He became a member of the Pennsylvania Board of Censors in 1783; and later he served several terms in the state legislature. As a member of the Convention that framed the Federal Constitution of 1787, he took an active part in the debates, advocating, among other things, the establishment of a strong national government, the placing of rigid restrictions on suffrage and office-holding, the conferring upon Congress of the power to tax imports and exports, and the granting to the House of Representatives and the Senate equal authority in the making of treaties.

In 1789, he was elected to the first national House of Representatives, where he served until 1795. He identified himself immediately with those members who supported Hamilton in his nationalistic measures and he was in accord with practically the entire program of the Federalist party. From the opening of the Federal Convention of 1787 until his retirement from Congress he advocated persistently the making of provisions for the retirement of the debt of the United States and the levying of a protective tariff for the encouragement of manufactures. After his defeat in the election of 1794 by a Democrat, John Swanwick, he retired to private life. With the exception of a position on the commission for the liquidation of the claims of British creditors provided for under the Jay Treaty, he held no political offices. Nevertheless, he continued to manifest intense interest in public questions and was frequently consulted by the federal and the state governments. On a number of occasions, he joined Stephen Girard, Robert Morris, Joseph Ball, Charles Pettit, James Coxe, and others to memorialize Congress on the question of "the spoliations of France on American commerce" and the interference with American trade by British cruisers. FitzSimons was opposed to the establishment of the Embargo on the ground that it was "unjust, impolitic, and oppressive" and that, as a means of coercion, it was "weak, inefficient, and useless." The enforcing law he regarded as an invasion of the principles of civil liberty. In 1810 he served on a committee of Philadelphia business men organized to induce Congress to re-charter the United States Bank.

Although he was conspicuous as a political leader, it was in the establishment of firm foundations in business and commerce that FitzSimons was especially noteworthy. In 1781, he was influential in establishing the first bank of America—the Bank of North America, and became one of its trustees. He was a founder and a director of the Insurance Company of North America and was for many years the president of the

Philadelphia Chamber of Commerce. In 1805, as a result of obligations incurred by Robert Morris and other business associates, he went into bankruptcy. While he recouped his financial losses to a considerable extent, he never regained his former prestige. For many years he was a trustee of the University of Pennsylvania and was interested actively in the advancement of public education in the state. He was a member of the Hibernian Society, was the largest single contributor to the erection of St. Augustine's Church in Philadelphia, and was a participant in many philanthropies. He died in Philadelphia.

[FitzSimons spelled his name thus in signing the Constitution; it has since been variously spelled. Biographical sketches include: Henry Flanders, "Thos. Fitzsimmons," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, II (1878), 306; J. T. Scharf and T. Westcott, *Hist. of Phila.* (1884), vol. I; Henry Simpson, *Lives of Eminent Philadelphians* (1859); J. H. Campbell, *Hist. of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick and of the Hibernian Soc. of Phila., 1771–1892* (1892); J. A. Farrell, "Thos. FitzSimons," *Records Am. Cath. Hist. Soc.*, Sept. 1928.] A. E. M.

**FLAD, HENRY** (July 30, 1824–June 20, 1898), engineer, inventor, was born at the Rennhoff, in the Grand Duchy of Baden, near Heidelberg, Germany, the son of Jacob and Franziska (Brunn) Flad. Less than a year after his birth his father died and his mother moved to Speyer in the Rhine Palatinate, where Flad received his early education. He then took the polytechnic course in the University of Munich and graduated in 1846. After spending two years in the engineering service of the Bavarian government, he took part in the Revolution of 1848 as captain of a company of army engineers. With the collapse of this movement, Flad was forced to flee his native land and sailed for the United States, landing in New York in the autumn of 1849. After serving for a short time as a draftsman in an architect's office there, he secured a position as an engineer in the construction of the New York & Erie Railroad. For the succeeding eleven years he was engaged in railroad construction work both in the East and Middle West. With the outbreak of the Civil War Flad enlisted in the Union army and served admirably in the "Engineer Regiment of the West," maintaining railroad communication and building defensive works, and passing through all the grades from private to colonel. After the war he returned to St. Louis and as assistant engineer to James P. Kirkwood, worked on plans for an improved water supply for St. Louis. Three years later he was made a member of the reorganized board of water commissioners and served continuously for eight years during which time the city's water-works were completed and put into service. Meanwhile he met James B. Eads and when the latter began



the construction of the famous "Eads Bridge," Flad joined him as assistant engineer. Some of the boldest features of this enterprise, such as the method of erecting masonry without false work, were due to Flad.

Following several years of consulting engineering practise, Flad was elected first president of the newly constituted Board of Public Improvements of St. Louis in 1877, which office he held continuously for nearly fourteen years. Through his characteristically determined efforts the city's system of public works was taken out of politics and put on a firm engineering and financial basis, in which respect St. Louis became a model city. In 1890 Flad resigned this office to accept an appointment as member of the Mississippi River Commission, a position which he retained until his death. As an engineer, Flad was remarkable for his great fertility of invention. While a water commissioner, he secured patents for filters and water meters; while with Eads, he devised, among other things, a hydrostatic and hydraulic elevator, deep-sea sounding apparatus, pressure gages, and a pile driver; when in public service, he secured patents for methods of preserving timber and sprinkling streets. He was also interested in transportation, and received a number of patents on electro-magnetic and straight air-brakes, systems of rapid transit, and cable railways. Lastly, while on the Mississippi River Commission, he invented a recording velocimeter and a rheobathometer, and obtained a third patent for a device for indicating the velocity of running fluids. He was a member of the American Society of Civil Engineers (president in 1886); founder of the Engineers' Club of St. Louis (president, 1868–80); and a member of the Loyal Legion. He was twice married: first, to Helen Reichard in Germany, in 1848; and second, to Caroline Reichard at Potosi, Mo., on Sept. 12, 1855 (or 1856). At the time of his sudden death in Pittsburgh he was survived by two daughters and a son.

["Memoir of Henry Flad," *Trans. Am. Soc. of Civil Engineers*, Dec. 1899; abstract from application of Henry Flad for membership in the Military Order of the Loyal Legion, Dec. 4, 1889; *Resolution of Miss. River Commission*, Dec. 5, 1898; *Resolutions of the Board of Public Improvement of the City of St. Louis*, dated June 24, 1898; *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, June 21, 1898; U. S. Patent Office Records; U. S. National Museum correspondence.] C. W. M.

**FLAGET, BENEDICT JOSEPH** (Nov. 7, 1763–Feb. 11, 1850), first Catholic bishop of Bardstown, Louisville, was a posthumous peasant child born in Contournat, Auvergne, France. As his mother died in his infancy, he was reared and educated by an aunt who sent him to the neighboring college of Billom. At the age of

seventeen, he entered the University of Clermont, paying his expenses by tutoring. In 1783 he entered the Sulpician Seminary at Clermont, then went to Issy, near Paris. Ordained in 1786, he taught dogma and moral theology at the Seminary of Nantes and later at the Seminary of Angers where he was associated with John Baptist Mary David [*q.v.*]. When the latter institution was seized by the Revolutionists, Flaget escaped and found refuge with friends in Billom. Then, with the permission of Superior-General Emery, he set sail with Fathers Badin and David for America, where they were welcomed by Bishop Carroll. Flaget was assigned to Vincennes, but was delayed on the way for six months at Pittsburgh because of low water. Here he won the friendship of Gen. Wayne, commandant at the post, to whom he had letters from Carroll. Going down the Ohio on a flatboat, he stopped at the little post of Cincinnati and again at Louisville, a village of a few houses, where his former superior at Issy, Father Richard, was stationed as a missionary. At the falls of the Ohio he met George Rogers Clark, who escorted him to the small French settlement of Vincennes in December 1792. He found affairs there in bad condition, since the Creoles and half-breeds had been long without a priest, but he quickened their religious life, regularized their marriages, and baptized their children. Despite a threatening Indian outbreak, the missionary offered to go on tour among the western tribesmen. He was recalled, however, in 1795, to serve as vice-rector and as a teacher at Georgetown College. There he met President Washington whom he warmly admired. Three years later he was sent to Havana to aid in founding a projected Sulpician Seminary which did not materialize. While in Cuba, he eked out a living by tutoring a wealthy Spanish planter and enjoyed the society of Louis Philippe, an honored exile. He returned to the United States in 1801 bringing a score of Spanish students to St. Mary's in Baltimore, where he taught for eight years. It was at this time that he seriously thought of joining the rigorous Trappist community.

From this quiet retreat he was named by Rome to the newly established See of Bardstown on Bishop Carroll's recommendation and at the suggestion of Father Badin who was still serving the Kentucky missions. Overwhelmed by the appointment, he sought in vain through Carroll and his superior to avoid the honorable burden for which in his humility he felt so unworthy. He went abroad, seeking the advice of Dr. Emery, and was ordered to accept the bishopric with the understanding that he could continue a Sulpician.

Flaget

On his return to Baltimore, he made a retreat for forty days before his consecration by Archbishop Carroll on Nov. 4, 1810, and then journeyed to Bardstown. He found there a primitive missionary diocese with Fathers Nerinckx, Badin, O'Flynn, and four Dominicans serving 1,000 Catholic families and native tribesmen. Flaget entered the work with a will. He did ordinary missionary work, traveling throughout Kentucky, Tennessee, Missouri, the Northwest, and Canada. In 1817, he rode on horseback to St. Louis where he installed Bishop Dubourg. In answer to a petition of Gen. Harrison and the people of Vincennes for a permanent priest, he again visited his old mission. At Detroit he was hospitably received by Gen. Cass whose kindness was frequently noted in various missionary journals. He was always active among the Indians, and in 1818 was a counselor for 10,000 Indians at St. Mary's during a peace conference with federal agents. In 1817, his episcopal labors were somewhat lightened by the appointment of Bishop David as coadjutor. An indication of his growing influence was seen by Rome's request for his advice in the creation of new dioceses, in the Hogan schism, in the controversy between the Sulpicians and the bishop of Quebec, and his frequent services in consecrating newly appointed ecclesiastics.

Resigning in 1832, Flaget was succeeded by Bishop David but when the latter resigned a year later he was again given charge of the diocese with Bishop Chabrat as the new coadjutor. During the cholera year he ministered to the dying until brought to the point of death. Recovering, he spent two years in Europe. He visited all the French dioceses on a papal commission in the interest of the Society for Propagation of the Faith which contributed men and money to the missions of the Middle West. In 1841 the episcopal see was removed to Louisville, necessitating the building of a new cathedral. Nine years later, when Bishop Flaget died, he left to his successor a well-administered diocese, an advanced and preparatory seminary, a high school, four small colleges, eleven academies, a hospital, an orphan asylum, a Good Shepherd home, and the famous monastery of De La Trappe at Gethsemane, Ky.

[*Vie de Mgr. Flaget, Évêque de Bardstown et Louisville, par le Prêtre qui accompagnait . . . pendant les voyages . . . en Europe* (Paris, 1851); R. H. Clarke, *Lives of Deceased Bishops of the Cath. Ch. in the U. S.* (1872), I, 144–63; M. J. Spalding, *Sketches of the Life, Times, and Character of the Rt. Rev. Benedict Jos. Flaget* (1852), and *Sketches of Early Cath. Missions in Ky.* (1844); the *Metropolitan*, IV (1856), 521–30; Cardinal Wiseman, *Essays* (1853), II, 95; B. G. Webb, *The Centenary of Catholicity in Ky.* (1884); J. S. Johnston, *Memorial Hist. of Louisville to 1896* (1896), I, 114 ff.; C. G. Herbermann, *The Sulpicians in the U. S.*

(1916), pp. 143–61 ; Peter Guilday, *The Life and Times of John England* (1927) ; Sister Columba Fox, *The Life of the Rt. Rev. John Baptist Mary David* (1925) ; the *Metropolitan Cath. Almanac for the year . . . 1851.*]

R. J. P.

**FLAGG, AZARIAH CUTTING** (Nov. 28, 1790–Nov. 24, 1873), editor, politician, traced his ancestry from Thomas Flegg, a member of an old Norfolk family, who, leaving Scratby, England, in 1637, settled at Watertown, Mass., in 1641, and whose descendants apparently about 1700 changed their name to Flagg. His father, Ebenezer Flagg, married Elizabeth Cutting of Shoreham, Vt., and resided at Orwell, Vt., where he was born. When eleven years old he was apprenticed to a cousin of his father's, a printer in Burlington, Vt., with whom he spent five years. In 1806 he entered the employ of a firm of publishers, where he found opportunities to remedy the deficiencies of his early education. In 1811 he moved to Plattsburg, N. Y., and on the outbreak of the War of 1812 was commissioned lieutenant and quartermaster in the 36th Regiment, New York militia. He was engaged in the defense of Plattsburg, being present at a number of engagements, and was rewarded by Congress for gallant service. In 1813 he joined the staff of the *Plattsburg Republican,* became its editor, and continued as such till 1825. Entering with ardor into the political field where DeWitt Clinton and Van Buren were the leading New York figures, he developed a capacity for vigorous writing and trenchant speaking which soon brought him to the front. In 1823 he was elected to represent Clinton County in the New York Assembly and subsequently was admitted to the inner circle of the "Albany regency." In 1826 Gov. DeWitt Clinton appointed him secretary of state, an office which he held for seven years. He was elected by the legislature state comptroller under Gov. Marcy in 1834, serving till 1839. In 1842 he was reëlected and continued in the position until the state constitution of 1846 came into operation. During his nine years' tenure of this office he established himself as "an able, methodical, keen and sagacious financier" (Proctor, *post*), though his views regarding public improvements have been stigmatized as short-sighted. In 1842 the legislature adopted the "stop and tax policy" of suspending all public works and imposing a direct tax, pledging a portion of the Erie Canal revenues to provide a sinking fund for the extinguishment of the public debt. Flagg was not, as has been mistakenly asserted, the originator of the scheme, but he was active in its support. He was a strong opponent of the Bank of the United States.

In 1846 he removed to New York City where he took an active part in the organization of the "Barnburners'" faction of the Democratic party, becoming one of its most prominent leaders. In 1852, after the reunion of the Democratic party, he was elected comptroller of the city of New York, and, being reëlected in 1855, held office till 1859, when he retired from public life. His political career was distinguished for his unassailable integrity, consistent adherence to principles, and an unwavering support of Van Buren throughout all the latter's vicissitudes. A believer in "Free speech, Free labor, and Free men," he vehemently combated the pro-slavery sentiment within his party. For fourteen years prior to his death he was totally blind, but this affliction did not affect his naturally high spirits and he continued to the end to take a keen interest in political events. He was a frequent contributor to newspapers on public questions of the day, and was also the author of "Internal Improvements in the State of New York," a series of articles which appeared in Hunt's *Merchants' Magazine* in 1851, and *A Few Historical Facts Respecting the Establishment . . . of Banks . . . in the State of New York from 1777 to 1864* (1868). He was married to Phœbe Maria Coe on Oct. 20, 1814.

[N. G. and L. C. S. Flagg, *Family Records of the Descendants of Gershom Flagg* (1907), p. 48 ; *Ann. Reg.*, 1873, p. 291 ; L. B. Proctor, *The Bench and Bar of N. Y.* (1870), p. 289 ; P. S. Palmer, *Hist. of Plattsburg, N. Y.* (1877) ; DeA. S. Alexander, *A Pol. Hist. of the State of N. Y.*, vols. I and II (1906) ; H. D. A. Donovan, *The Barnburners* (1925) ; J. D. Hammond, *Life and Times of Silas Wright* (1848) ; *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 26, 1873 ; Flagg letters in the Tilden Library, N. Y. Pub. Lib.]

H. W. H. K.

**FLAGG, EDMUND** (Nov. 24, 1815–Nov. 1, 1890), author, diplomat, was born in Wiscasset, Me., the only son of Edmund and Harriet (Payson) Flagg. His ancestor, Thomas Flagg, came to America and was a resident of Watertown before 1641. Graduated with distinction from Bowdoin College in 1835, Edmund with his widowed mother and his sister went soon afterward to Louisville, Ky. There he worked as a tutor, and in 1836 began with the *Daily Journal* a connection which lasted till 1861. During 1837–38 he read law in St. Louis, and wrote articles for the *Daily Commercial Bulletin.* In 1838 he published in two small volumes *The Far West,* originally a series of sketches done for the Louisville *Journal* to describe a summer spent on the Illinois and Missouri prairies. He returned to Louisville in 1839, and between the poems, romances, and plays which he had already begun disseminating, joined with George D. Prentice in publishing the *Literary News Letter.* After a few months, largely for the sake of his health, he went to Vicksburg to help Sergeant S. Prentiss with

his law practice but, as an occasional contributor to the *Daily Whig*, fell into quarrels with the editor of the *Sentinel* and was wounded in the consequent duel. In 1842 he settled in Marietta, Ohio, and through 1843 edited the *Weekly Gazette*. Then he returned to St. Louis, where he edited the *Evening Gazette*, served as court reporter, wrote a book on *Mutual Insurance* (1846), and many plays elucidating for the Mississippi Valley the legends of *Mary Tudor* (1844), *Ruy Blas* (1845), and *Catherine Howard* (1847). His novel *Edmond Dantes*, derived both as to plot-origin and style from *The Count of Monte Cristo*, and so advertised, was published in St. Louis in 1849 and in Philadelphia in 1884. During 1849, as secretary to the American minister in Berlin, he traveled extensively in Europe, and he had scarcely returned to St. Louis, where he set up as a lawyer, before he was appointed consul to Venice. After about two years at that post he again went to St. Louis, where he edited the *Democratic Times*, and wrote in somewhat lyrical prose his two-volume illustrated book, *Venice, the City of the Sea, 1797–1849* (1853). In 1854 he went to Washington, and until 1870—except for the period 1858–60, when he was again primarily a journalist—worked in the civil service, much of the time as a statistician in the Department of State. There he wrote a number of official reports, most notably the *Report of the Commercial Relations of the United States with all Foreign Nations* (4 vols., 1856–57), and composed articles about the West and a variety of other subjects for whoever, apparently, came asking. On Feb. 18, 1862, he married Kate Adeline Gallaher of West Virginia. After 1871 he lived on a farm called "Highland View," near Falls Church, Va. There he wrote his romance *De Molai* (1888), dealing with the suppression of the Templar Knights by Philip the Fourth of France in the fourteenth century. Crowded with intrigue, hazardous escapes, and spectacular descriptions, it is dedicated to the De Molay Mounted Commandery of Washington and is on the title-page expressly commended for "Templar Knights, the whole Masonic Fraternity, scholars, and the public."

[S. H. Lancey, *Native Poets of Me.* (1854); W. T. Coggeshall, *The Poets and Poetry of the West* (1860); G. B. Griffith, *Poets of Me.* (1888); *Bowdoin Coll.*, "List of the Published Writings of Edmund Flagg" and "Obit. Record of the Grads. of Bowdoin Coll.," in *Lib. Bull., June 1891–June 1895* (1895); N. G. and L. C. S. Flagg, *Family Records of the Descendants of Gershom Flagg* (1907); C. A. Flagg, *Descendants of Josiah Flagg* (1920).]

J. D. W.

**FLAGG, GEORGE WHITING** (June 26, 1816–Jan. 5, 1897), genre painter, was born in New Haven, Conn., the son of Henry Collins and Martha (Whiting) Flagg. He traced his descent from Thomas Flagg who emigrated to Massachusetts in 1637. His father, a half-brother of Washington Allston, was a native of South Carolina, but long a resident of New Haven where he practised law and took a prominent part in civic affairs. In 1824 the family moved to Charleston, S. C., for a few years. George Flagg began his study of art in the South and came to be known as a child prodigy. Following his instruction there, he spent eighteen months with his uncle, Washington Allston, and Osgood Bowman in Boston. Then Luman Reed, a wealthy patron of artists, became interested in his work and in 1834 sent him to Europe, where he studied in London, Paris, and Italy. On his return he was for a time with his uncle, but finally settled in New York City, where he was elected an honorary member of the National Academy of Design in 1842 and an academician in 1851. He was again in London in 1861, but returned to New York some five years later. After 1867 he exhibited very little, and in 1879 retired to Nantucket. His personality, keen interest in his profession, and conversational gifts made him a welcome figure in social circles, and he counted many friends among noted artists and writers of his day. On Feb. 14, 1849, he was married to Louisa Henriques of New Haven, Conn., who bore him four children.

To some extent, Flagg's work was purely ideal and done without the use of a model. His early works, previous to study abroad, include: "A Young Greek," "Jacob and Rachel at the Well," and "Murder of the Princes in the Tower." His later paintings include: "Laying of the Atlantic Cable," "Landing of the Pilgrims," "Washington Receiving his Mother's Blessing," frequently engraved, "The Good Samaritan," "Haidee," "The Match Girl," "The Scarlet Letter," "Columbus and the Egg," and a portrait of Washington Allston. The first four of these were Flagg's principal historical works, painted in New Haven for the late James Brewster. "Haidee" depicts a single figure, revealing in its treatment the influence upon Flagg of the Italian masters. The "Mouse Boy" is a homely portrayal of a little street vendor displaying for chance pennies some white mice carried in a box strapped to his neck. Flagg visualized him in his native atmosphere, against Italian skies, with the carefree indolence of a Genoese urchin. Several of Flagg's paintings are in the Luman Reed collection at the New York Historical Society. Among them are "The Woodchopper's Boy," "The Match Girl," "Lady and Parrot," and "The Nun." Some of his best work is in the South, including portraits of the

wife of Gov. Aiken, Judge King, and United States Minister Gadsden.

[N. G. and L. C. S. Flagg, *Family Records of the Descendants of Gershom Flagg* (1907), p. 125; Ernest Flagg, *Geneal. Notes on the Founding of New England* (1926); C. E. Clement and Lawrence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century and Their Works* (1879), I, 255; J. D. Champlin, Jr., *Cyc. of Painters and Paintings*, vol. II (1887); Wm. Dunlap, *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (1834), II, 448; H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867), pp. 404–08; H. W. French, *Art and Artists in Conn.* (1879); J. B. Flagg, *The Life and Letters of Washington Allston* (1892); N. Y. *Evening Post*, Jan. 6, 1897.]

J. M. H.

**FLAGG, JARED BRADLEY** (June 16, 1820–Sept. 25, 1899), painter, clergyman, was born in New Haven, Conn., the son of Henry Collins and Martha (Whiting) Flagg, and brother of George Whiting Flagg [*q.v.*]. He attended a Lancasterian school and later went to Trinity College, Hartford, but did not graduate. At sixteen he began his training in art, receiving instruction from his brother and his uncle, Washington Allston. At this time he painted a portrait of his father which was exhibited at the National Academy and won favorable notice. He settled for a time in Hartford, Conn., where he became prominent as a portrait-painter, but in 1849 he moved to New York. There he studied theology, was ordained a deacon in the Protestant Episcopal Church in 1854, and priest in 1855. He was rector of the church of St. James at Birmingham, Conn. (1854–55), and of Grace Church, Brooklyn Heights, where he remained until 1863. Upon the termination of the latter rectorate he gave up ministerial service. Meanwhile he had continued his painting, having been elected to the National Academy in 1849. On Dec. 30, 1841, Flagg was married, in Hartford, Conn., to Sarah R. Montague of that city. Their son Montague became a well-known genre painter. Mrs. Flagg died Jan. 25, 1844, and on Dec. 1, 1846, he was married to Louisa Hart, daughter of Dr. Samuel Hart of New Britain, Conn. After the death of his second wife, Jan. 18, 1867, he was married, Jan. 19, 1869, to Josephine Bond, daughter of Judge Bond of Cincinnati, Ohio.

Flagg, though perhaps best known as a portraitist, also painted some ideal pictures. His work, characterized by refinement, found contemporary favor with a large circle of people. He was a chosen adviser in the establishment of the Yale Art Library, and to the field of biography he contributed the *Life and Letters of Washington Allston,* published in 1892. His death occurred in New York City. His best-known paintings include: "Angelo and Isabella," from *Measure for Measure* (1849), which won the artist election of the National Academy; "Paul before Felix" (1850); "Poet's Captive" (1877); "Holy Thoughts"; "Grandfather's Pet"; and "Hester Prynne in Prison." Among his portraits are those of Bishop Littlejohn (1880), Chief-Justice Church of New York (1884), Frederick Tappan (1896), John Jay, Reverdy Johnson, Henry Stanbery, Judge Peckham, and several of Commodore Vanderbilt.

[N. G. and L. C. S. Flagg, *Family Records of the Descendants of Gershom Flagg* (1907), pp. 123–26; H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867), p. 408; Ernest Flagg, *Geneal. Notes on the Founding of New England* (1926); H. W. French, *Art and Artists of Conn.* (1879); J. D. Champlin, Jr., *Cyc. of Painters and Painting*, vol. II (1887); F. B. Dexter, *A Cat. . . . of the Portraits, Busts, etc., Belonging to Yale Univ.* (1892); the *Hartford Daily Courant* and *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 26, 1899.]

J. M. H.

**FLAGG, JOSIAH** (May 28, 1737–*c.* 1795), musician, established a liaison in New England between psalmody and the musical forms now called classical. He was born in Woburn, Mass., the son of Martha and Gershom Flagg. On Apr. 7, 1760, in Boston, where he was apparently then residing, he married Elizabeth Hawkes. He has been described as "a man of energy and enthusiasm, and for some time the most important local musician" (W. A. Fisher, *Notes on Music in Old Boston,* 1918, p. 10). His first known musical publication appeared in 1764 as *A Collection of the best Psalm Tunes in two, three and four parts, from the most approv'd Authors, fitted to all Measures, and approv'd by the best Masters, in Boston New England, to which are added some Hymns and Anthems, the Greater part of them never before Printed in America. By Josiah Flagg. Engraved by Paul Revere.* This book introduced the anthem to the English colonies. Its success led Flagg to bring out in 1766 another work bearing on its title page *Sixteen Anthems, Collected from Tans'ur, Williams, Knapp, Ashworth & Stephenson, To which is added, A few Psalm Tunes. Engraved and Printed by Josiah Flagg, and sold by him at his House near the Old-North Meeting-House.* Religious as these pieces were they were regarded as "light music." Flagg was adventuring, however, in the field of secular music. A military band which he founded and drilled gave its first concert June 29, 1769, at Concert Hall, and ended its program with the then popular "British Grenadiers" (*Boston Chronicle,* June 26–29, 1769). A benefit concert advertised for June 7, 1770, was to be adorned by "a duet to be sung by a gentleman who lately read and sung in Concert Hall, and Mr. Flagg," and on May 13, 1771, through a notice in the *Boston Evening Post,* the colonial impresario solicited patronage for a concert on May 17, following, of "vocal and instrumental musick

accompanied by French horns, hautboys, etc., by the band of the 64th Regiment." At another benefit concert, Oct. 4, 1771, Flagg introduced, evidently as a novelty, selections from *Acis and Galatea* "lately composed by Mr. Händel." The latest record of his performances was made when he announced, for Oct. 28, 1773, in Faneuil Hall, his "final Grand Concert," to be given by upwards of fifty performers. Leaving Boston, Flagg settled in Providence, where he is recorded as having served as lieutenant-colonel in Elliott's regiment during the Revolution. With him in the same regiment was his son Josiah. Though little is known of the last years of his life, doubtless it was his "Widow Flagg" for whose relief the flutist, Stone, gave a concert in Boston, Jan. 31, 1795, and who was advertised as the mother of the "miscreant son, Josiah Flagg, junr."

[N. G. and L. C. S. Flagg, *Family Records of the Descendants of Gershom Flagg* (1907); O. G. T. Sonneck, *Early Concert Life in America* (1907); Geo. Hood, *A Hist. of Music in New England* (1846); M. D. Gould, *Church Music in America* (1853); F. L. Ritter, *Music in America* (1883); *Records of the State of R. I.*, vols. VIII–X (1863–65), edited by J. R. Bartlett; and Benj. Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in R. I. . . .* (1850), pp. 88–89. Sonneck's conjecture that Flagg was born about Nov. 5, 1738, is in conflict with the date given in the Flagg genealogy, but can be accounted for by the fact that a Josiah Flagg, son of Josiah and Mary Willis Flagg, was born in Boston, Oct. 22, 1738. The dates of birth and marriage for the subject of this sketch have been taken from the published records of Boston and Woburn, Mass.] F. W. C.

**FLAGG, JOSIAH FOSTER** (Jan. 10, 1788–Dec. 20, 1853), pioneer dentist, anatomical artist, early experimenter in dental porcelain, was born in Boston, the son of Josiah Flagg, Jr., said to be the first native-born American dentist, and grandson of Josiah Flagg [*q.v.*]. His early education was indifferent or less. He was an industrious and ingenious boy who enjoyed labor on the farm or in the workshop, but who, according to a younger brother, "utterly repudiated books." When about sixteen he was apprenticed to learn the trade of cabinetmaker; but shortly after, through "a simple stratagem of his father," he suddenly developed a love of reading, and a desire for study which changed the course of his career. He was sent to an academy at Plainfield, Conn., and in 1811 entered the office of Dr. J. C. Warren as a student in medicine and surgery. While under the latter's tutelage he developed a fine skill in dissecting, and an uncommon mechanical ability in devising and making delicate instruments. Without formal instruction but with a strong native instinct for color and form, he became a considerable artist in painting, designing, and wood-engraving. In 1813 he worked with Dr. Warren in publishing a new edition of Haller's work on the arteries under the title *Anatomical Description of the Arteries of the Human Body*. Flagg reproduced the copper engravings by wood-cuts of his own with such skill that he made a reputation for the book and for himself. Having graduated in 1815 from the Boston Medical College, he began his career as a practising physician and surgeon in Dover, N. H., and at Uxbridge, Mass., then moved to Boston and took up the practise of dentistry. On Oct. 18, 1818, he married Mary Wait. He soon achieved an active dental practise but his interest in general medical problems was never lost. About 1821 he devised for the treatment of long-bone fractures a special apparatus and splints which were used for years in the Massachusetts General and other hospitals, and he was the first dentist to design (1828) a set of extracting forceps to fit the necks of the various forms of human teeth. Flagg's chief contribution to his profession was the making of "mineral teeth," in 1833, after laborious experiments with Dr. N. C. Keep. Prior to this time artificial teeth were carved from hippopotamus teeth or ivory—or human teeth were used—all of which were "corruptible." The story of Flagg's adventures with charlatans in unavailing efforts to purchase mysterious secrets regarding the baking of translucent porcelain, of his own orderly and effective experiments and researches which led to knowledge now fundamental in the manufacture of artificial teeth, is an interesting chapter in the history of dentistry and of porcelain art. He took a prominent part, in 1846, in opposing the granting of a patent on the recently discovered use of sulphuric ether as an anesthetic. He was also one of the early believers in homeopathy, and an ardent teacher of its principles. He founded the School of Design for Women, in Boston, and was interested in a wide range of public activities. Personally he was attractive and approachable, but unhesitating in the expression of opinion. He was uncle to the late Prof. J. F. Flagg of Philadelphia, with whom his name is often confused.

[N. G. and L. C. S. Flagg, *Family Records of the Descendants of Gershom Flagg* (1907); the *Dental News Letter*, July 1854; the *Am. Jour. of Dental Sci.*, July 1854; the *Boston Medic. and Surgic. Jour.*, Jan. 11, 1854; *The Harvard Medic. School* (1905), III, 453. The date of birth is taken from the account of Flagg's life by his brother, John Foster Brewster Flagg, in the *Dental News Letter*. *Index of the Periodical Dental Literature* is unreliable, since it confuses Josiah Foster, John Foster Brewster, and J. Foster Flagg.] W. B. D.

**FLAGG, THOMAS WILSON** (Nov. 5, 1805–May 6, 1884), naturalist, author, second of the ten children of Isaac and Elizabeth Frances (Wilson) Flagg, was born in Beverly, and died in Cambridge, Mass. His father's ancestor,

Thomas Flagg, came from England to Massachusetts in 1637. Thomas Wilson Flagg—he later dropped the first name—graduated from Phillips Andover Academy in 1821, spent a few months at Harvard, and later studied medicine at the Harvard Medical School, 1824–25, and with a doctor in Beverly. He never practised. He was married in Beverly on Jan. 2, 1840, to Caroline Eveleth. His residence was at different times in Beverly, Boston, and Andover, and after 1866 in Cambridge. In Boston, he was an insurance agent, and around 1844, a clerk at the customs-house. Over a long period he wrote articles for the *Atlantic Monthly* and for various political and horticultural magazines. He wrote also a number of books. In the *Analysis of Female Beauty* (1834) he set forth in little essays of alternate verse and prose, with a fair quota of physiognomical details, the qualities of intellect which he held such details to indicate. Ten years later came *The Tailor's Shop: or, Crowns of Thorns and Coats of Thistles. Designed to Tickle Some and Nettle Others; Intended Chiefly for Politicians. Inscribed to Those Whom They May Fit.* This opus, fathered by Pope and mothered by a somewhat bumptious Americanism, flays many of the wicked, two of whom were "Smirk, the City Editor," and "Puff the Poet." In 1861, he published *Mount Auburn. Its Scenes, Its Beauties, and Its Lessons,* a lugubrious compilation of writings by himself and others, relating specifically to the cemetery near Boston, and generally to all mortuary matters everywhere. The first memorably notable evidence of his interest as a naturalist—an interest which dominated his life—was in 1857, when he published *Studies in the Field and Forest. A Prize Essay on Agricultural Education* appeared in 1858, *The Woods and By-Ways of New England* in 1872, and *The Birds and Seasons of New England* in 1875. The last two volumes, a little bulky for practical purposes, were in 1881 divided into three volumes, with new titles, *Halcyon Days, A Year with the Birds,* and *A Year Among the Trees.* He wrote only about subjects which he could investigate without ranging far from home, and he was certainly not an avid scientist, but he observed carefully and affectionately, and he set down his findings in prose which, if impersonal and unsuggestive, has always the merit of clarity and down-rightness. In the dedication to *Woods and By-Ways,* after recalling Thoreau's opinion that he lacked spirit, he undertook to explain himself. "My life," he wrote, "has been too retired for that sort of personal adventure which inspires enthusiasm. Few men save those who from religious motives have retired from the world have lived so little in communication with it as I have. I am not a member of any society or club, of any church or institution, trade, profession, or organization. I have lived entirely without honors, and have never rejected any. My wife and children have been the only companions of my studies and recreations. But, perhaps from this cause alone, I have been very happy."

[Sources not already named: W. G. Barton, "Thoreau, Flagg and Burroughs" in *Essex Inst. Hist. Colls.*, Jan.–Mar. 1885; N. G. and L. C. S. Flagg, *Family Records of the Descendants of Gershom Flagg* (1907); Phillips Acad. (Andover), *Biog. Cat. 1778–1830* (1903); Beverly, Mass., *Vital Records to the End of 1849* (1907); *Boston Transcript,* May 7, 1884.] J. D. W.



**FLAGLER, HENRY MORRISON** (Jan. 2, 1830–May 20, 1913), capitalist and promoter, son of Rev. Isaac and Elizabeth (Morrison) Flagler, was born at Hopewell, just outside of Canandaigua, N. Y. His father, a poor Presbyterian minister, was descended from Zachariah Flegler, a German Palatine who reached the United States about 1710. Young Flagler attended the district school until he was fourteen, when he decided to strike out for himself. By way of the Erie Canal and a lake boat he made his way to Sandusky, Ohio. With some difficulty he secured employment in a country store at Republic, Ohio, at five dollars a month and board. He saved money both here and at Fostoria, Ohio, where he worked later, and about 1850 became a grain-commission merchant at Bellevue, Ohio, and was also interested in a distillery. While in Bellevue he met John D. Rockefeller, then engaged in the produce business in Cleveland, and occasionally sold grain through him. When Flagler had accumulated about $50,000 he moved to Saginaw, Mich., to engage in the manufacture of salt, but lost his entire capital and owed almost as much more.

Flagler then removed to Cleveland, set up again as a grain merchant, and renewed his acquaintance with Rockefeller, who was becoming interested in petroleum. The firm of Rockefeller & Andrews, formed in 1865, became Rockefeller, Andrews & Flagler, two years later, and in 1870, the Standard Oil Company was incorporated. It is generally agreed that, next to Rockefeller himself, Flagler was the strongest man in the organization (Ida M. Tarbell, *post,* I, 50). Rockefeller himself says: "For years and years this early partner and I worked shoulder to shoulder; our desks were in the same room. We both lived on Euclid Avenue a few rods apart. We met and walked to the office together, walked home to luncheon, back again after luncheon, and home again at night. On these walks, when we were away from the office interruptions, we did our thinking, talking and planning together" (*Ran-*

*dom Reminiscences*, 1909, pp. 12–13). Throughout the stormy years of the development of the great organization Flagler was active in its management, and he retained his connection with it until near the end of his life, resigning as vice-president in 1908 and as director in 1911.

In 1883 he visited Florida for the first time and was fascinated by the region, but was annoyed by the poor transportation and hotel facilities. In 1886 he purchased the Jacksonville, St. Augustine & Halifax River Railroad and later some other short lines, which he improved and combined as the Florida East Coast Railway. In 1892 construction was begun southward from Daytona; Palm Beach was reached in 1894, and Miami, then only a clearing, in 1896. Meanwhile he had built a string of palatial hotels along the line; the Ponce de Leon and the Alcazar at St. Augustine, the Ormond at Ormond, the Royal Poinciana and the Breakers at Palm Beach, and the Royal Palm at Miami. In this work of transforming neglected beach and swamp into one of the most luxurious playgrounds in the world he found his second youth. He was also interested in the man of small means who settled along the line, and encouraged agriculture and fruit growing.

Perhaps his greatest achievement was the extension of the railway from Miami to Key West. Much of the fifty miles on the mainland was through the Everglades where it was difficult to make a firm road-bed. Then followed 106 miles over and between the islands. In some cases the shallow water between the keys was filled in with stone. Concrete viaducts were built where this was impossible, or else great drawbridges which permitted shipping to pass. There is one almost continuous bridge seven miles long. All construction was of the most substantial kind. In spite of formidable obstacles, the road was completed in 1912 and formally opened the next year. It materially shortened the line to Cuba. A steamer carries the passengers and ferries take the freight cars, making the journey to Havana in six hours. Meanwhile Flagler had dredged the harbor of Miami, and established a steamship line to Key West and another to Nassau, where he opened the Colonial and Royal Victoria hotels. His total investments in Florida exceeded forty million dollars. While these investments were not unprofitable as a whole, undoubtedly his capital would have brought him greater returns elsewhere.

He married, first, Nov. 9, 1853, Mary Harkness, who had three children, of whom only one, Harry Harkness Flagler, survived his father. On June 6, 1883, he married Ida A. Shourds, who became hopelessly insane. In 1901 the Florida legislature passed a general act making incurable insanity for four years a cause for divorce, and on Aug. 14, 1901, a divorce was granted Flagler. Ten days later, on Aug. 24, he married Mary Lily Kenan of Kenansville, N. C., who survived him, and to whom he left the bulk of his fortune. He died at his home, "Whitehall," at West Palm Beach.

Flagler's career divides naturally into two parts as distinct as if they were separate lives. Brought up in poverty and trained in the stern Rockefeller school, he was a grim, shrewd, rather ruthless man of business, who worked steadily and played little or not at all, until he was fifty-five. In Florida, he continued to work, but also developed a new attitude toward humanity. He thoroughly enjoyed his rôle of builder of a state, and seemed to feel a sense of personal responsibility for every settler on his railroads and for every one of his many employees. They, in turn, repaid him with admiration and loyalty. He built many schools, churches, and hospitals, always insisting that his gifts be anonymous. He read widely, and though sensitive about his increasing deafness, enjoyed conversation with his friends.

[Sources include, *In Memoriam Henry Morrison Flagler* (n.d.), containing the address of Flagler's pastor, Rev. George Morgan Ward, and many newspaper clippings, published in 1915; Ida M. Tarbell, *Hist. of the Standard Oil Co.* (2 vols., 1904) and other accounts of that organization; E. S. Luther, "The Transformation of the Florida East Coast," in *Bankers' Mag.*, Feb. 1909; Edwin Lefèvre, "Flagler and Florida," in *Everybody's Mag.*, Feb. 1910, and other articles, more or less inaccurate, in periodicals; H. G. Cutler, *Hist. of Fla. Past and Present* (1923), I, *passim*; obituaries in *Fla. Times-Union* (Jacksonville), and *N. Y. Times*, May 21, 1913, and *Outlook*, May 31, 1913.] H. T.

**FLAGLER, JOHN HALDANE** (Sept. 3, 1836–Sept. 8, 1922), manufacturer, capitalist, was born at Cold Spring, Putnam County, N. Y., the son of Harvey K. and Sarah Jane (Haldane) Flagler. He attended the academy at Patterson, Dutchess County, N. Y. (not at Paterson, N. J., as usually given), and, in 1854, entered the iron business with his uncles, John and James Haldane of New York, who operated the Greenwich Iron Works. After a visit to Europe to study methods of making iron tubes, he was given charge of the Boston branch of the business in 1860, and furnished some of the iron used in the construction of the *Monitor*, and other boats of this class. With the increasing demand for tubing for the growing oil industry, Flagler and his brother, Harvey K. Flagler, formed in 1867 the firm of J. H. Flagler & Company which was merged with the National Tube Works Company in 1869, with works in East Boston. It was soon seen that Boston was too far both from raw materials and from the principal market for the

product, and in 1872 the branch at McKeesport, Pa., began production. This plant was the first to use gas furnaces under the Siemens patent in the manufacture of iron, and Flagler later obtained seven patents for improvements in the manufacture of pipe. The East Boston plant was discontinued in 1874, and the plant at McKeesport became the largest producer of pipe in the world, employing over 4,500 men when Flagler resigned as general manager in 1888. During his stay in McKeesport, he was active in the affairs of the town and had a large part in its development from an unsightly village to a prosperous manufacturing city. In 1909, when he revisited the scene of his labors, he was given a reception by some forty of his old employees who had worked for the company more than twenty-five years. He continued as director of the National Tube Works Company until 1899, at which time it became the National Tube Company. From this time his interests were diversified—banking, insurance, manufacturing and mining, and he served as officer or director in many corporations, maintaining an office in New York until his death. He was a successful business man, who gained and kept the loyalty of his associates and subordinates, an enthusiastic yachtsman, and a member of various philanthropic, cultural, and scientific organizations, but seems to have avoided publicity. At his death he bequeathed a considerable portion of his fortune to charitable and public use. He was married three times: in 1856 to Anna H. Converse, a daughter of one of his associates; in 1894, to Alice Mandelick who died in 1918; and, in 1921, to Beatrice Wenneker who, with one daughter of his first marriage, survived him. He died of pneumonia at his home at Greenwich, Conn.

[Material on Flagler's life is fragmentary, and many of the published sketches are inaccurate. The account in the *Hist. of Allegheny County, Pa.* (1889), was approved by him. All the New York papers of Sept. 9, 1922, contain obituary notices, and the account of the reception given him at McKeesport in 1909 is contained in a privately printed volume, *Reception to Mr. John H. Flagler, McKeesport, Forty Years After* (1910). Most of the material for this sketch has been furnished by Mr. A. M. Saunders through the Research Department of the National Tube Co.] H. T.

**FLANAGAN, WEBSTER** (Jan. 9, 1832–May 5, 1924), leader of the Republican party in Texas, was born in Claverport, Ky. His parents, James W. and Polly Miller Flanagan, placed their family and their goods in a flatboat, and by way of the Ohio, the Mississippi, and the Red rivers, removed to Texas where they settled on a plantation near Henderson in the spring of 1844. The elder Flanagan, afterwards United States senator, took an active part in the politics of his day, and was prominent in the ranks of the Whigs. His son, who inherited his friendly manners and his genius for political manipulation, soon followed in his steps. Webster Flanagan was admitted to the bar in 1859, but from the beginning made his legal activities distinctly subordinate to his interests as a village merchant, a breeder of fine cattle, and a political leader. The two, father and son, were ardent supporters of Sam Houston in his bitterly contested campaigns for the governorship, and in 1860 canvassed their section of Texas in behalf of the Bell and Everett ticket. Both were strong Union men and opposed secession. In spite of this position, Webster Flanagan joined the Confederate army in 1862 and served for the remainder of the war. In the summer of 1865, the young soldier wrote a characteristic letter to Johnson's recently appointed reconstruction governor, A. J. Hamilton: "I want an office, and a good one. I think I am entitled to it, and I know you are willing to make an appointment where there is merit. I was one of the few who braved the secession storm in my country . . . I would like to be one of the Assessors or Collectors of Revenue. . . . If not that, anything that will pay" (Hamilton Papers, Austin). This frank appeal bore fruit, and from that time, except in the eight lean years under Cleveland, Flanagan was continually in office until the inauguration of Wilson in 1913. For many years he was collector of internal revenue, first at El Paso and then at Austin. By 1890 he was the recognized leader of his party in the state, and was given the empty honor of a nomination to the governorship in a campaign in which he was, of course, defeated by the redoubtable James S. Hogg. In quiet times he found time to build a local railroad from Henderson to Overton. He was celebrated as a sportsman, and, as an importer of Jersey cattle, he did much to improve the dairy business of his part of the state.

In national Republican conventions, Flanagan was always prominent. In 1880 he won a certain amount of fame as a member of the faithful group known as the "Grant Guard." When a delegate from Massachusetts declared disgustedly that "certain ones had an eye to the offices," the delegate from Texas came into the center of the stage demanding, "What are we here for, except the offices?" Whereupon Godkin remarked in the *Nation* that Webster Flanagan was the honestest man at the convention and deserved the vice-presidential nomination (*Nation*, June 10, 1880). He was twice married and had ten children. His first wife, whom he married Dec. 20, 1853, was Elizabeth Graham. After her death in 1872 he married Sallie P. Ware. He was a man of me-

dium height, well built and vigorous, and has been described as kindly, cheerful, and friendly.

[This sketch is based largely on the personal reminiscences of friends and members of the Flanagan family. See also W. S. Speer and J. H. Brown, *The Encyc. of the New West* (1881), pp. 405–06; C. W. Ramsdell, *Reconstruction in Tex.* (1910), pp. 204–07, 296, 304; *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; and the files of the *Henderson Times*.] R. G. C.

**FLANAGIN, HARRIS** (Nov. 3, 1817–Oct. 23, 1874), governor of Arkansas, was born in Roadstown, Cumberland County, N. J., son of James and Mary Flanagin. He received a fairly good education in a Quaker school of New Jersey and then went to Clermont, Pa., to teach in a seminary. Soon after this he moved to Illinois where he again tried teaching and while at this work studied law. In 1837 he moved to Arkansas and opened a law office in Greenville, the county seat of Clark County, but later moved to Arkadelphia, the new county seat. In 1842 he was elected to the legislature, but dropped out of politics and devoted his time to his profession. He was married, on July 3, 1851, to Martha E. Nash. In 1861 he represented his county in the secession convention. When the motion for submitting to the people the question of cooperation or secession came up he voted against it, but in the second session, after the bombardment of Fort Sumter, he voted for withdrawal from the Union. He entered the army as captain of Company E, 2nd Regiment, Arkansas Mounted Rifles, and rose to the rank of colonel. While serving at Knoxville, Tenn., he received notice that the people of Arkansas would decide next day whether he or Henry Rector [*q.v.*] should be governor. This is said to have been the first notice he had had of his candidacy. Owing to the strength of the anti-Rector faction, led by R. H. Johnson, whom Rector had defeated in 1860, Flanagin was elected by a vote of more than two to one. He was inaugurated Nov. 15, 1862. The two great problems before him were to help prosecute the war and to care for the civilian population, who were suffering from the scarcity of clothing, food, and medicine. While the governor cooperated with Kirby Smith in raising troops, the legislature appropriated $1,200,000 for the relief of suffering in the devastated areas, $300,000 to encourage manufacturing of essentials, and even assigned the governor $1,000,000 to carry on manufacturing on the account of the state, but very little came of these efforts, for the treasury was generally empty. Shortly before the cessation of hostilities Flanagin attended a conference of governors at Marshall, Tex., to decide upon what terms they should surrender to the Federal authorities. Returning to Arkansas he requested A. H. Garland [*q.v.*] to



open negotiations with Gen. J. J. Reynolds with a view to the cooperation of the Confederate state government with the Unionist government which had been established under Isaac Murphy, for the calling of a state convention and the restoration of a government which Congress would recognize. Reynolds, however, would accord no sort of recognition, and in May 1865 the Confederate state government dissolved. Flanagin was told that he would be allowed to deliver up the archives and would not be molested as long as he remained quiet. He then retired to Arkadelphia and, as soon as conditions permitted, resumed the practise of law. He was elected to the constitutional convention of 1874, but died during the second session.

[*Official Records* (*Army*), see Index; manuscript journals of the secession convention of 1861 and the constitutional convention of 1874; *Ark. Hist. Asso. Pubs.*, II (1908), 267, 362–423; *Arkansas State Gazette* (Little Rock, 1861–66), *Arkansas True Democrat* (Little Rock), *Washington* (Ark.) *Telegraph*, incomplete files of which may be found in the Lib. of the Ark. Hist. Commission; Fay Hempstead, *Pictorial Hist. of Ark.* (1890); D. Y. Thomas, *Ark. in War and Reconstruction, 1861–1874* (1926); obituary in *Ark. Gazette* (Little Rock), Oct. 24, 1874.] D. Y. T.

**FLANDERS, HENRY** (Feb. 13, 1824–Apr. 3, 1911), lawyer, author, was the son of Charles Flanders, one of the leaders of the New Hampshire bar of his time, who married Lucretia Kingsbury, and practised law at Plainfield, Sullivan County, N. H. Born at Plainfield, Henry Flanders was educated at Kimball Academy, N. H., and Newbury Seminary, but did not receive a university training, although in 1856 he was given the honorary degree of M.A. by Dartmouth College. In 1842 he commenced the study of law in his father's office and in 1845 was admitted to the New Hampshire bar. He then spent some time in the South, and married Elizabeth O. Barnwell of South Carolina in 1847. After his return to the North he made his home in Philadelphia, and on being admitted to the Philadelphia bar in 1853, commenced practise in that city. From the outset he devoted especial attention to maritime law, his studies on that subject being prosecuted to such purpose that early in his career he wrote two works, *A Treatise on Maritime Law* (1852) and *A Treatise on the Law of Shipping* (1853), which gave evidence of deep research and unusual ability. Distinguished for lucid exposition and attractive style, these works in a short time became acknowledged authorities upon the subjects with which they dealt. He soon acquired an extensive practise and in course of time attained high rank among the leaders of the Philadelphia bar, being considered one of the ablest admiralty lawyers in the country. He did

not, however, confine himself to his professional work, and in 1855, published the first volume of *The Lives and Times of the Chief Justices of the Supreme Court of the United States from Jay to Marshall,* the second volume appearing in 1858. Written in an attractive manner, this work was well received and stamped him as an author of much promise. Then followed (1856) an edition with illustrative notes, of the *Memoirs of Richard Cumberland, Written by Himself,* and *An Exposition of the Constitution of the United States* (1860), which latter work passed through several editions. His last text-book was *A Treatise on the Law of Fire Insurance* (1871), which had all the characteristics of his early works and was for a number of years a standard authority. He also wrote a romance, *The Adventures of a Virginian* (1881), which was published under the pseudonym Oliver Thurston. He was a member of the commission for the collation of the Acts of the Assembly of Pennsylvania, and with James T. Mitchell undertook the arduous and minute research which that task involved, the outcome being the publication of *The Statutes at Large of Pennsylvania from 1682 to 1801, Compiled under the Authority of the Act of May 19, 1887* (16 vols., 1896–1911). In 1904, being then eighty years old, Flanders was elected a member of the auxiliary faculty of the Law School of the University of Pennsylvania and as such lectured on legal biography until shortly before his death, a period of seven years. The subject was unique in the annals of law schools and, despite his advanced age, his treatment of it was completely successful. He discussed the great lawyers and judges of England and the United States not only from the legal standpoint but also in relation to their influence upon public affairs—varying his themes from time to time—and drew large audiences. In addition to the books already mentioned, he wrote a number of addresses on legal and historical subjects delivered before various societies, some of which were subsequently published. He was also the author of two pamphlets, *Must the War Go On?* (1863) and *Observations on Reconstruction* (1866), which attracted national attention and provoked wide discussion. A practitioner of the old school, he retained throughout his long life all the characteristics of a bygone age. Genial yet dignified, noted for his courtesy and consideration, his was a singularly attractive personality.

[See *Univ. of Pa. Law Rev.,* May 1911; *Pa. Bar Asso. Report,* 1911; *Who's Who in America,* 1910–11; *Public Ledger* (Phila.), Apr. 4, 1911. The first of these accounts gives 1824 as the year of Flanders's birth: other accounts, following *Who's Who,* give 1826.]

H. W. H. K.



**FLANDRAU, CHARLES EUGENE** (July 15, 1828–Sept. 9, 1903), jurist, soldier, author, was born in New York City, the son of Thomas Hunt and Elizabeth (Macomb) Flandrau. His father, who came of Huguenot ancestry, was a law partner of Aaron Burr, and his mother, who was of Irish blood, was a half-sister of Alexander Macomb, the commanding general of the United States army from 1828 to 1841. Flandrau's school days, which were over at thirteen save for a few months in his seventeenth year, were supplemented by practical experience gained through three years at sea and three spent sawing veneers in a New York mahogany mill. In 1851, after having studied law in his father's office at Whitesboro, N. Y., he was admitted to the bar, and for the next two years he practised with his father. In November 1853 he went West with his friend, Horace R. Bigelow, and commenced practise in St. Paul, the capital of Minnesota Territory. The two partners were not deluged with business, and the following year Flandrau settled at Traverse des Sioux, a frontier village on the Minnesota River. Here his ability as a lawyer, coupled with his enterprise, integrity, and geniality, soon won him wide popularity. In 1856 he represented his district in the territorial Council and in the same year he was made agent for the Sioux Indians. In 1857 he was a member of the Minnesota constitutional convention; according to a contemporary, "his hand is visible in nearly every provision" of the resultant state constitution (John B. Sanborn, in *Minnesota Historical Society Collections,* X, 769).

Though Flandrau was only twenty-nine in 1857, that year witnessed his appointment as associate justice of the territorial supreme court, and upon Minnesota's admission to the Union in 1858 his service was continued by popular election. During his seven years on the supreme bench, a foundational period in its history, the court made 495 decisions, of which Flandrau wrote the opinions in 227 cases. When the Sioux outbreak occurred in the summer of 1862, the terrorized settlers of the Minnesota Valley turned to Flandrau for leadership, and the judge—his portrait suggests a frontier military officer rather than a jurist—promptly turned soldier. He commanded the voluntary defenders of New Ulm, and in the campaign that followed he was colonel in charge of the defense of the southern frontier. In 1864 he resigned from the supreme court. After three years in Nevada and Missouri, he returned, in 1867, to Minnesota, to open a law office in Minneapolis with Judge Isaac Atwater. As a Democrat, Flandrau swam against the political current in his state following the Civil

War. He was an unsuccessful candidate for governor in 1867, and two years later he was defeated for the office of chief justice. In 1870 he removed to St. Paul, where he built up a large law practise and lived for the remainder of his life.

Flandrau helped both to make and to write the history of Minnesota. His *History of Minnesota and Tales of the Frontier* (1900) is valuable for its spirited personal reminiscences and vivid recountals of frontier episodes. He also wrote a succinct account of "The Indian War of 1862–1864, and Following Campaigns in Minnesota," in *Minnesota in the Civil and Indian Wars* (vol. I, 1890); a history of Minnesota (pp. 7–117) in *Encyclopedia of Biography of Minnesota* (1900); and several papers published in the *Collections* of the Minnesota Historical Society. He was married in 1859 to Isabella R. Dinsmore of Kentucky, who died in 1867, and in 1871 to Mrs. Rebecca Blair Riddle of Pittsburgh. He had two daughters by his first wife, and two sons by his second.

[*Minn. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, X (1905), 767–830; *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of Minn.* (1904), ed. by H. F. Stevens, II, 1–7; T. M. Newson, *Pen Pictures of St. Paul, Minn.* (1886), pp. 406–08; W. H. C. Folsom, *Fifty Years in the Northwest* (1888), p. 576; *Hist. of Ramsey County and St. Paul* (1881), p. 524; *Progressive Men of Minn.* (1897), ed. by M. D. Shutter and J. S. McLain, p. 121; *St. Paul Globe*, Sept. 10, 1903.] T. C. B.

**FLANNERY, JOHN** (Nov. 24, 1835–May 9, 1910), banker, cotton-factor, was born in Nenagh, County Tipperary, Ireland, the son of John and Hannah (Hogan) Flannery. The famine and revolutionary period of the middle nineteenth century ruined the elder Flannery; whereupon, in 1851, the father and son emigrated to the United States. The father, however, remained only a short time and died on the vessel that was taking him back to Ireland. The son, after holding minor clerical positions in various places, settled down permanently in Savannah late in 1854. Fond of martial affairs, he joined a noted military organization, the "Irish Jasper Greens," and on the outbreak of the Civil War, went, with the rank of a junior lieutenant, as a volunteer with that company, into the Confederate army. Promoted to a captaincy (October 1862), he served throughout the war, returning in 1865 to Savannah. Resuming his interrupted business at the age of thirty, he occupied for nearly half a century a position of leadership in his community. He became a partner in the cotton-commission firm of L. J. Guilmartin & Company, which after some years was dissolved and reorganized under the title of John Flannery & Company. Twenty-four years after this reorganization he incorporated his concern as the John Flannery Company (1901) for the purpose of admitting into



the business a number of the younger men who had served him long and faithfully. This corporation was for years one of the most important cotton-houses in Savannah. Flannery retired from business in 1906.

During his long career he was always among the leaders in enterprises undertaken for the good of Savannah. He was an organizer and director and for twenty-five years the president of the Southern Bank, later the Citizens and Southern Bank, one of the strongest of the Southern financial institutions. He was a member of the committee that erected the Cotton Exchange building and was president of the Exchange; he was for many years chairman of the City Sinking Fund Commission; as an organizer of the Savannah Hotel Company he took part in the construction of the famed De Soto Hotel; and he was a director in many other corporations, railway, utility, and manufacturing. He was active also in the civic, social, religious, and philanthropic life of the community. A devoted Catholic, he established a fund of $50,000 (since grown to $100,000), the interest of which was to be used to aid Catholic enterprises in Georgia. He was for fifty years an ardent supporter of the Jasper Greens military company; was vice-president of the Hibernian Society, and took a keen interest in the Georgia Historical Society. He was married to Mary Ellen Norton of Taliaferro County, Ga., in 1867, and they had six children. In his personal life Flannery was simple and unostentatious.

[A. D. Candler and C. A. Evans, *Cyc. of Ga.* (1906), vol. II; *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; long obituary notice and a tribute to Flannery by Bishop Keiley in *Savannah Morning News*, Mar. 9, 1910.] R. P. B—s.

**FLATHER, JOHN JOSEPH** (June 9, 1862–May 14, 1926), mechanical engineer, university professor, was born at Philadelphia, the son of Henry and Sarah (Hockensmith) Flather. His father was an Englishman, his mother a native Virginian, and the son received his early education in private schools in Scotland, and in the high school at Bridgeport, Conn. He early showed a pronounced mechanical bent and in 1880 entered the mechanical engineering department of the Sheffield Scientific School at Yale, graduating with the degree of Ph.B., in 1885. For several years following his graduation he was engaged in engineering practise, obtaining a thorough and varied knowledge of industrial technology. He served a full machinist's apprenticeship in several New England shops, including Flather & Company, Nashua, N. H., the Howe Sewing Machine Company, of Bridgeport, Conn., and the Armstrong Manufacturing Company. He was later designer and foreman for the Ansonia Electric Company and the Hotchkiss Manufac-

turing Company of Bridgeport. The intimate knowledge of machine-shop practise and methods which he obtained during these years was markedly in evidence during all of his later professional life. In 1888 he entered upon his teaching career as an instructor in mechanical engineering at Lehigh University. He held this position for three years, at the same time carrying on graduate studies at the Sibley College of Mechanical Engineering, Cornell University, under Prof. Thurston, then at the height of his fame. He received the degree of master of mechanical engineering in 1890.

As the mechanical engineering department at Lehigh University, under the direction of Prof. Klein, was then accounted one of the strongest in the country, Flather's career as a teacher of engineering began under the most favorable conditions. Though only twenty-nine years old at the time, he received a call in 1891 to a professorship in mechanical engineering at Purdue University, one of the largest technical schools in the West. After seven years' service at Purdue, he was called to the University of Minnesota as professor of mechanical engineering and head of the department, which position he held until his death. The department developed under his direction from a small beginning to one of the strongest departments in the Engineering College, and with this development, Flather had a peculiarly intimate connection in that at one period or another he personally taught practically every course in the curriculum. He was an effective and inspiring teacher, and during his nearly thirty years of service at Minnesota, many distinguished engineers and engineering teachers received their training at his hands.

He early became deeply interested in technical research, and the versatility of his intellect is strikingly shown by the scope of his investigations. His earlier work, begun at Lehigh in 1888, was in the field of steam- and gas-engine performance and the transmission and measurement of power, in which latter field he became a national authority. He spent many years in the study of power-plant development, giving especial attention to the movements of gases in chimneys and to tall chimney design. During his later years he was engaged in the investigation of problems in heating and ventilation and refrigeration. He was a frequent contributor to technical journals throughout his professional career, and he also published two monographs, *Dynamometers and the Measurement of Power* (1892) and *Rope-Driving* (1895). He was joint author with Prof. Chas. E. Lucke of Columbia University, of *A Text Book of Engineering Thermodynamics* and



*Handbook of Thermodynamic Tables and Diagrams,* both published in 1915.

In addition to his university activities in teaching and research, he carried on a widely diversified practise as a consulting engineer, his work including the design of factories, power-plants and municipal water-works and electric-light plants. In a profession so exacting technically that it all too frequently turns its followers into narrow specialists, he was conspicuous for his broad culture and learning. He had traveled widely at home and abroad, and had made a particular hobby of the history of engineering, upon which he was writing a treatise at the time of his death.

He was married twice: on June 18, 1890, to Harriet Frances Lum, of Stamford, Conn., who died in 1917; and on Feb. 23, 1925, to Florence Evelyn Foster, of Dayton, Ohio. He died suddenly and unexpectedly of heart-failure at the height of his professional career, maintaining his full activity up to the very day of his death.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1926–27; *Trans. Am. Soc. Mech. Engineers,* vol. XLVIII (1927); *Jour. Am. Inst. Electrical Engineers,* vol. XLV (July 1926); *Proc. Soc. for the Promotion of Engineering Education,* vol. XXXIII (1926).] J.I.P.

**FLEEMING, JOHN** [See FLEMING, JOHN, fl. 1764–1800].

**FLEET, THOMAS** (Sept. 8, 1685–July 21, 1758), printer, was born in Shropshire, England. As a youth he took an active part in opposing the high-church party, which eventually brought such rage upon him that he hid himself and took the earliest chance of leaving England for America. Soon after his arrival at Boston, "about the year 1712," he set up a printing-house in Pudding Lane, now Devonshire St. He had learned the printing art at Bristol. He was a good printer and did much work for the booksellers. T. Crump, another printer, was associated with him, 1715–17. From 1729 to 1731, Fleet was printer to the Massachusetts House of Representatives. In 1731 he left Pudding Lane for a house in Cornhill, which he purchased in 1744. It was spacious, served as both his residence and printing-house, and contained a convenient shop. It bore the trade-sign of "Heart and Crown." In a front chamber he conducted evening auctions of books, household goods, and other merchandise (*Boston News-Letter,* Mar. 7, 1731).

On Sept. 27, 1731, J. Draper had printed the first number of the *Weekly Rehearsal,* a half-sheet periodical edited by Jeremiah Gridley [*q.v.*], a young lawyer. It was made up largely of moral, political, and commercial essays. On Aug. 21, 1732, Fleet took over the printing and

by Apr. 2, 1733, was its sole owner. It appeared regularly as a weekly morning news-sheet, but was discontinued with number 202 on Aug. 11, 1735. Fleet next began (Aug. 18), an evening paper, numbering it 203, with the *Boston Evening-Post,* as title, but changed the serial numbering to "2" with the next issue. This paper copied the London press and included Fleet's "own humorous paragraphs." It engaged but little in either political or religious controversy; none the less, for a paragraph in the issue of Mar. 8, 1741, Fleet was threatened with prosecution by the government. After his death it was continued as a morning weekly by his sons, Thomas and James, until crushed by the war, on Apr. 24, 1775. He owned several negroes, some of whom worked in the printing-shop. One ingenious slave worked the press, set type, and cut woodblocks for illustrating small books and broadsides. Fleet is credited (by Evans) with more than 250 publications, besides his newspapers, between 1713 and 1758. He printed many works of the Mathers, and tracts relating to the George Whitefield controversy. *The Soveraignty and Goodness of God . . . being a Narrative of the Captivity and Restauration of Mrs. Mary Rowlandson* (1720), John Williams's *The Redeemed Captive* (1720), Samuel Penhallow's *The History of the Wars of New-England with the Eastern Indians* (1726), *The New England Primer Enlarged* (1737–38), *A Brief Narrative of the Case and Tryal of John Peter Zenger* (1738), Joseph Addison's *Cato* (1750), and Michael Wigglesworth's *The Day of Doom* (1751), are a few titles which attest the importance of his imprimatur. In the third decade of the nineteenth century the claim was made that the collection of Mother Goose's nursery rhymes was derived from Fleet's mother-in-law and was first printed by him in 1719. No such publication by him has ever been found. That collection is an English adaptation by Robert Samber from the French tales of Perrault, which in English first saw the light in London about 1750 (*Athenæum,* Jan. 21, 1905).

Fleet died at Boston, after a long illness, July 21, 1758, leaving three sons, two daughters, and his widow, Elizabeth, daughter of Isaac and Elizabeth Vergoose or Goose, whom he had married on June 8, 1715. The tribute of the press was that he "was remarkable for his Understanding and Industry in the Business of his own Profession," as well as for "extensive Knowledge of the World," and of "a friendly and benevolent Disposition."

[The principal sources are Isaiah Thomas's *Hist. of Printing in America* (2nd ed., 1874), I, 98–104, 145, and II, 42–49; Chas. Evans, *Am. Bibliog.,* vols. I–III (1903–05); Clarence S. Brigham, "Bibliog. of Am. Newspapers," *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.,* Apr. 14, 1915–Oct. 20, 1915; W. H. Whitmore, *The Original Mother Goose's Melody . . . with Introductory Notes* (1889); and Boston and New York newspapers for July 1758. The best of the known files of Fleet's newspapers is in the possession of the American Antiquarian Society.]

V. H. P.



**FLEISCHMANN, CHARLES LOUIS** (Nov. 3, 1834–Dec. 10, 1897), manufacturer, capitalist, was born near Budapest, Hungary, of Jewish stock, the son of Abraham and Babette Fleischmann. His father was a distiller and yeast maker. Charles, the second of seven children, all of whom emigrated to the United States, established himself in New York as a distiller and later in Cincinnati, where he formed a partnership with James W. Gaff. Between 1866 and 1872 he patented a plow, a cotton-gin and its improvements, and several processes and devices used in distilling. In 1870, at the instigation of his partner, he began to make yeast by a Hungarian method with which he had been long familiar. The patent (No. 102,387; Apr. 26, 1870) for making compressed yeast from the froth or scum formed during the manufacture of malt or spiritous liquors was taken out, however, by his brother Henry, who assigned it to Fleischmann & Gaff in return for an annuity. This yeast was slow in finding a market, so that the partners nearly failed. As a last resort they put on a huge exhibit at the Philadelphia Centennial Exposition, at which spectators could see the yeast made, the dough set, and the bread baked, and could then adjourn to a restaurant and eat the bread. The exhibit was popular; the restaurant yielded a cash profit; and the advertising value of the enterprise was enormous. Thereafter there was no trouble in selling Fleischmann's yeast. He devised an elaborate system, perhaps the first of its kind, for delivering his product fresh to the grocers; formerly the dapper Fleischmann yeast cart with its neatly groomed horse was a common sight on American streets. After Gaff's death in 1879, Fleischmann bought his share in the business for $500,000. His wealth grew rapidly. He became a director in some twenty-five Cincinnati enterprises and was president of a cooperage company, a large vinegar works in Illinois, a newspaper company, and the Market National Bank. He took a hand in civic affairs, was fire commissioner in 1890, was elected as a Republican to the state Senate in 1879 and again in 1895, and was a friend and adviser of William McKinley. Fleischmann was a shrewd, far-sighted, masterful business man, but there was nothing stingy or cautious about him. He liked long chances and venturesome risks, and took them frequently. He exercised a paternal watchfulness over his employees, let them know what he thought of

them, and pensioned them when they were too old or ill to work. He gave lavishly to local charities and educational institutions, raised the debt on St. Peter's Cathedral, and was reputed to spend one hundred dollars a day on private largesse. His life insurance policy, his $80,000 sea-going yacht *Hiawatha,* and his "Schloss" at Fleischmann's in the Catskills were famous in their time. Characteristic of his generosity, and of his sense of power, was his treatment of the cashier of the Market National Bank, who absconded in 1893 with the bank's reserve of $160,000. Fleischmann, fearing a disastrous run, made up the loss out of his own pocket, accepted a deed for the cashier's house, and kept the whole transaction a secret until after the man's death. Then he deeded the house back to his widow. He stocked his residence at Avondale with costly French oil-paintings and bronzes, installed a Steinway in the conservatory, and for hours at a time would play by ear any music that he had heard, whether grand opera or ragtime, while his guests, according to their own reports, sat spellbound. In 1890 his doctor ordered him to spend as much time as possible outdoors and suggested that a horse would be the thing. Fleischmann thereupon bought a string of expensive blooded horses, established a trotting farm at Millstone, N. J., and made himself one of the foremost patrons of the turf. It was estimated that in six years' time he had spent at least $800,000 on his new hobby. He died at his home of apoplexy. He was survived by his wife, who had been Henrietta Robertson of New York, by one daughter, and by nis two sons, Julius, who became mayor of Cincinnati, and Max, a well-known sportsman.

[*Cincinnati Commercial Tribune, Times-Star,* and *Enquirer,* Dec. 10–15, 1897; W. A. Taylor, *Ohio Statesmen and Annals of Progress 1788–1900* (1899); U. S. Patent Office Records; additional information from Max C. Fleischmann (son) and from Hugo A. Oswald.]

G. H. G.

**FLEMING, ARETAS BROOKS** (Oct. 15, 1839–Oct. 13, 1923), jurist, governor of West Virginia, coal operator, was born on a farm near Middleton, Va. (now West Virginia), of a prominent family of Scotch-Irish origin. He was the great-grandson of William Fleming, who emigrated to America in 1741 and obtained a patent to land in Pennsylvania, and the youngest son of Benjamin F. and Rhoda (Brooks) Fleming. In 1859, after attending private and select schools, he entered the University of Virginia where he completed the law course under John B. Minor. In 1860 he began the practise of law in Gilmer County and also opened a private school. At the opening of the Civil War he returned to Fairmont, near his birthplace, where he served as prosecuting attorney from 1863 to 1867. After the close of the war, on Sept. 7, 1865, he married Caroline Margaret Watson and entered a law partnership with Judge Alpheus Haymond, who, in 1872, was elected to the state supreme court of appeals. Fleming was elected to the legislature in 1872, was reëlected in 1874 and was an active leader in founding the Fairmont State Normal School. Until 1878 he was attorney for the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad, and for the next ten years he was judge of the circuit court of his district. In 1888 he was the Democratic candidate for governor. After an exciting election before the legislature he was finally elected in February 1890. As governor, through his addresses and published articles, he attracted attention to the undeveloped mineral and timber resources of his state. He had been identified since 1874 with the coal development of the Monongahela Valley in association with his father-in-law, James Otis Watson, the pioneer coal operator of the region. He was also associated with J. N. Camden in the building of the Monongahela River Railroad of which he became a director. In 1901 at the organization of the Fairmont Coal Company (later the Consolidation Coal Company) he became a director, a position which he continued to hold until he retired from active business. He also was actively interested in the building of electric traction lines both local and interurban, and was one of the organizers and a director of the National Bank of Fairmont. He was recognized as a leading corporation lawyer. His natural, dignified simplicity and cordiality won him hosts of friends.

[J. M. Callahan, *Hist. of W. Va., Old and New* (3 vols., 1923); G. W. Atkinson and A. F. Gibbons, *Prominent Men of W. Va.* (1890); G. W. Atkinson, *Bench and Bar of W. Va.* (1919); *N. Y. Times,* Oct. 14, 1923.]

J. M. C.

**FLEMING, JOHN** (fl. 1764–1800), printer and Loyalist, whose name is often spelled Fleeming, was a Scotsman, of whose early life no records are available. He arrived in Boston in 1764, and was first a partner of William Macalpine and then of John Mein. Thirty-odd publications by him in these connections have been listed (Charles Evans, *American Bibliography,* vol. IV, 1907), mostly religious in character, but including *Fleeming's Register for New England and Nova-Scotia . . . and an Almanack for 1772* (1771), John Dickinson's *Letters from a Farmer* (1768), and William Knox's *The Controversy Between Great Britain and Her Colonies Reviewed* (1769). On Dec. 21, 1767, Mein & Fleeming began to publish the *Boston Chronicle,* patterned after the *London Chronicle* and at first a weekly periodical rather than a newspaper. Mein

was the efficient editor, and the paper featured selections from foreign journals and works of popular English authors rather than colonial news. Volume I had an index! The *Chronicle* was well patronized, becoming a semi-weekly in its second year, the first regular one in New England; but with the development of the political controversy it became the chief Tory organ, subsidizing being hinted, and Mein was obliged to leave Boston before the end of 1769. Fleming continued the *Chronicle*. Mein had, independently, a bookshop, and an assignment of English debts for this shop coming into the hands of Boston Radicals, they tried, according to James Murray, to levy on the printing-office as well, in order to put an end to the newspaper. This attack was frustrated by a pledge for the value of Mein's interest, but lack of patronage caused a suspension of the paper with the issue for June 25, 1770. Fleming continued the printing-office during 1770–73, issuing the register and almanac, and a few other works, including the report of the Boston Massacre trial and William Gordon's plan for life insurance. According to Isaiah Thomas [*q.v.*], who was a contemporary Boston printer, Fleming left for England in 1773. If this was the case, he seems to have returned. The name John Fleming appears among the signers of a loyal petition to King George III in July 1776 (see E. A. Jones, *The Loyalists of Massachusetts,* 1930, p. 308). Alice, sister of Dr. Benjamin Church [*q.v.*], married, probably at Portsmouth on Aug. 8, 1770, a John Fleming, variously described as a high Scotch Tory, a printer, and a stationer; and Church's treasonable correspondence was carried on with this "brother," then in besieged Boston. There is little doubt that this Fleming was the earlier printer, who may have returned as a civil official of the army. His name does not appear in the partial list of those who left at the evacuation, or in that of the disaffected who remained. He was proscribed and banished by the Act of September 1778; but no proceedings concerning his estate or application for English pension have been found. Thomas adds that he returned to the United States several times after 1790 as agent of a French commercial house, and that he died in France after 1800.

[Isaiah Thomas, *Hist. of Printing in America* (2nd ed. 1874), I, 151–52, gives the main facts concerning the Boston printer. The deduction of the connection with Church is based on various sources; the correspondence is in *Am. Archives,* 4 ser., III, 1485–86.] D. M. M.

**FLEMING, JOHN** (Apr. 17, 1807–Oct. 27, 1894), pioneer missionary among the Indians, was born in Mifflin County, Pa., the son of John and Mary (McEwen) Fleming. He attended Mifflin Academy and Jefferson College, Canonsburg, Pa., graduating in 1829. After further study in the Princeton Theological Seminary he was ordained to the Presbyterian ministry, Oct. 24, 1832. Early in the next year he began his missionary work under the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions among the Creek Indians near Fort Gibson, on the Arkansas River, in the territory of the present state of Oklahoma. His wife opened a school and he began preaching through an interpreter, at the time associating intimately with the Indians in order to learn their language. His chief claim to remembrance is that he was the first to reduce to writing the Muskoki or Creek language, which was a task of peculiar difficulty on account of the numerous and puzzling combinations of consonants involved. After about a year he produced an elementary book of some hundred pages on the study of the language, which also contained hymns and portions of the Bible in the native tongue. His next work, *Short Sermon: Also Hymns, in the Muskokee or Creek Language,* was printed in Boston in 1835. In the same year he published through the Cherokee Press his *Istuti in Naktsoky, or The Child's Book,* followed in 1836 by his most important work, *The Maskokee Semahayeta, or Muskokee Teacher.*

The Creek mission proved unsuccessful and was closed by the government. This failure and the state of his wife's health caused Fleming to transfer from the American Board to the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions under whose auspices he spent a year among the Wea Indians in Kansas. This mission having been withdrawn on account of denominational competition, he spent the year 1839 on Grand Traverse Bay, Mich., at a mission to the Chippewas and Ottawas. He had made substantial progress in learning the language as well as in religious and educational work, when his wife died, and he was compelled to withdraw from the Board. From 1840 to 1848 he served two four-year pastorates at the Presbyterian churches at Middle Tuscarora, and at Fairfield, Pa. From 1849 to 1875 he was engaged in missionary work in La Salle County, Ill., under the Presbyterian Boards of Missions and of Publication. He then removed to Gilson, Nebr., where he supplied various churches till 1879, and then to Ayr in the same state where he died. He was married to Margaret Longstreth Scudder, Nov. 1, 1832. She died May 21, 1839, and on Apr. 26, 1843, he married Rebecca Clark Patterson, who survived him with one daughter by his first marriage and four sons and two daughters by the second.

[Princeton Theological Seminary, *Necrol. Report*

(1895); *Biog. and Hist. Cat. of Washington and Jefferson Coll.* (1889); Am. Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, *Reports*, 1833–37; Board of Foreign Missions, Presbyterian Church, *Ann. Reports*, 1838–39.]

F.T.P.

**FLEMING, WILLIAM** (Feb. 18, 1729–Aug. 5, 1795), soldier and statesman, was born at Jedburgh, Scotland, son of Leonard and Dorothea Fleming, and allied to several noble families. After studying medicine at the University of Edinburgh, he entered the British navy as a surgeon's mate, and while in this service was captured by the Spaniards. Released after a rigorous imprisonment, he resigned from the navy to try his fortunes in Virginia; landed at Norfolk in August 1755; and proceeded to Williamsburg, where he obtained an ensign's commission in the regiment commanded by Col. George Washington. During the next eight years he was engaged in border warfare, serving as lieutenant and surgeon on Forbes's and Abercromby's campaigns and on the Cherokee Expedition of 1760–61; was with Andrew Lewis at Fort Chiswell; and, as captain in Adam Stephen's regiment, commanded at Vaux's and Stalnaker's frontier forts. Following the peace of 1763 he settled in Staunton, Va., where he resumed the profession of medicine and where he married, Apr. 9, 1763, Anne, daughter of Israel Christian. Five years later he gave up active medical practise to farm his Botetourt (now Montgomery) County estate, "Bellmont," where he passed the rest of his life.

In 1774 he raised the Botetourt Regiment which he commanded, as colonel, at the battle of Point Pleasant. While leading the left column into action, he was twice struck, but continued on the field until compelled by a third, more serious wound to withdraw. As a recompense for his gallant behavior and the injuries which rendered him unable to practise surgery, the Virginia Assembly voted him £500 (*Journal of the House of Burgesses*, session beginning June 1, 1775). His wounds, from which he never entirely recovered, kept him from field service in the Revolution, but he was commissioned county lieutenant of Botetourt by the Committee of Safety, Apr. 1, 1776, and again did valuable work in defending the frontier. From May 1777 through October 1779, he represented the district of Botetourt, Washington, Montgomery, and Kentucky in the Virginia Senate; and in 1780 became a member of the Council. In both bodies he took an active part, especially in Western affairs, warmly supported the conduct of the war, and furthered various domestic reforms. He twice headed commissions to Kentucky, to settle land-titles, 1779, and to investigate public accounts, 1782; served in 1783 as commissary to the troops



there; and sat in the Danville Convention (1784), which initiated the steps leading to Kentucky's separate statehood. As a member of the Virginia Council, he was, June 1–12, 1781, in the interim between Governors Jefferson and Thomas Nelson, the acting chief executive of Virginia; and for his acts in this capacity, which included calling out the militia to oppose Cornwallis and taking other defensive measures, was subsequently indemnified by the Assembly (Hening's *Statutes at Large*, X, 567). His last appearance in public life was in 1788, when he represented Botetourt in the state convention which ratified the Federal Constitution: here, under instructions, he voted to ratify, but on the final roll-call abandoned this position and sustained the qualifying amendments which the convention adopted.

In his person, the energetic soldier and practical man of affairs united with the pious and hospitable country gentleman. His large investments in land, increasing in value, made him wealthy. His dignity, courtesy, and engaging address combined with his intellectual attainments to make him a favorite in the social life of his day, which he greatly enjoyed. He was an enthusiastic advocate of popular education, possessed one of the finest libraries in western Virginia, and himself had a talent for naïve yet forceful expression, apparent in his letters, his Orderly Book and Journal indispensable among contemporary documents dealing with Dunmore's War —and his account of his experiences and impressions in Kentucky in 1779.

[Fleming's papers, including his Manuscript Journal in Kentucky, are in the Draper MSS., State Hist. Soc. of Wis. Of the numerous brief notices which have been written of Col. Fleming, practically every one confuses him in one or more respects with his contemporary, Judge William Fleming of Cumberland County, Va.; several confuse him with John Fleming, who migrated from Virginia to Kentucky, and after whom Fleming County, Ky., is named. The best and fullest sketch of him is that by H. B. Grigsby, in "The History of the Virginia Federal Convention of 1788," *Va. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, n.s., X (1891), 40–54 (with other references in vols. IX and XI), but this is not free from errors. See also R. G. Thwaites and L. P. Kellogg, *Doc. Hist. of Dunmore's War* (1905) and *The Revolution on the Upper Ohio* (1908), which contain letters and other writings by him; V. A. Lewis, *Hist. of the Battle of Point Pleasant* (1909); and J. A. Waddell, *Annals of Augusta County* (2nd ed., 1902). T. Roosevelt, *The Winning of the West* (4 vols., 1889–96) has some important references to Fleming, but makes the curious error of naming him president of the Danville Convention which was presided over by Samuel McDowell.]

A.C.G., Jr.

**FLEMING, WILLIAM MAYBURY** (Sept. 29, 1817–May 7, 1866), actor, manager, soldier, was born at Danbury, Conn. As a young lad he came to New York City and was engaged in the counting-room of the *Commercial Advertiser*. After some little experience as an amateur actor

he made his first professional appearance on the stage, Jan. 7, 1839, playing Shylock to the Portia of Charlotte Cushman, who at that period was struggling for recognition, and for whom the occasion was a benefit performance. Fleming was billed as "a young gentleman, his first appearance." After appearing in the same character in Philadelphia on Mar. 31, 1840, at the Walnut Street Theatre, he joined a troupe of players managed by John Oxley and went to Kingston, Jamaica, but the climate did not agree with him and in six months' time he returned to the United States. He was next seen at the Bowery Theatre in 1843, playing the Cloud King in the romantic drama *The Bronze Horse*. Later he appeared at the same house as Lord Cornwallis in a historical play entitled *Putnam, or the Iron Son of '76*. During the season of 1845–46, he acted with the companies managed by Ludlow and Smith, at their New Orleans and Mobile theatres. On June 7, 1847, he assumed the management of the Odeon Theatre, Albany, N. Y., but soon relinquished it. In December of the next year, he was at the St. Charles Theatre, New Orleans, and here he played Hamlet, Othello, Romeo, and Richelieu, as well as Sergeant Austerlitz in *The Maid of Croissey*. In 1852 he married Emily Sophia Chippendale, an actress of the famous English theatrical family of that name.

In 1853 Fleming became the manager of the National Theatre in Boston. In this position he persistently denounced the law then existing throughout Massachusetts prohibiting performances on Saturday nights, and took every possible occasion to speak of it as illiberal and a source of vice and disturbance. On June 30, 1856, he leased for the summer Burton's Chambers Street Theatre, in New York, for the purpose of presenting his wife to the New York public. He then returned to the National in Boston, where he was seen as Richelieu, but he met with little success. On Feb. 5 of this year he produced a new play entitled *Palomba of the Carbonari*, written for him by Col. Spencer Wallace Cone of New York, the father of Kate Claxton. Though it was well received, and Fleming in impersonating the leading character was much commended, the play failed to attract much attention.

At the beginning of the Civil War Fleming relinquished his business interests at great financial loss, and entered the army as paymaster on the staff of Gen. William T. Sherman. He was one of those who participated in the famous march to the sea. He was mustered out of service in March 1866, and died in New York City some two months later. He was buried at Greenwood Cemetery, Brooklyn. While he never attained great fame as either actor or manager, he did achieve conspicuous success in both fields of endeavor, and his efforts were always worthy and dignified.

[T. Allston Brown, *Hist. of the Am. Stage* (1870); H. P. Phelps, *Players of a Century* (1880); N. M. Ludlow, *Dramatic Life as I Found It* (1880); *N. Y. Tribune*, May 8, 1866; certain facts from Maybury Fleming and Maybury William Fleming.]

R. D.

**FLEMING, WILLIAMINA PATON STEVENS** (May 15, 1857–May 21, 1911), astronomer, was the daughter of Robert and Mary (Walker) Stevens. She was born in Dundee, Scotland, and educated in the public schools of that place; for a time she was a teacher there. In 1877 she married James Orr Fleming, and in December of the following year came with him to America and settled in Boston. A position accepted apparently as a means of livelihood led to a distinguished astronomical career. She entered Harvard College Observatory in 1879, as a temporary employee, and two years later was given a permanent position, with duties of copying and ordinary computing.

At this time photography, after years of experimenting, was being adapted as a means of systematic astronomical research. Short-focus cameras, to take a plate covering a large area of the sky, were soon accumulating a permanent record of celestial phenomena; a large prism placed in front of an object glass made it possible to photograph on one plate the spectra of a great number of stars. Mrs. Fleming was put in charge of the ever-growing photographic library, with responsibility for indexing and examining the plates. This was a new field with few precedents. No one could tell her what she would find. Gifted with keenness of vision, a clear and logical mind, courage and independence, she made the most of her opportunity.

Her most important work was done with the objective-prism plates. While the stellar spectra could be classified in a general way in Secchi's four types, it was soon found in the course of this work that many of the spectra have intermediate characteristics and that there is no definite break in the transition from one type to the next. The number of types was very considerably increased. Each spectrum on each plate was examined with a magnifying glass. The resulting classification of 10,351 stars is published in the "Draper Catalogue of Stellar Spectra" (*Annals of the Astronomical Observatory of Harvard College*, vol. XXVII, 1890). Spectra which did not fit into the classification were marked on the plate as "peculiar." Mrs. Fleming was at work on a "Memoir on Peculiar Spectra" when she was stricken with her last illness. Her suspicions

aroused by the peculiarities she observed, she discovered ten *novæ* and over two hundred variable stars. She found that stars with banded spectra and bright lines were practically sure to be variables, a generalization which has been amply substantiated. She was not content, however, with discovery alone, but in order to facilitate the determination of the characteristics of their light-variation, she undertook the very laborious work of measuring the positions and magnitudes of sequences of comparison stars for each of 222 of the variable stars she had discovered (*Ibid.*, vol. XLVII, pt. 1, 1907, and pt. 2, 1912).

She was made an honorary member of the Royal Astronomical Society of London and received the Guadalupe Almendaro medal of the Sociedad Astronomica de Mexico. At her death in 1911 she left one son. Dr. Annie J. Cannon, who has taken up and carried on the work of spectral classification, says of her, "Mrs. Fleming was possessed of an extremely magnetic personality and an attractive countenance, enlivened by remarkably bright eyes. . . . Her bright face, her attractive manner, and her cheery greeting with its charming Scotch accent, will long be remembered."

[E. C. Pickering, *In Memoriam Williamina Paton Fleming* (1911); tributes by Annie J. Cannon in *Astrophysical Jour.*, Nov. 1911, *Sci. American*, June 3, 1911, and *Science*, June 30, 1911; H. H. Turner in *Monthly Notices Royal Astron. Soc.*, Feb. 1912; G. A. Thompson, *New Eng. Mag.*, Dec. 1912; *Nature* (London), June 1, 1911; *Das Weltall* (Berlin), July 15, 1911; *Jour. Brit. Astron. Asso.*, May–July 1911; *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11.] R. S. D.

**FLETCHER, ALICE CUNNINGHAM** (Mar. 15, 1838–Apr. 6, 1923), ethnologist, and writer on Indian music, was born in Cuba, the daughter of Thomas G. Fletcher and Lucia Adeline Jenks, during a temporary sojourn of her parents on that island. (The year 1845, given as the date of her birth in *Who's Who in America*, is incorrect.) She herself attributed her almost lifelong interest in American Indian ethnology to the early influence of Prof. F. W. Putnam [*q.v.*], of the Peabody Museum of American Archeology at Harvard, whom she often called her "god-father in science." Her development as an ethnologist was furthered by an extensive study of the Plains Indians and her personal interest in their problems. She lived among them for a number of years, and adopted as her son a young Omaha, Francis La Flesche, a brother of Bright Eyes [*q.v.*]. In 1880 she originated the system of lending small sums to the Indians for buying land and building houses. She next was instrumental in securing the allotment of land in severalty for the Indians, and acted as a special agent to carry out the allotment work among the

Fletcher

Omaha (1883–84), the Winnebago (1887–89), and the Nez-Percé Indians (1890–93). In 1882 she became interested in the work of the Peabody Museum, in whose list of officers her name appeared as assistant in 1886 and where she held the Thaw fellowship, created for her in 1891. Thereafter, for many years the results of her investigations among the Sioux, Omaha, Winnebago, Pawnee and other Indian tribes were largely published in the *Reports* and *Papers* of that institution. In 1896 she became vice-president of the American Association for the Advancement of Science; in 1903, president of the American Anthropological Society of Washington; and in 1905, president of the American Folk-Lore Society.

She was a pioneer in the field of American Indian music. Her paper on that subject presented at the Chicago Anthropological Congress of 1893 inaugurated work in a field in which, though many others have since shared in its development, she remained until her death the most distinguished figure. In the nineties she recorded the Hako Ceremony of the Pawnee Indians, and secured the first complete record of the ritual and music of a Plains Indian religious ceremony. It was the first time that any white observer had been permitted to step behind the veil of the Red Man's esoteric mysteries, and set down for scientific study religious beliefs and observances hitherto impossible to witness. Her personal influence with the Indians enabled her to add to the archeological treasures of the Peabody Museum, among other objects, the Sacred Tent of War of the Omaha. Of the forty-six monographs which she contributed to American ethnology her chief work is "The Omaha Tribe" (*Twenty-seventh Annual Report of the Bureau of American Ethnology*, 1911), an authoritative, monumental study of its subject, the result of many years of research, and written in collaboration with her adopted son, Francis La Flesche. Of specific musical interest are: "The Study of Indian Music" (*Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, vol. I, 1915, pp. 231–35); "A Study of Omaha Indian Music" (*Archæological and Ethnological Papers of the Peabody Museum*, vol. I, no. 5, June 1903), published "after ten years of study on the subject"; "Love Songs Among the Omaha Indians" (*Memoirs of the International Congress of Anthropology*, Chicago, 1894); and "Indian Songs" (*Century Magazine*, January 1894).

Miss Fletcher was one of the most authoritative interpreters of the North American Indian and his soul-life, his religious and his social concepts. A woman of lovable character, who had

proved herself the Indian's friend in practise as well as in theory, by her sympathetic kindness she won the confidence of the chiefs and leading medicine-men of the tribes among whom she worked. As a result she was made free of their most sacred ceremonies; the Indians had no hesitancy in singing for her their sacred tribal songs as well as their play-songs, and she was thus able to record much of that inner life of the American aborigine which as a rule is carefully concealed from the ordinary investigator.

[Chas. C. Willoughby in *Fifty-seventh Report of the Peabody Museum of Am. Arch. and Eth., 1922–23* (1924); Walter Hough in *Am. Anthropologist*, Apr.–June, 1923, with complete bibliography; E. H. Fletcher, *The Descendants of Robt. Fletcher of Concord, Mass.* (1881); *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Apr. 7, 1923.] F. H. M.

**FLETCHER, CALVIN** (Feb. 4, 1798–May 26, 1866), lawyer, banker, was a descendant of Robert Fletcher who, coming from England in 1630, settled at Concord, Mass. Jesse Fletcher, of the sixth generation, was a resident of Westford, Mass., when he married Lucy Keyes, Aug. 8, 1782. He afterwards engaged in farming at Ludlow, Vt., where his son Calvin was born and spent his youth. The latter's early education was scanty, and he was able to attend school at Randolph and Royalton only intermittently. In April 1817, leaving home he endeavored to ship before the mast at Boston but failed. He thereupon turned westward and made his way principally on foot to Pennsylvania, where he worked as a laborer for a time, and then proceeded to Urbana, Champaign County, northwestern Ohio. There he taught school, and in the autumn of 1817 entered the law office of James Cooley, subsequently United States chargé d'affaires in Peru. In 1819 he went to Richmond, Va., and was licensed to practise law there, but returning to Urbana was admitted to the Ohio bar in 1820, and became Cooley's partner. In 1821, however, he moved to Indianapolis, which had just been made the capital of Indiana, and was the first lawyer to practise there. From thenceforth it was his home. Commencing with no financial resources, he soon acquired a lucrative legal connection. He became prosecuting attorney for Marion County in September 1822, serving as such for a year, and in August 1825 was appointed state's attorney for the 5th judicial district, embracing eight counties. This position he also held for a year, when he was elected to the state Senate, continuing in the legislature till 1832. He enjoyed a large and increasing practise, both on circuit and before the supreme court, and became the acknowledged leader of the district bar. In 1834 the legislature appointed him on a committee to



organize a state bank, an undertaking which was successfully accomplished. He was approached in 1836 with a proposal that he become a candidate for Congress but declined, saying that he preferred to adhere to his profession and educate his children. In 1843 he relinquished his law practise on being appointed president of the branch office of the State Bank at Indianapolis, and thereafter confined his attention to banking, becoming the head of the Indianapolis Banking Company when the charter of the State Bank expired. He was largely interested in agriculture, owning and himself working a 1,600 acre farm on the outskirts of the city.

Physically a man of great strength with remarkable powers of endurance, he was always, as his son said, "constitutionally on the drive," incessantly at work. Of simple tastes, he lived unostentatiously and took no pleasure in public life though in private he was extremely sociable. He died in Indianapolis from injuries received through being thrown from his horse. He was twice married: on May 1, 1821, to Sarah Hill of Fleming County, Ky., and on Nov. 5, 1855, to Mrs. Keziah Price Lister, née Backhurst.

[E. H. Fletcher, *The Descendants of Robt. Fletcher of Concord, Mass.* (1881); W. B. Trask, "The Honorable Calvin Fletcher," in *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1869, a comprehensive sketch containing obituaries and autobiographical letter.] H. W. H. K.

**FLETCHER, HORACE** (Aug. 10, 1849–Jan. 13, 1919), writer and lecturer on nutrition, was born in Lawrence, Mass., the youngest of the four children of Isaac and Mary (Blake) Fletcher, and the eighth in descent from Robert Fletcher, an Englishman who settled in Concord, Mass., in 1630. He was an enthusiastic and persistent traveler. At nine he tried to run away to sea; between his school days in New London, N. H., and his single year at Dartmouth College he shipped on a whaling voyage to the Pacific and acquired his lifelong affection for Japan; later he circled the globe four times and penetrated into obscure recesses of Mexico, Central America, Japan, and the Dutch East Indies. Combining salesmanship with travel, he was connected at one time or another with thirty-eight different business houses. In 1881 he married Grace Adelaide Marsh of San Francisco, which was his headquarters for some thirty years. He made a fortune as a manufacturer of printers' ink and importer of silks and other Oriental merchandise, was one of the founders of the Bohemian Club, and was famous locally as a snap shooter and all-round athlete. In 1892 he was manager of the New Orleans Opera House. At another time he was art correspondent of the Paris edition of the

*New York Herald*. He liked to paint and exhibited his pictures both in the United States and abroad. In 1895, however, a life-insurance company declined to accept him as a risk, and Fletcher realized suddenly that he was fifty pounds overweight, harrowed by indigestion, and subject to frequent illness. He tried several cures without result, consoled himself with the New Thought, and—imbued with the American business man's idea of "service"—wrote two books, *Menticulture, or The A-B-C of True Living* (1895) and *Happiness as found in Forethought minus Fearthought* (1897), to spread his gospel of health and happiness. Traces of the New Thought stuck to his doctrines until the last, but his final recovery of his normal exuberant good health he attributed to the simple procedure of chewing his food thoroughly. Thenceforth he devoted the greater part of his time to popularizing his principles. They were: to eat only when genuinely hungry; to eat whatever appealed to the appetite; to chew each mouthful until it "swallowed itself"; to eat only when free from anxiety, depression, or other preoccupations; and to enjoy one's food. To a nation rather inclined to gulp two of its daily meals and to eat till surfeited at the third Fletcher's teachings could do little harm and might accomplish some good. He himself was one of the best-natured and least fanatical of reformers; he enjoyed the good things of life and was publicly seen taking second helpings of turkey. He lectured and wrote indefatigably, and some of his books (see *Who's Who in America*) were translated into German, Italian, Hungarian, Polish, and Russian. In America "Fletcherism" and "fletcherize" became current words. A chubby little man, nattily dressed, bubbling with good humor, he was a favorite with newspapermen and magazine writers, who helped valiantly to spread his fame and his instruction. He himself made no money by his propaganda: he lectured without charge and subsidized research in nutrition at Yale University and the University of Cambridge. Though his doctrines were not new nor entirely true, his work and influence were on the whole beneficial. During his last years he lived chiefly in Venice. He celebrated his fiftieth birthday by riding almost two hundred miles on a bicycle. During the War of 1914–18 he engaged in welfare work in Belgium, teaching the refugees to make the most of their scant rations. He died of bronchitis in Copenhagen, worn out by his zeal for the welfare of others.

[See E. H. Fletcher, *The Descendants of Robert Fletcher* (privately printed, 1881); *Gen. Cat. Dartmouth College 1769–1910* (1910–11); *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19; H. T. Finck, "Horace Fletcher, Gluttony's Opponent," in N. Y. *Evening Post*, Jan. 14, 1919; editorial in N. Y. *World*, Jan. 15, 1919; obituaries in *N. Y. Times* and *Herald*, Jan. 14, 1919. For articles by and about Fletcher see *Readers' Guide to Periodical Literature*, 1900–14.] G. H. G.



**FLETCHER, JAMES COOLEY** (Apr. 15, 1823–Apr. 23, 1901), missionary, the son of Calvin [*q.v.*] and Sarah (Hill) Fletcher, and a brother of William Baldwin Fletcher [*q.v.*], was born in Indianapolis, Ind. He prepared for college at the Indianapolis Seminary, and at Phillips Exeter Academy, Exeter, N. H., and graduated from Brown University in 1846. While in college he became a member of the Richmond Street Congregational Church of Providence, R. I. After one year at home, he entered Princeton Theological Seminary and took the full course there. Toward the close of his senior year, on Apr. 25, 1849, he was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of New Brunswick, N. J. He spent the following year in theological study at Paris, France, and Geneva, Switzerland, and married, on Aug. 28, 1850, in Geneva, Henrietta, daughter of the Rev. Dr. César and Jenny Malan. On his return to America shortly thereafter, he took service for a year with the American and Foreign Christian Union. He was ordained on Feb. 13, 1851, by the Presbytery of Muncie, Ind., and at the close of the same year went to Brazil as missionary of the Christian Union and chaplain of the Seaman's Friend Society. During the year 1852–53 he was first secretary *pro tem.* and then acting secretary of the United States legation at Rio de Janeiro, a position which brought him into intimate relations with the Emperor Dom Pedro II. In 1854, after a visit to Chile, he returned to the United States for several months. During 1855–56 he was agent in Brazil for the American Bible Society, traveling about 3,000 miles in the service, visiting certain German and Swiss colonies south of Rio, and journeying north as far as Pernambuco. On hearing at Pernambuco of the illness of his wife in Europe, whither she had gone from Rio with their daughter, Julia Constance (born in Rio Sept. 24, 1853), he sailed to join her. From 1856 to 1862 he lived in Newburyport, Mass., engaged in writing, preaching, and lecturing. In particular he collaborated with the Rev. D. P. Kidder in the publication in 1857 of their important volume, *Brazil and the Brazilians.*

In 1862–63 he was agent in Brazil of the American Sunday School Union, cooperating with the American Bible Society. He made a journey of 2,000 miles up the Amazon to the borders of Peru, gathering natural history specimens for Prof. Louis Agassiz—a journey which led to an expedition by Agassiz himself in 1865. During 1864–65 he went on a semi-official mission to the

Brazilian government and induced it to join with the United States government in establishing and subsidizing the United States and Brazil Mail S. S. Company. In 1868–69 he was Brazilian agent of the American Tract Society. From 1869 to 1873 he resided in Portugal as United States consul at Oporto for the full period and during the year 1870 acted also as United States chargé d'affaires at Lisbon. On Oct. 22, 1872, he married at the consulate in Oporto his second wife, Frederica Jane Smith. From 1873 to 1890, save for a brief visit to the United States, he resided in Naples, Italy, engaging in voluntary missionary work with the Waldenses and the Free Church of Scotland; and contributing numerous articles to American newspapers and magazines. He prepared an article on Naples for the *Encyclopædia Britannica.* He returned to the United States in 1890 and took up his residence in Los Angeles, Cal., serving as stated supply of the Presbyterian Church at Wilmington, Cal., during 1892, and at La Crescenta, Cal., from 1893 until his death. On Jan. 2, 1897, he married Mrs. Elizabeth (Murton) Curryer of Oakland, Cal. During the last six years of his life he was president of the Los Angeles School of Art and Design. He died and was buried at Los Angeles. He was survived by his third wife and by a son and a daughter of his first marriage.

[In addition to *Brazil and the Brazilians,* see *Am. and Foreign Christian Union* (later *Christian World*), organ of the Am. and Foreign Christian Union, vols. II–VI, 1852–55; *Ann. Reports Am. Bible Soc.,* 1855, 1856, 1863, etc.; *Necrological Report, Princeton Theol. Sem.,* 1902; H. O. Dwight, *Centennial Hist. Am. Bible Soc.* (1916); Robt. Fletcher, *The Descendants of Robert Fletcher of Concord, Mass.* (1881); *Minutes of Gen. Assembly Presbyt. Church,* 1902.] J. C. A.

**FLETCHER, RICHARD** (Jan. 8, 1788–June 21, 1869), jurist, sixth in line of descent from Robert Fletcher, a Yorkshireman who settled at Concord, Mass., in 1630, was the son of Sarah (Green) and Asaph Fletcher, a physician and prominent local politician of Leicester, Mass., and Cavendish, Vt. He was born at Cavendish, and spent his boyhood there, obtaining his early education at the local schools. Proceeding to Dartmouth College, he graduated in 1806 with the highest honors. He then became principal of the academy at Salisbury, N. H., but in 1809 took up the study of law at Portsmouth with Daniel Webster. On being admitted to the New Hampshire bar in Rockingham County in 1811 he commenced practise at Salisbury, removing later to Portsmouth, where he quickly established a reputation for reliability which combined with a natural instinct for circuit work to attract an ever increasing professional connection. In 1819, seeking a larger sphere he moved to Boston, was admitted to the Suffolk County bar in 1820, and at once took his place with the leading Massachusetts practitioners. Always a student, his wide reading gave him a comprehensive command of the law and his devotion to his clients' interests made him an admirable advisor. Though never erudite in the academic sense his knowledge of mercantile and maritime law was profound. It was as a jury lawyer that he was most successful. Not eloquent, he was master of a straightforward, almost conversational style of speaking which by its very simplicity favorably impressed a jury, and his marshalling of the facts of a case compelled conviction. No advocate of his time was more skilful in the conduct of a trial. His greatest triumph, however, was obtained in the Charles River Bridge Case, in which, against the almost unanimous opinion of the Boston bar, he successfully contested before the Massachusetts supreme court the claim of Harvard University to an exclusive franchise of bridging the Charles River between Charlestown and Boston (*The Proprietors of Charles River Bridge* vs. *The Proprietors of Warren Bridge, et al.,* 6 *Pickering,* 376; 7 *Pickering,* 344; 11 *Peters,* 420). Decided by a bare majority in the Supreme Court of the United States, it was "one of the most noted and historic cases ever argued before that tribunal" (Warren, *post*). In 1836 he was elected to the Twenty-fifth Congress as a Whig representative. At Washington his "enforced contact and daily association with men whose profanity and immorality shocked him beyond measure," was, he said, unbearable (Gordon, *post*), and he declined a renomination. He was appointed a judge of the Massachusetts supreme court, Oct. 24, 1848, but resigned Jan. 18, 1853, giving as his reason that he found his judicial duties so unremitting as to leave no time for reading or thinking on any other subject. He returned to the bar for a short time, but retired from practise in 1858. Throughout his life he was a devout member of the Baptist Church, and an unusually acute sense of religious responsibility pervaded all his social and professional contacts. He never married. Noted in his lifetime for his discriminating benefactions, he by his will bequeathed upward of $100,000 to Dartmouth College, which from 1848 to 1857 he had served as a trustee.

[E. H. Fletcher, *Fletcher Geneal.: An Account of the Descendants of Robt. Fletcher of Concord, Mass.* (1881); *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); Conrad Reno, *Memoirs of the Judiciary and the Bar of New England* (1901), II, 711; *Am. Law Rev.,* Oct. 1869; G. T. Chapman, *Sketches of the Alumni of Dartmouth Coll.* (1867), p. 127; J. K. Lord, *Hist. of Dartmouth Coll., 1815–1909* (1913), pp. 404–05; A. J. Gordon, *The Service of a Good Life* (1869); Charles Warren, "The Charles

River Bridge Case," *Green Bag*, June, July 1908; *Boston Transcript*, June 22, 1869.] H. W. H. K.

**FLETCHER, ROBERT** (Mar. 6, 1823–Nov. 8, 1912), medical scholar, bibliographer, was born in Bristol, England, the son of Robert Fletcher and Esther Wall. His father was an attorney and accountant. Following his preliminary studies he was taken into his father's office with a view to a career in the law. After two years, however, he decided to take up the study of medicine. He entered the Bristol Medical College in 1839, later transferring to the London Hospital, where he completed his studies. He was made a member of the Royal College of Surgeons and a licentiate of the Society of Apothecaries in 1844. He came to the United States in 1847 and settled in Cincinnati, Ohio, for the practise of his profession. Following the outbreak of the Civil War, he became surgeon of the 1st Regiment of Ohio Volunteers, in which capacity he served for nearly three years in the field. He was then placed in charge of Hospital No. 7, at Nashville, Tenn., and later made chief medical purveyor of the Army of the Cumberland. In the meantime he had been commissioned a surgeon of volunteers, and at the end of the war received the brevets of lieutenant-colonel and colonel, "for faithful and meritorious service." Declining a commission in the regular establishment, he took up his residence in Washington and had an active part in the preparation of two volumes of *Statistics, Medical and Anthropological, of the Provost Marshal General's Bureau* (1875), compiled under the supervision of Col. Jedediah H. Baxter, Medical Corps, United States Army, prefacing this valuable work with a treatise on the science of anthropometry. In 1876 Fletcher became associated with the library of the surgeon-general's office as assistant to Col. John Shaw Billings [*q.v.*], who was then engaged in the preliminary work upon the *Index-Catalogue of the Library of the Surgeon General's Office*, the first volume of which appeared in 1880. Through the first series of this publication Fletcher was chief assistant to Billings in the work of redaction. After the completion of the first series of the *Index-Catalogue* in 1895, Billings retired from the army and the continuation of the work devolved upon Fletcher, who applied himself to it until the beginning of his last illness. In 1879 Billings and Fletcher, as co-editors, put out the *Index Medicus*, as an extra-official publication. It ran through twenty-one volumes (1879–99), was suspended for a time, then began publication again in 1903, being issued by the Carnegie Institution of Washington, with Fletcher as editor-in-chief from 1903 to 1911. Despite thirty-five years of exacting

Fletcher

preoccupation on these two bibliographical publications, he found time for numerous contributions to the literature of anthropology and the history of medicine. His monograph *On Prehistoric Trephining and Cranial Amulets* (1881) was the first treatment of the subject in the English language, and covered everything on the subject up to the time of its publication. The paper on "Medical Lore of the Older English Dramatists and Poets" (*Bulletin of The Johns Hopkins Hospital, May–June* 1895), was equally complete and scientific. The "Tragedy of the Great Plague at Milan in 1630" (*Ibid.*, August 1898), was a literary achievement, the story of which was suggested by an old Italian print. Fletcher's interest in the poetry of his native England was given further expression in his essay on "Myths of the Robin Redbreast in Early English Poetry" (*American Anthropologist*, April 1889), and he cherished an unfulfilled ambition to bring out an enlarged paper containing the results of his later investigations of the subject. Perhaps from his early legal studies he took a deep interest in medical jurisprudence, on which subject he was a lecturer at the Columbian (now George Washington) University, Washington, during the years 1884–88 and at The Johns Hopkins Hospital Medical School from 1897 to 1903. He was an active member of The Johns Hopkins Historical Society and contributed many of his historical essays to its publications.

Fletcher was a man of striking personality. "Above the medium height," says Sir William Osler (*post*, p. 293), "always well groomed and with a dignified military bearing, age made him a typical courtly gentleman of the old school. He had a rare gift for friendship. After his jurisprudence lecture . . . many of us would gather, delighted to hear Dr. Fletcher's reminiscences of the profession, which went back to the forties. He had met Sir Astley Cooper and he knew well the famous old men of the Bristol School and could tell tales of the Middle West in the palmy days of Drake and Dudley and Caldwell. It was a rare treat to dine with him quietly in his club in Washington. He knew his Brillat-Savarin well and could order a dinner that would have made the mouth of Cœlius Apicius to water."

In 1910 he received the gold medal of the Royal College of Surgeons, a distinction conferred upon but eleven physicians in ninety years, among them Lord Lister and Sir James Paget. He had an attack of diphtheria in the spring of 1911 which left him enfeebled until his death the following year. He was married in 1843 in his native Bristol to Hannah, daughter of John Howe.

[Sir Wm. Osler, "Robert Fletcher," in *Bristol Medi-*

*co-Chirurgical Jour.*, vol. XXX (1912); F. H. Garrison in H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Nov. 8, 1912.]

J. M. P.

**FLETCHER, THOMAS CLEMENT** (Jan. 22, 1827–Mar. 25, 1899), lawyer, soldier, and governor of Missouri, was born at Herculaneum, Mo., the son of Clement B. Fletcher and Margaret (Byrd) Fletcher, emigrants from Maryland to Missouri in 1818, and both descended from early colonial ancestors. He received his education in the subscription school at Herculaneum, where he had for a teacher Willard Frissell, an emigrant from Massachusetts. At the age of seventeen he was given work in the circuit clerk's office and in 1846 was appointed deputy circuit-clerk. Three years later, at the age of twenty-two, he was elected to that office. He was married to Mary Clara Honey in 1851, admitted to the bar in 1856, and appointed land agent for the Southwest Branch of the Pacific Railroad (now the St. Louis & San Francisco), whereupon he moved to St. Louis. Politically, he was a Benton Democrat, and a strong opponent of slavery, although he came of a slave-owning family. After 1856 he became a Republican and, as a delegate to the Chicago convention, was an ardent supporter of Abraham Lincoln for the nomination in 1860.

At the outbreak of the Civil War he was appointed by Gen. Lyons as assistant provost-marshal-general with headquarters at St. Louis. He became colonel of the 31st Missouri in 1862, was wounded and captured at Chickasaw Bayou but exchanged in May 1863, was present at the fall of Vicksburg and the battle of Chattanooga, and commanded a brigade in the Atlanta campaign. Returning home on account of illness in the spring of 1864, he recovered in time to organize the 47th and 50th Missouri regiments and to command the Union army which, at the battle of Pilot Knob, Mo., checked Gen. Price's army and probably saved St. Louis from capture. For this achievement Fletcher was given a vote of thanks by the Missouri legislature and brevetted brigadier-general by President Lincoln. While with Sherman he was nominated by the Republicans for governor over Charles D. Drake. He was elected by a large majority and reëlected in 1866. Thus he served as governor of Missouri from January 1865 to January 1869, during the most trying period of reconstruction.

His administration was confronted with many serious problems; notably: amnesty for those who had fought against the United States; the disposal of the railroads which the state had acquired through the failure of the railroad companies to pay interest on the bonds which the state had guaranteed; and the reorganization of public education. The roads were sold under a guarantee of early completion and the state debt materially reduced; the public-school system was thoroughly reorganized and great progress was made in free education for all children of the state. The governor was unsuccessful, however, in his repeated efforts to obtain a constitutional amendment abolishing the test oaths as a qualification for voting and for engaging in the professions. Subsequent events soon proved the wisdom of his recommendations. He strongly advocated normal schools for training teachers, greater support for the state university, and especial attention to agricultural education. Upon the conclusion of his term as governor, he returned to St. Louis and practised law for a time and then moved to Washington, D. C., where he engaged in the practise of this profession until his death.

[Biography by J. H. Reppy, in *The Messages and Proclamations of the Govs. of the State of Mo.*, vol. IV (1924), ed. by G. G. Avery and F. C. Shoemaker; H. L. Conard, *Encyc. of the Hist. of Mo.*, vol. II (1901); W. B. Stevens, *Centennial Hist. of Mo.* (1921), I, 407; sketch in Boonville *Weekly Advertiser*, Mar. 31, 1899; obituary in *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Mar. 27, 1899; articles in Jefferson City *People's Tribune*, Mar. 27, Apr. 3, June 26, 1867.]

C. H. M.

**FLETCHER, WILLIAM ASA** (June 26, 1788–Sept. 19, 1852), jurist, traced his descent from Robert Fletcher, who, emigrating from England, established himself at Concord, Mass., in 1630. One of his descendants, Joshua Fletcher, a Congregational minister of Westford, Mass., married Sarah Brown in 1775. He owned a farm at Plymouth, N. H., where their son, the future judge, was born. In 1813 William Asa Fletcher was engaged in business in Salem, Mass., removing later to Esperance, Schoharie County, N. Y., where he studied law. About 1820 he went to Michigan, at that time under territorial government, and in 1821 established himself in a law office at Detroit. Two years later he was appointed chief justice of the county court of Wayne County, holding this position till Nov. 22, 1825, when he became attorney-general of the territory. He then resumed private practise in Detroit and in 1830 became a member of the Territorial Council. In 1833 the Council established a judicial circuit, embracing all the organized counties in the territory, excepting Wayne County, and he was appointed circuit judge. Since this necessitated his residing within his district, he removed to Ann Arbor. His work was onerous owing to the extensive area embraced within the circuit, and his constitution was probably permanently impaired in the performance of his duties.

After Michigan had attained statehood, a supreme court was created of which Fletcher in 1836 became the first chief justice under appointment from Gov. Stevens T. Mason. The following year he was commissioned to revise the statutory law, both state and territorial, and in pursuance thereof prepared and arranged *The Revised Statutes of the State of Michigan,* which were adopted by the legislature in 1837 and published the following year. The revision, though evincing ability and great industry, was performed under stress of heavy judicial work, and proved unsatisfactory. As chief justice, however, Fletcher displayed high qualities, combining a firm grasp of legal principles and an intricate cognizance of the changing conditions of an immature community. His decisions were always adapted to the realities of Western life without sacrificing the spirit of the law, and in conducting the business of his court he was efficient and expeditious. Nevertheless some unfortunate failings, not uncommon among the early settlers in the West, deprived him of the respect which the dignity of his office should have commanded. He resigned from the bench in 1842, returned to practise, and was appointed regent of the University of Michigan, a position which he retained till 1846. His first wife, whom he married before he went West, he divorced in 1843. In 1846 he married Adeline D. Doyle.

[E. H. Fletcher, *Fletcher Geneal.: An Account of the Descendants of Robt. Fletcher of Concord, Mass.* (1881); 4 *Mich. Reports,* 19, and *Mich. Biogs.* (1924), I, 299; *Green Bag,* II, 379; *Proc. Mich. State Bar Asso.,* 1918, p. 191; R. B. Ross and G. B. Catlin, *Landmarks of Wayne County and Detroit* (1898). Much of Fletcher's career still remains obscure. The date of death is taken from the Fletcher genealogy; other sources give 1853.] H. W. H. K.

**FLETCHER, WILLIAM BALDWIN** (Aug. 18, 1837–Apr. 25, 1907), physician, a brother of James Cooley Fletcher [*q.v.*], was born on a farm which has since been covered by a thickly populated section of the city of Indianapolis, Ind. His father, Calvin Fletcher [*q.v.*], was a lawyer who came from Vermont to Indiana in 1821. His mother was Sarah Hill, a native of Kentucky. After studying for a time with Louis Agassiz he attended the College of Physicians and Surgeons in New York where he received the degree of M.D., in 1860. He returned to Indianapolis for practise, but his plans were disrupted by the outbreak of the Civil War. After some service incident to the mobilization of Indiana troops at Camp Morton, Indianapolis, he enlisted as a musician and entered the secret service. He was captured and sent to Libby Prison, where he spent nine months caring for the sick in the hospital. Following a bayonet wound received while

Fletcher

trying to escape and a stay in hospital, he was exchanged and discharged. In 1862 he again took up his practise in Indianapolis and in 1868 he took part in the organization of the Indiana Medical College. On this faculty he held various chairs for the following six years. In 1875 he went to Europe where he spent two years in the hospitals of London, Paris, Dublin, and Glasgow. Returning home, in 1879, he was given the professorship of nervous diseases in the newly organized Central College of Physicians and Surgeons, Indianapolis. In 1883 he was appointed superintendent of the Indiana Central Hospital for the Insane. During the five years of his incumbency of this position he introduced many reforms, including the abolition of restraint and the employment of women physicians for the women patients. Resuming private practise, he established a sanitarium for the care of nervous and mental diseases.

Though best known as an alienist, Fletcher was also an able anatomist and an accomplished surgeon. In his teaching he combined an unusual command of language with a facility for illustration by rapid drawings. His interests were otherwise varied. In 1883 he was appointed to fill a vacancy and served part of one term in the Indiana state Senate, and some years later he was instrumental in securing the passage (1889) of the law providing for the Board of State Charities. He was an ardent supporter of the temperance movement and advocated the establishment of a state institution for the treatment of alcohol addicts. His contributions to the *Transactions of the Indiana State Medical Society* include: "Human Entozoa" (1866); "Cerebral Circulation in the Insane" (1887); "Purulent Absorption as a Cause of Insanity" (1892); "The Effect of Alcohol upon the Nervous System" (1895); and "A Consideration of the Present Laws for the Commitment of the Insane in Indiana" (1901). He also published *Cholera, its Characteristics, History, Treatment,* etc. (1866), and *Stray Papers on Cerebral Subjects* (1892). Fletcher was a large heavy set man, brusque, and described as being "without fear or reverence." He was married in 1862 to Agnes, daughter of James O'Brien of Indianapolis. They had three sons and four daughters. Failing health compelled him to spend his last days in Florida and he died in Orlando in that state. On Apr. 27, 1907, the day of his funeral in Indianapolis, the *Indianapolis Morning Star* published a commemorative poem, "The Doctor," written by James Whitcomb Riley.

[E. H. Fletcher, *Fletcher Geneal.: An Account of the Descendants of Robt. Fletcher of Concord, Mass.*

(1881); R. H. Ritter, in *Trans. Ind. State Medic. Soc.*, 1907; G. W. H. Kemper, *Medic. Hist. of Ind.* (1911); R. F. Stone, *Biog. of Eminent Am. Physicians and Surgeons* (1894); H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, May 4, 1907.] J. M. P.

**FLICKINGER, DANIEL KUMLER** (May 25, 1824–Aug. 29, 1911), clergyman of the United Brethren in Christ, pioneer in the establishment and long a leader in the extension of their missionary work, was the son of Jacob and Hannah (Kumler) Flickinger. He was of Swiss descent, his father's ancestors being Swiss Mennonites, and his mother, the daughter of Bishop Henry Kumler, Sr. His parents migrated from Franklin County, Pa., to Butler County, Ohio, in 1818, and Daniel was born in Sevenmile, the sixth in a family of fourteen children. His father was a prosperous farmer, local preacher, and operator of a distillery. Opposed to higher education, he refused his son's request to be permitted to go to college in lieu of receiving a $5,000 farm when he was twenty-one. As a result, a common-school training was all Daniel received until after he reached his majority, when he attended a seminary for a year with a view to entering college. Poor health, however, thwarted his ambition. On Feb. 25, 1847, he married Mary Linter, and in 1850 joined the Miami Conference of the United Brethren. After a year on a circuit he bought a home in Oxford with the intention of studying at Miami University, but the death of his wife, leaving him with two children, the youngest a week old, again kept him from college. From 1851 to 1855 he preached, traveled in the West with Bishop Jacob Glossbrenner, and was city missionary in Cincinnati. The Conference of 1853 ordained him, and that year, Jan. 9, he married Bishop Glossbrenner's daughter, Catherine, who died in August 1854.

The United Brethren established their Home Frontier and Foreign Missionary Society in 1853, and in January 1855, with D. C. Kumler and W. J. Shuey [*q.v.*], Flickinger sailed for Africa to select a mission site. This enterprise was the beginning of a long career of strenuous missionary activity. After seventeen months he returned, bringing with him his third wife, Susan Woolsey, a mission teacher, whom he married Oct. 30, 1855. In 1857 he made a second visit to Africa, and that year the General Conference elected him secretary of the missionary society. This position he held, except for a short break in 1857–58, until 1885. From 1885 until 1889 he was missionary bishop. After the division in his denomination, which occurred that year, he supplied various churches, some of them Congregational, until 1895 when he withdrew from the liberal and



united with the radical wing of the United Brethren, serving as its missionary secretary from 1897 to 1905. Soon after, he returned to the liberal branch, reuniting with the Miami Conference in August 1906. He is described as "a small man, of slight build, never in robust health, but of keen temper and dauntless purpose. He cared nothing for brilliancy or showy methods, but only for results. . . . In his consecration and utter abandonment to his work, he stood out quite alone" (A. W. Drury, *History of the Church of the United Brethren in Christ*, 1924, pp. 493–94). Twelve times he journeyed to Africa, being shipwrecked twice and once nearly dying of fever; and eight times to the missions of Germany; besides making frequent visitations to the conferences and mission fields of the United States. He kept careful diaries, contributed much to church periodicals, edited the *Missionary Visitor* from 1865 to 1885, and wrote books. Among the latter are: *Offhand Sketches of Men and Things in Africa* (1857); *Ethiopia, or Twenty Years of Missionary Life in Western Africa* (1877); *The Church's Marching Orders* (1879); *Our Missionary Work from 1853–89* (1889); and with W. J. Shuey, *Discourses on Doctrinal and Practical Subjects* (1859). In 1907 he published an autobiographical work, *Fifty-five Years of Active Ministerial Life.* He attended the Miami Conference at Dayton, Aug. 23–28, 1911, and died Aug. 29, at Columbus. He was buried at Oxford, Ohio.

[Besides works mentioned above, see Daniel Berger, *Hist. of the Ch. of the United Brethren in Christ* (1897); H. A. Thompson, *Our Bishops* (1889); *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11; R. E. Flickinger, *The Flickinger Family Hist.* (1927).] H. E. S.

**FLINT, ALBERT STOWELL** (Sept. 12, 1853–Feb. 22, 1923), astronomer, was born in Salem, Mass., the son of Simeon Flint, a business man, and Ellen Rebecca Pollard. Both belonged to old New England families. The only indication in the boy of the future astronomer seems to have been a fondness for learning the constellations. At Harvard, while taking the classical course, he became interested in mathematics. After graduation in 1875, he taught school for a time in California and then returned to Boston to study mechanical engineering in the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. Shortly, however, he recognized his true calling and went to Princeton to study under Charles A. Young. There, early in 1879, he participated in the determination of the latitude of the Princeton Observatory, his contribution being eighty-two observations with the zenith-telescope of twenty-eight pairs of stars on nine nights. He continued

his studies with Ormond Stone at Cincinnati (M.A., University of Cincinnati, 1880), and in 1881 went to Washington as computer in the Naval Observatory.

His main contribution to science began with his removal in 1889 to the Washburn Observatory at the University of Wisconsin, where he at first assisted S. J. Brown in the reobservation of the secondary stars in Auwer's catalogue, and later completed the program. In 1893 he began his work with the meridian circle on the parallaxes of stars. Observation of the first series was completed in three years and the parallax determinations for one hundred stars were published in 1902. Although one or more screens were used to cut down the light of the brighter stars, he was able to detect errors and make corrections in his observations in the nature of a magnitude equation. Kapteyn, in his paper on the distances of stars, says, "It was mainly the confidence gained by the practical confirmation of my provisional results by Flint's work which induced me to publish the present paper without further delay" (Stebbins, *post*, p. 371). A definite measure of Kapteyn's opinion is furnished by the fact that he gave Flint's observations two-thirds of the total weight of all other observations.

With a self-recording transit micrometer and a new device for avoiding magnitude equation, another series of parallax observations was begun in 1898, continued for seven years, and reduced in another seven years. These parallaxes were, naturally, superior even to the earlier ones. The observing hours required by his problem were from dusk to about 9:00 P. M. and again from about 3:00 A. M. until dawn—one of the most exacting and confining of observing programs. Nevertheless, Flint found time to act as secretary and editor of the Wisconsin Academy of Sciences and to take an active part in the work of the Unitarian Church. He was fond of music and poetry and his chief recreations were rowing and tramping. He retired in 1920 but continued to work at the observatory. In 1884 he was married to Helen A. Thomas of Washington, D. C., who with a son and two daughters survived him.

[Joel Stebbins in *Pop. Astron.*, June–July 1923; *Pop. Astron.*, Mar. 1923; *Pubs. Astron. Soc. of the Pacific*, Apr. 1923 (XXXV, 129); *Nature* (London), Mar. 31, 1923.] R. S. D.

**FLINT, AUSTIN** (Oct. 20, 1812–Mar. 13, 1886), physician, one of the most eminent American practitioners and teachers of his century, the son of Dr. Joseph Henshaw Flint of Northampton, Mass.; grandson and namesake of Austin Flint, a surgeon in the Revolutionary army, and great-grandson of Edward Flint, likewise a medical practitioner, was born in Petersham, Mass. After undergraduate studies at Amherst and Harvard, he received his medical degree from the latter institution in 1833. Although he probably never studied abroad, some of his teachers were in close touch with the brilliant French school of the day and from the first he pursued the statistical method and habit of case recording of the eminent Parisian clinician Louis; and even comparatively early in his career he had accumulated thousands of folios of notes intended to serve as a basis for his major text-books, which, he held, should be written only after ripe experience. Following a short stay in Northampton, he settled in Boston but after a few years' experience moved to Buffalo (1836) as a better field for a young and ambitious man. He was professor of medical theory and practise at Rush Medical College, Chicago, in 1844–45, and in 1845 established the *Buffalo Medical Journal* which he conducted for ten years. In 1847, with F. H. Hamilton and J. P. White, he founded the Buffalo Medical College. While nominally a resident of Buffalo and from 1847 to 1861 titular incumbent of the local chair of medicine, he filled the same chair in the University of Louisville, 1852–56; and in the New Orleans Medical College, 1859–61.

Although his nominal residence was transferred to New York in 1859, he does not seem to have been entirely settled there until 1861. In moving to the metropolis at the age of forty-nine he defied the local tradition that success is possible only to a young man with proper local background and influence. Failure was freely predicted and active opposition encountered; and some of the juniors of Flint's rival consultants seem never to have forgiven his success. He began his metropolitan career by accepting the chair of pathology and practical medicine at Long Island College Hospital in 1861, and in the same year cooperated with others in founding Bellevue Hospital Medical College. He became the first incumbent of the chair of internal medicine in the latter institution. For the next quarter of the century he performed the functions of hospital physician, teacher, text-book author, and consultant. By 1863 he was giving special courses in physical diagnosis. He was president of the New York Academy of Medicine, 1873; delegate to the International Medical Congress at London, 1881; and president of the American Medical Association, 1883–84. But for his sudden death from apoplexy, in 1886 he would have had the distinction of reading a paper by request before the British Medical Association, and in 1887 would have been president of the International Medical Congress at Washington.

His literary activity throughout his entire career was prodigious. At first he wrote chiefly for periodicals. He also wrote a few small monographs on such subjects as fevers and dysentery, and elementary works on diseases of the chest and on physical diagnosis. His earliest volume in the last-named field was published in 1856 under the title, *Physical Exploration and Diagnosis of Diseases Affecting the Respiratory Organs.* Numerous editions and revisions with several changes of title continued to appear until 1920. Thus the volume brought out in 1865 was known as the *Compendium of Percussion and Auscultation,* etc., that of 1880 was entitled *Manual of Auscultation and Percussion,* while the most recent, the so-called eighth edition, appeared in 1920 as *A Manual of Physical Diagnosis.* His classic work, *A Treatise on the Principles and Practice of Medicine,* appeared in 1866. The sixth edition was published the year of his death (with the collaboration of Prof. William H. Welch, who incorporated all of the newer bacteriological teaching), and the seventh in 1894. He published some smaller text-books which were limited to single editions; *Phthisis* (1875), and *Clinical Medicine* (1879) are but examples. The list of his minor writings is a long one. He inculcated the doctrine of self-limitation of acute disease which spares the patient much useless drugging; and his receptivity to new ideas was shown in his prompt acceptance of Koch's microbian theory of the origin of tuberculosis. He contributed greatly to the knowledge of chest pathology and diagnosis, taught early in his career that "pulmonary phthisis" is in reality a form of tuberculosis, and popularized the use of the binaural stethoscope.

He was a man of imposing presence and of an unusually well-balanced character. His domestic relations were most fortunate and he enjoyed in his work the constant cooperation of his wife, Anne Skillings, and his son Austin [*q.v.*], also a physician. Few medical men who have made no revolutionary discoveries have been eulogized as was Flint, both in the United States and abroad.

[*Official Report of the Memorial Meeting of the N. Y. County Medic. Asso. in Honor of the Late Austin Flint, M.D., LL.D.* (1886); H. R. M. Landis, in *Johns Hopkins Hosp. Bull.*, June 1919; *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, Mar. 27, 1886; *Medic. Record*, Apr. 24, 1886; *Trans. Medic. Soc. State of N. Y.* (1887); *Lancet* (London), Mar. 20, 1886; *British Medic. Jour.*, Apr. 17, 1886.]

E. P.

**FLINT, AUSTIN** (Mar. 28, 1836–Sept. 22, 1915), physician, physiologist, and alienist, was born in Northampton, Mass., the son of Austin Flint [*q.v.*] and Anne (Skillings) Flint. He was an undergraduate at Harvard during 1852–53 and left his class to take up engineering, but soon decided to go over to the ancestral profession of medicine and spent the years 1854–56 in study at the University of Louisville, where his father was a member of the faculty. He took his degree in medicine at Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, in 1857. At some time during this period he must have been at Buffalo, however, for in October 1855, before graduation, he published in the *Buffalo Medical Journal* an analysis of 106 cases of felon, nearly all from the practise of Prof. F. H. Hamilton of that city. Another undergraduate activity consisted of experiments on the frog which he made at Jefferson Medical College and summed up in a graduation thesis entitled "Phenomena of Capillary Circulation." By coating the frog with collodion he was able to show the effects of asphyxia on the circulation of the web of the foot. His thesis was published in the *American Journal of the Medical Sciences* in July 1857. Immediately upon graduation he was made professor of physiology in the Buffalo Medical College, of which his father had been one of the founders, and at the same time took over the editorship of the *Buffalo Medical Journal.* At this time he had barely attained his majority. Removing with his father to New York, during 1859–60 he was professor of physiology in the New York Medical College, but in 1860–61 he joined his father at New Orleans where he filled the same chair in the local medical school. Here he made experiments on large alligators, studying the heart's action outside the body, respiration, the functions of the liver, the spinal-nerve roots, and so forth. In 1861, again with his father, he was one of the founders of Bellevue Hospital Medical College and its first professor of physiology. This chair he held for thirty years. He seems to have served no period of pupilage in European laboratories, but instead, throughout the entire period of the Civil War he ranked as an assistant surgeon at the New York General Hospital. In 1862 he published a paper on a previously unknown excretory function of the liver, in which he maintained that the cholesterin of the bile is transformed to a substance which he termed stercorin. Six years later, when this paper chanced to obtain a French translation, he was awarded a prize of 1,500 francs from the Institute of France. (Because of a controversy which arose he received only a tardy and imperfect acknowledgment of priority.) During the period 1865–68 he held the chair of physiology in the Long Island College Hospital, while between 1867 and 1869 he spent much time in work on the subject of dietaries for the inmates of state institutions. In 1870 he made a series of studies of muscular power, et cetera, of the pedestrian,

Weston, and in the following year (1871) he published a monograph, *On the Physiological Effects of Severe and Protracted Muscular Exercise.* (More mature observations, "On the Source of Muscular Power," appeared in the *Journal of Anatomy and Physiology* for October 1877.)

In 1867 Flint began to publish his great work entitled *The Physiology of Man.* It filled five volumes, the last of which appeared in 1873. The demand for it was so great that a second edition was issued immediately, bringing the subject up to the last-named date. In addition, the volume on the nervous system was separately published in 1872 (*Physiology of the Nervous System*) and the whole major work was condensed into one volume in *A Textbook of Human Physiology* (1876; 4th ed. 1888). At the International Medical Congress in Philadelphia in 1876 he read a paper which summed up his practical knowledge of physiology.

For many years he was an attending physician at Bellevue and wrote many clinical papers, most of them in special reference to perverted physiology. In 1887 he read a paper on fever before the International Medical Congress. His interest in insanity is said to have been a result of his studies in mental physiology; as early as 1878 he was made a member of the consulting board of the New York Lunatic Asylum. In 1887 he attended the Bellevue lectures of the alienist, Dr. C. F. MacDonald, and not long afterward he extended his interest to criminology, penology, and forensic practise in general. In 1894 he was a member of a commission to investigate the administration of the Elmira Reformatory. Eventually he became one of the most eminent of medical witnesses and figures in many famous cases. His interest in physiology did not flag, however, and from 1898 to 1906 he was professor of that subject in the new medical department of Cornell University. Some of his papers were gathered into two volumes and published in 1903 under the title, *Collected Essays and Articles on Physiology and Medicine.* Some of his work is uncredited; for example his early studies of natural-color photography. Flint was married on Dec. 23, 1862, to Elizabeth B. McMaster of Ballston, N. Y., who survived him; one of their sons (also named Austin) became a physician, the sixth in direct descent to enter the medical profession.

[Flint's *Collected Essays,* etc., covering the period 1855–1903; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *Who's Who in America,* 1914–15; *N. Y. Medic. Jour.,* Sept. 25, 1915; *N. Y. Times,* Sept. 23, 1915.] E. P.

**FLINT, CHARLES LOUIS** (Mar. 8, 1824–Feb. 26, 1889), agriculturist, was born in Middleton, Mass., son of a farmer, Jeremiah Flint, Jr., and his wife Polly Howard. His boyhood was passed on a farm. In 1841 he entered Phillips Andover Academy. He worked his way through Harvard College, graduating in 1849, taught for a short time, and then returned to Cambridge in the fall of 1850 to study law. After two years in the Harvard Law School, he entered a law office in New York City and was admitted to the New York bar. In college he had won the prize offered by the Essex Agricultural Society for the best essay on Indian corn, which was published in the Society's *Transactions* for 1849, and in the *Transactions of the New York State Agricultural Society, 1849* (1850). His agricultural writings attracted the attention of Marshall P. Wilder who recommended him for the position of secretary of the newly organized Board of Agriculture of Massachusetts. Flint was induced to give up his law practise in New York to take up the work of the Board in Boston in 1853, and remained its secretary for twenty-seven years. He initiated and continued a valuable series of reports and did much to encourage and direct the agricultural interests of the state. He made a tour of the rural districts of Europe in 1862 and gave an account of his trip in the *Tenth Annual Report* (1863) of the Massachusetts Board of Agriculture. He was a commissioner from Massachusetts to the International Exhibition at Hamburg in 1863, and before returning, visited agricultural schools in Europe and made a detailed report on them published in the *Eleventh Annual Report* (1864) of the Board.

He was deeply interested in education, had a conspicuous part in the founding of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, was a member of the Boston School Committee, and took an active interest in the erection of the buildings for the high schools. He was one of the founders of the Massachusetts Agricultural College, chartered in 1862, was elected secretary of its board of trustees in 1863, and held the position twenty-two years. For four years he also gave lectures at the college on dairy farming. On the resignation of President Clark in 1879 Flint was elected president until a permanent president could be found, and served without pay. He resigned Mar. 24, 1880, and in June of the same year he also resigned as secretary of the Board of Agriculture. He had become president of the New England Mortgage Security Company, in which position he continued until shortly before his death. At the time of his death he was president of the Massachusetts Agricultural Club, having succeeded to the office on the death of Marshall P. Wilder. He was a member of the Coun-

cil of the Boston Society of Natural History and of the New-England Historic Genealogical Society. Besides periodical articles and the valuable series of reports of the Massachusetts Board of Agriculture, which he edited from 1853 to 1880, he wrote several books, among the more important of which were the following: *A Practical Treatise on Grasses and Forage Plants* (1857), published in several subsequent editions under a shorter title; *Milch Cows and Dairy Farming* (1858), also published in several editions from 1858 to 1889; *Manual of Agriculture for the School, the Farm and the Fireside* (1862), published jointly with George Barrell Emerson [*q.v.*]; *How to Make the Farm Pay* (1869), in collaboration with Charles W. Dickerman; "Agriculture in the United States," a chapter in *One Hundred Years' Progress of the United States . . . By Eminent Literary Men* (1870); "A Hundred Years' Progress of American Agriculture" published in the United States Department of Agriculture *Report,* 1872, pp. 274–304, and in the *Twenty-first Annual Report* (1874) of the Massachusetts State Board of Agriculture. Flint married, in 1857, Ellen E. Leland of Grafton, Mass., who died in 1875. He died in Hillman, Ga., where he had gone to benefit his health. He was buried in Grafton, Mass. He left three children, two sons and a daughter.

[*Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist.*, XXIV (1890), 199–200; *Trans. Mass. Horticultural Soc., 1889* (1890), pp. 134–38; L. B. Caswell, *Brief Hist. of the Mass. Agric. Coll.* (1917); *Vital Records of Middleton, Mass.* (1904); *Boston Daily Advertiser,* Feb. 28, 1889.]

C. R. B.

**FLINT, TIMOTHY** (July 11, 1780–Aug. 16, 1840), missionary, writer, was born near North Reading, Mass., the son of William and Martha (Kimball) Flint. He attended the local grammar school and Phillips Academy at Andover, Mass., and graduated from Harvard in 1800. After teaching at Cohasset for one year, he preached at Marblehead, where he married Abigail Hubbard. In 1802 he accepted a call to the parish of Lunenburg, then a part of Fitchburg, Mass., from which he asked his dismissal in 1814. The next year he spent chiefly on missions in New Hampshire and adjacent states, and in the fall of 1815 he and his family began a journey westward under the auspices of the Missionary Society of Connecticut. A good account of this and of his later experiences is found in his *Recollections of the Last Ten Years, Passed in Occasional Residences and Journeyings in the Valley of the Mississippi* (Boston, 1826). After a winter spent in preaching pilgrimages made from his headquarters at Cincinnati, he asked for a transfer. Then followed a fairly pleasant sojourn in St. Charles, Mo.; a disappointing pilgrimage to Arkansas; a trying voyage back up the Mississippi and Missouri, and subsequent prostration by fever and ague; the determination after a brief experiment in farming to go back to New England by way of New Orleans; preaching and lecturing in that vicinity; and the principalship of the seminary of Rapide at Alexandria.

The personal record closes with a journey back to his native section as a last resort after a long and exhausting illness. Apparently *Francis Berrian; or the Mexican Patriot* (2 vols., Boston, 1826) was started on the return trip, and thereafter Flint's work was chiefly literary. He issued at Cincinnati the *Western Monthly Review* from May 1827 to June 1830 and was for a brief period editor of the *Knickerbocker; or, New-York Monthly Magazine.* In addition to his books he published numerous translations and articles, and in 1831 he edited *The Personal Narrative of James O. Pattie* (reprinted in R. G. Thwaites, *Early Western Travels,* vol. XVIII, 1905). For the last years of his life he traveled widely, north and south, seeking for health which failed to return. He died on a visit to Salem, Mass., Aug. 16, 1840.

A disciple of Châteaubriand, confessedly enthralled by the "notion of new and more beautiful woods and streams," Flint was destined to find that but "a few weeks' familiar acquaintance with the scene dispels the charms and the illusions of the imagination." So, like most romanticists, he continued to seek refuge beyond the horizon. When his many sojourns in the Mississippi Valley proved disappointing, he found consolation in picturing the barbaric magnificence of Mexico and the superb scenery of the Rocky Mountains. From the hum-drum life of every day he sought relief in melodramatic action. His plots themselves are banal and tediously prolonged and improbable. There is significance, however, in the way in which he supplements Cooper's chronicles of warfare between red men and white by a new romance of the border, in his depictions of romantic scenery, and still more in his reflection of his own personality or, to put it broadly, of the typical romantic dreamers of his age. Francis Berrian tells how as a youth he fancied himself situated "in one of the boundless prairies of the West." *The Life and Adventures of Arthur Clenning* (Philadelphia, 1828) reveals the author's delight in an idyllic existence on a tropical island even though his rescued castaways somewhat reluctantly decide that society is best for mankind. In *The Shoshonee Valley* (Cincinnati, 2 vols., 1830) William Weldon and his Mandarin wife Yensi, "alike disgusted with social and civi-

lized life . . . resolved to join the Indians in the interior!" Elder Wood in the latter book and the minister's family in *George Mason, the Young Backwoodsman; or 'Don't Give up the Ship'* (Boston, 1829), reprinted in London in 1833 as *Don't Give up the Ship; or the Good Son,* resemble the Flints in their disappointments and their dreams.

A similar romantic note is struck in his nonfiction. *A Condensed Geography and History of the Western States* (2 vols., Cincinnati, 1828), reprinted with additions as *The History and Geography of the Mississippi Valley* (2 vols., Cincinnati, 1832), contained enough of the glamour of the West to cause one contemporary to complain that it was too interesting for reference. *Indian Wars of the West* (Cincinnati, 1833) uses that old stand-by of the story teller—the border conflicts. *The Biographical Memoir of Daniel Boone, the First Settler of Kentucky* (Cincinnati, 1833), which went through some fourteen editions, deals with one whom Flint designated "the Achilles of the West" and with that paradisical epoch to which, according to him, all true Kentuckians looked back as "the period of romance." The *Recollections,* written at one of the most interesting periods in the Valley's history, is a repository of picturesque and romantic information, a panorama of social and economic evolution, and a valuable record of delicate beings like himself who suffered most in the forward march of civilization.

[J. E. Kirkpatrick, *Timothy Flint, Pioneer, Missionary, Author, Editor, 1780–1840* (1911), gives a full bibliography. Flint's son Micah (1803–1837) was one of the more creditable of the minor Western poets. His *Hunter and Other Poems* was published in Boston in 1826, and the father included many of Micah's pieces in his own volumes.] D. A. D.

**FLINT, WESTON** (July 4, 1835–Apr. 6, 1906), librarian, government official, born in the township of Pike, Wyoming County, western New York, was the son of Nicholas and Phebe Burt (Willoughby) Flint. His father came of Dutch and English ancestors who settled near Otsego Lake, N. Y. His mother was a descendant of the old English family of Willoughby de Broke and d'Eresby. His maternal grandfather was a soldier in the War of 1812, while his paternal grandfather was in the army at Saratoga when Burgoyne surrendered. In 1852 Weston Flint began teaching, and in 1855 he entered Alfred Academy, at Alfred Center, N. Y., from which he was graduated in 1858. He then proceeded to Union College, Schenectady, where he was graduated in 1860. After teaching in New York, Pennsylvania, and Ohio, he went to St. Louis to assist in caring for the sick and wounded of the Union army. While there he was appointed military agent for Ohio, acting also for Michigan and New York. From 1866 to 1869 he was attorney for claims in St. Louis, and active in Missouri state politics. In 1866 he was one of the organizers and secretary of the Southern Loyalist Convention of Philadelphia, and in 1868 was a delegate to the Republican National Convention at Chicago. He became editor and publisher of the St. Louis *Daily Tribune,* and was also the organizer and secretary of the second board of the Geological Survey of Missouri.

In 1871 he was appointed United States consul at Chin Kiang, China, but returned to the United States in 1874 to engage in literary work and lecturing. In 1877–78 he attended the Law Department of the National University at Washington, D. C., and received the degree of LL.B. The following year he attended the Law School of Columbian University in the same city, and received the degree of LL.M. The degree of Ph.D. was conferred upon him by Alfred University in 1886.

For the ten years 1877–87 he was librarian of the scientific library of the United States Patent Office. Under his direction the library was reorganized and two large catalogues were prepared: *Catalogue of the Library of the United States Patent Office* (1878) and . . . *Additions from 1878 to 1883* (1883). He was prominent in the organization of the United States Civil Service Commission, and for a time was acting chairman, and also one of the examiners. In 1888 he served with the committee of the United States Senate which investigated the operations of the civil service; and in 1889 he was appointed statistician of the United States Bureau of Education, and as such prepared the report on *Statistics of Public Libraries in the United States and Canada,* issued in 1893. On Sept. 29, 1898, he became librarian of the newly organized Washington (D. C.) Free Public Library (later the District of Columbia Public Library) of which he was then a trustee. His wide reading, his great love of books, and his ability as an organizer placed the library on a firm foundation. He retired from active work because of poor health on Aug. 31, 1904, about a year and a half before his death.

Weston Flint was a handsome man of fine presence, dignified and courteous. His interests, mostly of an intellectual character, were quite diverse with a strong bent toward the literary and scientific. He was secretary of the Anthropological Society of Washington, a member of the American Historical Society, of the American Association for the Advancement of Sci-

ence, of the American Library Association, of the American Folk Lore Society, of the National Geographic Society, and of the Society for University Extension. He was also a member of the Washington Board of Trade and of its committee on libraries. He was a Freemason and a member of the Presbyterian Church. In 1883 he was married to Lucy Romilda Brown of Ohio, by whom he had one son.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1906–07; *Library Jour.*, May 1906; *Alfred Univ. Year Book*, 1905–06; *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Apr. 6, 1906; slight personal knowledge.]

H. H. B. M.

**FLORENCE, THOMAS BIRCH** (Jan. 26, 1812–July 3, 1875), congressman, editor, was born in the Southwark district of Philadelphia, the son of David Florence, a boat-builder. He was placed in public school when six years old but upon the death of his father was apprenticed to a carpenter and later to a hatter. In 1833 he went into the hat business for himself but failed in 1841. Early in life he became interested in politics, and as he was a fluent speaker and writer took an active part in the affairs of the Democratic party. When his business failed he was elected secretary of the board of controllers of the public schools for the City and County of Philadelphia, which position he ably filled until 1849. In 1850 he was appointed one of the board of mercantile appraisers for the City and County of Philadelphia. Before the war with Mexico he was elected colonel of the 5th Regiment of the state militia. Thus, being connected with military affairs, on the opening of the war he requested that a volunteer company, of which he was captain, be accepted for service in Mexico, but the company was not used. After two unsuccessful attempts he was elected as a Democrat to the Thirty-second and to the four succeeding congresses (Mar. 4, 1851–Mar. 3, 1861), where he served as a member of the committee on naval affairs and invalid pensions and during which time he became very popular with his constituents because of his ability to obtain contracts for the Philadelphia Navy Yard. He served as a delegate to the Philadelphia "National Union Convention" of 1866. In 1868 and 1874 he tried for reëlection but was unsuccessful. He owed much of his political popularity to his championship of the temperance cause and to his activities in connection with Philadelphia volunteer fire companies, as well as to his fraternal affiliations. He was one of the founders of a secret organization called "The Brotherhood of the Union." He professed the warmest interest in the poor and laboring classes and was widely known under the cognomen of "the widow's friend." Throughout his life he had a liking for journalism and was connected in one way or another with quite a number of newspapers in Philadelphia; among these were the *Daily Keystone and People's Journal,* which was established in 1844 and lasted three years, and the *National Argus* (Democratic), published from 1853 to 1861. After leaving Congress he resided in Washington, D. C., where he edited and published a Democratic afternoon daily, the *Constitutional Union* (1863–68), and subsequently became the proprietor of the Sunday *Gazette.* He died in Washington in 1875, of gangrene resulting from an accident that occurred during the campaign for reëlection to Congress in the previous year.

[*Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); Chas. Lanman, *Biog. Annals of the Civil Govt.* (1876); E. P. Oberholtzer, *Philadelphia: A Hist. of the City and its People* (4 vols., 1912), II, 306–07; *U. S. Mag. and Democratic Rev.*, Feb. 1851; obituary in *Public Ledger* (Phila.), July 5, 1875.]

J. H. F.

**FLORENCE, WILLIAM JERMYN** (July 26, 1831–Nov. 19, 1891), actor, author, was baptized Bernard Conlin, son of Peter (or Michael) and Mary (Flynn) Conlin. He assumed the name Florence for the stage. He was born in Albany, but grew up in New York in the old Thirteenth Ward. Among East Side boys he was famous for his genius for impersonation, his irrepressible humor, and his phenomenal memory. When a call boy at the Old Bowery Theatre he is said to have reproduced for Chanfrau an entire unpublished one-act piece "out of his head." His formal education was cut short by the death of his father, and Bernard, at fifteen, had to help support his mother and her seven younger children. He contrived, while working as a cub reporter and later in a type foundry, to prepare himself for the stage by rehearsing at night with the gifted amateurs of James E. Murdoch's Dramatic Association. His first spoken part was that of Peter in *The Stranger* with the stock company at the Marshall Theatre, Richmond, Va., Dec. 6, 1849.

Florence demonstrated early in his career his ability in Shakespearian rôles, but his first Irish part, that of Hallagan in Brougham's play *Home,* at Niblo's Garden in 1850, determined his bent toward dialect impersonation. In 1851 he scored with Brougham a hit in an eccentric hoax, *A Row at the Lyceum,* which raised him from the first walking-gentleman class. The season of 1852 saw him supporting a succession of stars at the Broadway Theatre, among whom were Mr. and Mrs. Barney Williams. In 1853 he married the latter's sister, Malvina Pray, a popular danseuse, and with her he began a highly successful starring venture in a play of his own, *The Irish Boy*

*and the Yankee Girl.* After an extensive American tour, they played a fifty-night engagement at Drury Lane followed by triumphs in the provinces. From this time until the coalition with Joseph Jefferson in 1889, Florence and his wife enjoyed unbroken success as twin stars. They confined themselves for nearly a decade to Irish-American comedy, varied by burlesque and melodrama. It was not until 1861 that Florence played the first of the great parts which, according to Winter, established his rank among the leading actors of his time.

During almost forty years as a star Florence made not one failure, though his notable triumphs are confined to a few strongly contrasted parts—Captain Cuttle, in *Dombey and Son,* which won Dickens's praise; Bob Brierly, in *The Ticket-of-Leave Man*; Obenreizer, in *No Thoroughfare*; Bardwell Slote, in *The Mighty Dollar,* said by Hutton to be his most enduring character; Sir Lucius O'Trigger, in *The Rivals*; and Zekiel Homespun, in *The Heir-at-Law,* played at the last with Jefferson. Critics agree that his supreme gifts were his talent for impersonation and his skill in drawing vivid and convincing human types. He has been classed among four leading comedians on the American stage, among six on the English-speaking stage, and was one of the few Americans to win the ribbon of the Société Histoire Dramatique of France. His work with Jefferson was an example of the finest type of artistic team-play. When he died in Philadelphia, at the height of his powers, it was said that no other actor save Booth or Jefferson could have been so widely missed.

Florence enriched his personality by travel, study, and by varied human contacts. Wherever he went he gathered about him a brilliant circle of friends of many professions. At sixty he was still "Billy Florence": jaunty, well-set-up, with an air of what Winter calls "affluent health." By his personal life, as well as by his finished artistry, Florence won respect for his profession.

[Brander Matthews and Lawrence Hutton, eds., *Actors and Actresses of Great Britain and the U. S.* (1886), V, 115–30; Wm. Winter, *The Wallet of Time* (1913), I, 233–39; F. E. McKay and C. T. Wingate, eds., *Famous Am. Actors of Today* (1896), chapter by A. E. Berg; the *Public Ledger* and the *Press* (Phila.), Nov. 20, 1891; and the Robinson Locke dramatic collection in the N. Y. Pub. Library.] M. B. H.

**FLOWER, BENJAMIN ORANGE** (Oct. 19, 1858–Dec. 24, 1918), editor and social reformer, was born in Albion, Ill., founded by his grandfather George Flower [*q.v.*], an Englishman who, having visited the United States in 1816, finally came here to settle in 1818, bringing with him his father, Richard [*q.v.*], his mother, and several brothers and sisters. Benjamin was the



son of Rev. Alfred and Elizabeth (Orange) Flower. He was educated in the public schools of Evansville, Ind., to which place the family moved in his boyhood, and at Kentucky University. He had originally intended to follow the example of his father and an older brother, George Edward, and enter the ministry of the Disciples of Christ, but a change in his theological views, which ultimately resulted in his becoming a Unitarian, led him to turn to journalism. His first venture was in connection with the *American Sentinel* of Albion, Ill., a social and literary weekly, which he edited until 1880. He then went to Philadelphia where he was associated in a secretarial capacity with his brother, Dr. Richard C. Flower. On Sept. 10, 1885, he married Hattie Cloud of Evansville, Ind.

Becoming increasingly interested in social reform, he soon left Philadelphia for Boston and began an agitation for betterment in human relations through various publications and other agencies, which he continued until his death. He had a lively sympathy for the poor and oppressed, a passion for what he conceived to be justice, and an enthusiastic belief in a coming reign of human brotherhood with all its attendant blessings. Frequently his motives were more to be praised than his insight and wisdom, and in his later years especially, a fanatical zeal distorted his outlook, and unbalanced his judgment. At Boston he established in 1886 the *American Spectator,* merging it later with the *Arena,* "a liberal in the field of magazines," which he founded in 1889 and edited until December 1896. From June 1897 to March 1898, with Frederick U. Adams [*q.v.*], he edited the *New Time,* Chicago, "a magazine of social progress" formerly known as the *New Occasions.* He was co-editor with Anna C. E. Reifsnider of the *Coming Age,* St. Louis and Boston, until it was merged with the *Arena* in the fall of 1900, after which he was on the editorial staff of the latter and in 1904 again became editor-in-chief. He founded and for two years, October 1909 to November 1911, edited the *Twentieth Century Magazine,* Boston, a forum for the discussion of great social, political, and educational questions, and an advocate of direct legislation through initiative, referendum, and recall, government ownership of public utilities, equal suffrage, and compulsory arbitration. In his later years he became obsessed with the idea that the supreme menace to democracy is "the monarchial and democracy-destroying, upas-like Roman hierarchy, which is in effect a government within our Government, whose theory of rule is in *direct opposition to vital and fundamental principles* of our liberal democracy" (B. O.

Flower, *Righting the People's Wrongs,* 1917, p. 5). As president of the Menace Publishing Company, Aurora, Mo., and editor of the *Menace,* a virulent anti-Catholic publication, he made his last journalistic enterprise an attempt to arouse opposition to this alleged peril.

In addition to his editorial work, he was a frequent contributor to magazines, and the author of a number of books. Among the latter are: *Lessons Learned from Other Lives* (1891); *Civilization's Inferno, or Studies in the Social Cellar* (1893); *The New Time* (1894); *Gerald Massey: Poet, Prophet, and Mystic* (1895); *The Century of Sir Thomas More* (1896); *Whittier: Prophet, Seer, and Man* (1896); *Persons, Places, and Ideas: Miscellaneous Essays* (1896); *How England Averted a Revolution of Force; a Survey of the Social Agitation of the First Ten Years of Queen Victoria's Reign* (1903); *Christian Science, as a Religious Belief and a Therapeutic Agent* (1909), a defense; *Progressive Men, Women, and Movements of the Past Twenty-five Years* (1914); and *The Patriot's Manual* (1915). He was much interested in psychical research, and believed that the reality of the future life would ultimately be demonstrated, and was president of the National League for Medical Freedom, and of the Free Press Defense League. His death occurred in a hospital in Boston.

[Richard Herndon and Edwin M. Bacon, *Men of Progress in the Commonwealth of Mass.* (1896); *Who's Who in America,* 1918–19; Hamlin Garland, "Roadside Meetings of a Literary Nomad," *Bookman,* Jan. 1930; *N. Y. Herald,* Dec. 25, 1918.] H. E. S.

**FLOWER, GEORGE** (1788–Jan. 15, 1862), Illinois pioneer, was born at Hertford, England, the eldest son of Richard Flower [*q.v.*]. In 1814 he accompanied Morris Birkbeck [*q.v.*] on a three months' tour through France. In 1816 he visited the United States, traveling west to Illinois and south to Tennessee, and spending a good part of the following winter at Monticello with Jefferson, to whom he brought a letter of introduction from Lafayette. He joined Birkbeck at Richmond in the spring and conducted him and his party to Edwards County, Ill. On the way both fell in love with Eliza Julia Andrews, daughter of the Rev. Mordecai Andrews and a friend in England of the Birkbeck family. She declined Birkbeck's proposal and was married to Flower at Vincennes, Ind., with Birkbeck present at the ceremony. The two men decided to colonize a large tract of prairie land in Edwards County, and while Birkbeck remained on the spot Flower went back to England to publish Birkbeck's account of their journey and to raise money and settlers. When he returned in 1818, bringing his parents, brothers, and sisters with him, he found that Birkbeck would have nothing to do with him and that necessary business with him must be carried on through an intermediary. This breach damaged their project hopelessly and produced a luxuriant crop of gossip. At the time of his death in 1825 Birkbeck was probably seeking to effect a reconciliation. Flower never lost an opportunity to speak well of the character and achievements of his former partner. He laid out the village of Albion, imported good breeds of sheep and cattle, and would sell land only to actual settlers. These he also sought to help with pamphlets such as *The Errors of Emigrants* (London, n.d.) and *The Western Shepherd . . . Containing Instructions for the Breeding and the Proper Management of Sheep, and their Pastures* (New Harmony, Ind., 1841). To the *Lowell* (Mass.) *Courier,* he wrote a letter descriptive of the prairies, which was translated into Norwegian and probably did something to encourage Norwegian emigration to the West. At Albion he had to contend with drouth, poor soil, intractable English immigrants, and the rough element on the frontier, to whom his good manners and good education were an inexcusable offense. When he joined the movement to prevent the legalized introduction of slavery into Illinois he was pursued with threats and insults, and finally a ruffian murdered his eldest son, Richard, and was triumphantly acquitted by the jury. In 1849 he crossed the Wabash and settled at New Harmony, Ind. His once considerable fortune was gone; all that he had left was the household furniture and the family plate. His last years were nevertheless serene and not without honor. He lived with his various children, and while residing at Mt. Vernon, Ohio, wrote a history of the English settlement in Edwards County. It and some other papers were presented to the Chicago Historical Society. He and his wife died on the same day at the home of their daughter in Grayville, Ill.

[Flower's *Hist. of the English Settlement in Edwards County, Ill.* (Chicago, 1882), edited by E. B. Washburne, is the ultimate source of most information about him. The Chicago Historical Society has portraits of him and his wife.] G. H. G.

**FLOWER, LUCY LOUISA COUES** (May 10, 1837–Apr. 27, 1921), philanthropist, was born in Boston, Mass., the daughter of Charlotte H. (Ladd) and Samuel E. Coues. Most of her childhood was spent in Portsmouth, N. H. In 1853 her father received an appointment in the government service and moved to Washington, D. C. Lucy was sent to school at the Packer Collegiate Institute, Brooklyn, N. Y., but was forced to

leave before graduating. For a time she worked in the United States Patent Office as a draftsman. In 1859 she accepted a position in the public schools of Madison, Wis., and a year later she was appointed assistant in the Madison High School. In 1862, when the public schools were closed for lack of funds, the building was lent to Miss Coues for the purpose of conducting a private school. In the same year she married James M. Flower, a lawyer of Madison. In 1873 they moved to Chicago. Mrs. Flower devoted her educational interests to various Chicago institutions. She became a member of the board of management of the Half-Orphan Asylum and later a member of the board of the Chicago Home for the Friendless. In 1886 she prepared for the state legislature of Illinois a bill providing for an industrial school for homeless boys. The bill was defeated but it aroused considerable attention and subsequently such a school was started under private management. In 1888 she was influential in organizing the Lake Geneva Fresh Air Association and for three years had complete charge of the selection of children to be sent to the camp. In 1891 she was appointed a member of the Chicago school board—the third woman to hold that position—and served until 1894. She worked to establish industrial training and kindergartens in the public schools. Following this incumbency she became a trustee of the University of Illinois. With the decline of her health, she and her husband moved to Coronado, Cal., where her remaining years were spent in leisure. She died at the age of eighty-four.

[*Woman's Who's Who of America*, 1914–15; *Chicago Tribune* and *Chicago News*, Apr. 28, 1921.] M. Sh—r.

**FLOWER, RICHARD** (1761–Sept. 2, 1829), Illinois pioneer, was born in England, presumably in Hertfordshire, the son of a tradesman, George Flower. He married a daughter of Edward Fordham of Kelshall near Royston and for more than twenty years was proprietor of a flourishing brewery in Hertford. Like his elder brother, Benjamin Flower [*q.v.* in *Dictionary of National Biography*], he was somewhat of a reformer and took naturally to pamphleteering. When Government paid no heed to his *Observations on Beer and Brewers, in Which the Inequality, Injustice, and Impolicy of the Malt and Beer Tax are Demonstrated* (Cambridge, 1802), he disposed of his business, invested the proceeds in an estate, "Marden," three miles from the town, and devoted his time to agriculture and sheep husbandry. As a dissenter he was galled especially by the tithe and published *Abolition of Tithe Recommended, in an Address to the Agriculturalists of Great Britain* (Harlow, 1809; another edition, 1813). Extortionate taxes, the mounting poor rate, and the low price of farm products made matters still worse for him in the years following the Napoleonic wars, and at the persuasion of his friend, Morris Birkbeck, and of his eldest son, George Flower [*qq.v.*], he sold "Marden" in 1818 for £23,000 and emigrated, with his wife, three sons, and two daughters, to the United States. The next winter he spent in Lexington, Ky., while George Flower was laying out the village of Albion in southeastern Illinois. A heavy loss to him was the death, that winter, of his second son William. *Letters from Lexington and the Illinois* (London, 1819) and *Letters from the Illinois, 1820, 1821* (London, 1822) were answers to the strictures of William Cobbett [*q.v.*]. In the spring of 1819 he moved to Albion and occupied the "Park House," which his son had built for him. There he entertained visitors from all over the United States and England, regaling them with plum pudding and other English dishes. For some years the house was an object of interest because of its plastered and papered walls, its ornamental stone hearth, and elegant furniture. Flower built a two-story brick tavern and several other buildings, founded what was probably the first library in Illinois, and conducted religious services every Sunday. In the fight to check the introduction of negro slavery he took a prominent part. By his American neighbors he was respected rather than liked, for they distrusted his dignity and the freedom with which he expressed his opinions. In 1824 he returned to England as agent for George Rapp [*q.v.*] and negotiated the sale of the village and lands of Harmony, Ind., to Robert Owen. His youngest son, Edward Fordham Flower [*q.v.* in *Dictionary of National Biography*], went over with him and remained in England. Flower died at Albion on Wednesday, Sept. 2, 1829, after a protracted illness.

[Geo. Flower, *Hist. of the English Settlement in Edwards County, Ill.* (Chicago, 1882); Benj. Flower, *Statement of Facts Relative to the Conduct*, etc. (privately printed, Harlow, England, 1808). For correct date of death see the Vandalia *Ill. Intelligencer*, Sept. 12, 1829 (erroneously dated Sept. 13, on the first page). The Illinois pamphlets have been reprinted by R. G. Thwaites, *Early Western Travels, 1748–1846*, X (Cleveland, 1904), 85–169, and by E. E. Sparks, *The English Settlement in the Illinois* (Cedar Rapids, Iowa, 1907).] G. H. G.

**FLOWER, ROSWELL PETTIBONE** (Aug. 7, 1835–May 12, 1899), governor of New York, was born in Theresa, Jefferson County, N. Y. His parents, Nathan Monroe and Mary Ann (Boyle) Flower, were well-to-do Americans of English and Scotch-Irish stock, whose ancestors had been in the country since before 1700. Na-

than was a wool carder, cloth manufacturer, and farmer, and died while the son was yet a boy. Roswell passed his youth on a large farm, graduated from high school in 1851, and in early manhood entered business as a jeweler in Watertown, the seat of Jefferson County. During 1854–60 he was assistant postmaster of the town. In 1859 he married Sarah M. Woodruff and thereafter his life was directed into a career of banking and politics. He became administrator of the large estate of one of his wife's relatives, Henry Keep, the president of the New York Central Railroad, who died in 1869. This brought about his removal to New York City, although he always maintained a close connection with Watertown and built a Presbyterian church for his birthplace. In 1873 he was admitted to the New York stock exchange, and later in the year he formed a brokerage partnership with F. C. Benedict. Under varying firm names this business continued for the rest of his life, and in his last years he was regarded as a power on the Street, being connected most prominently with Brooklyn Rapid Transit and Federal Steel. "His word," said one of his associates (Russell Sage), "was worth $1,000,000 at any time" (New York *Evening Post,* May 13, 1899).

Having firm Democratic principles and access to considerable means, Flower was a person of importance in the counsels of the Democrats in New York City. The papers of the opposition made much of his wealth. The *World* alleged that Flower "had a barrel and would take out the bung" (Sept. 17, 1891); and an opponent to his advancement denounced him as a "flamboyant millionaire" (D. S. Alexander, *Four Famous New Yorkers,* 1923, p. 153). He received his first political preferment when in 1881 President Garfield sent Levi P. Morton abroad as minister to France, leaving thereby a vacancy in the eleventh New York congressional district (*New York Herald,* Mar. 22, 1881). The Republicans nominated William Waldorf Astor for the vacancy. Flower was put up by the Democrats and was elected. Before this term was out the *Tribune* suspected that there was a "bee in Mr. Flower's bonnet" (May 6, 1882). The elaborate dinners which he was described as serving in Washington were interpreted as symptomatic of larger ambitions. In the New York Democratic convention of 1883 he is stated to have financed John Kelly of Tammany Hall in a vain fight against Daniel Manning, who managed to remain in control of the party. The next year Tammany quite frankly urged him as a presidential candidate in the hope of heading off the Cleveland movement. He was suggested for the nomination as governor in September 1885, but the convention offered him only the post of lieutenant-governor, which he declined to accept (*New York Herald,* Sept. 27, 1885). In 1888 he was returned to Congress from what was by that time the twelfth New York district. He was reëlected in 1890, during which campaign he was for a while chairman of the Democratic congressional committee.



Tammany was again in control in 1891, after a long period of partial eclipse, and Flower was brought forward and nominated for governor. In the ensuing campaign he was elected over Jacob Sloat Fassett, the choice of Platt and the Republicans, and held office from 1892 to 1895. Before his term ended, there was a Republican uprising in both state and city, and the Democratic leaders discarded Flower as a candidate. He accordingly withdrew his name before the Democratic convention met (New York *World,* Sept. 19, 1894), and, for the most part, devoted the rest of his life to his private affairs. In 1896, however, he was aroused by the nomination of Bryan and took a lead among the New York gold Democrats, whose delegation he headed to Indianapolis. As temporary chairman of the convention there he declared: "This gathering is notice to the world that the Democratic party has not yet surrendered to Populism and Anarchy" (*New York Tribune,* Sept. 3, 1896). He also spoke often in the campaign. He died unexpectedly in 1899, at the Long Island Country Club, where he was in the habit of resorting on Fridays for rest and recreation. He was always a sportsman, and in his youth he was a crack shot.

[The best sketch of Flower's life is in the *N. Y. Herald,* Sept. 17, 1891. See also *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928).] F. L. P—n.

**FLOY, JAMES** (Aug. 20, 1806–Oct. 14, 1863), Methodist Episcopal clergyman, noted in his church as an editor, writer, and hymnologist, was born in New York. His father, Michael, was an emigrant from Devonshire, England, by occupation a practical horticulturist, who in 1802 married in New York, Margaret Ferris, a native of that city. James received a good secondary-school training and entered Columbia College, but his father, deeming a practical education of more value, withdrew him, and sent him to England to study and practise horticulture at the Royal Gardens, London. Upon his return he worked for a time with his father, and in 1829 was married to Jane Thacker. His parents were devoted Methodists, and in 1831 when he himself experienced conversion, he was in the employ of Waugh and Mason, the Book Agents of the denomination. He became teacher in an African Sunday-school,

and through the gradations of class leader, exhorter, and local preacher, finally stepped into the ministry, being admitted to the New York Conference on trial in May 1835; ordained deacon in 1837; and elder in 1839.

His ecclesiastical career had an unfortunate opening. Having, presumably, pledged himself to refrain from agitating the church by discussing the slavery question, as required of those made deacons, he aided in the preparation of an anti-slavery tract and attended an anti-slavery convention. Accordingly, at the Conference of 1838, with two others, he was charged with contumacy and insubordination, tried, and suspended. Upon his written promise to conform to rule in the future, however, the suspension was lifted. (See J. M. Buckley, *A History of Methodists in the United States,* 1896, p. 390.) Notwithstanding this event he soon rose to prominence in the Conference, and later, when it was divided, in the New York East Conference. He was appointed to important churches, served as presiding elder of the New York district, and was a member of the General Conferences of 1848, 1856, and 1860, at the latter having the gratification of seeing the *Discipline* put on an anti-slavery basis. It was in the literary field, however, that he became most widely known. Upon his motion the General Conference of 1848 appointed a committee which recommended a revision of the church hymnal. The revised version which appeared in 1849 was largely the work of two laymen, R. A. West and David Creamer [*q.v.*], and Floy, and owed much to the latter's knowledge and taste. The General Conference of 1856 elected him corresponding secretary of the Tract Society and editor of the *National Magazine,* which he ably conducted until lack of financial support caused its discontinuance in 1858. Keenly interested in religious education, he prepared *Graduated Sunday School Textbooks,* three volumes (1861–62). For almost a quarter of a century he was one of the foremost contributors to the *Methodist Quarterly Review.* Some of his articles for this periodical may be found in a posthumous edition of his writings, *Literary Remains of Rev. Dr. Floy: Occasional Sermons and Reviews and Essays* (1866). A companion volume, *Old Testament Characters Delineated and Illustrated,* appeared the same year. Death came to him suddenly from a cerebral hemorrhage at his home in New York. His first wife having died about 1859, he later married Emma Yates, whose death occurred a few weeks before his own.

[The edition of his writings mentioned above contains a memoir. See also *Minutes of the N. Y. East Annual Conference* (1864); Daniel Curry, "James Floy, D.D.," *Meth. Quart. Rev.,* Jan. 1864; addresses in *In Memoriam: Memorial Services of the Rev. James Floy, D.D.* (1864); and obituary in *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), Oct. 22, 1863.] H. E. S.



**FLOYD, JOHN** (Apr. 24, 1783–Aug. 16, 1837), surgeon, governor of Virginia, was of Old Dominion ancestry. William Floyd of Accomac County, Va., settled in Amherst County and married Abadiah Davis, said to be a great-granddaughter of Powhatan. John Floyd, the elder, one of twelve children of William, was married to Jane Buchanan, niece and ward of Col. William Preston. The third and youngest child of this marriage, John Floyd, was born at Floyd Station, Ky., two weeks after his father had been killed by Indians. He learned to read and write at his mother's knee and attended school in the neighboring log school-house till he was thirteen years old, when he entered Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pa. A serious illness prevented his graduation. In May 1804, he married Letitia Preston, daughter of his father's friend, Col. William Preston, and then spent two years in the study of medicine in the University of Pennsylvania, graduating at the end of this time. After a brief practise at Lexington, Va., he removed to Christiansburg, and soon became widely known as a successful physician.

He served as a surgeon with the rank of major in the War of 1812 until he was elected as a nationalist to the General Assembly in 1814. Here he voted for all resolutions giving power to the federal government. In 1817 he was elected to Congress from the "Abingdon District" and was continuously reëlected for twelve years. He supported Clay's proposition for sending a minister to Buenos Aires; favored the immediate recognition of Argentina; defended Andrew Jackson's policy in Florida and opposed his censure; and was one of the four Virginia representatives who voted for the Missouri Compromise. He has been given the credit for first proposing in Congress, Jan. 25, 1821, the occupation and territorial organization of the Oregon country. His identification with the interests of the frontier may be attributed to his boyhood life and to his intimate association with William Clark, with Thomas H. Benton, and with George Rogers Clark, for whom both a brother and a son were named in his family. His Oregon Bill was introduced and defeated several times, and when he retired from Congress in 1829 he was best known as its sponsor. He took an active part in the election of Jackson and was disappointed in not being recognized in the cabinet. From 1829 to 1830 he engaged in the practise of his profession and gave much attention to scientific grazing, in anticipation of the future of his section of the state.

On Jan. 9, 1830, he was elected governor of the state by the legislature, as the choice of the state-rights element, and in 1831 was reëlected for a three-year term. Without committing himself on the question of a white or a mixed basis of representation then agitating the state, he accepted heartily the compromise constitution of 1830, and exerted himself to promote the development of transportation facilities for the western part of the state. After the Nat Turner insurrection he was in sympathy with the western members who were working for abolition. Later he accepted the pro-slavery doctrines of Prof. Thomas R. Dew, of the College of William and Mary, and gave himself to the defense of state sovereignty. This resulted in a complicated struggle against Jackson and Ritchie, later against Van Buren, and attempts to unite Clay and Calhoun as leaders of a new party. Floyd himself was supported by South Carolina for the presidency.

Soon after retiring from office in 1834 he suffered a stroke of paralysis and died Aug. 16, 1837. He was the father of nine children, one of whom was John Buchanan Floyd [*q.v.*].

[C. H. Ambler, *The Life and Diary of John Floyd* . . . (1918); N. J. Floyd, *Biog. Geneal. of the Va.-Ky. Floyd Families* (1912), pp. 75–80; *Hist. of Va.* (6 vols., 1924), II, 462–65; sketch by J. E. Walmsley in the *Memorial Volume of Va. Hist. Portraiture* (1930); the Floyd Manuscripts in the Lib. of Cong., and manuscripts in the possession of Robt. M. Hughes of Norfolk, Va., *Richmond Enquirer*, Jan. 12, 1830, Feb. 12, 1831.]

J. E. W.

**FLOYD, JOHN BUCHANAN** (June 1, 1806–Aug. 26, 1863), governor of Virginia, secretary of war, Confederate general, was the son of Gov. John Floyd [*q.v.*] and Letitia (Preston) Floyd. He was born at Smithfield, the Preston home in Montgomery County, Va. His early life was spent in what was then the frontier of Virginia, and to this circumstance he owed much of his athletic ability and vigorous physique. He was educated under the care of his remarkably intellectual mother and in the well-selected library of his serious-minded father. He was graduated in 1829 from South Carolina College. His record was high and he was a favorite pupil of the famous Dr. Thomas Cooper [*q.v.*]. In 1830 he married his cousin, Sally Buchanan Preston, grand-daughter of Gen. William Campbell, of King's Mountain fame, and sister of William C. Preston [*q.v.*], distinguished orator and senator from South Carolina. He began the practise of law at Wytheville, Va., but was soon led by the Arkansas cotton boom to take up law and cotton-planting on a large scale in that state. He lost forty slaves and had his own constitution shattered by a malignant fever in 1837, and returned to Virginia with an enfeebled frame and a



wrecked fortune. He began again the practise of law in Abingdon and met with marked success, being able in a few years to pay off his heavy debts. In 1847 he was elected delegate from his county to the General Assembly and reëlected in the following year. He was a conspicuous leader of the internal improvement party which advocated appropriations for railroads and other public works. While he was still in the House of Burgesses he was elected governor for the three-year term beginning Jan. 1, 1849. In this office he was *ex-officio* chairman of the board of public works of the state; and his messages, reports, and active interest had a marked influence on the industrial fortunes of Virginia. As a representative of the western part of the state he was deeply interested in the constitutional convention of 1850 which first established universal suffrage in Virginia. In politics Floyd was a state-rights Democrat, and after his retirement from the office of governor in 1852, while practising law at Abingdon he was presidential elector of the Democratic party. When the Know-Nothing party seemed likely to carry the state in 1855, he again became a candidate for the General Assembly in opposition to this party and was elected, and thus contributed largely to win back many of the Virginia Whigs from their new allegiance. This was the hardest fought campaign in Virginia previous to the struggle over secession, and Floyd's services were recognized in his selection the next year to deliver a key-note speech for Buchanan in New York at the Merchant's Exchange, Oct. 2, 1856. Though believing in the state-rights policies of Jefferson and Madison, he was a strong opponent of secession until after his retirement from Buchanan's cabinet. As late as Dec. 3, 1860, he wrote a letter to the *Richmond Enquirer* strongly advising against secession.

Floyd was appointed secretary of war by President Buchanan and their relations throughout 1859 were unusually cordial, as shown by their personal correspondence, but several important incidents giving rise to controversy occurred during 1860. One was the appointment of a quartermaster-general. Floyd urged Joseph E. Johnston for the place, while Jefferson Davis favored Albert Sidney Johnston. Floyd's recommendation was adopted, and to this many attribute the animosity of Davis subsequently shown to both Johnston and Floyd. Another incident was the reported sending of arms to the Southern states in excess of their requirements and with a view to approaching war. On Feb. 18, 1861, the military committee of the House of Representatives, of which Benjamin Stanton of Ohio was chairman, reported the facts as they appeared in the

records of the Department. The War Department was making the difficult transition from flint-lock muskets to percussion. It appeared that Secretary Floyd, acting in pursuance of the law of Mar. 3, 1825, had sold 31,610 of these flint-lock muskets altered to percussion. Then, failing to consummate a sale of 250,000 others, he transferred in the spring of 1860, 40,000 of these, together with 65,000 percussion muskets and 10,000 rifles, from Northern to Southern arsenals. It is probable that the transfer was designed to make room for newer arms in Northern arsenals. The committee refrained from any comment on the Secretary's action; but the chairman is said to have expressed the opinion (quoted by Jeremiah S. Black, in a letter to Henry Wilson; see Black's *Essays and Speeches,* 1885, pp. 266 ff.), that the charges against Floyd were founded in "rumor, speculation and misapprehension."

The most exciting and controverted incident, however, was Major Anderson's occupation of Fort Sumter and Floyd's resignation. After South Carolina seceded, Dec. 20, 1860, and in fact for some time previous, Anderson's position in Charleston Harbor was much discussed in cabinet. Cass and Black favored reinforcing him; Floyd and Thompson opposed this course on the ground that it would precipitate a collision. On President Buchanan's refusal to order Anderson back to Fort Moultrie, Floyd resigned Dec. 29, and Buchanan accepted his resignation two days later in a friendly letter which expressed appreciation of his willingness to serve until a successor had been selected. In *Mr. Buchanan's Administration on the Eve of the Rebellion* (p. 186) published in 1866, after Floyd's death, Buchanan states that he had requested his resignation on Dec. 23, on account of an apparent defalcation of $870,000 of Indian trust bonds in the interior department, for which acceptances given by Floyd in the War Department to army contractors had been substituted. Yet on Dec. 25 Buchanan referred to Floyd a protest from Pittsburgh citizens against sending heavy cannon to Southern states, signing his letter "Your friend, very respectfully" (*Official Records, Army,* 3 ser. I, 15. Original in possession of Robert M. Hughes, Norfolk, Va.); and Floyd attended cabinet meetings through the 27th of December. On Feb. 12, 1861, a select committee of the House to which was referred "the fraudulent abstraction" of Indian trust funds in the Department of the Interior, made a unanimous report, which, while not holding Floyd responsible in this matter, declared the issue of acceptances "unauthorized by law and deceptive and fraudulent in character" and irreconcilable "with purity of private motives and faithfulness to public trusts" (*House Report No. 78,* 36 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 19–20). In the opinion of Jeremiah Black, Floyd was not guilty "of anything worse than reckless imprudence" (*Essays and Speeches,* p. 13), and "had no connection whatever in thought, word, or deed, with the abstraction of the Indian trust funds from the Interior Department." Certainly he did not himself profit by the transactions with the army contractors. In 1868 the Supreme Court by a divided bench held the issue of acceptances in violation of the law and of the limitations which it imposed on all officers of the government (*The Floyd Acceptances, 7 Wallace,* 666).

After Virginia seceded he raised a brigade of volunteers and entered the Confederate military service. His brigade was part of Lee's army in West Virginia and was engaged in the small battles of Cross Lanes and Carnifex Ferry; and he was congratulated by President Davis and Secretary Benjamin for his action. Later he was ordered to reinforce Albert Sidney Johnston and was sent by him to Fort Donelson. Before the surrender of that fort he withdrew with his brigade, pursuant to an agreement with Gen. Buckner, to whom he turned over the command. President Davis then removed him from command without a court of inquiry, for failing to ask for reinforcements, for not evacuating sooner, and for abandoning command to Buckner and escaping with his own troops (*Official Records, Army,* 1 ser. VII, 254). Two months later he was made a major-general by the General Assembly of Virginia, but his health broke down from exposure on Big Sandy River, and on Aug. 26, 1863, he died at his adopted daughter's country house near Abingdon.

[A short account of Floyd written by Robert W. Hughes may be found in E. A. Pollard, *Lee and his Lieutenants* (1867), pp. 783–807; another, by John W. Johnston, in *John P. Branch Hist. Papers of Randolph-Macon Coll.,* June 1913, pp. 78–103; and still another in N. J. Floyd, *Biog. Geneal. of the Va.-Ky. Floyd Families* (1912), 81–92. Floyd's administrative career is discussed unfavorably by J. F. Rhodes, *Hist. of the U. S.,* III (1895), 236–41; an opposite view is expressed in B. W. Duke, *Hist. of Morgan's Cavalry* (1867), pp. 115–18. Numerous local references indicate a high opinion in Virginia of Floyd's business ability. For the Sumter crisis, see S. W. Crawford, *The Genesis of the Civil War* (1887). The resignation from the cabinet is discussed by Rhodes (*op. cit.*), who bases his opinion of Floyd's "treachery" chiefly on his Richmond speech of Jan. 11, 1861; but the report in the *N. Y. Herald,* Jan. 17, does not sustain this view. See also an article by Robert M. Hughes in *Harper's Weekly,* May 11, 1912; reprinted in *Tyler's Quar. Hist. and Geneal. Mag.,* Jan. 1921. On military events, besides the *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vols. V, VII, see *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887), I, 126–48, 398–428. These latter accounts should be supplemented by W. P. Johnston, *The Life of Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston* (1878), pp. 433–76, 495–500.]

J. E. W.

**FLOYD, WILLIAM** (Dec. 17, 1734–Aug. 4, 1821), signer of the Declaration of Independence, congressman, was born at Brookhaven, Long Island, the eldest son of Nicoll and Tabitha (Smith) Floyd, and the great-grandson of Richard Floyd who emigrated from Wales in the seventeenth century and settled on Long Island. Though coming from a wealthy family, he had only a limited academic education, and at eighteen, upon the death of his father, he assumed the rôle of landed proprietor. His important family connections and his bounteous hospitality soon won for him an important place in the civic and military affairs of his community. He was made an officer in the militia of Suffolk County and rose to the rank of major-general. At the outbreak of the War for Independence, he waived personal considerations and aligned himself with the patriotic cause. He served in the Continental Congress from 1774 to 1777 and from 1778 to 1783 (Force, *post*, 4 ser. I, 324). Since his participation was neither aggressive nor brilliant, he played a subsidiary rôle in the New York delegation. Edward Rutledge, writing to John Jay in 1776, placed him in the category of those members who "tho' good men, never quit their chairs" (Bancroft, *post*, I, 105). On the other hand, Floyd was an excellent committeeman, serving on the committee on clothing in 1776, and on the boards of admiralty and the treasury in 1779. His independence of judgment and his sane view-point won him the respect of his colleagues. He and his family suffered severe hardships because of his adherence to the cause of the Revolutionists. When the British made their first descent on Long Island, he headed a body of militia and drove them off; but in 1776 the invading army took possession of his property, and his family was forced to seek refuge in Connecticut. His few absences from Congress were due to his anxiety over his estate, which by the end of the war had been reduced to ruin.

Floyd's career in the Continental Congress was followed by a notable term of service in the Senate of his state, in which he lent his weight to the adoption of a conservative and stable financial policy (Waln, *post*, p. 142). He served an uneventful term in the First Congress, 1789–91, and was an unsuccessful candidate for reëlection to the Second. In 1795 he was a candidate for lieutenant-governor as the opponent of Stephen Van Rensselaer. Though well advanced in years, he continued to serve in a number of official capacities, acting as presidential elector in 1792, 1800, 1804, and as late as 1820, as delegate to the state constitutional convention in 1801, and once more as state senator in 1808. In 1784 he had purchased a tract of land on the headwaters of the Mohawk in what is now Oneida County. As time went on he came to devote more and more attention to the cultivation of this tract, finally removing there in 1803, to assume a pioneer life at the advanced age of sixty-nine. Here he enjoyed uninterrupted health until a short time before his death which occurred at Westernville, N. Y. He was married twice: first to Isabella Jones of Southampton, and second, to Joanna Strong of Setauket. Neither by mentality nor temperament could Floyd lay claim to unusual distinction. He was essentially a practical man whose plans were carried out methodically. Despite his frank and independent manner, and a decorous deportment which discouraged intimacy, he secured constant proofs of popular favor.

[B. F. Thompson, *Hist. of Long Island*, IV (1918), 167–77; John Sanderson and Robert Waln, Jr., eds., *Biog. of the Signers to the Declaration of Independence*, IV (1823), 129–50; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.*, 1774–1927; manuscript letters among the Revolutionary Papers of the Bancroft Collection in the N. Y. Pub. Library, and extracts in E. C. Burnett, *Letters of Members of the Continental Cong.* (4 vols., 1921–28); and in Peter Force, *Am. Archives* (9 vols., 1837–53).] R. B. M.



**FLÜGEL, EWALD** (Aug. 4, 1863–Nov. 14, 1914), philologist, was born in Leipzig, the third son of Karl Alfred Felix and Pauline (Mencken) Flügel. His grandfather, Johann Gottfried Flügel (1788–1855), acquired a thorough knowledge of English during his *Wanderjahre* 1810–19 in America. Home again in Leipzig, he was American consul, representative for northern Europe of the Smithsonian Institution, and author of a *Complete Dictionary of the English and German ... Languages* (1830). Karl Alfred Felix Flügel (1820–1904) inherited his father's consular, Smithsonian, and lexical activities. He revised the dictionary as a *Practical Dictionary of the English and German Languages* (2 vols., 1847) and, after it had gone through fifteen editions, replaced it with a *Universal English-German and German-English Dictionary* (1891; 1894) in three large volumes. One of Ewald's earliest tasks was to copy slips for this work. Strangely enough, he found it difficult to master English, although in later life he spoke the language with idiomatic vigor and with scarcely a trace of his German origin. He attended the Nikolaischule in Leipzig, studied at the universities of Freiburg and of his native city, and received the doctorate in 1885 for a dissertation on *Thomas Carlyles Religiöse und Sittliche Entwicklung und Weltanschauung* (1887), of which an English translation by Jessica Gilbert Tyler was published in 1891. During these years he was strongly influenced by Rudolf Hildebrand, whose contributions to the Grimm *Wörterbuch* served as models for

Flügel's life-work. In 1888 he married Helene Burckhardt of Magdeburg and became *privatdocent* at the University of Leipzig. In 1889 he and Gustav Schirmer assumed the editorship of *Anglia*. Flügel himself founded the *Beiblatt zur Anglia*. In 1892, against the advice of Moses Coit Tyler and other American friends, he accepted the professorship of English philology in Leland Stanford, Junior, University. Disappointment at the slowness of promotion in Germany, strong American sympathies, and perhaps also a certain restlessness, effected the decision, which was in some ways rash. Of his various publications the most important were an edition of Sir Philip Sidney's *Astrophel and Stella* and *Defence of Poesie* (1 vol., 1889) and "Die Nordamerikanische Literatur" (1907), which was published in R. P. Wülker's *Geschichte der Englischen Literatur* (II, 413–541). Neither these nor any of his other studies was more than a respite from the great task to which with increasing devotion he dedicated his life. This was a Chaucer dictionary, or rather an historical dictionary of the Chaucerian vocabulary, which he undertook at the instigation of Frederick James Furnivall and which had been originally projected as a cooperative enterprise. As Flügel planned it, it would have filled five or six massive volumes and have set a new standard of lexicographical achievement in a limited field. "No mere description can do justice to the dignity and amplitude of this work of scholarship, if it could have been completed and published." [Tatlock and Kennedy, *post*, p. xii.] Flügel expected to finish the work in 1921. He was able to devote three days a week to it—days that began at 5:00 A. M. and closed late in the evening—and through the support of the Carnegie Institution of Washington he had the years 1904–07 entirely free for the lexicon, which, in Carlylean fashion, he alternately called his *Schmerzenskind* and his daily delight. But in Germany, in 1906, he suffered a sunstroke that for a while threatened his life, and heart disease developed soon thereafter. Concealing his condition from everyone except his son Felix, he worked on, hoping to complete the manuscript before the final attack. Repeated entreaties to publish the dictionary in parts were parried, for he knew that time spent on the proofs would be irreparably lost for the manuscript. He died three months after the outbreak of the European War of 1914–18 with his dictionary complete, subject to additions and revision, as far as "hewe." Friends in Europe and America mourned a great scholar and an admirable man. His library of 14,000 volumes now belongs to Stanford University. In 1925 the Flügel family transferred the manuscript of the lexicon and the collection of materials to the Middle English dictionary being edited at Cornell University.

[*Flügel Memorial Volume* (1916); *Addresses in Commemoration of Ewald Flügel* (privately printed, London, 1925); *Ewald Flügel, eine Darstellung seines Lebens und Wirkens* (*Germanische Studien*, XLI, Berlin, 1926)—with bibliographies; R. M. Alden, letter in the *Nation*, Jan. 7, 1915; E. Einenkel, "Ewald Flügel," *Anglia*, XXXIX (1915); *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; J. S. P. Tatlock and A. G. Kennedy, *Concordance to the Complete Works of Geoffrey Chaucer* (1927), pp. x–xii; *Moses Coit Tyler* (1911), ed. by Jessica Tyler Austen; W. D. Briggs in *Stanford Alumnus*, Nov. 1914; for specimen pages of the Chaucer dictionary see *Anglia*, vols. XXXIV (1911) and XXXVII (1913) and Ewald Flügel, "Benedicitee," in *Matzke Memorial Volume* (1911).] G.H.G.



**FOGG, GEORGE GILMAN** (May 26, 1813–Oct. 5, 1881), lawyer, editor, diplomat, the son of David and Hannah Gilman (Vickery) Fogg was born at Meredith Center, N. H. He attended New Hampton Academy, graduated from Dartmouth College in 1839, studied law at Harvard and in the office of Judge Warren Lovell in Meredith Village, and began practise at Gilmanton Iron Works in 1842. After four years he moved to Concord and maintained a residence there for the rest of his life. He never married. He was active in politics, being a pioneer in the Free-Soil movement, and in 1846 was chosen secretary of state for a term of one year. A few years later he took an active part in the organization of the Republican party. He was the founder of the *Independent Democrat* of Concord and from 1846 to 1861 devoted himself largely to journalism. Under his direction the paper became one of the most influential in the state, and his editorial utterances were widely quoted throughout New England. From 1855 to 1859 he was state law reporter and for some years state printer as well. As a delegate to the Republican Convention of 1860, he was a strong supporter of Lincoln and in 1861 was appointed minister to Switzerland, holding the post until Oct. 16, 1865. Switzerland offered few of the problems found at London or Paris where belligerent rights, neutral duties, and the ever present possibility of intervention required so much diplomatic activity. In July 1861, he reported that, "here . . . the rebels have no friends," and on the close of the war, that Lee's surrender caused almost as much rejoicing as though it had been a Swiss victory. The dispatches published in *Papers Relating to Foreign Affairs* show that his work was largely of routine character, but performed to the satisfaction of both countries. In 1864 he represented the United States at the Geneva conference on the amelioration of conditions for the sick and wounded in time of war.

In 1866–67 Fogg served out the unexpired term of Daniel Clark in the United States Senate. He resumed editorial work but was now on bad terms with several of his party leaders, due, in part at least, to his failure to secure another diplomatic post. Although he continued to be active in both journalism and party management for some years longer, his influence seems to have declined. He was interested in the New Hampshire Historical Society and many local organizations in Concord, and was a trustee of Bates College. For several years prior to his death he was broken in health and able to do little work. He was one of the ablest journalists in the history of the state, and it was as a newspaper editor that he made his chief contribution to political history.

[C. H. Bell, *The Bench and Bar of N. H.* (1894); J. O. Lyford, *Hist. of Concord, N. H.* (1903); J. O. Lyford, *Life of Edward H. Rollins* (1906); *Concord Daily Monitor*, Oct. 6, 1881; the *People and N. H. Patriot* (Concord), Oct. 13, 1881.] W. A. R.

**FOLGER, CHARLES JAMES** (Apr. 16, 1818–Sept. 4, 1884), jurist, secretary of the treasury, son of Thomas Folger, was born on the island of Nantucket, from which, at the age of twelve, he removed with his parents to Geneva, N. Y. His ancestors for generations had been New England whalers, tracing their origin to John Folger who came over from Norfolk, England, in 1635. Folger attended Geneva (now Hobart) College, from which he was graduated with the highest honors of his class in 1836. He took up the study of law at Canandaigua, was admitted to the bar in Albany in 1839, and started practise in Lyons, Wayne County. After a year he returned to Geneva where he maintained his home throughout the remainder of his life. On June 17, 1844, he married Susan Rebecca Worth.

Folger assumed his first important public office at the age of twenty-six, when, in 1844, he was appointed judge of the court of common pleas of Ontario County, and soon after was made master and examiner in chancery. From 1851 to 1855 he served as county judge. While originally a Democrat, Folger passed into the Republican fold over the Free-Soil bridge in 1854. In 1861 he was elected to the state Senate and was reëlected three times, serving until 1869, and acting for four years as president *pro tempore*, and, throughout the period, as chairman of the judiciary committee. In the latter capacity he was noted for his conservative course and his stanch resistance to any modification of the law of marriage and divorce (*Geneva Courier*, Sept. 10, 1884), and to important reforms in criminal procedure (*Autobiography of Andrew Dickson White*, I, 137). Throughout these years Folger was one of the keenest critics of unsound legislation. "Whenever a bill was read a third time he watched it as a cat watches a mouse," wrote a contemporary (*Ibid.*, p. 101). He consistently opposed the "accursed mildew of town bonding" (*Geneva Courier*, Sept. 10, 1884), and was an uncompromising foe to stock-jobbers. He attracted special attention during these years by his hostility to Gov. Reuben E. Fenton of his own party and by his prominence in the legislative contest of 1868 between Vanderbilt and the New York Central and Gould and the Erie.

His most valued service to his state was rendered in the field of constitutional reform and interpretation. In the state convention of 1867 he was chairman of the judiciary committee, and to his efforts are attributed material changes in the judicial system. He was the foremost public sponsor of the proposed constitution, which was rejected by the people in 1869. He was elected an associate judge of the state court of appeals in 1870. The fact that he had been the choice of both the Republican and Democratic tickets in that election led to charges of a corrupt Tammany alliance (*N. Y. Times*, May 17, 18, 1870). On the death of Chief Justice Church in 1880, Folger was designated by Gov. Cornell to fill the unexpired term of that office. In November of that year he was reëlected to the bench of the court of appeals, which he left shortly to take up his duties in the cabinet of President Arthur. In his term on the bench Folger rendered frequent opinions which revealed a valuable grasp of questions of constitutional law (see, for example, *People ex rel. Lee* vs. *Chautauqua County*, 43 *N. Y.*, 10; *People* vs. *Bull*, 46 *N. Y.*, 57).

During this later period of his life Folger assumed a more active rôle in national politics. He was a prominent candidate for the United States senatorial nomination in 1867, but finally withdrew in favor of Conkling. In the following year he was active at the Republican National Convention at Chicago in demonstrating to other state delegations that New York was not solid for Reuben E. Fenton for Vice-President (*N. Y. Times*, May 20, 1868). In 1869 he resigned from the state Senate to accept an appointment from President Grant as United States assistant treasurer in New York City, in which capacity he served for one year. Although he first refused the office of attorney-general in Garfield's cabinet, he finally accepted the treasury portfolio under President Arthur in 1881. Under his administration the public debt was reduced over $300,000,000, the largest reduction which had ever been effected up to his time.

During his administration offices in the Treasury Department were put in the classified service under Civil Service rules. His correspondence with James B. Butler, chief of the appointment division of the Treasury Department, reveals that even before these reforms, Folger attempted to maintain a high standard of personnel.

In 1882, through the joint efforts of President Arthur and Conkling, Folger was given the Republican nomination for governor, despite the stiff fight which Gov. Cornell made for renomination in an administration-packed convention (*N. Y. Times,* Sept. 22, 23, 1882; *Harper's Weekly,* Sept. 30, Oct. 21, 1882). His Democratic opponent was Grover Cleveland, who polled almost 200,000 votes more than Folger, the largest majority which had ever been scored in a contested election. Folger was a man of distinguished personal appearance, gentle in bearing, modest and even diffident, but withal an impressive speaker and conscientious in the execution of his public duties. His correspondence discloses the saving grace of a rich sense of humor.

[Outlines of Folger's career may be found in S. R. Harlow and S. C. Hutchins, *Life Sketches of the State Officers, Senators, and Members of the Assembly of the State of N. Y. in 1868,* pp. 81–84; and in Chas. Andrews, *An Address Commemorative of the Life of the Late Hon. Chas. J. Folger* (1885). See also Homer A. Stebbins, *A Pol. Hist. of the State of N. Y., 1865–69* (1913); Chas. Z. Lincoln, *The Constitutional Hist. of N. Y.,* 5 vols. (1906); and DeA. S. Alexander, *A Pol. Hist. of the State of N. Y.,* vol. III (1909). The N. Y. Pub. Lib. has a collection of the unofficial correspondence of Secretary Folger with James B. Butler, 1881–84. Obituaries in *N. Y. Tribune, N. Y. Times,* and N. Y. *Evening Post,* Sept. 5, 1884; and *Geneva Courier,* Sept. 10, 1884.]

R. B. M.

**FOLGER, HENRY CLAY** (June 18, 1857–June 11, 1930), lawyer, capitalist, philanthropist, collector of Shakespeariana, was born in New York, the eldest of the eight children of Henry Clay and Eliza Jane (Clark) Folger, and tenth in descent from Peter Folger [*q.v.*]. His father was a dealer in wholesale millinery and later an official in two meter companies. After preparing at Adelphi Academy in Brooklyn, Folger entered Amherst College, where, though obliged to earn part of his expenses, he carried off prizes in English composition and oratory and was elected to Phi Beta Kappa. Through Charles Millard Pratt, his friend since boyhood and his room-mate at Amherst, he secured a clerkship in the firm of Charles Pratt & Company, oil refiners, already a part of the Standard group, and began work July 1, 1879, a few days after his graduation. That autumn, without giving up his position, he began the study of law at Columbia and received his LL.B. degree *cum laude* and

Folger

was admitted to the New York bar in 1881. On Oct. 6, 1885, he married Emily Clara, daughter of Edward Jordan of Elizabeth, N. J. For a number of years they resided in Elizabeth, later moving to Brooklyn and establishing their summer home at Glen Cove, L. I. Folger's career in the Standard Oil Company covered almost half a century. After serving as officer or director of various subsidiaries, he was advanced Dec. 4, 1911, to the presidency of the Standard Oil Company of New York, resigned Mar. 31, 1923, to assume the chairmanship of the board, and retired five years later to devote all his time to the completion of his Shakespeare Memorial.

Folger had been deeply influenced by the writings of Emerson, and through Emerson, especially through the "Remarks at the Celebration of the Three Hundredth Anniversary of the Birth of Shakespeare," which he read while at Amherst, he learned to revere Shakespeare as the first of poets. A few years later the study of J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps's reduced facsimile of the First Folio acquainted him with the problems of Shakespearian bibliography and criticism and set him to buying Shakespeariana with an ardor and intelligence probably unparalleled in the history of book collecting. In Mrs. Folger, a graduate and master of arts of Vassar College, he had an enthusiastic and highly competent associate, and as their collection grew they discovered that it was in their power to gather a unique Shakespearian library. Folger enjoyed his collection for its own sake, enjoyed the triumphs and hazards of the quest, and, most of all, enjoyed in anticipation the eventual use that he planned to make of his treasures. Since publicity would have been ruinous to his project, he acquired his books as silently as possible and held them rather privately; in the world of Shakespearian scholars the Folger collection was as an invisible planet whose magnitude could be conjectured only by the irresistible force with which it attracted lesser bodies to it. Pending the completion of his plans, he was compelled to store his books in several vaults in New York and Brooklyn and never saw his library assembled. In England, where its extent was more fully known than in the United States, pressure was put on him to give the collection a permanent home at Stratford-on-Avon, but his ambition, as he wrote in a letter of Jan. 19, 1928, was "to help make the United States a center for literary study and progress." Early in 1928 he announced, very briefly and quietly, that he would erect a library in Washington for the promotion and diffusion of knowledge in regard to the history and writings of Shakespeare. The announcement conveyed no intimation of the fact

that this was the most munificent gift ever made for the study of literature. The square on East Capitol Street immediately behind the Library of Congress had already been secured as the site, and the collection, the finest in existence, numbered over 70,000 volumes, together with pamphlets, documents, manuscripts, playbills, oil-paintings, water-colors, prints, statues, medals, musical scores, costumes, and other objects. It included many rare or unique volumes of Elizabethan plays and poetry and many association books, and was especially rich in Shakespeare Quartos and Folios. Of the less than two hundred known copies of the First Folio, upwards of eighty, including a number of the best, were in the Folger collection.

In Folger himself the masterful qualities of a great executive were ennobled by a rich humanity. In manner he was unassuming, gentle, at times whimsically humorous. He presided over board meetings with captivating wit and urbanity and had a genius for developing the latent powers of his subordinates and for holding their admiration and affection. His architects, Alexander B. Trowbridge and Paul P. Cret, were of the considered opinion that he was also the one perfect client in the history of architecture. The cornerstone of the Memorial was laid May 28, 1930. Two weeks later Folger died in St. John's Hospital, Brooklyn, after an operation. By his will he left his entire residuary estate, with careful instructions for its administration by the Trustees of Amherst College, to complete and maintain the Folger Shakespeare Memorial.

[J. F. Jameson, *Hist. of the Class of 1879 in Amherst Coll., 1879–1929* (1882–1929); *Amherst Coll. Biog. Record Grads. and Non-Grads.* (1927); *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; information from Mrs. Henry Clay Folger and from Frederick Wm. Ashley, J. Franklin Jameson, Wm. Adams Slade, and Alexander Buel Trowbridge.] G. H. G.

**FOLGER, PETER** (1617–1690), Nantucket pioneer, was the son of John Folger of Norwich, England, and his wife, Mirriba Gibs. He emigrated to Massachusetts with his parents about 1635 and probably accompanied Thomas Mayhew, Jr., in 1642 from Watertown to Martha's Vineyard. There he was employed as a schoolmaster and surveyor and helped Mayhew in his missionary work among the Indians. Cotton Mather praised him in the *Magnalia* (Hartford, 1853, II, 429–30) as "an able godly Englishman . . . well learned in the Scripture"; Thomas Prince, in his appendix to Experience Mayhew's *Indian Converts* (London, 1727, p. 291), repeated this commendation word for word. In 1644 Folger married Mary Morrils, an indentured servant, whom he had bought for £20 from the Rev. Hugh Peters. The money was wisely spent; and their youngest child, Abiah, born on Nantucket Aug. 15, 1667, became the mother of Benjamin Franklin. In the summer of 1659 Tristram Coffin and his party stopped at the Vineyard on their way to inspect Nantucket Island, which they proposed to buy from Thomas Mayhew. Folger went with them as surveyor and interpreter in their dealings with the sachems. He was on the Island surveying in 1661 and 1662, and was so useful to the new proprietors that on July 4, 1663, they offered him a half-share of land if he would remove there with his family. Teacher, Indian interpreter, weaver, miller, clerk of the town and court, he was an indispensable citizen. Once he did get into bad odor by joining the "insurrection" of the half-share men, an abortive effort of the proletariat to wrest the political control from the original shareholders. Folger's little part in it was construed as contempt of court, and for want of a bond of £20 he was put in the Nantucket jail—"Where never any English-man was put," he wrote to Gov. Edmund Andros, "and where the Neighbors Hogs had layed but the Night before, and in a bitter cold Frost and deep Snow. They had onely thrown out most of the Durt, Hogs, Dung, and Snow. The Rest the Constable told me I might ly upon if I would . . ." (Starbuck, *post*, p. 54). He survived even this indignity, however, and resumed his old place in the community. He joined the Baptist church at Newport, R. I., in 1675 and later immersed a convert or two in Waiptequage Pond. It is on record that at least one of his Indian friends regarded this new aquatic doctrine as heretical. Folger was the author of *A Looking-Glass for the Times, or The Former Spirit of New England Revived in This Generation* (Boston, John Foster, 1676). "It was written in 1675," said his grandson in the *Autobiography*, "in the homespun verse of that time and people, and addressed to those then concerned in the government there. It was in favor of liberty of conscience, and in behalf of the Baptists, Quakers, and other sectaries that had been under persecution, ascribing the Indian wars and other distresses that had befallen the country, to that persecution, as so many judgments of God to punish so heinous an offense, and exhorting a repeal of those uncharitable laws. The whole appeared to me as written with a good deal of decent plainness and manly freedom." The piece consists of four octosyllabic couplets followed by one hundred and five ballad quatrains. It is a good pamphlet, with decent plainness and manly freedom in abundance, but with no poetry. Folger's courage in publishing it has been slightly overestimated, for at that time Nantucket belonged to

the province of New York. As long as he stayed on his sandy, wind-swept isle, the Massachusetts ministers could not lay hands on him.

[A. Starbuck, *The Hist. of Nantucket* (1924); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, vols. VII, XII, XVI; F. B. Hough, *Papers Relating to the Island of Nantucket* (1856); J. W. Jordan, "Franklin as a Genealogist," *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, XXIII (Apr. 1899), 1–22. The *Looking-Glass* is accessible in *R. I. Hist. Tracts No. 16* (Providence, 1883) and in E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, *Cyc. Am. Lit.* (3rd ed., 1875).] G.H.G.

**FOLGER, WALTER** (June 12, 1765–Sept. 8, 1849), lawyer, scientist, traced his descent from John Folger who, coming from Norwich, England, in 1635, settled at Watertown, Mass., but moved to Martha's Vineyard in 1642, accompanied by his son, Peter [*q.v.*]. In 1661 the latter went to Nantucket for the purpose of surveying land and ultimately made his permanent home there. Walter Folger of the fourth generation from him, a resident of Nantucket, married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Starbuck, and their son Walter was born on the Island, which continued to be his domicile during the whole of his long life. Attending only the elementary schools, he "never went to any institution of learning where anything above the alphabet, spelling, reading in the Bible and surveying were taught" (Lydia E. Hinchman, *post*). On leaving school he settled down to a course of self-tuition, which was as remarkable for its range as for the results achieved. He taught himself the higher branches of mathematics, mastered the principles and practise of mechanics, and though never apprenticed to any craftsman became an expert watch-maker and clock-maker, at which business he made a living for a number of years. On Dec. 29, 1785, he married Anna Ray. In 1788, at the age of twenty-three, he commenced work on the construction of a clock, incorporating features such as had never been attempted prior to that time. Devoting merely his spare time to the task, he completed the undertaking in less than two years, and in 1790 exhibited in perfect working order what has since been known as "Folger's astronomic clock." In addition to the usual functions of marking the passage of time, it designated the year and day of the month. The rising and setting of the sun and moon and their exact paths were indicated by balls which moved in exact astronomic time each day and night, and the chief phenomena resulting from the obliquity of the moon's path to the ecliptic were also displayed. Other extraordinary features exhibited the mechanical genius and delicate workmanship of the designer (*Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, 2 ser., III, 1815). On the completion of this remarkable object he turned to other fields, studying in



the first place medicine and science. In the meanwhile he "acted as surveyor of land, repaired watches, clocks and chronometers, made compasses, engraved on copper and other metals, made chemical and other scientific discoveries, calculated eclipses and understood and spoke the French language." Among his discoveries was the process of annealing wire. He made contributions, chiefly mathematical, to scientific periodicals, wrote *A Topographical Description of Nantucket* (dated May 21, 1791, and printed in *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, vol. III, 1794) and published an almanac in 1790 and 1791.

He then turned his attention to the law, studying by himself as was his wont; was admitted as a counselor-at-law in 1807, and practised for about twenty years. In 1808 he was elected representative of Nantucket in the Massachusetts General Court, becoming in 1809 state senator, which position he held for five years. On the outbreak of the War of 1812 he established a cotton- and woolen-mill on Nantucket and with his family operated it with complete success. In 1816 he was elected representative from the Nantucket district of Massachusetts to the Fifteenth Congress as a Democrat, and, being reëlected served from Mar. 4, 1817, to Mar. 3, 1821. In 1822 he again became state senator for one term. In his law practise he was as successful as in other spheres, becoming in 1828 a judge of the court of common pleas and the court of sessions in Nantucket. He remained on the bench for six years, and it is a striking tribute to his judicial qualities that no appeal was ever taken from any of his decisions. At the time of his death he was engaged upon the compilation of a genealogy of the Nantucket families. He was buried in the Friends Burying Ground.

[Wm. G. Folger, *Memoir of the Late Walter Folger* (1874), reprinted from the Nantucket *Inquirer*, Sept. 21, 1849, and "The Folger Family," in *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, July 1862; L. C. Hinchman, *Early Settlers of Nantucket* (2nd ed., 1901); *Proc. of the Nantucket Hist. Asso.* (1920); A. Starbuck, *The Hist. of Nantucket* (1924).] H.W.H.K.

**FOLK, JOSEPH WINGATE** (Oct. 28, 1869–May 28, 1923), lawyer, prosecutor, governor, was the son of Henry B. Folk, a leading lawyer in Brownsville, Tenn., and Martha Estes, of a pioneer Virginia family. He was educated in the public schools and in the School of Law of Vanderbilt University, graduating in 1890. For four years he practised law in Brownsville with his father before removing to St. Louis, where he entered the lucrative field of corporation law but devoted considerable attention to politics. By tradition a Democrat, Folk soon became active in the Jefferson Club, a local but powerful or-

ganization of young Democrats. He held important positions in this body during the campaigns of 1896 and of 1898, and became well-known in party circles. In 1900, he was asked by a committee of Democrats to accept the nomination for circuit attorney, the chief law-enforcing officer of St. Louis. He reluctantly agreed and became the accidental beneficiary of a unique combination, in that his candidacy was supported by the Democratic boss and machine, who believed him to be "safe," and by the reform element. He was elected by a scant plurality.

In 1901–02, he instituted an investigation which led to a series of sensational exposures of the actual government of St. Louis and of the alliance between corrupt business and corrupt politics. Acting quickly on vague and accidental information, Folk secured definite proof of bribery of members of the municipal assembly in the passage of a street-railway franchise, and brought to indictment for bribery and for perjury seven of the principals. He then pressed forward, despite bitter political and financial opposition, to the exposure of three other notorious public utility franchise deals and to the demonstration of civic corruption and the open exploitation of the city by a sinister, bipartisan combination. Thirty-nine indictments, twenty-four for bribery and thirteen for perjury, were secured, including twenty-one members of the municipal assembly, the city boss, Edward Butler, that indispensable negotiator between politics and business, and several of the leading men of wealth. Twelve were sent to the penitentiary, others turned state's evidence or became fugitives from justice (*American State Trials,* vol. IX). He also assisted materially in the investigations of alleged bribery and graft in the Missouri legislature and among certain state administrative officials, with results that shocked the public conscience and made clear the cynical corruption in the process of government. There was about Folk a persistence and rigid honesty, combined with a calm relentlessness, which brought to this quiet, smiling, even-tempered man of thirty-three the support of the better elements of all parties and the bitter and undying opposition of all organization politicians. In 1903, he became an active candidate for governor. Most of the party leaders and committeemen in the cities were hostile and used questionable methods to defeat him, but his supporters in the rural counties were well organized and successful (*St. Louis Globe-Democrat,* March 1904). Through their majority of the credentials committee the Folk forces were able to control the convention; he was nominated on the first ballot, and many of his ideas were written into the platform. The election results were significant: Roosevelt carried the state for president by 25,000; Folk, for governor by 30,000, while every other state officer elected was a Republican in a state since 1868 overwhelmingly Democratic (*Official Manual of the State of Missouri,* 1905–06). The new governor proceeded on the Roosevelt idea, that the executive is the steward of the public welfare, and under his leadership, notable advances were made in the enactment and honest enforcement of statutes of a regulatory character, such as anti-lobby, dram-shop control, and public-utility laws, while in the field of social-welfare legislation important laws were enacted. Two devices intimately associated with the progressive era, the direct primary and direct legislation, were written into the constitution and laws of Missouri. Both measures were forced upon a reluctant state Assembly by Folk. He unwisely became a candidate in 1908 for the nomination as United States senator and was defeated by the incumbent, W. J. Stone, a master of political strategy.

In 1910, chiefly to remove him from Missouri politics, he was endorsed for president, but two years later the organization shelved him and supported Champ Clark. In the first Wilson administration, he served as solicitor for the state department, and later in a more congenial position, that of chief counsel for the Interstate Commerce Commission. He secured the nomination for the Senate in 1918, but was defeated in the election by his Republican opponent. In every campaign for elective office he had the relentless and organized opposition of the urban machines and their leaders. Folk's lack of political acumen and his harshness toward politicians were unfortunate. The years from 1918 to 1923 were spent chiefly in Washington in the successful practise of law, and as counsel for Peru and for the Egyptian National Committee. He suffered a nervous breakdown in 1922 and died suddenly at the home of his sister in New York City the following year. His wife, Gertrude Glass, whom he married on Nov. 10, 1896, survived him.

[Lincoln Steffens, *The Shame of the Cities* (1904) and *The Struggle for Self-government* (1906); Claude Wetmore, *The Battle against Bribery* (1904); J. D. Lawson, *American State Trials,* vol. IX (1918); J. L. Blair, "The St. Louis Disclosures," in *Proc. of the Detroit Conf. for Good City Govt. and . . . of the Nat. Municipal League* (1903); W. A. White in *McClure's Mag.* (Dec. 1905); T. S. Barclay, *A Period of Political Uncertainty* (1928); J. C. Jones, memoir of Folk in *Messages and Proclamations of the Governors of the State of Mo.,* IX (1925); *Who's Who in America,* 1922–

23; *N. Y. Times*, *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), and *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, all of May 29, 1923.]

T. S. B.

**FOLLEN, CHARLES** (Sept. 4, 1796–Jan. 13, 1840), German liberal refugee, first professor of German literature at Harvard, Abolitionist, Unitarian preacher, was the son of Christoph Follenius, a prominent judge at Giessen, Hesse-Darmstadt. He entered the university of his native town in the spring of 1813, not yet seventeen years old, devoting himself to the study of law and ethics, but soon, at the rising of the German people against Napoleon, joined a company of volunteers. He as well as two of his brothers served throughout the campaign on French soil. After the conclusion of peace in 1814, resuming his studies at Giessen, he eagerly plunged into the progressive student movement —the so-called *Burschenschaftsbewegung*. A commanding personality, a fiery orator, an inspiring writer of verse, he easily rose to leadership among the radical youths of the Giessen *Burschenschaft*, pledged to republican ideals and the overthrow of the old feudal order. Although he was himself absent in 1817 from the great liberal demonstration on the Wartburg, he was one of its chief promoters and organizers. Even after his appointment, in 1818, to a lectureship at the University of Jena, undismayed by official warnings and censures, he carried on what was in effect revolutionary propaganda, and it is not surprising that, when on Mar. 23, 1819, the reactionary writer Kotzebue was assassinated by Karl Sand, a close student friend of Follen's, the latter should have been arrested and tried as an accomplice. No evidence could be found against him, however, and he was acquitted, but since he was dismissed from the university and placed under strict police surveillance, so that all avenues for a useful public career in Germany seemed closed to him, he decided to leave the country and serve the cause of freedom elsewhere. After a brief stay in Paris early in 1820, where he made the acquaintance of Lafayette, he went to Switzerland, and taught Latin and history for a year in the cantonal school of Chur, until in the autumn of 1821 he was called as lecturer on jurisprudence and metaphysics to the newly reorganized University of Basel. Here he spent three active and highly successful years. In 1824, however, the Prussian government, fearful lest his democratic and cosmopolitan teachings should spread in Germany, not only forbade its subjects to attend the University of Basel, but, supported by the other members of the Holy Alliance, demanded Follen's extradition, on the charge of his subverting the foundation of society. Now America seemed the only



asylum left. On Nov. 1, 1824, Follen and his friend Karl Beck sailed from Havre for New York.

Follen's American career also was a tragic mixture of high aspirations and deep disappointments. At first his ideals appeared to be realized in the new country. Through George Ticknor, to whom he was introduced by Lafayette, he received an offer from Harvard College of an instructorship in German, which he accepted with the understanding that he should also have an opportunity to give lectures on law. He entered upon this position in December 1825, and in the next few years displayed a most remarkable versatility. In addition to teaching the German language to college classes and lecturing on jurisprudence before select audiences of Boston lawyers, he gave practical lessons in the new art of gymnastics made popular by "Father" Jahn, wrote linguistic text-books, literary readers, theological and philosophical essays, preached occasionally in Unitarian churches and around Boston, and in 1829 even accepted an additional regular instructorship in ethics and history at the Harvard Divinity School. It is no wonder that a man of such parts should have been gladly received by the intellectual and social élite of New England. In September 1828, he married a woman of aristocratic breeding, Eliza Lee Cabot. In March 1830, he acquired American citizenship; in April of the same year, a son was born to him; in August, he was appointed, for a term of five years, professor of German literature at Harvard College.

Even before the appearance, in January 1831, of Garrison's *Liberator*, Follen had boldly spoken out against slavery in his Boston "Lectures on Moral Philosophy" of 1830, but it was Garrison's and Whittier's example which urged him into action against slavery. In 1834, he joined the New England Anti-Slavery Society, and at its first convention held in Boston, well knowing that he thereby risked his own future, he drafted the "Address to the People of the United States." There seems no doubt that this address was the immediate cause of the severance of Follen's connection with Harvard College. When the tenure of his professorship expired in August 1835, it was not renewed, although his striking success as a teacher had widely and emphatically been recognized. From now on all the more eagerly he devoted himself to upholding his ideals of reform and progress in every sphere of life. At a hearing before a committee of the Massachusetts legislature in January 1836, he protested with vigor and dignity against a proposed attempt to inhibit the publication of Abolitionist writings. In an article in the *Quarter-*

*ly Anti-Slavery Magazine,* October 1836, he laid bare all the various forms of oppression which seemed to him to endanger true democracy in this country, among them the political and legal inferiority of women, the general subserviency to wealth, the sectarianism of the churches, the formalism and conventionality of academic instruction. In the various positions which he filled during the following three years, as private teacher, lecturer, and Unitarian minister, he never ceased to make the training of original and independent individuals his primary object. His last ministry was at East Lexington, Mass. On the return trip from a course of lectures on German literature before the Merchants' Library Association in New York, he perished with nearly all the passengers and crew of the steamer *Lexington,* which caught fire in Long Island Sound, during the night of Jan. 13–14, 1840.

[*The Works of Chas. Follen, with a Memoir of his Life* (5 vols.), the first volume (1842) of which contains the admirable *Life* by Mrs. Eliza Lee Cabot Follen, herself a gifted writer of stories, essays, and verse; Kuno Francke, "Karl Follen and the German Liberal Movement," in *Papers of the Am. Hist. Asso.,* vol. V (1891), pp. 65–81; Geo. W. Spindler, *Karl Follen; a Biographical Study* (1917), a critical monograph, containing an excellent bibliography.] **K.F.**

**FOLLEN, ELIZA LEE CABOT** (Aug. 15, 1787–Jan. 26, 1860), author and prominent member of the Massachusetts anti-slavery group, was born in Boston, the fifth of the thirteen children of Samuel and Sarah (Barrett) Cabot. Her father, a descendant of John Cabot who, coming from the island of Jersey in 1700, settled in Salem, Mass., was engaged in foreign commerce. For a number of years during Eliza's girlhood he was in Europe where he served as secretary of the commission to England under the Jay Treaty to settle the American spoliation claims. Her mother, a woman of strong character and notable mental attainments, was the daughter of Samuel and Mary (Clarke) Barrett, the latter a daughter of Richard Clarke [*q.v.*], and sister of Sussannah Farnum Clarke who married John Singleton Copley [*q.v.*]. Eliza received an excellent education, and became a cultivated woman of marked intellectual ability, deeply interested in religious and social problems, and firm and outspoken in her convictions. After the death of her father in 1819, her mother having died ten years earlier, she and two of her sisters established a home of their own. Her family connections brought her into contact with many of the leading people of Boston; she was prominent in literary and religious circles, and numbered among her friends such personages as William Ellery Channing and Henry Ware [*qq.v.*].

She was one of a little group of men and women who established a Sunday-school in connection with the Federal Street Church, and with other members of the group was accustomed to meet once a week in Dr. Channing's study for the discussion of religious questions. When Charles Follen [*q.v.*] came to Boston and had been introduced to Miss Cabot by Catharine M. Sedgwick [*q.v.*], she took him to these gatherings and an intimate friendship between Follen and Channing ensued. Dr. Follen, in fact, nine years younger than Miss Cabot, became her protégé; she suggested to him that he enter the ministry; and encouraged him to think that, though a foreigner, he would succeed. The woman in Germany to whom he was engaged refusing to leave home and friends for America, on Sept. 15, 1828, he and Miss Cabot were married. Thereafter their fortunes were joined until his tragic death a little more than eleven years later. A son, Charles Christopher, was born to them on Apr. 11, 1830. In 1841–42 she published in five volumes *The Works of Charles Follen, with a Memoir of His Life.*

Mrs. Follen's interest in the education of children and her connection with the Sunday-school movement gave direction to her literary activity. For two years beginning in April 1828, she edited the *Christian Teacher's Manual;* and from 1843 to 1850, the *Child's Friend.* Her books for the young were voluminous, some of them passing through numerous editions. *The Well-Spent Hour* (1827) was especially popular. Writing from Liverpool, Mrs. John T. Kirkland remarked in a letter dated Aug. 23, 1830: "Among the literary productions of America which have found their way across the Atlantic is our cousin Follen's Well-Spent Hour and Christian Teacher's Manual. . . . She seems to be considered one of the lights of the New World, associated with Dr. Channing and Mr. Ware" (*Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* 2 ser., vol. XIX, 1906). Mrs. Follen also published *Selections from the Writings of Fenelon,* with a memoir of his life (1829); *The Skeptic* (1835); *Sketches of Married Life* (1838); and *Poems* (1839).

In addition to her writing she undertook the work of preparing her son and other boys for Harvard College; and was active in the support of the anti-slavery movement, furnishing numerous tracts and poems, and serving on the executive committee of the American Anti-Slavery Society. She was also a counselor of the Massachusetts Society, and a member of the Boston Female Anti-Slavery Society. Altogether she was for years one of the notable personages of Boston. Every one respected her, but not every one loved her. J. Peter Lesley [*q.v.*]

wrote to his stepmother, June 21, 1847, "We called together on Mrs. Follen, relict of the lamented Dr. Follen who perished in the Lexington, last evening and found her one of those enthusiastic, partisan souls, who can see no faults in friends, nor virtues in enemies" (Mary Lesley Ames, *Life and Letters of Peter and Susan Lesley*, 1903). In general, however, she was spoken of with great reverence. James Russell Lowell, writing of the women who conducted anti-slavery bazaars in Faneuil Hall, characterized her thus:

> "And there, too, was Eliza Follen,
> Who scatters fruit-creating pollen
> Where'er a blossom she can find
> Hardy enough for Truth's north wind,
> Each several point of all her face
> Tremblingly bright with inward grace,
> As if all motion gave it light
> Like phosphorescent seas at night."

Her death, occasioned by typhoid fever, was coincident with her "annual festival," the meeting of the American Anti-Slavery Society.

[See L. Vernon Briggs, *Hist. and Geneal. of the Cabot Family* (2 vols., 1927); *Ann. Report Am. Anti-Slavery Soc., 1860* (1861); Mary E. Dewey, *Life and Letters of Catharine M. Sedgwick* (1871); Geo. W. Cooke, *Unitarianism in America* (1902); *Liberator*, Jan., Feb., 1860. Mrs. Follen's biography of her husband contains valuable but meager information about herself. Lowell's lines appeared in the *Pennsylvania Freeman*, Dec. 27, 1846, and are reprinted in W. P. and F. J. Garrison, *Wm. Lloyd Garrison*, III (1889), 179.] H. E. S.

**FOLLEN, KARL THEODOR CHRISTIAN** [See FOLLEN, CHARLES, 1796–1840].

**FOLSOM, CHARLES** (Dec. 24, 1794–Nov. 8, 1872), librarian, teacher, editor, was born in Exeter, N. H., the son of James Folsom and Sarah Gilman, and a descendant in the seventh generation of John Foulsham of Hingham in Norfolk, who came to America in 1638. He was fitted for college at Phillips Exeter Academy and graduated from Harvard in 1813. After a year's teaching he began the study of theology, but his health failing, he obtained the post of chaplain and instructor in mathematics on the *Washington*, the flag-ship of the Mediterranean Squadron. One of his pupils at this time was David G. Farragut [*q.v.*], who became his lifelong friend. In the autumn of 1817 Folsom was appointed consul *ad interim* at Tunis where he found many ancient remains to interest him, but in 1819 he rejoined the squadron. He became chaplain on the *Columbus* and private secretary to Commodore Bainbridge, with whom he visited the principal Mediterranean ports. Returning to the United States, he began his connection with Harvard College. From 1821 to 1824 he was tutor in Latin, from 1821 to 1826 he taught Italian. and from 1823 to 1826 he was librarian of the Harvard Library. Here his helpful and generous spirit was reflected in the increasing liberality of the library administration. For some fifteen years beginning in 1824 he was employed at the University Press, where he soon became a partner in the concern and corrector of the press. He rendered signal service to the writers of his day by his varied scholarship and diligent attention to detail, and was often called the Cambridge Aldus, but his "passion for exact and minute accuracy" often interfered with his administrative efficiency. In 1826–27 he collaborated with W. C. Bryant in editing the *United States Review and Literary Gazette* (see P. Godwin, *A Biography of William Cullen Bryant*, 1883, II, 213–28). Some years later, with Andrews Norton, he edited the *Select Journal of Foreign Periodical Literature* (4 vols., 1833–34), the earliest publication of its kind, but neither periodical long endured.

From 1841 to 1845 Folsom conducted a school for young ladies in Temple Place, Boston, and in 1846 he became librarian of the Boston Athenæum. His scholarship, good judgment, dignity, and kindliness endeared him to the frequenters of the library. A letter which he wrote to Samuel A. Eliot, Oct. 27, 1845, contains an admirable statement on the management and aims of a public library (Parsons, *post*). In 1853 he took an active part in the New York conference of librarians, the first gathering of the kind held in the United States (*Norton's Literary and Educational Register for 1854*, pp. 49–94). After retiring from the Athenæum in 1856 he spent the remainder of his days in Cambridge, always ready to devote his time and strength in helpful service to his friends, but leaving little from his own pen in print beyond a few contributions to the *Proceedings* of the Massachusetts Historical Society, the American Antiquarian Society, and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He was an excellent Latin scholar and his editions of Cicero and Livy, the former edited while he was still in college, were long used as school texts. He was married, Oct. 19, 1824, to Susanna Sarah McKean, daughter of Prof. Joseph McKean, of Cambridge. In March 1869 he suffered an attack of paralysis from which he partly recovered, but a second stroke was fatal.

[The best account of Folsom is the "Memoir of Chas. Folsom" by Theophilus Parsons in the *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, XIII (1875), 26–42, also printed separately, supplemented by a long letter from John G. Palfrey, *Ibid.*, XII (1873), 308–13, and a shorter notice in the *Proc. Am. Acad. of Arts and Sci.*, IX (1874), 237–38. See also "The Librarians of Harvard Coll.," in the *Lib. of Harvard Univ. Bibliog. Contributions*, no. 52 (1897), 37–38; A. P. Peabody's *Harvard Reminiscences* (1888), pp. 100–04; Boston Athenæum, *The Athenæum Centenary* (1907), p. 104; Jacob Chapman, *A Geneal. of the*

*Folsom Family* (1882), p. 121; and an article by Nathaniel S. Folsom and Jacob Chapman in the *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr. 1876, reprinted separately. The Boston Public Library has several volumes of Folsom's manuscript correspondence, and the Harvard Library has unpublished lectures and addresses, 1841–52, and memoranda of letters from the University Press, 1840–41.]

W. C. L.

**FOLSOM, GEORGE** (May 23, 1802–Mar. 27, 1869), author, antiquarian, was born in Kennebunk, Me., the son of Thomas and Edna (Ela) Folsom. He was descended from John Foulsham who landed at Hingham, Mass., and in 1638, settled in Exeter, N. H. Gen. Nathaniel Folsom, who distinguished himself in the French and Indian War, and was a member of the Continental Congress, was a less remote ancestor. George's father, a tavern-keeper and also a jeweler moved from Kennebunk to Portland in 1809, so that the boy's early education was in the latter city and at Phillips Academy in Exeter. He was graduated from Harvard in 1822, and then started to study law in the office of Judge Ether Shepley at Saco, Me. In leisure moments, however, he showed a predilection for historical research in writing a *History of Saco and Biddeford* (1830). He practised law first in Framingham, and then in Worcester, Mass., where his keener interest turned to the American Antiquarian Society. The second volume of that society's *Transactions and Collections,* published in 1836, was produced under Folsom's direction. In 1837 he made New York City his home and almost immediately identified himself with the New York Historical Society. He became the society's librarian, editing the *Collections* for the year 1841 in which source materials for Dutch New York were emphasized. Folsom is to be remembered, indeed, for his quiet insistence that source materials demand the attention of those who would seek the truth in history. His linguistic ability as well as the breadth of his interest was shown in his production in 1843 of the *Dispatches of Hernando Cortez,* translated from the original Spanish for the first time. Another volume, *Mexico in 1842 . . . to which is added an account of Texas and Yucatan and of the Santa Fé Expedition,* followed, at a time when popular attention was being drawn to Texas and Mexico.

Folsom had political interests also. Though he was at first a Whig, he was elected in 1844 to the New York state Senate as a "Native American," and his friendship with President Taylor brought to him in 1850 an appointment as chargé d'affaires to the Netherlands. Three years in that office were followed by three years of travel before his return to New York, where, for the year 1858–59 he was editor of the *Historical Magazine.* His preface to volume II, modestly subscribed "G. F.," states that he sought no other reward than "the gratification of an old taste." His selection of a summer home in Brattleboro, Vt., identified him with that state as well as New York during the remainder of his life, and accounts for his active interest in the reorganization of the Vermont Historical Society. He was president of the American Ethnological Society in New York from 1859 until his death and was a member of the American Geographical and Statistical Society, the Deaf and Dumb Society, and the Union League Club. He died in Rome where he had gone for his health. In 1839 he married Margaret Cornelia Winthrop of New York.

[Helen S. Folsom, *In Memoriam* (1871); J. Chapman, *A Geneal. of the Folsom Family* (1882), not wholly reliable; M. R. Cabot, *Annals of Brattleboro,* vol. II (1922), 744–45; *Proc. Am. Antiquarian Soc.,* Apr. 28, 1869; remarks by Robt. C. Winthrop in the *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* vol. XI (1871); the *Christian Reg.,* July 24, 1869; *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.,* Oct. 1869; obituary in *N. Y. Tribune,* May 4, 1869.]

A. E. P.

**FOLSOM, NATHANIEL** (Sept. 18, 1726–May 26, 1790), soldier, politician, was born at Exeter, N. H., son of Jonathan and Anna (Ladd) Foster. Letters during his official career would indicate, by their grammar and spelling, that he enjoyed few educational advantages. In 1755, during the Crown Point expedition, he gained distinction by skilful handling of a New Hampshire company in the famous fight with the French and Indians under Baron Dieskau near Lake George. He seems to have acquired a permanent interest in military matters, for he held several commands in the militia during succeeding years while engaged in mercantile business at Exeter. In 1774 he attended the First Continental Congress and with his colleague, John Sullivan, signed "the Association." In the following year he was active in revolutionary proceedings in New Hampshire and a member of the Provincial Congress. On the outbreak of hostilities in Massachusetts he was placed in command of three regiments of New Hampshire militia. Detained in the state by administrative duties, however, he did not reach the scene of action until a few days after the battle of Bunker Hill. On June 30 he was placed in command of the entire state militia with the rank of major-general. He remained in the field for some months and his reports show the difficulties encountered in maintaining discipline during the siege of Boston. The doughty warrior, John Stark, proved especially troublesome and probably cost the participants Continental commis-

sions. Folsom finally returned to New Hampshire and performed useful services in equipping, organizing, and training soldiers to meet frequent requisitions throughout the war.

In addition to his military services he was a member of the Council in 1776 and of two constitutional conventions, served repeatedly in the legislature and on the Committee of Safety and was a judge in the court of common pleas. He was a delegate to the Continental Congress in 1777–78 and again for a brief period in 1779–80. In the former term he served on the treasury board and also on a special committee of three to confer with Washington on the condition of the army. A letter to President Meshech Weare of New Hampshire shows that he was dissatisfied with the Articles of Confederation and realized fully the divergent interests of Northern and Southern states due to the existence of slavery. While not one of the outstanding figures of Revolutionary history he ranks high among those who directed New Hampshire affairs in the dangerous transition from colony to state. He was twice married; first to Dorothy Smith and after her death in 1776, to Mrs. Mary (Sprague) Fisher.

[Brief sketches of Folsom are given by Henry M. Baker, "Nathaniel Folsom," in *Poc. N. H. Hist. Soc.*, IV (1906), 253–67; by Cyrus P. Bradley, "Memoir of Nathaniel Folsom," in *N. H. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, V (1837), 216–21; and by C. H. Bell in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, II (1878), no. 4. See also *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr. 1876; J. Chapman, *A Geneal. of the Folsom Family* (1882); and E. C. Burnett, *Letters of Members of the Cont. Cong.*, I–IV (1921–28), *passim*.]

W. A. R.

**FOLWELL, SAMUEL** (*c.* 1768–Nov. 26, 1813), miniature painter and engraver, spent the greater part of his professional life in Philadelphia. The year of his birth cannot be ascertained with certainty, for the burial records of Philadelphia give his age at death as forty-five years, while a notice of his death in *Poulson's American Daily Advertiser,* Nov. 27, 1813, described him as "a limner, in his forty-ninth year." It is recorded (Dunlap, *post,* III, 300) that he was in New York in 1790, and went to New England two years later, which is probably true, since there are in existence still some bookplates engraved for residents of New Hampshire in 1792. His name first appeared in the Philadelphia directory for 1793, in which he is described as "limner." For the following four years his name is absent from the directories, but in that for 1798 he is set down as "miniature painter and fancy hair worker." From that year until his death he evidently was a resident of Philadelphia, generally engaged in painting miniatures, and making a few engravings. Stauffer asserts that he was also a cutter of silhouettes, and that he conducted a school, which may have been carried on after his demise by his widow. "Very few examples of the engraved work of Folwell have been seen; and his two portraits are executed in a combination of aquatint and stipple which is rather pleasing in effect, though showing an unpractised hand" (Stauffer, *post,* I, 81). Folwell's chief claim to remembrance lies in his silhouette of George Washington, said to have been painted from life. Though executed at an unknown date, it has been several times followed more or less closely by other engravers, and has become a type, probably best seen in the frontispiece to Henry Wansey's *Journal of an Excursion to the United States* (Salisbury, 1796). He also engraved a bust of Washington. The artist died in Philadelphia and was buried in the German Presbyterian burial ground, which was long ago obliterated.

[D. M. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (2 vols., 1907); Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, *A Descriptive Cat. of an Exhibition of Early Engraving in Am.* (1904); Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (rev. ed. 1918), vol. III; Philadelphia directories. The date of death is taken from *Poulson's Am. Daily Advertiser,* Nov. 27, 1813. The burial records give Nov. 25.] J. J.

**FOLWELL, WILLIAM WATTS** (Feb. 14, 1833–Sept. 18, 1929), historian, first president of the University of Minnesota, was born on a farm in Romulus, N. Y., the son of Joanna (Bainbridge) and Thomas Jefferson Folwell. His ancestry was preponderantly English, with some admixture from the north of Ireland, tempered by long residence in Pennsylvania or Maryland before the migration to western New York. He found his parents sympathetic to his desire for education, and was prepared for college at academies at Nunda, Geneva, and Ovid, N. Y. His schooling was interrupted by two years of teaching in district schools, and each summer was spent at farm work. In the fall of 1854, he matriculated as a sophomore at Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y. Although he was out of residence a part of his senior year, teaching Greek and Latin at Ovid Academy, he was graduated in June 1857. During the following winter he continued to teach at Ovid, but in 1858 he returned to Hobart as "adjunct professor" of mathematics. He also taught Latin and Greek, and studied law. The next year he decided to abandon law for philology, and it was as a student of philology that he matriculated at the University of Berlin in the fall of 1860. News of the secession of South Carolina terminated his work at Berlin and sent him on a long-projected tour of Europe, which he was disinclined to put off

longer, as he expected in the event of war to return to the United States. He reached home in October 1861, and in January 1862 was commissioned first lieutenant in the 50th New York Volunteer Infantry—later the 50th New York Engineers. He served throughout the war in the Army of the Potomac building bridges and fortifications, and at the end of the war he had reached the rank of major—lieutenant-colonel by brevet.

On Mar. 13, 1863, Folwell married Sarah Hubbard Heywood of Buffalo, N. Y., and in 1865 he removed to the small settlement of Venice, Ohio, near Sandusky, to enter the merchant milling business owned by his father-in-law. In 1868 he went to Kenyon College as professor of mathematics and civil engineering, and in 1869 he became president of the incipient University of Minnesota. In this position he proved to be ahead of his times. He advocated and tried to put into practise a junior college system; he initiated the movement for state aid to education in order that high schools might be encouraged to prepare students for the university; he instituted a winter short course of lectures for farmers; and he proposed the removal of the university from its original small urban campus to an ample suburban life. He had difficulties, however, with a board of regents which considered itself charged with the details of university management and looked upon the president as its factotum. After fifteen years of his presidency the friction still remained. Folwell was apparently not sufficiently politic for the position, and he resigned, continuing his librarianship and the congenial professorship of political science, and making way for the coming of Cyrus Northrop as president of the university. It is characteristic of Folwell that he became a sincere friend and admirer of his successor. In 1919 he was given the title of president-emeritus of the university and in 1925 he was honored with the only LL.D. degree ever conferred by that institution. A volume of his *University Addresses* was published at Minneapolis in 1909.

Besides serving the university as president, professor, and librarian, Folwell took the lead in establishing the Minnesota Geological and Natural History Survey in 1872, aided in founding the Minneapolis Society of Fine Arts and served as its president from 1883 to 1888, served on the Minneapolis park commission from 1889 to 1907 and as its president from 1895 to 1903, and was a member of the state board of charities and corrections from 1896 to 1902. He was president of the Minnesota Historical Society from 1924 to 1927, devoting much time and energy to its work



despite his advanced age, and retired with the title of president-emeritus. After his retirement from the university in 1907 he set himself to write a comprehensive history of Minnesota. He had prepared for the American Commonwealths Series, *Minnesota, the North Star State* (1908), and while so doing had acquired not only much material unusable in so short a volume but also the desire to continue work in the field. The result was a critical and comprehensive *History of Minnesota* based on extensive research in the original sources. Rejecting a liberal offer from a commercial publisher, Folwell determined to give the work to the people through the Minnesota Historical Society, and it was published by that institution in four volumes from 1921 to 1930. A few weeks before his death he completed a volume of interesting reminiscences.

In his later years, Folwell maintained his eminent position in the community which he had helped to develop. He was friend and counselor to leaders of its civic and economic life, and his influence was sought by proponents of plans for civic advancement. Kindly, urbane, tolerant, and liberal, he brought an enlightened and cultured mind to the consideration of community problems. In person, he was slight of build, with an erect carriage, keen dark eyes, and an old-world courtliness of manner. His greatest charm was his whimsicality, a humorous originality of thought and speech which even in his ninety-sixth year bore witness to his critical faculties and intellectual detachment.

[An extensive collection of Folwell Papers, including correspondence, diaries, notes, and a copy of the reminiscences, is in the possession of the Minnesota Historical Society. An outline of Folwell's career is in *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29.] S.J.B.

**FONDA, JOHN H.** (*c.* 1797–*c.* 1868), frontiersman, was born in Watervliet, Albany County, N. Y. The only source of information regarding him is the series of his dictated reminiscences, published, with a brief editorial note, in the *Prairie du Chien Courier* in 1858, and republished in the *Collections* of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin. After considerable schooling Fonda was put in a lawyer's office, where he remained two years. The lure of the West claimed him, however, and with a small party he started, probably in the spring of 1819, for Texas. Near the site of Fort Towson, Okla., established five years later, he parted from his companions, and after various activities in that region decided on a journey to Santa Fé. With two other men he set out upon his trek in the spring of 1823. A considerable part of the route was probably then first traversed by American white men (*Southwestern Historical Quarterly,*

July 1919). Arriving in Santa Fé, he went on to Taos, where he wintered.

By October 1824 he had returned from the Southwest and was in St. Louis, where for a year he worked as a mason and bricklayer. In the fall of 1825 he started by steamboat up the Mississippi, but at the mouth of the Illinois debarked and with five companions set out for the little settlement of Chicago at Fort Dearborn. From Chicago he went by boat to Juneau's trading house (Milwaukee) and then to Fort Howard and the Green Bay settlement. In the winter of 1827–28, as a dispatch-bearer, he made the hazardous journey to Fort Dearborn and back in the creditable time of a little more than two months. He might have continued in this service, but preferred to move on. He next appears, in the summer of 1828, at Fort Crawford (Prairie du Chien) where, in the following April, he enlisted as a soldier. Zachary Taylor, who became the commandant in July, seems to have regarded him highly, and he became a corporal and later a quartermaster's sergeant; but he fell ill, and at the end of two years' service obtained his discharge. In the following year he enlisted for the Black Hawk War and was on board the *Warrior* when it aided in the destruction of the Sauk chief's band at the mouth of the Bad Axe.

Fonda must have made journeys not recorded in his reminiscences. He says that he had been "over about every one of the States and Territories." Twelve years of wandering seem to have satisfied him, for he then obtained a land warrant for his services as a volunteer, married Sophia Gallerno (Sept. 4, 1834), and settled down. His subsequent history is that of a respected citizen of Prairie du Chien, successively elected to the offices of constable, coroner, and justice of the peace, and a genial raconteur of interesting narratives. His reminiscences, though sometimes faulty as to fact, are vivaciously and dramatically told.

[John H. Fonda, "Early Reminiscences of Wis.," *Wis. Hist. Colls.*, vol. V (1868); Cardinal Goodwin, "John H. Fonda's Explorations in the Southwest," *Southwestern Hist. Quart.*, July 1919; additional information supplied by W. E. Martner, Prairie du Chien, Wis.]

W.J.G.

**FONT, PEDRO** (d. Sept. 6, 1781), Franciscan missionary in charge of the Indian mission of San José de los Pimas, Sonora, Mexico, had gained such a reputation as a man of learning and cartographer, by the year 1774, that when Capt. Juan Bautista de Anza [*q.v.*] was sent on a second expedition from his Sonora presidio, San Ignacio de Tubac, in order to establish a mission and presidio on the Bay of San Francisco, he was directed to accompany the expedition "on all the journey, so that as one skilled in these matters, [he] may observe latitudes." On Jan. 4, 1776, the expedition reached San Gabriel (near the present Los Angeles), and on Feb. 21, with Father Font in attendance, set out northward along the California coast. On Mar. 10, the expedition reached Monterey and here, at the mission of San Carlos Borromeo, Father Font was entertained by Fathers Junípero Serra, Francisco Palou and Juan Crespí, in connection with whom he made observation of the sun's elevation. On Mar. 23, 1776, Anza with Father Font and eleven or twelve men left Monterey for San Francisco Bay. At sight of the port of San Francisco, the Father was overjoyed, hailing it as a "wonder of nature." It was the duty of Father Font to keep by graphometer and compass close tabulation of the course of the expedition, and this he did particularly with reference to the Bay of San Francisco. Toward the west he observed the Farallon Islands, the elevation of which he set down. Within the Bay he counted eight islands, four of which he sketched for his diary. He figured the latitude of the point at the entrance to the Bay (Fort Point) as 37° 49′ uncorrected, the actual latitude being about 37°47′. He took with him a record of observations by Father Crespí who had visited the region in 1774. Journals had been kept by both Fathers Crespí and Palou, and of these Father Font made use by studying them on the spot. Of the selection of a site for a presidio he wrote: "The commander decided to erect the holy cross on the extremity of the white cliff at the inner point of the entrance to the port, and we went there at eight o'clock in the morning. We ascended a small low hill, and then entered a table-land, entirely clear, of considerable extent, and flat, with a slight slope towards the port; it must be about half a league in width and a little more in length, and keeps narrowing until it ends in the white cliff. This table-land commands a most wonderful view, as from it a great part of the port is visible, with its islands, the entrance, and the ocean, as far as the eye can reach—even farther than the Farallones. The commander marked this table-land as the site of the new settlement, and the fort which is to be established at this port, for, from its being on a height it is so commanding that the entrance of the mouth of the port can be defended by musket-fire, and at the distance of a musket-shot there is water for the use of the people, that is, the spring or pond where we halted. I again examined the mouth of the port and its configuration with a graphometer, and attempted to survey it; the plan of it is the one I here set down" (Diario del P.

Font. John Nicholas Brown manuscript in the Library of Congress). On Apr. 4, 1776, the Anza expedition began its return south, and by June 2, the return had been accomplished. The diary of Father Font, as signed by him at Tubutama May 11, 1777, contains various carefully drawn maps, and in its completed form is a document of extreme interest and readability. It is perhaps the chief distinction of Father Font to have contributed to American history a graphic account of the expedition which resulted in the selection of what has proved to be the site of the city of San Francisco. The death of Father Font occurred at Pitíque, Sonora, Sept. 6, 1781.

[*The Anza Expedition of 1775–1776,* ed. by F. J. Teggart, in *Pub. of the Acad. of Pacific Coast Hist.*, vol. III, no. 1 (Mar. 1913); I. B. Richman, *San Francisco Bay and California in 1776,* with three maps and outline sketches drawn by Pedro Font (1911); Rev. Fr. Zephyrin Engelhardt, *Missions and Missionaries of Cal.*, vol. II (1912); C. E. Chapman, *The Founding of Spanish Cal.* (1916) and *A Hist. of Cal.—the Spanish Period* (1921); H. H. Bancroft, *Hist. of Cal.*, vol. I (1884).]

I.B.R.

**FOOT, SAMUEL AUGUSTUS** (Nov. 8, 1780–Sept. 15, 1846), representative, senator, governor of Connecticut, was born in Cheshire, Conn., the seventh child of John and Abigail Hall Foot. His father was a Yale graduate and minister of the Congregational church in Cheshire. Samuel proved to be a rather precocious child. Entering Yale at the age of thirteen, he graduated in 1797. For a few months after graduation, he read law in an office in Washington, Conn., and then attended the noted law school in Litchfield, Conn. Handicapped by a delicate constitution, he was so plagued by headaches that he was unable to continue his studies more than a few months. Abandoning the law, he moved from Litchfield to New Haven, and found employment in the shipping trade that centered around the famous Long Wharf. By 1803 he had built up a business of his own, trading chiefly with the West Indies. To strengthen his none too robust health, he took occasional voyages on his own vessels. When New England shipping was all but ruined by the Embargo and the War of 1812, Foot gave up the New Haven enterprise in 1813, and retired to his father's estate in Cheshire. For the remainder of his life he was a farmer and politician. He took an active part in the movement to secure a new state constitution, becoming one of the Tolerationists, as members of the reforming party were called. In terms of national party politics, Foot was an Anti-Federalist, or Republican. He was elected to the lower house of the state legislature in 1817, and again the following year. For two years thereafter he was a member of Congress from Connecticut. In 1822 and 1823 he was once more in the state Assembly, and then in Congress for another term. Returning to the Connecticut Assembly in 1825, he was chosen speaker. The following year he was elected United States senator, to succeed Henry W. Edwards. He gained unexpected publicity in the Senate by offering a resolution, on Dec. 29, 1829, instructing the committee on public lands to inquire into the expediency of limiting the sales of public lands (*Annals of Congress,* 21 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 3). It was this resolution which led to the famous Webster-Hayne debate. Upon the expiration of his senatorial term in 1833, Foot was elected a member of the House of Representatives, but he resigned his seat in 1834 to become governor of Connecticut. He was not reëlected and retired from politics, save for a single appearance in 1844, when, having changed his former party affiliations, he was a presidential elector on the Henry Clay ticket (*Hartford Daily Courant,* Nov. 4, 1844). He died at his home in Cheshire on Sept. 15, 1846, survived by his widow, Eudocia Hull, daughter of Gen. Andrew Hull of Cheshire, and three sons, one of whom, Andrew Hull Foote [*q.v.*], became a famous naval officer in the Civil War. Because of his shift in party affiliations, just before his death, obituary notices were markedly brief and apologetic. Though Samuel Augustus Foot, his father, and grandfather spelled the name without a final *e* (transcripts of records in the Connecticut State Library), their descendants have adopted the longer form.

[F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll.*, V (1911), 281–83; F. C. Norton, *The Governors of Conn.* (1905); Nathaniel Goodwin, *The Foote Family* (1849); E. E. Atwater, *Hist. of the City of New Haven* (1887); obituary notice in *New Haven Daily Register,* Sept. 16, 1846.]

J.M.M.

**FOOT, SOLOMON** (Nov. 19, 1802–Mar. 28, 1866), lawyer, politician, son of Solomon and Betsey (Crossett) Foot, was born at Cornwall, Vt. His father, a physician, died while he was still a child, but in spite of many difficulties and privations he secured an education, graduating at Middlebury College in 1826. For five years following graduation he engaged in teaching, most of the time as principal of Castleton Seminary, interrupted by one year (1827–28) as tutor at the University of Vermont. He studied law in the meantime, was admitted to the bar in 1831, and established himself in practise at Rutland. Though an able lawyer his early and long-continued activity in public affairs prevented his attaining real eminence at the bar. In 1833 he was elected to the legislature as representative

of Rutland. He was reëlected in 1835, 1837, 1838, and 1847, and in each of the last three terms served as speaker. In the latter capacity, declared Senator Poland, "he first displayed that almost wonderful aptitude and capacity as the presiding officer of a deliberative assembly, which afterward made him so celebrated throughout the nation" (*Congressional Globe,* 39 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 1908). He was a member of the constitutional convention of 1836 and prosecuting attorney of Rutland County from 1836 to 1842.

He was an active Whig and as such was elected to Congress in 1842, serving two terms until 1847 when he declined a renomination and returned to his legal practise. His service in the House was without special interest or distinction but he was strongly opposed to the Mexican policy of the administration and denounced the war which resulted. In 1850 he was elected to the United States Senate and served until his death sixteen years later, being at that time the senior member in point of continuous service. His opposition to the extension of slavery led him to join the new Republican organization when the Whig party finally disintegrated. During his first term in the Senate he also served for a year (1854–55) as president of the Brunswick & Florida Railroad Company, visiting England in connection with the sale of its securities and the purchase of material.

Foot was not distinguished as an orator and most of his remarks are brief and pointed interjections in the course of debate. His speech of Mar. 20, 1858, on the proposed admission of Kansas under the Lecompton Constitution (*Congressional Globe,* 35 Cong., 1 Sess., App., pp. 153–58) shows, however, that he was capable of sustained argument and close reasoning, had he wished to devote himself to long set addresses. It was as a presiding officer that he appears to have made the deepest impression on his contemporaries. He was president *pro tempore* throughout most of the Thirty-sixth Congress and all of the Thirty-seventh, besides being often called on to preside when the regular incumbents were not available. "He was perhaps more frequently called to the . . . chair than any other Senator," said J. B. Grinnell of Iowa, who also declares that his services had left a permanent impress on the parliamentary decorum and methods of the Senate (*Congressional Globe,* 39 Cong., 1 Sess., p. 1924). In parliamentary law, Charles Sumner testified, "he excelled and was master of us all." Fessenden, Reverdy Johnson, and others paid similar tribute to his fine presence, fairness, courage, and dignity in



the chair as well as to the personal qualities which made him one of the most popular members of the upper chamber. When his death was announced, the splenetic Gideon Welles, never given to flattery of his associates, and usually suspicious of senators in particular, wrote in his diary (*Diary of Gideon Welles,* 1911, II, 466) that he had been a firm friend of the Navy Department, was "*pater senatus* and much loved and respected." His most notable committee service was rendered as chairman of the committee on public buildings and grounds, in which capacity he was able, in spite of the stringency of the Civil War, to push forward the completion of the Capitol. Judged by occasional remarks in the course of debate on appropriation bills, he appears to have had certain ideals as to the future development of the government property in Washington not altogether common at that time. He was twice married: July 9, 1839, to Emily Fay; and Apr. 2, 1844, to Mary Ann (Hodges) Dana. He died in Washington, D. C.

[Geo. F. Edmunds, in *Addresses Delivered before the Vt. Hist. Soc., Oct. 16, 1866* (1866); N. Seaver, *A Discourse delivered at the Funeral of Hon. Solomon Foot* (1866); L. Matthews, *Hist. of the Town of Cornwall, Vt.* (1862); N. Goodwin, *The Foote Family* (1849); G. W. Benedict, in *Hours at Home* (N. Y.), July 1866; W. H. Crockett, *Vermont,* V (1923), 368–69; *Proc. Vt. Hist. Soc. for the Years 1919–1920* (1921); *Daily Morning Chronicle* (Washington, D. C.), Mar. 29, 30, Apr. 2, 1866; *Rutland Daily Herald,* Mar. 29–Apr. 2, 1866; *Burlington Times,* Mar. 31, Apr. 7, 1866; *Vt. Watchman & State Jour.* (Montpelier), Apr. 6, 1866.]

W.A.R.

**FOOTE, ANDREW HULL** (Sept. 12, 1806–June 26, 1863), naval officer, was born in New Haven, Conn., second son of Senator Samuel A. Foot [*q.v.*] and Eudocia Hull Foot. The son departed from family tradition and added an *e* to his name. In 1813 the family moved to Cheshire, Conn., where Andrew attended the Episcopal Academy of Connecticut. After a few months at West Point, June–December 1822, his fixed desire to enter the navy was gratified by his appointment, Dec. 4, as acting midshipman. The boy served first in the West Indies under Porter, then three years in the Pacific. A strong call to religion, during a Caribbean cruise in 1827, marked the beginning of the intense reforming spirit of his later years. After cruises in the Mediterranean and around the globe, 1837–41, and two years at the Philadelphia Naval Asylum, he was again in the Mediterranean as first lieutenant of the *Cumberland.* On this vessel he formed a temperance society, did away with the grog-tub, and made her the first temperance ship in the navy. His example and subsequent exertions were chiefly responsible for abolishment of the spirit ration, finally accomplished in 1862.

In command of the *Perry* on the African coast, 1849–51, he showed not only customary zeal in protecting American vessels against British search, but quite unusual energy against the slave-trade. His captures, and the book he wrote, *Africa and the American Flag* (1854), together with his articles and speeches (one published as *The African Squadron . . .*, 1855), figured considerably in arousing sentiment against the traffic. After five years ashore, including service on the efficiency board of 1855 which cut dead-wood from the service, he was in the Far East, 1856–58, in command of the sloop *Portsmouth*. As senior officer present at Canton, during hostilities between England and China, he commanded a party of 287 American seamen which, in punishment for attacks on our flag, stormed and demolished the four barrier forts below the city, with 176 guns and 5,000 defenders, Nov. 20–22, 1856 (see "Capture of the Barrier Forts," by E. N. McClellan, *Marine Corps Gazette*, September 1920). In charge of the Brooklyn Navy Yard at the outbreak of the Civil War, Foote had a reputation, not for great brilliance, but for rigid standards of duty and extraordinary persistence. These qualities were tried to the utmost during his command, from Aug. 26, 1861, of naval operations on the upper Mississippi. Though officered by the navy, his flotilla was under army control, and Foote, subject to orders, as he said, "from every brigadier," overcame incredible difficulties in getting his mortars and twelve gunboats completed, equipped, and manned. This he considered a greater accomplishment than his subsequent hard-fought battles in cooperation with the army at Fort Henry on the Tennessee River, Feb. 6, 1862, and at Fort Donelson on the Cumberland, Feb. 14, which broke the Confederate line of defense in northern Tennessee. At Fort Henry, with four ironclads and three wooden boats in lines abreast, he poured in a heavy fire at close range which forced surrender before the arrival of the army. It was characteristic of Foote's religious fervor, fondness for public speaking, and the touch of vanity in his nature, that on the Sunday after the battle he preached in a church at Cairo on the text, "Ye believe in God; believe also in me." At Donelson the enemy guns were placed much higher, and his seven vessels had to retire after a heavy bombardment, the fort surrendering to Grant next day. In the pilot-house of the *St. Louis*, the Commodore suffered slight wounds in the arm and foot. During the advance down the Mississippi in the next spring he operated more cautiously, realizing that his flotilla was the chief defense of the upper river. He sanctioned, however, the running of the batteries at Island No. 10 by the *Carondelet*, Apr. 4, and by the *Pittsburg* on the 6th, which hastened the surrender of the position a day later. Broken in health and still on crutches from his wound at Donelson, Foote had to leave the flotilla on May 9, turning it over to his old friend Charles Henry Davis [*q.v.*], though he retained nominal command until June 17. He was promoted rear admiral on July 16, and during the next winter was chief of the bureau of equipment and recruiting. Eager again for duty afloat, and always in high favor with his old schoolmate Secretary Welles, he was appointed, June 4, 1863, to succeed Du Pont in command of the squadron before Charleston. But he was then a sick man, and died of Bright's disease in New York on his way South. Foote was twice married: on June 22, 1828, to Caroline Flagg of Cheshire, who died in 1838, and on Jan. 27, 1842, to his second cousin Caroline Augusta Street of New Haven. A daughter by the first marriage and two sons by the second survived him. He was of medium stature, with keen black eyes and erect carriage. "He was not a man of striking personal appearance," writes his subordinate Walke, "but there was a sailor-like heartiness and frankness about him which made his company very desirable" (*Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, I, 360). In spite of nervousness and occasional petulance, he had a gentle, lovable nature, and he had also the drive and tenacity essential to successful command. "Foote had more of the bulldog," said Commodore C. R. P. Rodgers (J. M. Hoppin, *Life of Andrew Hull Foote*, 1874, p. 404), "than any man I ever knew."

[*Diary of Gideon Welles*, 3 vols. (1911); R. M. Thompson and R. Wainwright, eds., "Confidential Correspondence of Gustavus Vasa Fox," in *Pubs. of the Naval Hist. Soc.*, X (1919), pp. 3–57; C. H. Davis, *Life of Charles Henry Davis, Rear Admiral, U. S. N.* (1899); Nathaniel Goodwin, *The Foote Family* (1849); Foote Manuscripts, 20 vols. (1822–63), in Lib. of Cong.; *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, 4 vols. (1887–88); *Official Records* (*Navy*), XXII, XXIII, *passim*; *Hours at Home* (N. Y.), May 1865; *N. Y. Herald*, June 27, 1863.]

A. W.

**FOOTE, HENRY STUART** (Feb. 28, 1804–May 20, 1880), senator, governor of Mississippi, was born in Fauquier County, Va. His parents, Richard Helm Foote and Jane Stuart, were cousins and of English and Scotch ancestry. After graduating from Washington College, now Washington and Lee University, in 1819, Foote studied law and was admitted to the bar at Richmond in 1823. He soon moved to Tuscumbia, Ala., and then to Mississippi, where he lived at various times in Jackson, Natchez, Vicksburg, and Raymond, practising law and sometimes editing newspapers. As a criminal lawyer he is said

to have had no equal in Mississippi ("Proceedings of the Nashville Bar," *Daily American*, May 21, 1880). His first political move was an unsuccessful campaign for membership in the Mississippi constitutional convention of 1832. His reputation was increased by ably defending Jackson on the stump in 1835. In 1839 he resigned the office of United States surveyor-general south of Tennessee and entered the state legislature as representative of Hinds County. His interest in the independence of Texas is shown by a visit to that country in this same year, an interest which eventuated in his first book, *Texas and the Texans* (2 vols., 1841). In 1847 he was elected to the United States Senate, where he ardently supported the compromise measures of 1850. All the other Mississippi congressmen opposed these measures, particularly his colleague in the Senate, Jefferson Davis. Heated words passed, not only over the measures themselves, but over the question of the right of secession and the attitude of their constituents toward these questions (*Congressional Globe*, 31 Cong., 1 Sess.). The antagonism was personal as well as public, for three years earlier Foote and Davis had exchanged blows at their boarding house (Dunbar Rowland, *Jefferson Davis, Constitutionalist*, 1923, VII, 393 ff.). In view of the fact that the Mississippi legislature passed resolutions censuring Foote for advocating the compromise measures, his defeat of Davis for the governorship of that state in 1851 is surprising, and is a monument to his great ability as a stump speaker. His administration, 1853–54, was marked chiefly by the fierce struggle between the Union and state-rights factions, the latter being successful to the chagrin of Foote. Five days before the expiration of his term, Foote resigned the governorship and moved to California. He returned to Mississippi after four years, but his lack of harmony with the people of that section in regard to disunion soon led to his removal to Tennessee.

In view of his opposition to secession, Foote might be accused of inconsistency in entering the lower house of the Confederate Congress, but he was at least consistent in criticizing President Davis and his administration. When Lincoln's peace proposals were not accepted, Foote left Richmond in disgust, sent his resignation to the Confederate Congress, and after a brief incarceration by the Confederate authorities, entered Union territory. When his communications to Seward and Lincoln on the subject of terms of peace were coolly received, Foote departed for Europe. He might well be called the Vallandigham of the South. He attempted to justify his part in the Civil War and its preliminaries in his book, *The War of the Rebellion* (1866). In this work he vigorously opposed the idea that the war was an "Irrepressible Conflict." He also wrote *Casket of Reminiscences* (1874), a valuable and interesting commentary on many of Foote's prominent friends and opponents, and *Bench and Bar of the South and Southwest* (1876).

For a short time before his death, which occurred in Nashville, Tenn., he was superintendent of the United States Mint in New Orleans. He was twice married: first to Elizabeth Winters in Tuscumbia, Ala.; and after her death to Mrs. Rachel D. Smiley of Nashville, Tenn. In person, he was small, with a large, bald head. He was a charming conversationalist and an able public speaker but he too often indulged in personalities, a trait which resulted in four formal duels and other less formal encounters.

[In addition to Foote's writings, particularly his *Casket of Reminiscences*, and the references in the body of this sketch, brief notices of him may be found in Reuben Davis, *Recollections of Miss. and Mississippians* (1889); F. A. Montgomery, *Reminiscences of a Mississippian in Peace and War* (1901); Dunbar Rowland, *Mississippi* (1907); *Appletons' Annual Cyc.* (1880); *Miss. Official and Statistical Reg.* (1908); *Ibid.* (1917). His private letters and papers are apparently lost (*Miss. Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, V, 239), though the writer was permitted to examine a thirty-seven-page manuscript sketch of his life that is in the possession of Mrs. A. L. Bondurant, University, Miss., which was written shortly before his death, and was based on notes furnished by Foote for that purpose.] C. S. S.

**FOOTE, LUCIUS HARWOOD** (Apr. 10, 1826–June 4, 1913), lawyer, diplomat, was born at Winfield, N. Y., son of Lucius and Electa (Harwood) Foote. His father, a Congregational minister, held pastorates in New York, Ohio, Illinois, and Wisconsin. Young Lucius attended Knox College and Western Reserve but did not graduate from either. Because of a restless temperament he could not confine himself to the routine of school work. In 1853, the lure of the West led him to join a group of young men who were going overland to California. There he took up the study of law. He was admitted to the bar in 1856, and the same year began a four-year term as municipal judge of Sacramento. From 1861 to 1865 he was collector of the port of Sacramento, and in 1862 he married Rose Frost Carter of San Francisco. He was adjutant-general of California 1872–76 and in the latter year was a delegate to the Republican National Convention. On Mar. 3, 1879, "General" Foote, as he was known after having served as adjutant-general, was commissioned consul at Valparaiso, Chile. The American minister, Kilpatrick, having died Dec. 2, 1881, the son of Secretary of State Blaine was named chargé, but Foote was actually in charge of the legation from Mar. 22

to July 31, 1882. Early in August he returned home on leave. On Feb. 5, 1883, while still in the United States, he was sent to Aspinwall, Colombia, on a special consular mission. While he was on this mission, he was appointed to a more important charge. The treaty just negotiated between the United States and Korea (1882) called for the exchange of diplomatic representatives, and Foote, with the rank of envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary, was commissioned by President Arthur for the post (Feb. 27, 1883). With Mrs. Foote, he arrived in Korea May 13, the first minister from a Western power accredited to that country. The tension between Japan and China over Korea made the mission a difficult one. During the days of bloodshed which followed the *coup d'état* of December 1884, he was zealous in his efforts to protect foreigners. The Japanese government expressed appreciation for his "brave and humane conduct" during the revolt. Foote also received thanks from the Chinese government but there is no record of commendation from his own. He was notified on July 14, 1884, that Congress had reduced the rank of the post in Korea to that of minister resident and consul-general, with no change in salary. He was offered a commission in this capacity but he declined, stating that, "to these people, proud that the United States should have sent to them a Minister of the first rank, it is impossible to explain the reasons for the change without leaving the most unfortunate impressions." In reply the Department of State asked him to take his departure on leave, so that it would be unnecessary to explain. Leaving Chemulpo Jan. 19, 1885, he and Mrs. Foote returned to the United States by way of Tokio, where they were received by the Emperor.

As a result of the strain of these experiences in Korea, Mrs. Foote died soon after their return. Thereafter Foote did not reënter public life. In 1891 he was elected treasurer of the California Academy of Sciences and secretary of its Board of Trustees and to these positions he was reëlected each year until his death. During these years he took an active part in the affairs of the Bohemian Club of San Francisco, of which he was a charter member. He also published two volumes of poems, *On the Heights* (1897) and *The Wooing of the Rose and Other Poems* (1911). His associates remember him as a large man of distinguished bearing with a genial disposition and a pleasing personality.

[There is no biography of Foote. His letters and papers were destroyed in the San Francisco fire of 1906. The material for this sketch is derived from the archives of the Department of State, and from recollections of relatives and associates. See also Nathaniel Goodwin, *The Foote Family* (1849); O. T. Shuck, *Hist. of the Bench and Bar of Cal.* (1901); San Francisco *Call*, and *San Francisco Chronicle*, June 5, 1913. The statement in *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13, is inaccurate in many details.]

C. S.



**FOOTE, SAMUEL AUGUSTUS** [See Foot, Samuel Augustus, 1780–1846].

**FORAKER, JOSEPH BENSON** (July 5, 1846–May 10, 1917), governor of Ohio, United States senator, was born on a farm near the village of Rainsboro, Highland County, Ohio, the son of Thomas S. and Margaret (Reece) Foraker. On his father's side, Foraker was of English and Scotch-Irish descent, the forefathers of his paternal grandfather, John Fouracre, having emigrated to this country from Devonshire, England, while his paternal grandmother was of Scotch-Irish origin. In 1820 his paternal grandparents left their home on Bombay Hook Island, in Delaware Bay, for a farm near Rainsboro; and early in the same century his mother's family came from Virginia to Ohio and settled at Reece's Mills on the Rocky Fork of Paint Creek. When Foraker was only two years old his father bought a farm near Reece's Mills and at the same time acquired the flour and sawmills which his wife's grandfather had built on the mill-site. The next thirteen years of Foraker's life was spent on the farm at Reece's Mills. He performed the usual tasks that are the lot of a farmer boy; achieved a local reputation as an expert swimmer and good horseman; developed a fondness for fishing which he retained through life; and attended the district school during the winter months, and on Sundays the Methodist Episcopal Church of which his parents were devout and active members. As a boy Foraker displayed a lively interest in politics, a fondness for reading, especially war history, and an aptitude for declamation. When he was fifteen years old he went to Hillsboro to accept a clerical position in the office of his uncle who was auditor of Highland County. He remained there until July 14, 1862, when he enlisted in Company A, 89th Regiment, Ohio Volunteer Infantry. His regiment was assigned to the XIV Corps of the Army of the Cumberland, participated in the Chattanooga and Atlantic campaigns, and accompanied Gen. Sherman on his march to the sea and then through the Carolinas and thence to Washington for the Grand Review. Foraker served with his regiment in all these engagements except the battle of Chickamauga, when he was away on special duty. Enlisting as a private he was promoted on Aug. 26, 1862, to the rank of sergeant; advanced to first lieutenant, Mar. 24, 1864; and was brevetted captain, ranking from Mar. 19, 1865, "for efficient services during

the recent campaigns in Georgia and the Carolinas" (Foraker, *Notes of a Busy Life*, I, 71). Following the fall of Atlanta he was detailed for duty in the signal service and later was assigned as a signal officer to the staff of Gen. H. W. Slocum, whose aide-de-camp he had been; and on several occasions was selected for service that required courage and daring. He was highly commended for his bravery in carrying the news of the capture of Savannah to the United States fleet off the coast; and his bold ride as a messenger of Gen. Slocum in need of reinforcements at the battle of Bentonville (Mar. 19, 1865) attracted the attention of Gen. Sherman.

Foraker's war experiences made him appreciate more keenly the importance of an education; and in 1866, after a year at Salem Academy, he enrolled as a student in Ohio Wesleyan University. Two years later he transferred to Cornell and was a member of the first class graduated in 1869 from that institution. While a student at Ohio Wesleyan he began the study of law, and on Oct. 14, 1869, he was admitted to the bar and commenced to practise in Cincinnati. On Oct. 4, 1870, he married Julia Bundy, the daughter of H. S. Bundy of Jackson County, Ohio. His natural inclinations soon led him to enter politics, and from 1879 to 1882 he was judge of the superior court of Cincinnati. In 1883 he was nominated by the Republicans for governor on a platform favoring the taxation and regulation of the liquor traffic, but he was defeated by Judge George Hoadly because many former Republicans, disapproving of sumptuary legislation, deserted the party ranks. Two years later Foraker was elected governor, after a spirited campaign in which he demonstrated his skill as a debater in his discussions with Judge Hoadly, who was again his opponent. Foraker was reëlected in 1887 and nominated a fourth time in 1889, but was defeated. During his two administrations he secured the passage of much-needed legislation and proved himself a forceful executive in rigorously enforcing the law; but he also revealed a penchant for the dramatic and the sensational. He induced the legislature to pass a law taxing liquor which avoided the constitutional objections to previous enactments, secured the establishment of a state board of health, obtained the enactment of statutes providing for the appointment of bipartisan boards of elections and the registration of voters in the large cities, and improved the system of taxation by appointing tax assessors. On several occasions his actions as governor aroused much discussion. When in 1889 an organization of saloon keepers in Cincinnati boldly announced their intention of remaining

Foraker

open on Sundays in defiance of the law, he sent a letter to the mayor, ordering him to "smite every manifestation of such a spirit with a swift and heavy hand" (*Ibid.*, I, 414). Probably his most sensational utterance was in connection with President Cleveland's order of 1887, calling for the return of all captured battle-flags to their respective states. Foraker attracted national attention at this time by declaring: "No rebel flags will be surrendered while I am governor" (*Ibid.*, I, 242). This provoked his enemies to call him "Fire Alarm" and "Bloody Shirt" Foraker; but the popular response only whetted his zeal in appealing to the passions engendered by the war (*Ibid.*, I, 278).

Upon his retirement from the governorship he resumed the practise of law, but in 1896 he was elected senator from Ohio and reëlected in 1902. During his two terms he was recognized as one of the foremost constitutional lawyers in that body and one of the ablest leaders of his party, while his aggressive personal attacks on prominent men kept him constantly before the public. He was an early champion of the Cuban revolt, a strong defender of Admiral Schley in his controversy with Admiral Sampson, a supporter of President McKinley's Philippine policy, and he was primarily responsible for the organization of the civil government of Porto Rico. He consistently opposed President Roosevelt's policies, notably in the case of the admission of Oklahoma, Arizona, and New Mexico, the passage of the Hepburn Rate Bill (see the *Atlantic Monthly*, XCVIII, November 1906, 577–86), and the President's dismissal of an entire company of negro soldiers for alleged participation in a riot at Brownsville, Tex. During the presidential campaign of 1908 William R. Hearst published certain letters written by John D. Archbold, vice-president of the Standard Oil Company, which revealed that Senator Foraker had been in the company's employ while in office and had received $29,500. He maintained that the money was remuneration for his services as legal counsel for the company in Ohio, and denied that it was compensation for preventing pending national legislation deemed "vicious" by the Standard Oil Company. In addition to this $29,500, he accepted a loan of $50,000 from Archbold for the proposed purchase of the *Ohio State Journal*; the loan was repaid after the enterprise had been abandoned. The disclosures compelled him to retire from public life. In 1914 he attempted to return to politics and became a candidate for the Republican senatorial nomination but was defeated in the primaries by Warren G. Harding. This defeat convinced Foraker that his public

career was ended and he devoted his remaining years to the writing of his memoirs, in which he stated, looking back over his twelve years of service in the Senate, "I do not find an important vote or speech that I would recall if I had the power to do so" (*Ibid.*, II, 478).

Foraker was a conspicuous figure in every Republican National Convention from 1884 to 1904, and on three occasions he nominated Ohio candidates for the presidency (John Sherman, 1884; William McKinley, 1896 and 1900). Toward the close of his career he was on unfriendly terms with Mark Hanna (H. D. Croly, *Marcus Alonzo Hanna; His Life and Work*, 1912) and after the latter's death, he was the state leader of his party. His great skill as a stump orator made him an effective advocate; his solid legal attainments were generally respected; and while he was frequently engaged in bitter controversy with members of his party and by his opponents was considered a reactionary, none ever questioned his courage or fearlessness.

[Foraker's *Notes of a Busy Life* (2 vols., 1916) is an invaluable source for his career. It is carefully evaluated in the *Am. Hist. Rev.*, XXI (July 1916), 835–37, and in the *Polit. Sci. Quart.*, XXXI (Dec. 1916), 590–603. See also *Memorial to Jos. Benson Foraker* (1917); *Sketch of Jos. Benson Foraker* (1883; 2nd ed., 1885); *Who's Who in America*, 1916–17; *N. Y. Times*, May 11, 1917. For the Archbold-Foraker letters and the ensuing controversy, consult the *Cincinnati Enquirer*, Sept. 17–19, 21, 26, 1908; *Nation* (N. Y.), Sept. 24, Oct. 1, 1908; *Outlook*, Oct. 3, 1908; *World's Work*, Nov. 1908. A sketch of his administrations while governor may be found in E. O. Randall and D. J. Ryan, *Hist. of Ohio*, vol. IV (1912).] R.C.M.

**FORBES, EDWIN** (1839–Mar. 6, 1895), painter, etcher, writer, was born in New York City, the son of a carpenter, Joseph C. Forbes, and his wife Ann. He began the study of art at the age of eighteen, continuing after 1859 under the tutelage of Arthur F. Tait. At first he concentrated upon animal painting, but later extended his field to genre and landscape. In 1861 he was engaged to accompany the Army of the Potomac as staff artist for *Frank Leslie's Illustrated Newspaper* in which his sketches of camp life and battle-fields appeared throughout the Civil War. The habit of quick and trenchant drawing from life which he developed during his years at the front influenced all his later production, and the sketches themselves were his main stock in trade for the rest of his life. Upon his return to New York in 1865 the best of these, "Lull in the Fight," painted from a drawing of the Battle of the Wilderness, was exhibited at the National Academy in New York and at the Boston Athenæum. In 1876 copperplate etchings from his war sketches were published as *Life Studies of the Great Army*, and received an award at the Centennial Exposition in Philadelphia. The original prints were bought by Gen. William T. Sherman, and were placed in his office in the War Department in Washington. In 1884 a bill was introduced in Congress providing for the purchase and preservation in the government archives of the Forbes Historical Collection, which contained the original drawings made during the war, but the bill was defeated.

Forbes continued to draw upon his war experiences for illustrations for children's histories. He contributed ninety-six etchings to *Gen. William T. Sherman, his Life and Battles, Mostly in One Syllable Words* (1886), written by his wife, Ida B. Forbes; ninety-five to Josephine Pollard's *Our Naval Heroes in Words of Easy Syllables* (1886); and eighty-two to H. W. Pierson's *Life and Battles of Napoleon Bonaparte: In Words of One Syllable* (1887). These were hastily and crudely produced, and of an even merit with the texts which they illustrated. Eventually he wrote his own reminiscences, *Thirty Years After, An Artist's Story of the Great War* (1891), which were chatty and entertaining, but written solely as a vehicle for his remaining sketches.

Forbes was a member of the French Etching Club, and in 1877 was elected honorary member of the London Etching Club. He did not as a rule bite his own plates, and both his etchings and paintings are more interesting for the vigor of their drawing than for the nicety of their execution. A few years before his death he suffered a paralysis of his right side, and thereafter painted and wrote with his left hand. He died at his residence on Lenox Road, Flatbush, New York.

[*Cat. Forbes Hist. Art Coll.* (1881); C. E. Clement and Laurence Hutton, *Artists of the Nineteenth Century and their Works* (1899); H. T. Tuckerman, *Book of the Artists* (1867); James Laver, *A Hist. of British and Am. Etching* (1929); *N. Y. Herald, N. Y. Times, Boston Transcript*, Mar. 7, 1895.] C.W.P.

**FORBES, JOHN** (1710–Mar. 11, 1759), British officer, was a son of Col. John Forbes of Pitencrieff, Dunfermline, Fifeshire. "Though bred to the profession of physic," he chose in 1735 to purchase a cornetcy in the 2nd Royal North British Dragoons, the Scots Greys. The War of the Austrian Succession brought to his regiment six years of service on the Continent and great honor, and to himself rapid promotion and various staff positions. A lieutenant when the Greys reached Flanders, he became a captain and aide-de-camp to his colonel, Sir James Campbell, a year after Dettingen, and a major and deputy quartermaster-general after Fontenoy. In 1745 he was a lieutenant-colonel in the army, and in 1750 lieutenant-colonel of his regiment. In February 1757 he was given the colonelcy of the 17th Foot, and

accompanied his regiment to Halifax. His attachment to the Campbells and his staff experience assured him a place at Loudoun's table, and he served as adjutant-general until March 1758, continually offering valuable suggestions, and keeping the staff in good humor by a blunt and merry wit. The promotions of December 1757 made him a brigadier-general in America only, and Abercromby assigned him, at Pitt's orders, the command of the expedition against Fort Duquesne. His force consisted of Montgomery's Highlanders, a detachment of Royal Americans, and some five thousand provincials from Pennsylvania, Virginia, Maryland, and North Carolina. Forbes contended with the reluctance of the Pennsylvania Assembly and the absolute refusal of the Maryland Assembly to appropriate funds; the delayed arrival of his own train of artillery and his regulars; the "disagreements, constant jarring, and animosity among the troops of the various provinces"; the indifference of the inhabitants along the route, who were not eager to provide transportation; the impatience of his Cherokee allies, who withdrew early in the campaign; the suspicious attitude of the Western Indians; the rivalry of his own officers, among whom Bouquet and Grant were his chief supports; and the continual rainfall which turned a road constructed with much labor into a long morass. But in spite of these and a "thousand little obstacles," the army steadily penetrated into the wilderness, cut through Bedford and Ligonier, over Laurel Hill, the road which later became a highway of Western expansion, and at regular intervals built blockhouses which safeguarded communication with the East, and gave to this advance the character, not of a simple raid, but of a permanent conquest.

Throughout the entire campaign Forbes was troubled by the malady which finally caused his death. From September on he followed his advance parties in a hurdle slung between two horses, in which the least movement brought intense pain. Such suffering often caused explosions in his private letters, but in his actual relations with his army he preserved his plain, democratic manners and his wise discretion, and animated the whole force with his spirit. He fully appreciated the importance of winning the French Indians, and gave his complete approval to the negotiations of Christian Frederick Post. Not even the defeat of Grant's large skirmishing party at Loyalhanna prevented the eventual adherence of the Western Indians to the British. When finally a light column lay within striking distance of Fort Duquesne, the French garrison, deserted by the savages, evacuated the stronghold without firing a shot. On Nov. 25, five months after the expedition started, Forbes raised the British flag over the new "Pittsburgh." He was carried back to Philadelphia a dying man, "a spectacle the most shocking and deplorable," "looking like an emaciated old woman of eighty." His body was buried with military honors in the chancel of Christ Church.

[The best brief accounts of Forbes's life and character are the sketch in the *Dict. Nat. Biog., Supp.*, and the death notice in the *Pa. Gazette*, Mar. 15, 1759. Meager additional information of his European career is found in Edward Almack, *Hist. of the Second Dragoons, "Royal Scots Greys"* (1908); Duncan Warrand, *More Culloden Papers*, III (1927), 208; A. N. Campbell-Maclachlan, *Wm. Augustus, Duke of Cumberland* (1876). For his American career the chief collections are the Bouquet Papers in the British Museum, transcribed for the Canadian Archives; the Chatham Papers and departmental papers in the Public Record Office; the Loudoun and Abercromby Papers in the Henry E. Huntington Library and Art Gallery, San Marino, Cal.; and *The Writings of Geo. Washington*, ed., Ford, II (1889). A bibliography of the expedition is in the *Monthly Bull. of the Carnegie Lib.*, June 1908; and Irene Stewart has compiled in a convenient form the *Letters of Gen. John Forbes relating to the Expedition against Fort Duquesne in 1758* (1927). See also A. B. Hulbert, *Historic Highways of America*, vol. V (1903); and Francis Parkman, *Montcalm and Wolfe* (1884), vol. II.] S. M. P.

**FORBES, JOHN** (d. Sept. 17, 1783), clergyman and magistrate in East Florida, was a native of Strathdon, Scotland. He was the son of Archibald Forbes of Deskrie (1713–1793), and according to family tradition, was born in 1740. He received his education at King's College in old Aberdeen, where he passed through the ordinary course of Greek, mathematics, and philosophy, and attended lectures in divinity. The University of Aberdeen conferred on him the degree of M.A. in the spring of 1763. He was then recommended to the bishops of the Church of England for ordination to the ministry. Florida having become a British possession, Parliament promptly made provision for four ministers of religion and two schoolmasters. John Forbes was the first clergyman licensed to officiate in East Florida; and on May 5, 1764, he gave the customary bond to be conveyed to his missionary field, St. Augustine, where the larger number of East Florida settlers had gathered. From all accounts he was conscientious in the discharge of his parochial duties; but his field was difficult and the territory quite extensive; besides, he was the only English clergyman in East Florida during most of the British occupation. Once a year he generally visited the most remote parts, "at a considerable expense and great fatigue." Advantageous offers to go elsewhere were refused. During his incumbency, a church was built at St. Augustine. On Feb. 2, 1769, he was married in Milton, Mass., to Dorothy Murray, daughter of James Murray.

Forbes

As one of the few educated men in the province, Forbes proved an asset to the local government. He was made a member of the colonial Council by Gov. James Grant; and this appointment was confirmed by the Privy Council, June 7, 1771. Subsequently he became sole judge surrogate of the court of vice-admiralty and assistant judge of the courts of common law in the province; and when Chief Justice William Drayton [*q.v.*] was suspended from office by Gov. Patrick Tonyn, Forbes was commissioned (Mar. 30, 1776) to act in his place till His Majesty's pleasure could be known. Drayton carried his appeal to London in person, and succeeded in becoming reinstated. The friction between him and Gov. Tonyn was soon renewed; and in December 1777, Drayton was suspended a second time, and Forbes was again appointed in his place, but his appointment was not confirmed. In the several posts he occupied, he won the commendation of his governors, who wrote letters to the home office regarding his qualifications and integrity. When the growing intensity of the Revolutionary War involved the maintenance of a military force in St. Augustine, a regular army chaplain was assigned to the station; but Forbes officiated as his deputy. So far as his parish work was concerned, he never had a helper or substitute until the Rev. James Seymour, a Tory missionary who had left Augusta, Ga., sought refuge in Florida. In 1783, after nearly twenty years in the province, he returned to England on leave of absence, in bad health. He was the bearer to Lord North of a letter in behalf of the Florida Loyalists. He died in England, Sept. 17, 1783, leaving a widow and three sons: James Grant Forbes (1769–1826), John Murray Forbes (1771–1831) [*q.v.*], and Ralph Bennet Forbes (1773–1824). Among his grandsons were Robert Bennet Forbes (1804–1889) and John Murray Forbes (1813–1898) [*qq.v.*].

[A. Forbes, *Memorials of the Family of Forbes of Forbesville* (1905); S. F. Hughes, ed., *Letters and Recollections of John Murray Forbes* (2 vols., 1899); N. M. Tiffany, ed., *Letters of Jas. Murray, Loyalist* (1901); W. H. Siebert, *Loyalists in East Fla., 1774 to 1785* (2 vols., 1929); *Acts of the Privy Council*, Col. Ser., vol. V (1912); E. L. Pennington, "John Forbes," in *Florida Hist. Quart.*, VIII, 164–68, January 1930. Documents bearing on Forbes's university work are among the MSS. of Fullham Palace, London. Letters from Forbes and correspondence relating to his work are in the Public Record Office: Colonial Office, Class 5, and in the Stevens Transcripts in the Lib. of Cong.] E. L. P.

**FORBES, JOHN** (1769–May 13, 1823), merchant, son of James and Sarah (Gordon) Forbes, was born in Scotland, probably in Aberdeenshire. Emigrating to America in his youth, he entered the employ of Panton, Leslie & Company, a trading firm operating on the Spanish-Indian frontier. William Panton, a Scottish Tory from Georgia, had obtained from the Spanish government a monopoly of the Creek trade, which he had built up under English rule, and later also a monopoly of the Cherokee, Chickasaw, and Choctaw trade, the firm being granted special privileges of trade and religious nonconformity. In 1792 Forbes was admitted to partnership, and given charge of the Mobile branch and the Choctaw and Cherokee trade, while Panton had headquarters at Pensacola. In the reorganization of the business following Panton's death Forbes became in 1804 the head of the new firm, John Forbes & Co. Notwithstanding his ability and energy, the fortunes of the house did not prosper. The causes were many: trade demoralization attendant upon the European wars; competition of rival merchants who attacked its monopoly and special privileges; and robberies committed by William Augustus Bowles [*q.v.*] and his Indian followers, all of which combined to cause losses estimated in 1804 at approximately $67,000, and after the War of 1812 at $100,000 more. To recoup these losses, Forbes by diplomacy and persistence secured in 1804 and 1811 large cessions of land from Spain and the Indians, part of which land, on the Appalachicola River, is known as the "Forbes purchase." This tract he sold in 1817 to Colin Mitchel and the title was subsequently confirmed by the United States Supreme Court after the cession of Florida to the United States (*Mitchel et al.* vs. *U. S.*, 9 *Peters*, 711).

About 1817 Forbes went to Cuba, and after a short stay in Havana, became a merchant in Matanzas. Panton, in a letter to Carondelet (Oct. 15, 1793), describes Forbes as "a young man of as much real ability and honour as I ever met with." His extant papers and his career show him to have been a man of keen business ability, resourcefulness, persistence, and determination. Besides his trading interests, he owned a sawmill in Alabama and a sugar plantation in Cuba. He left two daughters, born out of wedlock, who inherited the bulk of his $150,000 estate. His will shows that he lived and died a Catholic.

[*Am. State Papers: Indian Affairs*, I, II (1832–34), *Public Lands*, III–VI (1859–60); J. F. H. Claiborne, *Miss. as a Province, Territory and State* (1880); P. J. Hamilton, *Colonial Mobile* (1898); A. J. Pickett, *Hist. of Ala.* (2 vols., 1851); C. M. Brevard, *A Hist. of Fla.* (2 vols., 1924–25); W. H. Siebert, *Loyalists in East Fla.* (2 vols., 1929); R. L. Campbell, *Hist. Sketches of Colonial Fla.* (1892); East Fla. Papers in Lib. of Cong.] E. H. W.

**FORBES, JOHN MURRAY** (Aug. 13, 1771–June 14, 1831), lawyer, diplomat, was born at St. Augustine, Fla., the son of Rev. John Forbes [*q.v.*], the rector at that place, and Dorothy (Murray) Forbes of Milton, Mass. In 1773 his

mother took him to Massachusetts for his education. After studying under Dr. Samuel Kendall of Weston, he entered Harvard College, where he was a classmate and friend of John Quincy Adams and the youngest member of the class of 1787. In the same year, together with Adams, he took up the study of law at Newburyport. In January 1788 he attended some of the debates of the Massachusetts convention called to ratify the new Federal Constitution, and declared himself a stanch Federalist. He began the practise of law at Boston in 1794, but abandoned it in 1796 and went to Europe. In Paris, he was one of the signers of a testimonial to James Monroe upon the latter's recall. In 1801 he was appointed consul, residing at Hamburg and Copenhagen until about 1819, when he returned to the United States.

His most important public service dates from the following year, when the influence of John Quincy Adams, then secretary of state, obtained for him an appointment in a new field. The agent for the United States in both Chile and Buenos Aires, J. B. Prevost, seemed to Adams excessively sympathetic toward the revolutionists. Unable to discipline him, since he was President Monroe's protégé, Adams procured the appointment of Forbes to whichever of the two posts Prevost should choose to relinquish. Forbes thus went to South America at a critical period in an important capacity, for he was the secretary of state's most trusted agent in southern South America. In his instructions dated July 5, 1820, he was described as agent for commerce and seamen. Finding upon his arrival at Buenos Aires (October 1820) that Prevost had just been ordered out of the city by the revolutionary government, Forbes immediately took up his duties at that place. Throughout his residence he justified Adams's confidence in him, for, while he exhibited a brief enthusiasm for the Argentine statesman, Rivadavia, he showed no excessive partiality for the rest of the Argentinians. Upon the appointment of Caesar Rodney as minister, Forbes was commissioned as secretary of legation (Jan. 27, 1823); and when Rodney died in June 1824, he acted as chargé d'affaires from that time until he received his commission as chargé (dated Mar. 9, 1825). He continued in this capacity until his death. He retained until the end that "uncommon share of wit" and gaiety of temper, which his sober friend Adams deplored. Afflicted with the gout in his declining years, he is said to have chosen for his crest "a gouty foot couchant, crossed by two crutches rampant," with the motto: *"Toujours souffrant, jamais triste."*

His name is associated with some important developments in Hispanic-American relations. In 1821 he obtained an alteration of the policy of Buenos Aires in regard to privateering, and in 1822 a modification of its ordinance of maritime police. In the latter year he informed that government of the decision of the United States to recognize the South American republics. In 1823 he sought to gain its adherence to the principles of the Monroe Doctrine, and in subsequent years he resisted its attempt to interpret the Doctrine to suit its own convenience.

[Wm. R. Manning, *Dip. Corr. of the U. S. Concerning the Independence of the Latin-American Nations* (3 vols., 1925); *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, 2 ser., XVI (1902), 343, note 2; *Ibid.*, III (1886–87), 208–11; C. F. Adams, ed., *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams* (12 vols., 1874–77); A. K. Teele, *The Hist. of Milton, Mass., 1640 to 1887* (1887), pp. 567–68; F. L. Paxson, *The Independence of the So. Am. Republics* (2nd ed., 1916), 164–72; W. S. Robertson, "South America and the Monroe Doctrine, 1824–1828," in *Pol. Sci. Quart.*, Mar. 1915, 82–105; *Am. State Papers: Foreign Relations*, III (1832), 342–43; *Ibid., Commerce and Navigation*, I (1832), 820; F. J. Urrutia, *Los Estados Unidos de America y las Republicas Hispanoamericanas de 1810–1830* (Bogotá, 1918).]

A. P. W.

**FORBES, JOHN MURRAY** (Feb. 23, 1813–Oct. 12, 1898), a business man, and also an active participant in public affairs, was born in Bordeaux, France, the son of Ralph Bennet and Margaret Perkins Forbes of Boston, Mass., and grandson of Rev. John Forbes [*q.v.*], rector at St. Augustine in East Florida. At the age of fifteen he entered the counting-house of his uncles in Boston, and presently went to Canton, China, to represent them. During seven years in the Orient he gave evidence of unusual business abilities; and when he returned to America at the age of twenty-four, he had accumulated a fortune sufficient to enable him to take a position of importance in the commercial world. During the next nine years his investments on land and sea prospered, and in 1846 he turned his attention to railroad building and management in the West.

A group of capitalists, of whom he was the prime mover, purchased the unfinished Michigan Central Railroad from the State for $2,000,000, carried it to Lake Michigan, and then to Chicago, at the same time supplying funds for the connecting link between Detroit and Buffalo through Ontario. He next financed and put in operation the roads from Chicago to the Mississippi River and across Iowa, which formed the nucleus of what later became the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy system, and he was also responsible for the building of the Hannibal & St. Joseph Railroad in Missouri. During the period of the Civil War and the years immediately following, his attention was given chiefly to public affairs; but in consequence of the panic of 1873 and of the

necessity for effecting a change in the management of the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy, he became again the leading spirit in the direction of its affairs, occupying the position of president for two or three years, ending in 1881. He brought to the problems of railroad-building energy, courage, sound business judgment, integrity, and a broad view of the relation of the railroads to the public interest. Through the force of his personality the roads in which he was interested acquired a character and stability which distinguished them sharply from most of the railroads of that day.

His important public service began at the outset of the Civil War, when he became the most active helper of Gov. John A. Andrew in putting the State of Massachusetts on a war footing. Of his many activities perhaps the most distinctive was the help which he rendered in the organization of its negro regiments. At Washington his knowledge of maritime affairs made him particularly helpful to the Navy Department. In 1863 he was sent unofficially to England to purchase, if possible, the ships known as the Laird rams, which were then being built for the Confederacy; and later he himself, with a few others, built a cruiser, larger than the Confederate *Alabama,* which he intended to sell to the government at cost. He organized the Loyal Publication Society, an effective bureau for propaganda; he was constantly consulted by officials in all branches of the government; he was untiring in giving suggestions and practical help on many matters of moment. His intense desire that the war should be prosecuted vigorously made him chafe at Lincoln's "slowness"; and he often made use of friends who had Lincoln's ear to put before him policies, such as the arming of the blacks, which he believed essential to Northern success. He was known to be disinterested, and his influence and accomplishment were great in proportion; furthermore, he consistently maintained the policy of keeping himself in the background and letting the credit for his actions go to others. After the war he was for some years a member of the national executive committee of the Republican party; but in 1884, as a protest against the nomination of James G. Blaine, he left the party and voted for Cleveland.

On Feb. 8, 1834, Forbes was married to Sarah Hathaway of New Bedford. Of their six children the oldest son, William Hathaway, became president of the Bell Telephone Company. His summer home, from 1857, was the island of Naushon at the entrance of Buzzard's Bay, and he made the place memorable by the simple yet generous hospitality that he exercised and the distinguished men and women who were his guests. It is Forbes's quality as host that is the theme of Ralph Waldo Emerson's well-known characterization of him in *Letters and Social Aims* (Riverside Edition, p. 101). "Never was such force, good meaning, good sense, good action, combined with such domestic lovely behavior, such modesty and persistent preference for others. Wherever he moved he was the benefactor. It is of course that he should ride well, shoot well, sail well, keep house well, administer affairs well; but he was the best talker, also, in the company. . . . Yet I said to myself, How little this man suspects, with his sympathy for men and his respect for lettered and scientific people, that he is not likely, in any company, to meet a man superior to himself. And I think this is a good country that can bear such a creature as he is."

[Sarah Forbes Hughes, *Letters and Recollections of John Murray Forbes* (2 vols., 1899); Henry Greenleaf Pearson, *An American Railroad Builder, John Murray Forbes* (1911). Three volumes of *Letters* and three of *Reminiscences,* privately printed, contain abundant biographical details and reveal Forbes as a remarkably vigorous and racy writer.] H.G.P.

**FORBES, ROBERT BENNET** (Sept. 18, 1804–Nov. 23, 1889), sea-captain, China merchant, ship-owner, writer, was born in Jamaica Plain near Boston, Mass., the son of Ralph Bennet and Margaret (Perkins) Forbes, and brother of John Murray Forbes (1813–1898) [*q.v.*]. The family was of Scottish descent on both sides. His education included a year in France and three years at Milton Academy. Upon his father's failure in business, he entered the employ of his uncles, James and Thomas H. Perkins, outstanding Boston merchants whose interest in him contributed to his advancement. At thirteen years of age, he sailed before the mast in one of their ships for China. At twenty he received command of another Perkins ship for a three-years' voyage around the world. In 1830, when Perkins & Company, at Canton merged with Russell & Company, to form the most powerful American house in China, Forbes secured their lucrative storeship at Lintin. His New England conscience excused the opium trade as no worse than dealing in ardent spirits. He returned to Boston, married Rose Green Smith on Jan. 20, 1834, and was prospering as consignee of China cargoes for Russell & Company. Then, nearly ruined in the panic of 1837, he went out to Canton again to recoup his fortunes, arriving in time to play a prominent rôle in the outbreak of the Opium War. In March 1839, the Chinese commissioner demanded the destruction of all opium at Canton. Two months later, Forbes became head of Russell & Company, in place of John C. Green

who returned home. Determined to boycott the Canton hongs, the British merchants retired to Macao and Hong Kong, urging Forbes to join them. He says that he replied that "I had not come to China for my health or pleasure, and that I should remain at my post as long as I could sell a yard of goods or buy a pound of tea." As a result, the Americans did a rushing business, not only in their own goods but British as well, until their real blockade was clamped down in June 1840. Forbes returned to Boston, having made up all his losses, with a "handsome profit" to boot.

He was in China again as head of Russell & Company from 1849 to 1851, serving also as American and French vice-consul. By that time, he had entered the third state of his career, that of ship-owner. Altogether, he was connected with sixty-eight vessels as part owner or supervisor of construction. He invented the "Forbes rig" for sailing vessels, described as "a pole topmast fiddling abaft," later improved and patented by Howes. He was among the first to have faith in the screw propeller and iron hulls. In 1844–45, he was a principal owner of three-screw, auxiliary steamers, the *Midas* and *Edith,* pioneers in Chinese and Indian waters, and the *Massachusetts,* a transatlantic packet. A tug, named for him, had the first iron hull built in New England. He sent small iron steamers to China, California and South America on the decks of sailing vessels, an idea as ingenious as his earlier sending of ice to the Orient. He was always interested in humanitarian work. In 1847, he commanded the U. S. S. *Jamestown,* loaned to carry contributions from Boston to the Irish famine sufferers. He jumped into the sea to make daring rescues after a collision in 1849. He energetically supported coastal life-saving work, nautical training-ships and sailors' homes. During the Civil War, he organized a short-lived "Coast Guard" unit; supervised the construction of nine gunboats, some of which were with Farragut at New Orleans; assisted his brother in the English mission to check the Laird rams; and lost money building warships for the Union navy on his own account. He was always an enthusiastic sportsman. He was "commodore" of the first informal yacht club in Boston, and at sixty-five he took up fox hunting at Pau. He is said to have had unusual personal charm. His pictures show a man of medium height with a kindly face, less severe in its lines than his brother's. In his youth he was known as "Black Ben," but by thirty he was gray. During his last years, he was deaf and in poor health. He resided in Boston, with a summer home at Milton near-by. Until the end, he

Forbes

was a prolific writer in his many fields of interest. His writings, most of them pamphlets, include: *Remarks on China and the China Trade* (1844); *The Voyage of the Jamestown,* etc. (1874); *An Appeal to Merchants and Ship Owners, on the Subject of Seamen* (1854); *On the Establishment of a Line of Mail Steamers . . . to China* (1855); *Remarks on Ocean Steam Navigation* (1855); *Remarks on Magnetism and Local Attraction* (1875); *The Forbes Rig* (1862); *Means for Making the Highways of the Ocean more Safe* (1867); *Personal Reminiscences* (1876; 3rd ed., 1892); *The Lifeboat and other Life-saving Inventions* (1880); *New Rig for Steamers* (1883); *Notes on Navigation* (1884); *Loss of Life and Property in the Fisheries* (1884); and *Notes on Ships of the Past* (1888).

[The principal source is his own delightful volume of *Personal Reminiscences.* The third edition (1892) contains three portraits. He gives further autobiographical material in his *Notes on Navigation.* There are scattered references in *Letters and Recollections of John Murray Forbes,* ed., Sarah F. Hughes (2 vols., 1899); and memorial remarks in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* 2 ser., V (1889–90), 142–44.] R.G.A.

**FORBES, STEPHEN ALFRED** (May 29, 1844–Mar. 13, 1930), entomologist, naturalist, was the son of Isaac Sawyer and Agnes (Van Hoesen) Forbes. On his father's side he was of Scotch ancestry, the original American ancestor, Daniel Forbes, marrying Rebecca Perriman at Cambridge, Mass., in 1660. His mother was of Dutch and English origin, and two of her ancestors, John Howland and John Tilley, came over on the *Mayflower.* Stephen Alfred was born at Silver Creek, Ill. His father was a farmer, and died when Stephen was ten years old. An older brother, Henry, then twenty-one years old, had been independent since he was fourteen, working his way toward a college education, but on his father's death he abandoned his career, took the burden of his father's family on his shoulders, and supported and educated the children. He taught Stephen to read French, sent him to Beloit to prepare for college; and when the Civil War came he sold the farm and gave the proceeds (after the mortgage was paid) to his mother and sister for their support. Both brothers then joined the 7th Illinois Cavalry, Henry having retained enough money to buy horses for both. Stephen, enlisting at seventeen, was rapidly promoted, and at twenty became a captain in the regiment of which his brother ultimately became colonel. In 1862, while carrying dispatches, he was captured and held in a Confederate prison for four months. After liberation and three months in the hospital recuperating, he rejoined his regiment and served until the end

of the war. He had learned to read Italian and Spanish in addition to French, before the war, and studied Greek while in prison.

He was a born naturalist. His farm life as a boy and his open-air life in the army intensified his interest in nature. After the close of the war, he began at once the study of medicine, entering the Rush Medical College where he nearly completed the course. His biographers have not as yet given the reason for the radical change in his plans which caused him to abandon medicine at this late stage in his education; but the writer has been told by his son, that it was "because of a series of incidents having to do mainly with operations without the use of anesthetics which convinced him that he was not temperamentally adapted to medical practice." His scientific interests, however, had been thoroughly aroused, and for several years while he taught school in southern Illinois, he carried on studies in natural history. In 1872 through the interest and influence of Dr. George Vasey, the well-known botanist, he was made curator of the Museum of State Natural History at Normal, Ill., and three years later was made instructor in zoölogy at the normal school. In 1877 the Illinois State Museum was established at Springfield; and the museum at Normal, becoming the property of the state, was made the Illinois State Laboratory of Natural History. Forbes was made its director. During these years he had been publishing the results of his researches rather extensively, and had gone into a most interesting and important line of investigation, namely the food of birds and fishes. He studied intensively the food of the different species of fish inhabiting Illinois waters and the food of the different birds. This study, of course, kept him close to entomology, and in 1884 he was appointed professor of zoölogy and entomology in the University of Illinois. The State Laboratory of Natural History was transferred to the university and in 1917 was renamed the Illinois Natural History Survey. He retained his position as chief, and held it up to the time of his death. He was appointed state entomologist in 1882 and served until 1917, when the position was merged in the survey. He retired from his teaching position as an emeritus professor in 1921. He served as dean of the College of Science of the university from 1888 to 1905.

All through his career he had been publishing his writings actively. As early as 1895, Samuel Henshaw, in his *Bibliography of the more Important Contributions to American Economic Entomology* (Pt. IV A–K, nos. 661–762), listed 101 titles. It is said that his bibliography runs



to more than five hundred titles. And th range of these titles is extraordinary; they include papers on entomology, ornithology, limnology, ichthyology, ecology, and other phases of biology. All of his work was characterized by remarkable originality and depth of thought. He was the first writer and teacher in America to stress the study of ecology, and thus began a movement which has gained great headway. He published eighteen annual entomological reports, all of which have been models. He was the first and leading worker in America on hydrobiology. He studied the fresh-water organisms of the inland waters and was the first scientist to write on the fauna of the Great Lakes. His work on the food of fishes was pioneer work and has been of very great practical value. He was a charter member of the American Association of Economic Entomologists and served twice as its president. He was also a charter member of the Illinois Academy of Science; a member of the National Academy of Sciences and of the American Philosophical Society; and in 1928 was made an honorary member of the Fourth International Congress of Entomology. Indiana University gave him the degree of Ph.D., in 1884, on examination and presentation of a thesis. He married, on Dec. 25, 1873, Clara Shaw Gaston, whose death preceded his by only six months. A son, Dr. Ernest B. Forbes of State College, Pa., and three daughters survived him.

[An article in *Science*, Apr. 11, 1930, by Henry B. Ward; and another in *Jour. of Economic Entomology*, Apr. 1930, by Herbert Osborn. See also an autobiographical letter, written in 1923, printed in *Sci. Monthly* (N. Y.), May 1930; *Who's Who in America*, 1928–29; and F. C. Pierce, *Forbes and Forbush Geneal.* (1892).]

L. O. H.

**FORBUSH, EDWARD HOWE** (Apr. 24, 1858–Mar. 8, 1929), ornithologist, came from a long line of ancestors the earliest of whom emigrated from Scotland to Massachusetts about 1660. His parents, Leander Pomeroy Forbush and Ruth Hudson Carr, resided at the time of his birth in Quincy, Mass., where the father was principal of the Coddington School. From early childhood he had an all-absorbing interest in the great outdoors and spent much of his time watching the birds and quadrupeds, and later in hunting and trapping them. At fourteen he took up taxidermy and was soon skilful in the preparation of specimens. He left school at fifteen, determined to forego a college education, to be independent and self-supporting, and to prepare himself through his own initiative for what he seemed best fitted to do. At first he turned to collecting natural history specimens, visited Florida and British Columbia, and brought back a large

assortment of material. With a companion he established a "naturalists' exchange" where specimens and taxidermists' supplies could be procured; later he became curator and president of the Worcester, Mass., Natural History Society, and in this connection established one of the first summer natural history camps for boys. As the years passed he discovered, to use his own words, "that life, not death, would solve our riddles, and that it was more essential to preserve the living than the dead." This indeed became the keynote of his later life.

In 1891 when the imported gipsy-moth became a menace to shade and fruit trees in Massachusetts, a commission was appointed by the governor to effect its control. Forbush was made director of the work, and at once realized the seriousness of the situation and the need for drastic measures. From the beginning, however, his work was handicapped by the short-sighted policy of the legislature in refusing adequate appropriations, and in 1900, seeing nothing but failure ahead, he resigned. He had already accomplished much in keeping the pest in check and his report, *The Gypsy Moth* (1896), became the most important work on the subject.

During this period Forbush had never lost his interest in ornithology. His reports on birds as insect destroyers, published while carrying on the gipsy-moth campaign, attracted much attention and resulted in his appointment as ornithologist to the Board of Agriculture of Massachusetts. In this position he at once set about educating the public to the economic value of birds and the importance of their protection. He traveled and lectured in all parts of the state and published a series of reports which attracted wide attention. Though he also published two more pretentious volumes, *Useful Birds and their Protection* (1907), and *A History of the Game Birds, Wild-Fowl and Shore Birds* (1912), which exerted an influence beyond the borders of Massachusetts, his greatest contribution to ornithological literature was his *Birds of Massachusetts and Other New England States,* the first volume of which appeared in 1925, the second in 1927, while the third was published after his death. This work was in reality an ornithology of northeastern North America embodying the results of his life's studies, as well as quotations from the more important observations of others, while the beautiful illustrations from the brushes of Louis Agassiz Fuertes [*q.v.*], and Allan Brooks added greatly to the value of the work.

Forbush was a fellow of the American Ornithologists' Union and a member of its council, a founder and president of the Massachusetts Audubon Society, president of the Northeastern Bird Banding Association and the Federation of Bird Clubs of New England, and was associated with the work of the National Association of Audubon Societies. He married on June 28, 1882, Etta L. Hill of Upton, Mass.

[F. C. Pierce, *Forbes and Forbush Geneal.* (1892); John B. May, "Edward Howe Forbush: A Biog. Sketch," in *Proc. Boston Soc. of Nat. Hist.,* Apr. 1928; *Boston Transcript,* Mar. 8, 1929; personal acquaintance.]

W. S—e.



**FORCE, MANNING FERGUSON** (Dec. 17, 1824–May 8, 1899), soldier, jurist, author, was born in Washington, D. C., the son of Peter [*q.v.*] and Hannah (Evans) Force. His father's ancestors were French Huguenots who came to America upon the revocation of the Edict of Nantes; his mother's family was Welsh and emigrated to Pennsylvania. He prepared for West Point at a boarding school in Alexandria, Va., but a change in his plans caused him to go to Harvard, where he entered as a sophomore. In 1845 he received his bachelor's degree and three years later he graduated from law school. In January 1849 he removed to Cincinnati where he spent a year in the office of Walker & Kebler studying law. Upon his admission to the bar in 1850 he became one of the firm of Walker, Kebler & Force.

He practised law until the commencement of the Civil War, when he entered the volunteer service as major of the 20th Ohio Regiment. He was rapidly promoted to lieutenant-colonel and colonel of this regiment; took part in the capture of Fort Donelson and the battle of Pittsburg Landing; and campaigned with Gen. Grant in 1862–63 in southwestern Tennessee and northern Mississippi. When Gen. Sherman marched on Jackson during the siege of Vicksburg, Force was placed in command of the 2nd Brigade and "was employed to guard the road as far back as Clinton." After the siege of Vicksburg he received the XVII Corps gold medal of honor by award of a board of officers; and on Aug. 11, 1863, was appointed brigadier-general. During Gen. Sherman's Meridian and Atlanta campaigns, he commanded a brigade, which on July 21, 1864, attacked and carried a fortified hill in full view of Atlanta. The next day Gen. Hood endeavored to capture this hill and in the terrible battle which ensued, Force was shot through the upper part of his face. For a time it was thought the wound was mortal but on Oct. 22, he was able to report for duty although he carried throughout life the marks of the wound. In recognition of his "especial gallantry before Atlanta," he was brevetted major-general on Mar. 13, 1865. He commanded a division in Gen. Sherman's army

during the latter's march from Atlanta to Savannah and across the Carolinas. At the close of the war he was appointed commander of a military district in Mississippi where he remained until mustered out of the volunteer service on Jan. 11, 1866. Although he was tendered a civil office and appointed colonel of the 32nd Regular Infantry, he declined both offers.

He resumed the practise of law in Cincinnati and in 1866 was elected judge of the common pleas court. At the expiration of his term in 1871 he was reëlected. In the fall of 1876 he was nominated by the Republican party for Congress but was defeated. He was elected judge of the superior court of Cincinnati the following year and in 1882 received the nomination of both parties for that office and was unanimously reëlected. In 1887, owing to ill health, he declined a renomination. The following year he was appointed commandant of the Ohio Soldiers' and Sailors' Home of Sandusky, which position he held until his death. On May 13, 1874, he married Frances Dabney Horton, of Pomeroy, Ohio.

From his father Force inherited a fine literary taste and throughout his life he was deeply interested in historical and archeological studies. He was the author of *Pre-Historic Man. Darwinism and the Mound Builders* (1873); *From Fort Henry to Corinth* (1881); *Some Observations on the Letters of Amerigo Vespucci* (1885), and other works. He prepared the eighth edition of Walker's *Introduction to American Law* (1882), the third edition of Harris's *Principles of Criminal Law* (1885), and at the time of his death was engaged upon his *General Sherman*, published in 1899.

[James Landy, *Cincinnati Past and Present* (1872), pp. 309–14; H. Howe, *Hist. Colls. of Ohio*, I (1890), 570; *Memorial of Manning F. Force, Presented to the Literary Club of Cincinnati, May 26, 1899*; *Official Records (Army)*; *Circular No. 32*, series of 1899, Military Order of the Loyal Legion of the U. S., Commandery of the State of Ohio; *Ohio Arch. and Hist. Pubs.*, vol. IV (1896); Cincinnati *Commercial Tribune*, May 9, 1899.]

R. C. M.

**FORCE, PETER** (Nov. 26, 1790–Jan. 23, 1868), archivist, historian, son of William and Sarah Ferguson Force, was born near Passaic Falls, N. J. His boyhood was spent largely in New York, and in New York City he learned the printer's trade. During the War of 1812 he served in the army, entering as a private and coming out a lieutenant. In 1815 he moved to Washington, D. C., with his employer, to work on government-printing contracts. The Washington printers of his day were almost inevitably drawn into politics; Force was no exception to this rule. In 1822 he was elected to the city council, and later to the board of aldermen, serving



for a time as president of each of these bodies. A supporter of John Quincy Adams in the campaign of 1824, he naturally became a Whig when the new party was formed; in 1836 he was elected mayor of Washington, on the Whig ticket. Two years later he was reëlected, without opposition. In 1848 he again became a candidate for the same office, but this time he was badly beaten, standing lowest of the three candidates. In 1823 he established a semi-weekly newspaper, the *National Journal*, devoted to the candidacy of John Quincy Adams. In 1824, the campaign year, the paper became a daily, and continued as such until 1831. Although a Whig, Force seems to have taken his politics decently, as he did everything else, and to have avoided the bitter partisanship of some of his contemporaries. In this respect his political career was typical of his whole life. His relations with his associates were always pleasant. On various occasions he was accorded honors, perhaps not important in themselves, but suggestive of the esteem in which he was held. When he was only twenty-two years old, for example, he was chosen president of the New York Typographical Society. Later, in Washington, he became president of the National Institute for the Promotion of Science, and a member of the board of managers of the Washington National Monument Society. Never a jovial man, but on the contrary rather quiet and reserved, he was possessed of a pleasing geniality that attracted people to him.

Force is best known, however, not as a politician or newspaper man, but as a collector and editor, first of statistical, then of historical material. In 1820, and for the eight years following, he printed a register of the public offices; from 1820 to 1836, with the exception of a three-year interval when he was immersed in politics, he published the *National Calendar*, later *National Calendar and Annals of the United States*, an annual of historical and statistical information. Then he collected and published four volumes entitled: *Tracts and Other Papers, Relating Principally to the Origin, Settlement, and Progress of the Colonies in North America* (Washington, 1836–1846). These are reprints of rare pamphlets bearing on the early history of the colonies. His father, a soldier in the Revolution, seems to have inspired in him a lively interest in the history of that movement. As a result, the son devoted the greater part of his middle and later years to the collection of historical materials dealing with the colonial period and the Revolution. In this connection Force brought out his greatest work, the monumental volumes known as the *American Archives*. As originally planned, the

project involved the publication, in twenty or more folio volumes, of important original materials of American history from the seventeenth century through 1789—official documents of various kinds, legislative records, and private correspondence of special significance. The work was begun under contract with the Department of State, under authority of an act of Congress. The six volumes of Series Four were published from 1837 to 1846, and by 1853 three volumes of the Fifth Series had appeared. These nine covered the years 1774–1776. At that point the work suddenly stopped; Secretary of State Marcy refused to approve Force's plans for the completion of the undertaking, and no more volumes appeared.

Marcy's decision was a serious blow to Force, and to the cause of historical study in America. Basing his hope of reimbursement on a definite contract, sanctioned by Congress, Force had gone heavily into debt in order to secure his material. Now, at the age of sixty, he was faced with actual hardship. He might have sought relief through a petition to Congress, or by judicial process, but this he refused to do. Fortunately his situation was not as bad as it had at first seemed. In compiling the *Archives* he had procured an extraordinary mass of historical material, much of it extremely rare. Although he was inspired by the collector's urge to accumulate, he had shown good business judgment in his purchases. He found himself therefore in possession of a large library of considerable commercial value. This he finally sold to the Library of Congress for $100,000.

In addition to his work on the *Archives,* Force made some other contributions to American history. He was the first scholar to discover that the so-called Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence of 1775 was not what it purported to be. Then he published *The Declaration of Independence, or Notes on Lord Mahon's History of the American Declaration of Independence* (London, 1855). Occasionally, too, he printed a paper on a subject not directly related to his field: in 1852, *Grinnell Land: Remarks on the English Maps of Arctic Discoveries, in 1850 and 1851*; and in 1856, a "Record of Auroral Phenomena observed in the Higher Northern Latitudes" (*Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge,* Vol. VIII). These minor works perhaps are of interest merely to the antiquarian, but the *American Archives* are still indispensable to every student of the American Revolution.

[The best account is the short paper by A. R. Spofford, in the *Records of the Columbia Historical Society,* vol. II (1899), pp. 218–33. See also "Peter Force," in *Am. Hist. Record,* Jan. 1874; and G. W. Greene, "Col. Peter Force—the American Annalist" in *Mag. of Am. Hist.,* Apr. 1878. There are scattered references to him and to his work in W. B. Bryan, *History of the National Capitol* (2 vols., 1914–16) and in the *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams,* vols. VI, VII, and IX. The private papers of Force are in the Lib. of Cong.] R. V. H.



**FORD, DANIEL SHARP** (Apr. 5, 1822–Dec. 24, 1899), editor, publisher, philanthropist, was born in Cambridge, Mass. His father, Thomas Ford, a native of Coventry, England, came to the United States about 1800. Like his more distinguished son, Thomas Ford was a devout Christian, and a generous helper of the poor and unfortunate. He died when Daniel was only six months old, and the boy grew up in a family which, though never in actual poverty, had continually to contend with narrow circumstances. The son had only a common-school education, but he supplemented that with constant reading and careful practise in writing. He learned the trade of a printer, and was employed first as a compositor and later as a bookkeeper in the office of the *Watchman and Reflector,* a prosperous weekly Baptist journal, published in Boston. Before he was thirty he had, with borrowed capital, bought a share in the firm which published this paper, and in 1857 he and his partner, J. W. Olmstead, bought the *Youth's Companion,* which had been founded thirty years before by Nathaniel Willis. Not long afterward the firm dissolved partnership; Olmstead kept the *Watchman and Reflector,* apparently the more profitable of their publications, and Ford devoted the rest of his life to the editorial and business management of the *Youth's Companion.* Therein he displayed very unusual abilities. He took it, as a small Sunday-school paper for young children, and gradually developed it into the most popular and successful family journal in the country. Its circulation grew from seven thousand in 1857 to more than half a million copies at the time of Ford's death. Carefully avoiding the didactic tone in the stories and articles which he printed, he succeeded in establishing the paper as a powerful influence for high literary and moral standards. Yet so modest and self-effacing was the editor that the paper was published under the assumed firm-name of Perry Mason & Company, and it is said that his own name never appeared in any part of the paper until the article announcing his death was printed early in 1900.

Ford was always deeply interested in religion and was a generous helper of religious enterprises. For many years he supported the Ruggles Street Church, a Baptist missionary institution in the Roxbury district of Boston, and during the later years of his life he often gave, always unostentatiously, as much as $50,000 a year to church

and charitable work in Boston. At his death the larger part of his fortune of more than two million dollars was bequeathed to the various missionary and benevolent associations of the Baptist Church in New England. Almost a million dollars went to the Baptist Social Union of Boston, and with that money the Union built Ford Hall, the headquarters of various religious organizations, and the meeting place of the Ford Hall Forum, one of the early institutions for the helpful public discussion of modern social, economic, and religious problems in this country. Ford himself declared in his will that he wished his gift to stimulate the interest of the members of the Social Union "in the welfare of those who are dependent upon the returns from their daily toil for their livelihood," adding that the moment demanded closer personal relations between Christian business men and the American workingmen, because of the workingman's "religious indifference, his feverish unrest and his belief that business men and capital are his enemies. This attitude of mind," he concluded, "forbodes serious perils, and Christianity is the only influence that can change or modify them." Ford's wife was Sarah Upham, of Melrose, Mass.

[Brief biographical sketches of Ford's life appeared in the *Watchman*, Dec. 28, 1899; the *Youth's Companion*, Feb. 1, 1900; and the *Boston Transcript*, Dec. 26, 1899. See also J. L. Harbour, "How Ford Hall Came to be Built" in *Democracy in the Making* (1915), edited by Geo. W. Coleman.] H.S.C.

**FORD, GORDON LESTER** (Dec. 16, 1823–Nov. 14, 1891), lawyer, bibliophile, tracing his American ancestry from Andrew Ford, an Englishman who emigrated to Weymouth, Mass., in 1654, was the son of Lester and Eliza (Burnham) Ford. He was born at Lebanon, Conn. At the age of eleven he was sent to New York to enter the employ of his mother's brother, Gordon Burnham, a successful merchant. After this time his only schooling consisted of two terms in one of the city's night-schools. Even at that early age, he showed an innate aptitude for business and bookkeeping, and subsequently became accountant for the firm later well known as H. B. Claflin & Company. During these earlier years he lived with the family of the Quaker, John Gray, imbibing from such association many of the traits of that sect which he exhibited throughout his life. When still a young man, he entered the office of the United States marshal, studied law in his leisure moments, and was admitted to the New York County bar in 1850. He never seriously practised his profession, however, but devoted himself to business enterprise, in which he was uniformly successful. In 1852 he became president of the New London, Willimantic & Palmer Railroad, which position he held till 1856, when, soon after his marriage, he retired, and after a year or two in the suburbs of New York, made his home in Brooklyn. He speedily became identified with the leading institutions of that city. One of the earliest advocates of the abolition of slavery, he was largely instrumental in founding the Brooklyn *Union* in 1863. Appointed United States collector of internal revenue for the third collection district in 1869, he was removed in 1872 because he refused to allow political assessments for campaign purposes. Hitherto a stanch Republican, he now associated himself with the Liberal Republicans and was one of the Brooklyn delegates to the Cincinnati convention of May 1873, at which Horace Greeley was nominated for the presidency, though Ford himself actively supported Charles Francis Adams. In 1873 he became business manager of the *New York Tribune*, continuing in that position till 1881. Two years later he was elected president of the Brooklyn, Flatbush & Coney Island Railroad, but held the position for only a few months, retiring in order to devote himself to his private business affairs. He was heavily interested in Brooklyn commercial and financial institutions, particularly in the Peoples, Franklin and Hamilton Trust companies, and had with great prescience invested in real estate prior to the expansion of the city. From the first he associated himself with all movements aiming at the promotion of intellectual and artistic progress of the city. He was one of the founders of the Brooklyn Academy of Music and the Brooklyn Art Association, to both of which he gave much time and service. The Brooklyn Library, the Long Island Historical Society, and the Hamilton Club, organized in 1882 to take the place of the Hamilton Literary Association of Brooklyn, are also institutions with which he was intimately associated.

Throughout his life he was an enthusiastic, yet discriminating collector of books and manuscripts, relating principally to the history of America. His collection became the most valuable private library in America and before his death, the choicest collection of Americana in the world, containing 50,000 volumes, nearly 100,000 manuscripts, and autographic matter valued then at $100,000 (*Bulletin of the New York Public Library*, III, 1899, p. 52). He married Emily Ellsworth, daughter of Prof. William C. Fowler of Amherst, Mass., and grand-daughter of Noah Webster. Eight children were born to them, two of whom, Paul Leicester Ford [*q.v.*] and Worthington Chauncey Ford, inherited their father's literary and historical interests. Gordon Lester Ford's only literary production was a foreword

to *Websteriana, a Catalogue of Books by Noah Webster* (1882), though he superintended the publication of a number of volumes of original and previously unpublished material from his collection. In 1899 his entire library was presented to the New York Public Library by his sons in memory of their father.

[Obituary notice in *Brooklyn Daily Eagle*, Nov. 14, 1891; E. R. Ford, *Ford Geneal.* (1916), pp. 12–13; private information.] H.W.H.K.

**FORD, HENRY JONES** (Aug. 25, 1851–Aug. 29, 1925), editor, publicist, historian, came of English stock on his father's side and of Welsh stock on his mother's. He was born in Baltimore, Md., the son of Franklin and Anne Elizabeth (Jones) Ford. His father, a wholesale flour merchant, died when he was only nine, leaving the family in straitened circumstances. Henry attended the public schools in Baltimore until the age of seventeen, when he went to work in a wholesale dry-goods store, first as general utility boy, then as assistant bookkeeper. When he was barely twenty-one chance threw in his way a job on the *Baltimore American*, of which he became managing editor six years later. On Feb. 18, 1875, he married Bertha Batory of Howard County, Md. In 1879 he moved to New York to become editorial writer on the *Sun*, then under the management of Charles A. Dana, who exercised a formative influence upon the thought and style of the younger man. In 1883 he became city editor of the Baltimore *Sun*, and then in succession managing editor of the Pittsburgh *Commercial Gazette* (1885–95) and of the *Chronicle-Telegraph* (1895–1901), and finally editor of the *Pittsburgh Gazette* (1901–05).

The first of those writings on political history and government which brought him his reputation was *The Rise and Growth of American Politics; a Sketch of Constitutional Development* (1898), the outcome of reading and reflection "out of hours" through many years. For the first time this volume set forth the reciprocal action of party organization and governmental structure upon each other. As an editor he had come to realize the importance of the control of public expenditures, which involved the fundamental problem of the relation of executive and legislature in a constitutional government. To his mind the course of English constitutional history pointed to the only practical solution of this problem. The function of the executive was to govern; the rôle of the legislative to criticize and control. Yet as early as 1898 he discerned—what has since become manifest—signs of impaired efficiency in the British cabinet system, and he believed the presidency a much securer basis for democratic government if the essential principle of the British system could be recovered.

In 1906 he lectured in Johns Hopkins University and in the University of Pennsylvania. Two years later he was invited by President Woodrow Wilson of Princeton University to become professor of politics, his first academic post. When Wilson became governor of New Jersey he appointed Ford commissioner of banking and insurance (1912); and after he became president he sent him on a confidential mission to the Philippines, presumably to report on governmental conditions in those islands. In February President Wilson appointed him *ad-interim* member of the Interstate Commerce Commission. He served until May 1921 when he was replaced by an appointee named by President Harding. During this interval, in addition to conducting investigations in several important cases, he prepared a noteworthy decision on the subject of the Commission's power, under the Transportation Act of 1920, in relation to intrastate rates (*Rates, Fares, and Charges of New York Central Railroad Company*, 59 *I. C. C.*, 290), holding in effect that such rates were within the mandate to the Commission to prescribe a rate level which would enable the railroads to maintain an adequate and efficient service for the country at large. In 1922 the Supreme Court sustained this view (*Wisconsin Railroad Commission* vs. *Chicago, Burlington & Quincy Railroad Company*, 257 *U. S.*, 563).

During these years he published the following volumes: "The Evolution of Democracy: an Historical Sketch" (in *Problems in Modern Democracy*, 1901); *The Cost of Our National Government; a Study in Political Pathology* (1910), lectures on the Blumenthal Foundation at Columbia University; *The Scotch-Irish in America* (1915); *The Natural History of the State; an Introduction to Political Science* (1915); *Woodrow Wilson, the Man and His Work; a Biographical Study* (1916), primarily a campaign biography; *Washington and His Colleagues* (1918) and *The Cleveland Era* (1919), in The Chronicles of America Series; *Alexander Hamilton* (1920). He was also a frequent contributor to magazines; and some of these articles were published separately, notably "Darwinism in Politics and in Religion," which appeared serially in *The Living Church* (June to September 1909). His last work, *Representative Government*, published in 1924, like all of his writings, bears the stamp of a philosophical mind, richly stored with the harvest of years of reading. His death occurred at Blue Ridge Summit, Pa., after an ex-

tended illness. He was survived by his widow and four children.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; the present writer in the *Am. Pol. Sci. Rev.*, Nov. 1925, XIX, 813–16; data furnished by Mrs. Henry Jones Ford.] E.S.C.

**FORD, JACOB** (Feb. 10, 1738–Jan. 11, 1777), soldier, powder-maker, was the second son of Jacob and Hannah (Baldwin) Ford, of Morristown, N. J., and a grandson of John Ford who came from Duxbury, Mass., to Woodbridge, N. J., about 1701. His father, tavern-owner and iron-manufacturer, was long a county judge and built the oak-planked, ship-calked house which became Washington's headquarters. After attending the local school, the younger Jacob went into business. On Jan. 27, 1762, he married Theodosia Johnes by whom he had four sons and two daughters. By 1764 he had become the owner of the Middle Forge near Morristown and before 1770 he had bought 2,000 acres north of Denmark, building a forge and a house there, and somewhat later a stone mansion at Mt. Hope. But about 1773 he sold his property to John Jacob Faesch [*q.v.*], and moved to Morristown to look after his father's interests. Under the act passed by the Provincial Congress, June 3, 1775, he became colonel of militia in Morris County, commanding a battalion of over 800 officers and men.

The Fords were among "the first adventurers in blooming iron works," and cast shot and shell for Washington's army. By aid of a loan from the Provincial Congress of £2,000 on good security, without interest, they built early in 1776 their famous powder-mill in the thicket by the Whippanong River near the Morristown-Whippany road, not far from their own home. Col. Benoni Hathaway managed both mill and storage magazine, near the town green. Fieldpieces ambushed in Hathaway's yard commanded the approach. The mill produced "good powder and in useful quantities," one ton per month, at agreed prices, enabling the owners to repay the loan.

Ford did military service at Bergentown, the Helderbergs, and at Albany, earning the commendation of Robert Yates, who wrote on Oct. 28, 1776: "We are all much pleased with your activity and spirit" (Peter Force, *American Archives*, 5 ser., III, 1853, 579). He beat off British raids on Morristown so successfully and captured so much material, that Matthias Williamson wrote to Washington, Dec. 8, 1776, "it is chiefly owing to his zeal in the American cause, as well as his great influence with the people, that the appearance of defence at this post has been kept up" (*Ibid.*, pp. 1120, 1189). While repelling Leslie's brigade at Springfield, Dec. 17, 1776, he caught "mortal cold" in the "Mud Rounds"; and



at Morristown, Dec. 31, he fell from his horse on parade to die eleven days later of pneumonia. Washington ordered a military funeral with full honors, an unusual tribute for army contractors. On Dec. 18, 1795, the county court ordered half-pay for his widow from Jan. 10, 1777 (*Proceedings of the New Jersey Historical Society*, April 1917). He is buried beside his father, who died Jan. 19, 1777, in the first Presbyterian churchyard at Morristown, and his monument records an ability, character, and humanity in which those who knew him implicitly trusted.

[The Ford genealogy is in *N. Y. Geneal. and Biog. Record*, Apr. 1922. Local details are given in A. M. Sherman, *Historic Morristown* (1905), and in E. D. Halsey, *Hist. of the Washington Asso. of N. J.* (1891). See also J. M. Swank, *Hist. of the Manufacture of Iron in All Ages* (1892), p. 116; *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, Jan. 1870; Peter Force, *Am. Archives*, 5 ser., III (1853); and *N. J. Archives, Docs. Relating to Revolutionary Hist. of the State of N. J.*, I, 1776–77 (1901), which ontains extracts from American newspapers.]

W. L. W—y.

**FORD, JOHN BAPTISTE** (Nov. 17, 1811–May 1, 1903), inventor, river-captain, manufacturer, was born in Danville, Ky., the son of pioneer parents, Jonathan (?) and Margaret (Baptiste) Ford. He learned what he could of reading and writing at home, then became an apprentice to John Jackson, a near-by saddler, but when the latter did not permit him to go to school, he made his way to New Albany, Ind., and thence to Greenville, where he learned the trade. Later he bought his master's shop to which he added a grain, flour, and commission business. At the age of twenty, he married Mary, the daughter of Benjamin Bower, who had assisted him with his education. He then sold his saddle business and opened a general store in Greenville. Prospering in this he began the manufacture of kitchen cabinets and later feed-cutting boxes for farmers. Just prior to the Civil War he set up a foundry and rolling-mill with railroad and commercial iron as his products. While so engaged he saw the possibilities of steamboat building. During the Civil War he and his two sons built and sold river-boats, and operated a line of thirty-eight steamboats and flatboats which they captained. The fleet served both the North and South in a purely commercial way during the war, being always in danger of destruction from one or the other. This dangerous venture, however, proved to be financially successful. At this time he sold his iron business for $150,000 and embarked on the manufacture of plate glass. By his reading he had become interested in the plate-glass industry of Belgium and England. Writing to the *Scientific American*, he raised the question as to the possibility of making plate glass in America

The answer given him on all sides was discouraging. The cost of labor in the United States was said to be too high and raw materials too hard to secure. Despite this dark outlook, Ford obtained numerous glass formulae, engaged the services of expert workmen, and imported European machinery. Then, with his sons, he worked for ten years in a factory situated in New Albany, just across the river from Louisville, Ky. The depression following the Civil War, with the panic of 1873 as its climax, robbed the seventy-year old man of his fortune and he was forced to finance the undertaking with $30,000 obtained from the sale of an invention of a glass tube to New York interests. This tube was a rough glass sewer pipe which made the detection of stoppage easier. In addition he realized $20,000 as commission for the sale of Gen. Frémont's western holdings.

At the age of seventy-three Ford moved to Creighton, near Pittsburgh, and established the Ford Plate Glass Company. Successful from the beginning, this company soon occupied a number of plants, and Ford City became the "glass city." The industry earned for its owner a second great fortune. Later, when he entered one of the earliest of the great combines, he held with his sons a majority of the stock of the Pittsburgh Plate Glass Company, the Ford company being the largest unit. In this combination he was associated with John Pitcairn of the Pennsylvania Railroad Company who was the president. But in 1893 the Fords disagreed with Pitcairn on a question of policy and decided to sell their holdings. Thereafter, Edward Ford established his own glass-factory in Toledo, Ohio. In addition to his activities as a glass-manufacturer, the elder Ford established a large industry in Wyandotte, Mich., called the Michigan Alkali Company, the first American company to manufacture soda-ash, baking soda, and other important by-products. He also aided in bringing into utilization the gas deposits in the great Pittsburgh industrial district and himself conducted a successful pipe-line company.

Ford was a man of great vision, and was not afraid of change. In his lifetime he turned his hand to numerous enterprises, and was successful in nearly all of them. A friend of religion and learning, he built and equipped Methodist churches at Greenville, Ford City, and Wyandotte, as well as a Presbyterian church at the last-named place. He made liberal donations to Allegheny College, and at Tarentum he built and furnished a Young Men's Christian Association building and supplied it with an endowment. As a citizen he earned the highest regard of his associates. As an employer he enjoyed peaceful relations with his men during his whole career, and on the occasion of his eightieth birthday had the unusual honor of seeing a monument of himself erected by the employees of the Ford City plant. He was also awarded a medal and made an honorary member of the French Academy of Sciences.

[*Pittsburgh Chronicle Telegraph*, Nov. 18, 1901; the *News* (Jefferson, Ind.), Nov. 19, 1891; *Pittsburgh Press, Post*, and *Dispatch*, May 2, 1903; the *Commoner and Glassworker*, May 9, 16, 1903; and *Ford City*, a booklet privately printed by John N. McCue in 1917.]

A. I.

**FORD, JOHN THOMSON** (Apr. 16, 1829–Mar. 14, 1894), theatre manager, was the son of Elias and Anna (Greanor) Ford and was born in Baltimore. His ancestors were early Maryland settlers and some of them took part in the Revolutionary War. For a few years he attended public school in Baltimore and then became a clerk in his uncle's tobacco factory in Richmond. Not caring for this work, he became a book-seller. He then wrote a farce dealing with local matters, entitled *Richmond As It Is*, which was produced by a minstrel company called The Nightingale Serenaders. This farce met with not a little success; and George Kunkel, the owner and manager of the Serenaders, offered him a position with the organization. He accepted, and for several seasons traveled as business manager of this company throughout the United States and Canada.

In 1854, he assumed control of the Holliday Street Theatre, Baltimore, and this he managed for twenty-five years. In 1871, he built the Grand Opera House in that city; he also built three theatres in the city of Washington. His first theatre in Tenth Street was destroyed by fire and on the same site he built the theatre known as Ford's Theatre. He was the manager of this house at the time of the assassination of President Lincoln. Soon after this national tragedy he, together with his brother Harry Clay Ford, was incarcerated for thirty-nine days in the Old Capitol Prison. Since there was no evidence of their complicity in the crime, the brothers finally were fully exonerated and set free. The theatre was seized by the government and Ford was paid $100,000 for it by Congress. At the same time an order was issued prohibiting forever its use as a place of public amusement. On June 9, 1893, while five hundred government employees were at work, the front part of this building collapsed and twenty-eight persons were killed. It was soon after rebuilt. During his career, Ford also managed theatres in Alexandria, Va., Philadelphia, and Richmond. It was at the Richmond

Theatre, in 1857, that Edwin Booth, then under Ford's management, first met the lovely Mary Devlin whom he later married. Joseph Jefferson was then the stage manager and a member of the company of this theatre. Ford also managed a great number of traveling as well as resident companies which included the greatest stars and actors of his generation. He was honest and honorable in all his numerous business dealings. During the *Pinafore* craze, for example, he was the only American manager who paid Gilbert and Sullivan a royalty on the opera. This action prompted the authors, in presenting their next opera to America, to entrust their business affairs to him; and he leased the Fifth Avenue Theatre, New York, for the production of *The Pirates of Penzance*. For a period of forty years he was an active, prominent, and useful factor in civic life. He was connected with many banking and financial concerns, and his business advice was sought and relied on. He was president of the Union Railroad Company, member of the Board of Directors of the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad, vice-president of the West Baltimore Improvement Association, and trustee of numerous philanthropic institutions. In 1858, while serving as president of the city council, he was by force of circumstances made acting-mayor of the city of Baltimore and this position he filled with marked ability. His winning and gracious personality won him a host of friends. He died suddenly after an attack of the grippe, leaving a widow, Edith Branch Andrew Ford, who was the mother of eleven children.

[William Winter, *Life and Art of Jos. Jefferson* (1894); J. T. Scharf, *Hist. of Baltimore City and County* (1881); *Baltimore: Its Hist. and Its People*, II (1912), 145; Baltimore *Sun* and *N. Y. Tribune*, Mar. 15, 1894; private information.] R. D.

**FORD, PATRICK** (Apr. 12, 1835–Sept. 23, 1913), journalist, was born in Galway, Ireland, the son of Edward and Anne (Ford) Ford. His parents died when he was a child, and in 1842 he was brought to America by friends who settled in Boston. There he attended the public schools and the Latin School. He worked as a youngster in the newspaper office of William Lloyd Garrison, began his active career as a journalist in 1855, and in 1859–60 was editor and publisher of the Boston *Sunday Times*. During the Civil War, as a member of the 9th Massachusetts Regiment he took part in the charge at Fredericksburg. He was married in March 1863 to Odele McDonald. From 1844 to 1846 he lived in Charleston, S. C., and edited the *Charleston Gazette*, but in 1870, returning North, to New York, he founded a paper called the *Irish World*. For the rest of his life his chief interest seems to have been championing the cause of Ireland. He conceived that the plight of that land had been brought about almost entirely by English despotism, and as time went on he hated England more and more inexorably. In 1874 he was one of the founders of the Greenback Labor party. In 1880–81 he organized in the United States 2,500 branches of the Irish Land League, and raised and dispatched for its support at home over $300,000—a dole which he eventually doubled. He advocated complete Irish independence: Home Rule never seemed to him any more than a compromise, Gladstone nothing more than an opportunist. He thought that the peasants should for a while refuse to pay their rents, and that at length they should rise in concerted rebellion. In support of these ideas he published in 1881 *A Criminal History of the British Empire*—originally letters addressed to Gladstone in the *Irish World*, and in 1885, *The Irish Question and American Statesmen*. He was a sensational antagonist, whose methods could be justified only by the extreme provocation which in his own mind, at least, was too amply existent. For all his explosiveness, he was in a way effective. He was the means, it is said, of bringing thousands of Democrats in the presidential election of 1884 to desert their party and vote for Blaine, and Gladstone is reported to have said ruefully: "But for the work the *Irish World* is doing and the money it is sending across the ocean, there would be no agitation in Ireland" (Ford, *Criminal History*, Preface, ed. 1915). He continued editing his paper almost till the time of his death. He died at his home in Brooklyn.

[P. H. Bagenal, *The Am. Irish* (1882); *Who's Who in America*, 1912–13; *N. Y. Times*, Sept. 24, 1913. See also Ford, "The Irish Vote in the Pending Presidential Election," in *North Am. Rev.*, Aug. 1888.] J. D. W.

**FORD, PAUL LEICESTER** (Mar. 23, 1865–May 8, 1902), historian, novelist, was born in Brooklyn, the son of Gordon Lester Ford [*q.v.*] and Emily Ellsworth (Fowler) Ford, both of New England ancestry. An injury to the spine having dwarfed his growth, he was educated wholly by private tutors and his own omnivorous reading in the Clark Street home, where his father had gratified a scholarly taste by collecting one of the finest private libraries in America (now part of the New York Public Library). His brilliant and versatile mind early developed a love for study, especially in Americana; and with the encouragement of his father and his brother, Worthington C. Ford, he showed a precocious expertness in bibliographical activities.

The gift of a small press enabled him to print at the age of eleven *The Webster Genealogy, Compiled for Presentation only by Noah Webster, New Haven, 1836, with Notes and Corrections by his Great-Grandson, Paul Leicester Ford.* As his physical constitution triumphed over the suffering of his childhood, he largely mastered the treasures—pamphlets, manuscripts, and rare prints as well as books—stored in all parts of the house and especially in a large room more than fifty feet square at the rear. This library, the shelves orderly but the tables filled with "huge masses of books, pamphlets, papers, proof-sheets, and engravings in cataclysmic disorder," was one of the distinctions of Brooklyn, and the house a literary and social center.

From work in bibliographical research and editing rare materials, Ford progressed to more ambitious literary activities. Together with his father and his brother Worthington he formed the Historical Printing Club, which from time to time reprinted rare materials ultimately including fifteen volumes of *Winnowings in American History* (1890–91) edited by the two brothers. Other early productions were *Websteriana* (1882) a catalogue of Noah Webster's books in the Ford collection, and *Bibliotheca Chaunciana: A List of the Writings of Charles Chauncy* (1884). The centenary celebrations of post-revolutionary events helped turn his attention to a larger field, and at twenty-one he produced *Bibliotheca Hamiltoniana: A List of Books Written by or Relating to Alexander Hamilton, 1789–95*; *A List of Treasury Reports and Circulars Issued by Alexander Hamilton, 1789–95,* and *A List of Editions of the Federalist.* Thus fairly launched, he filled the next few years with scholarly publications which either made available material long lost to sight, such as his *Pamphlets on the Constitution of the United States, Published During its Discussion by the People, 1787–88* (1888), or offered a guide through historical thickets, as in his *Franklin Bibliography* and his *Check-List of American Magazines Printed in the Eighteenth Century* (1889). The appeal of all these publications was to learned circles, but he showed a taste for more popular topics in *The Ideals of the Republic: or, Great Words from Great Americans* and in his essay on *Who Was the Mother of Franklin's Son* (1889). His growing reputation as a scholar led the Historical Society of Pennsylvania to invite him to edit the writings of John Dickinson, of which the first volume appeared in 1895. A full list of his productions would be tiresome. The energy which later impressed his friends was now fully evident, but there was no carelessness or haste, his power of sustained effort being matched by his willingness to take minute pains.

Ford's versatility, the fact that fortunate inheritance gave him complete leisure, and a certain restlessness of temper, enabled him at a little past twenty-five to undertake successfully an astonishing number of labors. He launched into fiction in 1894 with *The Honorable Peter Stirling, and What People Thought of Him,* a study of political life based partly on observations made during an unsuccessful attempt to enter politics in the first ward in Brooklyn, and a book which, after failing temporarily to obtain notice, was lifted to best-seller rank by a popular impression that the picture of the hero was drawn from President Cleveland. This Ford denied, saying that the character was suggested by several public men. Though ill-constructed and sentimental, the novel offered truthful glimpses of municipal and state politics. Ford was meanwhile editing his collection of *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson* (10 vols.), of which the first volume appeared in 1892. For this he made extensive studies in the French foreign office, the archives in Washington, collections of state historical societies, and the private papers of many of Jefferson's contemporaries. The edition, with its critical and explanatory notes, still holds its place as the best yet made. He was still reprinting and editing little-known historical materials, such as the *Essays on the Constitution of the United States, Published 1787–88,* and the *Writings of Christopher Columbus Descriptive of the Discovery and Occupation of the New World* (1892). Moreover, he was about to venture into biography. In 1896 appeared the most popular book on Washington since Weems, his *The True George Washington,* a collection of informal essays on various aspects of the man, which succeeded in humanizing Washington without detracting from his greatness or dignity. It was based upon research in various special collections, notably the William F. Havemeyer library and the state department archives, and owed much to Worthington C. Ford, editor of Washington's writings. It soon passed through nearly a score of editions and has probably done more to furnish a correct view of Washington than any other single work.

In the last five years of Ford's life his literary pursuits became even more multifarious, while he successfully combined the rôles of popular novelist, historical scholar, and bibliopole. His *Janice Meredith: A Story of the American Revolution* (1899), an adroit combination of history and romance, owed part of its inspiration to his own study and part to S. Weir Mitchell's earlier suc-

cess, *Hugh Wynne, Free Quaker*. It has marked faults of construction and lacks distinction of style, but it shows that the author was steeped in the literature of the time. Its portraits of Washington, Hamilton, and others, with their faults as well as virtues, are vividly done; and the wealth of semi-realistic detail makes it an enlightening study of the social life of the time. Ford lacked both the imagination and art to attain a high place as novelist, but even if considered merely as the brilliant diversion of a historian this book has more than ephemeral value. More than 200,000 copies having been sold, *Janice Meredith* was dramatized and staged (1901–02) with Mary Mannering in the chief rôle (T. A. Brown, *History of the New York Stage*, 1903, III, 365). In 1897 he had published *The New England Primer; A History of Its Origin and Development*; and in 1899 he brought out *The Many-Sided Franklin*, a book which essayed the same goal as the previous work on Washington but has since been largely superseded. Among his minor works of fiction were *The Great K. and A. Train-Robbery* (1897); *Wanted: A Match-Maker* (1900); and *Wanted: A Chaperon* (1902). Ford had also served as editor of the *Library Journal* from 1890 to 1893. He married in 1900 Mary Grace Kidder, of a prominent Brooklyn family, and removed to Manhattan, where at 37 East Seventy-seventh St. he had built a house. He was a noted diner-out, a member of various clubs, being especially interested in the Century, the Reform, and Grolier Clubs, and a lover of rural pleasures and exercise. While he was at the height of his activities, Ford's life was tragically terminated by his brother Malcolm W. Ford, once known as the best all-round amateur athlete in the United States, who, being disinherited and in financial difficulties, fatally shot Paul in his home and then killed himself.

[Private information; obituaries in the New York press, especially the *Evening Post* of May 9, 1902; Lindsay Swift, "Paul Leicester Ford at Home," the *Critic*, Nov. 1898; "Two American Writers," the *Outlook*, May 17, 1902; Arthur Bartlett Maurice, "Paul Leicester Ford," the *Bookman*, Feb. 1900.] A. N.

**FORD, THOMAS** (Dec. 5, 1800–Nov. 3, 1850), governor of Illinois, was born in Fayette County, Pa. His father was Robert Ford, of a Maryland family. His mother, Elizabeth, was the daughter of Hugh Logue and Isabella Delaney, both natives of Ireland. By a former marriage she was the mother of George Forquer, who by the time of his death in 1837 had risen to be the Jackson leader in Illinois. Robert Ford died in 1803, and the next year his widow removed first to St. Louis, then to New Design in the future Monroe County, Ill. Despite the straitened circumstances of the family, Thomas Ford managed to get a common-school education. Later his half-brother helped him to spend a year at Transylvania University; then with the encouragement of Daniel P. Cook he studied law. After a term of practise in Waterloo, Ill., he set up with Forquer in partnership at Edwardsville, 1825–29, and for the following six years, 1829–35, he served as state's attorney at Galena and Quincy, Ill. On Jan. 14, 1835, he was elected circuit judge by the state legislature, serving until Mar. 4, 1837, when he resigned to become judge of the Chicago municipal court. He was again elected circuit judge, Feb. 23, 1839. When the Democratic general assembly reorganized the state supreme court to swamp a Whig majority, he was elected to the court Feb. 15, 1841, and held office till he resigned to run for governor in 1842.

Ford's first recorded participation in politics was with his half-brother as henchman of Gov. Ninian Edwards. When Forquer, as Edwards's nominee, ran against Joseph Duncan for Congress in 1828, Ford contributed newspaper articles attacking Duncan (*Illinois Intelligencer*, July 5, 12, 19, 26, 1828). After the final overthrow of the Edwards faction, Ford apparently took no active part in politics until 1842. In the latter year the Whig and Democratic nominees for governor, Joseph Duncan and Adam W. Snyder, had long and vulnerable records to defend. The Democratic loss was therefore more apparent than real when Snyder died May 14, 1842. The leaders of the party turned to Ford, and after ten days' entreaty he consented to run. With no chance to gather ammunition for the election on Aug. 1, the Whigs lost to Ford by a vote of 39,020 to 46,507 (T. C. Pease, *Illinois Election Returns*, 1923, p. 126). The new governor faced a difficult situation. The state was burdened with a debt on which state taxes could not even pay the interest. In his history of Illinois Ford later stated with probable truth that his influence could have turned his party to the policy of repudiating the state debt (p. 292). Instead he secured the adoption of a scheme suggested by Justin Butterfield of Chicago by which the state was to make clear its willingness to shoulder its financial obligations to the extent of its ability, and foreign bondholders were to advance enough money to complete the Illinois and Michigan Canal, the tolls from which were to be applied to the liquidation of the debt. At the same time Ford interposed his influence to secure the peaceful termination of the state banks, which had fallen into difficulties.

In Ford's administration also a troublesome situation arose regarding the Mormon commu-

nity. The murder of Joseph and Hyrum Smith at Carthage was the signal for the outbreak of open hostilities between the Mormons and the Gentiles in western Illinois. Ford repeatedly called out the militia to preserve order, and maintained that expediency demanded the withdrawal of the Mormons from the state, though he was criticised for playing for Mormon votes (*Alton Telegraph*, Aug. 21, 1844). But despite any censure which he received, Ford had the right to look back on his term with satisfaction. He had saved the state's credit, and assured its integrity and future prosperity. At the end of his term, though he was asked to run against Douglas for the Senate, he resumed the practise of law at Peoria. Unfortunately he was overtaken by tuberculosis, and at his death in 1850 was virtually dependent on charity. His wife, Frances Hambaugh, whom he had married on June 12, 1828, was worn out by nursing him and died a few weeks before him. He left five children for whose financial benefit he had some time before begun his *History of Illinois from its Commencement as a State in 1818 to 1847*. It was finally published under the auspices of James Shields in 1854. It is an interesting work. It covers essentially the period of Ford's personal observation of Illinois politics, and though the narrative is a good commentary on American democracy, his characterizations of public men are overdrawn and often unfair.

[*The Hist. of Peoria County* (1902), edited by David McCulloch, contains a short autobiography found among Ford's papers after his death. See also "Governors' Letter-Books, 1840–1853," and C. M. Thompson, "A Study of the Administration of Gov. Thos. Ford," in *Ill. State Hist. Lib. Colls.*, VII (1911); Chas. Ballance, *Hist. of Peoria, Ill.* (1870); U. F. Linder, *Reminiscences of the Early Bench and Bar of Ill.* (1879); T. C. Pease, *The Frontier State* (1918); J. F. Snyder, in *Jour. of the Ill. State Hist. Soc.*, July 1910 and Apr. 1911; John Reynolds, eulogy of Ford in *Belleville Advocate*, Nov. 14, 1850.] T. C. P.

**FORDYCE, JOHN ADDISON** (Feb. 16, 1858–June 4, 1925), physician, was born in Guernsey County, Ohio, the son of John and Mary (Houseman) Fordyce, of Scotch and German ancestry, respectively. He was educated at Adrian College, Adrian, Mich., where he received the degree of B.A. in 1878. Graduating in medicine from Northwestern University Medical College in 1881, he served as interne for the next two years in the Cook County Hospital. From 1883 to 1886 he practised medicine in Hot Springs, Ark., then gave up his practise and for three years studied in Europe. The major part of his time there was devoted to the study of histo-pathology of the skin, under Kaposi, in Vienna, a part of his training which later profoundly influenced his writings. He was also a pupil of Lassar and of Behrend, and at the St. Louis Hospital, Paris, studied under Besnier, Vidal, and Fournier. In 1888 he received the degree of M.D. from the University of Berlin.

Returning to the United States in the same year Fordyce began the practise of medicine in New York City, specializing in dermatology and genito-urinary diseases. Within a few years his specialty became limited to dermatology and syphilology. From 1889 to 1893 he was instructor and lecturer in the New York Polyclinic Hospital. He was then appointed professor of dermatology in the Bellevue Hospital Medical College, where he remained for the next five years. In 1898, when New York University and Bellevue Hospital Medical College amalgamated, he accepted the position of professor of dermatology and syphilology in that institution. At this time (1898) the question arose whether patients having syphilis should be under the care of genito-urinary surgeons or of the dermatologists. More than to any one man, the credit is due to him for bringing clearly to the fore the advantages of having the treatment of syphilis in the hands of the dermatologist.

In 1912 Fordyce accepted an invitation to become professor of dermatology and syphilology at the College of Physicans and Surgeons of Columbia University and held that position until his death. Other hospital connections included that of visiting genito-urinary surgeon and later visiting dermatologist to the City Hospital from 1893 to 1925, and that of consulting dermatologist to the Presbyterian Hospital, Fifth Avenue Hospital, Woman's Hospital, New York Infirmary for Women and Children, and the Neurological Institute. He was also special consultant to the United States Public Health Service. He contributed well over one hundred authoritative articles to medical literature, and throughout his career was actively associated with American dermatological journals. As early as 1889 he became associated with Dr. P. A. Morrow, as editor of the *Journal of Cutaneous and Genito-urinary Diseases* (later the *Journal of Cutaneous Diseases, Including Syphilis*, and now the *Archives of Dermatology and Syphilology*). In 1892 he became sole editor of the journal, and though he resigned that position five years later, he retained a place on the editorial committee until 1920. In addition to his own research and writings, he did a great deal to stimulate original work by his contemporaries and associates. Probably one of his most important contributions to American medicine was his organization—in spite of numerous difficulties—of one of the best-known and best-equipped teaching centers of der-

matology in the United States. Prior to this time, a man wishing to specialize in dermatology was forced to seek the necessary knowledge in clinics abroad. Fordyce was an indefatigable worker, and his tact and forceful personality attracted a group of men who with him constituted a brilliant staff, known throughout the world. He had the quality of leadership and was especially kind and lenient to younger men. Many of his pupils and associates are now prominent and successful specialists. Over one hundred and fifty post-graduate students received their training under his supervision.

On June 29, 1886, Fordyce married Alice Dean Smith. They had two children. He was a member of the American Museum of Natural History, New York Zoölogical Society, New York Academy of Sciences, and the Metropolitan Museum or Art. Of several hobbies, photography, probably, interested him most. With Dr. George M. MacKee, he photographed and arranged one of the most comprehensive collections of pictures of dermatological diseases in existence. His death in 1925 followed an operation for appendicitis.

[George M. MacKee, "John Addison Fordyce, M.D.," in *Archives of Dermatol. and Syphilol.*, Aug. 1925; *Who's Who in America*, 1924–25; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Dict. of Am. Medic. Biog.* (1928); *N. Y. Times*, June 5, 1925.] G. M. L.

**FOREPAUGH, ADAM** (1831–Jan. 22, 1890), showman, at the age of nine was working in his father's meat-shop in Philadelphia. At twenty, having learned the butchering trade thoroughly, he set out for the West. In time he settled in Cincinnati and in a shop of his own earned the capital to establish a stage-line business in Philadelphia. This in turn he relinquished to deal in horses, which he had learned to judge expertly. He supplied the animals for some of the early horse-car lines of New York and also for a large number of the two hundred or more circuses which were roving over the United States. In 1862 he sold horses to the famous Johnny O'Brien Circus but at the end of the season had to take a share in the business in payment. He and O'Brien divided the show in 1864. O'Brien took the Great National Circus on the road, while Forepaugh remained in Philadelphia with the most famous of American clowns, Dan Rice, who had brought with him his trick horse, Excelsior, and his trained Burmese cattle. This attraction brought him such success that by 1868 he was giving Rice a thousand dollars a week and paying his expenses. He had already bought a very good menagerie belonging to Jerry Mabie, the first of the smaller circusmen whose shows he absorbed. In 1867 he made his first road tour under his own



name, and from this beginning made money steadily as he built up his show. In his later years his receipts averaged a quarter of a million dollars a year. In 1868 he tried dividing his show, sending one part East and the other West, but since he was never satisfied to delegate responsibility, he reunited the shows at the end of the season. In the following year he put his circus into two tents, one for the menagerie and one for the performance. This innovation drew in a great many people from the churches, who could look at animals with a free conscience, but who had scruples about watching human performers. By 1877 the circus was so large that he had to give up slow horse transportation and travel on railroads. Barnum's Greatest Show on Earth was now his most formidable rival, but the two showmen came into open conflict only in 1880, when they began to compete with each other in the same towns. The expense of the rivalry was so large that Barnum sued for peace and in 1882 a contract was signed which provided for a division of the routes between them, though the armistice was only temporary.

Forepaugh in his twenty-six years as the owner of a circus had only one partner, O'Brien, from whom he parted at the end of their third year together. During his career he attended to all important matters himself, checking his own pay-rolls and frequently counting the ticket returns. He bought the food-stuffs in each town and usually appeared in the cook-tent to do the butchering. His show was, distinctly, the show of Adam Forepaugh, and he always sat on the opening day in an open pavilion in front of the big tent, receiving friends and welcoming newcomers. His red face and flying side-whiskers were familiar to all.

[Geo. Conklin, *The Ways of the Circus* (1921); Maria Ward Brown, *Reminiscences of Dan Rice* (1901); Geo. Middleton, *Circus Memoirs* (1913); Wm. Lambert, *Show-life in America* (1925); the *Press* (Phila.), Jan. 24, 1890.] K. H. A.

**FORESTER, FRANK** [See HERBERT, HENRY WILLIAM, 1807–1858].

**FORESTI, ELEUTARIO FELICE** (1793–Sept. 14, 1858), United States consul, university professor, was born in Conselice, province of Ferrara, Papal States, in 1793. Little is known of his early years other than that he was a precocious pupil in the local schools. He studied at the University of Bologna, where in 1809 he obtained the degree of *dottore in legge*. Returning to his native town, he received successively the appointments of provisory assistant judge in the court of Ferrara, assistant professor of eloquence

and belles-lettres in the lyceum, and justice of the peace, an office which necessitated his removal to Polesine. Later he was made praetor, under the Emperor's warrant, in Crespino, in the Lombardo-Venetian kingdom. About this time he became actively interested in Carbonarism. He was immediately admitted not only to all the grades of the society, but was also made a Guelph cavalier. Shortly afterwards a treacherous colleague revealed to the accredited agents of Austria and of Pope Pius VII the activities of this mysterious revolutionary combination in and around Ferrara, and on Jan. 7, 1819, Foresti and others who had been named as adherents of Carbonarism were arrested and hurried off to the Piombi, a famous prison in Venice. After a trial lasting more than a year, the final decision arrived at Venice in November 1821. Believing his fate sealed, Foresti made an unsuccessful attempt to commit suicide by plunging a penknife into his breast and swallowing fragments of a broken bottle. After two dreary years of imprisonment, aggravated by ingenious moral torture, he was condemned to death, but the sentence was later commuted to twenty years' imprisonment in the dungeons of Spielberg, Moravia, Austria.

In 1835 Ferdinand signalized his accession to the throne by a decree liberating the Italian patriots, but condemning them to exile in America. Foresti and his fellow prisoners arrived in New York on Oct. 20, 1836. Three years later, in 1839, he was appointed professor of Italian language and literature in Columbia College. In 1841, he became an American citizen, and in the following year he was appointed professor of Italian language and literature at New York University (then the University of the City of New York), holding this post as well as that of Columbia until the spring of 1856. In connection with his teaching of Italian, he edited Ollendorff's *New Method of Learning to Read, Write, and Speak the Italian Language* (1846). He also published, in 1846, *Crestomazia Italiana*, containing prose selections from the best Italian writers.

Unlike many of his fellow exiles who took no active part in the political movements in Italy, Foresti soon became interested in the *Giovine Italia*, a liberal organization which Mazzini had established. He entered into extensive correspondence with Mazzini, and finally became his official representative in America. In 1841 Foresti was made president of the Central Association of New York (Congrega Centrale di New York), and in 1850 was appointed delegate of the Triumvirate in America (delegato del Triumvirato), an organization the object of which was to give moral and material support to Mazzini.



To further the cause of the latter, Foresti in 1850 founded an Italian review in New York entitled *L'Esule Italiano*, which, however, had a short existence. In May 1853 Franklin Pierce appointed Foresti United States consul to Genoa, but the Sardinian government decided peremptorily not to receive him. Gradually, however, Foresti began to recognize the benefits and advantages of a constitutional monarchy and went over to the side of the Sardinian government. He finally sailed for Italy in 1856, taking up his residence in Piedmont. His friends, including some of the leading citizens of his adopted country, then applied to President Buchanan for his appointment as United States consul at Genoa, to which post he was finally assigned in May 1858. Brief, however, was his enjoyment of the distinction, for he died of dropsy on Sept. 14, 1858.

[For further details on the life of Foresti consult: "Ricordi di Felice Foresti," published in Atto Vannucci's *I Martiri della Libertà Italiana* (Milan, 1878), vol. II; "Political and Personal Reminiscences of Prof. Felice Foresti," *N. Y. Times*, July 7, 1854; American newspapers from 1836 to 1858; H. T. Tuckerman, "E. Felice Foresti," *Atlantic Monthly*, Nov. 1859; Mario Menghini, ed., *Lettere di G. Garibaldi, Q. Filopanti, e A. Lemmi a Felice Foresti, e Lettere di Felice Foresti a G. Lamberti e a G. Mazzini* (Imola, 1909); diplomatic correspondence on Foresti in the archives of the U. S. Department of State, Washington, D. C., 1853, 1854, and 1858; *Scritti editi ed inediti di Giuseppe Mazzini* (Imola, 48 vols., 1906–27).] H. R. M.

**FORGAN, JAMES BERWICK** (Apr. 11, 1852–Oct. 28, 1924), banker, was born at St. Andrews, Scotland, the son of Robert Forgan and Elizabeth Berwick. His father had established himself in St. Andrews as a manufacturer of golf clubs and golf balls. The son was intended for the law and after his education at Forres Academy of which his uncle was rector, he was apprenticed to a lawyer at St. Andrews. Within a year, however, he took an apprenticeship as clerk in the branch of the Royal Bank of Scotland at St. Andrews. Through a former employee of the bank, he was persuaded to go to Canada as an employee of the Bank of British North America. He arrived in Montreal in 1873 and shortly thereafter was transferred to the Halifax branch, where he remained for a little more than a year. After a brief interim of a year and a half with an insurance company, during which time he married Mary Ellen Murray, daughter of a Halifax merchant, he returned to banking as paying teller for the local branch of the bank of Nova Scotia in 1875. Thereafter his advance was rapid. He was made inspector of branch banks and in 1885 became agent in charge of the branch at Minneapolis, Minn. His qualities as a banker were quickly recognized by Minneapolis business men and he was made cashier of the

Northwestern National Bank of Minneapolis in 1888. Recognizing the opportunities for success in his profession in the rapidly expanding West, Forgan at this time became an American citizen. While in the employ of the Northwestern National he came in contact with Lyman Gage, then president of the First National Bank at Chicago and later secretary of the treasury under McKinley. Through Gage, Forgan in 1892 became a vice-president of the Chicago bank, and remained with it until his death. By 1900 he had become a principal stockholder and the president. Through a series of mergers with smaller Chicago banks, and by radical changes in the internal organization of the bank, he made the First National one of the most powerful institutions of its kind in the West. Perhaps his most important contribution to banking was his work with the Chicago Clearing House Committee with which he was associated for twenty-five years. He was largely responsible for the system set up through this committee in 1906, and now widely imitated, of clearing-house bank examination for member banks. He also took a lively interest in currency reform, and acted as vice-chairman of the currency committee of the Amercan Bankers' Association in its conferences with the National Monetary Commission on Banking reform. After the Federal Reserve system was organized he served for six years as director of the Reserve Bank at Chicago, and as member of the executive committee and president of the Federal Advisory Council of the Reserve System for a like period.

Except for a number of addresses on currency reform and clearing-house bank examination, Forgan left only one publication, *Recollections of a Busy Life,* written when he was seventy-two and published just before his death. In it he gives the key to his dominant interest in life: "My life has been so absorbed in, and my energy so concentrated on, the growth and development of the banks which have commanded my services, that my life story has been practically inseparable from theirs."

[Forgan's autobiography, *Recollections of a Busy Life* (1924); *Chicago News,* and *Chicago Tribune,* Oct. 29, 1924.]

E. A. D.

**FORMAN, DAVID** (Nov. 3, 1745–Sept. 12, 1797), Revolutionary soldier, was born in Monmouth County, N. J., the son of Joseph Forman, a wealthy New York shipping merchant, and Elizabeth (Lee) Forman. He was descended from Robert Forman, a dissenter, who emigrated from Buckinghamshire, England, to Holland and thence to America, where he became one of the eighteen patentees of Flushing, on Long Island (1645), and died at Oyster Bay in 1671. David



Forman is said to have attended the College of New Jersey, but did not graduate. On Feb. 28, 1767, he married Ann Marsh, by whom he had eleven children. In June 1776 he was appointed colonel of one of the New Jersey regiments sent to reinforce Washington at New York. Six months later he suppressed a Loyalist uprising in Monmouth County (November 1776) and was chosen by Washington to command one of the new Continental regiments authorized by Congress. He was commissioned brigadier-general by the New Jersey legislature in the spring of 1777 and commanded the Jersey militia at the battle of Germantown (October 1777). Shortly thereafter Washington permitted Forman to withdraw his uneasy militia from the main army, Maj.-Gen. Philemon Dickinson having expressed concern for the safety of the Jerseys. Forman resigned his commission in November 1777 because of differences with the legislature. He was later attached to Maj.-Gen. Charles Lee's staff by Washington's order, presumably because of his knowledge of the region. Lee petulantly refused his aid, and following the battle of Monmouth (June 1778), Forman joined the other officers in testifying against Lee at the court martial. Throughout the remainder of the war he busied himself with the suppression of the pine robbers and armed Loyalist refugees of the Jersey coast. His harsh treatment of the disaffected, characterized by inhumanity, earned for him a reputation for brutality in a vicious partisan warfare. He also kept Washington informed of the movements of British vessels off the adjacent coast (1780–82). In the spring of 1782 the "Honorable Board of Associated Loyalists" in New York sent an expedition against a Continental post on Toms River commanded by Capt. Joshua Huddy. Huddy was captured, taken to New York, and hanged. Forman repaired to Washington's headquarters to demand retaliation. Washington wrote to the British commander-in-chief demanding that those guilty be delivered to the Americans. Sir Henry Clinton ordered a court martial for their trial, but complained of American cruelty in New Jersey, especially in Monmouth County, where Forman, called by the Loyalists "Devil David," had been actively persecuting the King's loyal subjects "with all the vindictiveness of his strong nature." Washington warned Gov. William Livingston (May 6, 1782) that he would yield to the British all Jersey militia committing acts contrary to the laws of war. After the war Forman was judge of the court of common pleas for Monmouth County. In 1794 he moved to Chestertown, Kent County, Md., and later visited Natchez, where he

owned a large estate. Attacked by apoplexy while there, he recovered somewhat, and sailed from New Orleans for New York. The vessel was captured by a British privateer in the Gulf and taken to the Bahamas, during which voyage Forman died.

[*Docs. Relating to the Revolutionary Hist. of the State of N. J.*, I (1901), IV (1914); Anne S. Dandridge, *Forman Geneal.* (1903); Jared Sparks, ed., *The Writings of Geo. Washington* (12 vols., 1834–37); *Proc. of a General Court-Martial, Held . . . for the Trial of Maj.-Gen. Lee* (1778); Wm. S. Stryker, *The Battle of Monmouth* (1927); F. Ellis, *Hist. of Monmouth County, N. J.* (1885); *Somerset County Hist. Quart.*, Oct. 1917.]

F. E. R.

**FORMAN, JOSHUA** (Sept. 6, 1777–Aug. 4, 1848), early advocate of the Erie Canal, author of the New York Safety Fund plan, was born at Pleasant Valley, Dutchess County, N. Y., to which place his parents Joseph and Hannah (Ward) Forman, both natives of New Jersey, had removed from New York City. After graduating from Union College in 1798, he studied law in Poughkeepsie and New York, but in 1800 removed to Onondaga County, then almost a wilderness. He practised law at the village of Onondaga Hollow until 1819, when he removed to the present site of Syracuse, of which he has been officially recognized as the founder. Since land titles at that time were in a state of almost hopeless confusion, and litigation was consequently brisk, lawyers could prosper in apparently insignificant hamlets. In 1813 Forman was appointed the first judge of the court of common pleas in the county and served ten years. He was an able business man, as well as a good citizen, and was interested in many enterprises in the county. He built a tavern and grist-mills, organized a company to work the gypsum deposits near by, and greatly improved the methods of manufacturing salt. He was active in establishing public institutions, and while living in Syracuse procured the passage of an act to lower the level of Lake Onondaga, making it possible to drain the adjacent swamps, and thereby greatly improving health conditions in the vicinity.

Transportation was a vital question in a region where roads were often quagmires, and there was much talk of building canals to connect the various settlements, but no comprehensive plan was proposed. In 1807 Forman, though a Federalist in a Republican county, was elected to the Assembly, and in 1808 introduced and carried a resolution to appoint a joint committee to consider "the propriety of exploring and causing an accurate survey to be made of the most eligible and direct route for a canal, to open a communication between the Tidewaters of the Hudson River and Lake Erie" (*Publications of the Buffalo Historical Society*, II, 28). This was the beginning of legislative action which finally resulted in the construction of the Erie Canal. In his later years Forman was inclined to claim the credit of originating the idea, but it is clear that some months previously Jesse Hawley had published a series of articles advocating the measure in the *Genesee Messenger*. However, Forman constantly advocated building the canal, and in 1825, as president of the village of Syracuse, represented the town and the county at the opening celebration.

He frequently speculated in land, and at one time controlled the heart of the present city of Syracuse, which he laid out into lots. Due to his investments his affairs became involved, and about 1826 he removed to New Brunswick, N. J., to work a copper-mine. He continued to take keen interest in his native state, especially in the banking situation, which was then quite unsatisfactory. On the election of Martin Van Buren to the governorship, Forman offered him a plan to insure the redemption of bank-notes by requiring all banks to contribute to a guarantee fund. He had gained the germ of the idea from reading of a somewhat similar plan of mutual guarantee of indebtedness in practise among the Hong merchants of China. Van Buren, after consultation with his financial advisers, approved, and sent a special message to the legislature enclosing the plan (Jan. 26, 1829), together with a full explanation by Forman. With considerable modification the plan was enacted into law as the Safety Fund Act, and became an important landmark in the financial history of the state (*Journal of the Assembly*, 1829).

The same year Forman, who had previously purchased an immense tract of wild land in North Carolina, removed to the village of Rutherfordton in that state. He spent the remainder of his life there, engaged in disposing of his lands and in various business enterprises until a stroke of paralysis reduced his activities. He was highly esteemed by his neighbors and associates (J. H. Wheeler, *Historical Sketches of North Carolina from 1584 to 1851*, 1851, p. 399). His first wife was Margaret Alexander of Glasgow, Scotland, who died just before his removal to North Carolina. Later he married Sarah Garrett of Warm Springs, Tenn. He was a man of wide information and high character. Though said to be a good lawyer, he was essentially a promoter and builder. His boundless faith in the development of the United States sometimes caused him to be regarded as visionary, but his early advocacy of the Erie Canal, his faith in Syracuse, and the idea of the Safety Fund are solid contributions to the public welfare.

[A sketch by J. V. H. Clark in *Onondaga*, vol. II (1849), was reprinted by Forman's son-in-law, Gen. E. S. Leavenworth, in *Geneal. of the Leavenworth Family* (1873). The latter corrected a common error in the date of Forman's death, but did not mention his second wife, who appears in *The Forman Geneal.* (1903), by Anne S. Dandridge and in a sketch by E. E. Dickinson in the *Mag. of Am. Hist.*, June 1882. His connection with the Erie Canal is discussed at length in *Buffalo Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. II (1880), and in David Hosack's *Memoir of De Witt Clinton* (1829). For his connection with the Safety Fund see John Jay Knox, *A Hist. of Banking in the U. S.* (rev. ed. 1900).] H.T.

**FORMAN, JUSTUS MILES** (Nov. 1, 1875–May 7, 1915), author, was born in Le Roy, N. Y., the son of Jonathan Miles and Mary (Cole) Foreman. His father, who was born in 1804, had by a former marriage four children, the youngest of whom was born in 1838. Justus was the only child of his mother. The first of the family in America was William Foreman, who came from England to Maryland about 1675. William's grandson, John, while returning from an expedition in one of the British colonial wars, married and settled in New England. Justus spent most of his boyhood in Minnesota, the home of one of his half-brothers. There he attended the Minneapolis schools, and was a student for one year at the state university. He entered Yale in the fall of 1895, was graduated in 1898, and studied art in Paris until 1901. While abroad he began writing the numerous stories which appeared then and later in various American magazines. In 1902 he published a novel, *The Garden of Lies*, the first of a series of romances which appeared at the rate of about one a year for the remaining years of his life. His writings were uniformly tense and full of action, and they dealt in general with European and American characters who were both rich and aristocratic. They were extremely popular in France and England as well as in America, but the interest with which they were received seems likely to become less and less comprehensible.

Forman found great enjoyment in traveling, and was as much in England and France as in New York. Between times he visited Greece, Turkey, Africa, Australia, and the Orient. The East infatuated him, and he adorned his house with mysterious silken hangings and bronze statues of Buddha. As time went on it seemed to him that a divan more effectively than a chair inspired his genius. In 1904–05, a play in which he had collaborated, based on his *Garden of Lies*, was successfully produced in London. His next attempt at drama, *The Hyphen*, written, according to gossip, in nine days, was put on in New York in the spring of 1915. It dealt in a sensational manner with a theme then much in the public mind—that of divided or hyphenated political allegiance, particularly as in the case of German-Americans. In early May he set out for Europe on the *Lusitania* as a war correspondent for the *New York Times*. He was never heard of after the boat was sunk.



[Yale Coll. *Triennial Record of the Class of 1898* (1902), *Class of Ninety-Eight Statistics* (1910); E. E. Farman, *Foreman, Farman, Forman Geneal.* (1911); *Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 25, May 8, 1915.] J. D. W.

**FORNEY, JOHN WIEN** (Sept. 30, 1817–Dec. 9, 1881), Philadelphia journalist, was born at Lancaster, Pa., of German descent, the son of Peter and Margaret (Wien) Forney. His brief schooling was terminated when at thirteen he went to work in a store. Three years later he became an apprentice in the printing-office of the Lancaster *Journal*. When he was twenty he became editor and part owner of a dying newspaper, the Lancaster *Intelligencer*, and in two years brought it to sufficient prosperity to enable him to unite it with the *Journal* and to marry Elizabeth Mathilda Reitzel in 1840. As a Democratic editor Forney attached himself at the outset of his career to the political fortunes of James Buchanan, whose presidential ambitions he made the means of his own advance locally and nationally. When Buchanan became secretary of state in 1845, President Polk appointed Forney deputy surveyor of the port of Philadelphia. This plum enabled its recipient to sell out at Lancaster and remove to Philadelphia, where in partnership with A. Boyd Hamilton he became editor and proprietor of the *Pennsylvanian*.

After the defeat of the Democrats in 1848, he sought election as clerk of the House of Representatives, but in spite of Buchanan's aid he failed to secure the position until 1851. He rendered active service in the campaign of 1852 and then became an editorial writer for the Washington *Daily Union*, the paper that enjoyed the executive patronage. In 1854 he was admitted to partnership in this paper and aided his partner A. O. P. Nicholson in obtaining the lucrative printing contracts of the House of Representatives. Meantime, he had become involved in a journalistic feud with a Virginia newspaper rival, Beverly Tucker of the Washington *Sentinel*, in which the powerful Virginia Democrats sided with Tucker. Forney resented also what he considered Southern persecution of his friend Gov. Reeder in his Kansas difficulties. Finally, his friendship for Buchanan when Pierce was seeking renomination made his situation more than ever impossible, so in 1856 he relinquished his share in the *Union*, after presiding over the House of Representatives most successfully dur-

ing the strenuous scenes of the two months' struggle for the speakership in 1855–56. This release left him free to devote himself to his great ambition, Buchanan's nomination and election as president.

Then came the question: what was to be the reward for his twenty years' loyalty? Both Buchanan and Forney agreed that he should have the *Union* with the fortune that came from the congressional printing. But Forney's enemies blocked this move. Then Forney desired to be senator from Pennsylvania; but Cameron defeated him, in spite of the fact that President Buchanan's influence gained the caucus nomination for him. Buchanan then offered him his choice of the Liverpool consulship or the naval office at Philadelphia; but Forney was committed to other men for these posts, and Mrs. Forney, who was in an unfortunate state of health, was bitterly opposed to his accepting either position. The twenty years of loyalty soon melted into distrust and dissatisfaction. Forney decided to go back to Philadelphia journalism, and there established the *Press* ostensibly in support of Buchanan in August 1857. Buchanan, however, could not or would not aid him with public printing. When Walker came back from Kansas and Douglas opened fire upon the Buchanan administration, Forney joined forces with them; by 1860 he had become a Republican and had resumed his old position as clerk of the House; a year later he became secretary of the Senate and continued in that position until 1868.

In 1861 Forney founded the *Sunday Morning Chronicle,* and on Nov. 3, 1862, he began publishing a daily edition (the *Daily Morning Chronicle*), at the suggestion, it was afterward said, of President Lincoln, who feared the influence in the Army of the Potomac of the *New York Tribune,* which was critical of the administration (see *Sunday Chronicle,* Dec. 11, 1881). At all events, with the *Chronicle* and the *Press,* Forney actively supported the Lincoln administration. He also supported President Johnson at first, but when the radicals began their warfare upon the administration Forney followed them and Andrew Johnson had no more virulent critic than Forney's *Chronicle.* During Grant's administration Forney sold out his Washington paper (1870) and went back to Philadelphia. Here he became collector of the port (1871) but retired within a year. The remaining ten years of his life were spent in journalism, travel, and lecturing. In 1878 he founded and edited at Philadelphia a weekly magazine called *Progress.* Once more he changed his political allegiance, becoming a Democrat and writing *The Life and Military Career of Winfield Scott Hancock* (1880) as a campaign biography. He also wrote *Anecdotes of Public Men* (2 vols., 1873–81) and *The New Nobility* (1881). Throughout his life he had proved to be enterprising and energetic but emotional and unstable, sentimental in his loyalties, bitter in his hates. He possessed an unusually accurate instinct for winning causes, but in spite of his ability to support the victors, he generally had enemies sufficiently powerful to prevent his obtaining much profit from his foresight.

[*Forty Years of Am. Journalism: Retirement of Mr. J. W. Forney from the Phila. "Press"* (1877); Alex. Harris, *Biog. Hist. of Lancaster County* (1872); *Phila. Press,* Dec. 10, 12, 13, 1881; *Phila. Record* and Phila. *Public Ledger,* Dec. 10, 1881; Washington *Sunday Chronicle,* Dec. 11, 1881; *Progress* (Phila.) Dec. 17, 1881; *Printers' Circular* (Phila.), Dec. 1881. A large and revealing collection of Forney's letters is to be found in the Jeremiah S. Black Papers, Lib. of Cong., and in the Buchanan Papers, Hist. Soc. of Pa. H. O. Folker, *Sketches of the Forney Family* (1911), gives the name of Forney's mother as Wein, but the cemetery record gives Wien for his middle name.] R. F. N.

**FORNEY, MATTHIAS NACE** (Mar. 28, 1835–Jan. 14, 1908), engineer, editor, inventor, was born in Hanover, Pa.. the son of Matthias Nace and Amanda (Nace) Forney. He was educated in the public schools of Hanover and studied three years in a boys' school in Baltimore. At the age of seventeen he apprenticed himself to Ross Winans, a locomotive builder in Baltimore, and spent three years in the shop and one in the drafting room. He then became a draftsman for the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad in Baltimore and held this position for three years. Feeling that the prospect for advancement was rather slight, he went into business in Baltimore late in 1858, but after three years of indifferent success he returned to his earlier employment, this time as a draftsman for the Illinois Central Railroad in Chicago. In the course of his three years' service here he designed, and in 1866 obtained a patent, for an "improved tank locomotive" which afterwards became known as the Forney engine. It was designed especially for suburban and city train service and was exclusively used on the New York, Brooklyn, and Chicago elevated railroads until superseded by the electric locomotive. About 1865 Forney went to Boston to superintend the building of locomotives then being made for the Illinois Central by the Hinkley & Williams Works, and upon the completion of the work he remained with the company partly as a draftsman and partly as a traveling agent. Late in 1870 he became an associate editor of the *Railroad Gazette,* published in Chicago. The publishing office was transferred to New York after the Chicago Fire of 1871, and in 1872 Forney purchased a half-interest in the journal and served as

editor until the end of 1883, when ill health compelled him temporarily to relinquish all active work. As editor of the *Railroad Gazette,* "he fought almost alone at the beginning against the general adoption of the narrow gauge, and was finally successful in turning the tide" (*American Engineering and Railroad Journal,* February 1908). In 1886 he purchased the *American Railroad Journal* and *Van Nostrand's Engineering Magazine* which he consolidated, edited, and published under the name of *Railroad and Engineering Journal* until 1893, and as *American Engineer and Railroad Journal* until he sold it in 1896. In the course of his busy life he obtained thirty-three patents pertaining to the railway industry. Beside his tank locomotive he patented a number of improvements on railway car seats, an interlocking switch and signal apparatus, furnace doors, steam-boilers, feed water-heaters for locomotives, and similar devices. In 1873 he published in the *Railway Gazette* and in 1875 in book form his *Catechism of the Locomotive,* which has been the instruction book of thousands of railroad men and has passed through several editions. He also was the author of the first edition of *The Car-Builders' Dictionary* (1879), of a *Memoir of Horatio Allen* (1890), and of *Political Reform by the Representation of Minorities* (1894). He was a member of the Master Car Builders' Association, and while secretary from 1882 to 1889 he brought about its reorganization so that it would be more in touch with railroad officials and railroad companies. He was elected a life member in 1890. He was active in the American Free Trade League, the American Peace Society of Boston, and the Citizens' Union and Anti-Imperialists' League of New York. He was an honorary member of the American Railway Master Mechanics' Association and was one of the organizers of the American Society of Mechanical Engineers. In 1902 his "Reminiscences of Half a Century" was published in the *Official Proceedings of the New York Railroad Club* (vol. XII, no. 7). He married in 1907, at the age of seventy-two, Mrs. Annie Virginia Spear of Baltimore, and died in New York City survived by his widow.

[*Trans. Am. Soc. of Mech. Engineers,* XXX (1908); Angus Sinclair, *Development of the Locomotive Engine* (1907) and memoirs of Forney in *Report of the Proc. . . . of the Master Car Builders' Asso.* (1908) and in *Report of the Proc. of the Am. Railway Master Mechanics' Asso.* (1908); *Am. Engineer and Railroad Jour.,* Feb. 1908; *Cassier's Mag.,* Mar. 1908; *Railroad Gazette,* Jan. 17, 1908; *Railway Age,* Jan. 24, 1908; H. O. Folker, *Sketches of the Forney Family* (1911); U. S. Patent Office records.] C. W. M.

**FORNEY, WILLIAM HENRY** (Nov. 9, 1823–Jan. 16, 1894), lawyer, Confederate soldier, congressman, was born at Lincolnton, N. C., the son of Peter and Sabina Swope Hoke Forney. The Forneys were descended from Jacob Forney, whose father, a Huguenot, fled from France after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, and settled in Alsace. Jacob, left an orphan at the age of fourteen, went to Amsterdam and thence to Pennsylvania. In 1752 he married a Swiss girl, Maria Bergner; and in 1754 they removed to North Carolina. In 1835, his son Peter moved his family to Calhoun County, Ala., and occupied lands in the fertile Coosa Valley. William was graduated from the University of Alabama in 1844, and afterward read law in the office of his brother, Daniel Munroe Forney of Jacksonville, Ala. When the war with Mexico began, he enlisted with the 1st Alabama Volunteers and served as lieutenant in the siege of Vera Cruz. After one year of service he returned to Jacksonville and resumed the study of law. He was admitted to the bar in 1848 and with the exception of the year 1859, when he served in the legislature, he practised law constantly down to 1860. As a lawyer he established a reputation that was "more solid than brilliant." On Oct. 4, 1854, he was married to Mary Eliza Woodward, daughter of a prosperous merchant of Calhoun County.

Forney entered the Confederate ranks as captain of the 10th Alabama Regiment, and served on the Virginia battle-front. He won a reputation as a zealous and fearless leader. He was wounded thirteen times, and at Gettysburg was crippled for life. He was captured at Gettysburg and imprisoned for a year. When released upon exchange he returned to the Army of Northern Virginia, "still a cripple and hobbling on crutches" and was promoted colonel. Shortly before the surrender at Appomattox he was raised to the rank of brigadier-general. He returned to Jacksonville, maimed and broken in health, and resumed his law practise for such business as one who had been so conspicuous in the Confederacy could procure under the régime of Reconstruction. He was elected to the state Senate in 1865 and served until the Reconstruction measures were put into operation. When the Carpet-Bag government was overthrown he was elected to Congress where he served continuously from 1875 to 1893. He became a stalwart political figure in the seventh district. Although he was too conservative for many of the depressed and disgruntled farmers, his integrity and sturdiness and his distinguished war record, the marks of which he bore upon his huge frame, made him an unbeatable candidate for office.

[H. O. Folker, *Sketches of the Forney Family* (1911); W. Brewer, *Alabama: Her Hist., Resources,*

*War Record, and Public Men* (1872); A. B. Moore, *Hist. of Ala. and Her People* (1927); T. M. Owen, *Hist. of Ala. and Dict. of Ala. Biog.*, vol. III (1921); B. F. Riley, *Makers and Romance of Ala. Hist.* (1915); J. C. Du Bose, *Notable Men of Ala.*, vol. II (1904); *Official Records (Army)*; *Mobile Daily Reg.*, Jan. 18, 1894; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928).] A. B. M.

**FORREST, EDWIN** (Mar. 9, 1806–Dec. 12, 1872), earliest American-born actor of the first rank, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the son of William Forrest, a Scotchman by birth, and Rebecca Lauman of German parentage. William Forrest left his large family unprovided for when he died in 1819, and young Edwin left school to run errands in a store, and thereafter was self-educated. His early bent toward the stage was indicated by his juvenile imitations of the family minister, and by his attempts, at the age of eleven, to impersonate a girl on the stage of the South Street Theatre. Persisting in his ambition to act, he made a début at the Walnut Street Theatre, Nov. 27, 1820, as Young Norval, and won sufficient encouragement to take up acting as a profession—not, probably, that the encouragement had to be great. The next few years were spent in the hard school of the frontier theatre. He joined a roving company playing in Pittsburgh and the Ohio River towns, and when that failed found odd jobs to keep alive. Sol Smith records in his *Theatrical Management in the West and South for Thirty Years* (1868) that Forrest played a negro part in Smith's farce, *The Tailor in Distress,* in Cincinnati, in 1823, perhaps the earliest "black face" impersonation in our theatre. Shortly after Smith had to rescue the despondent youth from a circus, which he had joined as a tumbler, and sent him to New Orleans, where a position was open in the company of James H. Caldwell, then theatrical czar of the South. Forrest was a powerful, handsome, wilful, unschooled youth, not yet twenty, when he reached New Orleans, and his character must have been affected by the life into which he was thrown, at once gay, sophisticated, crude, and cruel. Among his admired friends in New Orleans was Col. Bowie, who used to fight duels naked, armed with the famous knife he invented. Passions were violent and uncontrolled, and something of the violence and unrestraint of Forrest's later years may well be attributed to his early days in New Orleans, when he himself challenged Caldwell to a duel over a lady—the older man, however, sensibly refusing to fight.

In the autumn of 1825 Forrest secured an engagement at Albany, at $7.50 a week, where for a time he supported the guest star, Edmund Kean. The great English actor, whose flaming style was to Forrest's taste, took a fancy to the young American, and while Forrest played Iago to his Othello, and other supporting rôles, taught him both by example and friendly precept. Though Forrest's style became distinctly individual, its best features were undoubtedly shaped by his study of Kean, especially his electrifying climaxes of passion. It is recorded that he played Iago as a "gay and dashing" blade, which pleased Kean greatly. As an example of his violent personal characteristics, once at Albany he gambled all night, won all the money, then hurled the cards in the fire, threw the money on the floor, and never gambled again. On June 23, 1826, Forrest made his first appearance in New York, at the Park Theatre, then the leading theatre of America. He boldly chose to play Othello, against the advice of his fellows. The result was a triumph for this stocky, athletic, handsome youth of twenty. He was at once engaged for the new Bowery Theatre, at a salary of $800 a year, and the ensuing season played there with increasing success such parts as Damon, Jaffier (in *Venice Preserved*), William Tell, and Mark Antony. For so young an actor, the popular acclaim was enormous, but even then the patrons of the Bowery Theatre were, as we would say now, "low brow," and Forrest must inevitably have responded to their love for exhibitions of his puissant animal vigor and sonorous utterance. The more critical public supported the Park, and both they and most of the reviewers preferred the acting of Macready, then on a visit to America. A modern biographer might well speculate whether the proud, arrogant young American, aggressively national in feeling, seeing the critical acclaim going to the English visitor, did not even then lay by the zealous passions which were later to result so disastrously. His second year at the Bowery, Forrest received $200 a night, and from then on became one of the most affluent American actors. Three years later he went to the Park Theatre, where he offered prizes for American plays, thus being the first actor definitely to encourage native dramatic authorship. The first prize play was *Metamora,* a drama of Indian life by John H. Stone, produced at the Park Dec. 15, 1829, and the second was Robert M. Bird's tragedy, *The Gladiator,* in which he played Spartacus, produced Sept. 26, 1831. Both dramas, adapted to Forrest's vigorous style and love for characters of rugged, primitive heroism, were long popular in his repertoire. In all, he gave over $20,000 in prizes during the next few years, for nine dramas, but of these, two plays, one called *Jack Cade,* and Bird's *The Broker of Bogota,* were all that succeeded on the stage.

In 1834, having now completely won New

York, and also acquired a small fortune (as well as making his family in Philadelphia comfortable), Forrest retired for a trip to Europe. New York citizens gave him a parting banquet, and a medal, honoring him as the first great American actor. After visiting Europe, he emerged as Spartacus at Drury Lane—our first dramatic challenge to the Old World. His enormous physical vigor, rough realism, heroic voice, and also his flash of tragic dignity, captured the London theatregoers. He was fêted by the great, and also met and loved Catherine Norton Sinclair, daughter of a singer. They were married June 23, 1837, by the Rev. Henry Hart Milman, author of *Fazio*. His return to America was marked by further triumphs. At the Park, in New York, for example, it is recorded that he drew $4,200 in three performances, which was a high record for those days.

In 1845 Forrest and his wife again visited England. Several leading English actors, including Macready, were unemployed, and there seems to have been some resentment in London against the "foreign invasion." At any rate, when Forrest appeared as Macbeth, which was not one of his happy impersonations, three separate claques hissed him. With no actual grounds for the belief, Forrest nursed the idea that Macready was behind this affront to his professional vanity, and when Forrest nursed an idea, it grew stronger with the days. Shortly thereafter, being in Edinburgh when Macready was playing Hamlet there, Forrest sat in a box and hissed loudly at the moment when Macready was mincing and waving a handkerchief to simulate madness. It was, of course, a petty, undignified, and supremely silly thing to do; and it stirred up a hornet's nest of passions, which Forrest did not soothe by a letter to the London *Times* trying to justify his actions. The sequel was tragic, and marks one of the strangest episodes in our theatrical history.

Macready, himself an actor noted for his temper and vanity, made another tour of America in 1848–49. America had already taken sides in the controversy started in England, and the two camps were unfortunately divided to no small extent along social lines. The "highbrows" were for Macready; the galleries, the Bowery boys, the rank and file, saw American "almighty independence" personified in their hero, Forrest. It was democracy versus Anglomania to them. Macready's tour was stormy in many places—except Boston, where he was taken to the bosom of the Back Bay—but nothing fatal occurred until May 1849, when Macready was to make his farewell appearance at the Astor Place Opera House in New York. Forrest was acting at the Broadway Theatre, and many people believed, though none could ever prove, that he had a hand in what followed. Probably he did not, but he seems to have done little to prevent. On May 8 Macready attempted to act Macbeth, and was howled down by a riotous mob of Forrest adherents who packed the playhouse. His friends, and "the better element" in the city, determined that he should be heard, and persuaded him to appear again on May 10, this time seeing to it that the audience was friendly. But they could not control the streets. A great angry mob gathered, and began to stone the theatre. They smashed all the windows, and were actually attempting to wreck the structure and get at Macready when the 7th Regiment was called out. The actor was hustled to safety in disguise, and the mob started fighting the militia, till finally, in desperation, the order was given to fire. Twenty-two persons fell dead, and thirty-six wounded. Then the mob dispersed, leaving a wrecked theatre behind, and a black shadow on the reputation of Edwin Forrest from which he could never quite emerge.

Hard on the heels of this trouble came the domestic difficulties which embittered the rest of his life, cost him many friends, and were a scandal in the nose of the nation for several years. In this same spring of 1849 he had surprised his wife in what he considered too close proximity to the actor, George W. Jamieson, and a violent scene had followed. Mrs. Forrest, however, soothed him, and the matter might have passed, had he not presently discovered in her room a letter from Jamieson to her, which spoke of "being worthy of her love," and of the happiness she had given him. Forrest, in the words of his biographer, Alger, was "struck to the heart with surprise, grief and rage." He got a fixed idea that this letter indicated gross infidelity, not merely indiscretion. Jealousy, wounded vanity, and to do him credit, hurt love, gnawed at him. The couple separated, agreeing to keep their secret. But such a secret Forrest could not keep. Stung by rumors and gossip which said he had mistreated his wife, he entered suit for divorce in Philadelphia. Mrs. Forrest, to protect her reputation, entered a counter suit in New York. The case came to trial in December 1851, lasted six weeks, and probably filled more space in the newspapers of the land than any similar trial before, or perhaps since. The coarseness of speech and irascibility of temper to which Forrest was stung in the trial lost him hundreds of admirers, even friends. He assaulted the Puritan dandy, N. P. Willis, in Central Park because of some caustic comment the latter had made. Willis sued him and collected a dollar. He sued Willis for libel, and collected

$500. Meanwhile the divorce case went against him, and he was assessed alimony and costs. With his fixed idea of his wife's guilt, this seemed to him a bitter injustice, and five times he appealed the case, always losing, the final verdict eighteen years later assessing him $64,000, of which Mrs. Forrest had to pay $59,000 in various expenses!

In January 1852, just as the first trial ended, Forrest defiantly rode the storm and acted for sixty-nine nights at the Broadway Theatre, New York. The publicity of the trial packed the theatre to the roof every night, and Forrest made speeches between acts, vindicating his conduct. His adherents, who had considered the verdict wrong, cheered him to the echo. Money continued to roll into his coffers. But from that time on he alternated acting with long periods of retirement to a large and lonely house he built on North Broad St., Philadelphia, where, according to William Winter, he "brooded upon himself as a great genius misunderstood, and upon the rest of the world as a sort of animated scum." In 1860 he reappeared in New York as Hamlet, to vast audiences, and later packed the huge Boston Theatre. In 1866 he played to $2,500 a night in Chicago, and in thirty-five nights in San Francisco drew as his share $20,000 in gold. In 1865, however, he suffered a partial paralysis of the sciatic nerve, which increasingly hobbled his regal gait and humbled the Herculean, athletic figure which had been his pride, and the public turned to younger players. His last appearance was as a reader in New York in the autumn of 1872. On Dec. 12, 1872, he died alone in his house in Philadelphia. It was found that he had willed nearly his entire estate as a home for aged players, and the Forrest Home in Philadelphia still keeps his memory fresh.

Criticisms of vanished actors are mostly vain things. Alger speaks of "the heroic traits and pomp of Forrest's parts, the impassioned energy and vividness of the delineations, the bell, drum and trumpet qualities of his amazing voice." William Winter describes him as "a vast animal, bewildered by a grain of genius." The facts seem to be that he dominated an audience by his unique animal vigor and his outbursts of impassioned speech, and that he was happiest in rôles which showed strong-willed, elemental characters in revolt, or in later years such characters as Lear, and Coriolanus. He himself was a strong-willed character in perhaps unconscious revolt against the idealized classic drama which was all he knew. In a later age he might possibly have been tamed to a superb John Gabriel Borkman. Personally, he was a victim of uncontrolled, egocentric passions, of vanity and arrogance; yet he was capable of large generosities and true and noble understanding of noble characters—altogether a fascinating and stormy comet that blazed across our early stage.

[W. R. Alger, *Life of Edwin Forrest* (2 vols., 1877), is a partisan biography, dreary with Saharas of moralizing, but gives fairly the essential facts. See also M. J. Moses, *The Fabulous Forrest* (1929); "The Forrest Divorce Case," reported for the *Police Gazette* (N. Y.), 1852; *Account of the Terrific and Fatal Riot at the N. Y. Astor Place Opera House* (1849); Brander Matthews and Laurence Hutton, *Actors and Actresses of Great Britain and the U. S.* (1886), vol. IV, containing a biography by Lawrence Barrett and many excerpts from contemporary criticism; William Winter, *The Wallet of Time* (1913), vol. I; Jos. Jefferson, *Autobiography* (1890), containing amusing records of Forrest's temper.] W. P. E.

**FORREST, FRENCH** (Oct. 4, 1796–Nov. 22, 1866), naval officer, was born in St. Marys County, Md., son of Maj. Joseph Forrest and Elizabeth French Dulany. Appointed midshipman June 9, 1811, he was in the *Hornet* in her victory over the *Peacock,* Feb. 24, 1813, and is said to have served under Perry on Lake Erie, though he is not listed among Perry's officers. After years of routine service he was commissioned captain Mar. 30, 1844, and in the Mexican War commanded the *Cumberland* and later the *Raritan,* flagships in the squadron off Vera Cruz, in which as staff officer and division commander he took a distinguished part in operations against Mexican ports. He commanded the second division in the attack on Alvarado, Oct. 16, 1846, and led a landing force of about 200 in operations, Nov. 23–26, against Tabasco. Speaking of his work here, Capt. W. H. Parker says that Forrest "did not know the meaning of the word fear" (*Recollections of a Naval Officer,* 1883, p. 74), but adds that he was very methodical, and describes amusingly his efforts to get his force organized. His company was attacked by superior forces on the 25th but held its ground till the withdrawal of the ships next morning. He was officer in charge of the landing of Scott's army at Vera Cruz, Mar. 9, 1847, in which over 10,000 men were put ashore in five hours, an operation perfectly carried out, though with but slight opposition. From June 1855 to August 1856, he was head of the Washington Navy Yard, and then commanded the Brazil Squadron until May 1859, except when it was enlarged in 1858 for a demonstration against Paraguay, in which he commanded the rear division. In the Civil War he became captain in the Virginia navy, Apr. 12, 1861, and in the Confederate navy, June 10, standing third in seniority. Parker remarks that Forrest had a fine record and with better opportunities would have distinguished himself in the

Confederate service (*Ibid.*, p. 328), but he was piqued at Buchanan's promotion over him (*Official Records, Navy*, 2 ser., vol. II, p. 256). As head of the Norfolk Navy Yard from Apr. 23, 1861, he had general charge of alterations on the *Merrimac*, and at the battle of Hampton Roads steamed boldly out in the little tug *Harmony* to offer assistance when the *Merrimac* ran aground. Delays in repairs to the *Merrimac* caused his transfer, May 24, 1862, to the head of the bureau of orders and detail. From March 1863 to May 1864, during a period of relative inactivity, he commanded the James River Squadron. Commodore Forrest was a strikingly handsome man, with regular features, and in earlier years dark curling hair. He was fond of objects of art, and in his home at Alexandria, Va., collected many curios from foreign voyages. His wife was Emily Douglas, daughter of John D. Simms, chief clerk of the navy department, whom he married in 1830. He died at the home of his brother Bladen in Georgetown, D. C.

[This account is based partly on navy department records and family papers. Many references to Forrest are in the *Official Records* (*Navy*). See also H. E. Hayden's *Va. Genealogical* (1891), p. 343; J. T. Scharf's *Hist. of the Confederate States Navy* (1887); and P. S. P. Conner, *The Home Squadron under Commodore Conner in the War with Mexico* (1896).] A. W.

**FORREST, NATHAN BEDFORD** (July 13, 1821–Oct. 29, 1877), Confederate general, eldest son of William and Mariam (Beck) Forrest, was born in Bedford County, Tenn. (The boundary drawn at a later date places his birthplace in Marshall County.) His great-grandfather, Shadrach Forrest, who was possibly of English birth, is known to have removed about 1730–40 from Virginia to North Carolina, and there his son and grandson were born. They moved to Tennessee in 1806. William Forrest worked at his trade as a blacksmith there until 1834, when he moved into Mississippi. His death in 1837 threw upon the eldest son, then a boy of sixteen, the responsibility for the support of a large family. At first as a farm laborer, later as a horse and cattle dealer in a small way, and then as a trader in slaves and real estate, Forrest provided for their necessities, and gradually accumulated capital enough to purchase cotton plantations in Mississippi and Arkansas, which made him a rich man. He was married in 1845 to Mary Ann Montgomery. After 1849 he lived in Memphis, and was for some time an alderman. He enlisted in the Confederate army as a private in June 1861, but having raised a battalion for mounted service and equipped it at his own expense, he was appointed lieutenant-colonel in October. He took part in the defense of Fort Donelson, where he vigorously opposed the decision to surrender, declaring that it would be possible for a great part of the force to cut its way out. With the permission of the commanding general, he led his own command through a gap in the encircling line of Union troops, and brought it off in safety. Promoted colonel, he fought at Shiloh and was severely wounded during the retreat. Appointed brigadier-general in July 1862, he began the career of brilliant cavalry raiding which made him famous. From then until the end of the war he was chiefly engaged in bold raids against the Union communications or against posts deep within the Union lines. The wisdom of expending the army's cavalry upon such operations has been questioned, but there is no question of the brilliancy of Forrest's execution of the policy. Fighting generally on foot, and using his horses only as a means of rapid transportation, he covered ground with great speed and delivered surprise attacks against fortified posts, against superior forces in the open field, and even, on occasion, against river gunboats. A Union raid, made quite in Forrest's own style by Col. A. D. Streight in the spring of 1863, was broken up by Forrest's vigorous pursuit, ending in the capture of the whole force near Cedar Bluffs, Ala. Shortly after, Forrest received what was thought to be a fatal wound at the hand of a junior officer, aggrieved at an order of assignment, but Forrest killed his assailant, and recovered from his wound in time to take part in the Chickamauga campaign. Soon after the battle, he had a fierce altercation with Gen. Bragg, whom he accused of jealousy and unfair discrimination. Forrest was violent and insubordinate, while Bragg seems to have shown great forbearance; but Jefferson Davis, apparently feeling that Forrest was not being used to the best advantage, transferred him out of Bragg's command, and appointed him major-general. In the spring of 1864 Forrest raided as far north as Paducah, Ky. The one serious blot on his reputation is the slaughter of the negro soldiers which followed his capture of Fort Pillow, Apr. 12, 1864. No one now supposes him to have ordered a massacre, but his responsibility cannot so easily be put aside. It is inconceivable that he should have been ignorant of the temper of his men; yet he took no precautionary measures, but on the contrary sought to terrify the garrison by a threat of no quarter, as was his custom. If his men this time took him at his word—it is well attested that they entered the fort shouting "Forrest's orders"—it seems clear where the blame should lie. In June he gained one of his most notable victories, defeating a superior force under Gen. Sturgis at Brice's Cross Roads, Miss.

An engagement with Gen. A. J. Smith at Tupelo in July was at best a drawn battle, and is frequently called a Union victory. Here Forrest was wounded again, but retained his command, leading his cavalry in a buggy until he was able to ride once more. He was in chief command of the Confederate cavalry in the Nashville campaign. In February 1865 he was made lieutenant-general, and with the remnants of his cavalry corps opposed Wilson during the spring until his final defeat at Selma early in April. After his surrender, in May, he returned to his cotton plantations. He was involved in the early activities of the Ku Klux Klan, but his connection with the order does not seem to have lasted long. For some years he was president of the Selma, Marion & Memphis Railroad, a new road the construction of which resulted in financial disaster. He died at Memphis.

Forrest was of great height and commanding presence. Habitually he was mild in manner, quiet in speech, exemplary in language, in all respects appearing as the kind-hearted, considerate man that he actually was. He drank little, and used tobacco not at all. In anger or excitement he was transformed into a seeming maniac, terrifying to look upon, savage and profane. The excitement of battle, however, never impaired his observation or his judgment, but rather made them more keen, though his aggressive spirit led him sometimes to ride into the thick of the fight and join in personal combat, like a trooper rather than a general. He was several times wounded, and it has been reckoned up that twenty-nine horses were shot under him. His courage in cold blood was as great as in the heat of battle. Alone, and with no other weapon than a knife, he once overawed and dispersed a mob bent on lynching; and he dared to apologize, knowing himself to be in the wrong, when once challenged to a duel. Though wholly without formal education, he was able to speak and write clear and grammatical English. The tradition that his language was uncouth and that he was practically illiterate is founded on his utter inability to learn to spell and his habitual use of a few quaint dialectal expressions, such as *mout* for *might* and *fit* for *fought*. He had a talent for mathematics which had no opportunity to develop far. The military instinct in the man came near to genius. As he never commanded a considerable force of all arms, it remains a matter of speculation what he might have done in charge of an army, but as a leader of mounted troops he has had few equals.

[There are biographies by John Allan Wyeth, *Life of Gen. Nathan Bedford Forrest* (1899), and J. Harvey Mathes, *Gen. Forrest* (1902), and a brief sketch in *Confed. Mil. Hist.* (1899), I, 699–702. A eulogy by Lord Wolseley, published in the *United Service Mag.* (London), Apr.–May 1892, and reprinted in part in *Southern Hist. Soc. Papers*, XX (1892), 325–35, is often quoted. See also Thomas Jordan and J. P. Pryor, *Campaigns of Lieut.-Gen. N. B. Forrest* (1868); J. W. Morton, *The Artillery of Nathan Bedford Forrest's Cavalry* (1909); articles in *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887–88), vols. I, III, IV; *Official Records (Army)*, especially 1 ser., vols. VII, XXX (pts. 1, 2), XXXII (pt. 1), XXXIX (pt. 1), XLV (pt. 1); obituary in *Public Ledger* (Memphis), Oct. 30, 1877.] T. M. S.



**FORSYTH, JOHN** (Oct. 22, 1780–Oct. 21, 1841), statesman, was born at Fredericksburg, Va., the son of Robert and Fanny (Johnson) Houston Forsyth. His father, a descendant of James Forsyth, who came to Virginia from Scotland in 1680, won a major's rank in the Revolution, then served as the first federal marshal of Georgia. The son was educated at Princeton, then after his graduation in 1799 studied law and was admitted to the bar in 1802. Six years later, with his appointment as attorney-general of Georgia, his political career began. As representative, United States senator, governor of Georgia, minister to Spain, and secretary of state, he gave thirty years of his life to the public service. His first years in Congress (1813–18) coincided roughly with Madison's second term, and Forsyth was one of the President's supporters. He was promoted to the Senate late in 1818, but had scarcely taken his seat when he resigned to accept the appointment as minister to Spain (February 1819). The only work of importance which fell to him in this position was to procure the ratification by the King of the treaty of 1819, ceding Florida to the United States. His conduct in these negotiations added nothing to his fame. He had not yet developed the suavity and tact for which he later was known. Disliking the Spanish, he was peremptory and impatient, and was rebuked by the Spanish foreign office for his bad manners (McCormac, *John Forsyth*, p. 303). He succeeded, however, in securing the ratification of the treaty.

While Forsyth was still in Europe, his old constituency in Georgia reëlected him to Congress. This second period of congressional service extended from March 1823 to March 1827. In the latter year he was elected governor of Georgia. After one rather uneventful term he was again elected to the United States Senate and served from Nov. 9, 1829, to June 27, 1834. His second incumbency came during a period of importance in our national history. The country was divided politically by the issues raised during the "reign" of Andrew Jackson. The fight over the protective tariff, culminating in the nullification movement, was perhaps the most interesting episode of Jackson's career. In this and in other bitter controversies with his enemies, a group which

included nearly all of the prominent figures of the time, Jackson had the unswerving support of John Forsyth, who was one of his ablest champions. The two factions in Georgia at this time were the State-rights, or Troup party, comprising the planter aristocrats, and the Clark men, who were unionist in feeling. Forsyth had entered Congress in 1823 as an adherent of the State-rights party, and had supported Troup when the latter, as governor, had challenged the federal government in connection with the removal of the Indians. At heart, however, he was a unionist, and though long identified with the Troup faction, he was gradually alienated from his erstwhile State-rights supporters by the trend of events after 1828.

The nullification issue may be said to have begun in 1828 with the passage of the "tariff of abominations." As governor, Forsyth had denounced the measure in a message to the legislature and had referred to the possibility of neutralizing it by state action. In the Senate, with Troup, he voted against the tariff act of July 1832, which gave no relief to the South. Feeling was running high in that quarter. South Carolina, under Calhoun's leadership, was moving towards nullification. In November 1832 a convention met at Milledgeville, the capital, to denounce the tariff and to throw Georgia's support to South Carolina, even to the point of nullification. J. M. Berrien, an enemy of the President, was the leader of the nullifiers; Forsyth led the opposition. He not only regarded nullification as an ineffective constitutional remedy, but, as a strong administration man, felt called upon to support Jackson. On the second day of the convention Forsyth introduced resolutions calling for the appointment of a committee to examine the credentials of the members of the convention. This precipitated an oratorical contest surpassed by few in Georgia history. Berrien, who had been dubbed the "American Cicero," and Forsyth, regarded by contemporaries as the "best off-hand debater in the world," locked horns for three days. Forsyth contended in the debate that the convention was in no wise representative of Georgia sentiment since the members had not been selected in such a manner as to empower them to speak for the state. Many counties were wholly unrepresented. After protracted debate, his proposal was voted down, whereupon he seceded, followed by fifty of his adherents. His withdrawal proved permanent and had the effect of sobering the convention. Some of the newspapers denounced him; others praised him. The legislature left no room for doubt as to its position. Clear-cut resolutions were adopted con-

Forsyth

demning both nullification and the action of the convention. Meanwhile South Carolina proceeded to nullify the tariff acts of 1828 and 1832, eliciting from President Jackson his December proclamation. In March following, Congress passed the Force Bill. Forsyth cast his vote in favor of the bill, and for this he was severely condemned. In Macon he was burned in effigy. Grand juries elsewhere charged him with apostasy to Georgia and the South, and demanded his resignation.

It would be an exaggeration to affirm that in challenging the authority of the convention to speak for the state, in seceding from the convention, and in vigorously combating the doctrine of nullification Forsyth was responsible for Georgia's final action. Other leading politicians of the state were quite as strongly opposed to radical action. Had he aligned himself with Berrien, however, the two might have committed the state to nullification, and had Georgia supported South Carolina, the movement might have spread to alarming proportions. Certainly he stood out in the anti-nullification fight more distinctly and fearlessly than any other leader.

While Forsyth was still in the Senate Jackson began his fight on the second Bank of the United States. Endorsing the President's attitude toward the bank, the Georgian delivered a striking speech after the Senate had passed the resolutions censuring Jackson for removing the government deposits. He justified the President's conduct, and in his peroration paid him an eloquent tribute for his courageous stand in the nullification crisis. "The cup of bitterness, humiliation, and woe passed untasted from our lips. Would it thus have passed away if that despised, reprobated, vilified, hated, but just and stern, old man had not occupied the House and the hearts of the people?" In recognition of the services of the senator, Jackson in 1834 appointed him secretary of state. Forsyth held the post for the remainder of Jackson's term and through the administration of Van Buren. During these years the most interesting matters which awaited settlement were the disagreeable contest with France over the treaty of 1831 and the question of the admission of Texas into the Union. The quarrel with France concerned the adjustment of our claims for losses to American vessels during the Napoleonic wars. In 1831 Jackson succeeded in negotiating a treaty with France according to which $5,000,000 were to be paid in six annual installments, and the United States was to lower the duties on French wines. Though the American government immediately carried into effect her part of the agreement, internal political conditions in France were

such that Louis Philippe was unable to get the Chamber to make the necessary appropriations to pay the annual installments on the American debt. A long, bitter, and irritating contest followed. Jackson, adamant in insisting upon our rights, and supported by Forsyth and Livingston, our ambassador, succeeded in arranging for the payment of the installments (McCormac, *post*, ch. ii). John Fiske well summarized the incident: "The days when foreign powers could safely insult us were evidently gone by."

The Texas question presented a grave problem. A number of negotiators or ministers extraordinary were sent from time to time by Texas after the revolution from Mexico to discuss recognition and annexation with President Jackson and with Secretary Forsyth. The reports of the emissaries to their government showed that they had great difficulty in learning just what the attitude of the administration was. Forsyth seemed generally to be opposed to both recognition and admission, but in the end nothing had been done at the time of his retirement.

By all accounts Forsyth was a man of uncommon personal attractions. His form and features were described as classical, his manners courtly. He was even-tempered and had a rich sense of humor. As an orator he had few equals. His voice was clear, resonant, pleasant to the ear, and well modulated, and his contemporaries appear to have almost unanimously agreed that he was the most powerful debater of his time. He was "acute, witty, full of resources, and ever prompt, —impetuous as Murat in a charge, adroit as Soult when flanked and outnumbered" (Miller, *post*, p. 51). Strongly inclined toward fashionable life and its "heartless formalities," he was not a popular man, for he had little concern for the interests of the masses; his world was that of the diplomat and courtier. In early life he married Clara, the daughter of Josiah Meigs, the first president of Franklin College (later the University of Georgia), and established a home near Augusta, Ga. Of his children the best-known were John, minister to Mexico in 1856; and Julia, wife of Alfred Iverson, United States senator from Georgia.

[Stephen F. Miller, in *The Bench and Bar of Ga.* (1858), vol. II, gives an excellent sketch of Forsyth's career. See also Jennie Forsyth Jeffries, *A Hist. of the Forsyth Family* (1920); W. F. Northen, ed., *Men of Mark in Ga.*, II (1910); E. Merton Coulter, "The Nullification Movement in Ga.," in the *Ga. Hist. Quart.*, Mar. 1921; U. B. Phillips, *Ga. and State Rights* (1902), published as vol. II of the annual reports of the American Historical Association; C. G. Bowers, *The Party Battles of the Jackson Period* (1922); E. I. McCormac in *Am. Secretaries of State and their Diplomacy*, vol. IV (1928)].

R. P. B—s.



**FORSYTH, JOHN** (Dec. 31, 1810–Oct. 17, 1886), Associate Reformed clergyman, college professor, was born in Newburgh, N. Y., the son of John and Jane (Currie) Forsyth. His father, who emigrated to the United States from Scotland, seems to have been a devout Calvinist, for clergymen of that persuasion, coming to Newburgh to act as examiners in the Associate Reformed Seminary, were regularly entertained in the Forsyth home. From these clerical visitors the boy may have caught his ambition to enter the ministry. Upon his graduation from Rutgers College in 1829 he studied theology at the University of Edinburgh, where he had Thomas Chalmers for a teacher. He was licensed by the Presbytery of Aberdeen in April 1833, was ordained by the Presbytery of New York in July of the following year, and was pastor of the Second Associate Reformed Church in Philadelphia until 1837. In these few years he had gained in his own denomination a reputation for piety and learning sufficient to secure him a call to the seminary in his native town. Since that institution had only two professors, Forsyth had to cover the fields of Hebrew, Greek, and archeology and at the same time act as pastor of the Union Church in Newburgh. In 1845, after eight years of teaching, he resigned from the seminary. He was professor of Latin in the College of New Jersey 1847–53, and then returned to the Newburgh seminary, this time as professor of church history and exegetical theology. As further evidence of his varied interests and his willingness to teach almost any subject, he filled the chair of English literature and rhetoric in Rutgers College 1859–62, lectured on history at the College of New Jersey 1864–72, and then became chaplain and professor of geography, history, and ethics in the United States Military Academy at West Point, serving from July 28, 1871, till Dec. 12, 1881, when he was put on the retired list. During these years Forsyth had written diligently for various church papers, especially for the *Christian Intelligencer*. To the *Biblical Repertory and Princeton Review* he contributed a number of substantial articles. He also published sermons and occasional addresses, translated and annotated several books on theology, and did a good deal of work for the English edition of Lange's *Commentary*. As a man he was greatly esteemed for his learning, piety, kindliness, and courtesy. For many years he was president of the Newburgh board of education. There, in the town of his birth, he lived out his life and was survived by his wife, Ann D. Heyer.

[*Biog. Notices of Grads. of Rutgers Coll. deceased during the Academical Year ending in June 1887* (1887); *Gen. Cat. of Princeton Univ. 1746–1906*

(1908); F. G. Forsyth de Fronsac, *Memorial of the Family of Forsyth de Fronsac* (1903); *A Record of the Inscriptions in the Old Town Burying Ground of Newburgh, N. Y.* (1898); G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg. of the . . . U. S. Mil. Acad.*, vol. I (3rd ed., 1891); *N. Y. Daily Tribune*, Oct. 18, 1886; *Christian Intelligencer* (N. Y.), Oct. 20, 1886; E. T. Corwin, *Manual of the Reformed Ch. in America* (4th ed., 1902) contains list of writings.]

G. H. G.

**FORSYTH, THOMAS** (Dec. 5, 1771–Oct. 29, 1833), Indian agent, explorer, lived under two flags. He first rendered allegiance to Great Britain, since he was born at Detroit while it was still an English outpost; later he became an American citizen and actively aided the United States on the frontier. His father, William Forsyth, emigrated about 1750 from the north of Ireland; enlisted in a Royal regiment, and was wounded in 1759 at the battle on the Plains of Abraham. In 1764 at Quebec he married Ann, widow of John Kinzie, then moved to Detroit, where before the birth of his son, he opened a famous inn, close to the fort. Thomas grew up with such education as the frontier town afforded, and after his father's death in 1790 entered the fur-trade, acting as clerk for George Sharp. His first assignment was at Saginaw among the Ottawa Indians. After the Americans in 1796 took possession of Detroit young Forsyth with a partner named Richardson opened a fur-trade post near Quincy, Ill. In 1804 he formed a partnership with his half-brother, John Kinzie, who had just settled at Chicago. Forsyth took station at Peoria Lake, after having married that same year at Detroit Keziah Malotte, who as a child had been captured by Indians during the frontier wars. He lived at Peoria until the hostilities of the War of 1812 began, but during the war removed his family to St. Louis. Before 1812 he had offered his services to the American government and had been appointed Indian sub-agent. He was successful in persuading the powerful tribe of the Potawatomi on the Illinois River to remain neutral during the struggle, although a price was put upon his head by British agents, and he was preserved from assassination or capture only by the good-will of his Indian friends. He protected the exposed frontier of the Americans and ransomed captives taken at Chicago in 1812, notably Lieut. Helm. After the treaty of peace he was employed in negotiations with the Indians of his locality. He also kept his agency at Peoria until 1819, when he was sent on a mission to the Indians of the headwaters of the Mississippi and ascended the stream in a keel-boat, examining the country as he went. Later in the same year he was promoted to a full agency and stationed at Fort Armstrong, near Rock Island, where he cared for the tribes of the Sauk and Foxes, and came to be known to them



as Mah-tah-win (The Corn). After his retirement in 1830 he lived at St. Louis, where he engaged himself in writing his experiences and what he knew of Indian languages, manners, and custom. It has been said of him that he had a "well-balanced mind in a sound and athletic body. He was a gifted talker and a most pleasant and entertaining companion. Benevolence and kindness of heart were his predominant traits. . . . His private life was amiable and blameless" (Scharf, *post*, II, 1293–94). His share in opening the West to civilization and in saving the frontier from Indian depredations was considerable.

[Forsyth's manuscripts are in the Mo. Hist. Soc., and in the Wis. Hist. Soc. The latter agency has published his Mississippi journal and a biographical sketch in *Wis. Hist. Colls.*, VI (1872), 188–214; and other papers and letters in *Ibid.*, XI (1888), 316–52. His "Account of the Manners and Customs of the Sauk and Fox Indians" is printed in E. H. Blair, *Indian Tribes of the Upper Miss. Valley and Region of the Great Lakes* (1911), II, 183–245. See also John Reynolds, *Pioneer Hist. of Ill.* (1887), 246–52; E. B. Washburne, *Edwards Papers* (1884), *passim*.]

L. P. K.

**FORTEN, JAMES** (Sept. 2, 1766–Mar. 4, 1842), sail-maker, was descended from people who had lived in Pennsylvania for several generations. His father, Thomas Forten, died when he was but seven years old. James attended in Philadelphia the school of the Quaker Abolitionist, Anthony Benezet, but left in 1775, when he was not more than nine years of age, and went to work to help his mother. At fourteen he entered the service of the colonial navy, in the *Royal Louis*, commanded by Capt. Decatur, and was among those captured by the British ship *Amphion*. It happened, however, that the commander's son was on board, who exacted from his father the promise that James should not be forced to enlist in the English service. This pleased the young negro, for he feared being sold into slavery in the West Indies. In course of time he was transferred to a prison ship lying near New York, and he remained there through a raging pestilence until the prisoners were exchanged. Another voyage then took him to London for a year. On his return to Philadelphia he was apprenticed to Robert Bridges, a sail-maker, and in his twentieth year he became foreman of the working force. He afterwards became owner of the sail-loft, and about this time married the woman who became the mother of his eight children. Prospering in business, he ultimately won a considerable fortune.

In 1814, with Richard Allen and Absalom Jones, Forten secured 2,500 negro volunteers to protect the city of Philadelphia. His establish-

ment was near the water, and at different times not less than seven persons were saved from drowning by his promptness and efficiency. Under date of May 9, 1821, the Humane Society of Philadelphia gave him a formal certificate of appreciation for having rescued four of these persons. In his mature life Forten was keenly interested in the welfare of the negro people, and in 1817 presided over a meeting in Bethel Church called to oppose the designs of the American Colonization Society. In his business he refused to furnish rigging to the owners of slave-vessels. He was also interested in the work of the temperance and the peace societies, and defended woman's rights. His success in business and his philanthropic spirit made him easily one of the foremost negroes in the country in his time. He commanded the highest respect in Philadelphia, and his funeral was attended by a vast throng of people.

[Robt. Purvis, *Remarks on the Life and Character of Jas. Forten* (1842); L. Maria Child, *The Freedmen's Book* (1865); *Wm. Lloyd Garrison: The Story of his Life Told by his Children* (4 vols., 1885–89), *passim*; B. T. Washington, *The Story of the Negro* (1909).]

B.B.

**FORTIER, ALCÉE** (June 5, 1856–Feb. 14, 1914), educator, author, historian, civic leader, was born in St. James Parish, La., the son of Florent Fortier, of French Breton stock, and Edwige Aime, daughter of a beloved planter. After his early schooling in New Orleans, Fortier went for some time to the University of Virginia, studied law, then left a banking clerkship to enter the teaching profession. After a short experience in the New Orleans Boys' High School, he became principal of the preparatory department of the University of Louisiana (later Tulane University). In 1880 he was given the chair of French in the university, in 1894 he became professor of Romance languages, and in 1913 he was made dean of the graduate department. His devotion to Tulane was unbounded. He studied constantly, specializing in Romance languages under Elliott at Johns Hopkins and in Paris under Passy. His *Sept grands Auteurs du XIXe siècle* (1889), *Histoire de la Littérature française* (1893), and other studies for the classroom show able scholarship. His great interest, however, lay in Creole history and customs, and to this field he contributed *Bits of Louisiana Folklore* (1888); *Louisiana Studies* (1894); *Louisiana Folk Tales* (1895); a *History of Louisiana* (1904), his masterwork; and an *Encyclopedia of Louisiana* (1908). In addition to these works, he published *Le Château de Chambord* (1884); *Central America and Mexico* (1907), written in collaboration with J. R. Fick-



len; *Gabriel d'Ennerich* (1886); and *Voyage en Europe* (1895). He also made frequent contributions to the press, to encyclopedias, and to the *Comptes Rendus* of l'Athénée Louisianais.

Fortier was so devoted to his native state that he refused several calls to important universities. He was for twenty-two years president of l'Athénée Louisianais; for eighteen he directed the Louisiana Historical Society; and he was a member of every French and Franco-American organization in Louisiana. He also took part in civic affairs, serving as chairman of the civil service commission, as curator of the Louisiana State Museum, and as a member of the state board of education. Outside of the state he gained a wider recognition of his ability as president of the American Folklore Society, of the Modern Language Association, of the Fédération de l'Alliance Française. A devout Roman Catholic, he was five times president of the Catholic Winter School, an active member of the St. Vincent Society, and a contributor to the *Catholic Encyclopedia*. As a man Fortier was active and energetic; as a writer, straightforward and sincere. Believing that conscious effort was necessary to preserve Creole tradition and culture, by painstaking labor and study he paved the way for the scientific study of Louisiana history. His wife was Marie Lanauze, who with five of their eight children survived him.

[Obituary notices were published in the *Daily States*, *Daily Item*, *Picayune*, *Times-Democrat*, and *l'Abeille* at the time of his death. The *Comptes Rendus* of l'Athénée Louisianais, Apr. 1, 1914, contains a good biographical sketch. See also Grace King, *Creole Families of New Orleans* (1921); the *Times-Democrat*, Mar. 20, 27, 1892; *The South in the Building of the Nation* (1909), vol. XI; *The Lib. of Southern Literature* (1909), vol. IV; *Biog. and Hist. Memoirs of La.* (1892), vol. I.]

L.C.D.

**FORWARD, WALTER** (Jan. 24, 1786–Nov. 24, 1852), congressman, secretary of the treasury, was born at Old Granby (now East Granby), Conn., the son of Samuel and Susannah Holcombe Forward. When he was fourteen years of age, his parents moved to a farm near Aurora, Ohio. After working with his father for three years, he left home without money, and made his way to Pittsburgh, then a town of fewer than 5,000 inhabitants, to begin the study of law. By the merest accident he secured employment and the opportunity to study in the office of Henry Baldwin [*q.v.*], one of the best-known attorneys in Pennsylvania and subsequently associate justice of the United States Supreme Court. Among his other duties Forward edited for Baldwin for several years the *Tree of Liberty*, a Democratic paper of wide

circulation and influence. So rapidly did his legal work progress that he was admitted to the bar in 1806, and soon established an enviable record as a trial lawyer. After a creditable tenure in the state legislature, Forward was chosen at a special election, Dec. 2, 1822, to take the place of Henry Baldwin who had resigned his seat in Congress and he was reëlected to the following Congress, serving until Mar. 4, 1825. Both in the committee on manufactures and on the floor of the House, he advocated the enactment of a high protective tariff, a policy which he vigorously upheld during the remainder of his life. He failed of reëlection to the Nineteenth Congress. In 1824, he attended the congressional caucus (the last of its kind ever held) which nominated William H. Crawford for the presidency; but as a protest against this method of nomination he gave his support to Andrew Jackson in the campaign. Four years later, however, he definitely allied himself with the National Republicans. In 1830, he was a delegate to the general convention of the National Republicans at Baltimore; and in 1834 he played an important part in the formation of the Whig party. He was an outstanding member of the Pennsylvania constitutional convention of 1837–38. Among other things he advocated suitable provisions for the education of the poor at public expense.

Partly as a reward for his services in the campaign of 1840, President Harrison appointed Forward district attorney for the western district of Pennsylvania. Upon declining to accept this position he was named the first comptroller of the currency. Following the death of President Harrison and John Tyler's accession to the presidency, he was appointed secretary of the treasury in the reorganized cabinet. Although embarrassed in many ways by the defection of the Whig leaders from Tyler and by his own repeated disagreement with the policies of his chief, he continued in office until Feb. 28, 1843, when he resigned to resume the practise of law. With the return of the Whigs to power in 1849 under President Zachary Taylor, he was appointed Nov. 8, 1849, chargé d'affaires to Denmark. After spending two years at Copenhagen, he returned to Pittsburgh to become president judge of the district court of Allegheny County. He was an active member of the Methodist Church, a devoted worker in the cause of temperance, one of the founders of the Pittsburgh Philosophical and Philological Society, and a lifelong advocate of internal improvements. He married Henrietta Barclay of Greensburg, Pa., Jan. 31, 1808.



[The best single account is found in an article by Robert M. Ewing, "Hon. Walter Forward," published in the *Western Pa. Hist. Mag.*, Apr. 1925, with an excellent bibliography. See also J. W. F. White, "The Judiciary of Allegheny County," in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July 1883; H. M. Brackenridge, *Recollections of the West* (1868); J. N. Boucher, *A Century and a Half of Pittsburgh and Her People* (1908); *Pittsburgh Gazette*, Nov. 25, 1852.]

A. E. M.

**FORWOOD, WILLIAM HENRY** (Sept. 7, 1838–May 12, 1915), army medical officer, was born at Brandywine Hundred, Del., to Robert and Rachel Way (Larkin) Forwood. He was educated in the local public schools and in Chester Academy at Chester, Pa. He was graduated from the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania in 1861, just as the Civil War was beginning. In August of that year he was appointed assistant surgeon in the army and detailed as executive officer of Seminary Hospital at Georgetown, D. C. After a few months of this service he was sent to field duty as regimental surgeon of the 14th Infantry and later served as acting medical director of Sykes's division in the Army of the Potomac. Following a short tour in the office of the medical director in Washington, he again saw field duty as surgeon of the 6th Cavalry in Stoneman's division. He took part in the battles of Yorktown, Gaines's Mill, Malvern Hill, the second Bull Run, Antietam, Gettysburg, and Brandy Station. In the latter engagement he received a severe gunshot wound through the chest. After his recovery he was assigned as executive officer of Satterlee General Hospital at West Philadelphia and later was placed in command of the medical storeship *Marcy C. Day*. The end of the war found him in command of Whitehall General Hospital near Bristol, Pa., a hospital of two thousand beds, which he had built. Routine post duty in the West and South occupied much of Forwood's next twenty-five years. He had experience with cholera in Kansas and with yellow fever in Texas. During the years from 1879 to 1883 he acted as surgeon and naturalist for the military reconnaissance and exploring expeditions to the northwest which were conducted annually under instructions from Gen. Philip Sheridan. President Arthur and Secretary Robert T. Lincoln accompanied the last of these expeditions. In 1890 Forwood became attending surgeon at the Soldiers' Home at Washington. During part of his service here he occupied the chairs of surgery and surgical pathology (1895–97) and of military surgery (1897–98) in the medical department of the Georgetown University, which conferred upon him the honorary degree of LL.D. When the Army Medical School was organized in 1893 he became professor of military surgery,

and with the reorganization of the school in 1901, following the Spanish War, he returned to it as president of the faculty. The flood of sick coming up from Cuba in the summer of 1898 caused the establishment of a great hospital and convalescent camp at Montauk Point, L. I., and of this camp Forwood was made chief medical officer. Later in the year he selected the site and superintended the construction of a general hospital for returning troops at Savannah, Ga. In December he was ordered to San Francisco as chief surgeon of the Department of California, a position of increasing importance on account of probable hostilities in the Philippines. In 1901 he returned to a desk in the office of the surgeon-general in Washington. When Gen. Sternberg retired in June 1902, Forwood had but three months to serve before his own compulsory retirement for age. He was, however, appointed surgeon-general of the army for this brief period, an act which gave great satisfaction to the whole medical service. Retired in September 1902, he lived quietly in Washington until his death.

Forwood's more important contributions to professional literature are his monographs on military surgery in Vol. II of William H. Dennis's *System of Surgery* (1895–96) and in Vol. II of J. C. Warren and A. P. Gould's *International Textbook of Surgery* (1900). From February 1898 to February 1899 he was in charge of "The Military Surgeon," a supplement to the *National Medical Review*. Never a remarkable operator himself, he was a profound student of surgery and was an able instructor. His army career shows him frequently assigned to positions calling for executive skill. He was married on Sept. 28, 1870, to Mary Osbourne, daughter of Antrim Osbourne of Media, Pa. They had no children.

[*Alumni Reg.* (Univ. of Pa.), Nov. 1902; J. E. Pilcher, *The Surgeon Generals of the Army* (1905); *Medic. News* (N. Y.), June 14, 1902; *Mil. Surgeon*, June 1915; *Evening Star* (Washington), May 12, 1915.] J.M.P.

**FOSDICK, CHARLES AUSTIN** (Sept. 16, 1842–Aug. 22, 1915), author, was known to successive generations of youthful readers only by his pen name of Harry Castlemon. In the forty years beginning with 1864 he published fifty-eight boys' books, some of which ran into as many as thirty editions. Although he had ingratiating rivals in Oliver Optic, Horatio Alger, Edward S. Ellis, and G. A. Henty, he was perhaps the most beloved of them all. His popularity began to decline in the first years of the twentieth century, but even in 1912 publishers found it profitable to keep all his books in print. He was born at Randolph, N. Y., the son of John Spencer Fosdick by



his first wife, Eunice Andrews. While he was still a baby the family moved to Buffalo, where his father was principal of a public school. Charles attended the Central High School. One day his composition teacher remarked casually that it was possible that some of the boys in the class might later earn their living by writing. Years afterward Fosdick recalled the incident and believed that his ambition to become a writer had been awakened by it. When the Civil War broke out he went to Cairo, Ill., and enlisted as a landsman in the Mississippi Squadron. He served on gunboats patrolling the great river, saw the bombardment of Vicksburg as well as minor engagements, and was steadily promoted until at last he was made superintendent of coal for the squadron. These years on the Mississippi were his preparation for authorship. Although his later books deal with regions and adventures unknown to him at first-hand, his earlier ones are filled with reminiscences, adaptations, and enlargements of his own experiences. When the war on the river ended and he was once more free, he secured a position as clerk in a store at Villa Ridge, Ill., about ten miles north of Cairo, and in his spare time labored over his writing. When he was twenty-five he married Sarah Stoddard of Villa Ridge. His first book, *Frank, the Young Naturalist* (1864) was so successful that Fosdick proceeded to take his hero, Frank Nelson, through the adventures in which he himself had participated on a gunboat, in the woods, before Vicksburg, on the lower Mississippi, and on the prairie. To a generation of youngsters whose fathers had fought in the Civil War, these books made an irresistible appeal with their brisk, unadorned narrative, their exemplification of manly virtues in place of the namby-pamby of the Rollo books, their air of reality, and their full-blooded Northern patriotism. Fosdick usually wrote his books in series of three or six, each story in itself complete but temptingly baited with allusions to previous and subsequent adventures of its hero and his friends. Among them were a Gunboat, a Rocky Mountain, a Sportsman's Club, a Frank Nelson, a Boy Trapper, a Roughing It, a Rod and Gun, a Go-Ahead, a War, a Houseboat, an Afloat and Ashore, and a Pony Express series—names that suggest Fosdick's relation to Fenimore Cooper, the Davy Crockett legend, and the American cult of the outdoors. Though a diligent and rather careful writer, he made no large profit on his books, which he appears to have sold to his publishers for a lump sum. From 1875 on he lived in Westfield, N. Y. His wife acted as his copyist and proof-reader and helped him in numerous other

ways; when she died in 1904 he gave up writing, traveled a little, and spent his last years with his son in Hamburg, N. Y. By the time of his death he had been almost forgotten as a person.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1914–15; *Buffalo Express*, Aug. 23, 1915; N. Y. *Evening Post*, Aug. 28, 1915; L. L. Fosdick, *Fosdick Family* (privately printed, 1891), p. 128; letter to author from Raymond B. Fosdick, his nephew, June 15, 1928.] G.H.G.

**FOSDICK, WILLIAM WHITEMAN** (Jan. 28, 1825–Mar. 8, 1862), author, was born in Cincinnati, the son of Thomas R. Fosdick, a banker. His mother, Julia (Drake) Fosdick, was an actress, the daughter of Samuel Drake [*q.v.*], and by a later marriage the mother of Julia Dean [*q.v.*]. As a boy he studied at home under a Rev. Samuel Johnson; later he attended the Cincinnati College and the Transylvania University in Kentucky. In the two or three years after he left college, in addition to writing much poetry, he studied law in Louisville, spent a winter in Mobile, then after further roaming settled down as a lawyer in Cincinnati. During 1848–49 he traveled in Texas and Mexico, and in 1851 published in Cincinnati his historical romance, *Malmiztic the Toltec, and the Cavaliers of the Cross*. Its style was ornate and eloquent, but by that, perhaps, he was so much the more definitely recognized as "promising," and in 1852 he changed his residence to New York. He lived there for five or six years, ostensibly a lawyer but in fact somewhat of a litterateur. In 1855 he published *Ariel and Other Poems*, in which he carried the story of the sprite beyond the record in *The Tempest*. He had been attracted to the subject, he said, by the remembrance that it was only in this play that Shakespeare had recognized America. Other themes discussed in the volume were Daniel Boone, William Cullen Bryant, and a New York wedding-feast, handled in parody of the *Ancient Mariner*. During his residence in New York he had two experiences which he specially did not enjoy—the lecture tour which he made through New England in behalf of the Nebraska Emigration Company, and the destruction by fire, in the Harper publishing house, of a manuscript upon which he had put all his hopes of literary distinction. About 1857 he returned to live in Cincinnati and there spent his last years. He was most agreeable personally, and for some time after his death he persisted in local tradition as a "born poet, a true wit, a boon companion of artists and literary men, a courteous gentleman, loved and admired by every man, woman, and child who knew him" (Venable, *post*, p. 114).

[W. T. Coggeshall, *Poets and Poetry of the West* (1860); *Cincinnati Daily Commercial*, Mar. 10, 1862;



W. H. Venable, *Beginnings of Literary Culture in the Ohio Valley* (1891).] J.D.W.

**FOSS, CYRUS DAVID** (Jan. 17, 1834–Jan. 29, 1910), clergyman, educator, bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, was born in Kingston, N. Y., the son of Cyrus, also a Methodist minister, and Jane (Campbell) Foss. From boyhood he showed high intellectual ability, and after preparing for college at Amenia Seminary, he entered Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., from which he graduated at the head of his class when he was but twenty years old. Returning to Amenia as instructor in mathematics, he remained there until 1857, during the last year of which period he was principal. He then joined the New York Conference of the Methodist Church, and until 1859 was stationed at Chester, N. Y. From that time until he was elected president of Wesleyan University in 1875, his appointments were all to churches in New York and Brooklyn. On Mar. 20, 1856, he was married to Mary E. Bradley of Salisbury, Conn., who died Sept. 7, 1863; and on May 10, 1865, to Amelia Robertson of Peekskill, N. Y.

When he became head of Wesleyan, it was in such financial straits that its existence seemed imperiled, but largely through his wisdom and energy the peril was averted and the institution put on a sound basis. It was not financial success alone that marked his administration, however, and "no president of Wesleyan University," according to its historian, "was ever more respected; none was ever more beloved" (C. T. Winchester, "Historical Sketch of Wesleyan University," in Frank W. Nicolson, *Alumni Record of Wesleyan University*, 1911). The General Conference of 1880 elected him bishop, and he took up his episcopal residence in Minneapolis, changing it to Philadelphia in 1888, where it remained until his death. He was a fraternal delegate to the British Wesleyan Conference, London, in 1886; and officially visited the Methodist missions of Europe that same year. In 1893 he made a similar visitation in Mexico, and in 1897–98 one in India and Malaysia; while in 1906–07 he undertook a missionary tour of observation around the world. From 1888 to 1906 he was president of the Methodist Board of Church Extension. Good judgment and fixity of purpose characterized all his administrative work. He was a stanch believer in Methodism, and gave unwavering acceptance to the ancient doctrines as expressed in the Apostles' Creed. Not only his abilities but his kindness, his unfailing courtesy, and his innate goodness won him esteem and affection. His sermons were direct, forceful, rich in allusions, and fired with enthu-

siasms for Christian beliefs and institutions. A short collection of them under the title, *Religious Certainties,* was published in 1905. One of the fruits of his missionary tours was *From the Himalayas to the Equator* (1899). The National Temperance Society published his sermon, *Temperance and the Pulpit* (1871), and the periodicals of his day contain numerous contributions from him.

[The *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.), Feb. 3, 1910, contains portrait and sketch of his career. See also a memoir by John G. Oakley, in *Minutes of the . . . N. Y. Conf. of the M. E. Ch.* (1910); obituary notices in Phila. *Press* and *Public Ledger,* Jan. 30, 1910; and *Who's Who in America,* 1908–09.] H. E. S.

**FOSS, SAM WALTER** (June 19, 1858–Feb. 26, 1911), poet, journalist, humorist, librarian, was born at Candia, N. H., the son of Dyer and Polly (Hardy) Foss. He was of Huguenot origin and through his father a descendant of Stephen Bachiler, the ancestor of Webster, Fessenden, Allison, Whittier, and other well-known men. His father was a farmer, and highly esteemed by his fellow townsmen. His mother died when he was four years old. As a boy he worked on the farm and went to school in winter. When he was fourteen his father, having married again, moved to Portsmouth, N. H. The son attended the Portsmouth High School, in which he received literary encouragement, and at graduation in 1877 he was chosen class poet. The following year he spent at the Tilton Seminary. He then entered Brown University and was graduated in 1882. As a student he was poor in purse, and, living at a distance from the college, took little part in student activities. In his vacations he worked on his father's farm. He contributed poems to the *Brunonian,* the college literary fortnightly, of which he became an editor, and was class odist and poet. During the year after graduation he was a book agent in company with his friend William E. Smythe. The two bought the Lynn, Mass., *Union* in 1883, changing its name in the same year to the *Saturday Union.* Foss became proprietor and sole editor in 1884. Having arranged for the supply of a humorous column, he found himself one week without it, and was forced to write the column himself. The compliments on his humor which he received encouraged him to continue to write the column, and in time his work attracted the notice of Wolcott Balestier, the editor of *Tid-Bits,* who sought his contributions. Soon he made connections with *Puck, Judge,* the *Sun,* and other New York publications, as well as with the *Christian Endeavor World* and the *Youth's Companion.* In 1887 he went to Boston to become editor of the *Yankee Blade* and an editorial writer for the



*Boston Globe.* He held both positions for seven years. During this period he wrote a poem a week for his own paper, and in 1893 and 1894 a poem a day for a syndicate. In 1898 he became librarian of the Somerville Public Library, and this position he held during the rest of his life. Though he came untrained into librarianship, he was soon regarded as a force in public library activity, and in 1904 he was elected president of the Massachusetts Library Club. His latest literary activity was writing the "Library Alcove" for the *Christian Science Monitor* (Oct. 6, 1909–Mar. 1, 1911). His poetry was collected and published under the titles *Back Country Poems* (1892); *Whiffs from Wild Meadows* (1895); *Dreams in Homespun* (1897); *Songs of War and Peace* (1899); *The Song of the Library Staff* (1906); and *Songs of the Average Man* (1907). His class poem, *The Hesperian,* was printed in the *Brunonian* for June 21, 1882. To his last volume were added in 1911 eight poems, closing with his noble swan-song, *The Trumpets,* written at Christmas time when he was contemplating going to the hospital. In speech Foss was rapid and unstudied. In manner he retained a trace of the farmer boy. The medallion by Recchia in the Somerville Public Library and in replica at Brown University is a marvelously lifelike portrait representing him as a laughing philosopher. He married in 1887 Carrie Maria Conant, daughter of the Rev. Henry W. Conant of Providence, R. I.

Foss won his popularity as a humorous poet chiefly in dialect, the everyday speech of the New Hampshire countryman, but his work is essentially a philosophy of life unfolding itself through humorous examples. He had always a fellow-feeling with those who toil, and a contempt for idlers and self-pitiers. His best-known poem, *The House by the Side of the Road,* goes back to Homer for its inspiration. His *Calf-Path* is a permanent contribution to satire. He was a master of rhythm and rhyme, with an Aristophanian *flair* for word jugglery. His poetry is unfailingly sincere, representing not merely his convictions but also his personal life. Like many another humorist he found himself the prisoner of his popularity, for the public, having come to count on him to raise a laugh, took little interest in most of his serious or purely poetic writings. He had looked forward to retiring with an independence sufficient to permit him to write regardless of money returns, but he died in harness.

[*Who's Who in America,* 1910–11; M. S. Woodman, *Sam Walter Foss, Poet, Librarian and Friend to Man* (1922); H. L. Koopman, in *Brown Alumni Monthly,* Oct. 1908; Peter MacQueen, in the *Nat. Mag.,* May 1909; W. E. Foster, in the *Brown Alumni*

*Monthly*, Apr. 1911; J. M. Chapple, in the *Boston Globe*, Feb. 27, 1911; W. E. Jillson, in the *Providence Jour.*, June 11, 1922; *Hist. Cat. of Brown Univ., 1864–1914.*] H.L.K.

**FOSTER, ABIEL** (Aug. 8, 1735–Feb. 6, 1806), clergyman, congressman, was the son of Asa and Elizabeth (Abbott) Foster. He was born at Andover, Mass., graduated at Harvard in 1756, studied theology, and in 1761 was ordained minister at Canterbury, N. H., then a rapidly growing frontier settlement. His father had invested in lands in this district and several of his brothers moved there about the same time. For eighteen years he continued his ministerial duties in this town and its records show that he was also active in various secular affairs. The last years of his pastorate were embittered by a factional quarrel in the church and in 1779 he was formally dismissed. He now abandoned the ministry and henceforth devoted himself to public service. While pastor he had been twice married: on May 15, 1761, to Hannah Badger, daughter of Joseph Badger of Gilmanton (died Jan. 10, 1768); and on Oct. 11, 1769, to Mary Rogers, daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Wise) Rogers of Ipswich, Mass. He was an active supporter of the Revolutionary movement and a member of the Provincial Congress at Exeter in 1775. From 1779 to 1783 he represented Canterbury in the legislature, and was a delegate to Congress from 1783 to 1785. The records of the latter body show that he was faithful in attendance and active in the performance of miscellaneous routine duties. In 1784 he was appointed a judge in the court of common pleas and continued his duties for four years. This court did not as yet require the services of men learned in the law, and justice could be satisfactorily administered by persons of integrity and common sense. Following the adoption of the Constitution he was elected to the First Congress, was defeated for reëlection, and in the interim between March 1791 and his election to the Fourth Congress in 1794, devoted himself to New Hampshire affairs, serving in the Senate 1791–93, one term as president of that body, and also as a member of the important constitutional convention of 1791–92. His second period of service in Congress covered the years from Dec. 7, 1795 to Mar. 4, 1803. His health began to fail during his last term and he retired from active politics in the latter year. He was never active in debate but consistently supported Federalist policies, and he was a dependable member of that party. William Plumer, whose judgments of his contemporaries were inclined to harshness, describes him as "more distinguished for practical than theoretical knowledge" but possessed of honesty and sound judgment. Furthermore, "he never avoided voting upon any question."

[A brief sketch by Wm. Plumer appears in *N. H. State Papers*, XXI (1892), 798; James O. Lyford, *Hist. of the Town of Canterbury, N. H., 1727–1912* (1912); Wm. Patrick, *Hist. Sketches of Canterbury, N. H.* (1834); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1858, Jan. 1859, Jan. 1876.] W.A.R.

**FOSTER, ABIGAIL KELLEY** (Jan. 15, 1810–Jan. 14, 1887), Abolitionist and woman's rights advocate, was the daughter of Wing and Diana (Daniels) Kelley of Pelham, Mass. She was of Irish-Quaker descent, and James Russell Lowell in the well-known "Letter from Boston" (*Pennsylvania Freeman*, Jan. 1847), in which he describes the Abolitionist leaders, refers to her as "A Judith, there, turned Quakeress." Abby Kelley, as she was usually called by contemporaries and subsequent writers, became a teacher at Worcester, Millbury, and Lynn. While teaching in the Friends School in the last-named town she was impressed by Garrison's attack on slavery and in 1837 abandoned teaching for the lecture platform, giving her services gratuitously to the anti-slavery cause. She conducted a campaign in Massachusetts in company with Angelina Grimké and is reported to be the first Massachusetts woman to have regularly addressed mixed audiences. The latter innovation was the source of much scandal to her contemporaries. She was denounced by the clergy as a menace to public morals, and her meetings were occasionally broken up by mobs. For some years she endured an incredible amount of insult and abuse. (For a typical instance occurring in Connecticut, see L. A. Coolidge, *Orville H. Platt*, 1910, pp. 5–7.) In 1839 the American Anti-Slavery Society indorsed the right of women to speak on its platform, but a year later her appointment to its executive committee caused a serious split in the organization. Her presence as a delegate at the world anti-slavery convention at London in 1840, and its refusal to recognize women delegates, caused an equally serious disturbance.

As a pioneer Abigail Kelley performed important services for her cause. She was a leader in the radical Abolitionist group, and became a well-known figure throughout the North. She was in a favorable position while attacking the evils of slavery to point out the serious legal, economic, and political disabilities of women. After 1850 she was more prominent as an advocate of woman's rights than as an anti-slavery leader; and she took a prominent part, with her husband, Stephen Symonds Foster [*q.v.*], whom she married Dec. 31, 1845, in most of the woman's rights conventions for the next twenty years. Her appearance at the anniversary convention of 1880,

together with Lucy Stone, as the only surviving leaders of the famous gathering of thirty years before, attracted great attention. The woman's rights movement had become fairly respectable by 1880, and had attracted many who would have shrunk from the hardships of pioneering. Her remark in the convention of 1851, in reply to some disparagement of the Abolitionists, that "bloody feet have worn smooth the paths by which you came up hither," is both poignant and significant. She was fearless in denouncing the conservatism of the church and clergy, and repeatedly declared that they must shoulder much of the responsibility for the wrongs of women. She was probably somewhat less extreme than her husband in both her religious and political views but was nevertheless a decided radical in both. In addition to her work in the woman's rights cause she was active in support of prohibition and minor humanitarian interests. She is described by those who knew her as an attractive, kindly person with unassuming manners, and a good housekeeper. On the platform she was an effective speaker for many years but her voice finally gave out from overuse. She was an invalid in her last years.

[Harriet H. Robinson, *Mass. in the Woman Suffrage Movement* (1881); *Wm. Lloyd Garrison, 1805–79: The Story of his Life Told by his Children* (1885–89); Elizabeth Cady Stanton, and others, *Hist. of Woman Suffrage* (3 vols., 1881–87); Lillie B. C. Wyman, "Reminiscences of Two Abolitionists," in *New England Mag.*, Jan. 1903; obituary articles in the *Nation* (N. Y.), Jan. 20, 1887, and *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Jan. 15, 1887.] W.A.R.

**FOSTER, BENJAMIN** (July 31, 1852–Jan. 28, 1926), landscape-painter, art critic, was the son of a Maine lawyer and politician, Paulinus Mayhew Foster, who traced his lineage to old Salem and Martha's Vineyard families, and Lydia (Hutchins) Foster. Ben, as he was always called, was born in North Anson where his father practised for twenty-five years, holding various public posts and serving for two sessions as president of the state Senate. In 1860 the family moved to Richmond, Me., where the following year Paulinus died. He seems to have left his family in straitened circumstances, for Ben, the seventh of ten children, was early thrown on his own resources. At eighteen he went to New York to seek work. A dreamy, sensitive lad, a keen lover and delicate observer of nature, he was destined to spend twelve years in mercantile drudgery in the city. He was thirty before he rebelled and determined to devote himself to painting. He studied first in New York with Abbott Thayer and at the Art Student's League, then went to Paris. After a year under Olivier Merson and Aimé Morot, he came back to develop his own individual landscape style in oil and water-colors, unhampered by theories or by any consuming desire for popularity. Six months of every year he spent in the romantic hill-country about his farm at Cornwall Hollow, Conn. The quiet, meditative moods of nature appealed to him: mysterious atmospheric effects, dawn, twilight, moonlight, the aspect of night in the hills; and these he rendered with intimate knowledge, a mastery of tone, and "a large feeling for unity," which caused French critics to compare him to Cazin. His landscapes, begun in the open, were worked out from memory in the studio, in order to allow time for the "sublimation of the ideal from the real."

Foster won the first of scores of awards at the Chicago World's Fair, in 1893. In 1900 he exhibited at the Paris Exposition, winning a bronze medal. The following year he was brought into national prominence when the French government purchased for the Luxembourg his picture "Lulled by the Murmuring Stream," a scene in a little New England village at night. He was the first American painter after Winslow Homer to be so honored. His most important success at home was the winning of the Carnegie Prize in 1906 from the National Academy of Design. He received the Webb Prize at the exhibition of the Society of American Artists in New York in 1901; a silver medal at the Pan-American Exposition in 1901; and for his picture "Misty Moonlight" a silver medal and $1,000 at the International Exhibition of the Carnegie Institute, at Pittsburgh in 1900. He was given an award at the St. Louis Exposition in 1904; the Innis gold medal at the exhibition of the National Academy of Design in 1908; a gold medal for "October," at the exhibition of the National Arts Club in 1917, and the Altman Prize of the National Academy of Design in 1917 for his picture "Summer Moonrise." He was elected to membership in the Society of American Artists in 1897, to the National Academy in 1904, to the National Institute of Arts and Letters, and to various water-color societies, local and national. Only a few months before his death he was awarded by popular vote the People's Prize at the annual show of the Newport Art Association for his picture "In Maine." He was for many years art critic of the New York *Evening Post* and a contributor to the *Nation*. A bachelor, he was long resident at the National Arts Club, Gramercy Square, New York City, and was buried from the galleries of the club.

[F. C. Pierce, *Foster Geneal.* (1899), pp. 835–36; *Biog. Sketches of Am. Artists*, Michigan State Library (5th ed., 1924), pp. 117–18; *The Fine Arts Journal*, XXXIV (Apr. 1916), 176–80; A. S. Randall,

"Conn. Artists and Their Work: Ben Foster," in *Conn. Mag.*, IX (1904), 139–43; *N. Y. Times*, Jan. 29, N. Y. *Evening Post*, Jan. 28, the *Art News*, Feb. 6, 1926.] M.B.H.

**FOSTER, CHARLES** (Apr. 12, 1828–Jan. 9, 1904), dry-goods merchant, congressman, governor of Ohio, secretary of the treasury, was the son of Charles W. Foster, a Massachusetts Scotch-Irishman, who in 1826 followed Laura Crocker to Seneca County, Ohio, and married her that year. He was born within the present limits of Fostoria, a name which commemorates his father. From earliest infancy the boy lived in the atmosphere of his father's business, a general store, kept for some time in one end of the log cabin which was the family dwelling. At the age of fourteen he was withdrawn from an academy at Norwalk after a scanty schooling, because his time was needed in the store, and four years later he became his father's partner. Throughout life he was primarily a business man, expanding his enterprises until they included banking and the gas and oil industry, and amassing a fortune, much of which was lost during the financial stress of the nineties. He was active in recruiting for the Civil War, and expected to become colonel of a regiment, but on his parents' plea remained at home. There his war service took the form of aid to soldiers' families, through credit extended in the neighborhood.

Although an ardent Republican and interested in public affairs, Foster was never a candidate for office until in 1870, when his friends persuaded him that no one else could carry his congressional district for the party. He was successful that year in this normally Democratic district, as well as in 1872, 1874, and 1876. In 1878, however, in consequence of a gerrymander of the district he was defeated. In Congress, as a member of the ways and means committee, he took a prominent part in exposing the frauds practised under the Sanborn contracts and the moiety law. He thus encountered the redoubtable "Ben" Butler, and won a national reputation by crossing swords in debate with this champion of the spoilsmen. As a member of the sub-committee which investigated the Louisiana contested election of 1874, he joined in a report which brought consternation to the radicals by holding against the Republican faction in the state. Later he was one of those who assured the Southern leaders that Hayes (who hailed from the same congressional district), if elected president, would withdraw the federal troops from the South.

In 1879 he was nominated by the Republicans for governor as a sound-money candidate, to oppose Thomas Ewing. He turned his business experience to good account in the contest. He introduced the preëlection poll to forecast the result, sent workers into doubtful districts, and made the first large use of money in Ohio elections. The Democratic papers sought to discredit him as "a man who knew no higher occupation during the war than measuring calico." In ridicule they called him "Calico Charlie." His friends, however, turned the epithet to good account; the women wore calico gowns and the men neckties of the same material during the campaign, and he won the election by a majority of more than 17,000. Two years later he won reëlection by an increased majority. As governor, he continued to apply his ideas of business efficiency. He appointed bipartisan boards for managing public institutions, and advocated mine inspection, forest protection, and careful revision of the tax system. The liquor question, which had seemed too dangerous for any party, he had the courage to face. He sponsored the Pond Law for the taxation of saloons, and in the election of 1883 procured the submission of amendments to enable the voters to indicate their preference for prohibition or a license system. These amendments were rejected, and the entire Republican ticket was defeated, in consequence of which Foster's leadership was for a time discredited.

In 1880 he attended the Republican National Convention as a delegate-at-large, under instructions to support John Sherman for the presidential nomination. It was rumored that he neglected opportunities to promote Sherman's interests, hoping that if Blaine were nominated he himself might be named for the vice-presidency, or that, in case of Garfield's nomination, he might be sent to the latter's vacated seat in the Senate. Sherman, who was losing a cabinet post with the retirement of Hayes, and who felt entitled to the senatorship if he failed of the presidential nomination, believed that on both counts Foster was disloyal to him. Foster explained his course and withdrew from the senatorial race, and the breach between the men was outwardly healed. Though he was talked of for a cabinet position under Garfield, a close friend, Foster was persuaded to retain the governorship. In February 1891, however, Harrison named him for the secretaryship of the treasury. In this position he favored international bimetallism but not domestic free coinage. He believed in the Sherman Silver Purchase Act as a permanent policy, and pledged himself to maintain the parity of gold and silver. Although he was strongly criticized during his incumbency, and possibly unjustly so, it cannot be said that he rendered notable service while in this office.

Upon the expiration of Harrison's term Foster

resumed his private life in Fostoria as a business man, and so continued to the end of his days. In 1853 he had married Ann M. Olmsted, daughter of Judge Jesse Olmsted, who bore him two daughters. He was a man of medium height, compact figure, genial face, and affable manners. Growing up in the "woods" with the "people," he was always "Charlie" to everybody, even when governor.

[F. C. Pierce, *Foster Geneal.* (1899), pp. 854–57; *The Biog. Cyc. . . . with an Hist. Sketch of the State of Ohio*, II (1884), 470–71; E. O. Randall and D. J. Ryan, *Hist. of Ohio* (1912), IV, 342–46; C. R. Williams, *The Life of Rutherford Birchard Hayes* (1914), I, 464–66, 534, II, 66–67, 129, 400; *Diary and Letters of Rutherford B. Hayes*, published by the Ohio State Archaeological and Hist. Soc. (5 vols., 1922–26), III, 259, 274, 575, IV, 46–47; Nevin O. Winter, *A Hist. of Northwest Ohio* (1917), 290–91, 596; John Sherman, *Recollections of Forty Years* (1895), II, 769–91; W. S. Kerr, *John Sherman, His Life and Public Services* (1907), II, 54–95; the *Coshocton Democrat*, Sept. 30, Oct. 7, 1879, containing typical partisan attacks upon Foster as gubernatorial candidate; A. J. Baughman, *Hist. of Seneca County, Ohio* (1911), I, 286–87; the *Ohio State Jour.* (Columbus), Jan. 3, 1882, Jan. 10, 1904; the *Commercial Tribune* (Cincinnati), Jan. 10, 1904.] H.C.H.

**FOSTER, CHARLES JAMES** (Nov. 24, 1820–Sept. 12, 1883), editor of sporting journals and authority on the history of the turf, was born at Bicester, Oxford, England, the son of Samuel and Elizabeth Foster. His family were tenants of the Earl of Jersey, a famous rider to the hounds and patron of the turf, who bred and trained his own horses on his Oxfordshire estate. One of Charles's earliest recollections was that of standing by his father's knee on frequent occasions, as over their pipes and home-brewed ale the latter discussed racers with Mr. Ransome, Master of the Horse to the Earl. His own uncle, Henry King, was recognized as one of the best judges of horses in England and his cousin William Foster was an active turfman. He received a good education at Northampton, but at the age of eighteen shipped on a merchantman and for a number of years followed the sea. In 1848 he came to Boston, drifted westward to Cincinnati, and finally settled in Columbus. Here he is said to have found a place in a law office, and to have been on terms of more or less intimacy with Clement L. Vallandigham, Salmon P. Chase, and Samuel S. Cox [*qq.v.*]. In 1857 he became associate editor of the *Ohio Statesman*.

Interested chiefly in sports, he now began to contribute to *Porter's Spirit of the Times* articles signed "Privateer," rich in the lore of the English turf, interlarded with interesting anecdotes, and written in a lively style. He also wrote for it "The High-Mettled Racer," the first installment of which appeared Aug. 15, 1857, a story of English country sporting life, which reveals a high degree of literary ability. After the establishment of *Wilkes' Spirit of the Times* in 1859 the "Privateer" articles were continued in that periodical, and when in 1860 George Wilkes went to England to attend the fight between John Heenan and Tom Sayers he asked Foster to come to New York and help run the paper during his absence. This temporary connection was made permanent and for fourteen years much of the journal's success was due to Foster's knowledge, industry, and skill as a writer. In 1875, with J. D. McIntyre and J. Edwards Whitehead, he established the *New York Sportsman*, with which he was connected until his death.

He never married, but lived with two maiden sisters in a cosy country home in Astoria. His knowledge of famous horses and their achievements was extensive and detailed, and he kept his information up to date by inspecting all the great stables of the country before each racing season. He was almost equally conversant with the prize ring, while game cocks, which it is alleged he "bred and occasionally bled in sequestered nooks on Long Island" were one of his minor interests. His writings were accepted as authoritative. To *Wilkes' Spirit of the Times*, he contributed a series of articles, beginning July 21, 1860, on "Lives and Battles of Distinguished Pugilists." A more notable series was "The Derby Winners, Historical Sketches of the Winners of the Derby for Fifty Years," which appeared in the *New York Sportsman* between Dec. 9, 1876, and Nov. 24, 1877. He wrote the article on "Turf" for Appletons' *American Cyclopædia* (1876), and edited Hiram Woodruff's *The Trotting Horse of America* (1868). He also edited Adam H. Bogardus's *Field, Cover, and Trap Shooting* (1874), and to "Sketches of the Actors," begun in the Jan. 11, 1862, number of *Wilkes' Spirit of the Times*, he made several contributions including sketches of Charlotte Cushman, Maggie Mitchell, and James H. Hackett. That of the last-named appears in Hackett's *Notes and Comments upon Certain Plays and Actors of Shakespeare* (1863). A novel, *The White Horse of Wootton*, was published in 1878. He died in Astoria in his sixty-third year and was buried in Columbus.

[Foster's writings contain autobiographical material. See also *N. Y. Tribune* and *N. Y. Herald*, Sept. 13, 1883; *N. Y. Clipper*, Sept. 22, 1883; the *Spirit of the Times*, Sept. 15, 1883; *Wallace's Monthly*, Oct. 1883; and John H. Wallace, *The Horse of America* (1897).] H.E.S.

**FOSTER, DAVID SKAATS** (Jan. 23, 1852–June 23, 1920), author, was born in Utica, N. Y., the son of Thomas and Eliza Pearson (Skaats) Foster. His ancestor, Reginald Foster, came from England and settled in Ipswich, Mass., in

1638. David attended the public schools at his home and later studied in Germany. Languages, of which he finally mastered five or six, were his chief interest. In 1874 he married Mary C. Williams, daughter of William A. Williams of Little Falls, N. Y. For most of his life he was a coal and iron merchant in Utica, but in the years following 1887 he published about twelve books. The first of these, *The Romance of the Unexpected,* is made up of a number of poems, for the most part narrative, sing-song, and sentimental. It was popular enough to be reissued in the following year, with a few additions and under a new title, *Rebecca the Witch* (1888). With the exception of *The Divided Medal,* a prose mystery story published in 1914, to which some thirty-five pages of verse were appended, these two volumes seem to have ended his career as a poet. The first of his novels, *Casanova the Courier* (1892), a story of Americans in Europe, established the model for most of what he was to write later. It is facile and sentimental, crowded with action and superficial humor. *Elinor Fenton* (1893), dealing with country people in the state of New York, seems to represent a determination of the author to confine himself to a stricter realism, but in *Spanish Castles by the Rhine* (1897), rather a series of stories than a novel, he yielded again to his dominant impulse for the romantic. After the appearance of this book he published nothing until 1910, when with *Flighty Arcthusa* he inaugurated a series of novels which were more and more confessedly popular in their appeal, with incident tumbled over incident, mystery hidden behind mystery, and with platitude giving place mainly to dogmatism. Perhaps the most glaring example of this last quality in all his writing is in the war story *Mademoiselle of Cambrai* (1920), in which he indulges himself in the sentiment that a certain city "contained about five thousand human beings and some thirty thousand Germans" (p. 11). His wife died in 1895, and though he continued head of his mercantile firm in Utica, he made his home for the last few years of his life in Syracuse.

[F. C. Pierce, *Foster Genealogy* (1899); *Who's Who in America,* 1920–21; Syracuse and Utica city directories.] J. D. W.

**FOSTER, EPHRAIM HUBBARD** (Sept. 17, 1794–Sept. 6, 1854), United States senator, was born near Bardstown, Ky., the son of Ann (Hubbard) and Robert Coleman Foster who in 1797 moved to the neighborhood of Nashville, Tenn. At the age of nineteen Foster graduated from Cumberland College (later the University of Nashville). In the Creek War he served as secretary to Andrew Jackson. He studied law in the office of John Dickinson whose wealthy widow, Jane Mebane Lytle, he married in 1817. Virile, quick tempered, deeply affectionate, and strongly partisan, he became one of the most popular members of the Nashville bar. Until his entrance into politics his firm had, perhaps, the most lucrative practise in the state. From 1827 to 1835 he was three times elected to the Tennessee House of Representatives. Twice he was unanimously chosen speaker of the house. In 1833 he opposed John H. Eaton, John Bell, and Felix Grundy in a long and bitter contest for election to the United States Senate. On the fifty-fifth ballot Grundy was chosen. In the presidential campaign of 1836 Foster deserted the leadership of Andrew Jackson and gave his support to Hugh Lawson White. He became one of the most prominent Whig leaders of the state. Upon the resignation of Felix Grundy from the Senate to enter Van Buren's cabinet, he received the executive appointment to the vacancy for the 1838–39 session. For the six-year term, beginning in 1839, he had already defeated William Carroll, but he saw no service under this election. The succeeding Democratic legislature instructed the state's Whig senators to support the measures of the national Democratic administration. Foster resigned immediately (Nov. 15, 1839), and Grundy defeated him for the vacancy thus created. Four years later, however, upon the death of Grundy, he defeated William Carroll for the term ending in 1845. His most notable act in the Senate was to vote against the admission of Texas into the Union, on the specious plea that though he favored admission the resolution under consideration conceded too much to Northern Abolitionists (*Congressional Globe,* 28 Cong., 2 Sess., pp. 359, 362). This vote placed him on the defensive in his gubernatorial campaign of 1845. Chosen by the Whigs after other leaders had declined the nomination, he conducted a vigorous campaign against his Democratic opponent, Aaron V. Brown, but was defeated by less than two thousand votes. This ended his political career.

[Family Bible in the possession of Mrs. Edgar W. Foster of Nashville; Davidson County records; *Jour. of The House of Representatives of the State of Tenn.,* 1827–43; *Nashville Whig,* 1845; J. C. Guild, *Old Times in Tenn.* (Nashville, 1878), pp. 71–77; brief and partly inaccurate sketches in W. W. Clayton, *Hist. of Davidson County, Tenn.* (1880), pp. 113–15, and Joshua W. Caldwell, *Sketches of the Bench and Bar of Tenn.* (1898), pp. 198–201; obituaries in *Nashville Daily Gazette,* Sept. 8, *Nashville Daily Union and American,* and *Republican Banner and Nashville Whig* (daily), Sept. 9, 1854. The Tennessee State Library possesses an oil portrait of Foster by Washington B. Cooper.] P. M. H.

**FOSTER, FRANK PIERCE** (Nov. 26, 1841–Aug. 13, 1911), physician, immunologist, editor,

lexicographer, was born in Concord, N. H., the son of William Parker Foster and Susan Webster Call, a niece of Daniel Webster. At the age of fifteen his life-work was suggested through an operation performed on his right forearm—the extirpation of a large birthmark—by Henry J. Bigelow [*q.v.*]. Not long after this experience he registered as a pupil with Dr. C. P. Gage of Concord, with whom he studied the fundamental subjects of botany, chemistry, and anatomy. In 1859 he attended lectures at the Boston Medical School but took his degree at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, in 1862. He at once began his internate at the New York Hospital where his first distinction was a detail to treat the sick sailors of the friendly Russian squadron, then stationed in the harbor. With the expiration of his internate in 1864 he served as ship's surgeon on a Pacific mail steamer for one voyage. In 1865 he spent six months as acting assistant-surgeon in the United States army. In May 1866 he began his service as house physician of the New York Dispensary where he had a chance to witness the abuses of the then universal practise of arm-to-arm vaccination. He became an earnest propagandist for the use of animal lymph, and at the early age of twenty-five was the pioneer and champion of the cause which forced him into controversy with the leaders of his profession. He established a vaccine farm at Cos Cob, N. Y., and soon the demand for his vaccine quills became so great that he seemed on the highroad to prosperity. In time, however, the manufacture of the virus became general, and the use of animal lymph compulsory. That he attempted to commercialize the production of vaccine is hardly credible in view of his complete lack of interest in money matters.

Foster's battle for the introduction of animal lymph lasted for years, due to the fact that at the outset he was opposed by the medical societies and a majority of the physicians. In 1870 he made a report to the New York Academy of Medicine, which was at the same time a sort of candidate's thesis for membership, and won the latter only after a sharp conflict. In 1872 he was awarded the alumni prize of his alma mater for his essay on animal vaccination and in the following year delivered by request an essay on the same theme before the British Medical Association—an almost undreamed-of honor for a young American physician. During the first years of his medical practise Foster specialized in dermatology, and was one of the founders of the New York Dermatological Society, but about 1870 he became more interested in gynecology and obstetrics. In 1881 he was elected a fellow of the

Foster

American Gynecological Society and for years held the appointment of surgeon to the Women's Hospital. In 1887 he founded the New York Clinical Society. In time his literary activity seems to have been exerted at the expense of his clinical career. After a term of service under Dr. Shrady of the *Medical Record*, he became connected with the publishing house of D. Appleton, taking over the editorship of the *New York Medical Journal*, which he held from 1880 until his death. He devoted twelve years of his life to the compilation of the *Illustrated Encyclopedic Medical Dictionary*, issued serially in four volumes between 1888 and 1894, and in 1904 brought out a one-volume edition of *Appletons' Medical Dictionary*. He also edited the *Reference Book of Practical Therapeutics* (2 vols., 1896–97), and with the collaboration of Edward Althaus, published the 1902–03 edition of George J. Adler's *German and English Dictionary*. He compiled the medical terms for the *Standard Dictionary* and was chairman of the committee on nomenclature of the American Medical Association. He had an extraordinary gift for making friends and was on terms of intimacy with an unusual number of the leaders of the profession. His wife was Georgiana Molleson, of New York, whom he married on Oct. 18, 1869.

[There is a sketch of Foster written by his son, Hugh Molleson Foster, in *Medical Life*, Aug. 1927. See also H. A. Kelly and Walter L. Burrage, *Dict. of Am. Medic. Biog.* (1928); *N. Y. Medic. Jour.*, Aug. 19, 1911; *Lancet* (London), Sept. 2, 1911; *N. Y. Herald*, Aug. 15, 1911.] E. P.

**FOSTER, GEORGE BURMAN** (Apr. 2, 1858–Dec. 22, 1918), Baptist clergyman, educator, the son of Oliver Harrison Foster and Helen Louise (Skaggs) Foster, was born in Alderson, W. Va. He obtained his collegiate education at Shelton College, W. Va., 1876–79, and at West Virginia University where he received the degree of B.A. in 1883. Meanwhile, in 1879, he had been ordained to the Baptist ministry, and in 1883–84 he was pastor at Morgantown, Pa. On Aug. 6, 1884, he was married to Mary Lyon, daughter of Prof. Franklin Lyon of West Virginia University. After completing his theological work at Rochester Theological Seminary where he graduated in 1887, he served as pastor at Saratoga Springs, N. Y., 1887–91. Essentially of scholarly rather than of ministerial temperament, he gave up his pastorate in the latter year in order to carry on theological studies in Germany. The year 1891–92 he spent most fruitfully in the Universities of Göttingen and Berlin, and shortly after his return he was granted the degree of Ph.D. by Denison University. The rest of his

life was devoted to teaching and writing. He was professor of philosophy at McMaster University, 1892–95; associate professor and professor of systematic theology at the University of Chicago, 1895–1905; and professor of philosophy of religion at the University of Chicago from 1905 until his death at the age of sixty.

Foster was one of the ablest and most influential theological writers of his time in America. Tolerant by nature, well-read in philosophy, thoroughly conversant with European Biblical scholarship, he was a powerful force toward the liberalizing of orthodox Christianity. For this reason he was bitterly attacked in 1909 by the Rev. Johnston Myers, fundamentalist pastor of the Immanuel Baptist Church, Chicago. Delighting in debate, Foster sought rather than shunned controversy. In 1917 and 1918 wide attention was given to his public debates with Clarence Darrow on the subjects, "Is Life Worth Living?" and "Resolved: that the Human Will is Free." Darrow is reported subsequently to have said that Foster was the most intellectual man he ever knew.

Foster warred consistently against authority and tradition, and rejected the rationalistic arguments for religion, but defended eloquently the personal faith of the heart. Religion he regarded as something experimental, growing or declining with the age, but essential to man's nature, and, in form, completely expressed in the life and legend of Christ. The sanctions of religion he considered almost wholly pragmatic. His chief writings were: *The Finality of the Christian Religion* (1906); *The Function of Religion in Man's Struggle for Existence* (1909); *The Function of Death in Human Experience* (1915); "The Contribution of Critical Scholarship to Ministerial Efficiency," in G. B. Smith, *Guide to the Study of the Christian Religion* (1916); *Christianity in its Modern Expression* (1921).

[*Chicago Daily Tribune*, Dec. 23, 1918; John W. Leonard, ed., *Men of America* (1908); *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19.] E. S. B—s.

**FOSTER, HANNAH WEBSTER** (1759–Apr. 17, 1840), author, was the daughter of Grant Webster, a Boston merchant of standing. Prof. John W. Webster of Harvard College was her nephew. Little is known of her childhood and education but as a girl and young woman she had a local reputation for cleverness as well as beauty. She contributed to newspapers political articles which attracted the notice of Rev. John Foster, a popular clergyman of Brighton, Mass. They were married in April 1785 and she was warmly welcomed into his parish, where she became a leader in social and literary activities. In



1797 she published the book which was the sensation of the time in New England, has since been a puzzle for antiquarians and local historians, and has caused much criticism to be directed against the author's veracity. It appeared as *The Coquette; or, The History of Eliza Wharton . . . By a Lady of Massachusetts* (1797). Purporting to be a novel founded on fact, it tells the story of the love of "Eliza Wharton," a young woman of good Massachusetts family, for Pierpont Edwards [*q.v.*], and recounts the details of her elopement with him, and her death at the Bell Tavern, Danvers, Mass., at the time of the birth of her child. The possibility of a secret marriage is discussed but remains a mystery. The real "Eliza Wharton" was Elizabeth Whitman, who had died less than ten years before the publication of *The Coquette*. Hannah Foster's husband was a cousin of the wife of Deacon John Whitman of Stow, who was himself a cousin of Elizabeth Whitman's father. Through this family connection, Hannah Foster was probably in possession of most of the facts, or rumors, current concerning the Whitman case. She has, however, been censured for serious misstatement and exaggeration. It has been said of her (Dall, *post*) that she had a vivid imagination and made no attempt to adhere to the facts of the story, if she ever knew them, and further (Bolton, *post*) that since Elizabeth Whitman's seducer has never been identified she had no justification for representing him as Pierpont Edwards. From a literary standpoint, *The Coquette* is a prototype of Richardson's *Clarissa Harlowe* and Susanna H. Rowson's *Charlotte Temple*, a moral tale of the unhappy fate of one who strays from the path of virtue. At the time of its publication it was absent from few homes where any reading was done, and many editions have since appeared. In 1798 Mrs. Foster published *The Boarding School; or, Lessons of a Preceptress to her Pupils* in the preface of which the author states that she has "employed a part of her leisure hours in collecting and arranging her ideas on the subject of female deportment." A certain Mrs. Williams, living on the banks of the Merrimac, is the fictional preceptress of a very select boarding-school admitting only seven pupils at a time. Her didactic lectures on reading, dress, politeness, amusements, directions for the government of the temper and manners, and filial and fraternal affection, form the subject matter of the book. After her husband's death, Mrs. Foster resided in Montreal, Canada, the home of her two daughters, both of whom were writers of essays and magazine articles. She died in Montreal, at the home of her daughter Elizabeth L. (Foster)

Cushing, wife of Dr. Frederick Cushing, physician at the Emigrant Hospital.

[F. C. Pierce, *Foster Geneal.* (1899), p. 238; Jane E. Locke, "Hist. Preface, including a Memoir of the Author," in the 1855 edition of *The Coquette*; C. K. Bolton, *The Elizabeth Whitman Mystery*, published by the Peabody, Mass., Hist. Soc. (1912); Caroline H. Dall, *The Romance of the Association; or One Last Glimpse of Charlotte Temple and Eliza Wharton* (1875); J. P. C. Winship, *Hist. Brighton*, vol. I (1899).] S. G. B.

**FOSTER, JOHN** (1648–Sept. 9, 1681), engraver, printer, was the second son and fourth child of Hopestill and Mary (Bates) Foster. He was born in that part of Dorchester, Mass., which later became South Boston, and was baptized on Dec. 10, 1648, by Richard Mather. His father was a brewer and a member of the General Court. His mother was the daughter of James Bates who came from England in 1635, was several years a selectman of Dorchester, and in 1641 represented Hingham in the General Court. John Foster graduated from Harvard in 1667 and two years later, probably in October, began teaching English, Latin, and writing in his birthplace. As early as 1671 he "took up engraving as an avocation," and became the earliest wood-engraver of English America. A few years later he bought a printing-plant which Marmaduke Johnson [*q.v.*] had fitted out just before his death. Foster took over the establishment and early in 1675, starting business "over against the Sign of the Dove," became the pioneer printer of Boston. He produced his best work after 1678, having in that year acquired a new font of long primer. He had no training in his art, but had picked it up by observation at Samuel Green's shop in Cambridge, and although his career as a printer lasted less than seven years (1675–81), in that time the issues of his press amounted to about fifty pieces. His extant works are very rare, some exist only in one copy, and a few that have vanished are recorded only inferentially. He printed fifteen pieces by Increase Mather; two each by James Allen, John Eliot, William Hubbard, Benjamin Keach, Thomas Thacher, Samuel Willard, and Roger Williams; an edition of the poems of Anne Bradstreet, and some shorter pieces of verse. Eighteen of his publications were sermons, three were historical works, and three broadsides. Of the latter, one on the smallpox and measles was the earliest treatise concerning a medical subject printed in the colonies. He also printed a catechism, a harmony of the gospels, a confession of faith, a church government, and a platform of church discipline. In addition to these works he compiled annual almanacs (1675, 1676, 1678–81) for which he made his own astronomical calculations. He wrote a paper on "Comets, their Motion, Distance and Magnitude," for his almanac of 1681, together with "Observations of a Comet seen this last Winter 1680." He had a smattering knowledge of medicine and in his will left some "Medicinal Books." Chief among some ten wood-cuts attributed to him are a three-quarter length portrait of Rev. Richard Mather which is considered the earliest portrait engraved in the colonies; a "Map of New England" for Hubbard's *Narrative of the Troubles with the Indians* (1677); and a view of Boston and Charlestown taken from Noddles Island. Foster died of tuberculosis at Dorchester in his thirty-third year, and his memory was honored by two printed funeral elegies in verse. His interment was in the Dorchester burying-ground. By his last will, dated July 18, 1681, when his body was "weak & languishing," but his "understanding not distempered or impaired," he ordered his printing-press and appurtenances at Boston to be sold to pay his Boston debts, his funeral expenses, and to provide twenty or thirty shillings "to pay for a pair of handsome Gravestones." His house at Dorchester he left to his widowed mother, who was his sole executrix. At his death the value of his estate amounted only to something over a hundred pounds.

[The chief source concerning Foster and his work is Samuel A. Green's *John Foster: the earliest Am. Engraver and the first Boston Printer* (1909). This final work supersedes Green's earlier contributions in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, Oct. 12, 1899, ch. i of his *Ten Fac-simile Reproductions relating to various Subjects* (1903), and *Remarks on John Foster* (1905). John L. Sibley's *Harvard Grads.*, II (1881), 222–28, has a good sketch which Green has thoroughly used.] V. H. P.

**FOSTER, JOHN GRAY** (May 27, 1823–Sept. 2, 1874), army officer, the son of Perley and Mary (Gray) Foster, was born at Whitefield, N. H. His father moved to Nashua in 1833 and John completed his early education in the city schools and at Hancock Academy. In 1842 he received an appointment to the United States Military Academy and graduated fourth in the class of 1846. He was commissioned second lieutenant in the corps of engineers and after a brief term of service in Washington, D. C., was ordered on active service under Gen. Scott in Mexico. He took part in the siege of Vera Cruz and the subsequent advance into the interior, being severely wounded at the battle of Molino del Rey, Sept. 8, 1847. He received two citations for distinguished service in this campaign, but on recovery from his wound, was relegated to the more obscure, though useful, routine duties of an engineer officer in time of peace. Until 1860 he performed miscellaneous services, including a two-year term as assistant professor of engineering (1855–57) at the Military Academy. On July 1, 1860, he was commissioned captain of en-

gineers and when the war began a few months later was engineer in charge of the United States fortifications in Charleston Harbor. He was in Maj. Anderson's command at Fort Sumter and his reports—the laconic, professional observations of the trained soldier—have contributed largely to our historical knowledge of the memorable weeks in the spring of 1861 (see the *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vol. I, which contains many official memoranda and reports, including an interesting "engineer journal" of the bombardment, pp. 16–25).

On Oct. 23, 1861, Foster was appointed brigadier-general of Volunteers and in the following March he was brevetted colonel in the United States army. He took a prominent part in the North Carolina expedition, including the capture of Roanoke Island and New Bern, and on July 1, 1862, was placed in command of the Department of North Carolina. He retained this command for several months, engaging in several local operations of considerable importance in the early part of 1863. Later in the same year he took part in operations for the relief of Gen. Burnside at Knoxville, Tenn., and in December succeeded the latter in command of the Department of the Ohio, although he was soon afterward obliged to ask to be relieved because of accidental injuries. On May 26, 1864, having partially recovered, he was assigned to command the Department of the South, where he later cooperated with Gen. Sherman in the movements against Savannah and Charleston. During the last months of the war he was in command in Florida with headquarters at Tallahassee. He had been made major-general of Volunteers, ranking from July 18, 1862, and on Mar. 13, 1865, was brevetted major-general in the United States army. On Mar. 7, 1867, he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel, corps of engineers.

Foster spent the remainder of his life in routine work. He engaged in survey and construction operations on the New England coast and from 1871 to 1874 was assistant to the chief of Engineers. In 1869 he published *Submarine Blasting in Boston Harbor, Mass.; Removal of Tower and Corwin Rocks*, which was long an authoritative treatise on the general subject. He was considered a dependable, courageous officer who understood both the virtues and defects of the volunteer. He knew how to adapt the raw material of the Civil War levies to the tasks at hand, and was an especially competent administrator. He was married on Jan. 21, 1851, to Mary L. Moale, daughter of Col. Samuel Moale of Baltimore. After her death in 1871 he married, on Jan. 9, 1872, Nannie Davis, daughter of George M. Davis of Washington, D. C.

[Frank G. Noyes, "Biog. Sketch of Maj.-Gen. John G. Foster," *Granite Monthly*, June 1899, written from Foster's personal papers; Clarence E. E. Stout, "John Gray Foster," *Ibid.*, May 1882; F. C. Pierce, *Foster Geneal.* (1899); Otis F. R. Waite, *N. H. in the Great Rebellion* (Claremont, N. H., 1870), pp. 607-08; G. H. Gordon, in *Sixth Ann. Reunion of the Asso. of Grads. of the U. S. Mil. Acad.* (3rd ed. 1891). The N. H. Hist. Soc. has a small collection of Foster's papers, including both military and personal correspondence.] W. A. R.

**FOSTER, JOHN PIERREPONT CODRINGTON** (Mar. 2, 1847–Apr. 1, 1910), tuberculosis specialist, the son of Eleazer Kingsbury Foster by his wife Mary Codrington, was born in New Haven, Conn., and received his early education at Gen. Russell's Collegiate and Commercial Institute. After graduating from Yale in 1869 he developed pulmonary tuberculosis and passed several years in Florida for his health. There he engaged in sugar planting. He eventually returned to New Haven to enter the Yale Medical School, and received the degree of M.D. in 1875. He began to practise immediately and attended a large number of undergraduates at the university. Through his influence a local infirmary was erected in which members of the university could receive medical treatment. From 1877 till his death he held the position of instructor in anatomy as applied to art under the auspices of the department of fine arts at Yale. In 1879 he became surgeon to the United States Marine Hospital Service, a post which he held until 1910.

Foster's chief contribution to medicine arose from his interest in the problem of tuberculosis. He became convinced very early that rest and fresh air were vital for tuberculosis patients, and he was the first in America to experiment with Koch's tuberculin which he employed on Dec. 3, 1890, in treating a case of pulmonary tuberculosis. It was used in Baltimore a week later by Osler (*Johns Hopkins Hospital Bulletin*, Jan. 1891), but its value as a therapeutic agent is still uncertain. He helped to establish the National Association for the Study and Prevention of Tuberculosis in 1905, and was vice-president of the sixth International Congress of Tuberculosis. He was also largely instrumental in founding the Gaylord Farm Sanatorium near Wallingford, Conn., which was opened in September 1904. Foster's writings were earnest and clear and through them he did much to stimulate interest in the prevention of tuberculosis. He died of pneumonia. He had married on July 1, 1875, Josephine Theresa Bicknell of New York.

[*Proc. Conn. State Medic. Soc.*, 1910, 316–20; *Jour. Am. Medic. Asso.*, Apr. 16, 1910; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); R. B. Moffat,

*Pierrepont Geneal.* (1913); *Who's Who in America,* 1910–11; *Seventh Biog. Record of the Class of 'Sixty-Nine, Yale Coll., 1894–1904* (1910); *New Haven Evening Reg.,* Apr. 1, 1910.] J.F.F.

**FOSTER, JOHN WATSON** (Mar. 2, 1836–Nov. 15, 1917), lawyer, soldier, editor, diplomat, secretary of state, professor, was born in Pike County, Ind., where his father, Matthew Watson Foster, was a successful farmer. His mother, Eleanor Johnson, came of a Virginia family. Foster attended the University of Indiana (B.A. 1855), where through study and in debate he developed the anti-slavery convictions implanted by his father. After a year at the Harvard Law School he spent another year in a law office in Cincinnati before he associated himself in the practise of law at Evansville with Conrad Baker, one of the ablest lawyers of Indiana. In 1859 he married Mary Parke McFerson who received repeatedly in his writings tributes for her counsel, assistance, and affection. When the Civil War broke out Foster's zeal for the anti-slavery cause and for the Union led him to enlist. Gov. Morton sent him a commission as major. For his share in the capture of Fort Donelson he was promoted lieutenant-colonel, and for his meritorious service at Shiloh he was made a colonel. He commanded a brigade of cavalry in Burnside's expedition into East Tennessee and was the first to occupy Knoxville in 1863. He learned to know Grant, Sherman, and Thomas. Foster states in his *Memoirs* that his military life enlarged his knowledge of men and gave him a fuller self-confidence.

After the war Foster became editor of the *Evansville Daily Journal,* the most influential paper in Southern Indiana. In 1872, he served as chairman of the Republican state committee. As such he was instrumental in bringing about the reëlection of Oliver P. Morton to the United States Senate and of Gen. Grant to the presidency. The next year President Grant designated him as minister to Mexico. He served there during the transition from the Lerdo to the Diaz régime and under trying circumstances succeeded in making himself highly agreeable to the Mexican government.

Early in 1880, President Hayes transferred him to St. Petersburg. He remained there a year and had little to do except to attend ceremonies and to plead for leniency in the treatment of American Jews. He returned to Washington and set up in the practise of law. In 1883, President Arthur offered him the appointment as minister to Spain. Foster accepted. He negotiated a reciprocity treaty affecting the trade with Cuba, but the treaty failed to meet the approval of the Senate. During Cleveland's first administration Foster practised law. Harrison appointed him on a special mission to Madrid to negotiate another reciprocity treaty. This treaty became effective and for two years greatly facilitated American trade with Cuba and Porto Rico.

During the latter part of Harrison's administration Foster became the agent for the United States in the Bering Sea or fur-seal arbitration. Two unexpected events weakened the case of the United States. As a part of the transfer of Alaska, Russia had delivered to the Department of State a mass of archives in the Russian language. These were reputed to show—and Foster so believed—that Russia had exercised exclusive territorial jurisdiction over Bering Sea. Foster employed one Ivan Petroff to select the pertinent documents and to translate them. Petroff furnished the translations to support the American contention. Copies of the documents and their translation occupied a prominent place in the case. Several weeks after their submission to counsel for Great Britain a clerk in the Department of State, William C. Mayo, discovered discrepancies. Petroff confronted with the evidence admitted his guilt. Foster promptly informed the British legation in Washington of the circumstances of the case and explained to the British agent how the perfidy had been imposed upon him. The second untoward event occurred during the oral arguments before the tribunal at Paris. Russia had supported the stand taken by the United States for the protection of the fur-seals. On June 21, 1893, Sir Richard Webster asked permission to read a document which had been laid before Parliament. Russia had conceded to Great Britain that seals could be taken anywhere outside a zone of thirty miles around the Russian islands on the Asiatic side of Bering Sea. The United States lost the case on all points with the exception that the tribunal allowed a prohibited zone of sixty miles around the Pribilof Islands.

For about eight months during 1892 and 1893 and partly overlapping the period of the fur-seal arbitration Foster served as secretary of state. As such he negotiated a treaty of annexation with the Republic of Hawaii. This negotiation took place so shortly after the establishment of the republic under the domination of American citizens there and under such questionable circumstances that when Cleveland succeeded to the presidency he withdrew the treaty from the Senate. Another important event in his term was the *Baltimore* incident. Capt. W. S. Schley of the *Baltimore* in Santiago harbor, Chile, had given shore leave to a number of sailors and officers. Whatever the

cause may have been, a fight ensued in which two sailors were killed and seventeen wounded. Foster called attention to the fact that reparation was due the injured and the dependents of those who had been killed. Chile proposed arbitration. Foster replied that inasmuch as questions of national honor were involved a frank and friendly offer of voluntary compensation would be accepted as a proof of good-will. Thereupon Chile offered $75,000 in gold which was accepted as satisfactory.

At the close of the Chino-Japanese War, December 1894, the Chinese foreign office invited Foster, then a private citizen, to join the Chinese commissioners in the negotiation of peace with Japan. He accepted, and performed a creditable service in bringing about an agreement between Li Hung Chang and Marquis Ito. Later, in 1907, Foster represented China at the Second Hague Conference. In 1903 Great Britain and the United States agreed to arbitrate their differences about the Alaska-Canadian boundary. The United States designated Foster as agent to take charge of the preparation of the case. Greatly to his credit the tribunal sustained substantially his arguments and conclusions. As a lawyer in Washington Foster represented various governments, notably the Mexican. Probably the most important case concerned the Weil and La Abra claims of over a million dollars, which had been awarded to the United States by a claims commission. Foster found and proved that the awards had been obtained through fraud. Through his efforts Mexico was reimbursed for payments made on these claims.

Foster delivered numerous lectures on various phases of international relations which found their way later into periodicals and pamphlets. He was especially interested in foreign missions and in arbitration. His courses at George Washington University comprised the salient features of American diplomatic history from 1776 to 1876, the rules and procedure of diplomatic intercourse, which developed into the best book of its kind written by an American, and an outline of the relations of the United States with the Orient. Included in his printed works, which are marked by a good perspective, a restrained and apt use of anecdote, optimism, and a clear and readable style, are the following: *A Century of American Diplomacy, 1776–1876* (1900); *American Diplomacy in the Orient* (1903); *Arbitration and the Hague Court* (1904); *The Practise of Diplomacy* (1906); and *War Stories for my Grandchildren* (1918).

[Foster wrote his own biography in *Diplomatic Memoirs* (2 vols., 1909). He describes accurately and with human interest the events in which he took part and the men and women whom he met. The volumes for the appropriate years of the foreign relations of the United States contain a record of his official work as minister to various countries and as secretary of state. See also Wm. R. Castle, Jr., in *Am. Secretaries of State and their Diplomacy*, vol. VIII (1928); José L. Suarez, *Mr. John W. Foster* (Buenos Aires, 1918); *N. Y. Times*, Nov. 16, *Evening Star* (Washington, D. C.), Nov. 15, 1917.]

C. E. H.

**FOSTER, JUDITH ELLEN HORTON** (Nov. 3, 1840–Aug. 11, 1910), lawyer, temperance reformer, was a daughter of Jotham and Judith (Delano) Horton. She was born at Lowell, Mass., where her father had a charge as a Methodist minister. Her mother died when Judith was five years old and her father died five years later. She then lived with a married sister in Boston and there received some education, particularly in music, which was continued at Wesleyan Seminary, Lima, N. Y. After an unfortunate marriage, which ended in a divorce, she went to Chicago and directed musical instruction in a mission school situated in the Bridgeport district. In 1869 she married a young lawyer, Elijah C. Foster, a native of Canada who was a graduate of the University of Michigan Law School. They made their home in Clinton, Iowa, where he entered the practise of his profession. In spite of family cares and responsibilities, she determined to study law with him, and within three years she was admitted to the bar (1872), becoming one of the first women lawyers engaged in regular practise in the United States.

Among the cases that came to her and her husband were several that involved the aggressions of local liquor dealers and their sympathizers. This litigation seems to have directed her attention especially to the temperance movement. She became interested in the famous "Women's Crusade" that began in Ohio and moved rapidly westward, aiming through moral suasion to put an end to local liquor-selling. Very early in the history of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union she became identified with that organization, falling under the spell of its able and eloquent leader, Frances E. Willard. It was then that Mrs. Foster's abilities as a public speaker were disclosed and utilized. She also came to be counted on as an efficient member of the national staff, serving for many years as the superintendent of the legislative department of the Union.

After she had been engaged for nearly a decade in aggressive reform work, and by her speechmaking had established a reputation in Iowa, a campaign began for the adoption of a prohibitory amendment to the state constitution. Women in Iowa at that time (1882) had no vote, but their influence was admittedly an important factor in securing the passage of the amendment

by the legislature, though it was afterward declared void on technical grounds by the supreme court of the state. In this campaign Mrs. Foster, through her platform abilities as well as her organizing skill, rose to a place of leadership. Her appeal to the voters was non-partisan in spirit. She did not believe that the temperance cause could be advanced by using the usual party organizations. In this matter she soon found herself in disagreement with the views of Frances Willard and other officers of the W. C. T. U., who were bent on committing the national body to the indorsement of a third-party movement for prohibition. For four years she combated this effort in national conventions, and finally, in 1888, when further resistance seemed hopeless, she seceded from the Union with her colleagues from Iowa. She then organized the Woman's Republican Association of which she was president until her death. She proposed to continue her labors for temperance reform through a non-partisan W. C. T. U., but this never became a strong or effective organization.

Besides her indefatigable labors in behalf of Republican candidates in successive presidential elections, she inspected mobilization stations during the Spanish-American War, at the request of President McKinley; went to St. Petersburg in 1900 as the representative of the United States at the International Red Cross Conference; made a special report to President Roosevelt in 1906 on the condition of women and children in industry; endeavored to secure state laws for the protection of child workers; and served in 1908 as special agent of the Department of Justice to inspect the condition of federal criminals in federal and state prisons. She achieved notable success as a public speaker at a time when women were only beginning to play a part in politics; and in all her activities she was prompted and governed by a masterly and usually dependable quality of common sense.

[Frances E. Willard, *Woman and Temperance* (1883); E. C. Adams and W. D. Foster, *Heroines of Modern Progress* (1913), pp. 245–79; *The Reg. and Leader* (Des Moines, Ia.), Aug. 12, 1910; *Who's Who in America*, 1910–11. *The Stand. Encycl. of the Alcohol Problem*, vol. III (1926), ed. by E. H. Cherrington, contains an article on Mrs. Foster and on prohibition in Iowa.]

W. B. S—w.

**FOSTER, LAFAYETTE SABINE** (Nov. 22, 1806–Sept. 19, 1880), Connecticut editor, judge, United States senator, was the eldest son of Daniel and Welthea Ladd Foster. His father, a descendant of Miles Standish, had been a captain in the Revolutionary War. Lafayette was born in Franklin, near Norwich, Conn. The family had slender means, and when he reached college age he was obliged to support himself. He attended Brown University, graduating with high honors in 1828. The following year he taught in an academy in Queen Annes County, Md., and then began the study of law in the office of Calvin Goddard of Norwich, who had been an active Federalist politician, and member of the Hartford Convention of 1814. In 1831 he was admitted to the New London County bar. Two years later he opened a law office in Hampton, in Windham County, but in 1835 returned to Norwich, which became his home thereafter. In 1835 he became editor of the *Norwich Republican*, a Whig journal (Caulkins, *Norwich*, pp. 582–83). On Oct. 2, 1837, he married Joanna, daughter of James Lanman of Norwich, judge and United States senator. After her death in 1859, he married, Oct. 4, 1860, Martha Lyman of Northampton, Mass. Two daughters and a son were born of the first marriage, but all of them died in childhood. There were no children from the second marriage.

Foster became interested in politics early in his career. He first represented Norwich in the General Assembly in 1839. He was reëlected in 1840, from 1846 to 1849 served three years in succession, and later served two single terms, in 1854 and 1870. Four times he was speaker of the House of Representatives. In the state elections of 1850 and 1851 Foster was the unsuccessful Whig candidate for governor. During 1851 and 1852 he was mayor of Norwich. In 1854 he was chosen United States senator, subsequently holding that position twelve years, from 1855 to 1867. While in the Senate he spoke frequently but his chief distinction was his election as president *pro tempore* of the Senate. In 1866 he failed to receive the Republican caucus nomination for a third senatorial term, presumably because his opinions were too conservative. In 1870 he became a judge of the Connecticut superior court, and served until 1876. He supported Horace Greeley for president in 1872. Later he was nominated for national representative by a combination of Democrats and liberal Republicans, but was not elected. In 1878 he served on a commission studying a simplification of legal procedure in Connecticut, and during 1878–79 he was a member of a commission to settle a boundary dispute with the state of New York. In appearance, Foster was slight and unimpressive, his expression being grave and serious. He possessed, nevertheless, both humor and caustic wit, with which he frequently enlivened the otherwise dull sessions of legislative assemblies wherein he spent so much of his life.

[*Memorial Sketch of Lafayette S. Foster* (privately printed, Boston, 1881); F. C. Pierce, *Foster Geneal.*

(1889); F. M. Caulkins, *Hist. of Norwich, Conn.* (1866); D. Loomis and J. G. Calhoun, *Judic. and Civil Hist. of Conn.* (1895); "Brown Univ. Necrology for 1880–1881," printed in *Providence Daily Jour.*, June 15, 1881; *Hartford Daily Courant*, Sept. 21, 1880.]

J. M. M.

**FOSTER, MURPHY JAMES** (Jan. 12, 1849–June 12, 1921), lawyer, governor of Louisiana, son of Thomas Jefferson and Martha (Murphy) Foster, was born on a plantation near Franklin, La. On his father's side he was of English, French, and Spanish descent; and on his mother's side, of English and Irish. His paternal grandparents, Levi and Leida (Demaret) Foster, were residents of Louisiana before its purchase in 1803. He was educated at a private school in Franklin, at Washington and Lee University, and at Cumberland University, Lebanon, Tenn., from which he graduated in 1870 (*Who's Who in America*, 1920–21). He was also graduated from the law department of Tulane University in 1871 and engaged immediately in the practise of law in New Orleans. He entered politics early and was elected in 1876 from St. Mary Parish to the state legislature, the so-called McEnery legislature, but was prevented from taking his seat by the Kellogg government. In 1879, following the termination of the Carpet-Bag rule in Louisiana, he was elected to the state Senate from the tenth district and served continuously for three terms of four years each (1880–92). He was elected president of the Senate in 1888 and served in that capacity for two years.

In 1890 the question of renewing the charter of the Louisiana State Lottery Company came up for consideration in the state legislature. This company had been granted a charter by the Carpet-Bag legislature in 1868 for a period of twenty-five years, in consideration of an annual license fee of $40,000. It now offered to pay $1,250,000 a year for twenty-five years if its charter were extended. This proposal of the company thereupon became the dominant issue in the state. Foster was bitterly opposed to the renewing of the charter and led the fight against it in the Senate. He became the candidate of the anti-lottery faction of the Democratic party for governor in the primary election of 1892 and was elected by a majority of over 32,000 in a total vote of over 126,000. The proposal to renew the charter of the Lottery Company was overwhelmingly defeated and the company discontinued business in Louisiana in December 1892 and withdrew to Honduras.

Foster was reëlected governor in 1896 in a campaign marked by great political bitterness between the Democrats and the "Lily White" Republicans—the sugar planters of Louisiana, hitherto Democrats, who felt they were being deprived by the Wilson-Gorman Act of 1893 of the protection they needed against Cuban sugar. This Lily White Republican party was so called because they aimed to keep it a strictly white man's organization. They nominated John Newton Pharr, a former Confederate soldier, for governor and polled such a heavy vote for him that they contested the election in the state legislature. The decision of the legislature was however in Foster's favor, and he served until 1900. As an outcome of this campaign and very largely through the influence of Foster, a new state constitution was adopted in 1898, which made it impossible for any political party to use ignorant colored voters in future elections, by denying the right to vote to those who could not read and write or who did not own property whose assessed valuation was at least $300, and by adopting the famous "grandfather clause."

In 1900 at the expiration of his second term, Foster was elected to the United States Senate by the Louisiana state legislature and was reëlected by the people of the state in 1906, serving for t velve years. On being defeated for reëlection in 1912, he resumed the practise of law at Franklin but was shortly appointed United States collector of customs at New Orleans. He was holding that position at the time of his death. He was married to Rosa Rosetta Ker on Apr. 20, 1881. Nine children survived his death.

[The best account of Foster's part in the Anti-Louisiana Lottery Movement is in B. C. Alwes, *Louisiana Lottery Company*, which was submitted to the history department of the Louisiana State University in 1929 as a thesis for the master's degree. A brief account of Foster's part in the formation and adoption of the constitution of Louisiana in 1898 is to be found in Alcée Fortier, *Louisiana* (1909). See also J. W. Leonard, *Men of America* (1908); *Daily Item*, Feb. 26, 1898; *Times-Democrat* and *Daily Picayune*, Jan.–Mar. 1898; and obituary notices in the New Orleans newspapers of June 13, 1921.]

E. M. V.

**FOSTER, RANDOLPH SINKS** (Feb. 22, 1820–May 1, 1903), clergyman, bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, was the son of Israel and Polly (Kain) Foster. His grandfather, Thomas Foster, had emigrated from England, settled in Berkeley County, Va., and died of wounds inflicted by Indians while he was on an expedition in Kentucky. Randolph was born in the county jail, Williamsburg, Clermont County, Ohio, of which his father was the jailer. Later the family moved to Kentucky where the boy grew up. At an early age he entered Augusta College, Kentucky. While there it was his misfortune to become known as a remarkable "boy preacher," and unwise counselors persuaded him to leave college and enter the ministry when he was but seventeen years old. He regretted this action subsequently, but such were his intellec-

tual gifts and his diligence in study that he not only attained wide eminence as a preacher, but became one of the best-known writers on religious and theological subjects among the Methodists of his day. In 1837 he was admitted to the Ohio Conference on probation, was received into full connection and ordained deacon in 1839 and was made elder in 1841. In July 1840 he married Sarah A. Miley of Cincinnati.

The first thirteen years of his ministry were spent in western Virginia and Ohio. Toward the close of this period he came into prominence as a writer, publishing in 1849 his *Objections to Calvinism As It Is, in a Series of Letters Addressed to Rev. N. L. Rice, D.D.*, a Presbyterian who had assailed the doctrines of Methodism. It is a work marked by intellectual vigor and clear, concise statement, and furnished busy preachers with an arsenal of facts and argument wherewith to defend themselves against the frequent attacks of the Calvinists. In 1850 he was transferred to the New York Conference and stationed at the Mulberry Street Church, New York. All his subsequent pastorates were in or about that city. The following year appeared one of his most widely read books, an extensive, practical discussion of holiness and how it may be attained, entitled *Nature and Blessedness of Christian Purity.* A revised edition was published in 1869 under the title, *Christian Purity or the Heritage of Faith.* In June 1856 he was elected president of Northwestern University, though he did not assume duties until the fall of 1857. The institution was in its infancy and its resources were insufficient. Foster had no taste for drudgery or business, even disliking to manage his own affairs, and in 1860 he returned to the active ministry. In 1868 he became professor of systematic theology at Drew Theological Seminary, and from 1870 to 1872, when he was elected bishop, he filled the office of president. His duties as bishop carried him to all the Conferences in this country and to Mexico, South America, Europe, and the East. In 1902 he went on the non-effective list, and the closing years of his life, spent near Boston, were devoted to work upon his *Studies in Theology,* an attempt at a thorough discussion of fundamental problems. Six volumes were published (1889–99).

He was tall and impressive in appearance, and stalwart in mind and character. His outlook was broad and his interest was in things cosmic. As a bishop he was sometimes criticized for arbitrariness and harshness. He loathed ecclesiastical politics and was honest and plain-spoken, but kind at heart. His preaching had in it both intellectual power and deep emotionality. Much of what he wrote belongs to the past generation, but discloses a mind of the best type. He was indifferent to authority, and "he would have as soon appealed to the Fathers for the truth of the multiplication table as for the truth of anything depending upon reason" (Borden P. Bowne, *Zion's Herald,* May 6, 1903). Among his publications not already mentioned are: *Beyond the Grave* (1879), extensively criticized because of some of its conclusions; *Centenary Thoughts for Pew and Pulpit* (1884); *Philosophy of Christian Experience* (1890); *Union of Episcopal Methodisms* (1892).

[*Minutes of the Ann. Conferences of the M. E. Ch.* (1837); *Thirey & Mitchell's Encyc. Directory and Hist. of Clermont County, Ohio* (1902); M. S. Terry, "Bishop Randolph S. Foster," in *Meth. Rev.,* Jan.–Feb. 1904; *Christian Advocate,* May 7, 1903; Arthur H. Wilde, *Northwestern Univ.: A Hist.* (1905); Estelle F. Ward, *The Story of Northwestern Univ.* (1924); *Boston Transcript* and *Boston Herald,* May 2, 1903.] H. E. S.

**FOSTER, ROBERT SANFORD** (Jan. 27, 1834–Mar. 3, 1903), Union soldier, was born at Vernon, Jennings County, Ind., the son of Riley S. and Sarah (Wallace) Foster. He attended the local schools, and at the age of sixteen went to Indianapolis, learned the tinner's trade, and later was employed in his uncle's store. He was mustered into the volunteer service, Apr. 22, 1861, as captain of the 11th Indiana Infantry, a three-months "Zouave" regiment of which Lew Wallace was colonel and which met the enemy at Romney in June. Appointed major of the 13th Indiana Infantry, June 19, 1861, he served in Rosecrans's brigade at the battle of Rich Mountain and in the West Virginia campaign of the summer and fall of 1861. He was promoted lieutenant-colonel of his regiment on Oct. 28, 1861, and colonel, Apr. 30, 1862, and commanded it in the Shenandoah Valley campaign against Jackson, in the spring of 1862. Ordered to the Peninsula to join the Army of the Potomac, the regiment arrived at Harrison's Landing July 3, in time to help cover the retreat of the army. Later, it was transferred to Suffolk, Va., whose fortified lines covering Norfolk and Portsmouth against attack from the south withstood a siege by Longstreet in the spring of 1863. Foster was appointed brigadier-general of volunteers, June 12, 1863, and commanded a brigade stationed on Folly Island, Charleston Harbor, during Gillmore's siege operations against the city, in the fall and winter. In the spring of 1864 the brigade was transferred to Florida, but returned to southeastern Virginia before summer. Foster was then on duty for some weeks as chief of staff of the X (Gillmore's) Corps, in Butler's Army of the James. In June, in command of an infantry brigade to

which was attached a small force of cavalry, artillery, and engineers, he crossed the James and seized a base at Deep Bottom, near Richmond; and through the summer took part in many demonstrations, under Hancock and Sheridan, against that city. In October he was put in command of a division of the X Corps for the operations around Petersburg; and after the X Corps was merged (December 1864) in the newly organized XXIV Corps, he served at first as its chief of staff and later in command of its 1st Division in the siege of Petersburg. It was Foster's division which assaulted and carried Fort Gregg. It took part in the final pursuit of Lee's army, and was in action at Appomattox up to the last. Foster was a member of the military commission which tried the persons involved in Lincoln's assassination. He resigned from the volunteer army, Sept. 25, 1865, and declining an appointment, offered him in 1866, as lieutenant-colonel in the regular army, he spent the rest of his life in Indianapolis. He was city treasurer, 1867–72, United States marshal for the district of Indiana, 1881–85, and for many years president of the city board of trade. He helped in the establishment of the Grand Army of the Republic. His wife was Margaret R. Foust, whom he married in May 1861; she died thirty years later, on May 7, 1891.

[Chas. W. Smith, "Life and Military Services of . . . Robert S. Foster," in *Ind. Hist. Soc. Pubs.*, vol. V, no. 6 (1915); *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Official Records* (*Army*), 1 ser., vols. XII (pt. 1), XVIII, XXVII (pt. 2), XXXVI (pt. 2), XL (pts. 1, 2, 3), XLII (pts. 1, 2, 3), XLVI (pts. 1, 2, 3); obituaries in *Indianapolis Jour.*, and *Indianapolis Sentinel*, Mar. 4, 1903; unpublished documents in the War Dept.] T. M. S.

## FOSTER, ROGER SHERMAN BALDWIN

(Apr. 21, 1857–Feb. 22, 1924), lawyer, author, was a descendant of Reginald Foster of Little Badow, Essex, England, who emigrated in 1638 and obtained a grant of land in Ipswich, Mass., in 1641. His father, Dwight Foster, associate justice of the supreme judicial court of Massachusetts, married Henrietta Perkins, daughter of Gov. Roger S. Baldwin of New Haven, Conn., Aug. 20, 1850. Roger was born at Worcester, Mass., where his parents resided. Having obtained his early education at the Boston Latin School, he went to Europe, studied at the University of Marburg, 1873–74, and on his return completed his education at Yale University (B.A. 1878). He then entered the Columbia Law School, graduated LL.B. there in 1880, and on his admission to the New York bar, in the same year commenced practise in New York City. From the outset he ear-marked the branches of the law in which he subsequently became a specialist, by publishing a short work on *The Taxation of the Elevated Railways in the City of New York* (1883), and an address in which he discussed *The Constitutional Aspects of the Conflict between the President and the Senate* (1886). Then followed: *The Federal Judiciary Acts of 1875 and 1887* (1887); *A treatise on pleading and practice in Equity in the Courts of the United States* (1890); and *A treatise on Federal practice in civil causes with special reference to patent cases and the foreclosure of railway mortgages* (2 vols., 1892). The material in the two last treatises was subsequently expanded and incorporated in *A treatise on Federal Practice* (4 vols., 4th ed., 1909).

In 1892, serious rioting by strikers occurred in Pennsylvania, resulting in the indictment of the advisory committee of the citizens of Homestead for treason against the state. This action induced Foster, when the question was still *sub judice*, to write an article, "Treason Trials in the United States," which appeared in the *Albany Law Journal*, Oct. 29, 1892, wherein, though expressing no opinion on the pending case, he demonstrated that there was no precedent for a conviction of treason, except where there had been an insurrection of a general nature involving resistance to a general public law or an intention of subverting the government. Such was the cogency of this article that the Homestead proceedings were abandoned. He was appointed by Gov. Flower counsel to the Tenement House Commissioners in 1894 and in that capacity established the constitutionality of the act which declared that tenement houses in New York City previously erected should be furnished by the owners with water when so directed by the board of health, the court holding that it was a proper exercise of the police power of the state (*Health Department of the City of New York* vs. *Rector . . . of Trinity Church*, 145 *N. Y.*, 32). He subsequently drafted the Tenement House Acts of 1895, the first comprehensive legislation on the subject in New York State.

In 1895 he published *Commentaries on the Constitution of the United States*, historical and judicial, a work which displayed great erudition and placed him in the front rank of constitutional lawyers. In the same year, in collaboration with E. V. Abbot, he produced *A treatise on the Federal income tax under the Act of 1894*. In 1896 he was instrumental in procuring the appointment of a receiver for the Bay State Gas Company, this provoking the animosity of Thomas W. Lawson, the Boston financier, who bitterly attacked him in his book, *Frenzied Finance* (1905), though all the charges therein

were publicly retracted later. He was retained in January 1900 with Charles J. Faulkner, as counsel for Senator William A. Clark of Montana, in the proceedings before the committee on privileges and elections of the United States Senate, consequent upon the allegation that Clark's election as senator had been procured by gross corruption and bribery. His speech on behalf of Clark was considered a forensic masterpiece (*Senate Report, No. 1052,* 56 Cong., 1 Sess.).

He was a frequent traveler, principally in countries outside the beaten track, and during 1912 spent considerable time in Asia Minor, searching for the sites of the seven churches mentioned in the Book of Revelations. He also subsequently visited Armenia, making an unofficial report on conditions in that country at the request of President Wilson. He lectured from time to time at Columbia, Yale, and other universities, on various phases of American history, and on classical subjects. In addition to the works mentioned he wrote in 1914 *A treatise on the Federal income tax under the Act of 1913,* and in 1922 a small book, *Liberty of contract and labor law,* for the American School of Correspondence. He was also the author of pamphlets on varied topics and contributed to the press articles descriptive of his travels. He married, on Feb. 22, 1921, Laura Pugh Moxley.

[F. C. Pierce, *Foster Geneal.* (1899); *Who's Who in America,* 1924–25; *N. Y. Law Jour.,* Feb. 25, 1924; J. M. Lamberton, ed., *Quarter-Centenary Record of the Class of 1878, Yale Univ.* (1905); *Yale Univ. Obit. Rec. of Grads.* (1924); private information.] H. W. H. K.

**FOSTER, STEPHEN COLLINS** (July 4, 1826–Jan. 13, 1864), composer, was the son of William Barclay Foster, a merchant of Pittsburgh, Pa., and Eliza Clayland Tomlinson. He was descended on both sides from Scotch-Irish emigrants, the earliest of whom, Alexander Foster, had settled in Lancaster County, Pa., around 1728. His grandfather, James Foster, fought in the Revolution, and his father was quartermaster and commissary of the United States army during the War of 1812. After training in the Allegheny and Athens academies, Foster entered Jefferson College in July 1841; however, his predilection for music and "something perfectly original about him" (letter of Eliza C. Foster in Milligan, *post,* p. 13) rendered formal education distasteful to him, and he left school in August, continuing his education with tutors in Pittsburgh. Although he had already written several pieces, including "The Tioga Waltz" for four flutes, which was performed at the Athens Academy Commencement, and "Open Thy Lattice, Love," published in 1844, a musical career was not considered suitable for him, and in 1846 he was sent to Cincinnati to keep books for his brother, Dunning Foster. Here it became evident through the general popularity of some of his negro ballads, "Louisiana Belle," "O Susanna," "Uncle Ned," and "Away Down South," which led to their publication in *Songs of the Sable Harmonists* (1848), that Foster's talent might prove profitable, and he returned to his parents' home in Allegheny City to devote himself exclusively to music.

At this time the most successful of the music-hall entertainments were the negro minstrels, and in writing songs for them Foster found his happiest medium. In 1849 "Nelly was a Lady," published that year in *Foster's Ethiopian Melodies,* was popularized by the then famous Christy's Minstrels, and in 1850 several of his ballads were taken into the repertories of the Christy, Campbell, and New Orleans Serenaders companies. In 1851 Foster sold to E. P. Christy [*q.v.*] the privilege of singing his songs from manuscript before their formal appearance, reserving to himself all publication rights. This proved to be a successful arrangement for both Christy and Foster. Each contributed to the popularity of the other. In the same year "The Old Folks at Home" was published, and in 1852 "Massa's in the Cold Ground," both of which were among Foster's best songs. The following year saw the publication of "My Old Kentucky Home" and "Old Dog Tray." Of the latter 125,000 copies are said to have been sold within eighteen months of publication (Milligan, *post,* p. 68). With these two songs he deserted the dialect of his earlier works, to return to it only in two minor ballads.

With the exception of a trip to New Orleans in 1852 (probably his only excursion into the South), and a short residence in New York in 1853, Foster remained in Pittsburgh until 1860. For the most part he wrote little and ineffectively, and only in 1860 with the publication of "Old Black Joe" asserted himself with his former power. In July of that year he went to New York where he spent the remainder of his life. He wrote ceaselessly, turning out forty-eight songs in one year, but his music was almost without exception reiterative and commonplace. He spent his last years in poverty and obscurity, drinking heavily, and selling his songs to music stores for small cash sums. He died, after a short illness, in the charity ward of the Bellevue Hospital. He had married Jane Denny McDowell of Pittsburgh in July 1850, from whom he was separated a few years before his death. Foster's music was primitive, limited, and uneven, but his best songs gave permanent expression to one phase of American life—the nostalgic melan-

choly of the negro—and remain a valuable contribution to the folk-literature of American music.

[The best biography of Foster is H. V. Milligan, *Stephen Collins Foster* (1920). A more reticent treatment is the book by his brother, Morrison Foster, *Biog., Songs, and Musical Compositions of Stephen C. Foster* (1896). Other material appears in W. R. Whittlesey and O. G. Sonneck, *Cat. of the First Editions of Stephen C. Foster* (1915); *Musical America*, July 2, 1921, Apr. 25, 1929; *Musical Courier*, Jan. 11, 1923, Mar. 22, 29, 1930; *Musical Observer*, July 1, 1926; *Atlantic Monthly*, Nov. 1867; *N. Y. Times*, June 13, 1926.] C. W. P.

**FOSTER, STEPHEN SYMONDS** (Nov. 17, 1809–Sept. 8, 1881), Abolitionist, reformer, son of Asa and Sarah (Morrill) Foster, was born at Canterbury, N. H. His father's family had long been prominent in this vicinity and several of its members had been active in New Hampshire politics. He was the ninth child in a family of thirteen and at an early age became accustomed to hard work on the farm. He then learned the trade of carpenter and builder, but becoming interested in the religious life, decided to prepare himself for the ministry. In his early twenties he entered Dartmouth College and graduated in 1838. While an undergraduate he was attracted by the growing anti-slavery movement, which at that time had many supporters at Dartmouth. Such a crusade had a strong appeal for a man of his humanitarian instincts. He had formulated a creed of his own, based largely on the Sermon on the Mount, and regardless of resultant complications in every-day life, endeavored to govern himself thereby. While at Dartmouth he served a jail sentence rather than perform militia duty, and incidentally, started an agitation which eventually produced drastic reforms in the wretched prison system of rural New England.

On leaving college he entered Union Theological Seminary but his stay at the institution was brief. He had already been assailed by doubts as to whether the churches were genuine upholders of Christian principles, and when the seminary refused accommodations for a meeting protesting against the government's course in the Northeastern Boundary embroglio, he dropped his studies, and soon after severed connections with the church and organized religion in general. For some years he made a precarious living as an anti-slavery lecturer, and one of his associates, Parker Pillsbury [*q.v.*], has left a vivid record of the hardships, discouragements, and persecutions Foster encountered while campaigning in New Hampshire. He was associated with the extremist group, was a close friend of Garrison, and probably second only to the latter in influence and activity in the early years of the agitation. Like Garrison he denounced the Constitution and



was ready to dissolve the Union. He accompanied his colleague on several lecture tours and became equally well known as an agitator, not only in New England, but throughout the Northern states. Eventually he settled on a farm near Worcester but continued to appear as a public speaker and lecturer.

Foster grasped one essential principle, namely, that "slavery is an American and not a Southern institution." Business, politics, and religion were, he believed, committed to the maintenance of the *status quo*. He detested the attitude of religious bodies especially and, about 1841, adopted the expedient of visiting various churches, interrupting services with a polite request for a hearing on the slavery issue. He was repeatedly ejected, several times prosecuted, and more than once roughly handled by offended worshipers, but he attracted attention to the cause which could hardly have been gained by more decorous methods. His career as lecturer was exciting, at least in the earlier years. Fearless, resolute, and gifted with an unusual command of denunciatory language, he was repeatedly jeered and pelted by unfriendly audiences. He wrote occasional newspaper articles but only one production of note. This pamphlet, *The Brotherhood of Thieves; or a True Picture of the American Church and Clergy* (1843), one of the most vitriolic works of the anti-slavery era, passed through more than twenty editions and was widely circulated. He remained with the extremists throughout the long contest over slavery but became interested in sundry other reform movements. Besides advocating woman suffrage, he was a temperance worker, an advocate of world peace, and an energetic supporter of the rights of labor. His refusal to pay taxes because women were denied the suffrage more than once forced his friends to bid in his farm at sheriff's sale. On Dec. 31, 1845, he married a kindred spirit, Abigail Kelley [*q.v.*], Abolitionist lecturer and pioneer in the woman's rights movement.

Foster was a successful farmer and his property near Worcester was one of the best managed and most productive in the district. His contemporaries describe him as of rugged features, rather ungainly in general appearance, his hands hard and gnarled with labor, but he possessed a wonderful voice. Despite the vehemence of his platform manners he is said to have been gentle and kindly in his personal relations. He seems to have suffered from an overdeveloped logical sense and a complete lack of humor. Probably Wendell Phillips made as fair an estimate of Foster's work as might be given when at his funeral he declared: "It needed something to shake New

England and stun it into listening. He was the man, and offered himself for the martyrdom."

[J. K. Lord, *Hist. of Dartmouth Coll.* (1909); J. O. Lyford, *Hist. of the Town of Canterbury, N. H.* (1912); Lillie B. C. Wyman, "Reminiscences of Two Abolitionists," *New Eng. Mag.*, Jan. 1903; Parker Pillsbury, *Acts of the Anti-Slavery Apostles* (1883); *Wm. Lloyd Garrison, 1805–79: The Story of his Life Told by his Children* (1885–89); *Hist. of Woman Suffrage*, Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Susan B. Anthony, Matilda J. Gage, eds. (3 vols., 1881–87); Parker Pillsbury, Memoir in the *Granite Monthly*, Aug. 1882; the *Nation*, Sept. 15, 1881; *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Sept. 9, 10, 1881; *Worcester Daily Spy*, Sept. 9, 1881.] W.A.R.

**FOSTER, THEODORE** (Apr. 29, 1752–Jan. 13, 1828), United States senator, was born in Brookfield, Mass. His father was Jedediah Foster, judge of the superior court of Massachusetts, and his mother Dorothy Dwight of Dedham, a descendant of John Dwight and also of William Pyncheon, an incorporator of the Massachusetts Bay Company, who came to America in the fleet with John Winthrop. Theodore Foster graduated from Rhode Island College, now Brown University, in the class of 1770, the second class which the college sent out. On Oct. 27, 1771, he married Lydia Fenner, daughter of Arthur Fenner, Jr., afterwards governor of Rhode Island, and became the father of three children. He made law his profession and from 1776 to 1782 served as deputy from Providence in the General Assembly. In the year 1781 the town of Foster was created in his honor, and this town he represented in the lower house of the General Assembly from 1812 to 1816. During the years 1776–85, he became the close associate of Gov. Stephen Hopkins, then in retirement. The two men possessed a strong taste for history and collaborated in the collection of historical material. In 1785 Foster was made judge of the Rhode Island court of Admiralty. In 1786 he received the degree of M.A. from Dartmouth College, and in 1794 became a trustee of Brown University, a position which he held until 1822. In 1786 he opposed the paper money delusion then prevailing in Rhode Island. He favored the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, and on the admission of Rhode Island to the Union in May 1790, he and Joseph Stanton, Jr., were elected senators, a loan of one hundred and fifty dollars being made to the two senators to enable them to "take their seats promptly." On Aug. 12, 1790, he brought with him from Philadelphia the President of the United States for a first official visit to Rhode Island. He was an ardent Federalist, supporting the financial policy of Hamilton and Jay's treaty with Great Britain. While in Philadelphia he patronized the bookstores, attended public lectures, and, occasionally, theatres. Part of his time he spent in residence with a French family,



for the purpose of perfecting himself in the French language, and in December 1800, he was appointed on a committee to make a translation of so much of the journal of the "late envoys of the United States to the French Republic," as was communicated in French. He supported President John Adams, and in 1800 Aaron Burr against Thomas Jefferson for president. In 1800 his brother, Dwight Foster, became his colleague in the Senate and for nearly three years they sat together. Both retired from office in March 1803. On his retirement he withdrew to the town of Foster and there, in company with his intimate friend, Dr. Solomon Drowne, established himself at Mt. Hygeia where he became, it is said, the most assiduous antiquarian within the limits of the state. He long contemplated writing a history of Rhode Island and grouped his material, but never completed the undertaking. His first wife, Lydia, having died in 1801, on June 18, 1803, he married Esther Millard, daughter of Rev. Noah Millard of Foster, by whom he had five children. His death occurred in Providence, R. I., on Jan. 13, 1828.

[W. E. Foster, *R. I. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, vol. VII (1885); E. Field, *State of R. I. and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century*, vol. I (1902); S. G. Arnold, *Hist. of the State of R. I. and Providence Plantations*, II (1860); *Biog. Cyc. of Representative Men of R. I.* (1881), p. 138; R. M. Bayles, *Hist. of Providence County, R. I.*, II (1891), 629; *Hist. Cat. of Brown Univ., 1764–1904* (1905); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Oct. 1847; F. C. Pierce, *Foster Geneal.* (1899); *R. I. Am. and Providence Gazette*, Jan. 15, 1828; *Mass. Spy* and *Worcester County Advertiser*, Jan. 23, 1828. The Foster Papers are in the custody of the R. I. Hist. Soc.] I.B.R.

**FOULK, GEORGE CLAYTON** (Oct. 30, 1856–Aug. 6, 1893), naval officer, diplomat, the third son of Clayton and Caroline (Rudisill) Foulk, was born in Marietta, Pa. His paternal ancestors were largely of English stock, with a mixture of Swedish, and had lived in Delaware since early in the eighteenth century. His mother's family were of German descent. In 1872 Foulk was appointed to the United States Naval Academy, and was graduated in 1876, third in his class. He immediately went on Asiatic station, where he served during two cruises, and attracted the favorable attention of his commanding officers by reason of his studious habits and of his knowledge and execution of his duties. During the summer of 1882 he and two other young naval officers crossed little-known Siberia into Russia, and made a valuable report on that country to their government. On his return to America Foulk received his ensign's commission as of Nov. 25, 1877, and took a post in the naval library.

In May 1883 the first American minister to

Korea, Gen. Lucius H. Foote [*q.v.*], took up his residence in that country. In September the first Korean Mission to a Western nation arrived in Washington. When they returned to Korea on board the *Trenton,* Foulk was detailed as naval attaché to the American legation in Korea, and accompanied the Mission on the voyage. Gen. Foote had created an excellent impression at the Korean Court; the United States was in high favor as being a disinterested, friendly power; and Foulk was well received. The rivalries of Japan, China, Russia, and Great Britain made the American position very difficult. In January 1885 when Gen. Foote left Korea, Foulk was placed in charge of the legation. For the next two years he was faced with problems of extreme delicacy by reason of the conflicting aims of the Powers and of the inability of Korea to protect her own interests. Alone during the two years, unpaid for months at a time, with failing health, with limited advice or attention from Washington, in the midst of intrigue and open hostility, he conducted his office with skill and marked ability, and with credit to his country. At his own request he was relieved in June 1886 by William H. Parker, but was soon recalled. He was finally withdrawn as attaché in June 1887, despite the protests of the Korean King. The action was taken on the demand of the Chinese government and of the Korean foreign office, which was under the latter's influence, because of Foulk's close relations with the King and his refusal to acquiesce in Chinese domination. Previously he had declined the King's invitation to become personal adviser to His Majesty. He was recalled to Washington where he was given commendation and his commission of lieutenant, junior grade (as of May 1, 1884), but his valid claims for back pay were disallowed, and now that his services were no longer a necessity he was discarded by the Department of State.

He had married a Japanese, Kane Murase, whom he had known for many years, during the summer of 1887, and he returned to Japan, where he resigned his commission. For two years he was employed by the American Trading Company of Yokohama, but a business career did not appeal to him, and in 1890 he resigned to take a position as professor of mathematics at Doshisha College, Kyoto. Here he remained until his death, a valued member of the faculty, despite his failing health induced by the severe strain of his work in Korea. He died at the age of thirty-seven years, and was buried in Kyoto.

[Tyler Dennett, "Early Am. Policy in Korea, 1883–87," *Pol. Sci. Quart.*, Mar. 1923; *Army and Nav. Jour.*, Sept. 16, 1893; E. W. Callahan, *List of Officers of the Navy of the U. S. and of the Marine Corps* (1901);



U. S. Navy Registers, 1877–89. A collection of Foulk's letters and letter-press copies of his dispatches is deposited in the N. Y. Pub. Lib., and other collections are held privately. The originals of his dispatches are in the archives of the state and navy departments in Washington and of the former American legation in Seul, Korea.]

H. J. N.

**FOWLE, DANIEL** (October 1715–June 8, 1787), printer, author, was born in Charlestown, Mass., where the records of the First Church state that Daniel, son of John and Mary (Barrell) Fowle, was baptized on Oct. 16, 1715. In consequence of the death of both parents in 1734 he was placed under the guardianship of S. Trumbull. At about the same time he was apprenticed to Samuel Kneeland, a printer in Boston, and in 1740 became associated with Gamaliel Rogers in the firm of Rogers & Fowle, a partnership which continued for ten years. The two had a flourishing business, printed much of importance, and because of the quality of their ink, which was of their own manufacture, and the best in the country at the time, they produced imprints comparing favorably with those of to-day. On Mar. 2, 1743, they began the publication of the *Boston Weekly Magazine,* discontinued after the fourth number, but followed in September by the *American Magazine and Historical Chronicle,* a monthly issue which was continued for more than three years. It was the first magazine in the colonies to survive for so long a time. In 1748 they established a weekly newspaper, *The Independent Advertiser,* which attracted notable correspondence and had a good circulation but was discontinued in 1750 when the partnership was dissolved. They are said to have published also a duodecimo edition of the New Testament about 1745, but since no copies have been found to substantiate the contention, the matter remains in doubt. In addition to these undertakings they carried on a regular printing business of books and pamphlets which was exceeded in Boston only by that of their competitors, Kneeland & Green.

After the dissolution of the partnership Fowle carried on the business alone for four years; then the tenor of his life changed. In 1754 the Excise Act passed the General Court causing wide-spread and bitter discussion. A number of anonymous pamphlets was printed among which was an allegory entitled *The Monster of Monsters.* Fowle was brought before the General Court on suspicion of having been the printer of the obnoxious article, and was confined for three days in the common jail. This act of injustice aroused his resentment to such a degree that he wrote and printed in 1755 a pamphlet entitled *A Total Eclipse of Liberty* and during the following year *An Appendix to the Late Total Eclipse of Lib-*

*erty.* While he was still feeling the unfairness of his treatment he was approached by citizens of Portsmouth, N. H., with a view to his removal there. Promised the position of government printer of that province, he decided to leave Massachusetts Bay, where liberty of the press was threatened, and removed to Portsmouth. He was the first printer in New Hampshire, and on Oct. 7, 1756, issued the first number of the *New Hampshire Gazette.* Though his printing business was not large, the apprentices from his office started other printing centers in the state.

Fowle's labors continued until his death on June 8, 1787. The records of King's Chapel, Boston, show his marriage to Lydia Hall on Apr. 11, 1751. Since his wife's death preceded his own by several years and their union was without issue, in 1784 he transferred his newspaper to John Melcher and George Jerry Osborne, two of his apprentices. When the latter withdrew, he adopted John Melcher as his son, leaving to him all his property and business interests.

[Isaiah Thomas, *The Hist. of Printing in America* . . . (2nd ed., 1874), published by the Am. Antiquarian Soc.; J. T. Buckingham, *Specimens of Newspaper Literature* (2 vols., 1850); T. B. Wyman, *The Geneal. and Estates of Charlestown* (1879), vol. I; Charles Evans, *Am. Bibliog.*, vols. II and III (1904–05); R. H. Peddie, *Printing: A Short Hist. of the Art* (1927).] C.L.N.

**FOWLE, WILLIAM BENTLEY** (Oct. 17, 1795–Feb. 6, 1865), educator, was the third son of Henry and Elizabeth (Bentley) Fowle, and was born in Boston, Mass. His father was a man of considerable literary attainment, and a Freemason of high rank whom financial troubles had forced to take up the trade of pump and block maker. His mother was the sister of the eminent divine and scholar, William Bentley [*q.v.*], and a woman of rare intellect. William attended his first school at the age of three and there learned the *Assembly's Shorter Catechism* by heart. At six he had memorized Caleb Bingham's *Young Ladies' Accidence,* and at ten he had received the Franklin Medal for proficiency in grammar; but so unconscious was he of the meaning of the words he learned that when he entered the Boston Latin School at thirteen he was unable to give the perfect participle of the verb *to love.* In later life he said, "It is not to be wondered at, therefore, that I hated grammar; had no faith in the utility of teaching it as it was then taught, and determined to reform the method if I ever had a good opportunity."

He was prepared for college at fifteen, but due to his father's financial difficulties he was apprenticed to Caleb Bingham [*q.v.*], whose bookstore at 44 Cornhill, Boston, was the favorite resort of school-teachers. There he found ample opportunity to indulge his taste for reading and to discuss the latest educational theories. In 1821 he was called upon to organize and teach a school of 200 children who were too old for the primary and too ignorant for the grammar schools. By employing the novel monitorial system by which the more advanced pupils aided in teaching the more backward, he gained such success that in a year's time his school won high commendation from Mayor Quincy. In this school Fowle introduced blackboards, map drawing, written spelling lessons, and by an act even more radical, he abolished corporal punishment. In 1823, upon the establishment of the Female Monitorial School, Fowle gave up his book business to take charge of it. This was probably the first school in the country to have scientific apparatus adequate to illustrate the subjects taught, and most of it was constructed under Fowle's supervision. In this school he introduced for the first time such subjects as vocal and instrumental music, calisthenics, and needlework. His leisure he devoted to the compilation of school textbooks, of which he published more than fifty during his life, and to the delivery of scientific lectures to his pupils and their friends. With remarkable versatility he described the mysteries of the atmosphere, the solar system, chemistry, mineralogy, and geology, delivering from fifteen to twenty lectures every season for seventeen years.

In 1842 Fowle undertook the publication of the *Common School Journal,* which Horace Mann had started four years earlier, and from 1848 to 1852 he edited as well as published it. Throughout his friendship with Mann, Fowle rendered invaluable aid in the many sharp collisions which occurred between his superior and the more conservative teachers of the day. He was one of Mann's most able assistants in the Teachers' Institute, conducting over a hundred meetings of the organization in Massachusetts and neighboring states. His last public activity was to open a monitorial school on Washington St., Boston, which he conducted until 1860. He died at his home at Medfield, Mass.

Although Fowle was by nature kindly and tolerant, his opponents in matters of school administration found him a merciless antagonist. He was also consistently bitter in his denunciation of slavery. He was a member of the state legislature in 1843, and a member of several learned organizations. In addition to his fifty published books his written lectures, mostly on scientific subjects, numbered more than sixty, and his newspaper essays more than five hundred. His first wife, whom he married on Sept. 28, 1818,

was Antoinette Moulton, daughter of Ebenezer Moulton. On Nov. 26, 1860, he married Mary Baxter Adams, daughter of Hon. Daniel Adams, of Watertown.

[*Am. Jour. of Educ.*, June 1861; *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Apr. 1869; *Boston Daily Advertiser*, Feb. 9, 1865; *Worcester Daily Spy*, Feb. 16, 1865.] S.H.P.

**FOWLER, CHARLES HENRY** (Aug. 11, 1837–Mar. 20, 1908), bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, was born in Burford (now Clarendon), Ontario, Canada. His father, Horatio Fowler, was of Connecticut ancestry. His mother, Harriet Ryan, was the daughter of the Rev. Henry Ryan, a herculean Irishman who was one of the founders of Methodism in Upper Canada. Having lost his property in the Papineau rebellion, Horatio Fowler sought asylum with relatives in western New York, and later settled on a farm near Newark, Ill. Here Charles Henry grew up, and by dint of hard work and plain living was graduated in 1859 from Genesee College, Lima, N. Y., where he majored in mathematics, oratory, and mischief, ranking high in each. After a few months in a Chicago law office, "Whirlwind" Fowler swung off into the Methodist itinerancy. In 1861 he graduated valedictorian from Garrett Biblical Institute, entered Rock River Conference, and was ordained deacon in 1864 and elder in 1865. He had been a pastor eleven years in Chicago when the Great Fire threw its glare upon him. In a country-wide campaign for funds to rebuild the burned churches, thousands of Eastern Methodists heard from the lips of this young Westerner the dramatic story of that devouring flame. His reputation was made. From that hour he was always in the Methodist mind when anything of importance was to be said or done. In 1872 he was in his first General Conference, where he nearly unhorsed the veteran editor of the *Christian Advocate*. The next year he was elected president of Northwestern University, Evanston, Ill., not because of unusual educational equipment, but because there was a big piece of work to be done, and Fowler was the most resourceful man in sight to do it. In four years he expanded its professional schools, laid far-sighted plans for its future, enlisted the support of powerful Chicago business men, and lifted the young institution to an important place among universities of the Middle West. In 1874 he was a fraternal messenger from his church to the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, carrying the first olive branch after thirty years of separation. His friends idolized him and believed that there was nothing beyond his powers. As editor of the *Christian Advocate* (1876–80) he carried the circulation to



the highest point in its history. As corresponding secretary of the Missionary Society (1880–84), his ubiquity, business capacity, forceful personality, and inspiring oratory, changed the whole missionary outlook of his church. Every fourth year, in the General Conference, his keen intellect, flashing wit, audacious speech, and strong convictions had full play. In 1884 he was elected bishop. His official residences were San Francisco (1884–92), Minneapolis (1892–96), Buffalo (1896–1904), and New York City (1904–08). In these years he presided over the Methodist Conferences in every part of the United States, and was sent by his colleagues to all the the mission fields, everywhere relieving irritated situations by balm or surgery, and launching advance movements such as the universities of Peking and Nanking in China, and the Methodist church in St. Petersburg. The Nebraska Wesleyan University and the Twentieth Century Forward Movement, which brought $20,000,000 into Methodist treasuries, owe their origin to his vision and constructive genius. His knowledge of the work and personnel of the church enabled him to select with extraordinary skill the right man for important administrative positions. Through these years he was a popular preacher, lecturer and occasional orator. He chose appealing themes, had a powerful voice and impressive bearing, and his diction combined the quaint, the startling, the humorous, and the majestic. His earliest book was *Fallacies of Colenso Reviewed* (1861), followed several years later by *Wines of the Bible* (1878). His collected addresses were published as *Missions and World Movements* (1903); *Missionary Addresses* (1906); *Addresses on Notable Occasions* (1908); and *Patriotic Orations* (1910). Fowler was married in 1868 to Myra A. Hitchcock, daughter of the Rev. Luke Hitchcock, of Chicago, who with a son survived him.

[Files of the *Christian Advocate* (N. Y.) and other Methodist periodicals; obituaries in the *Christian Advocate*, Mar. 28, 1908, *Northwestern Christian Advocate* and *Central Christian Advocate*, Mar. 25, 1908, *Cal. Christian Advocate*, Mar. 26, Apr. 2, 1908, and *Meth. Rev.*, Mar.–Apr. 1911; A. H. Wilde, *Northwestern Univ.* (1905); Memoir by W. F. Anderson in *Minutes . . . of the N. Y. Conference of the M. E. Ch.*, 1908; manuscript fragment of a biographical sketch by Fowler's son, Carl H. Fowler.] J.R.J.

**FOWLER, FRANK** (July 12, 1852–Aug. 18, 1910), painter, critic, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., the eighth of ten children of John and Margaret (Westervelt) Fowler. His early education was conducted at the Adelphi Academy in Brooklyn and later continued in Europe where he studied painting, for two years as the pupil of Edwin White in Florence and after 1875 at the École

des Beaux-Arts and under Carolus Duran. In 1878 Duran's "Gloria Mariæ Medicis," a fresco for the Luxembourg which he had helped to paint, was exhibited at the Paris Salon. In the same year one of his own portraits was entered in the first exhibition of the Society of American Artists, and his study of "Young Bacchus" was shown at the Paris Exposition. He returned to America in 1880 and established a permanent studio in New York. With the construction of the Waldorf Hotel, which opened in March 1893, he was commissioned to design the ball-room ceiling, a three-paneled fresco representing "Music" and "Dance," done in the lavish manner of the decade. Although with this came his first general recognition, throughout his life it was in portrait-painting that his talents were most evident. As a critic he particularly deplored the dedication of portraiture to human interest, which he contended had "deprived the world of much that is genuinely ornamental" ("Portraits as Decoration," *Scribner's Magazine*, December 1909), a theory which he had generous opportunity to put to proof. His list of subjects was long and distinguished, including among others William Dean Howells, Charles A. Dana, Archbishop Corrigan, and Governors S. J. Tilden and Roswell P. Flower, whose portraits were hung in the executive chamber in Albany. Although his treatment was in the main conventional, it had elements of distinction and decorative effectiveness.

Aside from numerous critical contributions to magazines, Fowler published three books on art technique: *Oil Painting* and *Drawing in Charcoal and Crayon* in 1885, and *Portrait and Figure Painting* in 1894. These were all intended for the instruction of beginners, but with their elementary precepts contained some wholesome advice. He received awards at exhibitions in Paris, 1889, Atlanta, 1895, Buffalo, 1901, Charleston, 1902, and Berlin, 1903. He was a member of the National Academy of Design, and the American Fine Arts Society. He married Mary Berrian Odenheimer, an artist and writer, on Nov. 28, 1878.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1908–09; W. T. Westervelt, *Geneal. of the Westervelt Family* (1905); *Am. Art News*, Sept. 17, 1910; *N. Y. Times*, *N. Y. Herald*, Aug. 20, 1910; *Am. Art Annual*, 1910–11.] C. W. P.

**FOWLER, GEORGE RYERSON** (Dec. 25, 1848–Feb. 6, 1906), surgeon, the son of Thomas Wright Fowler, master mechanic, and Sarah Jane Carman, was born in New York City. When the father entered the service of the Long Island Railroad in 1856 the family moved to Jamaica. At the age of thirteen the boy started to master railway operation. He began with telegraphy and other duties of station agents, then served his apprenticeship in the machine-shops. In 1866 he decided to work his way through a medical school and changed from railroading to an occupation better suited to this purpose. For the next five years he was connected with a manufactory in Bridgeport, Conn., and at the end of that time, in 1871, obtained a medical degree from Bellevue Hospital Medical College. He at once settled in Brooklyn, and when the Bushwick and East Brooklyn Dispensary was established in 1878 his reputation as an operator was such that he was given the berth of visiting surgeon. With the establishment of the Methodist Episcopal Hospital in 1887 he became a member of its surgical staff. In 1889 he was similarly associated with St. Mary's Hospital and also became senior surgeon at the German Hospital. In 1895 he became surgeon-in-chief at the Brooklyn Hospital and was one of the professors of surgery in the New York Polyclinic Medical School and Hospital. Seven years later he was made surgeon-general of the New York National Guard. He served in the Spanish-American War as surgeon-major, medical inspector, consulting surgeon, and chief of the operating staff of the VII Corps. When the New York State Board of Medical Examiners was established under the control of the regents of the University of the State of New York, he was made examiner in surgery. It was on the occasion of one of his trips to Albany in this connection that he was stricken with appendicitis and succumbed after an operation. Fowler was a voluminous contributor to periodical medical literature. His literary career, however, culminated in the publication in 1906, after twelve years of effort, of a two-volume work entitled *A Treatise on Surgery*. This work appeared after his death, so that he was denied the opportunity of publishing a revised edition. He was a co-founder of the Anatomical and Surgical Society of Brooklyn in 1878 and was chosen its president in 1880. He was also for several years the associate editor of its official *Annals of Anatomy and Surgery* which was subsequently merged into the *Annals of Surgery*. He was much given to European travel and was a delegate to the international medical congresses at Moscow in 1897 and at Paris in 1900. While on a trip to England in 1884 he conceived the idea of introducing into the United States class instruction in first aid to the injured. The idea was first tried out in the annual encampment of the state militia at Peekskill in 1885, after which the movement spread throughout the country, and the United States government ordered its introduc-

tion into all military posts. Presumably as the direct result of this initiative he was elected as the first president of the Red Cross Society of Brooklyn in 1890.

Fowler was best known and performed his greatest service as an abdominal surgeon. In this field he was one of a small group of pioneers which included William T. Bull and Charles McBurney. The publication in 1894 of his *Treatise on Appendicitis* was regarded as a classic on the subject and was followed two years later by a German translation and in 1900 by a revised and enlarged edition. His name has been given to the posture which he devised to secure adequate drainage after abdominal operations, known descriptively as the "elevated drainage position." He was married, on June 10, 1872, to Louise R. Wells of Norristown, Pa. He was the father of four children, of whom two sons entered the medical profession.

[*Brooklyn Medic. Jour.*, Mar., Aug. 1906; *Surgery, Gynecol. and Obstetrics*, Apr. 1924; *Medic. Record*, Feb. 10, 1906; H. A. Kelly and W. L. Burrage, *Am. Medic. Biogs.* (1920); *N. Y. Times*, *N. Y. Tribune*, Feb. 7, 1906.] E. P.

**FOWLER, JOSEPH SMITH** (Aug. 31, 1820–Apr. 1, 1902), senator, was born in Steubenville, Ohio, the son of James and Sarah (Atkinson) Fowler, both natives of Maryland. He attended country schools for a time and then began to teach in Shelby County, Ky. Later he returned to Ohio, and in 1843 was graduated from Franklin College at New Athens. At Bowling Green, Ky., he again taught school and at the same time studied law, and in 1845 became professor of mathematics at Franklin College, Davidson County, Tenn., where he remained for four years. On Nov. 12, 1846, he married Maria Louisa Embry of Tennessee. His occupation and whereabouts in the years following 1849 are not known, but in 1856 he was made president of Howard Female Institute at Gallatin, Tenn., and remained there until the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861. He had been opposed to slavery since childhood, and he did not believe in the right of secession, but he had lived long enough in the South to be sympathetic with the Southern people, and would doubtless have remained there if it had not been for Davis's "forty day" proclamation, which caused him to move with his family to Springfield, Ill. In 1862 he returned to Nashville, and Johnson made him state comptroller in the military government. He was an efficient officer, and was prominent in the work of reconstruction, particularly in relation to the abolition of slavery. In May 1865 he was elected United States senator but was denied his seat until July 1866. In Tennessee he had been on intimate terms with Johnson, but he differed with him as to Reconstruction, was one of the signers of the call for the Southern Loyalists' convention in 1866, and attended as a delegate. In the Senate he voted for most of the radical measures, including the reconstruction acts, although he did not approve of the provision for military government. He served faithfully but without any special distinction on many committees, and frequently participated in debate. Judging from the reports, he was an effective speaker. He was of average ability only, but was distinctly level-headed. He was radical, but was inclined to be liberal. When Johnson removed Stanton, Fowler, like Henderson, declined to vote for the resolution declaring the removal an illegal act. He watched the House during the process of impeachment and was horrified at its dangerous passion, which he thought likely to precipitate a revolution. When impeachment had first been attempted, he had thought the President impeachable, but as time passed he had found that opinion "based on falsehood," and that Johnson was being attacked for pursuing Lincoln's policy. He then saw in the impeachment plan a plot contrived by leaders "neither numerous nor marked for their prudence, wisdom, or patriotism, . . . mere politicians, thrown to the surface through the disjointed times," bent on "keeping alive the embers of the departing revolution," and with "more of sectional prejudice . . . than of patriotism" (*Congressional Globe*, 40 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 4508). His attitude was soon made clear to the radicals who attempted to coerce him by threats and slander, but he quietly ignored them and voted "Not Guilty," with the quiet statement, "I acted for my country and posterity in obedience to the will of God." He filed a strong opinion, joined with Henderson and Ross in refusing to vote for the resolution of thanks to Stanton, and in July excoriated B. F. Butler for his report on the charges of corruption. In spite of his radical advocacy of negro suffrage, he voted against the Fifteenth Amendment, believing it wiser to move more slowly, and thinking that female suffrage should be included. He retired from the Senate in 1871 and returned to Tennessee. He supported Grant in 1868, but by 1872 was utterly disgusted with his administration and was an elector at large on the Greeley ticket. After some years he moved to Washington and remained there practising law until his death.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Biog. Dir. Am. Cong.* (1928); *Cong. Globe*, 39–41 Congresses; *Proceedings in the Trial of Andrew Johnson* (1868); E. G. Ross, *Hist. of the Impeachment of Andrew Johnson* (1896); D. M. DeWitt, *The Impeachment and Trial of Andrew Johnson* (1903); *Washington Post* and Washington *Evening Star*, Apr. 2, 1902.] J. G. de R. H.

**FOWLER, ORIN** (July 29, 1791–Sept. 3, 1852), Congregational clergyman, congressman, was born in Lebanon, Conn., the son of Capt. Amos and Rebecca (Dewey) Fowler. He was the oldest boy and the sixth child in a family of twelve. Prepared for college by his pastor, Rev. William B. Ripley, he entered Williams in 1811, but remained there for only one term. After further study at Bacon Academy, Colchester, Conn., he became a member of the sophomore class at Yale, graduating in 1815. For a short time he was preceptor of the academy in Fairfield, Conn., relinquishing the position in order to devote himself to a course in theology under Rev. Heman Humphrey [*q.v.*] of that town. On Oct. 14, 1817, he was licensed to preach by the Association of the Western District of Fairfield County; and on June 3, 1818, at Farmington, Conn., he was ordained by the North Association of Hartford County with a view to missionary work in the West. After a year spent chiefly in Indiana he returned to Connecticut. To the *Christian Spectator,* August and September 1819, he contributed "Remarks on the State of Indiana." He was installed as pastor of the Congregational church, Plainfield, Conn., on Mar. 1, 1820. The following year, Oct. 16, he married Amaryllis, daughter of John H. Payson of Pomfret, Conn. After a pastorate of nearly eleven years, having incurred the ill will of some of his parishioners who professed to believe reports derogatory to his character, he was dismissed by the Windham Association of Ministers, Jan. 27, 1831, although a public investigation had revealed nothing affecting his standing as a Christian minister. On July 7, 1831, he became pastor of the Congregational church in Fall River, Mass.

Reference to a long-standing dispute over the boundary-line between Massachusetts and Rhode Island in a series of discourses published under the title *An Historical Sketch of Fall River from 1620 to the Present Time* (1841) launched him on a political career. His fellow townsmen made him one of a committee to represent them before boundary commissioners of the two states. Their decision was displeasing to the town, and Fowler defended its position under the pseudonym "Plymouth Colony" in articles appearing in the *Boston Daily Atlas* between Sept. 17 and Oct. 18, 1847. As a result of these, on Oct. 20, 1847, the Whig convention of Bristol County nominated him to the state Senate and he was elected. Here he was influential in causing the commissioners' report to be rejected by Massachusetts. His career in the legislature brought about his election to Congress in 1848 as a Free-Soil Whig, and the following year he took up his residence in Washington, although he was not formally dismissed from his church until May 1850. He was reëlected for a second term, but died in Washington, Sept. 3, 1852. He was an opponent of slavery and an advocate of temperance laws and cheap postage. "His strength in the House consisted not so much in eloquence and readiness of debate as in diligent research and knowledge of facts." Besides several speeches his publications include a sermon preached at the ordination of Israel G. Rose, Mar. 9, 1825, entitled *The Duty of Distinction in Preaching Explained and Enforced* (1825); *The Mode and Subjects of Baptism* (1835), and *A Disquisition on the Evils of Using Tobacco* (1833, 1835, 1842).

[W. B. Sprague, *Annals of the Am. Pulpit,* II (1857); F. B. Dexter, *Biog. Sketches of the Grads. of Yale Coll.,* VI (1912); *Congressional Globe,* 32 Cong., 2 Sess., p. 28]. H. E. S.

**FOWLER, ORSON SQUIRE** (Oct. 11, 1809–Aug. 18, 1887), phrenologist, son of Horace and Martha (Howe) Fowler, was born at Cohocton, Steuben County, N. Y. He was educated, however, in Massachusetts, under the Rev. Moses Miller (at Heath) and the Rev. Mr. Clark (at Buckland); in the Ashfield Academy; and at Amherst College, where he graduated in 1834. From this training he emerged a characteristic product of the day, with a mass of ill-digested information, many enthusiastic theories, and much reformatory zeal. With his younger brother and disciple, Lorenzo, he at once moved upon New York City. Already extravagantly devoted to the cause of phrenology—his interest in which had been aroused in college by his fellow student Henry Ward Beecher—he plunged into controversy with one "Vindex" (see his *Answer to Vindex, with Other Phrenological Matter,* Baltimore, 1835), and in 1837, with the collaboration of his brother, published *Phrenology Proved, Illustrated, and Applied,* which ran through some thirty editions. In 1840 the two brothers, who had organized the firm of O. S. & L. N. Fowler, began the publication of the *Phrenological Almanac;* in 1842 they assumed the editorship and publication of the *American Phrenological Journal and Miscellany,* founded by Nathan Allen in Philadelphia in 1838; in 1844 S. R. Wells entered into partnership with them and their firm became Fowlers & Wells until 1863 when both the brothers withdrew, Lorenzo to settle in London, Orson to reside in Boston and later in Manchester, Mass. Meanwhile Orson had produced an extraordinary number of semi-scientific and pseudo-philosophical works whose portentous titles indicate their contents. Such were, among

many others: *Love and Parentage, applied to the Improvement of Offspring, including Important Directions and Suggestions to Lovers and the Married concerning the Strongest Ties and the Most Momentous Relations of Life,* and its sequel, *Amativeness: or, Evils and Remedies of Excessive and Perverted Sexuality, including Warning and Advice to the Married and Single* (both of which had reached forty editions by 1844).

Fowler's interests were universal and he supposed himself able to solve the problems of every department of knowledge by means of "phrenology and physiology" alone. Without special training in philosophy, science, or medicine, and with only a smattering of physiology itself, he undertook to answer the most difficult questions in these fields. His inordinate conceit, however, saved him from deliberate charlatanry, and, in the sense in which alchemy was the forerunner of chemistry, his emphasis upon hereditary and physiological factors in matrimony may be taken as a wild and crude form of eugenics. He also had interesting though bizarre notions of house-building, set forth in *A Home for all; or, the Gravel Wall, and Octagon Mode of Building* (1849), written in collaboration with his brother. The amazing mélange of scientific facts, popular superstitions, and personal fancy which came from his fluent pen procured him an immense reputation in his own day. Throughout middle life (1850–70), he spent most of his time in extensive and lucrative lecture-trips in the United States and Canada, charming ignorant audiences equally by his assumption of scientific knowledge and by the extreme sentimentality of his fundamental outlook on life. In old age he returned to the writing of books, similar to his earlier ones in both content and title. His interest in matrimony was practical as well as theoretical: he was married three times: on June 10, 1835, to Mrs. Martha Chevalier, daughter of Elias Brevoort of New York City; on Oct. 26, 1865, to Mrs. Mary Poole, daughter of William Aiken of Gloucester, Mass.; on Mar. 21, 1882, to Abbie L. Ayres, daughter of Ebenezer Ayres, Osceola, Wis. He died near Sharon Station, Conn., in his seventy-eighth year.

[Fowler's own writings; *Amherst Coll. Biog. Record Grads. and Non-Grads.* (1927).] E. S. B—s.

**FOX, CHARLES KEMBLE** (Aug. 15, 1833–Jan. 17, 1875) actor, son of George Howe and Emily (Wyatt) Fox, was born in Boston, Mass. He was the younger brother of George W. L. Fox [*q.v.*]. When six years of age he played the child in *The Carpenter of Rouen* at the old Eagle Theatre in his native city. His father was prop-



erty man at the Tremont Street Theatre and there Charles also acted on occasions. While still a child he traveled with his family through the New England towns, giving performances wherever possible. After living for a time in Troy, N. Y., the family moved to Providence, R. I., and in that city, from 1846 to 1850, as members of the Howard-Fox Dramatic Company, Charles and his brothers James and George, with their sister Caroline, received their practical stage training.

On Sept. 27, 1852, Charles appeared in the rôles of Phineas Fletcher and Gumption Cute in the George Aiken version of *Uncle Tom's Cabin* at the Museum in Troy. His mother, Emily Fox, took the part of Ophelia in the same production. The play was an immediate success and ran for one hundred nights. In a farce which nightly followed the drama, Charles was featured as Peter Paul Pearlbutton. The following season he made his first New York appearance at the National Theatre as Gumption Cute. Later, on Oct. 28, 1867, he was seen as Snug in the revival of *A Midsummer Night's Dream* at Mrs. John Wood's Olympic (formerly Laura Keene's) Theatre. At the same house he appeared in *Hickory Dickery Dock* and in the burlesque of *Macbeth,* and was also cast as Lawyer Marks in one of the many revivals of *Uncle Tom's Cabin.* For a short period in 1869 he formed a traveling arrangement with Tony Denier and played through the Western states. This enterprise soon proved unsuccessful, however, and in 1870 he returned to the Olympic. During the season of 1873–74, he toured through New England, the West, and the South with the Fox Pantomime Troupe. Then after traveling with his brother's company, he played his last engagement at Fox's Broadway Theatre, May 16, 1874, appearing as Pantaloon in *Humpty Dumpty at Home.* It was in this rôle in the various fantasies concerning "Humpty Dumpty" that he was mainly identified; indeed his miming of the part was the best ever presented before an American audience, but he was a competent actor in any line. Throughout his life his theatrical activities were closely associated with those of his more famous brother George, to whom he was of practical and artistic value, as well as an excellent foil. To his creative genius much of the business employed in the pantomimes must be credited.

Fox died in New York City from typhoid fever which he contracted while playing in Tennessee. He and his brother were so strongly attached to each other that at his death his brother George suffered a great blow. He was married three times. His first wife was Kate Denin, a well-

known actress; his second wife was Mary Hewins, who later wrote for the *Dramatic Mirror* under the name of the Giddy Gusher; his last wife was Mrs. Dulaney. He and his brother George were buried at Mount Auburn Cemetery, near Boston.

[T. Allston Brown, *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (3 vols., 1903); *N. Y. Tribune*, Jan. 20, 1875; information as to certain facts from Cordelia Howard Macdonald.]

R. D.

**FOX, GEORGE WASHINGTON LAFAYETTE** (July 3, 1825–Oct. 24, 1877), actor, manager, son of George Howe and Emily (Wyatt) Fox, and brother of Charles Kemble Fox [*q.v.*], was born in Boston, Mass. At the age of five he made his first appearance on the stage as one of the children in *The Hunter of the Alps*, at the Tremont Street Theatre, Boston, for the benefit of Charles Kean. Later he secured a position as errand boy in a Boston department store but continued to act in various productions in the city. From 1846 to 1850 he was a member of the Howard-Fox dramatic company at Providence, R. I. He first appeared in New York at the National Theatre, Nov. 25, 1850, as Christopher Strap in *A Pleasant Neighbor*, and continued to appear at the same theatre until the summer of 1858. During these years he essayed a variety of rôles, including melodrama, farce, burlesque, and pantomime. He also acted as stage-manager. He was first billed as Lafayette Fox, then L. Fox, then G. W. Fox, and finally as G. L. Fox. On Mar. 31, 1851, when Edwin Booth was seen for the first time in New York as Richard III at the National, Fox played Toby Twinkle in the afterpiece, *All that Glitters is not Gold*. In July 1853, at a time when business was depressed at the theatre, Fox persuaded his manager to produce George Aiken's version of *Uncle Tom's Cabin*. It ran from that date, almost consecutively, until April 1854, and was still later revived.

After leaving the National, Fox decided to become a manager as well as an actor and on Aug. 7, 1858, with James W. Lingard, he leased tne Bowery Theatre. The two continued as lessees and managers of the house until Aug. 6, 1859, when they gave it up to open the New Bowery on Sept. 5, 1859. Then came a call for three months' volunteers, and Fox left to serve as lieutenant in the 8th New York Infantry, which took part in the battle of Bull Run. On July 26, 1861, he returned from military to theatrical life and met with a hearty reception. Due to a disagreement with his partner, however, Fox withdrew from the New Bowery and in April 1862 opened the theatre which had been Brougham's Lyceum, Wallacks, and Mary Provost's, calling the house



George L. Fox's Olympic. This venture was of short duration. On May 17, 1862, he went back to the old Bowery Theatre as lessee, and here he was seen in many parts, assuming four and five rôles in the course of an evening. Here also he made pantomime—a form of art which he later made famous—a great success. His managerial connection terminated May 11, 1867. He next appeared at Mrs. John Wood's Olympic Theatre (formerly Laura Keene's), Oct. 28, 1867, as Bottom in a gorgeous revival of *A Midsummer Night's Dream*. Theatregoers long remembered his impersonation of this rôle. Then on Mar. 10, 1868, he was seen at this theatre for the first time in a pantomime called *Humpty Dumpty*, in which he won instant and prolonged success and played the part with which he is mainly identified. It has been stated that in the city of New York alone, he appeared in this part 1,268 times (Brown, *post*, III, 116). Still at the Olympic in 1870, he presented his inimitable travesty of *Hamlet* which ran for ten weeks. Edwin Booth greatly enjoyed watching Fox revel in this fun.

On Apr. 6, 1874, Fox assumed managership of the house which had been Daly's Theatre, changing the name to Fox's Broadway Theatre, but in six weeks' time he resolved to retire as a manager. He made his last appearance in *Humpty Dumpty in every Clime* at Booth's Theatre, Nov. 27, 1875. Having shown signs of dementia, he was removed to an insane asylum. He recovered sufficiently to return to his Brooklyn home but soon after he suffered a paralytic stroke and was then taken to the home of his sister, Caroline Fox Howard, in Cambridge, Mass., and there he died. He was married twice. His first wife was Caroline Gould; his second wife was Mattie Temple who acted with him. As a comic actor Fox was exceedingly clever but in the annals of the American stage he stands as the peer of pantomimists.

[T. Allston Brown, *A Hist. of the N. Y. Stage* (3 vols., 1903); *N. Y. Tribune*, Oct. 25, 1877; information as to certain facts from Cordelia Howard Macdonald.]

R. D.

**FOX, GILBERT** (1776–1807?), engraver, actor, singer, was born in England, and at an early age was apprenticed to Thomas Medland, line-engraver, in London. "It so happened that an American (Edward Trenchard), who practised engraving in Philadelphia without knowledge of the art, went on a voyage of discovery to London and finding young Fox, in the year 1793, bound by an apprentice's articles to Medland, a well-known engraver of that city, conceived the design of purchasing the youth's time if he could induce him to cross the seas to Philadelphia, the place of the adventurer's abode, and teach him what he had learned from Medland. Fox's reward was to

be liberty and good wages" (William Dunlap, *History of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the United States,* 1834, II, 46). Fox came to this country in 1795, and after the completion of his contract with Trenchard, decided to teach drawing in a seminary for young ladies. Marrying one of his pupils, his position as drawing master was declared vacant, and in 1798 he joined the company of the Chestnut Street Theatre in Philadelphia as a singer. For his benefit at the theatre, Apr. 25, 1798, Fox induced Joseph Hopkinson to write the national song, "Hail, Columbia" to the then familiar tune of "The President's March." When it was sung at the production it caused a sensation which lasted for many months (G. H. Preble, *The Flag of the United States,* ed. 1880, p. 715).

Fox was connected with the New York Theatre during the seasons from 1799 to 1802, and at the same time, continued occasionally to engrave plates. Nearly all of his engravings are in line. He etched a view of the Chestnut Street Theatre, Philadelphia, for William Birch, about this time, and three plates for William Mavor's *Voyages,* volumes XV and XVIII (Philadelphia, 1803). He also engraved a portrait of Kotzebue for Dunlap's German theatre. In 1804 he went to Boston, where he was a member of the Boston Theatre company until 1807. He appears to have done some engraving at the same time (*Polyanthos,* May 1807). As a player he is said to have been "a versatile, pleasant actor, good in tragedy, comedy, or comic opera" (W. W. Clapp, Jr., *Record of the Boston Stage,* 1853, p. 82), and though he had an impediment in his speech, stuttering in private conversation, on the stage he lost all self-consciousness and hesitation. After 1807 all trace of Fox seems to be lost, but Dunlap states (*ante,* p. 47), that his father bequeathed him one thousand pounds, which might suggest that he returned to his native land. The same writer quotes a contemporary as remarking that "'he had some excellent qualities, but prudence was not one of them.'"

[In addition to the sources mentioned, see D. McN. Stauffer, *Am. Engravers upon Copper and Steel* (1907), vol. I; John Bernard, *Retrospections of America* (1887), pp. 116, 121, 302; *Polyanthos,* 1806–07; J. N. Ireland, *Records of the N. Y. Stage* (2 vols., 1866–67); Wm. Dunlap, *A Hist. of the Am. Theatre* (1832), p. 191; Boston Museum of Fine Arts, *A Descriptive Cat. of an Exhibition of Early Engraving in America* (1904).] J. J.

**FOX, GUSTAVUS VASA** (June 13, 1821–Oct. 29, 1883), assistant secretary of the navy, was born in Saugus, Mass., the son of Dr. Jesse and Olivia (Flint) Fox. After spending two years at Phillips Academy, Andover, he received an appointment to the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis, where he graduated in 1841 as a midshipman. For the next fifteen years he had an adventurous life in various governmental assignments, being occupied during the Mexican War in the transportation of troops to Vera Cruz. After having earned his promotion to the rank of lieutenant in 1852, he resigned in 1856, married Virginia Woodbury, a daughter of Judge Levi Woodbury of New Hampshire, and settled down as agent of the Bay State Mills in Lawrence, Mass.

The Civil War offered Fox the great opportunity of his career. In February 1861, when it became obvious that Maj. Anderson and the garrison of Fort Sumter in Charleston Harbor were in grave danger, Montgomery Blair, who had married Mrs. Fox's sister, urged Gen. Winfield Scott to consult Fox. The latter promptly went to Washington and submitted a plan for relieving Anderson, but it was vetoed by the vacillating President Buchanan. When Lincoln was inaugurated on Mar. 4, he at once asked Fox to prepare a scheme for reinforcing Fort Sumter, and sent Fox to Charleston for an interview with Anderson. On Apr. 9, although a volunteer with no regular standing in the navy, Fox set out from New York with a formidable squadron, but, because of unavoidable delays, he did not reach Charleston until Apr. 12, just in season to observe the opening bombardment of the fort. Unable to intervene until the other vessels of his fleet arrived, Fox had no alternative except to take Anderson and his seventy men on board when Sumter was evacuated, and return to New York. For his part in the affair he was given high praise by President Lincoln.

Remaining in Washington, Fox was appointed on May 9, 1861, chief clerk of the Navy Department under the irascible Secretary Gideon Welles, and on Aug. 1 he was made assistant secretary of the navy, the post having been created for him. His knowledge of naval matters was an important element in the success of his department during the war. He was largely responsible for important changes in personnel and procedure; he suggested Admiral Farragut as commander of the New Orleans expedition; he was an early advocate of the "turret vessel," or *Monitor,* invented by John Ericsson, and he persuaded Welles to let it be used in action. His chief thought that Fox was occasionally too officious, but honesty compelled him to admit that his subordinate was indispensable. Although Welles's diary is sometimes critical of Fox's manner, it gives the impression that the secretary relied on him unreservedly. In the judgment of James Ford Rhodes, Fox "joined to probity ex-

ecutive ability of a very high order" (*History of the United States,* 1909, V, 221).

At the close of hostilities, Fox resigned (May 22, 1866), and the unsentimental Welles made this entry in his diary: "His manner and ways have sometimes given offense to others, but he is patriotic and true" (*Diary of Gideon Welles,* II, 512). Meanwhile Fox had been selected by President Johnson as the bearer of a congratulatory resolution passed by Congress, expressing the satisfaction of the American people at the escape of Alexander II, Czar of Russia, from the attack of an assassin; and he went, escorted by a fleet, to Russia, stopping at European ports to display the turreted ironclad, *Miantonomoh,* the first monitor to cross the Atlantic. On his return on Dec. 13, 1866, after a hospitable and elaborate reception by the Czar, Fox became agent of the Middlesex Company, in Lowell, Mass. There, on Dec. 9, 1871, he was paid the honor of a state visit by the Grand Duke Alexis, third son of the Czar. He later resigned to join the firm of Mudge, Sawyer & Co., in Boston, and died shortly afterwards in New York City.

In his prime, Fox was a large, rather corpulent man, with a full beard and a confident bearing. His sanguine temperament and sanity of outlook were refreshing to those who had to meet him officially. He was an affectionate and considerate husband. A narrative of his experiences on the Russian expedition was prepared by his secretary J. F. Loubat, and published in 1873, fully illustrated with engravings of the eminent personages who entertained the American representatives (*Narrative of the Mission to Russia in 1866, of the Hon. Gustavus Vasa Fox, Assistant Secretary of the Navy*). His official papers were bequeathed by his widow to the three sons of Montgomery Blair, by whom they were afterward published (*Confidential Correspondence of Gustavus Vasa Fox, Assistant Secretary of the Navy, 1861–65,* edited by Robert Means Thompson and Richard Wainwright, 2 vols., 1918–19). The documents which they contain are of significance to students of the Civil War period.

[There is an account of Fox's career in the *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* vol. XX (1884), prepared by Robert G. Winthrop. Another sketch of Fox appeared in the *Phillips Bull.,* published by Phillips Academy, Andover, for July 1927, written by Claude M. Fuess. See also *Official Records* (*Navy*), 1 ser., I; *Diary of Gideon Welles* (3 vols., 1911); *Boston Transcript,* Oct. 30, 1883.]

C. M. F.

**FOX, HARRY** (Sept. 29, 1826–Sept. 4, 1883), contractor, was born in Westfield, Mass., where his father, Hiram Fox, was a poor mechanic. When a youth he showed a marked aptitude for working with machinery. At the age of eighteen he was apprenticed to learn the machinist's trade in his native town. Two years later he was sent out with a steam-excavator, said to have been the first one built, to work on the Northern New Hampshire Railroad. By his success in handling it he soon became the chief operator and thus began a long career of excavation by steam. During the next ten years he was employed by several railroads, including the Grand Trunk Railway in Canada. Fox went to Chicago in 1856 and formed a partnership with John P. Chapin, then mayor of the city. They began to widen and deepen the channel of the Chicago River with a special steam-dredge which Fox had brought with him. Although the contract required the firm to carry the dredged earth out into the lake, Fox quickly saw that this material could be used to raise the grade of the city. This was the beginning of the work of raising the city several feet above the old prairie level and was for many years an important feature of the Chicago improvements. The partnership between Chapin and Fox came to an end in 1860 and Fox, to increase the scope of his activities, formed a new partnership with William B. Howard, a noted bridge-builder. For the next fifteen years the history of the firm of Fox & Howard is the history of the topographical improvement of Chicago. They first opened up and made navigable the north and south branches of the river. Having completed this they deepened the old river channel, straightened the banks, and built more than fifteen miles of dock line along the river. By their dredging and construction of piers they were able to create a satisfactory harbor for Chicago. They built the dozen bridges which spanned the Chicago River. In 1865 they successfully undertook the enlargement of the Illinois and Michigan Canal and in the same year began the work of raising the grade of the city of Cairo. Their steam-dredges made extensive improvements on many Lake Michigan harbors, notably at White River, Pentwater, Pere Marquette, and Manistee. They constructed many railroad bridges in the South and in the Middle West: they built the fourteen-hundred-foot bridge over the Fox River at Green Bay and the bridge across the Illinois River at Pekin. The partnership of Fox & Howard ended in 1875; Fox later became connected with the firm of Fitz-Simons & Connell. Among the numerous works executed by Fox are the Baraboo extension of the Chicago & Northwestern Railway system and the extension of the Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fé up the Grand Cañon of the Arkansas River in Colorado. On Nov. 25, 1852, he married Emeline

Buxton Chamberlain, of Newbury, Vt., by whom he had two children. He died of apoplexy at the Walker House in Salt Lake City while returning from a pleasure trip to the Pacific Coast.

[*Biog. Sketches of the Leading Men of Chicago* (1868); F. P. Wells, *Hist. of Newbury, Vt.* (1902), p. 514; *Chicago Tribune*, Sept. 5, 1883; private information.]

F. M—n.

**FOX, JOHN WILLIAM** (Dec. 16, 1863–July 8, 1919), novelist, son of John William and Minerva Worth (Carr) Fox, was born at Stony Point, Ky., and died at Big Stone Gap, Va. His father was a school-teacher, and John's education until he was fifteen was chiefly at home. Then he attended Transylvania College in Lexington, and from 1880 to 1883, when he was graduated, he was a student at Harvard. His scholastic interest seems to have been confined to literary subjects, but he was a good athlete and an enthusiastic amateur actor, especially of the rôles of women. After leaving Harvard he worked for a brief time with the New York *Sun*, attended the Columbia Law School for two months, returned to newspaper work with the *New York Times*, and in February 1885, his health having failed, went home to Paris, Ky., for a year's rest. Later he joined his father and brother in some mining ventures in the Cumberland Mountains, and actually went into the mountains to live. With him were a number of young men who, like himself, had recently left college and were anxious for excitement. They could not, however, let the new world they had invaded go onward as it would; they organized a volunteer police force among themselves and in a short time made life in the mountains as safe as in a great metropolis. After his business and police activities, Fox turned to teaching, but the mountaineers continued to dominate his mind, and before long he began publishing about them a series of writings which showed a mastery of their dialect, and of their ways and thoughts. He published in all more than a dozen volumes, the best of which depend always for their worth upon this same mastery, and upon the instinct for story-telling which in his case seemed to be infallible. *A Mountain Europa* (1894) was the first of a series of novelettes which later included *A Cumberland Vendetta* (1895), *Hell fer Sartain* (1897), *Christmas Eve on Lonesome* (1904), and *A Knight of the Cumberland* (1906). *The Kentuckians* (1897) is concerned more with the aristocratic lowlands than with the mountains, but in *Blue Grass and Rhododendron* (1901), more essay than fiction, he returned to his old emphasis upon the mountains. During the Spanish-American War, his writing was interrupted by his going to Cuba as a Rough Rider, but he soon left that organization and became a war correspondent for *Harper's Weekly*. In this capacity he witnessed a great deal of actual fighting, much of which he soon used as material in the novel *Crittenden* (1900). He also went as a correspondent for the war between the Japanese and the Russians, but was forced to come home without reaching the front. *Following the Sun Flag* (1905) is a flat, querulous account of this experience. *The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come* (1903), *The Trail of the Lonesome Pine* (1908), *The Heart of the Hills* (1913), and *Erskine Dale, Pioneer* (1920) are novels dealing with the mountaineers, and at times—most notably in the *Little Shepherd*—with mountaineers in contact with the urbane civilization to the west of them. These books were all romantic in outlook and made little contribution to thought, but they were enormously popular, and the *Little Shepherd*, for all its sentimentality, doubtless furthered a realization throughout this country that the Civil War was evil and for the most part inexcusable. The celebrity of the books kept their author always in the public consciousness, and for years he went about giving dialect readings from his own works. Some of the accounts and photographs of him give the impression that he was a poseur, but the general testimony is that in his personal relations he was affable and humorous. In 1908 he married the comic opera singer, Fritzi Scheff, and took her to live at his home at Big Stone Gap. They were later divorced. His death was from pneumonia.

[E. F. Harkins, *Little Pilgrimages*, Second Series (1903); E. A. Alderman and J. C. Harris, *Lib. of Southern Literature* (1909); W. L. Burrage, ed., *Class of 1883 Harvard Coll., 1883–1913*; J. W. Townsend, *Ky. in Am. Letters* (1913); *Who's Who in America*, 1918–19; *N. Y. Times*, July 9, 13, 1919.]

J. D. W.

**FOX, MARGARET** (Oct. 7, 1833–Mar. 8, 1893), medium, and her younger sister, Kate, were daughters of John D. and Margaret Fox, who had moved from a farm in Canada in 1847 to one near Hydesville, in Wayne County, N. Y. According to an interview given by Margaret (New York *World*, Oct. 21, 1888), the children began the rappings for the excitement of mystifying their superstitious mother, who believed that the creakings and cracklings of the old house were caused by "spirits." The children's pranks only confirmed her delusion. At first the taps were made by the bumping of an apple tied on a string but later, when more secrecy was needed, by movements of the toes. The mother told neighbors of the sounds and soon the countryside was gossiping about them. An elder sister, Mrs. Leah Fish, who lived in Rochester, took Kate and later

Margaret to her home and invited neighbors to come to hear the mysterious sounds which occurred in their presence. Years later Margaret said that this sister was fully aware that the children controlled the rappings and herself tried to imitate them, though unsuccessfully because of the lesser flexibility of her joints. An older brother, David, suggested that the spirits might be able to communicate if the alphabet were spelled out for them. This suggestion was readily acted upon and words were soon tapped out. The fame of the "Rochester Rappings" spread with such rapidity that Leah felt able to take the little girls to New York in the summer of 1850, where they began séances which brought them a hundred dollars and more a night. The newspapers, with the exception of the *New York Tribune* (June 8, 1850), took them lightly; but Horace Greeley was sufficiently interested to make arrangements for Kate's education. The two sisters with their mother then toured the country. Numberless rivals and imitators appeared immediately, among them Victoria Woodhull [*q.v.*] and Ira Erastus Davenport [*q.v.*]. The followers of Andrew Jackson Davis [*q.v.*] recalled that in his rambling revelations he had spoken of communications with the dead, and hailed the rappings as a fulfilment of his prophecy. As the excitement increased, he cautiously agreed. "Spiritualist circles" were formed throughout the country, using his writings as a guide, and some of these in time became "churches."

While in Philadelphia, Margaret had met the Arctic explorer, Dr. Elisha Kent Kane [*q.v.*]. He was a scientist and was antagonistic to the new spiritualism, but he was attracted to the medium. He tried to take her away from her Spiritualist friends and their influence and to have her educated. During his absences, however, she continually slipped back to the excitement of the circles. After his return from the Arctic, he saw her only briefly before he left for the journey on which he died in 1857. She proclaimed that he had acknowledged a common-law marriage with her before her relatives, and, to the distress of his family, assumed his name. In an attempt to obtain a small annuity which he may have intended to give her, she published his letters to her (Margaret Fox, *The Love Life of Dr. Kane,* 1866). The authenticity of sections of these letters has been questioned. For some time she did not return to the circles, but economic necessity drove her at length to a somewhat indifferent participation. The cult had spread to England where Harriet Martineau and Elizabeth Browning were among the interested investigators. Kate was married to H. D. Jencken in 1872; and in 1876



Margaret joined her sister in London. The sisters had openly quarreled with Leah, now Mrs. Underhill, who was most actively promulgating the new religion, insisting that the performances of the sisters were beyond their control. On Oct. 21, 1888, Margaret, now a convert to Roman Catholicism and unhappy in the continual deceit, openly exposed the chicanery of Mrs. Underhill at the Academy of Music in New York. When Margaret explained the methods by which the rappings were obtained, the sensation was tremendous. Spiritualists, however, insisted that the confession was made for money and while Margaret was under the influence of alcohol. Later, indeed, she recanted, when her lecture tour proved a financial failure. She returned to the rappings for a living, resorting to drink frequently till the time of her death in 1893 in Brooklyn.

[*Rochester Knockings* (1851), reprinted from the *Buffalo Medic. Jour.*, Mar. 1851, and D. M. Dewey, *Hist. of the Strange Sounds or Rappings* (1850) are contemporary accounts, to which Mrs. Ann Leah (Fox) Underhill, in *The Missing Link in Modern Spiritualism* (1885), adds little. Harry Houdini based his story, *A Magician Among the Spirits* (1924) on documents which he collected and on interviews with friends of Margaret Fox. For newspaper accounts of the exposure, see N. Y. *World,* Oct. 21–22, 1888; *N. Y. Herald,* May 27, Sept. 24–25, Oct. 22, 1888. Obituaries in *N. Y. Tribune,* Mar. 10, 1893, and *N. Y. Herald,* Mar. 9, 1893.]

K. H. A.

**FOX, RICHARD KYLE** (Aug. 12, 1846–Nov. 14, 1922), journalist, encourager of sporting contests, was born in Belfast, the son of James and Mary (Kyle) Fox. His mother was a daughter of Henry Kyle, a Presbyterian minister; his father was a carpenter and mason. As a boy Fox was employed in the office of a religious paper, the *Banner of Ulster,* and out of his earnings paid two shillings a week for his schooling. For twelve years he worked on the *Belfast News Letter.* He married Annie Scott of Belfast in 1869; and in 1874, with barely enough money to pay their passage, they emigrated to New York, where Fox began as an advertising solicitor for the *Wall Street Journal.* Within a year he took the business managership of the *National Police Gazette,* whose incompetent owners were heading rapidly toward bankruptcy. In 1877 he relieved them of their accumulated debts and worries and became sole proprietor of the weekly, which he conducted for forty-five years and bequeathed to his sons. During the first years of his ownership it was the most lurid journal ever published in the United States, its sixteen pages being filled with highly spiced accounts of crime and scandal, with illustrations that matched the text. The whole paper was enlivened by a burly gusto; under "Noose Notes," for example, hangings were reported with the vivacity of smart dra-

matic criticism; and another department, maintained by volunteer contributors throughout the country, was devoted exclusively to "Crimes of the Clergy." From the beginning, however, some space was occupied by sporting news, and Fox gradually transformed his sheet into an intelligent sporting and theatrical paper, retaining only the luscious front-page illustration as a memento of its rowdy youth. Much of the advertising that he printed was open, however, to serious objection. He introduced condensed journalism in the United States and revolutionized the method of reporting sporting news. "Be interesting and be quick about it," was, in effect, his injunction to his reporters. "Tell your story in three paragraphs at most. If you can't tell it in three, tell it in two. And if you can't tell it in two, get out of here." He was one of the first to use pictures lavishly. Beginning in the eighties, he was the first to use tinted paper. He originated the prize contest as a device for increasing circulation and likewise the practise of holding various events under the auspices of a journal. He offered medals and trophies for sculling, football, shooting, running, wrestling, and other contests. To John L. Sullivan [*q.v.*] he gave a $4,000 belt studded with diamonds, emeralds, rubies, and sapphires, and later spent much of his leisure looking for a prize-fighter who could beat him. He backed several of Sullivan's most promising opponents, and is said, in all, to have given $1,000,000 to amateur and professional athletes. He himself played no games and did not know the rules of the commonest sports. His first wife, by whom he had six children, died in New York in 1890, and in 1913 he married Emma Louise (Raven) Robinson, who survived him. He collected costly furniture and rugs, traveled, and had a ranch at Arcadia, Los Angeles County, Cal. In England he was a social favorite. His shrewdness and insouciance are the subject of many picturesque anecdotes. He died at his home in Red Bank, N. J., leaving an estate valued at $3,000,000.

[*N. Y. Times*, Nov. 15, 21, Dec. 22, 1922; *World* and *Morning Telegraph* (N. Y.), Nov. 15, 1922; editorial in *N. Y. Herald*, Nov. 16, 1922; *Nat. Police Gazette*, Dec. 2, 1922; Walter Davenport, articles in *Collier's*, Mar. 10, 24, 1928; H. L. Mencken and G. J. Nathan, article in *Smart Set*, Feb. 1923, pp. 33–35; information from Fox's son, Charles J. Fox.] G. H. G.

**FOX, WILLIAMS CARLTON** (May 20, 1855–Jan. 20, 1924), diplomat, was born in St. Louis, Mo., the son of Elias Williams and Eusebia (Johnson) Fox. His father was a hardware dealer, originally of Buffalo, N. Y., and his great-grandfather was Capt. Samuel Pratt, a Revolutionary soldier and one of the founders of Buffalo. After attending Washington University in his native city and the Pennsylvania Military College at Chester, Pa., he began the study of law. He abandoned the latter, however, when offered in 1876 the American consulship at Brunswick, Germany, by President Grant, a personal friend of his father. Four years later, on May 1, 1880, he married Louise Ludewig of that place, and continued thereafter to serve as consul until 1888, building up a record which led to his going to Persia in 1891 as vice-consul-general. When the cholera epidemic of 1892 spread over almost all of Asia and Europe, he was in charge of the American legation at Teheran. He organized and financed the American Missionary Hospital and Dispensary, which proved so effective in combating the cholera that he received the thanks of the Shah and the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions. Resigning the same year, he was prevailed upon by the American minister to Greece, Rumania, and Servia, Truxtun Beale, to remain in Athens as his secretary until the following year. After his return to the United States, he joined his father who had removed to Washington in 1885 and with others purchased the *National Republican*, in the management of the enterprise, but tiring of this, in 1896 he began publishing in New York and carried on for some time the first strictly diplomatic and consular journal ever attempted in the United States, the *Diplomatic and Consular Review*. This resulted in his being called to the chief clerkship of the International Bureau of the American Republics in 1898. In this capacity he developed much of the detail necessary for the Second and the Third Conferences of American States, and represented the Bureau at both. In the Second Conference, held in Mexico City, 1901–02, he aided in securing recognition of the Bureau as an international American institution with the franking privilege and the obligation of the director to attend all future international American conferences. His efforts were rewarded by his advancement in 1905 to the post of director of what is now called the Pan American Union, and it was in this capacity that he attended the Third Conference at Rio de Janeiro in 1906, one of the results of which was a plan to erect as headquarters a building for the Bureau in the city of Washington. At the suggestion of Elihu Root, Andrew Carnegie was induced to contribute $750,000 for this project to supplement subscriptions which Fox had secured from the American republics themselves. Under his direction arrangements were perfected for the Columbus Memorial Library and for the holding of two international sanitary conferences in Washington in 1903 and 1905. Meanwhile, he had also served as a member of the United States

Government Board of Management of the Pan-American Exposition at Buffalo in 1901, the Louisiana Purchase Exposition at St. Louis in 1904, and the Lewis and Clark Exposition in 1905. Early in 1907 his services were recognized by President Roosevelt by his appointment as minister to Ecuador. Later in the same year he was designated by the President to represent him on the board of arbitration for the settlement of the controversy between the government of Ecuador and the Guayaquil & Quito Railway Company. On Aug. 18, 1911, he resigned his diplomatic post and retired to private life in New York City, devoting some of his time to the writing of articles on international affairs for American and European periodicals. He died at the Lutheran Memorial Hospital in that city after a long illness.

[*Who's Who in America*, 1922–23; *Men and Women of America* (1910); *N. Y. Times*, *N. Y. Herald*, Jan. 21, 1924; *Foreign Relations of the U. S.*, 1892, 1907–10; information as to certain facts from Fox's associates. His achievements for the Pan American Union are recorded in the publications of that institution.] H. F. W.

**FOXALL, HENRY** (May 24, 1758–Dec. 11, 1823), iron-founder, was born in Monmouthshire, England, the son of an obscure blacksmith. His parents were devout followers of John Wesley and intimate friends of the family of Francis Asbury. He shared the courage and honesty though not the piety of his parents. He worked as an iron-moulder in Birmingham until 1794 when, restless and dissatisfied with his limited opportunities, he went to Ireland. There he became superintendent of important iron-works near Dublin and later at Carrick-on-Shannon. Through the exhortation of an itinerant Methodist preacher and the persuasion of his wife, Ann Haward, he first became conscious of his sinful state and for some months was "weary and heavy-laden and sorrowed after a godly sort." At length he found consolation. He renounced his worldly pleasures, including card-playing to which he had once succumbed, and in the enthusiasm of his conversion began to preach publicly. This function of a lay minister he exercised to the day of his death.

In 1797 he emigrated from Ireland to Philadelphia and formed a partnership with Robert Morris, Jr., the son of the Revolutionary financier, in the Eagle Iron Works. There they did a general foundry and machine business and made cannon for the War Department. Foxall, having severed his connection with Morris, moved to Georgetown, D. C., in 1800 and established the Columbian Foundry. For the next fifteen years he made cannon, cannon-shot, and gun-carriages for the government. The capacity of his foundry was later (1836) estimated to have been 300



heavy guns and 30,000 shot a year. Foxall rendered valuable service to the nation in the War of 1812 when the government, having no foundry of its own, was forced to depend upon a few private establishments. Although he built up a large fortune from his contracts, his dealings with the government were conducted with remarkable honesty and even generosity. When, in 1807, Dearborn, the secretary of war, was considering the establishment of a national foundry, he consulted Foxall whose reply (*American State Papers, Military Affairs*, I, 215–17) revealed his unusual public spirit. In 1815 he sold his foundry to Gen. John Mason and the next year went to England. His wife having died after their arrival in Philadelphia from Ireland, he married a second time, while he was in England. He returned to America and was mayor of Georgetown from 1821 to 1823, but had gone back to England and was living at Handsworth near Birmingham when he died.

His gifts to religious bodies were many. In 1814 he gave the ground and the funds for the building of the Foundry Chapel at 14th and G Streets, Washington. He once replied in a jocular vein to a friend's criticism of this gift: "No doubt you have some reason for thinking I have sinned in turning out these grim instruments of death; but don't you think therefore, that I should do something to save the souls of those who escape?" In person he was small and compactly built. While his ordinary dress was plain and simple, his dress in the pulpit was of great elegance—rich black velvet, white muslin, silk stockings, and shoes with silver buckles. Despite his piety and frequent prayer he was fond of the society of worldly people and is said to have enjoyed the friendship of Jefferson, Madison, Monroe, and Gouverneur Morris.

[Madison Davis, "The Old Cannon Foundry above Georgetown, D. C., and its First Owner, Henry Foxall," in *Records of the Columbia Hist. Soc.*, vol. XI (1908); Jos. Entwisle in *Wesleyan-Methodist Mag.* (London), Jan., Aug. 1824; private information.] F. M—n.

**FOY, EDDIE** (Mar. 9, 1856–Feb. 16, 1928), comedian, son of Richard and Ellen (Hennessy) Fitzgerald, was born in New York City. He was named Edwin. His father, a tailor, entered the Federal army in 1861 and died of a wound two years later, leaving his family in poverty. To aid his mother and two sisters, Edwin began singing and dancing on the streets at the age of eight, in company with a wandering fiddler. His mother removed to Chicago in 1865, where the boy blacked boots, sold papers, and did odd jobs, meanwhile trying to get into theatrical work. At sixteen he began calling himself Foy and received his first salary for acting when he ap-

peared briefly in a concert hall. In 1878 he formed a partnership with James Thompson, and the two for several years sang and danced in the mining camps and "boom towns" of the West, among them Dodge City, Leadville, Denver, Tombstone, Butte, and San Francisco. They appeared with Emerson's Minstrels in San Francisco in 1882 and with Carncross's Minstrels at Philadelphia in 1884. Foy next played in melodrama and comedy, including *Baron Rudolph* and *Jack-in-the-Box*, and spent two periods in the Alcazar Stock Company in San Francisco. In 1887, while playing with Kate Castleton in *Crazy Patch*, he began using the clownlike facial make-up which became a sort of trade-mark for him. His quizzical countenance, with the small mouth upcurving at the corners, was happily suited to such a character. He had stage mannerisms which were peculiarly his own, and many were the imitations of him in later years. By this time he had made such a reputation as an eccentric farceur that he was engaged by David Henderson of Chicago to play leading comedy parts in his series of gorgeous extravaganzas. The first in which Foy appeared was *The Crystal Slipper*, 1888. This was followed by *Bluebeard, Sindbad*, and *Ali Baba*. Foy left Henderson in 1894 to star in *Off the Earth*; then in *Little Christopher Columbus*, 1895; *Hotel Topsy Turvy*, 1898; *The Strollers*, 1901; and *The Wild Rose*, 1902. In 1903 he was engaged to play the comic Sister Anne in an elaborate fantasy, *Mr. Bluebeard*. While he was appearing in this play in the Iroquois Theatre, Chicago, Dec. 30, 1903, fire broke out, the audience became panic-stricken, and more than six hundred lives were lost. Foy played a hero's part. Sending his little son, who was in the wings, out in care of a stage hand, he ran to the footlights, striving to quiet the audience and to bring down the asbestos curtain. He left only when a shower of blazing fragments fell over him and set his wig afire.

Foy had leading comedy parts in *Piff! Paff! Pouf!*, opening in 1904; *The Earl and the Girl*, 1905; *The Orchid*, 1907; *Mr. Hamlet of Broadway*, 1908; and *Up and Down Broadway*, 1910. *Over the River* (1911 to 1913) was his last musical comedy. He was married in 1878 to Rose Howland, who died in 1884. In 1890 he married Lola Sefton, who died in 1894, leaving a daughter. In 1896 he married Madeline Morando, by whom he had seven children. He went into vaudeville with these children in 1913, and with the exception of a short engagement in motion-pictures, continued in that work for ten years. His third wife died in 1918, and in 1923 he married Marie Combs, who survived him. In



1923 he and his family appeared in a comedy, *That Casey Girl*, after which he retired. In the autumn of 1927, however, he entered vaudeville again in a short play entitled *The Fallen Star*, in which he was appearing when he was stricken suddenly and died at Kansas City.

[Foy's autobiography, *Clowning Through Life* (written in collaboration with Alvin F. Harlow), appeared just before his death in 1928. Obituaries appeared in leading American newspapers on Feb. 16 and 17, 1928.]

A. F. H.

**FRALEY, FREDERICK** (May 28, 1804–Sept. 23, 1901), merchant, banker, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., the son of John Urban Fraley and Ann Elizabeth Laskey Fraley, both of whom had been born in Philadelphia. He received his preliminary education at a school attached to St. John's Lutheran Church and then attended Thomas Watson's private school which he left in 1817. During the next three years he studied languages and literature under private tutors and also began the study of law. He chose, however, to devote himself to commercial activities. At the age of seventeen he entered the hardware store of Thomas Cooper, and in 1826 went into partnership with the firm of Reeves, Buck & Company, in the wholesale hardware business. He remained with them until 1840, when he became secretary of the American Fire Insurance Company. In 1847 he was made president of the Schuylkill Navigation Company, and continued in that office until 1888. Elected treasurer of the Centennial Board of Finance in 1873, he remained in charge of its affairs until its final dissolution in 1893. In 1858 he was appointed a manager of the Western Saving Fund Society, and twenty years later was elected its president, which office he held until his death. He was one of the founders of the Franklin Institute in 1824, serving for many years as its treasurer, and for a short time as its corresponding secretary. In 1842 he became a member of the American Philosophical Society and successively filled the offices of secretary, vice-president, and president (1880–1901). He was chosen a member of the board of directors of the Girard College for orphans in 1847, was appointed chairman of the committee on instruction, and for a short time served as acting-president of the institution. In 1853 he was elected a trustee of the University of Pennsylvania, and was also a manager, and for some time the treasurer, of the Pennsylvania Institution for the Blind. Upon the organization of the Philadelphia Board of Trade in 1833 he took an active part and was elected one of its first directors. Five years later he was elected secretary of this body; in 1866 he became a member of its executive council; in the following year he

was made one of the vice-presidents, and in 1887 he was elected president of the Board, which position he held until his death. He also took part in the organization of the National Board of Trade in 1868 and served as its president from that time until his death.

Fraley always took an interest in public affairs. From 1834 to 1837 he was a member of the Common Council of Philadelphia and from 1837 to 1840 was a member of the Senate of Pennsylvania. In the years 1853 and 1854 he served on the committee of citizens of Philadelphia which devised the scheme for the consolidation of the city, his chief share in that work being the framing of the system of financial administration of the municipal government. He also took an active part in the work of the Sanitary Commission of the city and was a member of the executive committee of the Sanitary Fair of 1864. He seemed to have both a tremendous capacity for work and an accurate memory for facts and details—a trait which seemed to suffer no impairment from advancing years. Until his death he took an active part in the business and cultural life of Philadelphia, and was considered one of the most successful men of his time. In 1832 he married Jane Chapman Cresson. He died of old age in his ninety-eighth year.

[University of Pennsylvania, *Ann. Report of the Provost*, 1901–02; *Who's Who in America*, 1901–02; *Proc. Am. Philos. Soc.*, 1901, pp. i–ix; *Ann. Report of the Philadelphia Board of Trade*, 1902; J. T. Scharf and Thompson Wescott, *Hist. of Philadelphia* (1844), III, pp. 2343–44; *Philadelphia Inquirer, Public Ledger* (Phila.), Sept. 24, 1901.] J.H.F.

**FRANCHÈRE, GABRIEL** (Nov. 3, 1786–Apr. 12, 1863), fur-trader, was born in Montreal, the son of Gabriel and Félicité (Marin) Franchère. The Franchère family was of good French stock of the upper middle-class. Jacques, the first of the name in Canada, came as a ship's surgeon to New France early in the eighteenth century, when Montreal was the depot for the vast French fur-trade; and, seeing the possibilities which this new life offered, Jacques abandoned the sea. He prospered moderately. Under the British régime, his son Gabriel had become an established merchant, in good standing, though not wealthy, at the time of the younger Gabriel's birth. Gabriel *fils* was twenty-four years old and was serving as a merchant's apprentice when the fur-traders' realm was startled by the news of John Jacob Astor's plans to secure a monopoly of the Pacific Coast fur-trade. In the hope of making his fortune and with a great curiosity to see new lands, so he tells us, Franchère engaged in Astor's service. He left Montreal in a birch-bark canoe manned by nine voyageurs, who were also new employees of Astor. The party portaged the canoe from the St. Lawrence to the Richelieu River and, again, between Lake Champlain and the Hudson at Lansingburg, from which point they paddled down stream to Long Island, landing at "the village of Brooklyn." On Sept. 6, 1810, Franchère sailed from New York, being one of the "singing, smoking, gossiping, scribbling groups" of whom Capt. Thorn of the *Tonquin* complained so bitterly. Thus Franchère assisted in the founding of Astoria, near the mouth of the Columbia, witnessed the sale of Astor's property to the Canadian North West Fur Company for $40,000, and saw the capture of the fort by the British in 1813. Because of his knowledge of the local Indian tongue the Nor' Westers induced him to remain there in their service for five months. He left on Apr. 4, 1814, with the first overland brigade, arriving in Montreal after his four years of exile in September 1814. Next year he married Sophie Routhier. He was employed as Astor's Montreal agent, and for some years before 1833 by the North West Fur Company. In 1834 he became Astor's agent at Sault Ste. Marie, and remained there until 1838 or 1839. After the liquidation of Astor's American Fur Company Franchère was employed for a time by Pierre Chouteau [*q.v.*] of St. Louis, before establishing his own fur-trading company in New York.

Having written his reminiscences of Astoria for his family and friends, Franchère was urged to prepare them for publication. He sought the aid of Michel Bibaud, a well-known Canadian editor, and in 1820 his *Relation d'un Voyage à la Côté du Nord Ouest de l'Amérique Septentrionale, dans les années 1810, 11, 12, 13, et 14,* was published in Montreal by C. B. Pasteur. The original manuscript is in the Toronto Public Library. The book came into notice in the United States when the Oregon question was stirring Congress. In the Senate, on May 25, 1846, Thomas H. Benton translated passages from it to reinforce his fiery demands for American acquisition of Oregon (*Congressional Globe,* 29 Cong., 1 Sess., pp. 860–61). Franchère, loyal to his adopted country, took a keen interest in the great question. He went to Washington and conferred with Senators Benton, Webster, and Clay. In 1853 he revisited Montreal where he was treated respectfully as a noted author. The French edition of his book was one of the sources of Irving's *Astoria.* The English version by J. V. Huntington of Baltimore, with the title *Narrative of a Voyage to the Northwest Coast of America* and containing some changes and additions, was published by Redfield, New York, in 1854.

In this edition, Franchère corrected Irving's aspersions on the Canadians of Astor's expedition. He died on Apr. 12, 1863, in St. Paul. After the death of his first wife in 1837 he married Mrs. Charlotte (Osborn) Prince.

[Franchère's fellow clerks, Ross Cox and Alexander Ross, also wrote accounts of Astoria: Ross Cox, *Adventures on the Columbia River* (1831) and Alexander Ross, *Adventures of the First Settlers* (1849). There is a reprint of Franchère's *Narrative* in *Early Western Travels*, vol. VI (1904). See also Constance Lindsay Skinner, *Adventurers of Oregon* (1920), in The Chronicles of America Series; Joseph Tasse, *Les Canadiens de l'Ouest* (2 vols., 1878); B. P. Avery, "Death of a Remarkable Man," in *Minn. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, VI (1894), pt. III; *N. Y. Times*, Apr. 15, 1863. Otto Fowle, *Sault Ste. Marie and Its Great Waterway* (1925); contains letters of Franchère as agent of the American Fur Co.]

C. L. Sk—r.

**FRANCIS, CHARLES SPENCER** (June 17, 1853–Dec. 1, 1911), editor, diplomat, born at Troy, N. Y., was the son of Harriet Elizabeth Tucker and John Morgan Francis [*q.v.*]. Unlike his father, he enjoyed the advantages of education and travel made possible by the former's success. Educated at the Troy Academy and at Cornell University, where he was graduated in 1877, he profited from the contacts which he had already made in his travels. His training as a journalist, however, was as soundly practical as his father's, for he learned at first hand the routine of a newspaper office. Indeed, it was largely through his initiative that the *Times*, a small, one-man daily, became a modern city journal housed in a plant provided with the latest mechanical contrivances. In 1881 he became joint proprietor and general manager, and in 1897, on the death of his father, proprietor and editor-in-chief. He himself was succeeded by his son, John Morgan Francis, a graduate of Cornell and an athlete of note.

Charles Spencer Francis was also an ardent Republican, and played an important though obscure rôle in both state and national politics. As with his father, his loyalty was largely personal. In state politics he advanced the fortunes of Gov. Frank S. Black, of Troy, with whom he had been associated in a campaign against municipal corruption. In national politics he was one of the first leaders to advocate the nomination of William McKinley, and he gave to Theodore Roosevelt the undeviating support which he had given to his predecessor. During his father's missions to Athens and Vienna he had acted as his private secretary. As a reward for his services, President McKinley therefore included his name in his list of appointments, nominating him, in 1900, envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary to Greece, Roumania, and Servia, a post which he assumed exactly thirty years after it had been held by his father. Later, under President Roosevelt, he became ambassador to Austria-Hungary. After four years of service he resigned in 1910

Endowed with a rugged and vigorous physique, Francis delighted in out-of-door activities. At college he won the intercollegiate sculling championship, and in later years he acquired a reputation as an amateur naturalist. His *Sport Among the Rockies* (1889) is the record of an excursion of friendly spirits in the mountains of Montana. Because of this bent, he was strongly attracted by military life, and served for eleven years as captain, major, and colonel on the staff of the 3rd Division, New York State National Guard. He was also aide-de-camp, with the rank of colonel, to Gov. Alonzo B. Cornell. He married, on May 25, 1878, Alice Evans of Ithaca, daughter of Prof. Evan W. Evans.

[*Charles S. Francis: A Personal Tribute* (1901); *Who's Who in N. Y.*, 1911; Rutherford Hayner, *Troy and Rensselaer County, N. Y.* (3 vols., 1925); *Cornell Alumni News*, Dec. 6, 1911; *N. Y. Tribune*, Mar. 20, Apr. 9, 1906; *N. Y. Times*, Dec. 6, 1911.] R. P. B—r.

**FRANCIS, CHARLES STEPHEN** (Jan. 9, 1805–Dec. 1, 1887), pioneer bookseller, publisher, was born in Boston, the son of David and Mary (Moore) Francis. His father was of the publishing firm of Munroe & Francis, which brought out the first New England edition of Shakespeare. Under the tuition of his father Charles had an exceptional opportunity to learn the art of printing and of selling books. At twenty-one he ventured to New York to launch into business for himself. His first store was in a fortunate location on lower Broadway near the residences of the wealthiest citizens. When the movement uptown started the bookseller went with it, first to 252 Broadway under Peale's Museum, then to 554 Broadway. In 1838 his brother entered into partnership with him, and about 1842 the firm became known as C. S. Francis & Company. Among the many publications which brought the establishment into general recognition was *Francis's New Guide to the Cities of New York and Brooklyn, and The Vicinity*, appearing first in 1853. It was revised and reprinted periodically, with somewhat changed title, during the next dozen years. It carried a notice of the bookshop which advertised that "Strangers, as well as Citizens, will find this a pleasant place of resort at all times of day and evening," which proved indeed to be the case. Because the firm published H. W. Bellows's *Discourse Occasioned by the Death of William Ellery Channing* (1842), Orville Dewey's *Discourse on Slavery and the Annexation of Texas* (1844), William Ware's *Zenobia* (1838), and

other works by Unitarian authors, members of that faith found the atmosphere of the store particularly congenial. Bibliophiles from all parts of the country were attracted to the shop by the fine character of the work which Francis did. Due to his enterprise the company had an agency in London and was able to fill orders for foreign publications with commendable promptness. The firm also boasted a circulating library, "the largest in the city," of new publications as well as of periodicals (*Guide,* 1853, p. 136). Children's books were a specialty, including the works of Hans Christian Andersen, and Charles and Mary Lamb. In 1860 the firm dissolved, but Francis continued in the business for a decade more before retiring to Tarrytown, where he passed his last years. His first wife was Catharine Rebecca Jewett, whom he married on Sept. 2, 1830. After her death in 1841, he married Averic Parker Allen, Sept. 29, 1849. He had five children, of whom Harriet Moore, a daughter, married John Rogers [*q.v.*].

[C. E. Francis, *Francis: Descendants of Robt. Francis of Wethersfield, Conn.* (1906); J. C. Derby, *Fifty Years among Authors, Books and Publishers* (1884); W. L. Andrews, *The Old Booksellers of N. Y. and Other Papers* (1895), pp. 45–46; the *Publisher's Weekly,* Dec. 10, 1887; *N. Y. Times, N. Y. Tribune,* Dec. 3, 1887.]

A. E. P.

**FRANCIS, CONVERS** (Nov. 9, 1795–Apr. 7, 1863), Unitarian clergyman, educator, a descendant of Richard Francis, who settled in Cambridge, Mass., in 1636; grandson of Benjamin Francis, a weaver and soldier of the Revolution, and Lydia Convers; and son of Convers and Susannah (Rand) Francis; was born in Menotomy (West Cambridge), Mass. He was the fifth of six children, the youngest being Lydia Maria, later Mrs. Child [*q.v.*], who attributed to him her early mental stimulus. He grew up in Medford, Mass., to which place his father moved and established a bakery, famous for its "Medford Crackers." Much of his time as a boy was spent in the baker shop, where he became an expert. "I could *break* and *mould* and *flat* and *dock* as well as the best," he says; . . . "and how many hundreds upon hundreds of barrels of crackers did I wipe!" He had a passion for books, however, and his father decided to give him a college education. He prepared at a local academy, graduated from Harvard in 1815, and for the next three years studied divinity there. He was ordained a Unitarian minister on June 23, 1819, and settled over the First Church of Watertown, Mass., where he remained twenty-three years. On May 15, 1822, he married Abby Bradford Allyn of Duxbury, Mass. In 1842 he succeeded Henry Ware, Jr., as professor of pulpit eloquence and pastoral care at the Harvard Divinity School, which office he held until his death some twenty-one years later.

He was of modest, retiring disposition, and scholarly in his tastes. During the period of his active ministry he found much time for research and writing, and he then laid the foundation for the reputation which he later enjoyed of being one of the best-informed scholars on theological subjects in the country. He was one of the first in America to apply himself to a sedulous study of the German language and literature, especially in the religious field, and was a veritable encyclopedia of information regarding them. Interested in history and biography, he was one of the most active members of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and helped in the preparation of its *Collections,* to which he contributed "Memoir of Rev. John Allyn, D.D., of Duxbury" (3 ser. V, 1836), "Memoir of Gamaliel Bradford, M.D." (3 ser. IX, 1846), and "Memoir of Hon. John Davis, LL.D." (3 ser. X, 1849). In 1830 he published *An Historical Sketch of Watertown, in Massachusetts, from the First Settlement of the Town to the Close of Its Second Century.* For Jared Sparks's *Library of American Biography,* he wrote "Life of John Eliot, the Apostle to the Indians" (Vol. V, 1836), and "Life of Sebastian Rale, Missionary to the Indians" (2 ser. VII, 1845). He also published a number of sermons and historical addresses, and was a frequent contributor to the *Christian Disciple,* the *Christian Examiner,* the *American Monthly Review,* the *Unitarian Advocate,* the *Scriptural Interpreter,* and the *Liberal Preacher.*

[Biographical data may be found in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.,* Apr. 9, 1863, and Mar. 9, 1865. The latter contains a list of Francis's publications. Numerous letters to him from his sister are contained in *Letters of Lydia Maria Child* (1883). See also John Weiss, *Discourse Occasioned by the Death of Convers Francis, D.D., delivered before the First Congreg. Soc., Watertown, Apr. 19, 1863* (1863), and obituaries in *Boston Daily Advertiser,* Apr. 9 and July 15, 1863.]

H. E. S.

**FRANCIS, DAVID ROWLAND** (Oct. 1, 1850–Jan. 15, 1927), merchant, governor of Missouri, secretary of the interior, ambassador to Russia, was born in Richmond, Ky., the son of John Broaddus and Eliza Caldwell (Rowland) Francis. Both parents were of Kentucky pioneer stock, combining English, Scotch, and Welsh strains. His grandfather, Thomas Francis, was a soldier in the War of 1812; his father had been sheriff of Madison County. David was educated in Rev. Robert Breck's academy for girls, the principal desiring to have a comrade for his own son. By the aid of his mother's brother, David Pitt Rowland, the boy was able to enter Washington University in St. Louis, where he took the four years' classical course, graduating in 1870 with the degree of B.A. He had hoped to study

law, but the opportunity was lacking and he returned to the Kentucky farm, until this same uncle found a position for him in the commission house of Shryock & Rowland. Here he not only learned the business of commission merchant, but paid off his college debts, and in six years had accumulated enough capital to found his own house, D. R. Francis & Brother, Commission Company, grain merchants.

His engaging personality made him a marked man in the community. In 1884 he was made president of the Merchants' Exchange; and in the same year was sent as delegate-at-large to the National Democratic Convention at Chicago. In 1885 he was elected mayor of St. Louis, defeating by 1,527 votes a Republican who had been elected four years earlier by a majority of 14,000. He gave the city a business administration, fearlessly cutting expenses and defeating corrupt legislation by his vetoes. At the conclusion of his term of office he was elected governor, serving until 1893. He carried to this office the same business principles and secured from the legislature a series of constructive measures. On the resignation of Secretary Hoke Smith in August 1896, Francis was appointed secretary of the interior and served through the rest of President Cleveland's administration. He was an earnest defender of forest reserves and it was on his recommendation that the president set aside by proclamation some 21,000,000 acres, and refused to sign the sundry civil bill which contained a rider that would have given the president authority subsequently to modify or vacate any executive order creating forest reserves (John Ise, *The United States Forest Policy*, 1920, pp. 129–32). His opposition to Bryan and free-silver cost him political prestige in Missouri and for a decade he was out of politics. In the meantime, however, he took an active part in promoting the Louisiana Purchase Exposition, was elected president of the corporation, and in a trip to Europe by personal solicitation secured the participation of foreign governments—an experience which he recounted in *A Tour of Europe in Nineteen Days* (1903). The history of the exposition he narrated in *The Universal Exposition of 1904* (1913).

In 1908, declaring the free-silver issue closed, he sought party harmony by advocating the nomination of Bryan in the Democratic National Convention at Denver, but refused to consider for himself the second place on the ticket. In 1910, he was a candidate for election to the United States Senate, but was defeated in the Democratic primary by James A. Reed. Though he had declined a diplomatic appointment to one of



the South American states, he was nominated ambassador to Russia by President Wilson in 1916, and the nomination was confirmed in open session of the Senate without the customary reference to a committee. His service began under the old régime. After the Russian revolution, he supported the Kerensky provisional government; and under the Bolshevik régime he still stayed on, although given permission to return. He moved the embassy from place to place, lived on trains, appealed to the Russians to stand by the allies, warned against German intrigues, and refused to heed threats of personal violence until even his robust health gave way. On Nov. 6, 1918, he was carried on a stretcher to an American warship and taken to a London hospital for an operation, from which he never fully recovered. In 1876 he had married Jane Perry, daughter of John D. Perry, a pioneer railroad builder. Six sons were born to them, three of whom followed their father's business career.

[Walter B. Stevens, *David R. Francis, Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary* (n.d.); Harry B. Hawes, "David Rowland Francis," in *Mo. Hist. Soc. Colls.*, Oct. 1927; St. Louis *Globe-Democrat*, Jan. 16, 1927. Information contained in the books by Francis, cited above; and in his *Russia from the Am. Embassy Apr. 1916–Nov. 1918* (1921) and *David R. Francis, His Recollections and Letters* (1928).] W. B. S—s.

**FRANCIS, JAMES BICHENO** (May 18, 1815–Sept. 18, 1892), hydraulic engineer, was born at Southleigh, Oxfordshire, England, the son of John Francis and Eliza Frith (Bicheno) Francis. His father was superintendent and constructor of one of the early short railroads in the south of Wales and it was quite natural that his son should be trained to follow in his footsteps. Accordingly after a bit of an education at Radleigh Hall and Wantage Academy in Berkshire, young Francis became assistant to his father at the early age of fourteen on the construction of some canal and harbor works connected with the railroad. Here he remained two years and then was employed by the Great Western Canal Company in construction work, particularly in Devonshire and Somersetshire. After two years with this company and in the hope of finding greater opportunities in America, Francis arrived in New York City in the spring of 1833 and almost immediately was employed by Maj. George W. Whistler, a prominent early American engineer, in the construction of the Stonington Railroad (Connecticut). A year later Whistler became chief engineer of a group known as the "Proprietors of the Locks and Canals on the Merrimack River," organized to expand the company's machine-shop business to include locomotive construction. Francis, then eighteen years old, ac-

companied Whistler to Lowell, Mass., and entered the service of the proprietors as a draftsman. One of his first tasks was that of dismembering, measuring, and making detailed working drawings of a newly imported locomotive built by Stephenson in England and purchased to serve as a model for the engines of the Boston & Lowell Railroad. This was the beginning of locomotive building in New England. In 1837 Whistler resigned and Francis, at the age of twenty-two, was made his successor. In the course of the succeeding three or four years Francis conducted his office most efficiently, and although there was a decline in locomotive construction, the demand for the design and erection of cotton-mills increased. About 1841 the proprietors undertook through a specially appointed commission to determine the quantities of water drawn by the mills along the canal, and Francis was entrusted with the details of securing the needed data. So well did he conduct this work, involving much original experiment, that when in 1845 his employers decided to give up the machine-shop and confine their full attention to the development of water-power facilities at Lowell, Francis was made chief engineer and general manager. From that time on, for more than forty years, he not only looked after the firm's water-power interests, but acted as consulting engineer to all of the factories using the power. It has always been claimed that Francis was in large part responsible for Lowell's rise to industrial importance. In 1846 he began the work of water-power development by the construction of the Northern Canal. In this, as in all of his subsequent work, he made thorough investigations and conducted many experiments before undertaking actual construction. In 1849, on behalf of the manufacturing interests of Lowell, he went to England to study timber-preservation methods. Upon his return he designed and constructed works at Lowell for both kyanizing and burnettizing timber. About this time Francis turned his attention to hydraulic turbines and designed one based on the Howd patent but with the vanes reshaped to bring about a combination of the radial and axial flow turbine. This type, known as the mixed flow or Francis turbine, is to-day the one most generally used for low head installations. Tests of the design, his simultaneous researches on the flow of water through draft tubes, over weirs, and through short canals, as well as the rules for runner and draft tube design which he formulated were published by Francis in 1855 under the title *The Lowell Hydraulic Experiments*. Much of these data is used in engineering practise at the present time. For the associated companies' benefit Francis devised a complete system of water supply for fire protection purposes and had it in operation in the Lowell district many years before anything equally complete was to be found elsewhere. In 1870 he undertook and completed another notable work, namely, the design and construction of hydraulic lifts for the guard gates of the Pawtucket Canal. Again, between 1875 and 1876, he reconstructed the Pawtucket Dam across the Merrimac River. Francis's fundamental practise of holding closely to experiment caused him to become probably the first person in America to conduct actual tests on large cast-iron girders. His habits of thought were unusually methodical and accurate. These qualities, combined with his insistence upon investigating every question put to him, enabled him to supplement the deficiencies of his early education and training so that he became one of the best equipped engineers of his time. While his duties were most arduous, he found time to write over two hundred valuable papers for various learned societies. He was one of the original members and president in 1874 of the Boston Society of Civil Engineers. He joined the American Society of Civil Engineers at its first meeting in 1852 and was its president in 1880. In addition to his regular duties in Lowell, he was consulted in the construction of the Quaker Bridge Dam on the Croton River, N. Y., and the retaining dam at St. Anthony's Falls on the Mississippi River. He was a member of the Massachusetts state legislature for one year; served five years in the Lowell city council; was for twenty years president of the Stonybrook Railroad, and for forty-three years a director of the Lowell Gas Light Company. As an engineer, referee, and expert, Francis was probably called upon to decide more varied questions of importance than usually falls to the lot of one man. This was due to his strength of character, solidity, and strong common sense. He married Sarah Wilbur Brownell of Lowell on July 12, 1837. One of his sons succeeded him upon his retirement from active business in 1885, and at the time of his death in Lowell he was survived by his wife and six children.

[*Jour. Asso. Engineering Socs.*, Jan. 1894; *Proc. Am. Soc. Civil Engineers*, vol. XIX (1893); *Proc. Am. Acad. of Arts and Sci.*, n.s., vol. XX (1893); *Contributions of the Old Residents' Hist. Asso., Lowell, Mass.*, vol. V, pp. 2 (1894); F. W. Coburn, *Hist. of Lowell and Its People* (1920), vol. I; *Boston Transcript*, Sept. 19, 1892.]

C. W. M.

**FRANCIS, JOHN BROWN** (May 31, 1791–Aug. 9, 1864), governor of Rhode Island, United States senator, was the son of John and Abby (Brown) Francis, and a great-grandson of

Tench Francis [*q.v.*]. He was born in Philadelphia, Pa., but shortly thereafter his father established his residence in Providence, R. I. There the elder Francis soon died and the son went to live with his grandfather, John Brown [*q.v.*], a prominent Providence merchant. Young Francis prepared for college at the university grammar school, then entered Brown University, from which he graduated in 1808. He spent some time in the office of the Providence firm of Brown & Ives, and afterwards entered the Law School at Litchfield, Conn. Upon the death of his grandfather he inherited the estate of the latter and to its management he devoted some years. In 1821 he made his home at Spring Green, Warwick, R. I., the country seat of the Browns. His first wife was a cousin, Anne Carter Brown, only daughter of Nicholas Brown [*q.v.*], whom he married on June 18, 1822. She died in 1828 and on May 22, 1832, he married Elizabeth Willing Francis Harrison, who was also a cousin, the daughter of Thomas Willing Francis of Philadelphia. Francis represented Warwick in the Rhode Island General Assembly as a member of the House of Representatives from 1825 to 1829 and as senator from 1831 to 1832. In January 1831 he was nominated for governor by the National Republican party. He declined the nomination, but was given such a strong endorsement by the National Republican press that when brought forward for governor, nearly two years later, by the Anti-Masons and Democrats, the mouths of the National Republicans were stopped. He retired from the governorship in 1838. On the outbreak of the Dorr Rebellion in 1842 he was appointed by Gov. King one of three commissioners to proceed to Washington to solicit President Tyler's aid in maintaining the state constitutional officers in authority. In the same year he was elected to the state Senate as a representative of the Law and Order party, opposed to Thomas Wilson Dorr. Two years later, upon the resignation of William Sprague, United States senator from Rhode Island, Francis was made his successor. His term expired in March 1845, whereupon he was returned to the Rhode Island Senate, to which body he was reëlected annually until 1856. Francis was a man of genial temperament and was highly esteemed. He was greatly interested in education in Rhode Island and exerted upon it a strong influence. He was a life member of the Rhode Island Society for the Encouragement of Domestic Industry; treasurer of the Rhode Island Historical Society and one of its vice-presidents; from 1828 to 1857 a trustee of Brown University; and from 1841 to 1854 chancellor of the institution. He died at Warwick.



[C. E. Francis, *Francis: Descendants of Robt. Francis of Wethersfield, Conn.* (1906); Edward Field, ed., *State of R. I. and Providence Plantations* (3 vols., 1912); *Proc. R. I. Hist. Soc.*, 1872–73; *The Biog. Cyc. of Representative Men of R. I.* (1881); C. P. Keith, *The Provincial Councillors of Pa.* (1883); C. P. Fuller, *The Hist. of Warwick, R. I.* (1875); *Providence Daily Jour.*, Aug. 10, 1864.]

I. B. R.

**FRANCIS, JOHN MORGAN** (Mar. 6, 1823–June 18, 1897), editor, publicist, diplomat, was born at Prattsburg, N. Y., the son of Richard and Mary (Stewart) Francis. From his father, a midshipman in the British navy who emigrated to America in 1795, married, and settled in Steuben County, N. Y., he inherited the rugged physique characteristic of the family. Since he was next to the youngest of thirteen children, he received little formal education. His training as a journalist, however, provided him with an excellent background for a successful career. Beginning at fifteen as an apprentice on the *Ontario Messenger*, at Canandaigua, N. Y., he served successively in the editorial departments of the *Wayne Sentinel* and the *Rochester Daily Advertiser*. On Dec. 8, 1846, he married a woman of considerable literary talent, Harriet Elizabeth Tucker, daughter of Pomeroy Tucker, editor of the *Sentinel*, and established himself in Troy as editor-in-chief of the *Northern Budget*. While connected with the *Budget*, a Democratic paper, of which he eventually became joint proprietor, he advocated the claims of the Free-Soil party. In 1849 he sold his interests and removed to New York to engage in business. He soon returned to Troy, however, to take charge of the *Daily Whig*; and in 1851 he founded the *Troy Daily Times*, with R. D. Thompson as partner. When the latter withdrew in 1853, he became the sole owner. Under his hands the *Times* was one of the leading papers of the state. Realizing the importance of local news, he stressed it consistently, and by the consequent popularity of the paper he contributed much to the strength of the Republican party, which he joined on its inception. In his devotion to the Union he never wavered. As a result the building occupied by the *Times* was sacked by a mob during the draft riots of 1863. Publication was suspended, however, for only a day; and the paper continued to gain in influence. When Francis died, he was succeeded by his son, Charles Spencer Francis [*q.v.*].

Although he never swerved from the ideals in which he believed, he was essentially practical in his approach toward public affairs. In New York he was a member of the state constitutional conventions of 1867–68 and 1894, in both of which he played a prominent part. In national politics he was also an influential figure. In 1856 he was a delegate to the first convention of the Repub-

lican party, and at the convention of 1880 he was one of the "die-hards" who supported President Grant. In recognition of his Republicanism he had been appointed in 1871 minister to Greece, where he remained for three years. After a tour of the world, he again engaged in politics. In 1881 President Garfield, to whom he had transferred his allegiance, included his name as minister to Belgium in his tentative list of appointments, but did not live to make the nomination. President Arthur, embarrassed by other commitments, named him to the post at Lisbon. In 1884 he was promoted to the mission at Vienna. He resigned the following year.

[C. E. Francis, *Francis: Descendants of Robt. Francis of Wethersfield, Conn.* (1906), p. 194; files of the *Troy Daily Times*, especially the supplement of June 25, 1901, and the anniversary issue of June 25, 1926; a memorial volume published in 1897, containing sketches, appreciations, and reprints of newspaper obituaries; the volumes of reminiscences by his wife, especially *By Land and Sea* (1891); Rutherford Hayner, *Troy and Rensselaer County, N. Y.* (3 vols., 1925); Geo. B. Anderson, *Landmarks of Rensselaer County* (1897); N. B. Sylvester, *Hist. of Rensselaer County, N. Y.* (1880); *N. Y. Times*, June 19, 1897; *Northern Budget*, June 20, 1897.]

R. P. B—r.

**FRANCIS, JOHN WAKEFIELD** (Nov. 17, 1789–Feb. 8, 1861), physician, was born in New York City, the son of Melchior Francis, a German immigrant, whose death made it necessary for the boy to apprentice himself early in life to George Long, a printer. He had a natural bent for study, however, and after expert tutoring by two Irish clergymen he was able to enter Columbia College in 1807, with advanced standing. Upon his graduation in 1809 he at once began the study of medicine under David Hosack [*q.v.*]. Entering the new College of Physicians and Surgeons he became its first graduate (in 1811) and forthwith accepted a partnership with his preceptor, which continued until 1820. Appointed lecturer in medicine and materia medica in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, he voluntarily served without fees. When the school merged with the Medical Department of Columbia, he was given professorships in both subjects and spent the year 1816–17 studying in Europe. Upon his return he was given a third chair, that of forensic medicine, to which was added in 1819 a fourth, obstetrics, Meanwhile, from 1810 to 1814, with Hosack, he edited the *American Medical and Philosophical Register*. On the way to becoming New York's foremost obstetrician, he published in 1821 an edition of Thomas Denman's *Introduction to the Practice of Midwifery*. In 1826, with four others, he entered upon the work of establishing the new Rutgers Medical College, but owing to litigation the venture was short-lived. During the four years of the school's existence, however, he taught obstetrics and forensic medicine. On Nov. 16, 1829, he married Maria Eliza Cutler of Boston. His income had now reached $15,000 annually and probably never fell below that figure. In 1830 he formally retired from teaching and for some years remained devoted to his practise and numerous avocations. He was interested in many different attempts to promote the general welfare; with Drs. Mott and Stearns, he founded the New York Academy of Medicine (1846) and was its second president (1847–48); in the fifties he lent James Marion Sims [*q.v.*] the aid which made it possible to establish the Woman's Hospital; he was largely responsible for the founding of the State Inebriate Asylum at Binghamton; toward the close of his career, shortly before the opening of the Bellevue Hospital Medical College, he gave clinical instruction in the wards of Bellevue Hospital. He was pronounced by Dr. Marshall Hall while on a visit to New York, the most representative physician of his generation.

Outside the field of his profession, his prominence as an officer or honorary member of ethnological, fine arts, historical, typographical, horticultural, and antiquarian societies, and his countless personal charities, made "our learned and jolly Dr. Francis" (*The Diary of Philip Hone*, 1889, II, 210) one of the best-known and best-loved figures in New York. Compared by contemporaries both to Dr. Johnson and to Dr. Franklin, he possessed remarkable powers of observation and memory, was enthusiastically interested in the progress of science, and a devoted lover of letters. Though he had little time for methodical reading, he bought books constantly, delighted in literary conversation, "and seemed to regard attendance, without fee or reward, upon authors, artists, and actors, the highest privilege of his profession" (Tuckerman, *post*, p. xli). His own writings, in addition to several medical papers, consisted largely of biographical sketches and occasional addresses. His anniversary discourse, delivered before the New York Historical Society, Nov. 17, 1857, was published in enlarged form under the title *Old New York; or, Reminiscences of the Past Sixty Years* (1858; 1866). Reflecting as it does his many literary friendships, it is a valuable source for the social and literary history of the city during the period of his lifetime. Samuel Ward Francis [*q.v.*], was his son.

[H. T. Tuckerman, "Biog. Essay," in *Old New York* (ed. 1866); Valentine Mott, *Eulogy on the late John W. Francis* (1861), A. K. Gardner, *Eulogy on John W. Francis* (1861); H. M. Storer, in *Memorial Biogs. of the New-Eng. Hist. Geneal. Soc.*, vol. IV (1885); E. A Duyckinck in *Hist. Mag.*, Apr. 1861.]

E. P.

**FRANCIS, JOSEPH** (Mar. 12, 1801–May 10, 1893), inventor, manufacturer, was born in Boston, Mass., the son of Thomas and Margaret Francis. Until he was eleven years old Francis enjoyed the normal boy's life, but in 1812 his father died and to help support his widowed mother and six other children Francis became a page in the Massachusetts state Senate, remaining there four years. His particular interest, however, had always been in boats, especially unsinkable ones, and he is said to have built one with cork in its ends when only eleven years old, which with four men aboard could not be sunk. From 1816 to 1819, through the kindness of a near relative who was engaged in the boat-building business, Francis was given a corner of the plant for his experiments and succeeded in building there a fast row-boat with this unsinkable feature in it. He exhibited it at the Mechanics Institute Fair in Boston that year and received "honorable recognition." Hoping to find a market in New York, Francis went there in 1820 but for years was unsuccessful either in obtaining orders for life-boats or in finding any one to stake him in his experimental work. At last, around 1837, he produced a wooden boat which withstood the severest tests ship-owners could devise, and Francis's name was made. Almost immediately orders for boats were received from many European countries and from within the United States. After patenting the idea in 1838 and contracting with the Novelty Iron Works of New York to manufacture the boats, Francis turned to further experimenting. In the years that followed he invented and built many kinds of boats: portable, screw boats, molded boats, "hydrogiene" life-boats, launches, cargo boats, and double or reversed-bottom boats. Within fifteen years practically every craft sailing out of New York harbor swung Francis life-boats from its davits.

As early as 1838 Francis had in mind the invention of a boat adaptable for saving life on wrecked vessels, and about 1840 had constructed a decked-over boat of wood to run back and forth on a hawser between ship and shore. Actual tests, however, indicated that wood was not strong enough to withstand the force of heavy seas and Francis thereupon turned to metal. He found that flat iron plates likewise were unsuitable, but became convinced that these same plates when corrugated would possess ample strength for his purpose. He was then faced with the additional difficulties not only of manufacturing corrugated metal but of shaping the corrugated sheet to the irregular curves of a boat. After four years of tedious, discouraging, and costly work, he solved the problem through the use of cast-iron dies

Francis

which he himself designed, and was granted a patent Mar. 25, 1845, for the use of corrugated metal in the construction of all boats and vessels. His first successful corrugated iron life-boat made in accordance with his patented process is preserved in the National Museum at Washington. While he was engaged in this work, the International Shipwreck Society for All Nations, under the direct patronage of the King of France, made him a "benefactor," and in 1843 both the French and English sections of the society requested him to form an American section. The result was that through his efforts the American Shipwreck and Humane Society was organized out of which grew the United States Life-saving Service.

Two years after Francis had obtained the patent on his corrugated metal boat, the Novelty Iron Works built what was considered a perfect life-boat. Three years passed, however, before an opportunity came to test it. The boat had been placed at one of the life-saving stations on the New Jersey coast and in January 1850 the British ship *Ayrshire,* with two hundred passengers aboard, was wrecked off Squan Beach. Through the use of Francis's life-boat all but one of the passengers were rescued. Between 1850 and 1855 Francis worked constantly on the application of his corrugated metal patent to a variety of devices including water-tight army wagons for river crossings. Models of these reached various parts of Europe, resulting in orders from Italy, Russia, Brazil, Germany, and England, as well as from the military service of the United States. In 1855 Francis went abroad and remained there approximately eight years. In France, Austria, and Russia he gave exhibits of his life-saving apparatus and military boat-wagons and granted concessions for the manufacture of his inventions in England and Germany. One of his greatest accomplishments while in Europe was the construction of a fleet of light-draft corrugated iron steamers for the Russian government, which unassembled were transported over the Ural Mountains to the Aral Sea in Asia. There they were assembled and successfully put into service. Subsequently Francis established a manufactory for corrugated iron steamers in Russia. Upon his return to the United States in 1863, he continued his researches, extending the application of his corrugated metal patent to floating docks and harbor buoys. He invented among other things a metallic cloth hood for sentinels in a storm, a circular yacht, and a table joist car-lock. For his inventions and services he received numerous medals (now in the National Museum at Washington), gifts, and decorations both at home and

abroad, among which were a congressional medal of gold, presented by President Harrison in 1890; the Franklin Institute medal, 1854; a gold medal from King Ferdinand III of Sicily; a gold snuff-box, diamond-studded, from Napoleon III in 1856; and the Royal Order of Knighthood of St. Stanislaus from the Czar of Russia. With increasing age Francis devoted most of his time to travel and philanthropic activities, spending his summers in the Great Lakes region and his winters in New York. He wrote and published in 1885 *A History of Life-Saving Appliances*. His wife was Ellen Creamer of Salem, Mass., and at the time of his death at Cooperstown, N. Y., he was survived by an only son. He was buried in Minneapolis, Minn.

[Jos. Francis, *Hist. of Life-Saving Appliances* (1885); Jas. L. Pond, *Hist. of Life-Saving Appliances . . . Manufactured by Jos. Francis: with Sketches and Incidents of his Business Life . . .* (1885); *Francis' Metallic Life-Boat Co.* (1852, 1853); *Harper's New Monthly Mag.*, July 1851; *Lippincott's Mag.*, Jan. 1885; *Sci. American*, May 20, 1893; *Boston Transcript*, May 11, 1893; National Museum Records; Patent Office Records.] C. W. M.

**FRANCIS, SAMUEL WARD** (Dec. 26, 1835–Mar. 25, 1886), physician, author, was a son of Maria Eliza Cutler and John W. Francis [*q.v.*] of New York City. His mother was an aunt of Julia Ward Howe [*q.v.*]. For many years the Ward and Francis families lived as one household at the corner of Bond Street and Broadway, New York. Samuel Ward Francis was named for his maternal grandfather, an eminent banker. His own father, a man of German descent, was one of the best-known New York physicians of his day, and had an unusual range of acquaintance with the writers and scientists of the period. The boy grew up in a home which was famed as a meeting-place of authors, artists, and professional folk. Receiving his B.A. degree at Columbia College in 1857, he decided to study medicine and spent three years at the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York, taking the degree of M.D. in 1860. In the preceding year he had married Harriet H. McAllister of California.

Belonging to a family of physicians, with a father and two brothers who were members of that profession, Francis seems to have prepared with zest for a career in medicine and surgery, but that did not by any means absorb his energies or his mental activities. In the year of his graduation from college he took out a patent on a "printing machine" which in several essential points anticipated the typewriter by almost twenty years. The principal feature of this contrivance is said to have consisted in arranging a row of hammers in a circle, so that when put in motion they would strike in the same place. A piano keyboard was connected. "The paper is moved along by means of a spring and catch, so connected with the keys that it shall move the paper a distance of one letter whenever a key is struck. On the face of each hammer a letter is cut in relief, in such a position that its impression on the paper will be parallel with those of the others. At the end of each line the 'car' which carries the paper is drawn back by the hand" (*Report of the Commissioner of Patents*, 1857, II, 437). The machine had a complicated and heavy type-bar action, but it had features which later inventors employed to advantage, such as the principle of a type guide (C. V. Oden, *Evolution of the Typewriter*, 1917, p. 15).

Having inherited his father's facility in writing, Francis early in his career produced several works of interest to his profession. *Biographical Sketches of Distinguished Living New York Surgeons* (1866) and *Biographical Sketches of Distinguished Living New York Physicians* (1867) appeared while the author was in his early thirties. Later he wrote several essays and novels which included: *Inside Out; A Curious Book* (1862); *Life and Death; A Novel* (1871); *Curious Facts, concerning Man and Nature* (1874–75); and *Memoir of the Life and Character of Prof. Valentine Mott* (1865). In 1863 Francis went to Newport, R. I., to live and to practise his profession. He was there for the remaining twenty-three years of his life, with the exception of some time spent in travel. He took an active part in the Sanitary Protection Association founded in 1878, resulting in the creation of the Newport Board of Health. During the twenty-one years, beginning in 1858, he received patents on sixteen inventions, including a machine for canceling postage stamps (1863), a heating and ventilating device for railroad-cars (1868), a sewing-machine (1875), a signal for telephone and telegraph lines (1879), and various lesser contrivances.

[The *Medic. Record*, Apr. 3, 1886; *Trans. R. I. Medic. Soc.*, vol. III, pt. IV (1886); *Am. Phrenological Jour.*, Dec. 1857; *Providence Jour.*, Mar. 26, 27, 1886; annual reports of the commissioner of patents, 1857–79.] W. B. S—w.

**FRANCIS, TENCH** (d. Aug. 16, 1758), lawyer, was a descendant of Philip Francis, Mayor of Plymouth, England, in 1642, and the son of John Francis, dean of Lismore, Ireland, and rector of St. Mary's Church, Dublin, who married a Miss Tench. His brother, Philip, was the father of Sir Philip Francis, the reputed author of the Junius Letters. Despite the fact that he attained eminence in after life, held high office and became the undisputed leader of the Pennsylvania bar of

his time, very little is known of the intimate details of his life (Eastman, *post*). He was born in Ireland, probably in Dublin, but the date is unknown and no details of his childhood are available. He received his education in England, studied law in London, and went to America before 1720 in the capacity of attorney for Lord Baltimore, taking up his residence in Kent County, Md., where he opened a law office. From 1726 to 1734 he was clerk of Talbot County Court, in which latter year he was elected burgess for Talbot County in the Maryland Assembly, continuing a member of the legislature for three years. In 1736 he became deputy commissary-general and registrar of wills of Talbot County, an office which he held till 1738. In the latter year he moved to Philadelphia, and there acquired an extensive practise. He had not only a profound knowledge of law but a natural gift of eloquence as well, which placed him in a class by himself as an advocate. As a consequence, in the brief space of three years he became recognized as the leader of the bar throughout the state. In 1741 he was appointed attorney-general of Pennsylvania. In this position he maintained his high reputation, and during his tenure of office labored unceasingly to maintain the effective and impartial administration of the law within his jurisdiction. He acted as one of the Pennsylvania representatives on the joint commission to adjust the boundaries of that province and Maryland in 1750. In the same year he was appointed recorder of Philadelphia and despite the heavy nature of his responsibilities, continued to perform the duties of both his offices with eminent success for five years. When he retired in 1755 his health had been undermined by his strenuous labors. At the time of his death in Philadelphia, Franklin's *Pennsylvania Gazette* stated that he had served the province "with the highest Reputation." He married Elizabeth, daughter of Foster Turbutt of "Ottwell," Talbot County, Dec. 29, 1724, "under romantic circumstances" (O. Tilghman, *post*). His daughter, Margaret, married Chief Justice Edward Shippen [*q.v.*]; a grandson, Col. Tench Tilghman, was one of Washington's aides, and a great-grandson, John Brown Francis [*q.v.*], was governor of Rhode Island.

[C. E. Francis, *Francis: Descendants of Robt. Francis of Wethersfield, Conn.* (1906); Oswald Tilghman, *Hist. of Talbot County, Md.* (2 vols., 1915); F. M. Eastman, *Courts and Lawyers of Pa.* (1922), I, 253; C. P. Keith, *The Provincial Councillor* (1883); J. H. Martin, *Bench and Bar of Philadelphia* (1883); F. N. Thorpe, *Benj. Franklin and the Univ. of Pa.* (1893); *Pa. Gazette*, Aug. 24, 1758.] H. W. H. K.

**FRANCKE, KUNO** (Sept. 27, 1855–June 25, 1930), historian, philologist, was born in Kiel, the son of Judge August Wilhelm S. and Katharine Marie (Jensen) Francke. After attending the Gymnasium of his native city he studied from 1873 to 1878 at the Universities of Kiel, Berlin, Jena, and Munich and came under the influence of Friedrich Paulsen, Rudolf Eucken, Michael Bernays, Erwin Rohde, Wilhelm von Giesebrecht, and Heinrich von Brunn. Taking his degree in 1878 at Munich with a dissertation *Zur Geschichte der Lateinischen Schulpoesie des XII. and XIII. Jahrhunderts* (Munich, 1879), he spent a year in Italy as recipient of the König Ludwig Stipendium in history, taught from 1880 to 1882 in the Kiel Gymnasium, publishing a study *De Hymni in Cererem Homerici Compositione, Dictione, Aetate* (Kiel, 1881), and then became an assistant editor, under Georg Waitz, of the *Monumenta Germaniae Historica*. His contribution to that great series is to be found in the first two volumes of the *Libelli de Lite Imperatorum et Pontificum Saeculis XI. et XII.* (1891–92). In 1884, through his friend Ephraim Emerton, he was called to Harvard University as instructor in German and began teaching that autumn, with Bernard Berenson among his first pupils. He was advanced to assistant professor in 1887, to associate professor in 1892, and to professor of the history of German culture in 1896. On June 27, 1889, he married Katharine Gilbert of Gilbertsville, N. Y., who with two of their three children survived him. In 1891 he became an American citizen. In 1896 appeared his most widely read book, *Social Forces in German Literature*, which in 1901 was renamed *History of German Literature as Determined by Social Forces*. His *Kulturwerte der Deutschen Literatur in ihrer Geschichtlichen Entwicklung* (vol. I, Berlin, 1910; vol. II, 1923) covers the same field in greater detail. *Weltbürgertum in der Deutschen Literatur von Herder bis Nietzsche* (Berlin, 1928) was to form part of the third volume, which was left incomplete at the author's death. Francke's scholarship was wide and accurate and illumined by a poetic idealism and a broad humanity, but his originality lies in his grasp of the principle that literary history is inseparable from the general history of culture. His other publications, besides numerous contributions to newspapers, magazines, and scholarly periodicals, include: *Glimpses of Modern German Culture* (1898); *German Ideals of To-day* (1907); *A German-American's Confession of Faith* (1915); *The German Spirit* (1916); *Personality in German Literature before Luther* (1916); *Deutsches Schicksal* (Dresden, 1923) —his only published volume of poetry; *German After-War Problems* (1927); and *Deutsche Ar-*

*beit in Amerika* (Leipzig, 1930)— an autobiography. He was editor-in-chief of *German Classics of the XIX and XX Centuries* (1913–14). In 1902, with generous support from Adolphus Busch of St. Louis, Hugo Reisinger of New York, and the German Emperor, he founded the Germanic Museum at Harvard, of which he was curator until 1917 and honorary curator thereafter. During the European War (1914–18) he bore himself with perfect dignity and sanity, submitting to vehement denunciation from all sides, to spying and letter-opening, and to ostracism by men who had been his friends for years. It was characteristic of him that he wrote his reminiscences of this period without bitterness and without pride. Retiring from Harvard University in 1917, he withdrew to his country retreat at Gilbertsville, N. Y., and devoted himself to writing the second volume of his *Kulturwerte*, traversing the period from the Reformation to the Enlightenment and accomplishing what he himself regarded as his best work in literary history. A few years later he again enjoyed public regard as the most distinguished Germanist in America. He was also a poet of distinction. He was a close and sympathetic student of American culture, and to the *Dictionary of American Biography*, of which he was a valued friend, he contributed the article on his Harvard predecessor, Charles Follen [*q.v.*]. He died at Cambridge, Mass., after a brief illness and was buried at Gilbertsville.

[Kuno Francke, *Deutsche Arbeit in Amerika* (Leipzig, 1930); Arthur Davison Ficke, "The Recollections of Kuno Francke," *Harvard Grads.' Mag.*, June 1930; S. E. Morison, *Development of Harvard Univ. 1869–1929* (1930), with portrait; *Deutsche Zeitgenossen-Lexikon* (Leipzig, 1905); *Who's Who in America*, 1930–31; *Nation* (N. Y.), July 9, 1930; *Saturday Rev. of Literature*, July 5, 1930; *N. Y. Times*, June 26, 1930.]

G. H. G.

**FRANKLAND, LADY AGNES SURRIAGE** (1726–Apr. 23, 1783), wife of Sir Charles Henry Frankland, Bart., was born at Marblehead, Mass., the fourth of the eight children of Edward and Mary (Pierce) Surriage, and was baptized Apr. 17, 1726. Her father was a poor fisherman, her mother a grand-daughter of John Brown, an affluent London merchant, who settled at Pemaquid (now Bristol, Me.) in 1625 and bought a tract of land, later known as the Brown Right, from the Indians. Agnes became a maid-of-all-work at the Fountain Inn in Marblehead, where in the summer of 1742 her black ringlets, black eyes, and smooth complexion aroused the interest of Charles Henry Frankland (May 10, 1716–Jan. 11, 1768) who from 1741 to 1757 was collector of the port of Boston. According to family tradition, Agnes was scrubbing the tavern



floor when they first saw each other, and Frankland, noting the girl's scanty dress and bare feet, gave her a crown to buy her a pair of shoes. Impressed by her beauty and intelligence, he persuaded her parents to let the girl be educated in Boston at his expense. In 1746, by the death of his uncle, Sir Thomas Frankland, Member of Parliament and a Lord of the Admiralty, he succeeded to the baronetcy of Thirsk in the North Riding of Yorkshire. About this time Agnes Surriage became his mistress. The liaison created scandal; and Frankland, to shield the girl from insult, bought 480 acres at Hopkinton, built a mansion, and lived with her there until 1754, when Frankland returned to England to help settle a family lawsuit. His family did not welcome Miss Surriage. Frankland next took up his residence at Lisbon. On Nov. 1, 1755, the city was destroyed by an earthquake, "on which day," Frankland recorded in his journal, "I was providentially saved. I was buried in ruins. . . . Hope my providential escape will have a lasting good effect upon my mind." He thereupon married Agnes Surriage, who, according to the family story, had effected his rescue. On their return to England she was received cordially by his family and friends. They lived in Massachusetts again from 1756 to 1758, their Boston house being the Clarke mansion on Garden Court Street and Bell Alley, described in Fenimore Cooper's *Lionel Lincoln*; and Lady Frankland became at once one of the leaders of Boston society. She was a woman of great charm and refinement. Not the least of her graces was the unfailing love and kindness that she showed to her family and to the friends of her girlhood. Later they returned to Lisbon, where Frankland served as British consul-general. After her husband's death Lady Frankland came back to the Hopkinton estate, on which she lived until the outbreak of the Revolution forced her to remove to Boston and thence to England. Her estate, in spite of her Loyalist sympathies, was not confiscated. In 1782 she married John Drew, a wealthy banker of Chichester. She died the next year and was buried in St. Pancras' Church in Chichester. Her story has been told by Oliver Wendell Holmes in the ballad of "Agnes" in *Songs in Many Keys* (1861) and by Edwin Lassetter Bynner in a novel, *Agnes Surriage* (1886, 1923).

[Elias Nason, *Sir Chas. Henry Frankland, Baronet* (Albany, N. Y., 1865); N. P. Sanborn, *The Fountain Inn: Agnes Surriage and Sir Harry Frankland* (Marblehead Hist. Soc., 1905); Frankland's Journal is in the library of the Mass. Hist. Soc.]

G. H. G.

**FRANKLIN, BENJAMIN** (Jan. 17, 1706–Apr. 17, 1790), printer, author, philanthropist, inventor, statesman, diplomat, scientist, was born

in Milk Street, Boston. His father, Josiah, came to New England "about 1682" (moving from Banbury to Boston, 1685) from Ecton, Northamptonshire, England, where the parish records of his Protestant ancestors run back to 1555 (Smyth, *The Writings of Benjamin Franklin*, I, 228; III, 453). His mother, second wife of Josiah, was Abiah, the daughter of Peter Folger, a man of liberal views who taught the Indians to read and wrote some doggerel verse (*A Looking Glass for the Times*). Benjamin was the tenth son of Josiah, and the youngest son of the youngest son for five generations. He learned to read at a very early age, probably taught by his father who destined him for the church as "the tithe of his sons," and sent him at eight years to the Boston Grammar School. The expense proving too great, he was transferred within less than a year to George Brownell's school for writing and arithmetic. At the age of ten he was taken into his father's business (tallow chandler and soap boiler). Disliking this, he was apprenticed at twelve years to his half-brother, James, a printer, who later (1721) started the *New England Courant*, the fourth newspaper established in the British colonies. In 1722 James was "taken up, censur'd, and imprisoned for a month." During this time the paper was issued under the management of Benjamin, his status as apprentice being concealed by a "flimsy" (dishonest) device (*Writings*, I, 248). Repeated quarrels with his brother led Benjamin to leave Boston for Philadelphia, where he arrived in October 1723, at the age of seventeen.

At this early age Benjamin was already an expert printer, and had begun that close application to reading, writing, reflection, and self-improvement which, continued through life, was one secret of his intellectual eminence and of his practical success. Besides a few books in his father's house, he had access to the small library of Matthew Adams. Bunyan, Plutarch, Defoe, and Cotton Mather came his way. Tyron's book on "vegetable diet" interested him. Cocker's arithmetic, Seller's work on navigation, and an English grammar (Greenwood?) were studied. Locke's *Essay*, some works of Shaftesbury and Collins, Xenophon's *Memorabilia*, the "Art of Thinking by Messrs. du Port Royal"—all of these were pored over and reflected upon to some purpose. By some happy chance he bought an odd volume of Addison's *Spectator*, which he read "over and over," the style of which he thought "excellent, and wished, if possible, to imitate." Making notes of the ideas in several papers, he laid them by, and after some days "try'd to compleat the papers again. . . . Then I compared my *Spectator* with the original, discovered some of my faults, and corrected them" (*Writings*, I, 241). Thus playing the "sedulous ape," the boy acquired a vocabulary and fashioned his style. One day he composed a labored "essay," signed it Silence Dogood, and secretly slipped it under the door of his brother's shop. To his great delight it was printed. Others followed, fourteen in all—his earliest publications, crude indeed but characteristic.

Franklin arrived in Philadelphia with one Dutch dollar and a copper shilling. Obtaining employment in the print-shop of Samuel Keimer, he soon demonstrated his ability and made a circle of friends. Through his brother-in-law, Robert Holmes, he fell under the notice of the eccentric Gov. Keith, who urged him to set up for himself and sent him off to London to buy equipment, promising him letters of credit for the purpose. In London (1724), no letters of credit being forthcoming, Franklin found employment at Palmer's (later at Watts's) printing-house. At the former he set up William Wollaston's *The Religion of Nature Delineated* (1725) which inspired him to write and print a refutation—*A Dissertation on Liberty and Necessity, Pleasure and Pain* (1725), in which he presented, cleverly for a boy, the current theory of necessity. He returned to Philadelphia in October 1726, with Mr. Denham, a Quaker merchant, in whose shop he served as clerk, learning accounts and becoming "expert in selling." Upon the sudden death of Denham, Franklin was once more employed by Keimer, but in 1728 left him to form a partnership with Hugh Meredith. In 1730 he became sole owner of the business, including *The Pennsylvania Gazette* (founded in 1728 by Keimer) which Franklin and Meredith had purchased in 1729.

Established in business on his own at the age of twenty-four, Franklin settled down. On Sept. 1, 1730, he "took to wife" Deborah Read, the daughter of his first landlady. Since she was already married to a certain Rogers who had deserted her (never afterwards heard of) the marriage was a common-law union. To them two children were born: Francis Folger (1732–1736), and Sarah (1744–1808), later the wife of Richard Bache. Franklin had besides two illegitimate children: William Franklin, later governor of New Jersey and a Loyalist during the Revolution, and a daughter. Franklin's wife was an illiterate person (*Writings*, X, 289; S. G. Fisher, *True Benjamin Franklin*, p. 116), incapable of sharing, or even of understanding, the importance of his intellectual interests. But she was devoted to him, even taking William Franklin to live in the house for a time, and by her in-

dustry and thrift contributed to his material comfort and welfare. "She proved a good and faithful helpmate, assisted me much by attending the shop; we throve together, and have ever mutually endeavor'd to make each other happy" (*Writings,* I, 311). Marrying chiefly in order to relieve the strain of youthful passion, Franklin thus makes the best of a bad business.

From 1730 to 1748 Franklin applied himself to business, won a competence, and laid the foundation of his fame at home and abroad. Industry and thrift contributed to the prosperity of his business. "In order to secure my credit and character as a tradesman, I took care not only to be in *reality* industrious and frugal, but to avoid all appearance to the contrary. I drest plainly; I was seen at no places of idle diversion. I never went out a fishing or shooting; a book, indeed, sometimes debauch'd me from my work, but that was seldom, snug, and gave no scandal; and, to show that I was not above my business, I sometimes brought home the paper I purchas'd at the stores thro' the streets on a wheel-barrow" (*Writings,* I, 307–08). But the chief reason for his success was his capacity for making friends, influential and otherwise, his uncanny instinct for advertising himself and his paper, and above all the sense, novelty, and charm of the things he wrote for it. Nothing better exhibits the man, or better illustrates his ingenuity as an advertiser, than *Poor Richard's Almanack* (1732–57). "Richard Saunders," the Philomath of the *Almanack,* was the Sir Roger de Coverley of the masses, pilfering the world's store of aphorisms, and adapting them to the circumstances and the understanding of the poor. "Necessity never made a good bargain." "It is hard for an empty sack to stand upright." "Many dishes make diseases." "The used key is always bright." The *Almanack* was immediately successful, and commonly sold about ten thousand copies. "As poor Richard says" became a current phrase, used to give weight to any counsel of thrift. The work made Franklin's name a household word throughout the colonies, and gave a homespun flavor to American humor. The introduction to the last *Almanack* (Father Abraham's speech at the auction) spread the fame of Poor Richard in Europe. It was printed in broadsides and posted on walls in England, and, in translation, distributed by the French clergy among their parishioners. It has been translated into fifteen languages, and reprinted at least four hundred times.

Although in origin a business venture, Poor Richard was a genuine expression of Franklin's passion for improving himself and others.

Franklin

He was forever laboring consciously to perfect his mind and his character. He taught himself (beginning in 1733) to read French, Spanish, Italian, and Latin. In 1727 he established the "Junto," a debating club devoted to the discussion of morals, politics, and natural philosophy. He was easily the best informed and the most skilled in discussion. At first he was inclined to be argumentative, given to laying traps for his opponents (a trick learned from Socrates), in order to show up their errors or stupidities. Finding this not useful, since it got him disliked and only confirmed his opponents in their opinions, he deliberately adopted the habit of expressing himself "in terms of modest diffidence; never using . . . the words *certainly, undoubtedly,* . . . but rather say, I conceive or apprehend, . . . or, *it is so, if I am not mistaken.* This habit, I believe, has been of great advantage to me when I have had occasion to inculcate my opinions" (*Writings,* I, 244, 338). Thus early in life Franklin trained himself in the fine art of inducing others to appropriate as their own the ideas or the projects which he wished to have prevail.

In the same pragmatic way Franklin set about devising a religion for the practise of the useful virtues. He regretted his youthful essay on *Liberty and Necessity,* suspecting, from sad experience, that a materialistic doctrine, "tho' it might be true, was not very useful." It seemed to him far more useful to believe in God and to infer that "though certain actions might not be bad *because* they were forbidden [by Revelation] . . . yet probably these actions might be forbidden *because* they were bad" (*Writings,* I, 296). At the age of twenty-two he drafted "Articles of Belief and Acts of Religion" (*Ibid.,* II, 91). The substance of the creed which he held throughout his life was that the one God, who made all things and governs the world through his providence, ought to be worshipped by adoration, prayer, and thanksgiving; that the most acceptable service of God is doing good to men; that the soul is immortal, and that God will certainly reward virtue and punish vice, either here or hereafter. Aiming at "moral perfection," he made a list of the useful virtues, which turned out to be thirteen—Temperance, Silence, Order, Resolution, Frugality, Industry, Sincerity, Justice, Moderation, Cleanliness, Tranquillity, Chastity, and Humility. To each of these in turn he gave "a week's strict attention, marking down in a book the measure of daily success achieved in the practice of each." Thus he went through "a course compleat in thirteen weeks, and four courses a year." He was surprised to find himself "so much fuller of faults" than he had imagined, but persisting for

some years he had the satisfaction of "seeing them diminish." To propagate these simple doctrines and practises, Franklin designed (1732) to write a book on "The Art of Virtue," and to unite all men of good will in a society for the practise of it (*Writings*, I, 326; IV, 12, 121; 377; J. G. von Herder, *Sämmtliche Werke*, 1830, XVII, 10, 16).

His passion for improvement made him the leader in many movements for the benefit of his community. He initiated projects for establishing a city police, and for the paving and the better cleaning and lighting of city streets. He was largely instrumental in establishing a circulating library in Philadelphia, the first in America, 1731; in founding in 1743 the American Philosophical Society, incorporated 1780; a city hospital, 1751; and an Academy for the Education of Youth, opened in 1751, incorporated, 1753 (the origin of the University of Pennsylvania). Franklin rarely solicited public office; but he was too public-spirited to avoid such honors. In 1729 he supported the popular demand for paper money (*Writings*, I, 306; II, 133). He was clerk of the Pennsylvania Assembly (1736–51); member for Philadelphia (1751–64); deputy postmaster at Philadelphia (1737–53), and, jointly with William Hunter, deputy postmaster-general for the colonies (1753–74). This was one of the few offices he ever solicited (*Ibid.*, X, 173–74). In the latter capacity he made visits of inspection to nearly every colony, and not only increased the frequency and efficiency of the mail deliveries, but made the post-office a financial success as well.

In the intervals of his varied activities as printer, philanthropist, and politician, Franklin found time for the study of science. It was probably in England that his attention was first turned to "Natural Philosophy." There he met Mandeville, and Dr. Pemberton, the secretary of the Royal Society, and was "extremely desirous" of seeing Newton, then at the height of his fame. Returning to America he was soon discussing, in the Junto, such questions as: "Is sound an entity or a body?" "How may the phenomena of vapors be explained?" As early as 1737 he was writing, in the *Gazette*, on earthquakes (*Writings*, I, 54). In the same year, prevented from observing an eclipse of the moon by a "northeaster," he was surprised to learn that the storm struck Philadelphia sooner than it struck Boston; which led him to the discovery that northeast storms on the Atlantic coast move against the wind (*Ibid.*, II, 311; IV, 16). About 1744 he invented the "Pennsylvania Fireplace," a stove with an open firebox, which heated rooms better with less expense



(*Ibid.*, II, 246). He contrived a clock which told the hours, minutes, and seconds with only three wheels and two pinions in the movement (improved by James Ferguson, it was known as Ferguson's clock, *Ibid.*, I, 52). Every sort of natural phenomenon enlisted his interest and called forth some ingenious idea. In one short letter he speaks of linseed oil, hemp land, swamp draining, variations in climate, northeast storms, the cause of springs on mountains, sea-shell rocks, grass seed, taxation, and smuggling (*Ibid.*, II, 310). So fascinating was natural philosophy to Franklin that he determined to make it his vocation. Business was a game which he could play with skill, but he cared little for it, or for the money it brought, except as a guarantee of independence. At the age of forty-two he had won a competence. Besides the income from some real estate, his business was worth perhaps £2,000 a year. In 1748 he therefore entered into a partnership with his foreman, David Hall [*q.v.*], who was to run the business, relieving Franklin "of all care of the printing office" and paying him £1,000 annually, an arrangement which lasted eighteen years. "I flatter'd myself that, by the sufficient tho' modest fortune I had acquir'd, I had secured leisure during the rest of my life for philosophical studies and amusements" (*Ibid.*, I, 373–74). The leisure acquired lasted without serious interruptions for no more than six years; but it was during these years that he made those electrical experiments on which his fame as a scientist chiefly rests.

Franklin became interested in electricity about 1746, when Peter Collinson sent to the Philadelphia Library an "electric tube." With this fascinating toy he spent all of his spare time. "I never was before engaged in any study that so totally engrossed my attention" (*Writings*, II, 302). After four months he sent to Collinson an amazingly precise, clear, and intelligible account of his experiments. He noted "the wonderful effect of pointed bodies, both in *drawing off* and *throwing off*, the electrical fire." He noted that a person "standing on wax" was differently affected by the electrical charge than a person standing on the floor; and from this fact, tested in a variety of ways, "there have arisen," he says, "some new terms among us: we say B (and bodies like circumstanced) is electrised *positively*; A, *negatively*. Or, rather, B is electrised *plus*; A, *minus*" (*Ibid.*, II, 302–10). He was soon experimenting with "Muschenbroek's wonderful bottle" (Leyden jar), and was confirmed in his "single fluid" theory (*Ibid.*, I, 95; II, 325). "The eleven experiments, to each of which a single brief paragraph is given, cover the essential phe-

nomena of the condenser. As statements of fact they will stand almost without revision or amendment to the present day" (E. L. Nichols, in *Record of the Celebration of the Two Hundredth Anniversary of the Birth of Benjamin Franklin,* p. iii; *Writings,* II, 328). Franklin was not the first to suggest the identity of lightning and electricity; but he proposed a method of testing the theory by erecting an iron rod on a high tower or steeple (letter to Collinson, July 29, 1750; *Writings,* II, 426, 437). On May 10, 1752, Mr. Dalibard, who knew of Franklin's proposed method through Collinson's publication of Franklin's letter in 1751, performed the experiment with success at Marley-la-Valle. The experiment was successfully repeated at Paris but failed in England. Franklin, not having the means of testing his own method, devised a simpler one. This was the famous kite experiment, performed by Franklin in the summer of 1752, and described by him in a letter to Collinson, Oct. 19 (*Ibid.,* III, 99). These experiments, together with Collinson's publication of his letters on the subject (*Experiments and Observations on Electricity, Made at Philadelphia in America, by Mr. Benjamin Franklin,* London, 1751, reprinted with additions, 1753, 1760–62. *Ibid.,* I, 15–16), which were immediately translated into French, established Franklin's fame as a scientist. The degree of Master of Arts was conferred on him by Harvard and by Yale (1753), and by William and Mary (1756). His fame pleased as much as it surprised him. More than ever he desired to devote his time to "philosophical studies," which it now seemed might be something more than mere "amusements."

His dream of leisure for philosophical studies was never to be realized. Six years after retiring from private business, public affairs began to claim him in earnest, and during the rest of his life he was chiefly engaged in politics and diplomacy. In 1754 he was sent to represent Pennsylvania at the Albany Congress, called to unite the colonies in the war against the French and Indians. His "Plan of Union" was adopted by the Congress in preference to others; but "its fate was singular: the assemblies did not adopt it, as they all thought there was too much *prerogative* in it, and in England it was judged to have too much of the *democratic*" (*Writings,* I, 388; III, 197). Meantime the war had intensified the old dispute between the Assembly and the proprietors (descendants of William Penn, who lived in England and by the charter were privileged to appoint and instruct the governors of Pennsylvania). The chief grievance was that the proprietors forbade the governor to pass money bills for defense unless the vast proprietary estates were exempt from taxation (report of the Assembly committee, drafted by Franklin, 1757. *Ibid.,* III, 370). The proprietors proving obdurate, the Assembly decided to appeal directly to the British government, and in 1757 Franklin was sent to England to present its case.

The business of his first mission was not settled for nearly three years. In 1760, after two hearings before the Privy Council, a bill of the Assembly taxing the proprietary estates, except unsurveyed waste lands, was allowed by the King. In spite of the long delay, perhaps because of it, Franklin remained in England until 1762. These five years were perhaps the happiest of his life. He resided with Mrs. Margaret Stevenson, at 7 Craven St., where he became at once the beloved and well-cared-for foster father of the family. With Mrs. Stevenson, and especially with her daughter Mary, he formed an enduring friendship. In the Craven Street house he set up an "electrical machine" and carried on experiments. He indulged his humor by composing "The Craven Street Gazette" in which the doings of Her Majesty's Court were related with becoming solemnity. He made journeys—to Holland, to Cambridge, to the ancestral home at Ecton. He became intimate with Collinson, Fothergill, Priestley, Strahan; and corresponded with Lord Kames, David Hume, and Dr. Johnson. He visited the University of Edinburgh, received the degree of LL.D. from St. Andrews (1759), and of D.C.L. from Oxford (1762). He followed the war with interest, opposed the clamor for peace in 1760 by publishing in the *London Chronicle* a satire "On the Meanes of Disposing the Enemie to Peace" (*Writings,* IV, 90); and argued at length the advantages of taking Canada rather than Guadaloupe from France ("The Interest of Great Britain Considered," *Ibid.,* IV, 35). To this pamphlet, which tradition supposes to have had some influence with the government, there was appended a brief paper written in 1751 and first published in 1755 which in some points anticipates the Malthusian theory of population ("Observations on the Increase of Mankind, the peopling of Countries," etc., *Ibid.,* III, 63. See T. R. Malthus, *An Essay on the Principles of Population,* ed., 1803, pp. iv, 2). In these papers he argued: (1) that in America, where land is easily obtained, population doubled every twenty years; (2) that where land is easily obtained manufactures will not develop; (3) that Canada (including the Mississippi Valley) was accordingly more valuable than Guadaloupe since (a) becoming populous it will furnish rich markets for British goods, but (b) remaining in-

definitely agricultural it will not compete with British industry.

In 1762 Franklin returned reluctantly to Philadelphia, envying the "petty island" its "sensible, virtuous and elegant Minds" (*Writings*, IV, 194), and flirting with the idea of settling his affairs so that "in two years at farthest . . . I may then remove to England—provided we can persuade the good Woman to cross the seas" (*Ibid.*, IV, 182). Pressure of affairs, or perhaps the "good Woman," persuaded him to conclude that "*old Trees cannot safely be transplanted*" (*Ibid.*, IV, 217); but, new disputes arising with the proprietors, the Assembly once more sent him to England to obtain a recall of the Charter. This object was not attained, was indeed submerged in the greater issue raised by Grenville's proposal to levy a stamp tax in the colonies. In the second interview between Grenville and the colonial agents Franklin was present and protested against the measure, suggesting instead the "usual constitutional method" of raising a revenue. Perceiving that the bill would be enacted, he advised his friends to make the best of it. "We might as well have hindered the sun's setting. . . . But since 'tis down . . . let us make as good a night of it as we can. We may still light candles" (*Ibid.*, IV, 390). When Grenville applied to the colonial agents to recommend Americans for the new office of stamp distributor, Franklin named his friend John Hughes for Philadelphia; and failing to foresee opposition to the act he sent over some stamped papers to be sold by his partner. These acts laid him open to the charge of having urged the law in order to profit by it; his house was menaced, and his wife advised to seek safety (*Writings*, X, 226–27; Bigelow, *Life of Franklin*, I, 460, 467); but his prestige was soon restored by his famous "examination" before the House of Commons. In February 1766, during the debates on the repeal of the Stamp Act, he was called before the House (committee of the whole) and questioned on the subject. Of the 174 questions asked, some were put by opponents, some by friends, of the act (Bigelow, I, 507, note). The replies, brief, lucid, and to the point, aimed to show that the tax was contrary to custom, and administratively impracticable both on account of the circumstances of the country and the settled opposition of the people (*Writings*, IV, 412). Published immediately (Ford, *Franklin Bibliography*, 127) and widely read, the performance greatly increased Franklin's influence in America and his reputation abroad. "The questions . . . are answered with such deep and familiar knowledge of the subject, such precision and perspicuity, such temper and

Franklin

yet such spirit, as do the greatest honor to Dr. Franklin, and justify the general opinion of his character and abilities" (*Gentleman's Magazine*, July 1767, p. 368).

In 1766, after the repeal of the Stamp Act, Franklin requested permission to return to Philadelphia, but the Assembly reappointed him its agent (Bigelow, I, 513, note). He was also named colonial agent of Georgia (1768), New Jersey (1769), and Massachusetts (1770). These appointments, together with his outstanding reputation, made Franklin a kind of ambassador extraordinary from the colonies to Great Britain. During those years he worked persistently for reconciliation: urging his American friends to avoid indiscreet conduct (*Writings*, V, 42, 197, 204, 222); in England defending the colonies in private conversation and by published articles (*Ibid.*, V, 78, 127, 206, 236). Until the passing of the coercive acts (1774) he never quite despaired; but as the years passed he became less hopeful. A more serious note creeps into his correspondence; his sympathies become more American, less British. As early as 1768 he complained that all his efforts were without avail except to make him suspect: "In England, of being too much of an American, and in America, of being too much of an Englishman" (*Ibid.*, V, 182). His close observation of British politics abated both his admiration for the English government and his expectation that conciliatory measures would prevail. In 1768 he wrote, no doubt in an unusually depressed mood: "Some punishment seems preparing for a people, who are ungratefully abusing the best constitution and the best King . . . any nation was ever blessed with, intent on nothing but luxury, licentiousness, power, places, pensions, and plunder" (*Ibid.*, V, 133). He welcomed every prospect of returning to America. He had indeed friends enough in England to live there comfortably the rest of his days, "if it were not for my American connections, & the indelible Affection I retain for that dear Country" (*Ibid.*, V, 382).

As his admiration for England abated and his love of America deepened, his ideas on American rights became more precise and more advanced. In 1765 he did not doubt the right of Parliament to levy the Stamp Act. In 1766 he defended the distinction between internal and external taxes, contenting himself with an ironical and prophetic comment: "Many arguments have lately been made here to shew them [Americans] . . . that if you have no right to tax them internally you have none to tax them externally, or make any other law to bind them. At present they do not reason so; but in time they may possibly be con-

vinced by these arguments" (*Writings*, IV, 446). By 1768 Franklin was himself convinced. In order to resist the Townshend duties (1767), Dickinson and Samuel Adams had devised ingenious arguments designed to admit the right of Parliament to legislate for the colonies while denying the right to tax them (*Ibid.*, I, 97). Franklin caused Dickinson's letters to be published in England, but writing to William Franklin Mar. 13, 1768, he brushed aside these too subtle distinctions. "The more I have thought and read on the subject, the more I find myself confirmed in opinion, that no middle doctrine can be well maintained, I mean not clearly with intelligible arguments. Something might be made of either of the extremes; that Parliament has a power to make *all laws* for us, or that it has a power to make no laws for us; and I think the arguments for the latter more numerous and weighty, than those for the former" (*Ibid.*, V, 115). Two years later he deprecated the use of such phrases as "*supreme authority of Parliament*," and urged Americans to base their rights on the theory that the colonies and England were united only, "as England and Scotland were before the Union, by having one common Sovereign, the King" (*Ibid.*, V, 260). Thus early did Franklin accept the doctrine later formulated in the Declaration of Independence.

Appointed agent by the Massachusetts House of Representatives, Oct. 24, 1770, Franklin's American sympathies were intensified by the truculent unfriendliness of Hillsborough, who refused to recognize the appointment until approved by Gov. Hutchinson. Too long absent from America to form an independent judgment of the situation in Massachusetts, he was further prejudiced by the colored accounts of it transmitted by Samuel Cooper and Thomas Cushing. Although deprecating violence, and advising the Boston leaders that the government contemplated no new taxes, he agreed with Samuel Adams that good relations could not be established until the British government had repealed the tea duty. He welcomed the establishment of correspondence committees, and suggested, as a means of bringing "the Dispute to a Crisis," that the colonies should "engage . . . with each other . . . never [to] grant Aids to the Crown in any General War, till . . . [their] Rights are recogniz'd by the King and both Houses of Parliament" (1773. *Writings*, VI, 77). He was convinced of Hutchinson's "duplicity," and thought his controversy with the House of Representatives would discredit him in England. While encouraging the anti-British party in Boston, Franklin contrived to exasperate the anti-American party

Franklin

in London. He published two pointed satires, "Edict by the King of Prussia," and "Rules by which a Great Empire may be reduced to a Small one" (*Ibid.*, VI, 118, 127), which did more to aggravate than to compose the quarrel (see Mansfield's opinion, *Ibid.*, VI, 145); and, wittingly or unwittingly, he contributed much to the final breach by his part in the famous affair of the "Hutchinson Letters." In 1772 an unknown member of Parliament showed Franklin certain letters, six of which were written by Gov. Hutchinson in 1768–69, said to have been addressed (the name had been erased) to William Whately, former secretary of Grenville, urging drastic measures on the ground that "there must be an abridgment of what are called English Liberties" (the letters are in J. K. Hosmer, *Life of Hutchinson*, 1896, p. 429). By permission of the possessor, Franklin sent the letters to Thomas Cushing, with the stipulation that they should be returned to him without being either copied or printed (*Writings*, V, 448; VI, 265; X, 260). The letters were shortly printed in Boston and circulated in London, the immediate result of which was a duel between Thomas Whately, executor of the estate of William Whately, and John Temple, whom Whately accused of stealing the letters. To exonerate Temple, Franklin declared that he alone had procured and transmitted the letters, and that neither Thomas Whately nor Temple had ever had possession of them (*Ibid.*, VI, 284). In conservative circles Franklin was at once denounced as an incendiary and a thief; the government dismissed him from his office as deputy postmaster-general (*Ibid.*, VI, 191); and on Jan. 29, 1774, at a hearing before the Privy Council in the Cockpit on a petition of the Massachusetts House to remove Hutchinson, Solicitor General Wedderburn, on the assumption that Franklin had purloined the letters, denounced him in unmeasured terms as a man without honor who would "henceforth esteem it a libel to be called a man of letters: *homo* TRIUM *literarum*" —a man of three letters, *i.e. FUR*, the Latin word for thief (*Ibid.*, X, 269; Bigelow, II, 201. For full account of the episode, see *Writings*, VI, 258–89; X, 258–72; Bigelow, II, 200–38; R. H. Lee, *Life of Arthur Lee*, 1829, I, 266; P. O. Hutchinson, *Diary and Letters of Thomas Hutchinson*, 1883, I, 81; J. K. Hosmer, *Hutchinson*, ch. XII). Supported by his friends, and convinced that the sending of the letters was "one of the best actions of his life" (*Writings*, X, 270), Franklin remained in England, aiding Pitt in his fruitless efforts at conciliation (*Ibid.*, VI, 318–98; X, 272 ff.; Bigelow, II, ch. VII), until Mar. 20, 1775, when he sailed for America.

On May 6, 1775, the day following his return to Philadelphia, Franklin was chosen a member of the second Continental Congress. Conciliation seemed to him now no more than a vain hope. To satisfy the moderates he supported the Petition to the King, giving "Britain . . . one opportunity more of recovering the friendship of the colonies," but "I think she has not sense enough to embrace [it], and so I conclude she has lost them forever" (*Writings,* VI, 408). He sketched a Plan of Union for the colonies; organized the Post-Office, of which he was the first postmaster-general; served on the commissions sent to induce the Canadians to join the colonies, to advise Washington on defense, and to listen to Howe's peace proposals (*Ibid.,* VI, 457 ff.; F. Wharton, *Diplomatic Correspondence of the U. S.,* 1889, II, 139; Bigelow, II, ch. XII); and on the committee to draft the Declaration of Independence (C. L. Becker, *Declaration of Independence,* 1922, ch. IV). As a member of the committee appointed Nov. 29, 1775, to correspond "with friends in Great Britain, Ireland, and other parts of the world" (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* Nov. 29, 1775), he prepared the instructions (Wharton, II, 78) for Silas Deane whom the committee sent to France in 1776, and through Barbeu Dubourg, the translator of his works, did much to facilitate Deane's reception by Vergennes. Encouraged by letters from Deane, Congress decided, Sept. 26, 1776, to send a commission of three to negotiate a treaty with France. Franklin, Deane, and Jefferson were first chosen (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* Sept. 26, 1776). Upon Jefferson's declination, Arthur Lee was appointed in his place. Franklin was then almost seventy years old: "I am but a fag end, and you may have me for what you please" (*Writings,* X, 301). His last act before leaving Philadelphia (Oct. 26) was to lend Congress some three or four thousand pounds. He arrived in France Dec. 4, 1776.

Unwilling as yet to recognize the rebellious colonies, the French government could not openly receive Franklin; but the French people gave him a welcome rarely if ever accorded to any foreigner. He was already well known in France through two previous visits in 1767 and 1769 (E. E. Hale, *Franklin in France,* 1887, I, 2–19), and through the translations of his scientific works, parts of Poor Richard, and the examination in Parliament. To the readers of Plutarch and Rousseau nothing could be more appropriate than that this backwoods sage and philosopher should now come to plead the cause of a young nation claiming its "natural right" to freedom from oppression. And Franklin had only to be

Franklin

himself to play the part allotted to him. His fur cap (very rarely worn indeed), covering unpowdered gray locks; his simple dress and unpretentious manners; his countenance, shrewd, placid, benignant; his wit and wisdom, homely indeed but somehow lifted above the provincial; the flexibility of his unwarped and emancipated intelligence, and the natural courtesy with which the sage from Arcady demeaned himself, without arrogance and without servility, in the most sophisticated society in the world—all this made Franklin more than an ambassador: it made him a symbol, the personification of all the ideas dear to the Age of Enlightment. To the French people Franklin was Socrates born again in the imagined state of nature. At Passy, where M. Ray de Chaumont placed at his disposal part of the Hôtel de Valentinois, he lived for nine years, in comparative seclusion, and yet the object of unmeasured adulation. His sayings were treasured and repeated as *bon mots.* His portrait was to be seen everywhere in shop windows and in many private houses. His image was stamped on innumerable medals, medallions, rings, watches, snuff-boxes, and bracelets. John Adams, who later replaced Silas Deane, contrived, in spite of characteristic exaggeration and a certain irascible jealousy, to describe exactly the impression which Franklin made in France. "His reputation was more universal than that of Leibnitz or Newton, Frederick or Voltaire, and his character more beloved and esteemed than any or all of them. . . . His name was familiar to government and people . . . to such a degree that there was scarcely a peasant or a citizen, a *valet de chambre,* coachman or footman, a lady's chambermaid or a scullion in a kitchen who was not familiar with it, and who did not consider him as a friend to human kind. When they spoke of him, they seemed to think he was to restore the Golden Age" (*Works of John Adams,* 1856, I, 660).

Franklin's popularity contributed much to the success of his diplomatic mission. On Dec. 28, 1776, the Commissioners, secretly received by Vergennes, presented their instructions and requested a treaty of commerce (Wharton, II, 248): and on Feb. 2, they went so far as to promise that if France became involved in war with Great Britain on account of such a treaty, the United States would not "separately conclude a peace, nor aid Great Britain against France or Spain" (*Ibid.,* 260). Vergennes was more than willing to aid in disrupting the British Empire in order to redress the European balance in favor of France; but he could not take the decisive step until the King consented, and wished not to do so without the cooperation of Spain or until it was

clear that the colonies would be content with nothing less than independence (E. S. Corwin, *French Policy and the American Alliance of 1778*, 1916, chs. I–VI). Meantime, Franklin had been in communication with British agents through unofficial messengers; and in April 1778 he negotiated directly with Hartley, a member of Parliament, who came over to Paris. These overtures came to nothing, however, because of the British refusal to grant independence to the American colonies as a condition of peace (B. Faÿ, *post*, pp. 431 ff.). Franklin's contribution to the success of Vergennes's policy was indirect, but not unimportant. His mere presence in France, intensifying popular enthusiasm for the Americans and encouraging American privateers to operate from French ports, made it increasingly difficult for the French government to avoid a rupture with Great Britain in any case; while his relations with persons in England gave life to the rumor that the colonies, failing the aid of France, would as a price of independence join Great Britain in the conquest of the French and Spanish West Indies, a rumor which Vergennes, without crediting, made use of to persuade the King (Corwin, ch. VI). In the actual negotiations for an alliance (Dec. 1777–Feb. 1778), which the King authorized after the Battle of Saratoga, Franklin seems to have desired the French government to guarantee the conquest of the Mississippi Valley (where he was personally interested in certain land grants) as a condition of peace, a point which Vergennes, not wishing to alienate Spain, was unwilling to concede (Corwin, 153, referring to B. F. Stevens's *Facsimiles of Manuscripts in European Archives*, vol. XXI, no. 1831). The final treaties (a treaty of commerce, and a treaty of "defensive alliance . . . to maintain effectively the . . . independence absolute and unlimited of the United States") were signed Feb. 6, 1778.

Meantime the relations between the commissioners were anything but cordial. Arthur Lee, an incurably vain, suspicious, and wrong-headed person, charged Beaumarchais and Deane, and by implication Franklin, with incompetence and venality, especially in connection with the supplies furnished the colonies through the dummy company of Beaumarchais, Hortalez et cie (R. H. Lee, *Life of Arthur Lee*, II, 27, 50, 52, 125; Fisher, *True Benjamin Franklin*, pp. 279 ff.). The arrangements between Beaumarchais and Vergennes (L. L. de Loménie, *Beaumarchais and His Times*, 1856, III, 124-30) were made before Franklin arrived in France, and Deane was the American agent in whom Beaumarchais confided. Franklin, leaving the business to Deane whom he trusted, seems not to have informed himself of the exact nature of the understanding (Hale, I, 52–55). The most that can rightly be charged against Franklin is that he appointed as his secretary his grandson, Temple Franklin, an incompetent boy; that his accounts were accordingly in confusion; and that he appointed as naval agent at Nantes his nephew, Jonathan Williams, who proved incompetent if not venal (Fisher, pp. 293 ff.). Franklin made it a rule never to engage in personal controversies; he had learned early in life that "spots of dirt" thrown on one's character were best left alone since "they would all rub off when they were dry." He suffered Lee's "magisterial snubbings and rebukes" with a serene patience that rarely failed (see, however, *Writings*, VII, 129–38); but he had more important tasks than the hopeless one of setting Arthur Lee right. Being the only American with whom Vergennes cared to deal, the chief burden of the negotiations with the French government fell to him. He also served virtually as consul, judge of admiralty, and director of naval affairs. He negotiated for the exchange of prisoners in England (Hale, I, chs. XI, XVIII). He was burdened with innumerable applications, from Americans desiring recommendation in France, from Frenchmen desiring recommendation in America (*Writings*, VII, 30, 36, 38, 43, 58, 77, 80). In addition he found time to publish articles designed to strengthen American credit abroad (*Ibid.*, I, 82, 86). In April 1778, John Adams, replacing Deane, came to Paris, offended de Chaumont by offering to pay rent for Franklin's house at Passy (Bigelow, II, 429–30), helped Franklin to straighten out his account (*Ibid.*, 447), was made "sick to death" by the Lee-Deane controversy, and recommended that the commission be replaced by a single agent. Lee was of the same opinion, suggesting himself as the proper person (R. H. Lee, *Life of Arthur Lee*, II, 127). On Sept. 14, 1778, Congress appointed Franklin sole plenipotentiary (*Journals of the Continental Congress*, Sept. 14, 1778). With his status made definite his life became pleasanter. He found some time to write on scientific subjects (*Writings*, VII, 209; VIII, 9, 115, 189, 244, 246, 285, 309); to carry on a gay and frivolous correspondence with Madame Helvetius and Madame Brillon; and to amuse himself and his friends with satires and bagatelles printed on his excellent Passy press (*Ibid.*, X, ch. XI; Bigelow, II, ch. XVII; J. C. Oswald, *Benjamin Franklin, Printer*, 1917, chs. XIV–XV; L. S. Livingston, *Franklin and his Press at Passy*, 1914). But if his life was pleasanter, his responsibilities were

if anything heavier. For three years his chief service was to obtain money; his chief task to persuade Vergennes to overlook irregular methods and to honor debts for which the French government was in no way obligated. Aside from negotiating loans, Franklin was expected to meet the innumerable bills of exchange which were drawn on him, by Congress, by John Adams in Holland, by John Jay in Spain, by ship captains fitting out in any port that was handiest, even by his villifiers, Arthur Lee and Ralph Izard (*Writings,* VII, 382, 405; VIII, 14, 59, 139, 142, 174, 200, 208, 211, 217; X, 337 ff., 374 ff.; Hale, I, ch. XXI; W. C. Bruce, *Benjamin Franklin,* 1917, II, 281 ff.). On Mar. 12, 1781, on the ground that excessive duties were impairing his health, Franklin tendered his resignation to Congress (*Writings,* VIII, 221). He was well aware that the friends of Lee, Izard, and Adams were about to move for his recall (*Ibid.,* VIII, 236, 250; X, 342), and his resignation was probably no more than a shrewd political move designed to defeat the motion. At all events, when Congress voted to continue him, he slyly remarked: "I must . . . buckle again to Business, and thank God my Health & Spirits are of late improved . . . I call this Continuance an Honour . . . greater than my first Appointment, when I consider that all the Interest of my Enemies, united with my own Request, were not sufficient to prevent it" (*Ibid.,* VIII, 294).

On June 8, 1781, Franklin was named one of the commissioners to negotiate peace with Great Britain (*Journals of the Continental Congress,* June 8, 1781). While awaiting the arrival of Jay and Adams he assumed responsibility for the preliminary conversations, of which he wrote a detailed account (*Writings,* VIII, 459 ff.; Wharton, V, 535 ff.). Resisting every suggestion that the colonies should make a separate peace, and keeping Vergennes informed of every step, he proposed as a basis of negotiation: (1) independence; (2) the cession of the Mississippi Valley; (3) fishing rights "on the banks of Newfoundland, and elsewhere." He objected to the British claim for the recovery of debts (later he conceded that just debts should be paid). He took the ground that Congress could not compensate the Loyalists, since the confiscation acts were state laws; but he suggested that Britain might contribute much to *real* conciliation by voluntarily ceding Canada, in which case the Loyalists might possibly be compensated by grants of wild lands in that country (E. Channing, *History of the United States,* 1912, III, 352 ff.). Uncertain of the outcome of the naval war, the British government was apparently

Franklin

ready early in June to make peace on Franklin's terms (Wharton, V, 572; *Writings,* VII, 572). But at this point two circumstances contributed to give a new direction to the negotiations. Jay, arriving June 23, and suspecting the sincerity of the British, delayed matters by insisting that the British commissioners be authorized to treat with the United States as an independent state. Meantime British naval successes, culminating in the relief of Gibraltar, Oct. 10, strengthened the hands of the British commissioners, who now renewed the demand for compensation to the Loyalists, and objected to the American claim (injected into the negotiations by Adams) of a right to dry fish on British coasts. When the conference reached an impasse on these points, Franklin came forward with a proposal which seems to have turned the scale in favor of the Americans. On Nov. 29, according to Adams, Franklin "produced a paper from his pocket, in which he had drawn up a claim, and he said the first principle of the treaty was equality and reciprocity. Now, they demanded of us payment of debts, and . . . compensation to the refugees. . . . Then he stated the carrying off of goods from Boston, Philadelphia, and the Carolinas, . . . and the burning of towns, etc., and demanded that this might be sent with the rest." After further discussion of Franklin's counter demand for compensation, the British commissioners accepted the American "ultimatum respecting the fishery and the loyalists" (Wharton, VI, 87); and on the following day the preliminaries were signed (*Ibid.,* 96).

In negotiating and signing the preliminaries without keeping the French government informed, the commissioners violated not only the instructions of Congress, but Franklin's earlier agreement with Vergennes. The responsibility for this step rests with Jay and Adams, who were convinced: (1) that Franklin was too subservient to French influence; and especially, (2) that France and Spain were secretly working to restrict the boundaries of the United States to the Alleghanies (for the views of Adams and Jay, see Wharton, V, 703, 740, 750, 864; VI, 11–51). The latter was true of Spain; true of France only so far as Vergennes was bound to consider the interest of Spain (Corwin, pp. 331 ff.). Franklin's "subserviency" was only a superior diplomacy; but he yielded to his colleagues in order to maintain harmony. When Adams, shortly after his arrival (Oct. 26), gave Franklin his and Jay's reasons for ignoring Vergennes, "the Doctor," Adams reports, "heard me patiently, but said nothing; but at the next conference with Oswald, he turned to Jay and said: 'I am of your

opinion, and will go on with these gentlemen in the business without consulting this court.' He accordingly met with us in most of our conferences, and has gone with us in entire harmony and unanimity throughout" (Wharton, VI, 91). Upon receiving the preliminaries, Vergennes wrote Franklin a sharp formal protest (*Ibid.*, 140). It is possible that Vergennes, hampered by his obligations to Spain, was really pleased with the outcome, and that his protest was merely formal, and so understood by Franklin. It is difficult to suppose that Vergennes was unaware of the separate negotiations. Earlier he had himself said that each country "will make its own Treaty. All that is necessary . . . is, that the Treaties go hand in hand, and are sign'd all on the same day" (*Writings*, VIII, 512). Although the negotiations had not gone "hand in hand," it was stipulated in the preliminaries that the final treaty "is not to be concluded until terms of peace shall be agreed upon between Great Britain and France" (Wharton, VI, 96). There was therefore some basis for Franklin's reply to Vergennes's protest, in which he admitted that the commissioners had been "guilty of neglecting a point of *bienséance*," but contended that in substance there had been no breach of agreement since "no peace is to take place between us and England till you have concluded yours" (*Ibid.*, 144). He added: *"The English, I just now learn, flatter themselves they have already divided us."* Few diplomats, taking Vergennes's protest at its face value, would have ventured to unite with this bland apology a request for twenty million livres, or have contrived so to word it as to have obtained from the irritated minister a grant of six millons. The final peace was signed Sept. 3, 1783. The story that for this occasion (or for the signing of the treaty with France in 1778) Franklin donned the suit of Manchester velvet last worn when Wedderburn denounced him in The Cockpit (*Writings*, X, 271; Bigelow, II, 204) seems to be without adequate evidence to support it (J. B. Moore, *Digest of International Law*, 1906, V, 659–61).

On Dec. 26, 1783, Franklin reminded Congress of its promise to recall him after the peace was made (*Writings*, IX, 141). Not until May 2, 1785, did he receive notice of the desired release. He left Passy, July 12, in one of "the King's Litters, carried by mules" (*Ibid.*, 363), to embark from Havre de Grace. He arrived in Philadelphia Sept. 14, having profitably employed his time on the long voyage in making "Maritime Observations" and writing a detailed account of "The Causes and Cure of Smoky Chimneys" (*Ibid.*, IX, 372–462). He was shortly chosen

Franklin

president of the executive council of Pennsylvania. After serving in this capacity for three years, he was chosen a member of the Constitutional Convention which met in May 1787. Although suffering from the stone he attended the sessions regularly for over four months. Like Jefferson, this master of discussion was no speech-maker; and his few formal discourses were written out and read. The text of the last speech as printed by Smyth, p. 607, is incomplete and incorrect (see the text in Elliot's *Debates*, 1845, V, 554, which follows more nearly the Franklin autograph original in the Cornell University Library). None of his cardinal ideas was adopted. He favored a single chamber, an executive board, and opposed the payment of salaries to executive officials. Yet Franklin contributed not a little to the final result. His immense prestige, and the persuasive effect of his kindly personality and genial humor, were of great value in calming passions and compromising disputes. When the convention was at a dead-lock over the question of representation, Franklin said: "If a property representation takes place, the small states contend that their liberties will be in danger. If an equality of votes is to be put in its place, the large states say their money will be in danger. When a broad table is to be made, and the edges of the planks do not fit, the artist takes a little from both, and makes a good joint" (Elliot's *Debates*, V, 266). Franklin's first proposal for a compromise was not adopted; but he was a member of the committee appointed to adjust the matter, and largely responsible for the compromise actually incorporated in the Constitution (*Ibid.*, 273–74, 487). Although the Constitution was not to his liking, he urged in his inimitable manner that it be unanimously adopted. "I confess that there are several parts of this Constitution which I do not at present approve, but I am not sure I shall never approve them. . . . The older I grow, the more apt I am to doubt my own judgment. . . . Though many . . . persons think . . . highly of their own infallibility . . . few express it so naturally as a certain French lady, who . . . said: 'I don't know how it happens, sister, but I meet with nobody but myself who is always in the right'—*il n'y a que moi qui a toujours raison.* . . . On the whole, sir, I cannot help expressing a wish that every member of the Convention . . . would with me, on this occasion, doubt a little of his own infallibility, and, to make manifest our unanimity, put his name to the instrument" (*Ibid.*, 554–55).

During the last five years of his life Franklin lived in a commodious house near Market Street with his daughter (his wife died in 1774) and

his grandchildren. He invented a device for lifting books from high shelves (*Writings*, IX, 483), wrote to his numerous friends at home and abroad, entertained his neighbors and the many strangers come to do him homage, enjoying to the last that ceaseless flow of "agreeable and instructive conversation" of which he was the master and the devotee (see Cutler's description, *Ibid.*, X, 478). His last public act was to sign a memorial to Congress for the abolition of slavery. He died Apr. 17, 1790, at the age of eighty-four years. At his funeral twenty thousand people assembled to do him honor. He was buried in Christ Church Burial Ground under a stone bearing a simple inscription of his own devising: *Benjamin and Deborah Franklin* (*Ibid.*, 489, 508).

Great men are often hampered by some inner discord or want of harmony with the world in which they live. It was Franklin's good fortune to have been endowed with a rare combination of rare qualities, and to have lived at a time when circumstances favored the development of all his powers to their fullest extent. He was a true child of the Enlightenment, not indeed of the school of Rousseau, but of Defoe and Pope and Swift, of Fontenelle and Montesquieu and Voltaire. He spoke their language, although with a homely accent, a tang of the soil, that bears witness to his lowly and provincial origin. His wit and humor, lacking indeed the cool, quivering brilliance of Voltaire or the corrosive bitterness of Pope and Swift, were all the more effective and humane for their dash of genial and kindly cynicism. He accepted without question and expressed without effort all the characteristic ideas and prepossessions of the century—its aversion to "superstition" and "enthusiasms" and mystery; its contempt for hocus-pocus and its dislike of dim perspectives; its healthy, clarifying scepticism; its passion for freedom and its humane sympathies; its preoccupation with the world that is evident to the senses; its profound faith in common sense, in the efficacy of Reason for the solution of human problems and the advancement of human welfare.

For impressing his age with the validity of these ideas, both by precept and example, Franklin's native qualities were admirably suited. His mind, essentially pragmatic and realistic, by preference occupied itself with what was before it, with the present rather than with the past or the future, with the best of possible rather than with the best of conceivable worlds. He accepted men and things, including himself, as they were, with a grain of salt indeed but with insatiable curiosity, with irrepressible zest and good humor. He

Franklin

took life as it came, with the full-blooded heartiness of a man unacquainted with inhibitions and repressions and spiritual *malaise*, as a game to be played, with honesty and sincerity, but with shrewdness and an eye to the main chance, above all without pontifical solemnity, without self-pity, eschewing vain regrets for lost illusions and vain striving for the light that never was. Both his achievements and his limitations spring from this: that he accepted the world as given with imperturbable serenity; without repining identified himself with it; and brought to the understanding and the mastery of it rare common sense, genuine disinterestedness, a fertile and imaginative curiosity, and a cool, flexible intelligence fortified by exact knowledge and chastened and humanized by practical activities.

Not only was Franklin by temperament disposed to take life as it came and to make the most of it; in addition fate provided him with a rich diversity of experience such as has rarely fallen to the lot of any man. Rising from poverty to affluence, from obscurity to fame, he lived on every social level in turn, was equally at ease with rich and poor, the cultivated and the untutored, and spoke with equal facility the language of vagabonds and kings, politicians and philosophers, men of letters, kitchen girls, and *femmes savantes*. Reared in Boston, a citizen of Philadelphia, residing for sixteen years in London and for nine in Paris, he was equally at home in three countries, knew Europe better than any other American, America better than any European, England better than most Frenchmen, France better than most Englishmen, and was acquainted personally or through correspondence with more men of eminence in letters, science, and politics than any other man of his time. Such a variety of experience would have confused and disoriented any man less happily endowed with a capacity for assimilating it. Franklin took it all easily, relishing it, savoring it, without rest and without haste adding to his knowledge, fortifying and tempering his intelligence, broadening his point of view, humanizing and mellowing his tolerant acceptance of men and things—in short chastening and perfecting the qualities that were natively his; so that in the end he emerges the most universal and cosmopolitan spirit of his age. Far more a "good European," a citizen of the world, than Adams or Jefferson, Washington or Hutchinson, he remained to the end more pungently American than any of them. Jefferson said that Franklin was the one exception to the rule that seven years of diplomatic service abroad spoiled an American. Twenty-five years of almost continuous residence abroad did not spoil

Franklin. Acclaimed and decorated as no American had ever been, he returned to Philadelphia and was immediately at home again, easily recognizable by his neighbors as the man they had always known—Ben Franklin, printer.

The secret of Franklin's amazing capacity for assimilating experience without being warped or discolored by it is perhaps to be found in his disposition to take life with infinite zest and yet with humorous detachment. Always immersed in affairs, he seems never completely absorbed by them; mastering easily whatever comes his way, there remain powers in reserve never wholly engaged. It is significant that his activities, with the exception of his researches in science, seem to have been the result, not of any compelling inner impulse or settled purpose, but rather of the pressure of external need or circumstance. He was a business man, and a good one; but having won a competence he retired. He was an inventor and a philanthropist, but not by profession; perceiving the need, he invented a stove or founded a hospital. He was a politician and a diplomat, and none more skilled; but not from choice; for the most part he accepted as a duty the offices that were thrust upon him. He was a writer, a prolific one; yet his writings were nearly all occasional, prompted by the need of the moment. His one book, the *Autobiography,* was begun as something that might be useful to his son; that purpose served, it was never finished. He was a literary artist of rare merit, the master of a style which for clarity, precision, and pliable adhesion to the form and pressure of the idea to be conveyed has rarely been equaled. Yet once having learned the trade he was little preoccupied with the art of writing, content to throw off in passing an acute pragmatic definition: Good writing "ought to have a tendency to benefit the reader. . . . But taking the question otherwise, an ill man may write an ill thing well. . . . In this sense, that is well wrote, which is best adapted for obtaining the end of the writer" (*Writings,* I, 37). It has been said that Franklin was not entrusted with the task of writing the Declaration of Independence for fear he might conceal a joke in the middle of it. The myth holds a profound symbolic truth. In all of Franklin's dealings with men and affairs, genuine, sincere, loyal as he surely was, one feels that he is nevertheless not wholly committed; some thought remains uncommunicated; some penetrating observation is held in reserve. In spite of his ready attention to the business in hand, there is something casual about his efficient dispatch of it; he manages somehow to remain aloof, a spectator still, with amiable curiosity watching himself functioning

Franklin

effectively in the world. After all men were but children needing to be cajoled; affairs a game not to be played without finesse. Was there not then, on that placid countenance, even at the signing of the great Declaration, the bland smile which seems to say: This is an interesting, alas even a necessary, game; and we are playing it well, according to all the rules; but men being what they are it is perhaps best not to inquire too curiously what its ultimate significance may be.

One exception there was—science: one activity which Franklin pursued without outward prompting, from some compelling inner impulse; one activity from which he never wished to retire, to which he would willingly have devoted his life, to which he always gladly turned in every odd day or hour of leisure, even in the midst of the exacting duties and heavy responsibilities of his public career. Science was after all the one mistress to whom he gave himself without reserve and served neither from a sense of duty nor for any practical purpose. Nature alone met him on equal terms, with a disinterestedness matching his own; needing not to be cajoled or managed with finesse, she enlisted in the solution of her problems the full power of his mind. In dealing with nature he could be, as he could not be in dealing with men and affairs, entirely sincere, pacific, objective, rational, could speak his whole thought without reservation, with no suggestion of a stupendous cosmic joke concealed in the premises. Franklin was indeed "many sided." From the varied facets of his powerful mind he threw a brilliant light on all aspects of human life; it is only in his character of natural philosopher that he emits a light quite unclouded. It is in this character therefore that the essential quality of the man appears to best advantage. Sir Humphry Davy has happily noted it for us. "The experiments adduced by Dr. Franklin . . . were most ingeniously contrived and happily executed. A singular felicity of induction guided all his researches, and by very small means he established very grand truths. The style and manner of his publication [on electricity] are almost as worthy of admiration as the doctrine it contains. He has endeavoured to remove all mystery and obscurity from the subject; he has written equally for the uninitiated and for the philosopher; and he has rendered his details amusing as well as perspicuous, elegant as well as simple. Science appears in his language in a dress wonderfully decorous, the best adapted to display her native loveliness. He has in no case exhibited that false dignity, by which philosophy is kept aloof from common applications, and he has sought rather to make her a useful

inmate and servant in the common habitations of man, than to preserve her merely as an object of admiration in temples and palaces" (*Collected Works of Sir Humphry Davy*, 1840, VIII, 264–65).

[The Franklin Manuscripts are chiefly in four depositories: the Library of the American Philosophical Society at Philadelphia (76 vols., 13,000 documents in nine languages; see I. M. Hays, *Calendar of the Papers of Benjamin Franklin in the Lib. of the Am. Phil. Soc.*, 1908); the Library of Congress (Stevens Collection, 14 vols., nearly 3,000 documents; see W. C. Ford, *List of the Benjamin Franklin Papers in the Lib. of Cong.*, 1905); the Library of the University of Pennsylvania (800 documents; see "Calendar of the Papers of Benjamin Franklin in the Library of the University of Pennsylvania," published as an appendix of the work of I. M. Hays cited above); the Library of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania (660 documents). The original MS. of the *Autobiography* is in the Huntington Library at San Marino, Cal. For an account of the Franklin MSS., see A. H. Smyth, *Writings of Benjamin Franklin*, I, 1–12, and Bernard Faÿ, *post*.

Of the many collected editions of Franklin's works the chief are: *Memoirs of the Life and Writings of Benjamin Franklin* . . . (6 vols., 1818), by his grandson, Temple Franklin; *The Works of Benjamin Franklin* (10 vols., 1836–40), by Jared Sparks, who "corrected" the text where he thought Franklin guilty of bad taste or vulgarity; *The Complete Works of Benjamin Franklin* (10 vols., 1887–88), by John Bigelow; *The Writings of Benjamin Franklin, Collected and edited with a Life and Introduction* (10 vols., 1905–07), by Albert Henry Smyth. The last-named edition has been used for the present article. The famous *Autobiography* has been issued in innumerable editions and under various titles. For the curious history of the manuscript and the various editions, see P. L. Ford, *Franklin Bibliography*, pp. 179 ff. The best edition is *The Life of Benjamin Franklin Written by Himself* (3 vols., 1874), ed. by John Bigelow, who supplemented the *Autobiography* (which recounted Franklin's life only to 1757) by a judicious selection from his correspondence.

The chief secondary works are: Jas. Parton, *Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin* (2 vols., 1864), anecdotal, interesting, not too critical; J. B. McMaster, *Benjamin Franklin as a Man of Letters* (1887); Edward E. Hale and Edward E. Hale, Jr., *Franklin in France* . . . (2 vols., 1887–88), chiefly valuable for documents printed; J. T. Morse, *Benjamin Franklin* (1889); A. W. Wetzel, "Benjamin Franklin as an Economist," in *Johns Hopkins University Studies*, vol. XIII (1895); Sidney George Fisher, *The True Benjamin Franklin* (1899); Paul Leicester Ford, *The Many Sided Franklin* (1899); Luther S. Livingston, *Franklin and his Press at Passy* (1914); J. C. Oswald, *Benjamin Franklin, Printer* (1917); William Cabell Bruce, *Benjamin Franklin Self-Revealed* (2 vols., 1917); J. M. Stifler, *The Religion of Benjamin Franklin* (1925); Malcom R. Eiselen, *Franklin's Political Theories* (1928); Bernard Faÿ, *Franklin, the Apostle of Modern Times* (1929); J. Henry Smythe, Jr., *The Amazing Benjamin Franklin* (1929). For Franklin bibliography before 1889, see P. L. Ford, *Franklin Bibliography: A List of Books Written by, or Relating to Benjamin Franklin* (1889).] C. L. B.

**FRANKLIN, BENJAMIN** (Feb. 1, 1812–Oct. 22, 1878), minister of the Disciples of Christ, editor of religious periodicals, was the son of Joseph and Isabella (Devold) Franklin, and a descendant of John Franklin, brother of Benjamin Franklin [*q.v.*]. He was born in what is now Belmont County, Ohio, but his parents soon moved to a part of Morgan County which later became Noble County, and settled on a stream known as Salt Run. Joseph Franklin was a farmer, miller, and cabinetmaker, and as Benjamin grew up he became more or less proficient in all these occupations. In 1832 he went with his uncle, Calvin Franklin, to Henry County, Ind., then practically a wilderness. There he built himself a house, and on Dec. 15, 1833, married Mary Personnett. He supported himself chiefly as a carpenter, but from 1837 to 1840 with his uncle he ran a grist-mill. In the meantime he had been converted under the ministry of Samuel Rogers, one of the pioneer Disciples of that section, and had immediately engaged in evangelistic work. After 1840 as preacher, controversialist, and editor he devoted himself wholly to the interests of religion, becoming one of the most prominent Disciples of the West.

Although he was pastor of a number of churches, he was preëminently an evangelist. He made journeys into Eastern and Western states, and into Canada. More than seven thousand persons, it is estimated, were converted under his preaching. The meagerness of his schooling was something of a handicap, but he knew the Bible thoroughly, understood human nature, and acquired a good practical knowledge of subjects connected with his work. One of the people himself, he spoke and wrote in their language, and had great popularity among them. He became widely known also as a public debater, some of his disputations being published: among them, *An Oral Debate on the Coming of the Son of Man, Endless Punishment, and Universal Salvation* (1848), carried on in Milton, Ind., Oct. 26, 27, 28, 1847, with Erasmus Manford; *Predestination and the Foreknowledge of God, A Discussion Held in Carlyle, Ky.* (1852), with Rev. James Matthews; and *Debate on Some of the Distinctive Differences Between the Reformers and Baptists* (1858), with Elder T. J. Fisher.

It was as an editor and publisher, however, that he exerted his widest influence. In January 1845 he began issuing the *Reformer*, afterward called the *Western Reformer*, published first in Centerville, Ind., and later at Milton, a sixteen-page monthly. Alexander Hall's paper, the *Gospel Proclamation*, Loydsville, Ohio, was consolidated with it in 1850, and it became the *Proclamation and Reformer*. Soon Franklin moved the paper to Hygeia, Ohio, and in partnership with Elder D. S. Burnet edited it and also the *Christian Age*, a weekly. Financial difficulties finally led to the discontinuance of the former, and the *Christian Age* was sold; but in 1856 Franklin started the *American Christian Review*, published in Cincinnati, which he edited until his

death. It was long one of the most influential religious periodicals among the Disciples in that part of the country. Although earlier he seems to have been sympathetic toward the formation of the American Christian Missionary Society and other attempts at organized cooperation, he now set himself against everything deemed progressive, and was the leader of the "old fogies" in their conflict with the radicals. His supporters christened his paper "Old Reliable," and his opponents dubbed him "Editorial Pope." He was much broken in health during the last ten years of his life, but persisted in carrying on the warfare. He also published two volumes of his sermons, *The Gospel Preacher* (vol. I, 1869; vol. II, 1877). One of his tracts, *Christian Experience; or, Sincerity Seeking the Way to Heaven,* was popular for more than a quarter of a century; and in the year after his death, selections from his writings, *A Book of Gems,* was issued. He is buried in Anderson, Ind., where after 1864 he made his home.

[Jos. Franklin and J. A. Headington, *The Life and Times of Benj. Franklin* (1879); Wm. T. Moore, *The Living Pulpit of the Christian Ch.* (1869) and *A Comprehensive Hist. of the Disciples of Christ* (1909); John T. Brown, *Churches of Christ* (1904); Alanson Wilcox, *A Hist. of the Disciples of Christ in Ohio* (1918); obituary in *Indianapolis Jour.*, Oct. 24, 1878.] H.E.S.

**FRANKLIN, JAMES** (Feb. 4, 1696/7–February 1735), printer, was born in Boston, the son of Josiah and Abiah (Folger) Franklin. After learning the printer's trade in England he returned home in March 1717, bringing with him a press, type, and other supplies. Among the sundries, it transpired later, were some brisk new ideas about journalism. At first business was slow, but in December 1719 he was employed by William Brooker to print the *Boston Gazette.* After issuing forty numbers Brooker disposed of the *Gazette* to the new postmaster, Philip Musgrave, who took the printing from Franklin and gave it to Samuel Kneeland. Piqued and out of pocket, Franklin took a risky revenge by launching a third paper in a community that gave but scant support to two. On Monday, Aug. 7, 1721, the *New England Courant* made its first appearance and soon set all Boston by the ears. Increase Mather, after reading a few numbers, publicly stopped his subscription, but Franklin twitted him on sending his grandson in private to buy the paper at the higher price charged for single copies. Cotton Mather was appalled: "A wickedness never parallel'd any where upon the Face of the Earth!" he ejaculated in his diary ("Diary of Cotton Mather, 1707–24," *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society,* 7 ser. VIII, 1912, 663). What particularly enraged the Mathers were the jeers of the paper at the experiments in inoculating for the smallpox. Actually the *Courant* was a novelty in that it was literary in tone and inclined to be disrespectful of official dignity, whether civil or ecclesiastical. Having only restricted access to what little news there was, Franklin made his paper a homespun, Yankee imitation of Addison and Steele's *Spectator,* gathered about him a group of young wits, including William Douglass [*q.v.*], as contributors, and gave Boston the liveliest secular reading it had yet perused. Of the contributors the most brilliant was James's brother Benjamin, who has given his account of the enterprise in the *Autobiography.* James himself wrote some prose and doggerel verse for the *Courant.* For a while the paper enjoyed a precarious immunity from interference because of the wrangle for control of the press between Gov. Shute and the Assembly. Trouble was finally precipitated by an oblique reference to official dawdling about the pirates on the coast; James served a month in jail for his contumely in the issue of June 11, 1722. During his brother's absence Benjamin carried on the paper with superior impudence. For rude remarks about church members on Jan. 14, 1723, James was forbidden by the court "to print or publish the *New England Courant,* or any other pamphlet or paper of the like nature except it be first supervised by the Secretary of the Province." Thereafter the *Courant* appeared in Benjamin's name, even though on Sept. 30, 1723, James had to advertise for a "likely lad for an Apprentice" —the best apprentice in the New World having recently absconded. Sometime in 1726 Franklin abandoned his paper and removed to the more congenial climate of Rhode Island. Settling at Newport, he brought with him the first press to be used in that colony, printed a pamphlet there in 1727, an edition of Berkeley's *Alciphron* in 1730, and as public printer, part of an edition of the laws of Rhode Island in 1731. He also printed linens, calicoes, and silks, and in September 1732 started the *Rhode Island Gazette.* His widow, daughters, and son James carried on the business after his death.

[I. Thomas, *Hist. of Printing in America* (1810); *New-Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Reg.*, Jan. 1857, July 1862; C. A. Duniway, *The Development of Freedom of the Press in Mass.* (1906); E. C. Cook, *Literary Influences in Colonial Newspapers 1704–50* (1912); S. G. Arnold, *Hist. of the State of R. I.*, vol. II (1860); W. C. Ford in *Proc. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, LVII (1924), 336–53; W. G. Bleyer, *Main Currents in the Hist. of Am. Journalism* (1927). Files of the *New England Courant* (neither complete) are in the Mass. Hist. Soc. Library and in the Burney Collection of early British newspapers in the British Museum. The Mass. Hist. Soc. has photostat copies of the British Museum numbers that supplement its file.] G.H.G.

Franklin

**FRANKLIN, JESSE** (Mar. 24, 1760–Aug. 31, 1823), senator, was born in Orange County, Va., the third son of Bernard and Mary (Cleveland) Franklin. He received scarcely the rudiments of an education, leaving school before he reached the age of twelve, but this deficiency was later to some extent made up by extensive reading. At seventeen he was a Revolutionary soldier, and according to family tradition a lieutenant, but, after the habit of many Revolutionary warriors, he soon returned home. Before 1776 his father had determined to move to North Carolina, and he now sent the youth to spy out the land. After an extended search young Franklin chose a fertile spot in Surry County to which the family presently repaired. The region swarmed with Loyalists, and in a short time Franklin was captain and adjutant in a patriot regiment commanded by Benjamin Cleveland [*q.v.*], his maternal uncle. He distinguished himself at the battle of King's Mountain, and received the sword of Capt. Ryerson who took command of the British when Ferguson fell. Afterwards he continued in service in the partisan warfare of the period, and was intensely hated and feared by the Loyalists who finally captured and hanged him with his own bridle, only to have it break and allow him to escape. He was a volunteer at Guilford Court-House where he again displayed dashing courage. The close of the war found him a major of militia.

The war ended, Franklin moved to Wilkes County and a few years later married Meeky Perkins, the daughter of Hardy Perkins of Rockbridge County, Va., a woman of great beauty, ability, and strong character. In 1784 he was elected to the House of Commons, and by annual election he served until 1787 and again from 1789 to 1791. In 1792 he returned to Surry and represented that county in 1793 and 1794. In the latter year he was elected to Congress and served one term. In the House he was an ally of his colleague, Nathaniel Macon, whose views, particularly in relation to economy in government, coincided with his own. At the close of his term he was elected to the Commons for two successive years, and in 1798 was elected to the United States Senate, serving from 1799 to 1805. During the impeachment trial of Judge Pickering, he was chosen president *pro tempore*, his friend Macon being at the same time speaker of the House. Franklin voted for the conviction of Pickering and also for the conviction of Justice Samuel Chase. As chairman of a special committee he reported adversely to the suspension of the Ordinance of 1787 in order to secure the admission of Cuban refugees with their slaves. He spoke seldom in the Senate, but was active and valuable in committee work, and won nationally the reputation he had at home for hard practical sense, straightforward simplicity, and fine integrity. Defeated for reëlection, his county at once sent him to the state Senate for two terms. In 1806 he was again elected to the United States Senate and served from 1807 to 1813. During this second term he was again prominent in committee work. As chairman of the committee to investigate the connection of Senator Smith of Ohio with the Burr conspiracy, he recommended his expulsion and ably managed the trial which resulted in acquittal followed by Smith's resignation. He was an eager advocate of the War of 1812, but just as it began he was defeated and retired to private life. In 1816 he was appointed by President Madison a commissioner with David Meriwether and Andrew Jackson to treat with the Chickasaws and Cherokees, and in September, at the Chickasaw Council House, he signed treaties with both tribes. He was appointed a commissioner to sell lands acquired from the Cherokees, and was also a member of a commission to determine the boundary line with Georgia. In December 1820 he was elected governor, but declined reëlection the following year on account of bad health. He died of dropsy at his home after an illness of nine months.

[J. T. Alderman, "Jesse Franklin," in *N. C. Booklet*, Jan. 1907; S. A. Ashe, ed., *Biog. Hist. of N. C.*, IV (1906), 133; L. C. Draper, *King's Mountain and its Heroes* (1881); E. W. Caruthers, *Interesting Revolutionary Incidents . . . Chiefly in the "Old North State,"* 2 ser. (1856); North Carolina legislative journals; J. S. Bassett, ed., *Correspondence of Andrew Jackson*, II (1927), 236, *passim*.] J.G.deR.H.

**FRANKLIN, WILLIAM** (1731–Nov. 16, 1813), last royal governor of New Jersey, was the son of Benjamin Franklin [*q.v.*], and was reared in the household of his father, whose common-law wife, Deborah Read, is alleged to have been William's mother. As a child William showed a fondness for books which was encouraged by his father. Later he felt the urge for military adventure in King George's War and tried to ship on a privateer fitting out at Philadelphia. In this he was balked, but a commission was secured for him in the forces of Pennsylvania. Though still a minor he saw active service against the French on the New York frontier, and acquitting himself well, rose to be a captain. He then returned to Philadelphia and became the close companion of his father, who at this time (1750) wrote of him to his grandmother: "Will is now nineteen years of age, a tall proper Youth, and much of a Beau. He acquired a Habit of Idleness—but begins of late to

apply himself to Business, and I hope will become an industrious Man" (Smyth, *post*, III, 4). Under his father the young man became comptroller of the General Post Office (1754–56) and also clerk of the Pennsylvania Provincial Assembly, but in 1757 when Benjamin Franklin went to England as agent for Pennsylvania and New Jersey, William accompanied him. In London he entered the Middle Temple and in due time was called to the bar. On several trips to the Continent he enjoyed the great privilege of being his father's companion and also aided him in scientific investigations. When in 1762 Oxford conferred the degree of D.C.L. upon Benjamin Franklin, William Franklin was honored by that of M.A. It is evident that the handsome and promising young American fitted easily into British society. Becoming acquainted with the Earl of Bute, William Franklin was named through his influence governor of New Jersey in 1763. It is said that the appointment was given without the solicitation of either himself or his father. Probably it was made with a view to attaching Benjamin Franklin more closely to the British interest. The advancement of William Franklin was bemoaned by John Penn (W. A. Duer, "The Life of William Alexander, Earl of Stirling," in the *Collections of the New Jersey Historical Society*, II, 1847, 70) but nevertheless well received in New Jersey. At first Franklin proved tactful and generally successful. He avoided quarrels with the Assembly and showed interest in such practical reforms as the improvement of roads and agriculture and the mitigation of imprisonment for debt. With the outbreak of the controversies leading to the Revolution, however, he found himself in a hard position. Although he realized in some degree the force of the American demands, he did not have the rugged democratic instincts of his father, and accordingly, in strict conformity with his instructions, upheld the principle of authority. The naming by an extra-legal convention at Perth Amboy of delegates to the Stamp Act Congress in October 1765 began the conflict, and from that time on Franklin was in constant controversy with the growing patriot party in New Jersey. His course led eventually to complete estrangement from his father whose arguments were wasted upon him and who characterized his son as "a thorough government man" (Smyth, *post*, VI, 144). Even after the outbreak of hostilities Franklin remained in New Jersey collecting and transmitting to England all the information he could secure regarding the situation. Still endeavoring to exercise his commission he was on June 15, 1776, declared by the Provincial Congress of

Franklin

New Jersey "an enemy to the liberties of this country," and his arrest was ordered. Eventually he was sent to Connecticut where he was quartered at East Windsor at the house of Capt. Ebenezer Grant. After rather severe treatment he was exchanged in 1778 and acted for a time as president of the Board of Associated Loyalists at New York, but he soon returned to England. In 1784 a partial reconciliation took place by letter between himself and his father (Smyth, *post*, IX, 252). For the loss of his estate the commissioners of Loyalist claims in England allowed him £1,800, a figure which shows that he was not rich. For the rest of his life he received a pension of £800 per annum. In person he was tall and handsome, and of a convivial disposition. He was a thorough man of the world, and "not a stranger to galantry." Just before he left England for New Jersey, on Sept. 4, 1762, he married Elizabeth Downes, born in the West Indies. She was greatly respected and admired but died while her husband was a prisoner in Connecticut. During her illness Congress denied William Franklin's prayer to visit her. Whitehead states that Franklin later married as his second wife an Irish woman. He left one natural son, William Temple Franklin, who acted as secretary for Benjamin Franklin while the latter was in Paris, and later edited his works.

[A biographical study by Wm. A. Whitehead is in *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, III (1849), 137. Notices of his life are also found in Whitehead, *Contributions to the Early Hist. of Perth Amboy* (1856), p. 185; L. Sabine, *The Am. Loyalists* (1847); *Docs. Relating to the Colonial Hist. of the State of N. J.*, IX (1885), 369–643, X (1886). See also A. H. Smyth, *The Writings of Benj. Franklin* . . . (10 vols., 1905–07); Chas. H. Hart, "Who was the Mother of Franklin's Son," in *Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog.*, July 1911, and "Letters from Wm. Franklin to Wm. Strahan," in *Ibid.*, Oct. 1911; Jas. M. Stifler, *The Religion of Benj. Franklin* (1925); and Sydney Geo. Fisher, *Benjamin Franklin* (1927); *Gentleman's Mag.* (London), Nov. 1813.] E. P. T.

**FRANKLIN, WILLIAM BUEL** (Feb. 27, 1823–Mar. 8, 1903), soldier and business executive, was born at York, Pa. His father, Walter S. Franklin, was clerk of the House of Representatives from 1833 to 1838. His mother, Sarah, was a daughter of Dr. William Buel of Litchfield, Conn. Entering West Point along with U. S. Grant in 1839, he graduated in 1843 at the head of the class, and was commissioned in the Topographical Engineers, then a separate corps of the army. His first employment was on the survey of the Great Lakes, and later he was with Kearny's expedition to the South Pass. In the Mexican War he accompanied Gen. Wool's command, and was present at the battle of Buena Vista. On July 7, 1852, he married Annie L. Clark of Washington. He was promoted first lieutenant

in 1853 and captain in 1857. For some years preceding the Civil War he was on duty in Washington, where he was superintending engineer in charge of the construction of the dome of the Capitol and of the addition to the Treasury Building. When several new regiments of the regular army were organized, he was appointed (May 14, 1861) colonel of the 12th Infantry, and soon after was made brigadier-general of volunteers. He commanded a brigade at Bull Run—raw regiments, of which one claimed its discharge on the morning of the battle, and some of those that remained were of little more use than the one that left. Franklin did as well with his indifferent material as could be expected, however, and was soon given a division, which he commanded when the Army of the Potomac moved to the Peninsula in 1862. In May he was assigned to the command of the VI Corps, and led it successfully throughout the Peninsular campaign and at Antietam. He was appointed major-general of volunteers, July 4, 1862. In Burnside's reorganization of the army, late in 1862, Franklin was put in command of the "Left Grand Division," consisting of the I and VI corps. After the disastrous battle of Fredericksburg, Burnside requested his removal from the army, holding him partially responsible for the failure, and this opinion was indorsed by the Congressional Joint Committee on the Conduct of the War (*Senate Report No. 108*, 37 Cong., 3 Sess., 1863, pt. 1), which, however, did not have before it the text of Burnside's orders. Franklin published a *Reply* (1863, 2nd ed. 1867; also found in *Official Records, Army*, 1 ser., vol. LI, pt. 1), but he was not restored to the command of which he had been deprived in the Army of the Potomac, and was left for some months unemployed. In the summer of 1863 he was sent to Louisiana and assigned to the command of the XIX Corps, which he reorganized and brought to a high state of discipline. He took part in the expedition to Sabine Pass, Tex., in September 1863, and in the unfortunate Red River expedition next spring. While he was on sick leave, recuperating from a wound received at the battle of Sabine Cross Roads, the train on which he was traveling was intercepted (July 11, 1864) by a detachment from Early's army, then attacking Washington, but he escaped from his captors during the next night. He had no further service in the field. He resigned his major-generalcy of volunteers, Nov. 10, 1865, and his colonelcy in the regular army, Mar. 15, 1866, and became vice-president and general manager of Colt's Fire Arms Manufacturing Company at Hartford, an employment in which he continued until 1880. He was president of the commission



in charge of building the new state capitol, 1872–73, consulting engineer, 1873–77, and superintendent, 1877–80. He was a presidential elector, voting for Tilden, in 1876; adjutant-general of the state for two years; chairman of the board of judges of engineering and architecture at the Philadelphia exposition of 1876; and commissioner-general of the United States for the Paris Exposition in 1888. He died at Hartford. Franklin was one of those generals who, rising to conspicuous positions early in the war, thereafter passed into comparative obscurity because of adverse circumstances for which they were in no way to blame. Grant declared, late in the war, that he "would feel strengthened" with Franklin commanding the right wing of his army before Richmond (*Official Records, Army*, 1 ser., vol. XL, pt. 2, p. 559); and suggested putting him in the actual military command of Butler's Army of the James (*Ibid.*, pt. 3, 123), relegating Butler to administrative duties.

[G. W. Cullum, *Biog. Reg.* (3rd ed., 1891), II, 152–54; *Who's Who in America*, 1901–03; *Thirty-fourth Ann. Reunion Asso. Grads., U. S. Mil. Acad.* (1903), pp. 203–20; J. L. Greene, *Gen. Wm. B. Franklin, and the Operations of the Left Wing at the Battle of Fredericksburg* (1900), and *In Memoriam: Wm. Buel Franklin* (1903), by the same author; *Mil. Order of the Loyal Legion of the U. S., Commandery of the State of N. Y., Circular No. 19* (1903); *Official Records (Army)*, 1 ser., vols. II, XI (pts. 1, 2), XIX (pt. 1), XXI, XXVI (pt. 1), XXXIV (pts. 1, 2, 3), LI (pt. 1).]

T. M. S.

**FRASCH, HERMAN** (Dec. 25, 1851?–May 1, 1914), pharmacist, chemical engineer, inventor, was born in Gaildorf, Würtemberg, Germany, of Lutheran parentage. His father, Johannes Frasch, was mayor of the town. Herman Frasch came to America in 1868, took a position in the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy, and through private studies interested himself in chemistry, which he visioned was destined to play an important rôle in the development of his adopted country. Becoming interested in the petroleum industry he removed to Cleveland about 1877, opened a chemical laboratory, and devoted himself principally to the problem of refining petroleum. In this undertaking he obtained his first patent in December 1877. In 1885 he moved to London, Ontario, and organized the Empire Oil Company. At this time he made his most important contributions to the refining of petroleum oils, and devised his efficient and economical method of desulfurizing crude petroleum oils. The value of the highly offensive Canadian and Ohio oils, which hitherto had been used only for fuel purposes, was enhanced to such an extent as to place these refined oils on a parity with standard grades of Pennsylvania illuminating oils. The Frasch process for desulfurizing crude oils

is based upon the reaction between a metallic oxide, especially that of copper, and the sulfur compounds contained in crude oils, whereby stable copper sulfides are formed. The method is relatively inexpensive, since it includes the recovery of copper oxide, which may be used repeatedly. Between 1887 and 1894 twenty-one American patents were issued to Frasch dealing with the refining of Canadian and similar petroleum oils. These patents, and the Empire Oil Company as well, were subsequently purchased by the Standard Oil Company, and the firm's refineries throughout the country were promptly equipped and operated under the Frasch method. During these years Frasch secured numerous patents on subjects entirely foreign to the petroleum industry. These included patents on processes for producing white lead directly from galena, for making sodium carbonate from salt by the ammonia process, for making elements for thermal electrical generators, and for manufacturing carbon for electric-light carbons. Although the value of Frasch's method for refining sulfur-bearing crude oils was inestimable, raising the value of such oil from fourteen cents a barrel to one dollar, it was overshadowed by his later inventions bearing upon sulfur mining. In this work his first patent was granted Oct. 20, 1891. The process which he developed involved melting the sulfur in the mine by means of superheated water forced down into the mine through a pipe, allowing for the discharge of the molten sulfur through an inner tube. By this means the sulfur could be poured into huge bins and made ready for shipment. His experiments extended through many years and involved large expenditures of money, but were strikingly successful. Following the invention of the process the Union Sulphur Company was organized of which Frasch became president. This company worked the sulfur deposits in Louisiana and was soon able to wrest the control of the world's supply of sulfur from the Anglo-Sicilian Company which hitherto had enjoyed practically a monopoly of the business. Prior to the development of the Louisiana mines, the United States produced less than five-tenths of one per cent. of the sulfur consumed within its boundaries. After Frasch's process came into use, the United States exported large quantities of sulfur.

Frasch received in 1912 the Perkin gold medal, the coveted prize of American chemists, in recognition of his distinguished services to the chemical industries. At its presentation he was designated "one of our greatest industrial chemists and chemical engineers." His discoveries affected the economics of a nation and to him belongs



the undisputed credit of having founded the American sulfur industry. He was a quiet, unassuming man, but by his boldness of conception and courage, and by his energy and perseverance, he brought to realization the daring dreams of his genius. He died in Paris, France, on May 1, 1914, after a long illness. He was married twice. His first wife was Romalda Berks, whose Dutch forebears had settled in Berks County, Pa. After her death in 1869 he was married, several years later, to Elizabeth Blee of Cleveland.

[Frasch's address delivered upon the presentation of the Perkin medal on Jan. 19, 1912, is contained in the *Jour. of the Soc. of Chem. Industry* (London), Feb. 29, 1912, and in the *Jour. of Industrial and Engineering Chemistry*, Feb. 1912. See also *Ibid.*, June 1914; *Zeitschrift für Angewandte Chemie*, May 15, 1914; *Chemiker-Zeitung*, June 6, 1914; *Jour. of the Soc. of Chem. Industry*, May 30, 1914; *World's Work*, July 1914; *N. Y. Times*, May 2, 1914.] T.B.W.

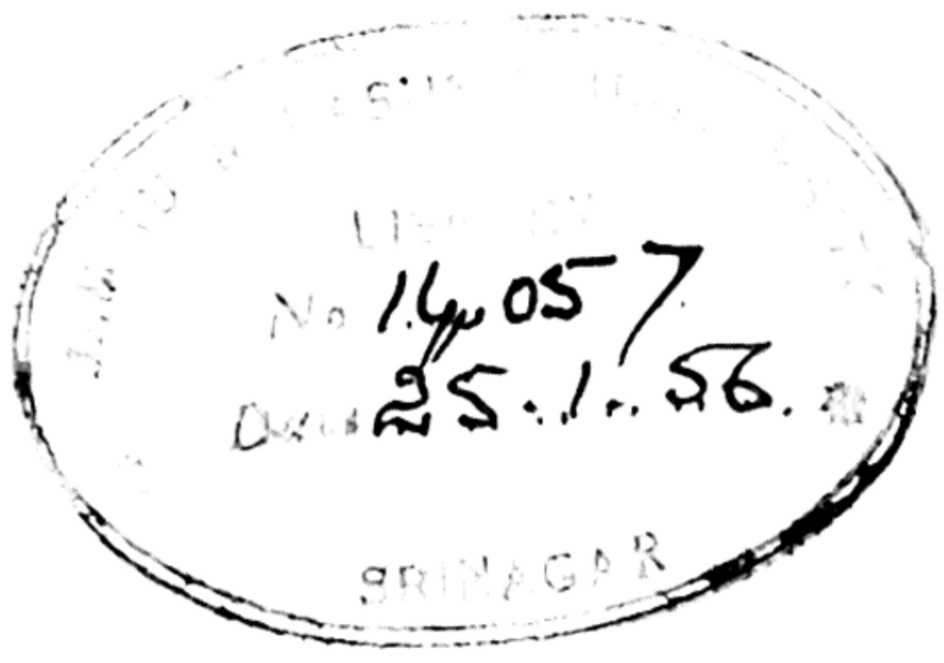
**FRASER, CHARLES** (Aug. 20, 1782–Oct. 5, 1860), miniature painter, the fourteenth and youngest child of Alexander and Mary (Grimké) Fraser, grew to manhood surrounded by relatives and friends who had taken part in the Revolution. His education began at a classical school and was continued at the College of Charleston, but at an early age he showed an artistic bent which was intensified by his association with Sully, Malbone, and Washington Allston. With these young men, who like himself were destined to stand high among early American artists, he enjoyed a pleasant friendship. Educated by his guardians for the legal profession, he was admitted to the bar in 1807 and continued to practise law until 1818, by which date he had accumulated a competency. This enabled him to pursue professionally the art which had always attracted his taste and ambition, and to the study of which he had given his hours of leisure. Having already developed from his education a strong literary taste, his practise at the bar strengthened his intellectual power and gave him great breadth of outlook. It brought him into contact, too, with a group of distinguished lawyers who maintained "that high character for courtesy, learning, and liberality imparted to the Charleston Bar by eminent men who had studied their profession at the Inns of Court in London."

When Fraser abandoned the law for art he retained many of his former interests. He was often called upon to deliver public addresses, and for many years attended the weekly meetings of the Conversation Club, where he met such leaders of thought as Stephen Elliott, Agassiz, Dickson, Bachman, Gilman, Holbrook, and Ravenel. Among the numerous essays which he read at these meetings were his "Reminiscences of Charleston," an authentic picture of the com-

munity, published in 1854. He was a member of the board of trustees of the College of Charleston as early as 1817, and served in that capacity and as treasurer for nearly forty years. A few reasonably creditable verses survive to justify William D. Porter's description of him as "a man of exquisite taste and refinement, artist, scholar, and poet" (*Year Book of the City of Charleston*, 1882, p. 283). It was to his miniatures, however, which he painted in large numbers, and with conspicuous success, that Fraser owed his general recognition. There are listed in the catalogue of works exhibited in 1857 some 313 miniatures and 139 oil-paintings, which probably represented only a fraction of his work. Most of the prominent Carolinians of his day sat to him, and he was chosen by the city of Charleston to paint a miniature of Lafayette at the time of his visit there in 1825. His characterizations were deft, subtle, uncompromising, and withal sympathetic. His early style was strongly influenced by Malbone, but as his art matured, he abandoned Malbone's cross-hatching for stippling, and enlarged the color chart. His best work—in a period of distinguished miniatures—bears comparison with that of any miniature painter of his day.

[Alice R. Huger Smith and D. E. Huger Smith, *Chas. Fraser* (1924), contains fifty reproductions of Fraser's miniatures. See also Chas. Fraser, "Fraser Family Memoranda," in *S. C. Hist. and Geneal. Mag.*, Jan. 1904; H. B. Wehle and Theodore Bolton, *Am. Miniatures, 1830–50, and a Biog. Dict. of the Artists* (1927); Wm. Dunlap, *Hist. of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the U. S.* (1834), II, 150; A. R. H. Smith in *Art in America*, June 1915; *Charleston Courier*, Oct. 6, 1860.]

A. R. H. S.




ALLAMA IQBAL LIBRARY

14057